

**THE
LAWS OF ENGLAND**

VOLUME XXII

THE LAWS OF ENGLAND

BEING

A COMPLETE STATEMENT OF THE WHOLE
LAW OF ENGLAND.

BY

THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE
EARL OF HALSBURY
LORD HIGH CHANCELLOR OF GREAT BRITAIN,
1885-86, 1886-92 and 1895-1905,

AND OTHER LAWYERS

VOLUME XXII

*SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION
SMALL HOLDINGS AND SMALL
DWELLINGS.
SOLICITORS*

LONDON

BUTTERWORTH & CO, BELL YARD, TEMPLE BAR,

Law Publishers

SYDNEY. BUTTERWORTH & CO (AUSTRALIA), LTD.
CALCUTTA BUTTERWORTH & CO. (INDIA), LTD
WINNIPEG BUTTERWORTH & CO (CANADA), LTD.

1914.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

PART II. PAWNS AT COMMON LAW—continued.

SECT. 5 Rights and Duties of Pawner—continued.

Sub-sect. 2 Warranty by Pawner	-	-	-	241
Sub-sect. 3. Title and Property of Pawner	-	-	-	241
Sub-sect. 4. Right to Redemption	-	-	-	241
Sub-sect. 5. Remedies of Pawner	-	-	-	242

SECT 6. Rights and Liabilities of Pawnee

Sub-sect 1 Property and Possession	-	-	-	243
Sub-sect 2 Care of Pawn	-	-	-	243
Sub-sect. 3 Transfer of Pawnee's Rights	-	-	-	244
Sub-sect 4 Remedies of Pawnee	-	-	-	244

SECT 7 Intervening Rights of Third Parties

Sub-sect. 1 On Execution or Distress	-	-	-	245
Sub-sect 2 On Bankruptcy	-	-	-	246
Sub-sect 3 Rights of True Owner	-	-	-	246

PART III PAWNS UNDER THE PAWNBROKERS ACT

SECT 1 Regulation of Pawnbroker's Business

Sub-sect 1 Pawnbroker's Licence	-	-	-	248
Sub-sect 2 Conduct of Business	-	-	-	249

SECT 2 Pawning and Redemption of Pledges

SECT 3 Sale of Pledges

Sub-sect 1 Conduct of Sales	-	-	-	252
Sub-sect. 2 Application of Surplus	-	-	-	252

SECT 4 Redelivery of Pledges

Sub-sect 1 Production of Pawn-ticket	-	-	-	253
Sub-sect 2 Damage to Pledge	-	-	-	254
Sub-sect 3 Orders for Delivery	-	-	-	254

SECT 5 Offences

Sub-sect 1 By Pawnbrokers	-	-	-	255
Sub-sect 2 By Pawners	-	-	-	257

SECT 6 Penalties and Prosecution

For Agents	-	-	-	See title	AGENTS.
Auctioneers	-	-	-	"	AUCTION AND AUCTIONEERS.
Bailment	-	-	-	"	BAILMENT.
Bankruptcy	-	-	-	"	BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY.
Bills of Sale	-	-	-	"	BILLS OF SALE
Capacity to Contract	-	-	-	"	CONTRACT.
Criminal Offences Generally	-	-	-	"	CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE.
Damages	-	-	-	"	DAMAGES.
Distress	-	-	-	"	DISTRESS
Drunken Persons	-	-	-	"	INTOXICATING LIQUORS.
Evidence	-	-	-	"	EVIDENCE.
Execution	-	-	-	"	EXECUTION
Executors and Administrators	-	-	-	"	EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS.
Factors	-	-	-	"	SALE OF GOODS
Infants	-	-	-	"	INFANTS AND CHILDREN.
Interpleader	-	-	-	"	INTERPLEADER.
Lien	-	-	-	"	LIEN.
Limitation of Actions	-	-	-	"	LIMITATION OF ACTIONS.
Lunatics	-	-	-	"	LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND.
Money-lending	-	-	-	"	MONEY AND MONEY-LENDING.
Mortgage	-	-	-	"	MORTGAGE.
Police	-	-	-	"	POLICE.
Receiving Stolen Goods	-	-	-	"	CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE.
Right of Action	-	-	-	"	RIGHT OF ACTION.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

For Sale of Goods	-	-	-	See title	SALE OF GOODS.
Set-off	-	-	-	"	SET-OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM.
Summary Jurisdiction, Courts	-	-	-	"	MAGISTRATES.
Trade	-	-	-	"	TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS.
Trover	-	-	-	"	TROVER AND DETINUE.

PAYMASTER-GENERAL.

See CONSTITUTIONAL LAW; COURTS; REVENUE.

PAYMENT AND TENDER.

~~See~~ CONTRACT, LIMITATION OF ACTIONS; MONEY AND MONEY-LENDING; SALE OF GOODS.

PAYMENT INTO COURT.

**See COUNTRY COURTS, PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE; RECEIVERS;
TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES.**

PEACE, ARTICLES OF THE.

See MAGISTRATES.

PEACE, - CLERK OF THE.

See LOCAL GOVERNMENT. MAGISTRATES.

PEDIGREE.

See EVIDENCE.

PEDLARS.

See MARKETS AND FAIRS: STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

	PAGE
PEERAGES AND DIGNITIES	261—291
PART I. PEERAGE	262
SECT. 1 In General	262
SECT. 2 Degrees of Peerage	263
Sub-sect. 1. In General	263
Sub-sect. 2. Dukes	263
Sub-sect. 3. Marquesses	263
Sub-sect. 4. Earls	264
Sub-sect. 5. Viscounts	264
Sub-sect. 6. Barons	264
SECT. 3. Creation of Peers	265
SECT. 4. Estate in and Descent of a Peerage	269
SECT. 5. Privileges and Precedence	270
Sub-sect. 1. Privileges	270
Sub-sect. 2. Precedence	272
SECT. 6. Extinction or Suspension of a Peerage	273
Sub-sect. 1. Failure of Issue	273
Sub-sect. 2. Abseyance	273
Sub-sect. 3. Mergor	274
Sub-sect. 4. Resignation and Surrender	275
Sub-sect. 5. Forfeiture	275
Sub-sect. 6. Degrivation	276
SECT. 7. Claims to Peerage	277
Sub-sect. 1. Jurisdiction	277
Sub-sect. 2. Procedure and Evidence	278

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

xvii

	PAGE
PART II THE BARONETAGE - - - - -	283
PART III. KNIGHTHOOD - - - - -	285
PART IV. THE COLLEGE OF ARMS - - - - -	288
PART V FOREIGN DIGNITIES, ORDERS, AND DECORATIONS -	290
SECT 1 Dignities - - - - -	290
SECT. 2 Orders and Decorations - - - - -	290

<i>For Arms, Change of</i> - - - - -	<i>See title</i>	NAME AND ARMS, CHANGE OF
<i>Committee of Claims</i> - - - - -	"	CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Constitutional Law</i> - - - - -	"	CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Hereditary Offices</i> - - - - -	"	CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Judges</i> - - - - -	"	CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, COURTS
<i>Law Officers</i> - - - - -	"	COURTS, PARLIAMENT
<i>Lord High Steward</i> - - - - -	"	COURTS, PARLIAMENT
<i>Lords of Appeal</i> - - - - -	"	COURTS, PARLIAMENT
<i>Name, Change of</i> - - - - -	"	NAME AND ARMS, CHANGE OF
<i>Parliament</i> - - - - -	"	PARLIAMENT
<i>Peers in Parliament</i> - - - - -	"	PARLIAMENT
<i>Privileges of the Crown</i> - - - - -	"	CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Privileges of Peers of Parliament</i> - - - - -	"	PARLIAMENT
<i>Public Officers</i> - - - - -	"	PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS
<i>State, High Officers of</i> - - - - -	"	CONSTITUTIONAL LAW

PENALTIES, RELIEF AGAINST

See EQUITY, LANDLORD AND TENANT.

PENALTY.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, DAMAGES; EQUITY.

PENSIONS

See CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, POLICE, ROYAL FORCES

PERCOLATION

See EASEMENTS AND PROFITS A PRENDRE, MINES, MINERALS, AND QUARRIES, WATERS AND WATERCOURSES.

PERFORMING RIGHTS

See COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY.

PERJURY

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, EVIDENCE

PERMANENT BUILDING SOCIETY.

See BUILDING SOCIETIES

PERPETUATING TESTIMONY.

See EQUITY; EVIDENCE.

	PAGE
PERPETUITIES - - - - -	293—384
PART I - INTRODUCTORY - - - - -	294
PART II. THE RULE AGAINST PERPETUITIES - - - - -	300
SECT 1 Period allowed for Suspension of Vesting -	300
Sub-sect 1 Statement of the Rule - - - - -	300
Sub-sect 2. Determination of the Time of Vesting -	303
Sub-sect 3 The Choice of Period Available - - -	308

	PAGE
PART II. THE RULE AGAINST PERPETUITIES—continued	
SECT. 2 Interests Subject to the Rule - - - - -	311
Sub-sect 1 Kinds of Property - - - - -	311
Sub-sect 2 Legal Interests - - - - -	312
(1) Real Estate - - - - -	312
(11) Personal Estate - - - - -	316
Sub-sect 3 Equitable Interests - - - - -	317
Sub-sect 4 Interests under Contracts - - - - -	319
Sub-sect 5 Possible Extensions of the Rule - - - - -	322
SECT 3 Interests to which the Rule does not Apply - - - - -	322
Sub-sect 1 Present Interests and Vested Future Interests - - - - -	322
Sub-sect 2 Certain Destructible Interests - - - - -	323
(1) In General - - - - -	323
(11) Limitations Defeasible by Disentail - - - - -	323
(111) Trusts Defeasible by Beneficiaries whose Interests must Vest within the Perpetuity Period - - - - -	326
(1v) Provisions for Raising Debts and Incumbrances - - - - -	327
Sub-sect 3 Certain Charitable Gifts arising <i>in futuro</i> - - - - -	329
Sub-sect 4 Interests under Common Law Assurances - - - - -	330
Sub-sect 5 Contracts, as Binding the Person - - - - -	331
Sub-sect 6 Interests given by Operation of Law - - - - -	331
Sub-sect 7 Certain Rights of Entry - - - - -	331
Sub-sect 8 Interests the Nature of which is a Guarantee against Perpetuity - - - - -	332
SECT 4 APPLICATION OF THE RULE IN GENERAL - - - - -	332
Sub-sect 1 Date from which the Period is Reckoned - - - - -	332
Sub-sect 2 Circumstances taken into Account - - - - -	333
Sub-sect 3 Duration of Limitations and Postponement of Enjoyment - - - - -	335
Sub-sect 4 Limitations to Classes and to Members of Classes - - - - -	341
Sub-sect 5 Limitations to Series of Persons - - - - -	347
Sub-sect 6 Alternative Independent Limitations - - - - -	348
SECT 5 FAILURE OF A LIMITATION UNDER THE RULE - - - - -	350
Sub-sect 1 Effect in General - - - - -	350
Sub-sect 2 Void Restrictions on Valid Limitations - - - - -	352
SECT 6 Application of the Rule to Powers - - - - -	353
Sub-sect 1 Powers in General - - - - -	353
Sub-sect 2 General Powers of Appointment - - - - -	354
Sub-sect 3 Special Powers of Appointment - - - - -	356
Sub-sect 4 Collateral Powers - - - - -	361
SECT 7 Application of the Rule to Securities - - - - -	362
PART III THE RULE PROHIBITING LIMITATIONS TO SUCCESSIVE GENERATIONS OF UNBORN ISSUE - - - - -	364
SECT 1 Nature of the Rule - - - - -	364
SECT 2 The <i>Cy-pres</i> Doctrine - - - - -	367
PART IV. RESTRICTION OF ACCUMULATION - - - - -	370
SECT 1 Limits of Period of Accumulation - - - - -	370
SECT 2 Exceptions from the Statutory Rules - - - - -	376
Sub-sect 1 Provisions for Payment of Debts or Incumbrances - - - - -	376
Sub-sect 2 Provisions for Raising Portions - - - - -	377
Sub-sect 3 Directions as to Timber - - - - -	380
Sub-sect 4 Repairs and Replacement of Wasting Capital - - - - -	380
Sub-sect 5 Savings out of Income and Insurance - - - - -	381
SECT 3 Application of Surplus Accumulations - - - - -	381

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

xix

For Alienation of Property in Futuro— See title **GIFTS, PERSONAL PROPERTY; SETTLEMENTS**

<i>Charities</i> - - - - -	"	CHARITIES.
<i>Customs</i> - - - - -	"	CUSTOM AND USAGES
<i>Descent and Distribution</i> - - - - -	"	DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION.
<i>Easements</i> - - - - -	"	EASEMENTS AND PROFITS A PRENDRE
<i>Limitation, Statutes of</i> - - - - -	"	LIMITATION OF ACTIONS
<i>Mortgage</i> - - - - -	"	MORTGAGE
<i>Option to Purchase</i> - - - - -	"	LANDLORD AND TENANT, SALE OF LAND
<i>Powers</i> - - - - -	"	POWERS
<i>Real Property, Interests in</i> - - - - -	"	REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL
<i>Restraint on Anticipation</i> - - - - -	"	HUSBAND AND WIFE
<i>Sale of Land</i> - - - - -	"	SALE OF LAND.
<i>Wills</i> - - - - -	"	WILLS

PAGE

PERSONAL PROPERTY - - - - -	385—415
PART I. DEFINITIONS - - - - -	387
SECT 1 Personal Property in General - - - - -	387
SECT 2 Chattels Real - - - - -	388
SECT 3 Chattels Personal - - - - -	388
PART II POSSESSION - - - - -	391
SECT 1 Meaning of the Term - - - - -	391
SECT 2 Different Kinds of Possession - - - - -	392
Sub-sect 1 Absolute or Qualified - - - - -	392
Sub-sect 2 Possession of Owner - - - - -	393
Sub-sect 3 Possession of Bailee - - - - -	394
Sub-sect 4 Possession of Trespasser - - - - -	394
Sub-sect 5 Possession of Finder - - - - -	394
SECT 3 Rights Annexed to Possession - - - - -	395
SECT 4 Acquisition of Possession - - - - -	395
SECT 5 Loss of Possession - - - - -	396
PART III OWNERSHIP - - - - -	397
SECT 1 Nature of Ownership - - - - -	397
SECT 2 Personal Capacity - - - - -	398
SECT 3 Acquisition of Ownership - - - - -	399
Sub-sect. 1 By Succession to Title of Previous Owner - - - - -	399
Sub-sect. 2 By Change of Possession - - - - -	399
Sub-sect. 3 By taking Original Possession - - - - -	400
Sub-sect. 4 By Accession - - - - -	401
Sub-sect. 5 By Confusion - - - - -	401
Sub-sect. 6 Under Paramount Authority - - - - -	402
SECT 4 Co-ownership - - - - -	403
Sub-sect. 1 Joint Ownership - - - - -	403
Sub-sect. 2 Ownership in Common - - - - -	403
PART IV. ALIENATION - - - - -	404
SECT 1. In General - - - - -	404
SECT 2 Voluntary Alienation - - - - -	404
Sub-sect 1 By Delivery - - - - -	404
Sub-sect 2 By Deed - - - - -	406
Sub-sect 3 By Contract of Sale - - - - -	406
Sub-sect. 4 By Exchange - - - - -	406
SECT. 3. Involuntary Alienation - - - - -	407

	PAGE
PART IV. ALIENATION—continued.	
SECT. 4. Alienation at Death	408
SECT. 5 Future Acquired Property	409
SECT. 6 Restraints on Alienation	410
PART V CREATION OF SUCCESSIVE INTERESTS	418
<i>For Accumulation, Trusts for</i>	- See title
	INFANTS AND CHILDREN, PERPETUITIES, SETTLEMENTS TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES
<i>Action</i>	ACTION
<i>Annuities</i>	RENTCHARGES AND ANNUITIES.
<i>Bailment</i>	BAILMENT.
<i>Bankruptcy</i>	BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY
<i>Bills of Exchange</i>	BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES, AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS
<i>Bills of Sale</i>	BILLS OF SALE
<i>Bonds</i>	BONDS
<i>Carriage of Goods</i>	CARRIERS, SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION
<i>Charities</i>	CHARITIES
<i>Choses in Action</i>	CHUSES IN ACTION
<i>Conflict of Laws</i>	CONFLICT OF LAWS.
<i>Constitutional Law</i>	CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Contracts</i>	BUILDING CONTRACTS, ENGINEERS, AND ARCHITECTS, CONTRACT
<i>Copyright</i>	COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY
<i>Criminal Law</i>	CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE
<i>Damages</i>	DAMAGES
<i>Descent and Distribution</i>	DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION
<i>Distress</i>	DISTRESS
<i>Equity</i>	EQUITY
<i>Estoppel</i>	ESTOPPEL
<i>Executors and Administrators</i>	EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS
<i>Garnishee</i>	EXECUTION
<i>Gifts</i>	GIFTS
<i>Guarantee</i>	GUARANTEE
<i>Husband and Wife</i>	HUSBAND AND WIFE
<i>Intestacy</i>	DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS.
<i>Jointure</i>	REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, SETTLEMENTS
<i>Landlord and Tenant</i>	LANDLORD AND TENANT
<i>Licenses</i>	FISHERIES, GAME, LANDLORD AND TENANT, MINES, MINERALS, AND QUARRIES, NEGLIGENCE, REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, TRESPASS.
<i>Lien</i>	LIEN
<i>Money</i>	MONEY AND MONEY-LENDING
<i>Mortgage</i>	MORTGAGE
<i>Negotiable Instruments</i>	BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES, AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS
<i>Next of Kin</i>	DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION.
<i>Nuisance</i>	NUISANCE.
<i>Partnership</i>	PARTNERSHIP
<i>Patent Rights</i>	PATENTS AND INVENTIONS
<i>Pawns</i>	PAWNS AND PLEDGES.
<i>Pledges</i>	PAWNS AND PLEDGES.
<i>Promissory Notes</i>	BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES, AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS.

For Real Property

See title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS

Sale of Goods

REAL

Separate Estate

SALE OF GOODS.

Settlements -

HUSBAND AND WIFE.

Tenants for Years

SETTLEMENTS

Trespass -

LANDLORD AND TENANT

Trover -

TRESPASS

Trusts -

TROVER AND DETINUR.

Wills -

TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES.

WILLS.

PERSONAL REPRESENTATIVES.

See EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS

PERSONATION.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE.

PETITION OF RIGHT.

See CROWN PRACTICE

PEW.

See ECCLESIASTICAL LAW.

PHYSICIANS.

See MEDICINE AND PHARMACY.

PICTURES AND PHOTOGRAPHS

See COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY.

PIER

See WATERS AND WATERCOURSES.

PIGEONS

See ANIMALS, GAME.

PIGS.

See ANIMALS

PILOT AND PILOTAGE.

See SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION.

PIN-MONEY.

See HUSBAND AND WIFE.

PIRACY.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE.

PISTOLS.

See REVENUE, SALE OF GOODS; TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS.

PLAINT.

See COUNTY COURT.

PLATE.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE; TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES,
AND DESIGNS, WILLS

PLAYGROUNDS.

See EDUCATION, OPEN SPACES AND RECREATION GROUNDS.

PLAYS

See THEATRES AND OTHER PLACES OF ENTERTAINMENT

	PAGE
PLEADING - " - - - - -	417—459
PART I. IN GENERAL - - - - -	418
SECT 1 Nature and Purpose of Pleadings - - - - -	418
SECT 2 Form of Pleadings - - - - -	420
Sub-sect 1 Arrangement of Contents - - - - -	420
Sub-sect 2 Mode of Setting out a Party's Own Case - - - - -	422
Sub-sect 3 Mode of Answering an Opponent's Case - - - - -	429
SECT 3 Delivery of Pleadings - - - - -	433
SECT 4 Objections to Pleadings - - - - -	434
SECT 5 Amendment of Pleadings - - - - -	437
PART II PLEADINGS AND PARTICULARS - - - - -	440
SECT 1 Statement of Claim - - - - -	440
SECT 2 Defence - - - - -	445
SECT 3 Particulars - - - - -	453
SECT 4 Reply and Subsequent Pleadings - - - - -	458
<i>For Action</i> - - - - - <i>See title</i> ACTION	
<i>Admiralty Practice</i> - - - - - " ADMIRALTY	
<i>Barristers</i> - - - - - " BARRISTERS	
<i>Costs</i> - - - - - " PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE, SOLICITORS	
<i>County Courts</i> - - - - - " COUNTY COURTS	
<i>Crown Practice</i> - - - - - " CROWN PRACTICE	
<i>Damages</i> - - - - - " DAMAGES	
<i>Default of Pleading, Judgment on</i> - - - - - " JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS	
<i>Discovery</i> - - - - - " DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES	
<i>Divorce Practice</i> - - - - - " HUSBAND AND WIFE	
<i>Injunction</i> - - - - - " INJUNCTION	
<i>Inspection</i> - - - - - " DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES	
<i>Interpleader</i> - - - - - " INTERPLEADER	
<i>Interrogatories</i> - - - - - " DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES.	
<i>Judgments</i> - - - - - " JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS	
<i>Orders</i> - - - - - " JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS	
<i>Payment into Court</i> - - - - - " PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE.	
<i>Practice in General</i> - - - - - " PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE.	
<i>Set-off and Counterclaim</i> - - - - - " SET-OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM.	
<i>Solicitors</i> - - - - - " SOLICITORS.	

PLEDGE.

See AGENCY, PAWNS AND PLEDGES.

PLENE ADMINISTRATIVI.

See EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS.

PLENIPOTENTIARIES.

See CONFLICT OF LAWS, CONSTITUTIONAL LAW.

POACHING.

See ANIMALS; GAME.

POISONS.

See AGRICULTURE, CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE; MEDICINE
AND PHARMACY.

	PAGE
POLICE - - - - -	461—519
PART I ORIGIN OF POLICE FORCES - - - - -	462
SECT 1 Introductory - - - - -	462
SECT 2 Parish Constables - - - - -	463
SECT 3 Transition to Modern Police Forces - - - - -	466
PART II. METROPOLITAN POLICE - - - - -	466
SECT 1 Area - - - - -	466
SECT 2 Government - - - - -	467
SECT 3 The Receiver - - - - -	468
SECT 4 The Commissioners - - - - -	469
SECT 5 Constables - - - - -	473
SECT 6 Metropolitan Police Fund - - - - -	474
SECT 7 Pension Fund - - - - -	477
PART III CITY OF LONDON POLICE - - - - -	478
SECT 1 Area - - - - -	478
SECT 2 Government - - - - -	478
SECT 3 Special Powers - - - - -	479
SECT 4 Finance - - - - -	480
PART IV COUNTY POLICE - - - - -	481
PART V. BOROUGH POLICE - - - - -	485
PART VI CONSOLIDATION AND MUTUAL ASSISTANCE OF POLICE FORCES - - - - -	490
SECT 1 Consolidation of County and Borough Forces - - - - -	490
SECT 2 Assistance of One Police Force by Another - - - - -	491
PART VII SPECIAL CONSTABLES ADDITIONAL POLICE - - - - -	491
SECT 1. Special Constables - - - - -	491
SECT 2 Constables of Railway and Other Companies - - - - -	494
PART VIII. GENERAL POWERS AND DUTIES OF CONSTABLES - - - - -	497
PART IX DAMAGE BY RIOT - - - - -	507
PART X SUPERANNUATION AND OTHER ALLOWANCES - - - - -	509
PART XI POWERS OF SECRETARY OF STATE - - - - -	516
<i>For Arrest</i> - - - - -	See title CRIMINAL LAW AND PRO- CEDURE
<i>Ball</i> - - - - -	" CRIMINAL LAW AND PRO- CEDURE
<i>Billeting Troops</i> - - - - -	" ROYAL FORCES
<i>Constables, Protection of</i> - - - - -	" LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS.
<i>County and Borough Councils</i> - - - - -	" LOCAL GOVERNMENT.
<i>Criminal Law in General</i> - - - - -	" CRIMINAL LAW AND PRO- CEDURE

<i>For Distress</i> - - -	- See title	DISIRESS
<i>False Imprisonment</i> - - -	"	MALICIOUS PROSECUTION AND PROCEDURE
<i>Home Secretary</i> - - -	"	CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Justices of the Peace</i> - - -	"	MAGISTRATES
<i>Malicious Prosecution</i> - - -	"	MALICIOUS PROSECUTION AND PROCEDURE
<i>Metropolitan Police Magistrates</i> - - -	"	MAGISTRATES
<i>Motor Cars</i> - - -	"	STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC
<i>Police Courts</i> - - - - -	"	MAGISTRATES
<i>Police Rate</i> - - - - -	"	RATES AND RATING
<i>Restitution of Property in Hands of Police</i> - - - - -		MAGISTRATES, PAWNS AND PLEDGES
<i>Search Warrant</i> - - - - -		CRIMINAL LAW AND PRO- CEDURE
<i>Standing Joint Committee</i> - - - - -		LOCAL GOVERNMENT
<i>Street Offences</i> - - - - -		STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC
<i>Summary Jurisdiction, Courts of</i> - - - - -		MAGISTRATES
<i>Watch Committee</i> - - - - -		LOCAL GOVERNMENT
<i>Watch Rate</i> - - - - -		RATES AND RATING.

POLICY

See INSURANCE.

POLL.

See ELECTIONS

POLLUTION

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, NUISANCE, WATERS
AND WATERCOURSES

POOR LAW - - - - -	PAGE
	521—523
PART I INTRODUCTORY - - - - -	523
PART II POOR LAW AUTHORITIES - - - - -	524
SECT 1 The Local Government Board - - - - -	524
Sub-sect 1 In General - - - - -	524
Sub-sect 2 Poor Law Orders - - - - -	525
Sub-sect 3 Inspectors - - - - -	527
SECT 2 County Councils - - - - -	528
SECT 3 Justices of the Peace - - - - -	529
SECT 4 Overseers - - - - -	529
SECT 5 Boards of Guardians - - - - -	530
Sub-sect 1 Constitution and Proceedings - - - - -	530
Sub-sect 2 Duties, Powers, and Liabilities - - - - -	535
Sub-sect. 3 Legal Proceedings - - - - -	539
Sub-sect. 4 Officers - - - - -	541
(a.) Appointment and Duties - - - - -	541
(u.) Superannuation - - - - -	546
Sub-sect. 5. Poor Law Conferences - - - - -	548
Sub-sect. 6. The Common Fund - - - - -	549
Sub-sect. 7. Accounts and Audit - - - - -	550
SECT. 6. The Metropolitan Asylums Board - - - - -	552
PART III. UNIONS - - - - -	553
PART IV. WORKHOUSES - - - - -	555
SECT. 1 Establishment - - - - -	555
SECT 2 Management of Workhouses and Control of Inmates - - - - -	558

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

XXV

	PAGE
PART V. RELIEF OF THE POOR - - - - -	568
SECT 1 Kinds of Relief - - - - -	568
SECT. 2 Recovery of the Cost of Relief - - - - -	570
SECT 3 Liability to Maintain - - - - -	573
PART VI SETTLEMENT - - - - -	574
SECT 1 In General - - - - -	574
SECT 2 Settlement by Birth - - - - -	577
SECT 3 Settlement by Residence - - - - -	579
SECT 4 Settlement by Apprenticeship - - - - -	581
SECT 5 Settlement by Estate - - - - -	582
SECT 6 Settlement by Renting and Rating - - - - -	584
SECT 7 Settlement by Marriage - - - - -	587
SECT 8 Settlement by Parentage - - - - -	588
SECT 9 Settlement by Estoppel - - - - -	589
PART VII REMOVAL - - - - -	590
SECT 1. In General - - - - -	590
SECT 2 Inalienability - - - - -	591
SECT 3 Removal Orders - - - - -	596
Sub-sect The Order - - - - -	596
Sub-sect The Removal - - - - -	600
(i) In England - - - - -	600
(ii) Out of England - - - - -	601
Sub-sect 3 Appeals - - - - -	602
(i) To Quarter Sessions - - - - -	602
(ii) By Special Case - - - - -	605
(iii) Arbitration - - - - -	606
PART VIII VAGRANCY - - - - -	606
SECT 1 In General - - - - -	606
SECT 2 Idle and Disorderly Persons - - - - -	607
SECT 3 Rogues and Vagabonds - - - - -	610
SECT 4 Incorrigible Rogues - - - - -	614
SECT 5 Practice - - - - -	616
PART IX OLD AGE PENSIONS - - - - -	616
SECT 1 The Pension - - - - -	616
SECT 2 The Pension Authorities - - - - -	621
<i>For Assessment</i> - - - - -	<i>See title</i> RATES AND RATING
<i>Assistant Overseers</i> - - - - -	<i>„</i> LOCAL GOVERNMENT, RATES AND RATING
<i>Burial of Paupers</i> - - - - -	BURIAL AND CREMATION.
<i>District Schools</i> - - - - -	EDUCATION
<i>Election of Guardians</i> - - - - -	ELECTIONS
<i>Industrial Schools</i> - - - - -	EDUCATION
<i>National Insurance</i> - - - - -	WORK AND LABOUR.
<i>Overseers, Duties of</i> - - - - -	ELECTIONS; JURIES, RATES AND RATING.
<i>Parishes</i> - - - - -	ECCLIASTICAL, LAW, LOCAL GOVERNMENT
<i>Pauper Lunatics</i> - - - - -	LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND

TABLE OF CONTENTS

<i>For Poor Allotments</i> - - - -	ALLOTMENTS
<i>Poor Rate</i> - - - -	RATES AND RATING.
<i>Reformatories</i> - - - -	EDUCATION
<i>Registrars</i> - - - -	REGISTRATION OF BIRTHS, MARRIAGES, AND DEATHS
<i>Registration of Voters</i> - -	ELECTIONS
<i>Schools and School Districts</i> -	EDUCATION
<i>Union Assessment Committee</i>	RATES AND RATING
<i>Vaccination</i> - - - -	PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION
<i>Valuation</i> - - - -	RATES AND RATING

PORT AND PORT DUES

See SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION, WATERS AND WATERCOURSES

PORT OF LONDON

See METROPOLIS, WATERS AND WATERCOURSES.

PORTIONS

See EQUITY, INFANTS AND CHILDREN; SETTLEMENTS, WILLS.

PORTS AND HARBOURS

See WATERS AND WATERCOURSES

POSSESSION.

See DISTRESS; LANDLORD AND TENANT, MORTGAGE, PERSONAL PROPERTY, REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL, RECEIVERS, SALE OF LAND; SHERIFFS AND BAILIFFS.

POSSESSORY TITLE

See SALE OF LAND

POSTHUMOUS CHILDREN.

See DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, PERPETUITIES, SETTLEMENTS; WILLS

POST-NUPTIAL SETTLEMENTS.

See BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, FRAUDULENT AND VOIDABLE CONVEYANCES, SETTLEMENTS.

POST OBIT BONDS.

See BONDS.

POST OFFICE - - - - -	* PAGE 625-669
PART I. CONSTITUTION - - - - -	- 627
SECT. 1. In General - - - - -	- 627
SECT. 2. The Postmaster-General - - - - -	-
Sub-sect. 1. Appointment - - - - -	- 628
Sub-sect. 2. Assistant Postmaster-General - - - - -	- 628
Sub-sect. 3. Appointment of Officers - - - - -	-
Sub-sect. 4. General Powers - - - - -	-
Sub-sect. 5. Monopoly - - - - -	- 631

PART I. CONSTITUTION—continued.

SECT. 3.	Finance	632
	Sub-sect. 1. Revenue	633
	Sub-sect. 2. Expenses	634
	Sub-sect. 3. Accounts	634

PART II. DEALINGS WITH LAND

SECT	1. Holding of Land	634
SECT	2 Acquisition of Land	634
SECT	3. Disposition of Land	636

PART III. CONDUCT OF BUSINESS

SECT	1 Regulations	636
SECT	2. Postage	637
	Sub-sect. 1. In General	637
	Sub-sect. 2. Rates of Postage	637
	Sub-sect. 3. Payment of Postage	639
	Sub-sect. 4. Recovery of Postage	640
	Sub-sect. 5 Exemptions from Postage	640
SECT	3 Conditions of Transit of Postal Packets	642
	Sub-sect. 1. In General	642
	Sub-sect. 2 Liability for Loss	642
	Sub-sect. 3 Order of Despatch	643
	Sub-sect. 4. Return of Postal Packets	644
	Sub-sect. 5 Abuse of Postal Facilities	644
SECT	4 General Regulation of Business	645
SECT	5. Newspapers	646
	Sub-sect. 1. In General	646
	Sub-sect. 2 Registration	648
SECT	6 Money Orders	648
	Sub-sect. 1 In General	648
	Sub-sect. 2. Provisions as to Money Orders	648
SECT	7 Postal Orders	648
SECT	8 Additional Postal Facilities	649
	Sub-sect. 1 In General	649
	* Sub-sect. 2 Indemnity to Postmaster-General	650
	Sub-sect. 3 Arrangements with Local Authorities	650
SECT	9. Conveyance of Mails	651
	Sub-sect. 1. In General	651
	Sub-sect. 2. Inland	651
	Sub-sect. 3 By Ship	654
	Sub-sect. 4. Exemption from Tolls	656
SECT	10. Establishment of Posts in British Possessions	657
SECT.	11. Arrangements with Foreign Countries	657

PART IV. COMMUNICATIONS BY POST

SECT.	1. Legal Effect	657
SECT	2. Evidence	658

PART V. OFFENCES

SECT.	1 In General	659
SECT.	2. Infringement of Postal Monopoly	660
SECT.	3 Abuse of Exemption of Privileged Person's Letters	660
SECT.	4. Abuse of Exemption of Shipowners' Letters	660

	PAGE
PART V. OFFENCES—continued.	
SECT. 5. Fraudulent Retention of Mail Bag or Postal Packet -	661
SECT. 6 Sending Dangerous Substance by Post -	662
SECT. 7. Interference with Letters -	662
SECT. 8 Negligence or Misconduct of Letter Carriers -	663
SECT. 9 Fraudulent Issue of Money Orders -	664
SECT. 10 Sending or Making Paper in Imitation of Post Office Paper -	664
SECT. 11 Fictitious Stamps -	665
SECT. 12 Unauthorised Notice as to Carrying on Post Office Business	665
SECT. 13 Unauthorised Affixing of Notices to Post Office -	666
SECT. 14 Injury to Letter Boxes -	666
SECT. 15 Obstruction of Officer of the Post Office -	667
SECT. 16 Demanding Toll for Mails -	667
SECT. 17 Soliciting to Commit Offences -	667
PART VI. LEGAL PROCEEDINGS -	668
SECT. 1 Recovery of Fines and Forfeitures -	668
SECT. 2. Summary Proceedings -	668
SECT. 3. Indictments -	669
SECT. 4 Proceedings apart from Post Office Act, 1908 -	669
<i>For Annuities -</i>	<i>See title</i> INSURANCE, RENTCHARGES AND ANNUITIES
<i>Bills of Exchange -</i>	<i>"</i> BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES, AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS
<i>Carriers -</i>	<i>"</i> CARRIERS
<i>Contracts by Post -</i>	<i>"</i> CONTRACT
<i>Criminal Law -</i>	CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE
<i>Insurance -</i>	INSURANCE
<i>Mail Ships -</i>	SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION
<i>Messengers -</i>	STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC
<i>National Insurance -</i>	WORK AND LABOUR.
<i>Negligence -</i>	NEGLECT
<i>Old Age Pensions -</i>	POOR LAW
<i>Public Authorities Protection Act -</i>	PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS.
<i>Railways -</i>	RAILWAYS AND CANALS.
<i>Revenue -</i>	REVENUE
<i>Savings Bank -</i>	BANKERS AND BANKING
<i>Shop Hours Act -</i>	FACTORIES AND SHOPS
<i>Telegraphs and Telephones -</i>	TELEGRAPHS AND TELEPHONES.
<i>Weights and Measures -</i>	WEIGHTS AND MEASURES.

POUND AND POUND BREACH.

See **ANIMALS.**

POWER OF APPOINTMENT.

See **POWERS.**

POWER OF ATTORNEY.

See **AGENCY.**

ABBREVIATIONS

USED IN THIS WORK.

A. C (preceded by date)	Law Reports, Appeal Cases, House of Lords, since 1890 (<i>e.g.</i> [1891] A. C.)
A -G.	Attorney-General
Act.	Acton's Reports, Prize Causes, 2 vols, 1809—1841
Ad. & El.	Adolphus and Ellis's Reports, King's Bench and Queen's Bench, 12 vols., 1834—1842
Adam	Adam's Justiciary Reports (Scotland), 1803—(current)
Add	Addams' Ecclesiastical Reports, 3 vols, 1822—1826
Adv -Gen	Advocate-General
Alc. & N	Alcock and Napier's Reports, King's Bench (Ireland), 1 vol, 1813—1833
Alc Reg Cas.	Alcock's Registry Cases (Ireland), 1 vol., 1832—1841
Aleyn	Aleyn's Reports, King's Bench, fol, 1 vol, 1646—1649
Amb	Ambler's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols, 1725—1783
And	Anderson's Reports, Common Pleas, fol, 2 parts in one vol, 1535—1605
Andr	Andrews' Reports, King's Bench, fol, 1 vol., 1737—1740
Anon	Anonymous
Anst	Anstruther's Reports, Exchequer, 3 vols, 1792—1797
App Cas	Law Reports, Appeal Cases, House of Lords, 15 vols, 1875—1890
Arkley	Arkley's Justiciary Reports (Scotland), 1 vol, 1846—1848
Arm M. & O	Armstrong, Macartney, and Ogle's Civil and Criminal Reports (Ireland), 1840—1842
Arn	Arnold's Reports, Common Pleas, 2 vols, 1838—1839
Arn & H	Arnold and Hodges' Reports, Queen's Bench, 1 vol., 1840—1841
Asp M. L. C	Aspinall's Maritime Law Cases, 1870—(current)
Ashb	Ashburner's Principles of Equity, 1902
Atk.	Atkyns' Reports, Chancery, 3 vols, 1736—1754
Ayl Pan	Ayliffe's New Pandect of Roman Civil Law
Ayl Par.	Ayliffe's Pareigon Juris Canonici Anglicani
B & Ad	Barnewall and Adolphus' Reports, King's Bench, 5 vols, 1830—1834
B & Ald.	Barnewall and Alderson's Reports, King's Bench, 5 vols, 1817—1822
B. & C.	Barnewall and Cresswell's Reports, King's Bench, 10 vols, 1822—1830
B & S	Best and Smith's Reports, Queen's Bench, 10 vols., 1861—1870
Bac. Abr.	Bacon's Abridgment
Bail Ct Cas.	Bail Court Cases (Lowndes and Maxwell), 1 vol., 1852—1854
Baild.	Baldon's Select Cases in Chancery (Selden Society, Vol. X.)
Bail & B.	Bail and Beatty's Reports, Chancery (Ireland), 2 vols., 1807—1814
Bankr. & Ins R.	Bankruptcy and Insolvency Reports, 2 vols., 1853—1855

Bar & Arn	Barron & Arnold's Election Cases, 1 vol., 1848—1848
Bar & Aust.	Barron & Austin's Election Cases, 1 vol., 1842
Barn. (OH)	Barnardiston's Reports, Chancery, fol., 1 vol., 1740—1741
Barn (K. B)	Barnardiston's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 2 vols., 1726—1734
Barnes	Barnes' Notes of Cases of Practice, Common Pleas, 1 vol., 1732—1760
Batt.	Batty's Reports, King's Bench (Ireland), 1 vol., 1825—1826
Beat. ..	Beatty's Reports, Chancery (Ireland), 1 vol., 1813—1830
Beav	Beavan's Reports, Rolls Court, 36 vols., 1838—1866
Beav & Wal	Beavan and Walford's Railway Parliamentary Cases, 1 vol., 1846
Beaw	Beawes's Lex Mercatoria
Bellewe	Bellewe's Cases temp Richard II, King's Bench, 1 vol
Bell, C C	T Bell's Crown Cases Reserved, 1 vol., 1858—1860
Bell, Ct of Sess	R Bell's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 1 vol., 1790—1792
Bell, Ct of Sess fol	R Bell's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol., 1 vol., 1784—1795
Bell, Dict Dec	S S Bell's Dictionary of Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 2 vols., 1808—1833
Bell, Sc App	S S Bell's Scotch Appeals, House of Lords, 7 vols., 1842—1850
Belt's Sup	Belt's Supplement to Vesey Sen, Chancery, 1 vol., 1746—1756
Benl.	Benloe's (or Bendloe's) Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, fol., 1 vol., 1515—1627
Ben & D	Benloe and Dalison's Reports, Common Pleas, fol., 1 vol., 1567—1579
Bing. ..	Bingham's Reports, Common Pleas, 10 vols., 1822—1834
Bing (N O)	Bingham's New Cases, Common Pleas, 6 vols., 1834—1840
Bitt Prac Cas	Bittleston's Practice Cases in Chambers under the Judicature Acts, 1873 and 1875, 1 vol., 1875—1876
Bitt Rep in Ch	Bittleston's Reports in Chambers (Queen's Bench Division), 1 vol., 1883—1884
Bl Com	Blackstone's Commentaries
Bl D & Osb	Blackham, Dundas, and Osborne's Reports, Practice and Nisi Prius (Ireland), 1 vol., 1846—1848
Bli	Bligh's Reports, House of Lords, 4 vols., 1819—1821
Bli (N S) ..	Bligh's Reports, House of Lords, New Series, 11 vols., 1827—1837
Bos & P.	Bosanquet and Puller's Reports, Common Pleas, 3 vols., 1796—1804
Bos & P (N R)	Bosanquet and Puller's New Reports, Common Pleas, 2 vols., 1804—1807
Bract.	Bracton De Legibus et Consuetudinibus Angliæ
Bro. Abi	Sir J Brooke's Abridgment
Bro C C.	W. Brown's Chancery Reports, 4 vols., 1778—1794
Bro Ecc Rep	W. G. Brooke's Ecclesiastical Reports, Privy Council, 1 vol., 1850—1872
Bro. (N. O.)	Sir R Brooke's New Cases, 1 vol., 1515—1558
Bro. Parl Cas	J Brown's Cases in Parliament, 8 vols., 1702—1800
Bro. Supp. to Mol	M. P. Brown's Supplement to Morison's Dictionary of Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 5 vols.
Bro. Synop.	M. P Brown's Synopsis of Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 4 vols., 1832—1837
Brod. & Bing.	Broderip and Bingham's Reports, Common Pleas, 3 vols., 1819—1823

Brod. & F.	Brodrick and Fremantle's Ecclesiastical Reports, Privy Council, 1 vol., 1705—1864
Broun	Broun's Justiciary Reports (Scotland), 2 vols, 1842—1845
Brown & Lush	Browning and Lushington's Reports, Admiralty, 1 vol, 1863—1866
Brownl.	Brownlow and Goldesborough's Reports, Common Pleas, 2 parts, 1569—1624
Bruce	Bruce's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 1714—1715
Buchan.	Buchanan's Reports, Court of Session and Justiciary (Scotland), 1806—1813
Buck	Buck's Cases in Bankruptcy, 1 vol, 1816—1820
Bulst.	Bulstrode's Reports, King's Bench, fol, 3 parts 19 1 vol, 1610—1626
Bunb	Bunbury's Reports, Exchequer, fol, 1 vol, 1713—1741
Burr.	Burrow's Reports, King's Bench, 5 vols, 1750—1772
Burr. S C	Burrow's Settlement Cases, King's Bench, 1 vol., 1733—1776
Burrell	Burrell's Reports, Admiralty, ed by Marsden, 1 vol, 1648—1840
C A.	Court of Appeal
C B	Common Bench Reports, 18 vols, 1845—1856
C B (N S)	Common Bench Reports, New Series, 20 vols, 1856—1865
C C A	Court of Criminal Appeal
C C Ct Cas	Central Criminal Court Cases (Sessions Papers), 1834—(current)
C L R.	Common Law Reports, 3 vols, 1853—1855
C P D	Law Reports, Common Pleas Division, 5 vols, 1875—1880
C & P	Carrington and Payne's Reports, Nisi Prius, 9 vols, 1823—1841
Cab & El	Cababé and Ellis's Reports, Queen's Bench Division, 1 vol, 1882—1885
Cald Mag. Cas	Caldecott's Magistrates Cases, 1 vol, 1777—1786
Calth	Calthrop's City of London Cases, King's Bench, 1 vol, 1609—1618
Camp	Campbell's Reports, Nisi Prius, 4 vols, 1807—1816
Carp Pat Cas	Carpinael's Patent Cases, 2 vols, 1602—1842
Car & Kir	Carrington and Kirwan's Reports, Nisi Prius, 3 vols, 1843—1853
Car & M	Carrington and Marshman's Reports, Nisi Prius, 1 vol, 1841—1843
Cart	Carter's Reports, Common Pleas, fol, 1 vol, 1664—1673
Carth	Carthew's Reports, King's Bench, fol, 1 vol., 1687—1700
Cary	Cary's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol
Cas in Ch	Cases in Chancery, fol, 3 parts, 1600—1697
Cas. Pract. K. B	Cases of Practice, King's Bench, 1 vol, 1655—1776
Cas Sett	Cases of Settlements and Removals, 1 vol, 1689—1727
Cas temp Finch	Cases temp Finch, Chancery, fol, 1 vol., 1673—1680
Cas. temp King	Select Cases temp. King, Chancery, fol, 1 vol., 1724—1733
Cas temp. Talb.	Cases in Equity temp Talbot, fol, 1 vol, 1730—1737
Ch. (preceded by date)	Law Reports, Chancery Division, since 1890 (e.g., [1891] 1 Ch.)
Ch. App	Law Reports, Chancery Appeals, 10 vols., 1865—1875
Ch. D	Law Reports, Chancery Division, 45 vols., 1875—1890
Ch. Rob.	Christopher Robinson's Reports, Admiralty, 6 vols., 1798—1808

Char Pr Cas	Charley's New Practice Reports, 3 vols, 1875—1876
Char Cham Cas	Charley's Chamber Cases, 1 vol., 1875—1876
Chit	Chitty's Practice Reports, King's Bench, 2 vols, 1770—1822
Cl & Fin	Clark and Fennelly's Reports, House of Lords, 12 vols, 1831—1846
Clay.	Clayton's Reports and Pleas of Assises at Yorke, 1 vol, 1631—1650
Clif & Rick	Clifford and Rickards' Locus Standi Reports, 3 vols, 1873—1884
Clif & Steph	Clifford and Stephens' Locus Standi Reports, 2 vols, 1867—1872
Cockb & Rowe	Cockburn and Rowe's Election Cases, 1 vol, 1833
Co Ent	Coke's Entries
Co Inst	Coke's Institutes
Co Litt	Coke on Littleton (1 Inst)
Co Rep	Coke's Reports, 13 parts, 1572—1616
Coll.	Collyer's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols, 1844—1840
Coll Jurid	Collectanea Juridica, 2 vols
Colles	Colles' Cases in Parliament, 1 vol, 1697—1713
Colt	Coltman's Registration Cases, 1 vol, 1879—1885
Com.	Comyns' Reports, King's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer, fol, 2 vols, 1695—1740
Com. Cas	Commercial Cases, 1895—(current)
Com Dig	Comyns' Digest
Comb	Combebach's Reports, King's Bench, fol, 1 vol, 1685—1698
Con & Law	Connor and Lawson's Reports, Chancery (Ireland), 2 vols, 1841—1843
Cooke & Al	Cooke and Alcock's Reports, King's Bench (Ireland), 1 vol, 1833—1834
Cooke, Pr Cas	Cooke's Practice Reports, Common Pleas, 1 vol, 1706—1747
Cooke, Pr Reg	Cooke's Practical Register of the Common Pleas, 1 vol, 1702—1742
Coop. G	G Cooper's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol, 1792—1816
Coop Pr Cas	C P Cooper's Reports, Chancery Practice, 1 vol, 1837—1838
Coop temp Brough	O P Cooper's Cases temp Brougham, Chancery, 1 vol, 1833—1834
Coop temp Cott	O P Cooper's Cases temp Cottenham, Chancery 2 vols, 1846—1848 (and miscellaneous earlier cases)
Corb & D.	Corbett and Daniell's Election Cases, 1 vol, 1819
Couper	Couper's Justiciary Reports (Scotland), 5 vols, 1868—1885
Cowp	Cowper's Reports, King's Bench, 2 vols, 1774—1778
Cox, C C	E W Cox's Criminal Law Cases, 1843—(current)
Cox & Atk	Cox and Atkinson's Registration Appeal Cases, 1 vol, 1843—1846
Cox, Eq Cas	S O Cox's Equity Cases, 2 vols, 1745—1797
Cox, M. & H	Cox, Macrae, and Hertslet's County Courts Cases and Appeals, Vol I, 1846—1852
Cr & J.	Crompton and Jervis's Reports, Exchequer, 2 vols, 1830—1832
Cr. & M.	Crompton and Meeson's Reports, Exchequer, 2 vols, 1832—1834
Cr M. & R.	Crompton, Meeson, and Roscoe's Reports, Exchequer, 2 vols, 1834—1835
Cr. & Ph.	Craig and Phillips' Reports, Chancery, 1 vol, 1840—1841
Cr. App. Rep.	Cohen's Criminal Appeal Reports, 1909—(current)
Crav. & D.	Crawford and Dix's Circuit Cases (Ireland), 3 vols, 1838—1846

Craw & D. Abr. C	Crawford and Dix's Abridged Cases (Ireland), 1 vol. 1837—1838
Cress Insolv. Cas.	Cresswell's Insolvency Cases, 1 vol., 1827—1829
Cripps' Church Cas.	Cripps' Church and Clergy Cases, 2 parts, 1847—1850
Cro Car	Croke's Reports <i>temp.</i> Charles I., King's Bench and Common Pleas, 1 vol., 1625—1641
Cro Eliz.	Croke's Reports <i>temp.</i> Elizabeth, King's Bench and Common Pleas, 1 vol., 1582—1603
Cro Jac	Croke's Reports <i>temp.</i> James I., King's Bench and Common Pleas, 1 vol., 1603—1625
Cru Dig	Cruise's Digest of the Law of Real Property, 7 vols
Cunn	Cunningham's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol., 1734—1735
Curt	Curtis's Ecclesiastical Reports, 3 vols, 1834—1844
Dalr	Dalrymple's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland) fol., 1 vol., 1698—1720
Dan	Daniell's Reports, Exchequer in Equity, 1 vol., 1817—1823
Dan & Ll	Danson and Lloyd's Mercantile Cases, 1 vol., 1828—1829
Dav & Mer	Davison and Meuvale's Reports, Queen's Bench, 1 vol., 1843—1844
Dav Pat Cas	Davies' Patent Cases, 1 vol., 1785—1816
Dav Ir	Davys' (or Davies' or Davy's) Reports (Ireland), 1 vol., 1604—1611
Day	Day's Election Cases, 1 vol., 1892—1893
Dea & Sw	Deane and Swabey's Ecclesiastical Reports, 1 vol., 1855—1857
Deac	Deacon's Reports, Bankruptcy, 4 vols, 1834—1840
Deac & Ch	Deacon and Chitty's Reports, Bankruptcy, 4 vols, 1832—1835
Dears & B	Dearsly and Bell's Crown Cases Reserved, 1 vol., 1856—1858
Dears C C	Dearsly's Crown Cases Reserved, 1 vol., 1852—1856
Deas & And	Deas and Anderson's Decisions (Scotland), 5 vols, 1829—1832
De G	De Gex's Reports, Bankruptcy, 1 vol., 1844—1848
De G F & J	De Gex, Fisher, and Jones's Reports, Chancery, 4 vols, 1859—1862
De G & J	De Gex and Jones's Reports, Chancery, 4 vols, 1857—1859
De G J & Sm	De Gex, Jones, and Smith's Reports, Chancery, 4 vols, 1862—1865
De G M & G	De Gex, Macnaghten, and Gordon's Reports, Chancery, 8 vols, 1851—1857
De G & Sm	De Gex and Smale's Reports, Chancery, 5 vols, 1846—1852
Delane	Delane's Decisions, Revision Courts, 1 vol., 1832—1835
Den.	Denison's Crown Cases Reserved, 2 vols, 1844—1852
Dick	Dickens' Reports, Chancery, 2 vols, 1559—1798
	Justinian's Digest or Pandects
	Dirlton's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol., 1 vol., 1665—1677
Dods	Dodson's Reports, Admiralty, 2 vols, 1811—1822
Donnelly	Donnelly's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol., 1836—1837
Doug El Cas	Douglas' Election Cases, 4 vols, 1774—1776
Doug (K. B.)	Douglas' Reports, King's Bench, 4 vols, 1778—1785
Dow	Dow's Reports, House of Lords, 6 vols, 1812—1818
Dow & Ol.	Dow and Clark's Reports, House of Lords, 2 vols, 1827—1832
Dow & L.	Dowling and Lowndes' Practice Reports, 7 vols., 1843—1849

Dow & Ry. (K B)	Dowling and Ryland's Reports, King's Bench, 9 vols., 1822—1827
Dow. & Ry. (M O)	Dowling and Ryland's Magistrates' Cases, 4 vols., 1822—1827
Dow. & Ry (N F)	Dowling and Ryland's Reports, Nisi Prius, 1 part, 1822—1823
Dowl	Dowling's Practice Reports, 9 vols, 1830—1841
Dowl (N S)	Dowling's Practice Reports, New Series, 2 vols., 1841—1843
Dr & Wal	Drury and Walsh's Reports, Chancery (Ireland), 2 vols, 1837—1841
Dr & War.	Drury and Warren's Reports, Chancery (Ireland), 4 vols, 1841—1843
Drew	Drewry's Reports, Chancery, 4 vols, 1852—1859
Drew & Sm.	Drewry and Smale's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols, 1859—1865
Drinkwater	Drinkwater's Reports, Common Pleas, 1 vol, 1839
Drury temp Nap	Drury's Reports temp Napier, Chancery (Ireland), 1 vol, 1858—1859
Drury temp Sug	Drury's Reports temp Sugden, Chancery (Ireland), 1 vol, 1811—1844
Dugd Orig.	Dugdale's Origines Juridicales
Dunl (Ot of Sess)	Dunlop, Court of Session Cases (Scotland), 2nd series, 24 vols, 1838—1862
Dunning	Dunning's Reports, King's Bench, 1 vol., 1753—1754
Durie .	Durie's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol, 1 vol, 1621—1642
Dyer ..	Dyer's Reports, King's Bench, 3 vols, 1513—1581
E & B	Ellis and Blackburn's Reports, Queen's Bench, 8 vols, 1852—1858
E & E	Ellis and Ellis's Reports, Queen's Bench, 3 vols, 1858—1861
E B & E.	Ellis, Blackburn, and Ellis's Reports, Queen's Bench, 1 vol, 1858—1860
Eag & Y	Eagle and Younge's Tithe Cases, 4 vols, 1223—1825
East	East's Reports, King's Bench, 16 vols, 1600—1812
East, P C.	East's Pleas of the Crown
Ecc & Ad	Spinks' Ecclesiastical and Admiralty Reports, 2 vols. 1853—1855
Eden	Eden's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols., 1757—1766
Edgar	Edgar's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol, 1724—1725
Edw .	Edwards' Reports, Admiralty, 1 vol, 1808—1812
Elchies	Elchies' Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 2 vols, 1733—1754
Eng Pr Cas	Roscoe's English Prize Cases, 2 vols, 1745—1858
Eq Cas Abr	Abridgment of Cases in Equity, fol, 2 vols., 1667—1744
Eq Rep.	Equity Reports, 3 vols., 1853—1855
Esp. . .	Espinasse's Reports, Nisi Prius, 6 vols, 1793—1810
Exch	Exchequer Reports (Welsby, Hurlstone, and Gordon), 11 vols, 1847—1856
Ex. D. *	Law Reports, Exchequer Division, 5 vols, 1875—1880
F. & F. ..	Poster and Finlason's Reports, Nisi Prius, 4 vols., 1856—1867
F (Ot. of Sess)	Fraser, Court of Session Cases (Scotland), 5th series, 1898—1906
Fac. Coll. (with date)	Faculty of Advocates, Collection of Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol, 1st and 2nd series, 21 vols., 1744—1825

Fac. Coll. (N. S.) (with date)	Faculty of Advocates, Collection of Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), New Series, 16 vols., 1826—1841
Falc.	Falconer's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 2 vols., fol., 1744—1761
Falc & Fitz	Falconer and Fitzherbert's Election Cases, 1 vol., 1836—1838
Ferg	Ferguson's Consistorial Decisions (Scotland), 1 vol., 1811—1817
Fitz-G	Fitz-Gibbons' Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol., 1728—1731
Fitz Nat Brev. Fl & K.	Fitzherbert's Natura Brevium Flanagan and Kelly's Reports, Rolls Court (Ireland), 1 vol., 1840—1842
Fonbl.	Foublanque's Reports, Bankruptcy, 2 parts, 1849—1852
For.	Forrest's Reports, Exchequer, 1 vol., 1800—1801
Forb.	Forbes' Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol., 1 vol., 1705—1713
Fort De Laud	Fortescue, De Laudibus Legum Angliæ
Fortes Rep.	Fortescue's Reports, fol., 1 vol., 1692—1736
Fost.	Foster's Crown Cases, 1 vol., 1743—1760
Fount	Fountainhall's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol., 2 vols., 1678—1712
Fox & S Ir	M. C. Fox and T. B. O. Smith's Reports, King's Bench (Ireland), 2 vols., 1822—1825
Fox & S Reg	J. S. Fox and O. L. Smith's Registration Cases, 1 vol., 1886—1895
Freem (OH)	Freeman's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol., 1660—1706
Freem (K. B.)	Freeman's Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, 1 vol., 1670—1704
Gal. & Dav.	Gale and Davison's Reports, Queen's Bench, 3 vols., 1841—1843
Gale	Gale's Reports, Exchequer, 2 vols., 1835—1836
Gib Cod	Gibson's Codex Juris Ecclesiastici Anglicani
Giff	Giffard's Reports, Chancery, 5 vols., 1867—1868
Gilb	Gilbert's Cases in Law and Equity, 1 vol., 1713—1714
Gilb O P.	Gilbert's History and Practice of the Court of Common Pleas
Gilb (OH)	Gilbert's Reports, Chancery and Exchequer, fol., 1 vol., 1706—1726
Gilm & F.	Gilmour and Falconer's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 2 parts, Part I (Gilmour) 1661—1666, Part II (Falconer) 1681—1686
Gl & J.	Glyn and Jameson's Reports, Bankruptcy, 2 vols., 1819—1828
Glanv	Glanville, De Legibus et Consuetudinibus Regni Angliæ
Glanv El. Cas.	Glanville's Election Cases, 1 vol., 1623—1624
Glascock	Glascock's Reports (Ireland), 1 vol., 1831—1832
Godb.	Godbolt's Reports, King's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer, 1 vol., 1674—1637
Gouldsb.	Gouldsbrough's Reports, Queen's Bench and King's Bench, 1 vol., 1586—1601
Gow	Gow's Reports, Nisi Prius, 1 vol., 1818—1820
Gwill	Gwillm's Tithe Cases, 4 vols., 1224—1824
H. & C.	Hurlstone and Coltman's Reports, Exchequer, 4 vols., 1862—1866
H. & N.	Hurlstone and Norman's Reports, Exchequer, 7 vols., 1856—1862

H & Tw. ..	Hall and Twells' Reports, Chancery, 2 vols., 1848—1850
H & W.	Hurlstone and Walmsley's Reports, Exchequer, 1 vol., 1840—1841
H L. Cas.	Clark's Reports, House of Lords, 11 vols., 1847—1866
Hag. Adm	Haggard's Reports, Admiralty, 3 vols., 1822—1838
Hag. Con	Haggard's Consistorial Reports, 2 vols., 1789—1821
Hag. Ecc	Haggard's Ecclesiastical Reports, 4 vols., 1827—1833
Hailes .	Hailes's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 2 vols., 1766—1791
Hale, C L	Hale's Common Law
Hale, P O	Hale's Pleas of the Crown, 2 vols
Har & Ruth	Harrison and Rutherford's Reports, Common Pleas, 1 vol., 1865—1866
Har & W	Harrison and Wollaston's Reports, King's Bench and Bail Court, 2 vols., 1835—1836
Harc	Harcarse's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol., 1 vol., 1681—1691
Hard	Hardres' Reports, Exchequer, fol., 1 vol., 1655—1669
Hare	Hare's Reports, Chancery, 11 vols., 1841—1853
Hawk P O	Hawkins's Pleas of the Crown, 2 vols
Hayes	Hayes's Reports, Exchequer (Ireland), 1 vol., 1830—1832
Hayes & Jo ..	Hayes and Jones's Reports, Exchequer (Ireland), 1 vol., 1832—1834
Hem & M	Hemming and Miller's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols., 1862—1865
Het . .	Hetley's Reports, Common Pleas, fol., 1 vol., 1627—1631
Hob . .	Hobart's Reports, Common Pleas, fol., 1 vol., 1613—1625
Hodg . .	Hodges' Reports, Common Pleas, 3 vols., 1835—1837
Hog. . ..	Hogan's Reports, Rolls Court (Ireland), 2 vols., 1816—1834
Holt (ADM) .	W Holt's Rule of the Road Cases, Admiralty, 1 vol., 1863—1867
Holt (Eq)	W Holt's Equity Reports, 1 vol., 1845
Holt (K B)	Sir John Holt's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol., 1688—1710
Holt (N F)	F Holt's Reports, Nisi Prius, 1 vol., 1815—1817
Home, Ct of Sess	Home's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol., 1 vol., 1735—1744
Hop. & Colt .	Hopwood and Coltman's Registration Cases, 2 vols., 1868—1878
Hop & Ph ..	Hopwood and Philbrick's Registration Cases, 1 vol., 1863—1867
Horn & H. .	Horn and Hurlstone's Reports, Exchequer, 2 vols., 1838—1839
Hov Suppl. .	Hovenden's Supplement to Vesey Jun's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols., 1763—1817
Hud & B .	Hudson and Brooke's Reports, King's Bench and Exchequer (Ireland), 2 vols., 1827—1831
Hume .	Hume's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 1 vol., 1781—1822
Hut ..	Hutton's Reports, Common Pleas, fol., 1 vol., 1617—1638
Hy. Bl.	Henry Blackstone's Reports, Common Pleas, 2 vols., 1768—1796
I. C. L. R. ..	Irish Common Law Reports, 17 vols., 1849—1866
I. Ch. R. .	Irish Chancery Reports, 17 vols., 1850—1867
I. Eq. R. ..	Irish Equity Reports, 13 vols., 1838—1861
I. L. R.	Irish Law Reports, 13 vols., 1838—1861

I. L. T.	Irish Law Times, 1867—(current)
I. R. (preceded by date)	Irish Reports, since 1893 (e.g. [1894] 1 I. R.)
I. R. C. L.	Irish Reports, Common Law, 11 vols., 1866—1877
I. R. Eq.	Irish Reports, Equity, 11 vols., 1866—1877
Ir. Circ. Cas.	Irish Circuit Cases, 1 vol., 1841—1843
Ir. Jur.	Irish Jurist, 18 vols., 1849—1866
Ir. L. Rec 1st ser	Law Recorder (Ireland) 1st series, 4 vols., 1827—1831
Ir. L. Rec (N. S.)	Law Recorder (Ireland) New Series, 6 vols., 1833—1838
Irv	Irvine's Justiciary Reports (Scotland), 5 vols., 1852—1867
J. Bridg.	Sir John Bridgman's Reports, Common Pleas, fol., 1 vol., 1613—1621
J. P.	Justice of the Peace, 1837—(current)
J. Shaw, Just.	J. Shaw's Justiciary Reports (Scotland), 1 vol., 1848—1852
Jac	Jacob's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol., 1821—1823
Jac & W	Jacob and Walker's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols., 1819—1821
Jebb, C. C.	Jebb's Crown Cases Reserved (Ireland), 1 vol., 1822—1840
Jebb & B	Jebb and Bourke's Reports, Queen's Bench (Ireland), 1 vol., 1841—1842
Jebb & S	Jebb and Symes' Reports, Queen's Bench (Ireland), 2 vols., 1838—1841
Jenk	Jenkins' Reports, 1 vol., 1220—1623
Jo & Car	Jones and Caroy's Reports, Exchequer (Ireland), 1 vol., 1838—1839
Jo & Lat	Jones and La Touche's Reports, Chancery (Ireland), 3 vols., 1844—1846
Jo Ex Ir	T. Jones' Reports, Exchequer (Ireland), 2 vols., 1834—1838
John	Johuson's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol., 1858—1860
John & H.	Johnson and Hemming's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols., 1860—1862
Jur	Jurist Reports, 18 vols., 1837—1854
Jur (N. S.)	Jurist Reports, New Series, 12 vols., 1855—1867
Just Inst	Justinian's Institutes
K. & G	Keane and Grant's Registration Cases, 1 vol., 1854—1862
K. & J	Kay and Johnson's Reports, Chancery, 4 vols., 1853—1858
K. B. (preceded by date)	Law Reports, King's Bench Division, since 1900 (e.g. [1901] 2 K. B.)
Kames, Dict. Dec.	Kames, Dictionary of Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol., 2 vols., 1540—1741
Kames, Rem. Dec.	Kames, Remarkable Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 2 vols., 1716—1752
Kames, Sel. Dec.	Kames, Select Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 1 vol., 1752—1768
Kay	Kay's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol., 1853—1854
Keb	Keble's Reports, fol., 3 vols., 1861—1877
Keen	Keen's Reports, Rolls Court, 2 vols., 1836—1838
Keil.	Keilway's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol., 1327—1578
Kel.	Sir John Kelyng's Reports, Crown Cases, fol., 1 vol., 1662—1707
Kel W.	W. Kelynge's Reports, fol., 1 vol., Chancery, 1730—1732, King's Bench, fol., 1731—1734
Keny.	Kenyon's Notes of Cases, King's Bench, 2 vols., 1753—1759

Keny (OH) ..	Chancery Cases in Vol. II. of Kenyon's Notes of Cases, 1763—1764
Kilkerran .	Kilkerran's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol. 1 vol., 1738—1752
Knapp	Knapp's Reports, Privy Council, 3 vols., 1829—1836
Kn. & Omb.	Knapp and Ombler's Election Cases, 1 vol., 1824—1835
L. A.	Lord Advocate
L & G temp. Plunk	Lloyd and Goold's Reports temp Plunkett, Chancery (Ireland), 1 vol., 1834—1839
L & G temp Sugd	Lloyd and Goold's Reports temp Sugden, Chancery (Ireland), 1 vol., 1835
L & Welsb.	Lloyd and Welsby's Commercial and Mercantile Cases, 1 vol., 1829—1830
L. G. R.	Local Government Reports, 1902—(current)
L. J.	Law Journal, 1866—(current)
L. J. (ADM)	Law Journal, Admiralty, 1865—1875
L. J. (BOY)	Law Journal, Bankruptcy, 1832—1880
L. J. (OH)	Law Journal, Chancery, 1822—(current)
L. J. (O P.)	Law Journal, Common Pleas, 1822—1875
L. J. (ECCLES)	Law Journal, Ecclesiastical Cases, 1866—1875
L. J. (EX)	Law Journal, Exchequer, 1830—1875
L. J. (EX EQ)	Law Journal, Exchequer in Equity, 1835—1841
L. J. (K B or Q. B.)	Law Journal, King's Bench or Queen's Bench, 1822—(current)
L. J. (M O)	Law Journal, Magistrates' Cases, 1826—1896
L. J. N O	Law Journal, Notes of Cases, 1866—1892 (from 1893, see Law Journal)
L. J. (O S)	Law Journal, Old Series, 10 vols., 1823—1831
L. J. (P)	Law Journal, Probate, Divorce and Admiralty, 1875—(current)
L. J. (P & M)	Law Journal, Probate and Matrimonial Cases, 1858—1859, 1866—1875
L. J. (P O)	Law Journal, Privy Council, 1865—(current)
L. J. (P M & A)	Law Journal, Probate, Matrimonial and Admiralty, 1860—1865
L. M. & P	Lowndes, Maxwell, and Pollock's Reports, Bail Court and Practice, 2 vols., 1850—1851
L. R.	Law Reports
L. R. A & E.	Law Reports, Admiralty and Ecclesiastical Cases, 4 vols., 1865—1875
L. R. C. O. R.	Law Reports, Crown Cases Reserved, 2 vols., 1865—1875
L. R. C. P.	Law Reports, Common Pleas, 10 vols., 1865—1875
L. R. Eq.	Law Reports, Equity Cases, 20 vols., 1865—1875
L. R. Exch	Law Reports, Exchequer, 10 vols., 1865—1875
L. R. H. L.	Law Reports, English and Irish Appeals and Peerage Claims, House of Lords, 7 vols., 1866—1875
L. R. Ind. App	Law Reports, Indian Appeals, Privy Council, 1873—(current)
L. R. Ind. App. Supp Vol.	Law Reports, Indian Appeals, Privy Council, Supplementary Volume, 1872—1873
L. R. Ir.	Law Reports (Ireland), Chancery and Common Law, 32 vols., 1877—1893
L. R. P. C.	Law Reports, Privy Council, 6 vols., 1865—1875
L. R. P & D	Law Reports, Probate and Divorce, 3 vols., 1865—1875
L. R. Q. B.	Law Reports, Queen's Bench, 10 vols., 1865—1875
L. R. Sc. & Div.	Law Reports, Scotch and Divorce Appeals, House of Lords, 2 vols., 1866—1875
L. T.	Law Times Reports, 1859—(current)
L. T. Jo.	Law Times Newspaper, 1843—(current)
L. T. (O. S.)	Law Times Reports, Old Series, 34 vols., 1843—1899

Lane	Lane's Reports, Exchequer, fol , 1 vol , 1605—1611
Lat. .	Latch's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol., 1825—1828
Laws. Reg. Cas	Lawson's Registration Cases, 1885—(current)
Ld. Raym .	Lord Raymond's Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, 3 vols, 1694—1732
Leach .	Leach's Crown Cases, 3 vols , 1730—1814
Lee	Sir G Lee's Ecclesiastical Judgments, 2 vols , 1752—1758
Lee temp Hard	T Lee's Cases temp. Hardwicke, King's Bench, 1 vol , 1733—1738
Le & Ca.	Leigh and Cave's Crown Cases Reserved, 1 vol , 1861—1865
Leon.	Leonard's Reports, King's Bench, Common Pleas and Exchequer, fol , 4 parts, 1552—1615
Lev	Levin's Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, fol., 3 vols , 1660—1696
Lew O C	Lewin's Crown Cases on the Northern Circuit, 2 vols , 1822—1838
Ley	Ley's Reports, King's Bench, fol , 1 vol , 1609—1629
Lib Ass	Liber Assisarum, Year Books, 1—51 Edw III
Lilly	Lilly's Reports and Pleadings of Cases in Assize, fol., 1 vol.
Litt	Littleton's Reports, Common Pleas, fol , 1 vol , 1627—1631
Lofft	Lofft's Reports, King's Bench, fol , 1 vol , 1772—1774
Long & T	Longfield and Townsend's Reports, Exchequer (Ireland), 1 vol , 1841—1842
Lud E C	Luders' Election Cases, 3 vols , 1784—1787
Lumley, P L C	Lumley's Poor Law Cases, 2 vols , 1834—1842
Lush	Lushington's Reports, Admiralty, 1 vol , 1859—1862
Lut	Sir E Lutwyche's Entries and Reports, Common Pleas, 2 vols , 1682—1704
Lut Reg Cas	A J Lutwyche's Registration Cases, 2 vols , 1843—1853
Lynd.	Lyndwood, Provinciale, fol , 1 vol.
M & S .	Maule and Selwyn's Reports, King's Bench, 6 vols , 1813—1817
M & W .	Meeson and Welsby's Reports, Exchequer, 16 vols , 1836—1847
Mac & G	Macnaghten and Gordon's Reports, Chancery, 3 vols , 1849—1852
Mac & H	Macrae and Heitslet's Insolvency Cases, 1 vol , 1847—1852
M'Cle	M'Clelland's Reports, Exchequer, 1 vol , 1824
M'Cle & Yo	M'Clelland and Younge's Reports, Exchequer, 1 vol., 1824—1825
Macfarlane .	Macfarlane's Jury Trials, Court of Session (Scotland), 3 parts, 1838—1839
Macf & Rob	Maclean and Robinson's Scotch Appeals (House of Lords), 1 vol , 1839
Macph. (Ct of Sess)	Macpherson, Court of Session (Scotland), 3rd series. 11 vols , 1862—1873
Macq .	Macqueen's Scotch Appeals, House of Lords, 4 vols., 1849—1865
Macr. .. .	Macrory's Patent Cases, 2 parts, 1847—1856
Madd. . . .	Maddock's Reports, Chancery, 6 vols , 1815—1821
Madd. & G. . .	Maddock and Geldart's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol., 1819—1822 (Vol. VI. of Madd.)
Madox . . .	Madox's Formulæ Anglicanum
Madox, Exch. . .	Madox's History and Antiquities of the Exchequer. 2 vols.
Man. & G. . .	Manning and Granger's Reports, Common Pleas 7 vols., 1840—1845

Man & Ry (K. B.)	Manning and Ryland's Reports, King's Bench, 5 vols., 1827—1830
Man & Ry (M. C.)	Manning and Ryland's Magistrates' Cases, 3 vols., 1827—1830
Mans.	Manson's Bankruptcy and Company Cases, 1893—(current)
Mar. L. C.	Maritime Law Reports (Crockford), 3 vols., 1860—1871
March	March's Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, 1 vol., 1639—1642
Marr	Marriott's Decisions, Admiralty, 1 vol., 1776—1779
Marsh.	Marshall's Reports, Common Pleas, 2 vols., 1813—1816
Mayn.	Maynard's Reports, Exchequer Memoranda of Edw I and Year Books of Edw II, Year Books, Part I, 1273—1326
Meg	Megone's Companies Acts Cases, 2 vols., 1839—1891
Mer	Merivale's Reports, Chancery, 3 vols., 1815—1817
Milw	Milward's Ecclesiastical Reports (Ireland), 1 vol., 1819—1843
Mod Rep	Modern Reports, 12 vols., 1669—1755
Mol	Molloy's Reports, Chancery (Ireland), 3 vols., 1808—1831
Mont	Montagu's Reports, Bankruptcy, 1 vol., 1829—1832
Mont & A	Montagu and Ajyton's Reports, Bankruptcy, 3 vols., 1832—1838
Mont & B	Montagu and Bhgl's Reports, Bankruptcy, 1 vol., 1832—1833
Mont & Ch	Montagu and Chitty's Reports, Bankruptcy, 1 vol., 1838—1840
Mont D & De G	Montagu, Deacon, and De Gex's Reports, Bankruptcy, 3 vols., 1840—1844
Mont & M	Montagu and Macarthur's Reports, Bankruptcy, 1 vol., 1826—1830
Moo P O O	Moore's Privy Council Cases, 15 vols., 1836—1863
Moo P O O (N S)	Moore's Privy Council Cases, New Series, 9 vols., 1862—1873
Moo Ind App.	Moore's Indian Appeal Cases, Privy Council, 14 vols., 1836—1872
Moo & P	Moore and Payne's Reports, Common Pleas, 5 vols., 1827—1831
Moo & S	Moore and Scott's Reports, Common Pleas, 4 vols., 1831—1834
Mood & M	Moody and Malkin's Reports, Nisi Prius, 1 vol., 1826—1830
Mood & R	Moody and Robinson's Reports, Nisi Prius, 2 vols., 1830—1844
Mood O O	Moody's Crown Cases Reserved, 2 vols., 1824—1844
Moore (K. B.)	Sir F. Moore's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol., 1485—1620
Moore (C. P.)	J. B. Moore's Reports, Common Pleas, 12 vols., 1817—1827
Mor Diet.	Morison's Dictionary of Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), 43 vols., 1532—1808
Morr *	Morrell's Reports, Bankruptcy, 10 vols., 1884—1893
Mos	Moseley's Reports, Chancery, fol., 1 vol., 1726—1730
Murp. & H.	Murphy and Hurlstone's Reports, Exchequer, 1 vol., 1837
Murr	Murray's Reports, Jury Court (Scotland), 6 vols., 1816—1830
My. & Cr.	Myne and Craig's Reports, Chancery, 5 vols., 1835—1841
My & K.	Mylne and Keen's Reports, Chancery, 3 vols., 1832—1835

Nels	Nelson's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol, 1625—1692
Nev & M (κ β)	Neville and Manning's Reports, King's Bench, 6 vols., 1832—1836
Nev & M (μ σ)	Neville and Manning's Magistrates' Cases, 3 vols., 1832—1836
Nev & P. (κ β)	Neville and Perry's Reports, King's Bench, 3 vols., 1836—1838
Nev & P (μ σ)	Neville and Perry's Magistrates' Cases, 1 vol, 1836—1837
New Mag Cas	New Magistrates' Cases (Bittleston, Wise and Painell), 2 vols, 1844—1848
New Pract. Cas	New Practice Cases (Bittleston and Wise), 3 vols, 1844—1848
New Rep	New Reports, 6 vols, 1862—1865
New Sess Cas	New Sessions Magistrates' Cases (Carrow, Hamerton, Allen, etc.), 4 vols, 1844—1851
Nolan	Nolan's Magistrates' Cases, 1 vol, 1791—1793
Notes of Cases	Notes of Cases in the Ecclesiastical and Maritime Courts, 7 vols, 1841—1850
Noy	Noy's Reports, King's Bench, fol, 1 vol., 1558—1649
O Bridg	Sir Orlando Bridgman's Reports, Common Pleas, 1 vol, 1660—1666
O'M & H	O'Malley and Hardcastle's Election Cases, 1869—(current)
Owen	Owen's Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, fol, 1 vol, 1557—1614
P (preceded by date)	Law Reports, Probate, Divorce, and Admiralty Division, since 1890 (e.g., [1891] P)
P D	Law Reports, Probate, Divorce, and Admiralty Division, 15 vols, 1875—1890
P Wms	Peere Williams' Reports, Chancery and King's Bench, 3 vols, 1693—1735
Palm	Palmer's Reports, King's Bench, fol, 1 vol, 1619—1629
Park	Parker's Reports, Exchequer, fol, 1 vol, 1743—1766
Pat App	Paton's Scotch Appeals, House of Lords, 6 vols, 1726—1822
Pater App	Paterson's Scotch Appeals, House of Lords, 2 vols, 1851—1873
Peake	Peake's Reports, Nisi Prius, 1 vol, 1790—1794
Peake, Add Cas	Peake's Additional Cases, Nisi Prius, 1 vol, 1795—1812
Peck	Peckwell's Election Cases, 2 vols, 1803—1804
Per & Dav	Perry and Davison's Reports, Queen's Bench, 4 vols, 1838—1841
Per & Kn	Perry and Knapp's Election Cases, 1 vol, 1833
Pl	Phillips' Reports, Chancery, 2 vols, 1841—1849
Phil El Cas	Phillips' Election Cases, 1 vol, 1780
Phillum.	J. Phillimore's Ecclesiastical Reports, 3 vols, 1754—1821
Phillum. Eccl Jud	Sir R Phillimore's Ecclesiastical Judgments, 1 vol., 1867—1875
Pig & R	Pigott and Rodwell's Registration Cases, 1 vol, 1843—1845
Pitc.	Pitcairn's Criminal Trials (Scotland), 3 vols, 1488—1624
Plowd.	Plowden's Reports, fol, 2 vols, 1550—1579
Poll.	Polluxfen's Reports, King's Bench, fol, 1 vol, 1670—1682
Poph.	Popham's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol, 1691—1627

Pow R & D.	Power, Rodwell, and Dew's Election Cases, 2 vols., 1848—1856
Prec Ch.	Precedents in Chancery, fol., 1 vol., 1689—1722
Price	Price's Reports, Exchequer, 13 vols., 1814—1824
Q. B.	Queen's Bench Reports (Adolphus and Ellis, New Series), 18 vols., 1841—1852
Q B (preceded by date)	Law Reports, Queen's Bench Division, 1891—1901 (e.g., [1891] 1 Q. B.)
Q. B. D.	Law Reports, Queen's Bench Division, 25 vols., 1875—1890
R	The Reports, 15 vols., 1893—1895
R (Ct of Sess)	Bettie, Court of Session Cases (Scotland), 4th series, 25 vols., 1873—1898
P O	Reports of Patent Cases, 1884—(current)
R	Revised Reports
R S O	Rules of the Supreme Court
Rast	Rastell's Entries
Ravn	Rayner's Tithe Cases, 3 vols., 1575—1782
Real Prop Cas	Real Property Cases, 2 vols., 1843—1847
Rep Ch	Reports in Chancery, fol., 3 vols., 1615—1710
Rick & M	Rickards and Michael's Locus Standi Reports, 1 vol., 1885—1889
Rick & S	Rickards and Saunders' Locus Standi Reports, 1 vol., 1890—1894
Ridg temp H	Ridgeway's Reports, temp Hardwicke, 1 vol., King's Bench, 1733—1736, Chancery, 1744—1746
Ridg L & S	Ridgeway, Lapp, and Schoales' Reports (Ireland), 1 vol., 1793—1795
Ridg. Parl Rep	Ridgeway's Parliamentary Reports (Ireland), 3 vols., 1781—1796
Rob Eccl	Robertson's Ecclesiastical Reports, 2 vols., 1844—1853
Rob L & W	Roberts, Leeming, and Wallis' New County Court Cases, 1 vol., 1819—1851
Robert App	Robertson's Scotch Appeals, House of Lords, 1 vol., 1709—1727
Robin App	Robinson's Scotch Appeals, House of Lords, 2 vols., 1840—1841
Roll Abr	Rolle's Abridgment of the Common Law, fol., 2 vols
Roll Rep	Rolle's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 2 vols., 1614—1625
Rom	Romilly's Notes of Cases in Equity, 1 part, 1772—1787
Rose	Rose's Reports, Bankruptcy, 2 vols., 1810—1816
Ross, L. O.	Ross's Leading Cases in Commercial Law (England and Scotland), 3 vols.
Rowe	Rowe's Reports (England and Ireland), 1 vol., 1798—1823
Rul Cas	Campbell's Ruling Cases, 25 vols.
Russ	Russell's Reports, Chancery, 5 vols., 1824—1829
Russ. & M	Russell and Mylne's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols., 1829—1833
Russ. & Ry.	Russell and Ryan's Crown Cases Reserved, 1 vol., 1800—1823
Ry & Can Cas	Railway and Canal Cases, 7 vols., 1835—1854
Ry & Can Tr Cas	Railway and Canal Traffic Cases, 1855—(current)
Ry & M	Ryan and Moody's Reports, Nisi Prius, 1 vol., 1823—1826
S C.	Same Case
S. C (preceded by date)	Court of Session Cases (Scotland), since 1906 (e.g., [1906] S. C.)
S.-G.	Solicitor-General
Saint	Saint's Digest of Registration Cases, 1843—1906, 1 vol

ABBREVIATIONS.

xlii

Salk.	Salkeld's Reports, King's Bench, 3 vols., 1689—1712
Sau. & Sc.	.	..	Saunders and Scully's Reports, Rolls Court (Ireland), 1 vol., 1837—1840
Saund	.	.	Saunders's Reports, King's Bench, 2 vols., 1666—1673
Saund. & A.	.	.	Saunders and Austan's Locus Standi Reports, 2 vols., 1895—1904
Saund. & B			Saunders and Bidder's Locus Standi Reports, 1905— (current)
Saund & O	..		Saunders and Cole's Reports, Bail Court, 2 vols., 1846 —1848
Saund. & M.	.	.	Saunders and Macrae's County Courts and Insolvency Cases (County Courts Cases and Appeals, Vols. II. and III.), 2 vols., 1852—1858
Sav	.		Savile's Reports, Common Pleas, fol., 1 vol., 1580— 1591
Say	.	.	Sayer's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol., 1751— 1756
Sc Jur			Scottish Jurist, 46 vols., 1829—1873
Sc L R			Scottish Law Reporter, 1865—(current)
Sch & Lef			Schoales and Lefroy's Reports, Chancery (Ireland), 2 vols., 1802—1806
Sc R R			Scots Revised Reports
Scott			Scott's Reports, Common Pleas, 8 vols., 1834—1840
Scott (N R)			Scott's New Reports, Common Pleas, 8 vols., 1840— 1845
Sea & Sm.			Searle and Smith's Reports, Probate and Divorce, 1 vol., 1859—1860
Sel Cas. Ch			Select Cases in Chancery, fol., 1 vol., 1685—1698 (Pt. III of Cas in Ch)
Sess Cas (K R)			Sessions Settlement Cases, King's Bench, 2 vols., 1710—1747
Sh & MacI			Shaw and Maclellan's Scotch Appeals, House of Lords, 3 vols., 1835—1838
Sh (Ct of Sess)			Shaw, Court of Session Cases (Scotland), 1st series, 16 vols., 1821—1838
Sh. Dig	.		P Shaw's Digest of Decisions (Scotland), ed by Bell and Lamond, 3 vols., 1726—1868
Sh Just	.		P Shaw's Justiciary Decisions (Scotland), 1 vol., 1819—1831
Sh Sc App	.		P. Shaw's Scotch Appeals, House of Lords, 2 vols., 1821—1824
Sh. Teind Ct.			P. Shaw's Teind Court Decisions (Scotland), 1 vol., 1821—1831
Shep Touch.			Sheppard's Touchstone of Common Assurances
Show			Shower's Reports, King's Bench, 2 vols., 1678—1695
Show. Parl Cas			Shower's Cases in Parliament, fol., 1 vol., 1694— 1699
Sid.			Siderfin's Reports, King's Bench, Common Pleas and Exchequer, fol., 2 vols., 1657—1670
Sim			Simons' Reports, Chancery, 17 vols., 1826—1852
Sim. (N S)	.		Simons' Reports, Chancery, New Series, 2 vols., 1850—1852
Sim. & St.	.		Simons and Stuart's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols., 1822 —1826
Skir.			Skinner's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol., 1691— 1697
Sm. & Bat.	.		Smith and Betty's Reports, King's Bench (Ireland), 1 vol., 1824—1825
Sm. & G	..		Smale and Giffard's Reports, Chancery, 3 vols., 1852 —1858
Smith, K. B	.		J. P. Smith's Reports, King's Bench, 3 vols., 1803— 1806
Smith, L. O.			Smith's Leading Cases, 2 vols.
Smith, Reg. Cas.			O. L. Smith's Registration Cases, 1895—(current)

Smythe	Smythe's Reports, Common Pleas (Ireland), 1 vol., 1839—1840
Sol Jo	Solicitors' Journal, 1856—(current)
Spence	Spence's Equitable Jurisdiction of the Court of Chancery
Spinks	Spinks' Prize Court Cases, 2 parts, 1854—1856
Stair Rep	Stair's Decisions, Court of Session (Scotland), fol., 2 vols., 1661—1681
Stark	Starkie's Reports, Nisi Prius, 3 vols, 1814—1823
Stat R & O Rev	Statutory Rules and Orders Revised
State Tr	State Trials, 34 vols., 1163—1820
State Tr (N s)	State Trials, New Series, 8 vols, 1820—1858
Story	Story's Commentaries on Equity Jurisprudence
Stra	Strange's Reports, 2 vols., 1716—1747
Stu M & P	Stuart, Milne, and Peddie's Reports (Scotland), 2 vols, 1861—1863
Sty.	Style's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol, 1646—1655
Sw	Swabey's Reports, Admiralty, 1 vol, 1855—1859
Sw. & Tr.	Swabey and Tristram's Reports, Probate and Divorce, 4 vols, 1858—1865
Swan	Swanston's Reports, Chancery, 3 vols, 1818—1821
SwIN	Swinton's Justiciary Reports (Scotland), 2 vols, 1835—1841
Syme	Syme's Justiciary Reports (Scotland), 1 vol, 1826—1829
T & M	Temple and Mew's Criminal Appeal Cases, 1 vol, 1848—1851
T Jo	Sir T Jones's Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, fol, 1 vol, 1669—1684
T L R	The Times Law Reports, 1884—(current)
T. Raym	Sir T Raymond's Reports, King's Bench, fol, 1 vol, 1660—1683
Taml	Tamlyn's Reports, Rolls Court, 1 vol., 1829—1830
Taunt	Taunton's Reports, Common Pleas, 8 vols, 1807—1819
Tax Cas	Tax Cases, 1875—(current)
Term Rep	Term Reports (Durnford and East), fol, 8 vols, 1785—1800
Toth	Tothill's Transactions in Chancery, 1 vol, 1559—1646
Trist	Tristram's Consistory Judgments, 1 vol., 1873—1892
Tudor, L O Merc Law	Tudor's Leading Cases on Mercantile and Maritime Law
Tudor, L C Real Prop	Tudor's Leading Cases on Real Property
Turn & R.	Turner and Russell's Reports, Chancery, 1 vol, 1822—1825
Tyr	Tyrwhitt's Reports, Exchequer, 5 vols, 1830—1835
Tyr & Gr	Tyrwhitt and Granger's Reports, Exchequer, 1 vol, 1835—1836
Vaugh.	Vaughan's Reports, Common Pleas, fol, 1 vol., 1666—1673
Vent.	Ventris' Reports (Vol I, King's Bench, Vol II., Common Pleas), fol, 2 vols, 1668—1691
Vern	Vernon's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols, 1680—1719
Vern & Scr	Vernon and Scriven's Reports, King's Bench (Ireland), 1 vol., 1786—1788
Ves.	Vesey Jun.'s Reports, Chancery, 19 vols, 1789—1817
Ves. & B.	Vesey and Beames's Reports, Chancery, 3 vols, 1812—1814
Ves. Sen.	Vesey Sen.'s Reports, 2 vols, 1747—1756
Vin. Abr.	Viner's Abridgment of Law and Equity, fol., 22 vols.
Vin. Supp.	Supplement to Viner's Abridgment of Law and Equity, 6 vols.

W. Jo.	Sir W. Jones's Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, fol , 1 vol., 1620—1640
W N (preceded by date)	Law Reports, Weekly Notes, 1866—(current (e.g., [1866] W N)
W R	Weekly Reporter, 54 vols , 1852—1906
Wallis	Wallis's Reports, Chancery (Ireland), 1 vol , 1766—1791
Web Pat Cas.	Webster's Patent Cases, 2 vols., 1602—1855
Welsh, Reg Cas.	Welsh's Registry Cases (Ireland), 1 vol , 1832—1840
Went Off Ex.	Wentworth's Office and Duty of Executors
West	West's Reports, House of Lords, 1 vol , 1839—1841
West temp Hard.	West's Reports temp Hardwicke, Chancery, 1 vol , 1736—1740
West Tithe Cas.	Western's London Tithe Cases, 1 vol , 1592—1822
White	White's Justiciary Reports (Scotland), 3 vols., 1886—1893
White & Tud L O	White and Tudor's Leading Cases in Equity, 2 vols.
Wight.	Wightwick's Reports, Exchequer, 1 vol , 1810—1811
Will Woll & Dav	Willmore, Wollaston, and Davison's Reports, Queen's Bench and Bail Court, 1 vol , 1837
Will Woll. & H.	Willmore, Wollaston, and Hodges' Reports, Queen's Bench and Bail Court, 2 vols , 1838—1839
Willes	Willes' Reports, Common Pleas, 1 vol , 1737—1758
Wilm	Wilmot's Notes of Opinions and Judgments, 1 vol., 1757—1770
Wils	G Wilson's Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, fol , 3 vols , 1742—1774
Wils & S	Wilson and Shaw's Scotch Appeals, House of Lords, 7 vols , 1825—1835
Wils (OH)	J Wilson's Reports, Chancery, 2 vols , 1818—1819
Wils (EX)	J Wilson's Reports, Exchequer in Equity, 1 part, 1817
Win	Winch's Reports, Common Pleas, fol , 1 vol , 1621—1625
Wm Bl	William Blackstone's Reports, King's Bench and Common Pleas, fol , 2 vols , 1746—1779
Wm Rob .	William Robinson's Reports, Admiralty, 3 vols , 1838—1850
Wms Saund	Williams' Notes to Saunders' Reports, 2 vols.
Wolf & B	Wolferstan and Bristowe's Election Cases, 1 vol., 1859—1864
Wolf & D	Wolferstan and Dew's Election Cases, 1 vol , 1857—1858
Woll.	Wollaston's Reports, Bail Court and Practice, 1 vol , 1840—1841
Wood	Wood's Tithe Cases, Exchequer, 4 vols , 1650—1798
Y & O Ch Cas	Younge and Collyer's Reports, Chancery Cases, 2 vols., 1841—1843
Y & O (EX.)	Younge and Collyer's Reports, Exchequer in Equity, 4 vols , 1834—1842
Y & J.	Younge and Jervis' Reports, Exchequer, 3 vols., 1826—1830
Y B.	Year Books
Yelv.	Yelverton's Reports, King's Bench, fol., 1 vol., 1602—1613
You.	Younge's Reports, Exchequer in Equity, 1 vol., 1820—1832

TABLE OF STATUTES.

		Page
9 Hen 3, c 5	(Lands in Ward (Maintenance and Restoration), 1224-1225)	283
13 Edw 1, stat 1, c 1	(Statute of Westminster II (Statute de Donis Conditionalibus) 1285)	275, 283, 297
18 Edw 1, stat 1, c 6	(Statute of Winchester, 1285)	497
20 Hen 6, c 9	(Statute of Westminster III (Quia Emptores), 1289)	295
27 Hen 8, c 10	(Trial of Peeresses, 1441-1442)	271
31 Hen 8, c 10	(Statute of Uses, 1535)	315, 330, 331, 366
	(Lords' Precedence, 1539)	272
	s 1	272
	s 4	272
	s 5	272
	s 6	272
	s 7	272
	s 8	272
32 Hen 8 c 34	(Grantees of Reversions and Lessees, 1540)	299, 323
33 Hen 8, c 9	(Unlawful Game Act, 1541-1542)	502
34 & 35 Hen 8, c 20	(Recovery of Lands and King's Reversion, 1542)	300
43 Eliz c 2	(Poor Relief Act, 1601)	523, 573
	s 1	563
	s 3	565
	s 4	556
	s 6	573
21 Jac 1, c 3	(Statute of Monopolies, 1623)	128, 133, 134, 141, 142, 151, 152
22 Jac 1, c 16	(Statute of Limitations, 1623)	128, 130, 131, 142, 152, 218, 69, 72, 79, 98, 241, 303, 423, 447, 448
16 Car 1, c 10	(Abolition of Star Chamber, 1640)	407
12 Car 2, c 24	(Abolition of Tenures Act, 1660)	128
14 Car 2, c 12	(Poor Relief Act, 1662)	265
	s 1	524, 556, 575, 585, 586
	s 2	583, 590, 591, 596
29 Car 2, c 3	(Statute of Frauds, 1677)	602
	s 4	425, 432, 435, 447, 448
	s 7	22, 433
2 Will. & Mar. c 5	(Distress for Rent, 1689), s. 2	433
3 Will. & Mar. c 11	(Poor Relief Act, 1691)—	398
	s 5	586
	s 7	581
	s 8	602
	s 9	600
8 & 9 Will. 3, c. 30	(Poor Removal Act, 1696)—	
	s 3	604, 605
	s 6	602
10 Will. 3, c 22	(Posthumous Children's Estates, 1698)	303
12 & 13 Will. 3, c 2.	(Act of Settlement, 1700), s. 3	270
1 Anne, c. 1	(Crown Lands Act, 1702), s. 7	633
6 Anne, c 11	(Union with Scotland Act, 1706)	262, 266, 271, 274, 275, 276, 284
	s. 1	202, 270, 272
	Art. 4	262
	Art. 22	262
	Art. 23	262, 270, 273

		PAGE
6 Anne, c 41.	(Succession to the Crown Act, 1707)	628
5 Geo 1, c 8	(Poor Relief (Deserted Wives and Children Act, 1718)—	
	s 1	571
	s 2	571
9 Geo 1, c 7	(Poor Relief Act, 1722)	556
	s 5	584
	s 6	587
	s 8	603
	s 9	605
5 Geo 2, c 19	(Quarter Sessions Appeal Act, 1731)	604
9 Geo 2, c 36	(Charitable Uses Act 1736)	316
10 Geo 2, c 22	(City of London (Night Watchmen etc., 1737))	478
11 Geo 2, c 19	(Distress for Rent Act, 1737), s 6	503
24 Geo 2, c 44	(Constables Protection Act, 1750), s 6	499
25 Geo 2, c 36	(Disorderly Houses Act, 1751)	502
3f Geo 2, c 11	(Apprentices (Settlement) Act, 1757), s 1	581
12 Geo 3, c 11	(Royal Marriages Act, 1772), s 1	282
13 Geo 3, c 82	(Lying in Hospitals Act, 1773)—	
	s 5	579
	s 6	579
	s 9	579
30 Geo 3, c 49	(Workhouse Act, 1790)—	
	s 1	559
	s 2	559
32 Geo 3, c 57	(Parish Apprentices Act, 1792)	565
33 Geo 3, c 55	(Parish Officers Act, 1793), s 1	405
35 Geo 3, c 101	(Poor Removal Act, 1795)—	
	s 1	590 596
	s 2	598
	s 4	585
	s 5	591
39 & 40 Geo 3, c 67	(Union with Ireland Act, 1800)	262, 267, 271
	s 1	270, 273
	art 4	267, 270, 273
c 98	(Accumulations Act, 1800)	271 172, 373, 376, 380
	s 1	370
	s 2	376, 377, 380
	s 4	370
41 Geo 3, c 78	(Constables Expenses Act 1801)	492
42 Geo 3, c 16	(Parish Apprentices Act, 1802)	565
c 119	(Gaming Act, 1802)	502
43 Geo 3, c 161	(House Tax Act, 1803), s 60	503
48 Geo 3, c 55	(House Tax Act, 1808) Sched B	558
49 Geo 3, c 121	(Poor (Settlement and Removal) Act, 1809) —	
	s 1	598
	s 2	599
	s 3	598
	s 4	596
54 Geo 3, c 170	(Poor Relief Act, 1811) —	
	s 2	579
	s 3	578
	s 4	580
	s 5	586
	s 6	580
	s 7	561
	s 10	600
55 Geo 3, c 137	(Poor Relief Act, 1815)—	
	s 2	237, 501, 562
	s 5	561
	s 6	536
56 Geo. 3, c 129	(Workhouse Act, 1816), s 2	561
c 139	(Parish Apprentices Act, 1816)	565, 581
57 Geo. 3, c 93	(Distress (Costs) Act, 1817)	391
59 Geo. 3, c 12.	(Poor Relief Act, 1819)	557
	s 12	535, 556
	s 28	597
7 Geo 4, c 126.	(Turnpike Roads Act, 1822), s 51	581, 586

TABLE OF STATUTES.

211

3 Geo. 4, c. cvi.
5 Geo. 4, c. 83.

(Bread (London) Act, 1822)
(Vagrancy Act, 1824)

591, 607, 613, 614, 615, 616
607, 608, 609

s. 3
s. 4
s. 5
s. 6
s. 8
s. 9
s. 10
s. 11
s. 13
s. 14
s. 20

6 Geo. 4, c. 57

(Poor Relief (Settlement) Act, 1825), s. 2 .

584, 585, 586

c. 81.

(Excise Licences Act, 1825), s. 7

240

c. 97.

(Oxford and Cambridge Universities Act, 1825)

496

7 & 8 Geo. 4, c. 53.

(Excise Management Act, 1826), s. 32

402

9 Geo. 4, c. 14

(Statute of Frauds Amendment Act, 1828)

448

c. 25.

(Revenue Solicitors Act, 1828)

627

c. 69

(Night Poaching Act, 1828), s. 1

504

10 Geo. 4, c. 44

(Metropolitan Police Act, 1829)

460, 467, 470

s. 1 467, 468, 469

s. 2 470

s. 4 460, 471, 473, 497

s. 5 470, 473, 505

s. 6 502

s. 9 500

s. 10 469, 469

s. 11 469

s. 12 468

s. 14 469

s. 15 469

s. 16 469

s. 18 468, 474

s. 23 474, 475

s. 25 475

s. 28 475

s. 29 469

s. 30 475

s. 31 475

s. 32 475

s. 33 475

s. 34 467

s. 37 476

Sched 467

1 Will. 4, c. 18.

(Poor Relief (Settlement) Act, 1831)—

s. 1 585

s. 2 585

1 & 2 Will. 4, c. 22.
c. 41.

(London Hackney Carriages Act, 1831).

471

(Special Constables Act, 1831) .

492

s. 1 492, 493, 519

s. 2 492, 519

s. 3 492, 519

s. 5 493

s. 6 493

s. 7 493

s. 8 492

s. 9 493, 519

s. 10 493

s. 11 494, 500

s. 13 493, 494

s. 14 493

s. 15 492, 493, 494

s. 22 491

c. 42.

(Poor Relief Act, 1831)

535, 537

s. 1 556

s. 5 556

TABLE OF STATUTES

		PAGE
1 & 2 Will 4, c 59	(Crown Lands Allotments Act, 1831)	535, 557
	§ 2	586
c lxxvi	(Coal Duties (London) Act, 1831)	503
3 & 4 Will 4, c 74	(Fines and Recoveries Act, 1833)—	
	§ 15	325
	§ 18	300
	§ 22	383
c 50	(Lighting and Watching Act, 1833)	464
	§ 20	406
4 & 5 Will 4, c 36	(Central Criminal Court Act, 1834)—	
"	§ 2	467
	§ 3	467
c 76	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834) .	524 529, 530, 578
	§ 15	524, 525, 550,
		559, 565
	§ 18	528
	§ 19	562
	§ 21	559
	§ 22	559
	§ 23	556
	§ 24	538
	§ 25	556
	§ 26	553, 560
	27	529
	§ 23	549
	§ 32	553, 554
	§ 33	577
	§ 38	531, 535, 559
	§ 39	531, 559
	§ 40	556
	§ 42	559
	§ 43	559
	§ 46	542
	§ 48	542, 544
	§ 49	536
	§ 51	536
	§ 52	563
	§ 54	530
	§ 55	530
	§ 56	574, 591
	§ 57	573, 595
	§ 58	566
	§ 59	566
	§ 62	565
	§ 63	538, 565
	§ 66	585
	§ 67	581
	§ 68	584
	§ 71	578, 589,
		591, 608
	§ 77	536
	§ 79	599
	§ 80	603
	§ 81	604
	§ 82	605
	§ 84	599
	§ 86	536
	§ 92	560
	§ 93	560
	§ 94	560
	§ 97	545
	§ 98	527, 545
	§ 105	526
	§ 106	526
	§ 107	526
	§ 108	526
	§ 109	542, 592
5 & 6 Will 4, c. 43.	(Special Constables Act, 1835)	492

TABLE OF STATUTES

11

PAGE

5 & 6 Will 4, c 69.	(Union and Parish Property Act, 1835) —	
	s. 1	557
	s. 3	558
	s. 4	535, 557
	s. 7	535, 539
6 & 7 Will 4, c 37	(Bread Act, 1836)	502
7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c. 26	(Wills Act, 1837)	382
	s. 1	380
	s. 2	409
	s. 3	409
	s. 7	408
	s. 25	360
	s. 27	360
c 30	(Post Office (Offences) Act, 1837) —	
	s. 31	602
	s. 42	602
c 50	(Union and Parish Property Act 1837) —	
	s. 1	558
	s. 2	558
	s. 3	558
	s. 4	558
1 & 2 Vict c 2	(Civil List Act, 1837), s. 1	533
c 14	(Criminal Lunatics Act, 1838), s. 2	597
c 38	(Vagrancy Act 1838) —	
	s. 1	615
	s. 2	611
c 74	(Small Tenements Recovery Act, 1839)	504
c 80	(Special Constables Act, 1839)	502
	s. 1	494
	s. 2	494, 519
	s. 3	494
c 98	(Railways (Conveyance of Mails) Act, 1838) —	
	s. 1	651
	s. 3	652
	s. 4	652
	s. 6	652
	s. 7	651
	s. 8	651
	s. 9	651
	s. 12	651
	s. 13	651
c 106	(Pluralities Act, 1838) —	
	s. 20	19
	s. 30	19
	s. 31	19
c 110	(Judgments Act 1838)	50
2 & 3 Vict c. 47	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1839)	460, 470, 471
	s. 2	467, 475, 478
	s. 4	467, 469
	s. 5	467, 473
	s. 6	476
	s. 7	467, 473
	s. 8	473
	s. 10	500
	s. 11	474
	s. 12	474
	s. 13	474
	s. 14	501
	s. 16	501, 506
	s. 16	501
	s. 17	237, 502
	s. 18	500
	s. 22	509
	s. 23	509
	s. 33	504
	s. 34	504, 506
	s. 35	472, 504, 506
	s. 38	504

TABLE OF STATUTES.

		PAGE
2 & 3 Vict c. 47.	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1839)—	
	s. 39	472, 504, 508
	s. 46	472, 498, 499, 504, 508
	s. 47	472, 498, 499, 508
	s. 48	472, 498, 499, 508
	s. 51 *	470
	s. 52	470
	s. 53	470
	s. 54	497, 503, 504
	s. 58	610
	s. 61	503
	s. 62	504
	s. 64	497
	s. 66	247, 258, 488
	s. 67	504
	s. 69	505
	s. 71	478
a. 51.	(Pensions Act, 1839)	572
a. 71	(Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839)	478
	s. 7	468
	s. 14	598
	s. 17	474
	s. 27	247
	s. 28	247
	s. 46	476, 477
	s. 47	478
	s. 56	476
a. 84	(Poor Rate Act, 1839)—	
	s. 1	549
	s. 2	542
e. 93	(County Police Act, 1839)	466
	s. 1	481
	s. 2	481, 482
	s. 3	483, 517
	s. 4	482
	s. 6	484
	s. 7	484, 485
	s. 8	485, 497, 500
	s. 9	484
	s. 10	481, 485, 500
	s. 12	501
	s. 13	501, 506
	s. 14	501
	s. 15	237, 501
	s. 16	502
	s. 17	484
	s. 18	505
	s. 23	483
	s. 24	486
	s. 27	482
a. xciv	(City of London Police Act, 1839)	478, 518
	s. 3	478
	s. 5	478
	s. 6	478
	s. 8	480
	s. 9	478, 479, 497
	s. 11	480
	s. 12	481
	s. 13	481
	s. 14	479, 506
	s. 15	501
	s. 16	502
	s. 17	501, 506
	s. 18	479, 497, 500
	s. 20	479
	s. 21	479
	s. 22	479
	s. 24	481

TABLE OF STATUTES.

III

PAGE

2 & 3 Vict. c. xiv

(City of London Police Act, 1839)—

s. 25	479
s. 30	400, 508
s. 31	400, 508
s. 32	409, 508
s. 35	470, 497
s. 42	479
s. 45	479
s. 48	247, 258
s. 49	478, 408, 409
s. 51	500
s. 56	478
s. 57	480
ss. 58—64	480
s. 85	480
s. 91	480
s. 92	480
s. 93	480

3 & 4 Vict. c. 50

(Canals (Offences) Act, 1840)

s. 1	495
s. 2	405
s. 3	496
s. 4	495
s. 5	495
s. 6	408
s. 10	495
s. 11	496

o 82

(Judgments Act, 1840)

s. 1	50
------	----

o 89

(County Police Act, 1840)

s. 1	500
s. 2	482
s. 3	484
s. 10	509
s. 11	509
s. 12	483
s. 14	480, 496
s. 15	490
s. 19	488, 496
s. 20	496
s. 26	482, 505
s. 27	483, 518
s. 28	483, 484
s. 31	484
s. 32	484
s. 34	482

4 & 5 Vict. c. 38

(School Sites Act, 1841), s. 2

s. 2	331
------	-----

5 & 6 Vict. c. 18

(Parish Property and Parish Debts Act, 1842)

s. 17	558
-------	-----

c 55

(Railway Regulation Act, 1842), s. 17

s. 17	504
-------	-----

o 57

(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842)—

s. 5	501, 568, 609
s. 7	535
s. 10	533
s. 11	533
s. 12	533
s. 13	533
s. 14	532
s. 16	535, 539
s. 17	539

o. 109

(Parish Constables Act, 1842)

s. 1	464
s. 2	464
s. 3	464
s. 4	464
s. 5	464
s. 7	464
s. 8	464
s. 11	465
s. 14	464

		PAGE
5 & 6 Vict. c 109	(Parish Constables Act, 1842)—	
	§ 15	465
	§ 16	464, 465
	§ 17	465, 519
	§ 21	464, 474,
		484
	§ 22	518
6 & 7 Vict c 40	(Hosiery Act, 1843)—	
	§ 2	237
	§ 4	237
	§ 11	237
c 73	(Solicitors Act, 1843), § 47	627
c 86	(London Hackney Carriages Act, 1843)	471
	§ 8	471
	§ 28	620
7 & 8 Vict c 33	(County Rates Act, 1844)	483, 483
	§ 8	463
c 60	(Trafalgar Square Act, 1844)	467
c 101	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844)	551
	§ 6	608, 610
	§ 7	545
	§ 8	545
	§ 12	565
	§ 18	531
	§ 25	574
	§ 26	567
	§ 29	565
	§ 30	557
	§ 32	551
	§ 55	608
	§ 56	558, 578,
		595
	§ 57	562
	§ 58	561, 562
	§ 59	540
	§ 62	542
	§ 63	550
	§ 64	534, 553
	§ 66	554
	§ 68	640
	§ 69	591, 607
	§ 70	606
	§ 71	525
	§ 72	539
	§ 73	558
	§ 74	562
8 & 9 Vict c 18	(Lands Clauses Consolidation Act, 1845)—	
	§ 68	635
	§ 85	635
	§ 128	321
c 83	(Poor Law (Scotland) Act, 1845)	601
c 106	(Real Property Act 1845) § 8	314
c 109	(Gaming Act, 1845)	502
	§ 6	472
c 117	(Poor Removal Act, 1845)—	
	§ 2	601
	§ 5	601
	Sched C	598
9 & 10 Vict c 66	(Poor Removal Act, 1846)—	
	§ 1	592, 594
	§ 2	595
	§ 3	595
	§ 4	592
	§ 5	590, 592
	§ 6	600
	§ 7	600
c 93	(Fatal Accidents Act, 1846)	456
	§ 4	428, 456

TABLE OF STATUTES.

iv

		PAGE
10 & 11 Vict c. 27	(Harbours, Docks, and Piers Clauses Act, 1817)	
	s. 79	493
	s. 80	498
c. 33	(Poor Removal Act, 1847)—	
	s. 1	601
	s. 3	601
c. 62	(Naval Deserters Act, 1847), s. 10	613
c. 85	(Post Office (Duties) Act, 1847), s. 40	652
c. 89	(Town Police Clauses Act, 1847)	488, 489, 497, 500, 501, 502, 505
	s. 6	488
	s. 7	488
	s. 8	488, 489
	s. 9	488, 505
	s. 10	501
	s. 11	501
	s. 12	502
	s. 15	503
	s. 17	500
	s. 20	500
	ss. 21—23	488
	s. 21	503
	s. 28	497, 503, 504
	s. 29	619
	s. 33	489
	s. 34	502
	s. 36	503
	s. 61	619
	s. 62	504
c. 109	(Poor Law Board Act, 1847)	524
	s. 11	525
	s. 15	526
	s. 17	526
	s. 19	527
	s. 20	527
	s. 21	528
	s. 22	525, 528
	s. 23	500
	s. 24	559
	s. 25	539
	s. 26	525, 528
11 & 12 Vict c. 31.	(Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848) —	
	s. 1	599, 604
	s. 2	599, 604
	s. 3	597
	s. 4	604
	s. 5	604
	s. 7	605
	s. 8	598
	s. 9	600, 602, 603
	s. 10	598, 599
c. 36	(Prison Amendment Act, 1848), s. 41	372
c. 12	(Indictable Offences Act, 1848)	497
	s. 10	482, 485, 497
c. 43	(Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1848)	497
	s. 3	462
	s. 18	571
	s. 23	499
	s. 31	499
	s. 33	602
c. 61	(Poor Law Audit Act, 1848), s. 1	530
c. 101	(Lock-up Houses Act, 1848)	483
	s. 1	518
c. 110	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848) —	
	s. 2	567
	s. 3	565
	s. 8	568, 571
	s. 9	568

		PAGE
11 & 12 Vict. c. 110	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848)—	
	s. 10	560, 608
	s. 11	591
c. 111	(Poor Removal Act, 1848), s. 1	594, 595, 596
12 & 13 Vict. c. 13	(Poor Relief Act, 1849)	564
	s. 7	559
	s. 8	559
c. 45	(Quarter Sessions Act, 1849)—	
	s. 11	606
	s. 12	606
	s. 13	606
	s. 14	606
c. 89	(Treasury Instruments (Signature) Act, 1849)	636
c. 103	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849)—	
	s. 3	607, 610
	s. 4	579, 594
	s. 7	549
	s. 13	520
	s. 14	559, 565
	s. 16	570
	s. 17	570
	s. 18	556
	s. 20	565
13 & 14 Vict. c. 7	(London Hackney Carriages Act 1850)—	
	s. 1	471
	s. 2	471
	s. 4	471
c. 20	(Parish Constables Act 1850)—	
	s. 2	465
	s. 4	464
	s. 5	464, 630
	s. 7	464
	s. 8	464
c. 101	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1850)—	
	s. 4	565
	s. 6	544
	s. 8	562
	s. 9	545
c. 111	(Railway Clearing Act, 1850)	633
14 & 15 Vict. c. 11	(Poor Law (Apprentices etc.) Act, 1851)	566
c. 105	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851)—	
	s. 4	537
	s. 5	545
	s. 6	560
	s. 8	598
	s. 10	599, 604
	s. 11	600
	s. 12	525, 606
	s. 13	600
	s. 18	545
15 & 16 Vict. c. 83	(Patent Law Amendment Act, 1852), s. 35	186
c. cx	(Tyne Improvement Act, 1852)—	
	s. 27	518
	s. 28	518
	s. 29	518
16 & 17 Vict. c. 33	(London Hackney Carriage Act, 1853)	471
	s. 2	471
	s. 6	471
	s. 12	471
	s. 13	471
	s. 16	472
s. 51	(Succession Duty Act, 1853), s. 1	380
c. 69	(Naval Enlistment Act, 1853), s. 16	613
c. 70,	(Lunacy Regulation Act, 1853), s. 123	89
c. 119	(Betting Act, 1853)	16, 502
c. 127	(London Hackney Carriage (No 2) Act, 1853), s. 16	471
17 & 18 Vict. c. 38	(Gaming Houses Act, 1854)	472, 476, 502

TABLE OF STATUTES.

lvii

		PAGE
17 & 18 Vict c 94.	(Public Revenue and Consolidated Fund Charge Act, 1854), s 1 .	432
c 102	(Corrupt Practices Prevention Act, 1854), s 8 .	432
c 112	(Literary and Scientific Institutions Act, 1854), s 4 .	432
18 & 19 Vict c 58 .	(Duchy of Lancaster Lands Act, 1855) .	436
c 120	(Metropolis Management Act, 1855), s. 245 .	471
19 & 20 \ict c 2	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1856)—	
	s. 1	467
	s. 2	467, 469, 518
	s. 6	473
	s. 7	473
	s. 8	473
	s. 9	468
c 69	(County and Borough Police Act, 1856)	460, 467
	s. 1	482, 518
	s. 4	483
	s. 5	480, 490, 491, 518
	s. 6	485
	s. 7	484, 489
	s. 9	480
	s. 14	517, 518
	s. 15	516
	s. 16	517
	s. 19	486, 518
	s. 20	491, 518
	s. 22	483
	s. 23	483
	s. 30	482
	s. 32	478
c 97	(Mercantile Law Amendment Act, 1856)	35
	s. 5	35
	s. 13	29
	s. 14	29
20 Vict. c 2	(County Police Act, 1857), s 2	482
20 & 21 Vict c 13	(Workhouse Sites Act, 1857)	457
c 64	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1857)—	
	s. 11	475
	s. 13	475
	s. 14	475
c 72	(Police (Scotland) Act, 1857), s. 11	485
c cxxxv	(Metropolitan Market Act, 1857)	502
	s. 18	471
21 & 22 Vict c 73	(Stipendiary Magistrates Act, 1858), s 1	596
c 93	(Legitimacy Declaration Act, 1858)	281, 285
	s. 4	282
	s. 11	282
22 Vict c 26	(Superannuation Act, 1859)	629
22 & 23 Vict c 32	(County and Borough Police Act, 1859)	487
	s. 1	483
	s. 2	485
	s. 4	501, 506
	s. 11	517
	s. 22	514
	s. 24	487, 517
	s. 26	484, 487
c 49	(Poor Law (Payment of Debts) Act, 1859)	556
	s. 1	536
	s. 4	536
	s. 5	541
c 53	(Railway Companies Arbitration Act, 1859)	633
23 & 24 Vict, c 27	(Refreshment Houses Act, 1860)	619
	s. 18	503, 504
	s. 41	504, 619
c 32	(Ecclesiastical Courts Jurisdiction Act, 1860)	502
c 38	(Law of Property Amendment Act, 1860)	421
c 51	(Local Taxation Returns Act, 1860)	538
c 90	(Game Licences Act, 1860)	504

		PAGE
23 & 24 Vict c. 127	(Solicitors Act, 1860), s. 33	540, 627
c. 135	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1860) —	467
		467, 470
		108, 474
	s. 6	467
c. 172	(Tramways (Ireland) Act, 1860)	653
24 & 25 Vict c. 55	(Poor Removal Act, 1861) —	
	s. 1	592, 593
	s. 2	595
	s. 3	579, 595
	s. 9	549
c. 76.	(Poor Removal (No. 2) Act, 1861)	602
	s. 1	601, 602
	s. 2	602
	s. 3	602
	s. 6	602
c. 94.	(Accessories and Abettors Act, 1861), s. 1	608
c. 96	(Larceny Act, 1861), s. 103	247
c. 98	(Forgery Act, 1861), s. 23	258
c. 100	(Offences Against the Person Act 1861) —	
	s. 26	541
	s. 38	500, 545
	s. 73	541, 506
c. 121	(Domicile Act, 1861)	311
c. 124	(Metropolitan Police (Receiver) Act 1861) —	
	s. 1	469
	s. 2	469
	s. 3	469
	s. 4	469
	s. 5	469
	s. 7	475
25 & 26 Vict c. 103	(Union Assessment Committee Act, 1862)	539
	s. 30	540
c. 113.	(Poor Removal Act, 1862) —	
	s. 1	601, 602
	s. 2	602
	s. 3	602
	s. 5	600
	s. 7	602
c. 114	(Poaching Prevention Act, 1862)	498
	s. 2	504
26 & 27 Vict c. 65	(Volunteer Act 1863) —	
	s. 28	237
	s. 29	237
c. 89	(Poor Removal Act 1863) —	
	s. 4	600
	s. 5	602
	s. 7	601
	Scheds	598
c. cccv	(City of London Traffic Regulation Act, 1863)	478
27 & 28 Vict c. 18	(Revenue (No. 1) Act, 1864), s. 5	504
c. 64	(Public House Closing Act, 1864), s. 7	472
c. 105	(Poor Removal Act, 1864), s. 1	593
c. 116	(Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, 1864), s. 5	567
28 & 29 Vict c. 34.	(Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, 1865) —	
	s. 2	567
	s. 4	568
	s. 5	567
c. 36	(County Voters Registration Act, 1865), s. 10	474
c. 79	(Union Chargeability Act, 1865) —	
	s. 1	549, 590
	s. 2	590, 600
	s. 3	590, 603
	s. 4	599
	s. 5	596
	s. 6	591
	s. 7	601, 608

TABLE OF STATUTES.

RE

		PAGE
28 & 29 Vict c 79	(Union Chargeability Act, 1865)—	
	s 8	539
	s 9	541
	s 10	558
c 87	(Post Office Extension Act, 1865)	635
c 90	(Metropolitan Fire Brigade Act, 1865)—	
	s 12	503
	s 22	507
c 104	(Crown Suits etc Act, 1865), s 47	407
c 121	(Salmon Fishery Act, 1865), s 27	496
29 & 30 Vict c 39	(Exchequer and Audit Departments Act, 1866) —	
	s 10	633 634
	s 18	628
	s 33	634
c 55	(Post Office (Postmaster General) Act, 1866), s 1	628
c 109	(Naval Discipline Act, 1866) s 33	217
c 113	(Poor Law Amendment Act 1866)—	
	s 4	521
	s 6	551
	s 8	556
	s 9	565
	s 15	604, 609
	s 16	560
	s 17	595
30 & 31 Vict c 5	(Dog Licences Act, 1867)	477, 504
c 6	(Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867)	552, 557, 568
	s 6	552, 568
	s 15	557
	s 21	552
	s 22	552
	s 23	552
	s 24	552
	s 25	552
	s 68	550
	s 69	568
	s 78	553
	s 80	512
c 39	(Metropolitan Police (Receiver) Act 1867), s 1	469
c 51	(Vaccination Act, 1867)—	
	s 20	512
	s 33	540
c 106	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867)	527
	s 2	527
	s 13	558
	s 15	549
	s 20	548, 555
	s 21	565
	s 22	561
	s 24	568
	s 26	568
	s 27	541, 597, 603
c 114	(Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867)	471, 478, 502, 503
	s 3	479
	s 4	470
	s 5	472
	s 9	472
	s 10	470
	s 11	470
	s 13	470
	s 18	472
	s 19	471
	s 20	471
	s 22	471
31 & 32 Vict c 5	(Metropolitan Streets Act, Amendment Act, 1867),	
	s 1	472

		PAGE
31 & 32 Vict c 22.	(Petty Sessions and Lock-up House Act, 1868).	482, 483
	s 3	488
	s 10	518
c 37	(Documentary Evidence Act, 1868), s. 2	525
c 40	(Partition Act, 1868)	102
c 67	(Police Rate Act, 1868), s. 2	474, 476
c 72	(Promissory Oaths Act, 1868)	470 479
	s 2	628
	s 3	628
	s 5	628
	s 8	493
	s 12	485, 489
c 119	(Regulation of Railways Act, 1868), s 20	662
c 122	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868)—	
	s 1	526
	s. 2	526
	s 3	527
	s 4	553
	s 6	531
	s 7	542
	s 8	556
	s 9	552
	s. 15	548
	s 16	502
	s 17	502
	s 18	502
	s 19	502
	s 20	562
	s 21	562
	s 33	574
	s 34	596
	30	571
32 & 33 Vict c 45	(Union Loans Act, 1869)—	
	s. 4	538
	s 6	538
c 47	(High Constables Act, 1869)	163
	s 2	463
c 57	(Seamen's Clothing Act, 1869)—	
	s 3	237
	s 4	237
	Sched	237
c 62	(Debtors Act, 1869), s 4 (3)	76
c. 63	(Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869)	527
	s 1	555
	s 2	555
	s 3	555
	s 4	555
	s 5	555
	s 6	555
	s 7	555
	s 8	555
	s. 9	555
	s 11	557
	s 12	557
	s 13	557
	s 14	557
	s 16	597
	s. 17	560
	s. 18	555
	s 21	560
c 67	(Valuation (Metropolis) Act, 1869)	475
	s 77	475
73	(Telegraph Act, 1869)	608
81	(Volunteer Act, 1869)—	
	s 3	277
	s 4	237
	s. 5	237
s. 102	(Metropolitan Board of Works (Loans) Act, 1869), s. 37	538

TABLE OF STATUTES.

lxi

		PAGE
32 & 33 Vict c 115.	(Metropolitan Public Carriage Act, 1869) . . .	471
	s. 2	477
	s. 6	471
	(1)	477
	s. 11	471
	s. 14	471
33 & 34 Vict c 2.	(Dissolved Boards of Management and Guardians Act, 1870)—	
	s. 1	550, 555
	s. 2	555
	s. 4	555
	s. 5	555
	s. 7	555
	s. 8	555
	s. 9	548
	s. 11	555
	s. 12	555
c 14	(Naturalization Act, 1870), s. 7	270
c 14.	(Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1870)—	
	s. 1	550
	s. 3	551
c 23.	(Forfeiture Act, 1870)—	
	s. 1	276
	s. 2	270, 532
	s. 12	19
	s. 21	10
c 48	(Paupers Conveyance (Expenses) Act, 1870), s. 1	600
c 57	(Gun Licence Act, 1870), s. 9	504
c 71	(National Debt Act, 1870), s. 9	389
c 77	(Juries Act, 1870)—	
	s. 9	500
	Sched	500
34 & 35 Vict c 11	(Poor Law Loans Act, 1871), s. 2	538
c 15	(Metropolitan Poor Act, 1871), s. 1	557
c 22	(Lunacy Regulation (Ireland) Act, 1871), s. 73	89
c 35	(Metropolitan Police Court (Buildings) Act, 1871), s. 3	469
c 50	(Bankruptcy Disqualification Act, 1871)—	
	s. 6	270
	s. 7	270
	s. 8	270
c 66	(Private Chapels Act, 1871)	543
c 70	(Local Government Board Act, 1871)	524
	s. 3	527
	s. 5	525
c 87	(Sunday Observation Prosecution Act, 1871)	472
	s. 1	504
c 96	(Pedlars Act 1871)	609
	s. 5	471, 504
	s. 8	504
	s. 9	504
	s. 15	504
	s. 17	504
	s. 19	504
c 108	(Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871)—	
	s. 3	567
	s. 4	561
	s. 6	568
	s. 7	608, 609, 610, 613
	s. 8	609
	s. 9	567
	s. 10	552, 567, 568
c 112	(Prevention of Crimes Act 1871)—	
	s. 3	472, 503
	s. 5	503
	s. 6	503
	s. 7	503
	s. 8	472, 503

TABLE OF STATUTES

		PAGE
34 & 35 Vict c 112	(Prevention of Crimes Act, 1871)—	
	s. 12	500
	s. 15	612
	s. 16	472, 498, 503
	s. 20	472
35 & 36 Vict c 2	(Poor Law Loans Act, 1872), s. 4	538
c 65	(Bastardy Laws Amendment Act, 1872) s. 7	573
c 92	(Parish Constables Act, 1872)	
	s. 1	463
	s. 2	463
	s. 3	464
	s. 4	403
	s. 5	403
	s. 7	465
	s. 8	465
	s. 9	465
	s. 10	465
	s. 11	405, 519
	s. 12	405
c 93.	(Pawnbrokers Act, 1872)	255, 241, 248, 250,
		271, 257, 258
	s. 1	235
	s. 5	234, 256
	s. 7	250
	s. 8	250
	s. 9	242
	s. 10	255, 248, 251
	(2)	251
	s. 12	250, 251
	s. 13	250
	s. 14	250
	s. 15	251
	s. 16	251
	s. 17	251
	s. 18	252
	s. 19	252
	s. 21	252
	s. 22	252
	s. 23	257
	s. 24	256, 251
	s. 25	252, 253
	s. 26	253
	s. 27	254
	s. 28	254
	s. 29	254
	(1)	253
	(2)	253
	(3)	253
	(1)	253
	s. 30	255
	s. 31	255
	s. 32	238, 255
	s. 33	257
	s. 34	247, 257, 258, 504
	s. 35	237, 256
	s. 36	256, 504
	s. 37	248, 249
	s. 38	249
	s. 39	248
	s. 40	248
	s. 41	248, 249
	s. 42	248, 504
	s. 43	249, 249
	s. 44	248, 249
	s. 45	258
	s. 46	258
	s. 47	259
	s. 48	259

TABLE OF STATUTES.

liii

			PAGE
35 & 36 Vict c 93.	(Pawnbrokers Act, 1872)—		
	s. 49		258
	s. 50		258
	s. 51		257
	s. 52		259
	s. 53		259
	s. 55		259
	Sched III	250 251,	253
	Sched IV		251
	Sched V		252
	Sched VI		249
c 94	Licensing Act 1872)		503
	s. 12		619
	s. 18		619
36 & 37 Vict c 9	(Bastardy Laws Amendment Act, 1873)		573
c 38	(Vagrant Act Amendment Act, 1873), s. 3		613
c 48	(Regulation of Railways Act, 1873)—		
	s. 18		651
	s. 20		652
c 66	(Judicature Act, 1873)	420, 422, 443, 448,	
		449, 450	
	s. 25 (6)		454
	(5)	77, 80	
	s. 34 (3)		89
	s. 56		221
	s. 100		419
37 & 38 Vict c 62	Infants Relief Act, 1874), s. 1		238
c 68	(Attorneys and Solicitors Act, 1874), s. 12		627
38 & 39 Vict c 3	(Metropolitan Police Magistrates Act, 1875), s. 1		468
c 17	(Explosives Act, 1875)		503
	s. 73	172, 498,	506
	s. 74		472
	s. 75		472
	s. 107		472
c 25	(Public Stores Act 1875), s. 9		237
c 28	(Metropolitan Police Staff (Superannuation) Act, 1875)		477
	s. 1		477
	Sched		477
	(Public Health Act, 1875,	650, 681	
	s. 106		504
	s. 171	488, 489	
	s. 199		533
	s. 229		650
	s. 230		650
	s. 231		650
	Sched I		533
	Sched V		526
c 63	(Sale of Food and Drugs Act, 1875)		503
c 70	(Chimney Sweepers Act, 1875)		503
	s. 5		471
	s. 6		471
	s. 14		471
c 83	(Local Loans Act, 1875), s. 34		535
c 89	(Public Works Loans Act, 1875)		565
39 & 40 Vict c 17	(Partition Act, 1876)		102
c 18	(Treasury Solicitor Act, 1876)		190
c 36	(Customs Consolidation Act, 1876)—		
	s. 177		402
	s. 227		474
c 59	(Appellate Jurisdiction Act, 1876), s. 6	262, 269,	
a. 61	(Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876)	527, 548,	579
	s. 7		548
	s. 10		560
	s. 11		554
	s. 12		631
	s. 13		558

			PAGE
39 & 40 Vict c 61	(Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876)—		
	s 14		532
	s 15		537
	s 16		537
	s 18		574
	s 19		611
	s 21		558
	s 22	500,	565
	s 23		572
	s 24		573
	s 25	571, 590,	603
	s 28		500
	s 33		545
	s 34	579, 581, 588,	592
	s 35	570, 578 579, 587,	588, 589
	s 36		576
	s 40		552
	s 42		552
	s 44		608
40 & 41 Vict c 70	(Elementary Education Act, 1876), s 40		564
c 33	(Contingent Remainders Act, 1877) s 1		314
c 50	(County Offices and Courts (Ireland) Act, 1877)—		
	s 33 (1)		89
	s 35		89
	s 36		89
	s 37		89
	s 57 (Supreme Court of Judicature, Ireland, Act, 1877),		
	s 36 (5)		89
c 60	(Local Taxation Returns Act, 1877)		538
41 & 42 Vict c 15	(Customs and Inland Revenue Act, 1878)		503
	s 23		477
c 26	(Parliamentary and Municipal Registration Act, 1878), s 9		645
c 42	(Tithe Act, 1878)		558
c 40	(Weights and Measures Act, 1878)		645
42 & 43 Vict c 6	(District Auditors Act, 1879)—		
	s 3		551
	s 4		551
c 12	(Poor Law Amendment Act, 1879), s 1		572
c 10	(Inebriates Act, 1879)		594
	s 32		594
c 21	(Customs and Inland Revenue Act, 1879)		503
c 30	(Sale of Food and Drugs Act, 1879)		503
c 40	(Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879)		259
	s 4	610,	613
	s 5		614
	s 6		571
	s 10		503
	s 20	609,	613
	s 35	500,	571
	s 38		505
	s 42		502
	s 47		614
c 54	(Poor Law Act, 1879)		527
	s 8		553
	s 9		527
	s 10		537
	s 11		557
	s 104		552
c 55	(Prevention of Crimes Act, 1879), s 2	472,	503
43 & 44 Vict c 19	(Taxe Management Act, 1880), s 90		648
c 23	(Elementary Education Act, 1880), s 5		564
c 24	(Spirits Act, 1880), s 153		503
44 & 45 Vict c 12	(Customs and Inland Revenue Act, 1881), s 36 (2)		390
c 41	(Conveyancing and Law of Property Act, 1881)		364
	s 2 (1)		389

TABLE OF STATUTES.

lxv

		PAGE
44 & 45 Vict. c. 41.	(Conveyancing and Law of Property Act, 1881)—	
	s. 14	487
	s. 42	338, 379
	s. 44	299
	s. 67	658
c. 43	(Superannuation Act, 1881)	629
c. 45	(Podlars Act, 1881)	609
c. 58	(Army Act)	502
	s. 138	572
	s. 141	237
	s. 145	572, 607, 610
	(3)	572
	s. 150	238, 237
	s. 190	572, 607, 610
c. 67	(Petroleum (Hawkers) Act, 1881), s. 4	504
45 & 46 Vict c. 0	(Documentary Evidence Act, 1882), s. 2	525
c. 36	(Casual Poor Act, 1882)—	
	s. 4	568
	s. 5	608
c. 38	(Settled Land Act, 1882)—	
	s. 37	209, 233
	s. 58 (1) (i)	300
c. 39	(Conveyancing and Law of Property Act, 1882) —	
	s. 1 (4) (i)	380
	s. 10	206
a. 50	(Municipal Corporations Act, 1882)	463
	s. 106	651
	s. 140	487, 488, 505
	s. 144	487
	s. 165	603
	s. 190	480, 487
	(1)	487
	(2)	487
	s. 191	487, 505
	(1)	487
	(2)	487, 489, 497
	(3)	504
	(4)	487
	s. 192	487, 489, 517
	s. 193	497
	s. 194	501
	s. 195	500
	s. 196 (1)	492
	(2)	493
	(3)	493
	(4)	493
	(6)	494
	s. 197	487
	(3)	488
	s. 198	487
	s. 199	487
	s. 200	487
	s. 215	486
	s. 227	506
	Sched IV	494
	Sched V	487, 488, 494, 505, 509
a. 58.	(Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1882)	527
	s. 8	531
	s. 11	555
	s. 12	534
	s. 14	526, 538
a. 61.	(Bills of Exchange Act, 1882)—	
	s. 20	425
	s. 23 (2)	39
	s. 60	543
a. 74.	(Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882)	651, 653, 654
	s. 2	652

45 & 46 Vict c 74.	(Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882)—	
	s. 2 (1) (a)	654
	(2)	633, 653
	(3)	653
	(4)	653
	s. 3 (1)	653
	(2)	653
	(3)	653
	(4)	653
	(5)	652, 653
	s. 4	633
	s. 5	633, 653
	s. 6	633, 653
	s. 7 (1)	654
	(2)	654
	(3)	654
	(4)	654
	(5)	654
	s. 8	653
	s. 9	653
	s. 12	633
	s. 13 (3)	653
	s. 14 (1)	654
	(2)	654
	s. 15	654
	s. 17	633, 653, 654
	Sched I	653
	Sched III	653
c 75	(Married Women's Property Act, 1882)	129
	s. 1	20, 21
	(5)	21
	s. 12	21
	s. 19	21
	s. 20	574
	s. 21	574
	s. 24	389
46 & 47 Vict c 6	(Army (Annual) Act, 1883), s. 7	572
c 11	(Poor Law Conference Act, 1883), s. 2	548
c 31	(Cheap Trains Act, 1883), s. 6	504
c 52	(Bankruptcy Act, 1883)	270
	s. 20	408
	s. 21	408
	s. 43	87
	s. 44	408
	s. 49	246
	s. 124	270
	s. 154	408
	s. 168	246
c 57	(Patents Designs and Trade Marks Act, 1883)—	
	s. 11	176
	s. 34	129
47 & 48 Vict c 17	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1884), s. 2	408
c 43	(Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1884)—	
	s. 4	259
	s. 6	259
	s. 9	506
	s. 11	551
	Sched	259, 615
c 70	(Municipal Elections (Corrupt and Illegal Practices) Act, 1884).	532
c 71	(Intestates Estates Act, 1884)	190
48 & 49 Vict c 18	(Metropolitan Streets Act, 1885), s. 2	471
c 45	(Post Office (Sites) Act, 1885)	635
c 46	(Medical Relief Disqualification Removal Act, 1885), s. 2	532
c 69.	(Criminal Law Amendment Act, 1885)	502
c 75.	(Prevention of Crimes Amendment Act, 1885), s. 2	500

TABLE OF STATUTES

lxvii

		PAGE
49 & 50 Vict c 22.	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1880)	469
	s 3 (2)	469
	(4)	469
	s 6	469
c 38.	(Riot (Damages) Act, 1886)	507
	s 2	507
	(1)	508
	(2)	508
	s 3 (1)	508
	(2)	508
	s 4 (1)	509
	(2)	509
	s 5	475
	(1)	500
	(3)	509
	s 6	507
	s 7	507
	Sched	469, 481, 508
50 & 51 Vict c 9	(Police Disabilities Removal Act, 1887)	468, 480,
		489
c 23	(Merchandise Marks Act, 1887), s 12	402, 504
c 45	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1887)	469
c 55	(Sheriffs Act, 1887), s 9	484
c 57	(Deeds of Arrangement Act, 1887)	121
c 67	(Superannuation Act, 1887)	510
c 72	(Local Authorities (Expenses) Act, 1887), s 3	551
51 & 52 Vict c 3	(Lawyers Act, 1888)—	
	s 4	503
	s 6	503
c 41	(Local Government Act, 1888)	482, 529
	s 3	483
	s 9	482, 483
	(2)	484
	s 24	483, 528
	(2)	475, 476, 483
	(1)	483, 488, 517
	(5)	528
	(6)	528
	(7)	528
	s 25	483, 517
	s 26	528
	s 30	482, 484, 490
	s 31	528
	s 39	466
	(1)	486
	s 43 (1)	529
	(2)	529
	(3)	529
	s 50	482
	s 51	482
	s 52	482
	s 53	482
	s 54	482
	s 57	528
	s 58	554
	s 68	483
	s 69	515
	s 73	475, 478
	s 94	729
	s 95	470
c 42	(Mortmain and Charitable Uses Act, 1888), s 4 (4)	315
c 43	(County Courts Act, 1888)—	
	s 67 (7)	89
	s 104	419
c 64	(Law of Libel Amendment Act, 1888), s 4	500
c lx	(Lincolnshire Police Superannuation Act, 1883)	514
52 & 53 Vict c 7	(Customs and Inland Revenue Act, 1889), s 11	390
c 18.	(Indecent Advertisements Act, 1890)	611

		PAGE
52 & 53 Vict c 45	(Factors Act, 1889)	234, 239, 240
	s. 1 (3)	240
	(5)	240
	s. 2 (1)	240, 407
	s. 3	240
c 49	(Arbitration Act, 1889), s. 4	90
c 53	(Poor Law Act, 1889)—	
	s. 1 (3)	568
	(5)	569
	(6)	562, 569
	s. 2	578
	s. 3	552
	s. 4	552
	s. 5	556
	s. 6	552
	s. 8	558
c 63	(Interpretation Act, 1889)	374
	s. 16 (1)	530
	s. 18 (1)	631
	(2)	631
c 69	(Public Bodies Corrupt Practices Act, 1889)	535
	s. 7	535
c 72	(Infectious Disease (Notification) Act, 1889), s. 11	532
53 & 54 Vict c 5	(Lunacy Act, 1890)	543, 619
	s. 13	504
	s. 20	504
	s. 119	85, 89
	s. 286 (2)	577
	s. 311	619
c 23	(Chancery of Lancaster Act, 1890), s. 3	89
c 34	(Infectious Disease (Prevention) Act, 1890) s. 10	544
c 30	(Partnership Act, 1890)	4, 5, 47, 52, 87, 95, 110
	s. 1	3
	(2)	4
	s. 2	108
	(1)	5
	(2)	6, 7
	(3)	7, 8, 9
	(a)	11
	(b)	10
	(c)	10
	(d)	11
	(e)	10
	s. 3	13, 108
	s. 4	5, 108
	(2)	5
	s. 5	24, 25, 33
	s. 6	24, 25, 32
	s. 7	27
	s. 8	14, 25, 33
	s. 9	34, 35, 87
	s. 10	30, 34
	s. 11	30, 35
	s. 12	34
	s. 13	31
	(1)	31
	(2)	31
	s. 14 (1)	13, 15
	(2)	15
	s. 17 (1)	36
	(2)	37
	(3)	37, 38
	s. 18	26
	s. 19	22, 23
	s. 20 (1)	52
	(3)	53
	s. 21	53
	s. 22	56

TABLE OF STATUTES

[xix

53 & 54 Vict c 39

(Partnership Act, 1890)—

PAGE

s. 23 (1)	55, 59, 87
(2)	55, 59, 87, 89, 111
(3)	55, 59, 90
s. 24 (1)	57, 62, 64
(2)	60
(3)	60, 64
(5)	49
(6)	50
(7)	50, 111
(8)	26, 49, 111
(9)	50, 65, 82
s. 25	88
s. 26	111
(1)	24, 85
(2)	86
s. 27	86
(1)	23
(2)	24
s. 28	65
s. 29	47, 63
(1)	47, 48
(2)	47, 63
s. 30	47
s. 31	58, 59, 68, 74, 111
(1)	57, 58, 59
s. 32	85
(a)	86
(b)	24, 86
(c)	85, 111
s. 33 (1)	86, 87
(2)	60, 87, 111
s. 34	87
s. 35 (a)	85, 90, 91
(b)	92
(c)	92
(d)	92, 93
(e)	93
(f)	94
s. 36 (1)	38, 96
(2)	38, 97
(3)	38, 86, 87
s. 37	96
s. 38	27, 86, 98, 403
s. 39	55, 61, 101
s. 40	94, 95
(a)	95
(b)	95
s. 41	99
s. 42	63
(1)	63, 99
(2)	64, 99
s. 43	104
s. 44 (a)	103
(b)	104
(2)	76
s. 45	4, 108
s. 46	4
s. 15	(Police Act, 1890) 432, 600, 514
s. 1	509
(a)	510
(b)	511
(c)	511
(d)	511
s. 2 (1)	511
(2)	512
(3)	512
(4)	512

		PAGE
53 & 54 Vict c 45	(Police Act, 1890) —	
	s 3	510
	(1)	510
	s 4 (1)	510
	(1)	510
	(4)	510
	(5)	510
	s 5 (1)	511
	(2)	511
	(4)	511
	(5)	511
	(6)	511
	(7)	511
	(8)	511
	s 6	512
	s 7 (1)	512
	(2)	512
	(3)	512, 513
	(4)	513
	(5)	513
	(6)	513
	(7)	513
	(5)	513
	s 8	512
	(1)	512
	s 9	513
	s 10	513
	s 11	513
	s 12	477, 484 516
	s 13 (1)	514
	(2)	514
	s 14 (3)	510
	s 16	476, 477 514
	(1)	514
	(2)	514
	(3)	514
	s 17	515, 517
	s 18	514
	(3)	515
	(4)	515
	s 19	475, 515
	s 21	515
	s 22	515, 518
	s 23	517
	(2)	476 477
	s 25	507
	(1)	491
	(2)	491
	(3)	491
	(4)	491
	(5)	491
	s 26	455 489
	s 27	476
	s 28	474, 480, 493
	s 31	482, 483
	s 32	518
	(3)	477
	(5)	477
	(6)	477
	s 33	467, 468, 506
	s 34	468
	s 39	478 480, 509
	Sched I	510, 511
	Sched II	485 489
	Sched III	467, 506, 510
c 52	(Railways (Ireland) Act, 1890) —	553
c 60	(Local Taxation (Customs and Excise) Act, 1890),	
	s 4	477

TABLE OF STATUTES

lxxi

			PAGE
54 & 55 Vict	c 5	(Army (Annual) Act, 1891), s. 7	572
	c. 24	(Public Accounts and Charges Act, 1891) s. 2	608
	c 31	(Mail Ships Act 1891)	651
	c 38	(Stamp Duties Management Act, 1891)	503
		s. 20	665
		s. 21	665
	c 39	(Stamp Act 1891), s. 59 (1)	184
	c 42	(Tramways (Ireland) Act, 1891)	653
	c 50	(Commissioners for Oaths Act, 1891), s. 1	253
	c 65	(Lunacy Act 1891)—	
		s. 2	504
		s. 27 (1)	89
	c 69	(Penal Servitude Act, 1891)—	
		s. 2	503
		s. 7	612
	c 76	(Public Health (London) Act 1891)	552
		s. 57	522
		s. 72	544
		s. 80	550
		s. 81	550
		s. 86	557
		s. 89	544
55 & 56 Vict	c 38	(Police Returns Act, 1892), s. 1	518
	c 58	(Accumulations Act, 1892)	372
		s. 1	371
56 & 57 Vict	c 6	(Police Disabilities Removal Act, 1893)	468, 490, 489
	c 10	(Police Act, 1893)—	
		s. 2	489
		s. 3	511
		s. 4	514
		s. 5	515
		s. 6	510
	c 38	(Conveyance of Mails Act, 1893)—	
		s. 1	623 652
		s. 2	652
		(1) (a)	652
		(b)	652
		(c)	652
		(d)	652
		(2)	652
		s. 3	653
		s. 5 (1)	601, 652, 653
	c 51	(Trustee Act, 1893), s. 1	190, 658
	c 61	(Public Authorities Protection Act, 1893)	419, 496, 539
		s. 2	499
	c 63	(Married Women's Property Act, 1893), s. 1	21
	c. 71	(Sale of Goods Act, 1893)	210, 488
		s. 1	106
		s. 5	316
		(3)	217, 316
		s. 16	400
		s. 17	100
		s. 23	246
		s. 24 (1)	246
		(2)	246
		s. 25	240, 407
		s. 47	240
	c 73	(Local Government Act, 1894)	525, 527, 532, 650
		s. 6	463, 535
		(1) (d)	538
		s. 20 (1)	532, 533
		(2)	532
		(3)	532
		(5)	532
		(6)	533
		(8)	533

		PAGE
56 & 57 Vict c 73	(Local Government Act, 1894)—	
	s 24 (3)	531
	s 27	248, 249
	s 30	528
	(6)	564
	s 43 (4)	532
	(5)	511
	s 50	530
	s 52 (1)	550
	s 59	533, 534
	(2)	533
	(3)	534
	(4)	534
	s 60	531
	(1)	531
	(2)	531
	(3)	531
	(4)	531
	(6)	533
	s 61	534
	s 68 (2)	525
	s 79 (3)	513
	(5)	533
57 & 58 Vict c 60	(Merchant Shipping Act, 1894)	560
	s 100	565
	s 107	565
	s 182	572
	s 185	572
	s 287	620
	s 301 (3)	566
c clxxxvii	(Thames Conservancy Act 1894)—	
	s 208	471
	s 209	471
58 & 59 Vict c 12	(London Building Act, 1894)	469
c 32	(Metropolitan Police (Receiver) Act, 1895)	469
	(Local Government (Stock Transfer) Act, 1895)	535
	s 1 (2)	535
59 & 60 Vict c 1	(Local Government (Elections) Act, 1896)	531
c 16	(Agricultural Rates Act, 1896)	535
	s 9	535
	Sched	535
c 50	(Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896)	546
	s 2	547
	s 3	547
	s 4	547
	s 5	547
	s 6	547
	s 7	547
	s 8	548
	s 9	534, 547
	s 10	547
	s 11	548
	s 12	546
	s 13	546
	s 14	546
	s 15	546
	s 16	546
	s 17	546
	s 19	546
	Sched.	546
60 & 61 Vict c 26	(Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1897)—	
	s 1	470
	s 3	469
	s 4	469
	s 5	477
	s 6	468
	s 7 (1)	476
	(2)	476

TABLE OF STATUTES

lxviii

			PAGE
60 & 61 Vict. c. 28.	(Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act Amendment Act, 1897), s. 1		548
c. 29.	(Poor Law Act, 1897)—		
	s. 1 (1)		538
	(2)		538
	(4)		538
	(5)		538
	(6)		538
	s. 2		562, 567
c. 30	(Police Property Act, 1897), s. 1 (1)		247
c. 31	(Cleansing of Persons Act, 1897)—		
	s. 1		535
	s. 2		535
c. 41	(Post Office and Telegraph Act, 1897), s. 3		629
c. 65	(Land Transfer Act, 1897)		314
	s. 1		314
	s. 2		314
61 & 62 Vict. c. 5	(Public Buildings Expenses Act, 1898)		635
c. 19	(Poor Law Unions Association (Expenses) Act, 1898), s. 1	631,	549
c. 21	(Poor Law (Scotland) Act, 1898)		601
	s. 1		601
c. 31	(Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1898)		476
c. 36	(Criminal Evidence Act, 1898)—		
	s. 4		615
	Sched		615
c. 39	(Vagrancy Act, 1898)		611
	s. 1 (1)		611
	(2)		611
	(3)		611
c. 60	(Incubates Act, 1898)	569,	619
	s. 22		593
	Sched I		619
62 & 63 Vict. c. 14	(London Government Act, 1899), s. 11		475
c. 26	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1899)—		
	s. 1		408
	s. 2		408
c. 30	(Commons Act, 1899)—		
	s. 22		539
	Sched I		539
c. 37	(Poor Law Act, 1899)—		
	s. 1		509
	s. 2		509
	s. 3		509
	s. 4		501
c. 51	(Sale of Food and Drugs Act, 1899)		503
	s. 20 (1)		559
63 & 64 Vict. c. 16	(District Councillors and Guardians (Term of Office) Act, 1900), s. 1		533
c. 23	(Poor Removal Act, 1900) s. 1		601
c. 46	(Members of Local Authorities Relief Act, 1900) s. 2		532
c. 51	(Money-lenders Act, 1900)	40,	448
	s. 6		250
c. cx	(Great Eastern Railway (General Powers) Act, 1900)—		
	s. 50		495
	(5)		495
1 Edw 7, c. 22	(Factory and Workshop Act, 1901), s. 119		503
2 Edw 7, c. 28	(Licensing Act, 1902), s. 2		420
3 Edw 7, c. 36	(Motor Car Act, 1903)—		
	s. 1		504
	s. 3		504
c. 41.	(Public Buildings Expenses Act, 1903)		635
4 Edw 7, c. 20	(Poor Law Authorities (Transfer of Property) Act, 1904)—		
	s. 1		554
	s. 2		554
	s. 3		555

		PAGE
4 Edw. 7, c. 24	(Wireless Telegraphy Act, 1904)	627
c. 31	(Shop Hours Act, 1904)—	
	§ 2	645
	(5)	645
	Sched.	645
5 Edw. 7, c. 13	(Out-door Relief (Friendly Societies) Act, 1904), s. 1	504
6 Flw. 7, c. 7	(Mines Act 1905)	502
	(Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906)	509, 512
	§ 1	515
	(2)	515
	(3)	516
	§ 2	515
	§ 4	510
	§ 5	512
	(1)	512
	§ 6 (1)	516
	(2)	516
	§ 8	511
c. 39	(Docks Act 1906)	503
c. 34	(Prevention of Corruption Act, 1906)	515
	§ 1 (3)	515
c. 43	(Street Betting Act 1906)	502
c. 47	(Trade Disputes Act 1906)	444
c. 58	(Workmen's Compensation Act, 1906), s. 1	509
7 Edw. 7, c. 9	(Territorial and Reserve Forces Act, 1907)	641
	§ 22	257
c. 14	(Released Persons (Poor Law Relief) Act, 1907)	570,
		591
c. 23	(Criminal Appeal Act, 1907) s. 19	616
c. 23	(Limited Partnerships Act, 1907)	107, 112, 115
		107
	§ 3	108
	§ 4	107
	(2)	108, 110
	(3)	108, 110
	(4)	108
	§ 5	109
	§ 6	108
	(1)	110, 111
	(2)	111
	(3)	112
	(4)	118
	(5) (a)	111
	(b)	111
	(c)	111
	(d)	111
	(e)	111
	§ 7	110, 111, 114, 120
	§ 8	109
	§ 9	109
	(2)	109
	§ 10	109
	§ 12	110
	§ 13	110
	§ 14	119
	§ 15	109
	§ 16 (1)	110
	(2)	110
c. 29	(Limits and Lengths Act, 1907)	199, 207
	§ 1	179
	(1)	150, 152
	(2)	152, 153
	(3)	129, 154, 158
	§ 2	157, 159, 161
	(1)	156
	(3)	154
	(4)	154
	§ 3 (1)	165

TABLE OF STATUTES

LXXV

7 Edw 7, c 29

(Patents and Designs Act, 1907 —

PAGE

s 3 (2)	153, 165, 170
(3)	169
s 4	156, 217
s 5 (1)	158
(2)	158
s 6 (1)	158, 165
(2)	170
(3)	157, 158, 170
(4)	169
(5)	174
s 7	167, 170
(1)	166, 168
(2)	166
(3)	166
(4)	166, 167, 169
s 8	166, 167, 170
(1)	166
(2)	166, 167, 171
(3)	166
(4)	166
s 9	174
s 10	174, 232
s 11	180
(1)	175, 187
(a)	176
(b)	176
(c)	176
(d)	177
(2)	178
(3)	178
s 12 (1)	178
(2)	178
(a)	178
(b)	179
(c)	179
(d)	179
s 13	179
s 14 (1)	179, 181, 222
(2)	179, 181
s 15 (1)	179
(2)	207
s 16	158
s 17 (1)	181, 198
(2)	181, 182
s 18	200
(1)	201
(2)	201
(3)	202
(4)	204
(5)	204
s 19	138
(1)	205
(2)	205
(3)	205, 206
(4)	206
s 20	208
(1)	182
(2)	182
(3)	182
(4)	182
(5)	183
s 21	187
(1)	171
(2)	171
(3)	171, 172
(4)	171, 172
(5)	172

7 Edw 7, c 29

(Patents and Designs Act, 1907)—

PAGE

s 21 (6)	173
(7)	170 173
s 22	171, 174, 216, 225
s 23	173, 216
s 24	205, 209, 210
(1)	197
(2)	198
(3)	198
(4)	198
(5)	197
(6)	198
s 25	206
(2)	217
(a)	207
(L)	207
(3) (u)	206
(L)	207
s 26	187
(1)	207
(2)	208
(3)	208
(4)	208
s 27	208
(1)	208, 209
(2)	210, 228
(a)	210
(L)	210
(3)	210
(4)	210
s 28	192
(1)	179
(3)	181
s 29	130 192, 211
s 30 (1)	188
(2)	188
(3)	189
(4)	189
(5)	189
(6)	189
(7)	189
(8)	189
(9)	206
(10)	189
(11)	189
(12)	188
s 31 (1)	221
s 32	206 210, 225
s 33	211 217, 223
s 34	221
s 35	224, 225, 226
s 36	228
s 37	130, 187, 190, 191
s 38	193, 217
(1)	193
(a)	193
(L)	193
(u)	193
(2)	193
(3)	193
(4)	193
(5) (a)	193
(c)	193
(d)	193
s 40	169, 170
s 41 (1)	143, 167
(2)	147, 167
s 42	159, 173

TABLE OF STATUTES.

lxvii

7 Edw. 7, c. 22.

(Patents and Designs Act, 1907)—

PAGE

s. 43	120, 153	190
s. 44		179
s. 45 (1)		145
(2)		145
s. 48		211
s. 62 (1)		153
s. 63		153
s. 66		180
s. 67		181
s. 68		167
s. 70	108,	171
(c)		180
s. 71	168, 190 *	
(1)		186
(2)		180
(3)		187
s. 72 (1)		180
(2)		180
(3)		181
(4)		181
s. 73		168
s. 74		168
s. 75		168
s. 77	168, 109,	209
s. 78		180
s. 79	181,	223
s. 83		129
s. 84 (1)		231
(2)		231
(3)		231
(4)		231
s. 85 (1)		231
(2)		231
(3)		231
s. 86 (1)		230
s. 89 (1)		232
(2)		232
(3)		232
(5)		232
s. 91 (1)		229
(2)		230
(3)		230
(4)		230
(5)		230
s. 92 (2)	200, 205	208
s. 93	127, 168, 169,	189
Sched. III		191
c. 50 (Companies Act, 1907), s. 14		304
c. 53 (Public Health Acts Amendment Act, 1907)—		
s. 79		503
s. 87		503
s. 88		503
8 Edw 7, c. 5 (Police Superannuation Act, 1908)—		
s. 1		510
s. 2		510
c. 15. (Costs in Criminal Cases Act, 1908)—		
s. 9 (4)		616
(6)		258
c. 16 (Finance Act, 1908)		504
s. 14		621
c. 27 (Married Women's Property Act, 1908), s. 1		574
c. 40. (Old Age Pensions Act, 1908)	616,	621
s. 1 (2)		620
(4)		618
s. 2 (1)		617
(2)		617
(3)		617

TABLE OF STATUTES

	PAGE
§ 1 dw 7, c 40	
(Old Age Pensions Act 1908) -	
§ 1 (1) (a)	618
(b)	618
(c)	619
(d)	619
(2)	619
(3)	619
§ 4 (3)	618
§ 5	620
§ 6	620
§ 7	622
(1) (a)	621
(b)	621
(c)	623
(d)	623
§ 8 (1)	621
(2)	621
(3)	621
(4)	621
§ 9 (1)	620
(2)	622
§ 10	621
§ 11 (3)	621
Sched	620
§ 48	
(Post Office Act 1903)	632 633, 635, 636,
	637, 639 640, 641, 642 644,
	649, 651, 654, 659, 664, 667,
	668, 669
§ 1	637
§ 2	637, 638
(1) (a)	638
(b)	638
(c)	646
(d)	638
(2)	639
(3)	639
(4)	639
§ 3	627
(1)	639
(2)	639
(3)	639
§ 4	638, 657
§ 5 (1)	641
(2)	641
(3)	641
§ 6 (1)	641
(2) (a)	641
(b)	641
(c)	642
(d)	642
(e)	641
(f)	642
(3)	641
(4)	660
(5)	660
(b) (i)	660
(ii)	660
(c)	660
(7)	640
§ 7 (1)	640
(2)	640
(3)	640
§ 8 (1)	640
(2)	640
§ 9	640
§ 10	637
§ 11	640
§ 12	642

TABLE OF STATUTES

lxxix

P LdW 7, a. 43

(Post Office Act, 1903)—

	PAGE
s 13	643
s 14	631
(a)	631
s 15	643
s 16	643 644
s 17	643 644
s 18	613, 641 645
s 19	630
s. 20	643
(1)	647
(2)	647
(a)	647
(b)	647
(3)	631 646
s 21	646
(1)	647
(2)	647
(3)	647
(4)	647
s 22	616, 647
s 23 (1)	648
(2)	648
(4)	648
s 24 (1)	648 649
(a)	649
(b)	649
(c)	649
(2)	649
(3)	649
s 25	649
s 26 (1)	654
(2)	654
s 27 (1)	655
(2)	655
(3)	655
(4)	655
(5)	655
s 28 (1)	662
(2)	662
s 29 (1)	655
(2)	656
s 30 (1)	655 656
(a)	656
(b)	656
(2) (a)	656
(b)	656
(c)	656
(3)	656
(4)	660
s 31	656
s 32	661
s 33 (1)	628
(2)	628
s 34	660
(1)	631
(2)	627, 611, 622
(3)	6
(4)	
(5)	
(6)	
(7)	
s. 35 (1)	
(2)	
s. 36	
s 37	
s. 38	
s 39	

s edw 7, c 48.

(Post Office Act, 1908)—

PAGE

s. 40	629, 634
s. 41	634
s. 42	628, 629
s. 43	630
s. 44 (1)	630
(2)	630
(3)	630
s. 45 (1)	634
s. 46	635
(1)	634
(2) (a)	635
(b)	635
(c)	635
(d)	635
(e)	635
(f)	636
(3)	636
(4)	634
s. 47 (1)	636
(2)	636
(3)	635, 636
s. 48	650
s. 49 (1)	651
(2)	650
(3)	650
(4)	650
(5)	650
(6)	650
(7)	651
(8)	650
(9)	650
(10)	650
(11)	650
ss. 50—59	659
s. 53	661, 662
s. 54 (1)	663
(2)	663
(3)	663
(4)	663
s. 56	644
s. 57	664
s. 58 (1)	664
(2)	664
s. 59 (1)	664
(2)	664
s. 61	666
s. 62	666
s. 63 (1)	662
(3)	662
s. 64	665
s. 65	665
(2)	665
(3)	665
(1)	665
s. 66	665
(1) (c)	666
(2)	665
s. 67 (1)	667
(2)	504, 667
s. 68	667
(1)	667
(3)	667
s. 69	667, 668
s. 70 (1)	668
(2)	668
(3)	668

TABLE OF STATUTES.

lxvii

1 Edw 7, c 48.

(Post Office Act, 1908)—

PAGE

s. 71 (1)	668
(2)	669
(1)	669
s. 73 (1)	669
(2)	669
s. 75	668
s. 76	668
s. 77	669
s. 78	669
s. 79 (1)	666
(2)	667
(3)	667
(4)	667
s. 80	645
s. 81 (1)	646
(2)	646
s. 82 (1)	667
(2)	667
s. 83	667
s. 84	661
s. 85 (1)	657
(2)	667
s. 86	667
s. 87	649
(b)	649
s. 88	641
s. 89	630, 631, 634, 637, 638, 651, 654, 662, 666
s. 90 (a)	642, 661
(b)	661
(c)	661
s. 91	641
(1)	653
92 (a)	630
(b)	658
(d)	63
Sched. I	6
s. 27.	(Children Act, 1908) 197, 198, 502, 537, 541
s. 10	537, 541
s. 14	609
s. 34	541
(1)	537
s. 36	537
s. 58	609
s. 59	609
s. 89	594
s. 94	506
s. 117	255
s. 126	537
s. 63	(Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908) 105, 112, 113, 322
s. 1	10, 108
s. 22	389
s. 103	346
s. 123	119
s. 124	115, 119
s. 127	120
s. 129	94
s. 131	113
s. 132	113
s. 133	114
s. 137 (1) (a)	115
(b)	115
(2)	113, 114
(3)	115
s. 142	117
s. 144	120
s. 148 (1)	117

		PAGE
8 Edw 7, c 69.	(Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908)—	
	§ 148 (2)	117
	§ 151	120
	§ 172	121
	§ 175 (1)	118
	§ 178	121
	§ 210	121
	§ 215	118
	§ 222 (1)	121
	§ 267	112 115
	§ 268	112, 113 114 118
	(1) (i)	114
	(ii)	112
	(vi)	115 116
	§ 269 (1)	119
	(2)	120
	§ 270	116
	§ 271	117
	§ 273	112
9 Edw 7, c 14	(Assistant Postmaster General Act 1909) § 1	628
c 40	(Metropolitan Police Act 1909)	466
	§ 1	476
	§ 3	468
	§ 4	477
c 49	(Assurance Companies Act 1909) —	
	§ 1	114
	§ 23	114
c lxxv	(City of London (Street Traffic) Act, 1909)	479
c lxxv	(London County Council (Tramways and Improve- ments) Act 1909) § 60	471
10 Edw 7 & 1 Geo 5,	(Finance (1909-10) Act 1910) § 10 (2)	629
c 8	(Police (Weekly Rest Day) Act, 1910)	500
c 13	(Licensing (Consolidation) Act, 1910)	503
c 24	§ 10	503
	§ 15	503
	§ 22	503
	§ 25	503
	§ 27	503
	§ 53	503
	§ 55	472
	§ 62	504
	§ 64	504
	§ 78	502
	§ 80	504
	§ 81	504
	§ 82	504
c 28	(Civil List Act, 1910)	633
c cxxix	(London County Council (General Powers) Act, 1910),	
	§ 44	493
1 & 2 Geo 5, c 6	(Perjury Act, 1911)	253
c 7	(Municipal Elections (Corrupt and Illegal Practices) Act, 1911)	532
c 16	(Old Age Pensioners Age, 1911)	616, 621
	§ 1	617, 618
	§ 2 (1)	617 618
	(2)	618
	§ 3 (1)	617
	(2)	617
	§ 4 (1)	618
	(2)	619
	(3)	620
	§ 5	620
	§ 5 (1)	622
	(3)	622
	(4)	622
	(5)	622
	(6)	623

TABLE OF STATUTES.

lxxxiii

		PAGE
1 & 2 Geo 5 c 16.	(Old Age Pensions Act, 1911)—	
	s. 7 (1)	620
	(2)	620, 622
	(3)	620
	s. 8	616
c 26	(Telephone Transfer Act, 1911)	627, 629
c 37	(Conveyancing Act, 1911)	295
	s. 6	299, 331
	s. 6, 3}	361
	(4)	361
c 46	(Copyright Act, 1911)	401
	s. 5 (2)	489
c 48	(Finance Act, 1911), s. 20	628, 637
c 51	(Shops Act, 1911)	64
	s. 2	645
	s. 7	503
	s. 10 (1) (a)	64
	(b)	645
	(2)	645
c 55	(National Insurance Act, 1911)	523, 564, 628
	s. 109	564
c 56	(Telephone Transfer Amendment Act, 1911)	627
2 Geo 5 c 4.	(Metropolitan Police Act, 1912)—	
	s. 1 (a)	476
	(b)	474

PARTNERSHIP.

	PAGE
PART I DEFINITION AND NATURE -	3
SECT 1 DEFINITION - - - -	3
SECT 2 NATURE - - - -	4
PART II CONSIDERATIONS AFFECTING THE QUESTION WHETHER A PARTNERSHIP EXISTS - - -	5
SECT 1 CO-OWNERSHIP OF PROPERTY - - - -	5
SECT 2 SHARING GROSS RETURNS - - - -	7
SECT 3 SHARING PROFITS - - - -	8
SECT 4 HOLDING OUT AS PARTNERS - - - -	13
PART III CREATION AND DURATION OF PARTNERSHIP -	16
SECT 1 LEGALITY OF PARTNERSHIP - - - -	16
Sub-sect 1 In General - - - -	16
Sub-sect 2 Effect of Illegality - - - -	17
SECT 2 PERSONAL CAPACITY - - - -	19
SECT 3 EVIDENCE OF FORMATION - - - -	21
Sub-sect 1 Writing - - - -	21
Sub-sect 2 Mode of Dealing - - - -	22
SECT 4 DURATION OF PARTNERSHIP - - - -	23
PART IV RELATIONS BETWEEN PARTNERS AND THIRD PARTIES - - - -	24
SECT 1 POWER OF ONE PARTNER TO BIND THE FIRM - - -	24
Sub-sect 1 General Principles - - - -	24
Sub-sect 2 Instances of Implied Authority - - -	25
Sub-sect 3 Wrongful Acts - - - -	30
Sub-sect 4 Acts done by Authorised Person in Name of Firm - - - -	32
Sub-sect 5 Acts done in Name of Individual Partner - -	32
Sub-sect 6 Ratification and Repudiation - - -	33
SECT 2 LIABILITY OF PARTNERS TO THIRD PARTIES - - -	34
Sub-sect. 1 Nature - - - -	34
Sub-sect 2 Duration - - - -	36
SECT 3 LEGAL PROCEEDINGS - - - -	38
Sub-sect 1 Actions by Partners - - - -	38
Sub-sect 2 Actions against Partners - - - -	41
PART V. RELATIONS OF PARTNERS INTER SE - - -	47
SECT 1 GOOD FAITH NECESSARY - - - -	47
SECT 2 MANAGEMENT OF PARTNERSHIP AFFAIRS - - -	49
SECT 3 ADMISSION OF OTHER PARTNERS - - -	50

	PAGE
PART V RELATIONS OF PARTNERS INTER SE—continued	
SECT 4 PARTNERSHIP PROPERTY AND PROPERTY OF SEPARATE PARTNERS - - - - -	52
SECT 5 SHARES IN PARTNERSHIPS - - - - -	55
Sub-sect 1 Nature of Shares - - - - -	55
Sub-sect 2 Amount of Shares - - - - -	57
Sub-sect 3 Dealings by a Partner with his Share - - - - -	57
Sub-sect 4 Charging Orders - - - - -	59
SECT 6 RIGHT TO INDEMNITY - - - - -	60
SECT 7 PARTNER'S LIEN - - - - -	61
SECT 8 DIVISION OF PROFITS AND INCIDENCE OF LOSSES - - - - -	62
SECT 9 ACCOUNTS - - - - -	65
SECT 10 ENFORCEMENT OF RIGHTS OF PARTNERS INTER SE - - - - -	66
Sub-sect 1 Parties to Partnership Actions - - - - -	66
Sub-sect 2 Actions for Fraud or Misrepresentation - - - - -	69
(i) Inducing Partnership - - - - -	69
(ii) On Sale of Shares - - - - -	70
Sub-sect 3 Accounts - - - - -	70
Sub-sect 4 Receivers - - - - -	77
Sub-sect 5 Injunctions - - - - -	80
(i) In a Going Concern - - - - -	80
(ii) In Relation to Dissolution - - - - -	81
PART VI DISSOLUTION - - - - -	85
SECT 1 OTHERWISE THAN BY THE COURT - - - - -	85
Sub-sect 1 On Notice - - - - -	85
Sub-sect 2 On Effluxion of Time or Completion of Adventure - - - - -	86
Sub-sect 3 On Death of Partner - - - - -	86
Sub-sect 4 On Bankruptcy of Partner - - - - -	87
Sub-sect 5 On Making of Charging Order on Partner's Share - - - - -	87
Sub-sect 6 On Partnership becoming Illegal - - - - -	87
Sub-sect 7 On Expulsion of Partner - - - - -	88
SECT 2 BY THE COURT - - - - -	88
Sub-sect Courts having Jurisdiction - - - - -	88
Sub-sect Action for Dissolution - - - - -	89
Sub-sect Grounds of Dissolution - - - - -	90
(i) Insanity - - - - -	90
(ii) Disablement - - - - -	92
(iii) Conduct Prejudicial to Partnership - - - - -	92
(iv) Breach of Partnership Agreement and Unreasonable Conduct - - - - -	92
(v) Partnership Business Carried on at a Loss - - - - -	93
(vi) Where Dissolution is Just and Equitable - - - - -	94
SECT 3 RETURN OF PREMIUMS - - - - -	94
SECT 4 NOTICE OF DISSOLUTION - - - - -	96
SECT 5 WINDING UP OF PARTNERSHIP BUSINESS - - - - -	97
Sub-sect 1 Continuation of Partner's Authority - - - - -	97
Sub-sect 2 Distribution of Profits made after Dissolution - - - - -	99
Sub-sect 3 Realisation and Disposal of Assets - - - - -	101
(i) In General - - - - -	101
(ii) Sale by Order of Court - - - - -	102
(iii) Payment of Losses - - - - -	103
(iv) Application of Assets Realised - - - - -	103
(v) Disposal of Goodwill - - - - -	104

	PAGE
•PART VII LIMITED PARTNERSHIPS - - - - -	107
SECT 1 DEFINITIONS AND CONSTITUTION - - - - -	107
SECT 2 REGISTRATION - - - - -	109
Sub-sect 1 Effect of Non-registration - - - - -	109
Sub-sect 2 Particulars Required to be Registered - - - - -	109
Sub-sect 3 Provisions Relating to Registration - - - - -	109
SECT 3 MODIFICATIONS OF GENERAL LAW OF PARTNERSHIP - - - - -	110
Sub-sect 1 In General - - - - -	110
Sub-sect 2 Powers and Liabilities of a Limited Partner - - - - -	110
Sub-sect 3 Death, Bankruptcy, or Lunacy of a Limited Partner - - - - -	111
Sub-sect 4 Other Modifications - - - - -	111
Sub-sect 5 Winding up on Dissolution - - - - -	112
Sub-sect 6 Winding up by the Court - - - - -	112
(i) In General - - - - -	112
(ii) Definitions - - - - -	113
(iii) Jurisdiction - - - - -	113
(iv) Grounds for Winding up - - - - -	114
(v) Practice - - - - -	115
(vi) Stay of Proceedings - - - - -	116
(vii) Proceedings by Official Receiver - - - - -	117
(viii) Powers and Duties of Liquidator - - - - -	118
(ix) The Contributories - - - - -	118
(x) Surplus Assets - - - - -	120
(xi) Miscellaneous - - - - -	120
(xii) Dissolution - - - - -	121

<i>For Agents</i> - - -	- See title AGENCY
<i>Bankruptcy</i> - - -	BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY
<i>Companies</i> - - -	COMPANIES
<i>Deeds generally</i> - - -	DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS
<i>Fraud</i> - - -	MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD
• <i>Misrepresentation</i> - - -	MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD
<i>Mistake</i> - - -	MISTAKE
<i>Personal Property</i> - - -	PERSONAL PROPERTY
<i>Real Property</i> - - -	REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS
	REAL
<i>Receivers</i> - - -	RECEIVERS

Part I.—Definition and Nature.

SECT 1—*Definition.*

1 Partnership is the relation which subsists between persons (a) Partnership carrying on a business in common with a view to profit (b),

(a) An ordinary partnership is an association composed of definite individuals, bound together by contract between themselves to continue combined for some joint object either during pleasure or during a limited time, and is essentially composed of the persons originally entering into the contract with one another (*Smith v Anderson* (1880), 15 Ch D 247, C A, per JAMES, L J, at p 273). In this it differs from a company or association in which the members are constantly changing (*ibid*), and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 12 *et seq*, 44, 45. For a review of the authorities which define a partnership, see *Pooley v Driver* (1876), 5 Ch D 458, per JESSEL, M R, at pp 471 *et seq*. As to whether executors are partners, see title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 314, *Re Fisher & Sons*, [1912] 2 K B 491.

(b) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 1. This Act is merely

SECT. 1. * other than those who constitute a company, registered under the Companies Acts (c), or incorporated by statute, letters patent or royal charter, or working within the Stannaries (d).

Definition.

SECT. 2.—*Nature*

Essentials of partnership.

2 The above definition involves a contract between the partners to engage in a commercial business with a view to profit (e) As a rule, each partner contributes either property, skill, or labour, but this is not essential A person who contributes property without labour, and has the rights of a partner, is usually termed a sleeping or dormant partner. A sleeping partner may, however, contribute nothing (f)

Relation between partners

The relation between partners is not that of debtor and creditor, unless and until the partnership accounts have been finally taken after dissolution and a balance has been ascertained to be owing from one to another (g) Nor are the partners, as such, trustees for each other or for their firm (h)

Business

3 The existence of a business is essential, and for this purpose "business" includes every trade, occupation, or profession (i) In some professions, however, etiquette makes partnership impracticable, for example, that of an English barrister (j)

Charitable and other associations

4 In the definitions of partnership the idea involved is that of joint operation for the sake of gain (k), therefore a society for religious or charitable purposes is not a partnership (l)

declaratory (*British Homes Assurance Corporation, Ltd v Paterson*, [1902] 2 Ch 404, *per* FARWELL, J, at p 410, and, where not inconsistent with the express provisions of the Act, the rules of common law and equity in relation to partnership are still in force (Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 46)

(e) See title COMPANIES, Vol V p 36

(d) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 1 (2), and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 36, 662, 744, 751

(e) "I have always understood the definition of partnership to be a mutual participation in profit or loss" (*Green v Beesley* (1835), 2 Bing (N C) 108, *per* TINDAL, C J, at p 112) But this cannot now be regarded as an exhaustive or authoritative definition

(f) *Pooley v Driver* (1876), 5 Ch D 458, 472, 473

(g) *Richardson v Bank of England* (1838), 4 My & Cr 165, 171, 172, *De Tastet v Shaw* (1818), 1 B & Ald 664

(h) *Piddocks v Burt*, [1894] 1 Ch 343

(i) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 45 "To constitute a partnership the parties must have agreed to carry on business, or to share profits in some way in common" (*Mollwo, March & Co v Court of Wards* (1872), L R 4 P C 419, *per* Sir MONTAGU SMITH, at p 436)

(j) See title BARRISTERS, Vol II, p 370 As to Fellows of the Royal College of Physicians, see title MEDICINE AND PHARMACY, Vol XX., p 310

(k) *R. v. Robson* (1885), 16 Q B D 137, C C R, *per* Lord COLERIDGE, C J, at p 140, and see p 6, *post*

(l) Instances of other associations for a common object which are not partnerships, properly so called, are—clubs (*Wise v Perpetual Trustee Co*, [1903] A C 139, 149, P C, *Fleming v Hector* (1836), 2 M & W 172, 175—187; see title CLUBS, Vol IV, pp 406 *et seq*), trade protection societies (*Caldicott v. Griffiths* (1853), 8 Exch 898, *Todd v Emly* (1841), 8 W 505); building and other benefit societies (*Brownlie v. Russell* (1883), 8 App Cas 235; see titles BUILDING SOCIETIES, Vol III., pp 351, 352, FRIENDLY SOCIETIES, Vol XV, p 121, note (a)) These latter are not partnerships either within the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict.

A partnership does not exist between the trustees of a deed for the benefit of creditors and the debtor when the latter is employed to carry on the business under the supervision of the trustees (*m*), especially if the object of the arrangement is to wind up the business, and not to continue it with a view to future profits (*n*)

SECT. 3.
Nature,
Arrangement
with
creditors.

5. The word "firm" is a short, collective name for the individuals who constitute the partners, and the name under which they trade is their firm name (*o*). It is not the name of a corporation, it is a short name for X, Y and Z carrying on business in partnership (*p*). In English law, a firm is not a *persona* (*q*).

Firm.

Part II.—Considerations affecting the Question whether a Partnership Exists.

SECT. 1—Co-ownership of Property

6. Co-ownership of any property does not, in itself, constitute a partnership between the co-owners, whether they share any profits arising from it or not (*r*). Whether co-owners are also partners is a question of evidence. The mode in which the property has been dealt with and divided and the way in which it and the proceeds and income thereof have been treated in the books are important. Persons who are only co-owners keep books on a totally different footing from those who are also partners (*s*).

Co owner-
ship and
partnership
distinguished.

c 39), or the general acceptance of the term (*Re Lead Company's Workmen's Fund Society, Lowes v Governor and Company for Smelting Down Lead with Pit and Sea Coal*, [1904] 2 Ch 196, disapproving of the misuse of the term "partnership" in *Lloyd v Loring* (1802), 6 Ves 773, *Beaumont v Meredith* (1814), 3 Ves & B 180, *Silber v Barnes* (1839), 6 Bing (N C) 180). As to the nature of trade unions, see title TRADE UNIONS

(*m*) *Price v Groom* (1848), 2 Exch 542

(*n*) *Coates v Williams* (1852), 7 Exch 205, following *Jones v Whitbread* (1851), 11 C B 406

(*o*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 4, the firm name is a mere expression, not a legal entity (*Sadler v Whiteman*, [1910] 1 K B 868, per FARWELL, L J, at p 889, cited with approval, *R v Holden*, [1912] 1 K B 483, C C A)

(*p*) *Re Smith, Fleming & Co, Ex parte Harding* (1879), 12 Ch D 557, 567, C A

(*q*) *Re Sawers, Ex parte Blain* (1879), 12 Ch D 522, C A, per JAMES, L J, at p 533, *Re Vagliano Anthracite Collieries, Ltd* (1910), 79 L J (CH) 769, compare *Re Shand, Ex parte Corbett* (1880), 14 Ch D 122, 126, C A. In Scotland a firm is a legal person distinct from the partners of which it is composed (Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 4 (2), Bell's Principles of the Law of Scotland, s 357). As to proceedings by and against partners in the firm name, see p 38, post

(*r*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2(1). As to co-ownership generally, see title PERSONAL PROPERTY. Co-owners of a racehorse, who share equally the expenses of keeping, training, and running it, are not necessarily partners as regards the horse, although there may be a partnership between them in the business of running it for profit (*French v Styling* (1857), 2 C B (N S) 357, 366, compare *Green v Briggs* (1848), 6 Hare, 395).

(*s*) *Re Hulton, Hulton v Lister* (1890), 62 L T. 200, C A

SMO. 1
Co-owner-
ship of
Property

Co-owners
of land

Partnership
in land.

7. Co-owners of land, who merely share the expenses of management and divide the income arising from their land in specified shares, are not thereby constituted partners. Nor is it a partnership if two co-owners agree that one shall manage, and provide funds for the repair of, a house, and that the net rent shall be divided between them equally (t)

But if co-owners use their land or other property for the purpose of carrying on any business, they are partners as regards the business (u), and *prima facie* also as regards the property employed (v), though not necessarily so as regards the latter (a). Thus, if land is bought by two persons with the object of improving and selling it in building lots, there may be a partnership between them as regards the land (b), and a third person (for example, a surveyor) who contributes skill and labour, but neither land nor money, may, if he is entitled to share in the profits, be a partner with them, especially if he shares losses as well as profits (c). To constitute a partnership the property of the co-owners must be employed for some purpose which produces a return in the shape of profits or which adds to its value (d)

Joint
adventure.

8. If two or more persons agree that each shall buy or provide his own goods and export them for sale as a joint adventure, dividing the profits of the transaction in specified shares, there is no partnership as regards the separate parcel of goods provided by each, until they are brought into the common stock (e). Conversely, if the parties are jointly concerned in the purchase, they are not partners unless they are also jointly concerned in the future sale (f). But where they agree to embark in a joint adventure for

(t) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2 (2), and see pp 52, 53, *post*. As to co owners of land generally, see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL.

(u) Thus, the working of a colliery of which the owners are tenants in common constitutes a partnership between them as regards the business of the colliery (*Jefferys v Smith* (1820), 1 Jac & W 298, *Fereday v Wightwick* (1829), 1 Russ & M 45, *County of Gloucester Bank v Rudry Merthyr Steam and House Coal Colliery Co*, [1895] 1 Ch 629, 637, C A.) As to the respective rights of co owners of mines, see title MINES, MINERALS, AND QUARRIES, Vol XX, pp 511, 525, 526, 638.

(v) *Forster v Hale* (1798), 3 Ves 696, (1800) 5 Ves 308, 309 (if a partnership in a colliery is found to exist, the property necessary for the purposes of that partnership is, by operation of law, held for the purposes of the partnership (*ibid*)). *Waterer v Waterer* (1873), L. R. 15 Eq 402, *Syers v Syers* (1876), 1 App Cas 174, *Davies v Games* (1879), 12 Ch D 813, and see pp 52, 53, *post*.

(a) *Craushay v Maulo* (1818), 1 Swan 495, 518, *French v Styring* (1857), 2 C B (N S) 357, *Meyer v Sharpe* (1813), 5 Taunt 74, *Davis v Davis* [1894] 1 Ch 393.

(b) *Dale v Hamilton* (1846), 5 Hare, 369, 393, *Darby v Darby* (1856), 3 Drew 493, *Re Hulton*, *Hulton v Lester* (1890), 62 L T 200, C A, and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 58.

(c) *Moore v Davis* (1879), 11 Ch D 261, 265.

(d) *Kay v Johnston* (1856), 21 Beav 536, 537, compare *Re Leslie*, *Leslie v French* (1883), 23 Ch D 552, *Leigh v Dickeson* (1883), 12 Q. B. D 194, affirmed (1884), 15 Q. B. D 60, C A, *Robinson v Ashton*, *Ashton v Robinson* (1875), L. R. 20 Eq 25, and see p 4, *ante*.

(e) *Saville v Robertson* (1792), 4 Term Rep 720, 725, *Heap v Dobson* (1863), 15 C B. (N S) 460.

(f) *Clope v Eyre* (1788), 1 Hy Bl 37, per Lord LOUGHBOROUGH C.J.,

the purchase and sale of goods, there is a partnership as regards all the goods bought in pursuance of the agreement, and each is liable for the price of the goods bought by the others (g), and, if goods bought for a joint adventure by two persons are wholly paid for by one of them, while the other contributes skill and labour in return for a share of the profits, there may be a partnership between them of such a nature that the goods are partnership property (h).

SECT. 1.
Co-ownership of Property.

9. On the other hand, persons may be partners, either generally or in some particular business or isolated transaction, although all or part of the property used for the purposes of such business transaction may not be the subject of joint ownership, but may belong to some or one of them individually (i).

Partnership without joint ownership

SECT. 2.—Sharing Gross Returns.

10 Persons who share the gross returns of a business or adventure are not necessarily partners, whether the property producing such returns belongs to all, or some, or only one of them (k). Receipt of a share of gross returns, as distinguished from receipt of a share of profits, is not even *prima facie* evidence of partnership (l).

Receipt of share of gross returns not *prima facie* evidence of partnership

Thus, if one of two joint owners of a ship takes the exclusive management of it, bearing all the expenses, and pays one-third of the gross earnings to the other joint owner, the joint owners are

at p 49 (where the property purchased was to be divided *in specio*), compare *Hoare v Dawes* (1780), 1 Doug (K B) 371, *Gibson v Lupton* (1832), 9 Bing 297

(g) *Gouthwaite v Duckworth* (1810), 12 East, 421, *Lowe v Dixon* (1885), 10 Q B D 455. Where a sole patentee and a capitalist who supplied the necessary funds worked a patent in partnership for four years and were advertised as joint patentees, the patent was held to have become partnership property (*Kenny's Patent Buttonholeing Co v Somervell* (1878), 26 W R 786).

(h) *Reid v Hollinshed* (1825), 7 Dow & Ry (K B) 444, *Alexander v Young* (1884), 1 T L R 145.

(i) Thus, where two persons carried on the business of running a stage coach, or a stage waggon, each supplying his own horses for part of the journey and dividing the profits according to the mileage worked by their teams, they were held to be partners (*Fromont v Coupland* (1824), 2 Bing 170, *Russell v Austwick* (1826), 1 Sim 52). In the first case all the fares were received by one partner, who accounted to the other, in the latter case each received the fares earned in his district and accounted to the other, but there was no partnership as regards the horses, and therefore one partner was not liable for goods supplied to the other for the use of the horses which were his separate property, and see *Barlow v Hanson* (1809), 2 Taunt 49, compare *Wilson v Whitehead* (1842), 10 M & W 503, *Osborne v Jullion* (1856), 3 Drew 596, *Moore v Davis* (1879), 11 Ch D 261, 265, and see, further, the cases cited at p 53, *post*.

(k) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2(2). "The authorities clearly show that two people merely receiving payment out of the gross profits of a business does not make a partnership between them, even as against the world" (*Lyon v Knowles* (1863), 3 B & S 556, *per* CROMPTON, J., at p 564, affirmed (1864), 5 B. & S 751, Ex Ch).

(l) Compare Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2(3); pp 8, 9, *post*. As to the effect of association of promoters of a company, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 58.

SECT 2
Sharing
Gross
Returns

not partners (*m*), and if a ship belongs to one person and is worked by another who receives half the gross earnings, these persons are not partners (*n*). In the former case the share of earnings paid to one owner represents rent for his share of the ship; in the latter the share paid to the manager represents wages for his work. Even where the expenses are jointly borne, the same rule seems to apply (*o*).

So the owner of a theatre who pays certain outgoings and receives half the gross receipts of public performances given by the occupier is not a partner, at any rate, if the management is in the hands of the occupier (*p*).

SECT 3 — *Sharing Profits.*

Sharing
profits not
conclusive

11 The fact that a person receives a share of the net profits, or a payment contingent on, or varying with, the net profits, pursuant to some arrangement with the owner or owners of a business, does not, of itself, make him a partner in such business (*q*). The

(*m*) *Burnard v Aaron* (1862), 31 L J (C P) 334. As to the ownership of ships generally, see title SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION.

(*n*) *Dry v Boswell* (1808), 1 Camp 329; compare *Wish v Small* (1808), 1 Camp 330, n (where a share of profits was held to represent rent for pasturage of cattle). In both cases, if the net profits had been shared, the parties would have been partners.

(*o*) *French v Styring* (1867), 2 C B (N S) 357, where two joint owners of a racehorse shared the gross winnings, the horse being kept, trained and run by one only, and see note (*r*), p 5, *ante*.

(*p*) *Lyon v Knowles* (1863), 3 B & S 556, affirmed (1864), 5 B & S 751, Ex Ch.

(*q*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2 (3). This enactment, which repeals but substantially re-enacts the Partnership Amendment Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 86), commonly called "Bovill's Act," declares and settles the law according to the principles laid down in *Cox v Hickman* (1860), 8 H L Cas 268, overruling *Wagh v Carver* (1793), 2 Hy Bl 235, in which it was held (following *Grace v Smith* (1775), 2 Wm Bl 998, *Coope v Eyre* (1788), 1 Hy Bl 37), as also in *Ex parte Langdale* (1811), 18 Ves 300, *Cheap v Oramond* (1821), 4 B & Ald 663, *Ruppell v Roberts and Dempsey* (1834), 4 Nev & M (K B) 31, and other cases, that the receipt of a share of profits *ipso facto* constituted the recipient a partner, even when all the loss was borne by the other party. The ground of these old decisions was that "by taking a part of the profits he takes from the creditors a part of that fund which is the proper security to them for the payment of their debts" (*Wagh v Carver*, *supra*, at p 247, *Grace v Smith*, *supra*, at p 1000). The rule was applied although there was no common stock (*Ex parte Hodgkinson* (1815), 19 Ves 291), and notwithstanding an express stipulation negating the usual incidents of partnership (*Barry v Nesham* (1846), 3 C B 641). On this ground transactions which would otherwise have been invalid under the laws against usury were frequently supported as partnerships (*Gulpin v Enderby* (1822), 5 B. & Ald. 954, *Fereday v Hordern* (1821), Jac 144), compare *Bloxam v Pell* (1775), cited in *Grace v Smith*, *supra*, at p 999. Where losses were also shared, the presumption of partnership was stronger (*Noakes v Barlow* (1872), 26 L. T 136, Ex Ch). But the principle adopted in some of the earlier cases—especially *Wagh v Carver*, *supra*—that, whatever the intention, a participation in net profits was, in law, such cogent evidence of partnership that a presumption arose sufficient to establish, as regards third parties, that relation unless rebutted by other circumstances, "is too artificial, for it takes one term of the contract only and at once raises a presumption upon it, whereas the whole scope of the agreement and all its terms ought

question is whether the business is conducted on behalf of the person sought to be charged as a partner. Receipt of profits is still an important element, but it is not decisive (r). The terms of the arrangement between the parties must be fairly considered as a whole, and if the receipt of profits is only one of such terms it is not conclusive, and the court will give effect to the entire arrangement (a).

SECT. 2.
Sharing
Profits.

may be
determining
factor.

But the receipt of a share of profits, or of an income fixed by reference to profits, is *prima facie* evidence of partnership (b), and if it is the only circumstance from which the intention of the parties can be inferred, they are partners (c).

Sharing
profits
prima facie
evidence of
partnership.

12 If losses as well as profits are shared, the presumption of partnership is stronger (d), and this is so although the agreement may stipulate that each party shall bear only an aliquot share of loss (e). But the fact that losses are shared is not conclusive as to the existence of a partnership (f).

Sharing
profits and
losses.

There is no joint ownership, and no partnership, where each of several joint adventurers supplies a separate parcel of goods which

to be looked at before any presumption of intention can properly be made at all" (*Mollwo, March & Co v Court of Wards* (1872), L R 4 P C 419, per Sir MONTAGU SMITH, at p 433) "They had no intention to become partners, and as the law now stands a partnership cannot be constituted without such an intention" (*Sutton & Co v Grey*, [1894] 1 Q B 285, C A, per Lord ESHER, M R, at p 286), see also *Kelly's Directories, Ltd. v Gavin and Lloyds*, [1901] 1 Ch 374, affirmed, [1902] 1 Ch 631, C A (author and printer).

(r) The test is "whether it is such a participation in profits as to constitute the relationship of principal and agent between the person taking the profits and those actually carrying on the business" (*Bullen v Sharp* (1865), L R 1 C P 86, Ex Ch, per BLACKBURN, J, at p 112, see also *Re English and Irish Church and University Assurance Society* (No 2) (1863), 1 Hem & M 85, *Cox v Hickman* (1800), 8 H L Cas 268, 304, 312, *Holme v Hammond* (1872), L R 7 Exch 218, *Shaw v Galt* (1864), 16 I C L R 357, 375, *Kulshaw v Jukes* (1863), 3 B & S 847).

(a) *Davis v Davis*, [1894] 1 Ch 303 "The whole question to consider is—what, on the contract between the parties, are the rights which that contract has, *inter se*, given to one as against the other" *Walker v Hirsch* (1884), 27 Ch D 460, C A, questioning *Pawsey v Armstrong* (1884), 18 Ch D 698, see *Walker v Hirsch*, *supra*, per COTTON, L J, at p 470, dissenting from the proposition laid down by KAY, J, in *Pawsey v Armstrong*, *supra*, "that if there was an agreement to share profits and losses, whatever the intention of the parties, as expressed in the agreement, might be, that of necessity imposed upon them the position of partners" with the consequential rights of partners, "the question is what is the true construction of the document, and what are the rights arising from it" (*ibid*, per LINDLEY, L J, at p 472), see also *Badeley v Consolidated Bank* (1888), 38 Ch D 238, 258, 263, C A, *Re Young, Ex parte Jones*, [1896] 2 Q B 484; *Ross v Parkyn* (1875), L R 20 Eq 331, *White & Co v Churchyard* (1887), 3 T L R 428, *London Financial Association v Kell* (1884), 28 Ch D 107, 143.

(b) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2 (3).

(c) *Davis v Davis*, *supra*.

(d) *Noakes v Barlow* (1872), 26 L T 136, Ex Ch; *Brett v Beckwith* (1856), 26 L J (CH) 130, *Green v Beesley* (1835), 2 Bing (N C) 108.

(e) *Brown v Tapscott* (1840), 6 M & W 119, *McInroy v Hargrove* (1867), 15 W R 777.

(f) *Walker v Hirsch*, *supra*, see also *Sutton & Co. v Grey*, *supra*, and see note (a), *supra*.

SECT. 3
Sharing
Profits.

are to be sold, and the profits are divided rateably among them (g); nor where one person buys and pays for the goods and the profit or loss is to be shared by himself and another (h).

Share of
profits by way
of annuity,
after sale of
business
or death of
partner

13 A person is not constituted a partner in a business by reason only of the receipt by way of annuity or otherwise of a share of profits as purchase-money for the goodwill, or share of goodwill, of a business formerly belonging wholly or partly to him (i), or by reason only of the receipt by way of annuity of a portion of the profits of a business formerly belonging to the recipient's deceased husband or father (k)

Share of
profits as
remuneration

14 A contract for the remuneration of a servant or agent by a share of profits of a business does not, of itself, make him a partner (l)

(g) *Heap v Dobson* (1863), 15 C B (N S) 460, see p 6, *ante*
(h) *Alfaro v De la Torre* (1876), 24 W R 510, distinguish *Esed v Hollinshead* (1825), 4 B & C 867 (where both parties were interested both in the purchase and sale, though one found all the money and the other gave his time and skill) To constitute a partnership the parties "must be jointly interested in the purchase and also jointly interested in the future sale" (*Hoare v Dawes* (1780), 1 Doug (K B) 371, compare *Gibson v Lupton* (1832), 9 Bing 297, *Coope v Eyre* (1788), 1 Hy Bl 37)

(i) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2 (3) (e), re-enacting the Partnership Amendment Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 86), s 4, see *Hawksley v Outram*, [1892] 3 Ch 359, C A (where the vendors were entitled to receive a share of profits in respect of purchase money left in the business, but the agreement as a whole was inconsistent with the inference that the purchasers were carrying on the business on behalf of themselves and the vendors) "The true test of whether a partnership was intended is this whether there was a joint business, or whether the parties were intending to carry on the business as the agents of each other" (*ibid*, per LOPES, L J, at p 377), compare *Ohlty v Boorman* (1890), 7 T L R 43 It was formerly held that a partner who had retired, reserving an annuity varying with the profits, had not ceased to be a partner (*Re Colbeck & Co, Ex parte Wilson, Ex parte Todd* (1817), Buck, 48) If the agreement does not state that the annuity is to be paid out of profits, the vendor may prove in the bankruptcy of the purchaser, in competition with other creditors, for the capitalised value of the annuity (*Re Gieve, Ex parte Shaw* (1899), 80 L T 737, C A)

(k) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2 (3) (c), re-enacting the Partnership Amendment Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 86), s 3, *Re Jones, Ex parte Harper* (1857), 1 De G & J 180, C A

(l) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2 (3) (b), re-enacting the Partnership Amendment Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 86), s 2, and see *Pott v Eylon* (1846), 3 C B 32, *Andrews v Pugh* (1854), 24 L J. (CH) 58, *Walker v Hirsch* (1884), 27 Ch D 460, C A, disapproving of *Pawsey v Armstrong* (1881), 18 Ch D 698, *Re Ellins, Ex parte Hickin* (1850), 3 De G & Sm 662, title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, p 68 The receipt of a share of profits as remuneration for services had, in several old cases, been held to make the recipient a partner with all the consequent rights and liabilities (*Re Blenken, Ex parte Digby* (1835), 1 Deac 341, *Ex parte Hodgkinson* (1815), 19 Ves 291, *Katsch v Schenk* (1849), 13 Jur 668) This was especially the case where the circumstances pointed to a joint adventure (*Coppard v Page* (1800), For 1, *Smith v Sherwood* (1846), 10 Jur 214) But if the agreement for a share of profits was merely a mode of calculating wages, it was not held to constitute a partnership (*Perrott v Bryant* (1836), 2 Y & C (EX) 61, *Stocker v Brookelbank* (1851), 3 Mac & G 250; *R v Wortley* (1851), 2 Den 333) The true criterion was whether the servant looked to the general credit of his master, or shared the profits of the trade with him, i.e., took a share of profits as such (*Radcliffe v Rushworth* (1864), 33 Beav 494)

Thus a broker (m) or other agent (n), or a clerk or servant (o), who receives a share of profits, or a periodical payment measured by profits, by way of remuneration instead of a fixed commission or salary, is not necessarily a partner, although he may have an option to become a partner, and may do acts which either a partner or manager might do (p). But if he also bears losses he may be a partner (q).

**SECT. 3.
Sharing
Profits.**

If his agreement gives him rights usually given to a partner or contains provisions applicable to a partner, for example, that he shall not pledge his co-adventurer's credit, the inference of partnership is conclusive (r).

Partnership rights imply partnership liabilities.

15 The receipt by a person of a debt or other liquidated amount, by instalments or otherwise, out of the profits of a business does not of itself make him a partner (s).

Receipt of debt out of profits

16 The advance of money by way of loan to a person engaged in or about to engage in business on the terms that the lender shall receive a rate of interest, varying with profits, or a share of profits instead of such interest, does not of itself make the lender a partner, if the loan is made pursuant to a contract in writing signed by or on behalf of all the parties thereto (t). It is immaterial whether

Share of profits as interest or loan

(m) *Benjamin v Porteus* (1796), 2 Hy Bl 590, explained in *Re Nevill, Ex parte White* (1871), 6 Ch App 397, per MELLISH, L J, at pp 404, 405

(n) *Meyer v Sharpe* (1813), 5 Taunt 74, *Stocker v Brookelbank* (1851), 3 Mac & G 250

(o) *R v Holme* (1811), 2 Low C C 256, *Burnell v Hunt* (1841), 5 Jur 650, *Edmundson v Thompson* (1861), 31 L J (ex) 207

(p) *Re Closson, Ex parte Harris* (1845), De G 165, *Edmundson v Thompson, supra*. The distinction formerly drawn between a payment out of profits and a payment measured by profits (*Ex parte Hamper* (1811), 17 Ves 403, 404, *Harrington v Churchward* (1860), 6 Jur (N s) 576) was disapproved of in *Bullen v Sharp* (1865), L R 1 C P 86, Ex Ch, by BRAMWELL, B, at p 126

(q) *Smith v Watson* (1824), 2 B & C 401, *Reid v Hollinshead* (1825), 4 B & C 867, compare *Walker v Hirsch* (1884), 27 Ch D 460, C A

(r) *Moore v Davis* (1879), 11 Ch D 261, *Pole v Task* (1863), 9 Jur (N s) 829. Where the vendor of a medical practice received a lump sum for the goodwill and a share of the first year's profits after the sale, during which he was to introduce the purchaser to his patients, he was not a partner, the share of profits was a form of remuneration, (*Rawlinson v Clarke* (1846), 15 M & W 292, 302, Ex Ch)

(s) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2 (3) (a). This clause extends the law to agreements not touched by the Partnership Amendment Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 86)

(t) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 2 (3) (d), *Re Young, Ex parte Jones*, [1896] 2 Q B 484, *Re Howard, Ex parte Tennant* (1877), 6 Ch D. 303, C A, *Re Whitaker, Ex parte Macmillan* (1871), 24 L T 143. A person who agreed to pay to a business firm money to be used in buying goods for the business in consideration of a fixed rate of interest and a share of the profits of a specified branch of the business was held not to be a partner (*Meyer v Schacher* (1878), 38 L T 97). But such an agreement may constitute a breach of a covenant by the lender with his partners not to engage directly or indirectly in any other business (*Cooper v Page* (1876), 34 L T 90). It has been suggested that if there is no agreement in writing the intending lender must be regarded as a partner (*Re Fort, Ex parte Schofield*, [1897] 2 Q B 495, C A, per A L SMITH, L J, at p 501). But this dictum has not yet received authoritative confirmation

§ 1078
Sharing
Profits.

the amount payable as interest increases or decreases, or whether a maximum rate is fixed which is liable only to decrease in proportion to the profits, if the agreement to that effect is clear (u) But if it is vague and unintelligible it may be void for uncertainty, in which case the lender can prove as an ordinary creditor (v).

Option of
partnership

The fact that the lender has an option to become a partner (x) or to require his nominee to be taken into partnership within a specified period does not make him a partner (a)

When a
lender is a
partner

But if, on the true construction of the agreement, the real relationship between the parties is not purely and *bonâ fide* that of debtor and creditor, the effect of an advance in consideration of a share of profits may easily be to place the intending lender in the position of a partner with all its consequences and liabilities (b), even though this may not be the intention of the parties and though the agreement may contain an express declaration to the contrary (c) If the agreement gives the supposed lender the rights and privileges of a partner (d), no device or contrivance will enable him to escape the liabilities of a partner (e) If he is not a partner, he is merely a creditor whose rights are limited by statute (f) A lender may, however, stipulate for large powers, some of which might be consistent with the position either of a creditor or a sleeping partner, and, if such powers are reasonably necessary for the protection of his interest as a lender, they will not be held to make him a partner (g)

Lender
postponed
to ordinary
creditors.

17 A lender who receives a rate of interest varying with the profits of a business, or a share of the profit of a business carried on by the borrower, cannot prove in competition with trade or other creditors for valuable consideration in the bankruptcy of the

As to the necessity for the agreement to be in writing, see title **DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS**, Vol X, p 420

(u) *Re Vince, Ex parte Trustee in Bankruptcy*, [1892] 1 Q B. 587

(v) *Re Vince, Ex parte Baxter*, [1892] 2 Q B 478, C A, compare *Re Fort, Ex parte Schofield*, [1897] 2 Q B 495, C A As to the position of the lender in the bankruptcy of the borrower, see title **BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY**, Vol II, p 223

(x) *Re Vanderplank, Ex parte Turquand* (1841), 2 Mont D & De G. 339.

(a) *Re Harris, Ex parte Davis* (1863), 4 De G J & Sm 523

(b) *Syers v Syers* (1876), 1 App Cas 174

(c) *Re Megevand, Ex parte Delhasse* (1878), 7 Ch D 511, C A

(d) *Badelcy v Consolidated Bank* (1888), 38 Ch D 238, C A, *Debenham v Phillips* (1887), 3 T L R 512

(e) "If a partnership in fact exists, a community of interest in the adventure being carried on in fact, . . . no verbal equivalent for the ordinary phrases of profit and loss, no indirect expedient for enforcing control over the adventure will prevent the substance and reality of the transaction from being adjudged to be a partnership" (*Adam v Newbigging* (1888), 13 App Cas 308, per Lord HALSBURY, L C, at p. 315, and see *Poolley v Driver* (1876), 5 Ch D 458), compare *Courtney v Wagstaff* (1864), 16 C B (N. s.) 110, *Re Megevand, Ex parte Delhasse*, *supra*, *Frowde v. Williams* (1886), 56 L J (Q B.) 62, *Stewart v Buchanan* (1903), 6 F (Ct. of Sess.) 15

(f) *Re Howard, Ex parte Tennant* (1877), 6 Ch D 303, C A; *Kelly v. Scott* (1890), 49 L J (CH) 383, *Aktie Bolaget Iggesunds Bruk v. Von Dadelangen* (1887), 3 T. L R 517, C A

(g) *Hollem v. Hichelow* (1895), 64 L J (Q B.) 170

borrower (h), whether the agreement is written or oral (i). The creditors to whom he is postponed are those at the date of the insolvency, not of the loan (j). Accordingly, the lender cannot prove *pari passu* with other creditors by virtue of a pretended repayment and new advance or by any other device to evade the statute (k). But if the loan is repaid, and a new advance *bond fide* made on different terms, or if further advances are made on different terms, the lender may be in a position to prove *pari passu* with other creditors (j). If the lender takes a security by way of mortgage, he has the ordinary rights of a secured creditor, and may retain (l) or foreclose (m) his security

SECT. 3.
Sharing
Partnership

18 A seller of the goodwill of a business in consideration of a share of profits cannot prove in the bankruptcy of the buyer in competition with the creditors for value (n)

Vendor of
goodwill

SECT. 4.—Holding out as Partners

19 A person who represents himself, or knowingly suffers himself to be represented, as a partner is liable, as if he were actually a partner, to anyone who has, on the faith of such representation, given credit to the firm (o), but the liability does not appear to extend to torts (p). He is estopped from denying the truth of such representation, and is therefore subject to the same liabilities as if he were, in fact, a partner (q), although he contributes neither

Holding
out or repre-
sentation.

Liability
founded on
estoppel

(h) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 3, substantially re enacting the Partnership Amendment Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 86), s 5, see *Re Mason, Ex parte Bing*, [1899] 1 Q B 810 (where the loan to a firm was continued to the surviving partner)

(i) *Re Fort, Ex parte Schofield*, [1897] 2 Q B 495, C A

(j) *Re Tew, Ex parte Mills* (1873), 8 Ch App 569

(k) *Re Huddsheim, Ex parte the Trustee*, [1893] 2 Q B 357, C A, *Re Grason, Ex parte Taylor* (1870), 12 Ch D 366, C A, *Re Stone* (1886), 33 Ch D 541, *Re Mason, Ex parte Bing, supra*

(l) *Re Lonergan, Ex parte Sheil* (1877), 4 Ch D 789, C A, overruling *Re Ramsden, Ex parte Macarthur* (1871), 40 L J (BC) 86

(m) *Badeley v Consolidated Bank* (1888), 38 Ch D 38, C A.

(n) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 3

(o) *Ibid*, s 14 (1) "There can be no doubt that persons may be partners towards the world and yet not be partners as between themselves" (*Re Stanton Iron Co* (1855), 21 Beav 164, *per ROMILLY*, M R, at p 169, see also *Waugh v Carver* (1793), 2 H & Bl 235, 246, *Jacobsen v Hennkensius* (1714), 5 Bro Parl Cas 482, *Mulford v Griffin* (1858), 1 F & F 145). Each partner is the agent of the others to make contracts on behalf of the firm, therefore the members of the firm are deemed the agents of a person who holds himself out as a partner (*Reynell v Lewis, Wylid v Hopkins* (1846), 15 M & W 517, 527)

(p) *Smith v Bailey*, [1891] 2 Q B 403, C A, disapproving of *Stables v Eley* (1825), 1 C & P 614, as reported, and see title TORT. As to the ordinary liability of partners for torts, see pp 30 *et seq*, *post*. As to the effect of admissions or representations made by a partner, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 460

(q) "The doctrine of holding out is a branch of the doctrine of estoppel" (*Re Fraser, Ex parte Central Bank of London*, [1892] 2 Q B 633, C A., *per Lord Esher*, M R, at p. 637) "Where a man holds himself out as a partner or allows others to do it . . . he is then properly estopped from denying the character he has assumed, and upon the faith of which creditors may be presumed to have acted. A man so doing may be rightly held liable as a partner by estoppel" (*Mollwo, March & Co v Court of*

SECT 4
Holding out
as Partners

Representa-
tion of
intention
insufficient

By whom
liability
enforceable

Modes of
holding out
(1) com-
munication,

capital nor labour, and has no interest in the profits of the business, or is indemnified against all possibility of loss (r), or although he is employed therein merely as a clerk or servant (a), or, having been a partner, has retired without giving proper notice of that fact (b).

A representation that a person is willing or intends to become a partner is not enough, and persons to whom it is made ought to inquire whether he subsequently became a partner (c).

20 The estoppel can only be relied upon, and the liability be enforced, by persons to whom the representation has been made and who have acted upon the faith of it (d). A general representation to the public is not sufficient unless the person giving credit can satisfy the court or jury that he heard of and acted upon it (e).

21 The representation may be made or communicated either by words, spoken or written, or by conduct, and may be so made or communicated either by the *quasi-partner* or by a third person (f).

Wards (1872), L. R. 4 P. C. 419, *per* Sir MONTAGU SMITH, at p. 435, see also titles AGENCY, Vol. I, pp. 158, 201, LSTOPPEL, Vol. XIII, p. 390, compare *Glossop v Colman* (1815), 1 Stark 25.

(r) *Waugh v Carver* (1793), 2 Hy Bl 235, 246, *Bond v Pittard* (1838), 3 M & W 357.

(a) *Kirkwood v Cheetham* (1862), 2 F & F 798, *Ex parte Watson* (1815), 19 Ves 459, 461, *Peacock v Peacock* (1809), 2 Camp 45, compare *Cornelius v Harrison* (1862), 2 F & F 758, *Hardman v Booth* (1863), 1 H & C 803.

(b) See pp. 38, 96, *post*.

(c) *Bourne v Freeth* (1829), 9 B & C 632, compare *Reynell v Lewis*, *Wylde v Hopkins* (1816), 15 M & W 517, 529, and see title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol. XX, p. 659.

(d) *Re Fraser, Ex parte Central Bank of London* [1892] 2 Q. B. 633, 637, C. A., *M'IVER v Humble* (1812), 16 East, 169, 174, *Carter v Whalley* (1830), 1 B & Ad 11, 14, *Lloyd v Ashby* (1825), 2 C & P 138. The name of a nominal firm affords no information with regard to the partners composing it, and a party contracting with it takes his chance who they may be (*Bonfield v Smith* (1844), 12 M & W 405). A representation subsequent to the transaction sued upon is not enough to fix liability on the *quasi-partner* (*Burd v Planque* (1858), 1 F & F 344), and a representation, limited to a particular concern or class of business, may not constitute a general partnership so as to create liability in matters not connected with such particular concern or class of business (*De Bergh v Smith* (1793), 1 Esp 29).

(e) As regards the effect of notice of private stipulations between partners, see *Gallway (Viscount) v Mathew* (1808), 10 East, 264, *Alderson v Pope* (1808), 1 Camp 404, n., compare *Brown v Leonard* (1816), 2 Ch 120, Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s. 8. As to what is a sufficient representation, see *Dickinson v Walpy* (1829), 10 B & C 128, 140, *Ford v Whitmarsh* (1840), 1 H & W 53, *Martyn v Gray* (1863), 14 C. B. (N. S.) 824, 839. The liability would arise in the case of a person ceasing to be a partner if he "had done business with the plaintiff before as a member of a firm or had so publicly appeared as a partner as to satisfy a jury that the plaintiff must have believed him to be such partner, or if he had suffered the plaintiff to continue in and act upon that belief by omitting to give notice that he had ceased to be a partner" (*Carter v Whalley, supra, per* PARKE, J., at p. 14). "Each case of this nature must depend on its own circumstances with reference to the effect of the defendant's language and conduct on the plaintiff's mind" (*Lake v Argyll (Duke)* (1844), 6 Q. B. 477, see also *Wood v Argyll (Duke)* (1844), 6 Man & G. 928).

(f) *Dickinson v Walpy, supra*, at pp. 140, 141, *Martyn v Gray, supra*, at p. 839; see *Waller v Ashton*, [1902] 2 Ch 282 (cycles advertised as

In the latter case the supposed partner is not bound unless the representation has been made with his knowledge and assent (g). But if he has himself made, or expressly or impliedly authorised, such a representation, he is liable, although he may not know that it has been communicated to the person who has acted upon it (h). In the case of a representation by a third person it is sufficient if the *quasi*-partner has been so described as to be clearly identified, though his name has not been mentioned and may even have been refused (i).

SECT. 4.
Holding out as Partners.

In the case of representation by conduct the acts relied upon must not be ambiguous (h). A former partner is not held out as a partner by the mere continued use by the firm from which he has retired of a firm name consisting of his surname with the addition of the words "& Co" (l).

(2) conduct.

The rule of estoppel applies to a former partner who has retired without giving proper notice of dissolution (m). The representation is a continuing one as regards persons who have dealt with the old firm unless and until such notice is given, but not as regards new customers or creditors who never knew that he was a partner (n). But where, on the death of a partner, the business is continued by the surviving partners under the old name, the rule does not apply so as to impose liability upon the personal representatives of the late partner for transactions of the surviving partners after his death, even as regards old customers or creditors who have no notice of his death (o), and on this ground the court has refused to restrain the surviving partners from using his name (p).

Holding out of retired partners

Deceased partner

22 Where judgment has been obtained against a firm, execution may issue (q) against a person whose liability arose from

Enforcement of liability of persons held out

"Times cycles") As regards the general distinction between representations of intention and of fact, see title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, p 659

(g) *For v Clifton* (1830), 6 Bing 776, 794 Assent will bind him, although it was obtained by promises of irresponsibility or by misrepresentation, if the person to whom he was held out was not a party to such promises or misrepresentation (*Collingwood v Berkeley* (1863), 15 C. B (N S) 145, *Ellis v Schmoeck* (1829), 5 Bing 521, *Maddock v Marshall* (1863), 16 C B (N S) 387, affirmed (1864), 17 C B (N S) 829, Ex (h) In *Vice v Anson (Lady)* (1827), 7 B & C 409, a person was held not to be liable as partner who erroneously believed herself to be such, and held herself out as such, but not to the plaintiff

(h) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c 39), s 14 (1)

(i) *Martyn v Gray* (1863), 14 C B (N S) 824, 841

(j) *Edmundson v Thompson* (1861), 2 F & F 564

(k) *Burchell v Wilde*, [1900] 1 Ch 551, C A, *Townsend v Jarman*, [1900] 2 Ch 698, 705, compare *Rosher v Young* (1901), 17 T L R 347

(m) As to proper notice, see p 96, post

(n) *Ex parte Watson* (1815), 19 Ves 459, 461, *Waugh v Carver* (1793), 2 Hy Bl 235, *Scarfe v Jardiner* (1882), 7 App Cas 345, 349, 356, *Newsome v Coles* (1811), 2 Camp 617 (followed by Kay, L J, in *Re Fraser, Ex parte Central Bank of London*, [1892] 2 Q B 633, C A), *Williams v Keats* (1817), 2 Stark 290

(o) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c 39), s 14 (2), *Devaynes v Noble, Houlston's Case* (1816), 1 Mer 529, 616; *Vulhamy v Noble* (1817), 3 Mer 593, 614.

(p) *Webster v Webster* (1791), 3 Swan 490, n

(q) By leave, under R S C, Ord 48, r 8, see p 46, post.

SECT 4
Holding out
as Partners.

"holding out" (s), and, if two persons hold themselves out as partners, they may be jointly adjudicated bankrupts, and, in the bankruptcy, property employed in the business may be treated as their joint estate, although as between themselves it was the separate property of one of them (s).

Part III.—Creation and Duration of Partnership.

SECT 1—*Legality of Partnership.*

SUB SECT 1—*In General*

Illegality

Breach of
statute

Usurpation
of rights of
corporation

Business
contrary to
public policy

23 A partnership may be illegal either because its members exceed the number permitted by statute or because it is formed for an illegal purpose. An unregistered partnership or association of more than ten members carrying on the business of banking or of more than twenty members carrying on any other business for the purpose of gain is illegal (t).

Although a partnership firm may, subject to the rights of other persons, adopt any style or title and may describe itself as a "company," it must not assume to be, nor usurp the rights and powers of, a corporation (u).

A partnership formed for making profits by a business which is contrary to public policy, or which cannot be carried on without a breach of the common or statute law, is illegal (x).

(r) See *Davis v Hyman & Co*, [1903] 1 K B 854, C A, and p 13, ante, p 46, post.

(s) *Re Rowland and Crankshaw* (1866), 1 Ch App 421, explained and discussed in *Re Pulsford, Ex parte Hayman* (1878), 8 Ch D 11, C A. As to the doctrine of reputed ownership in bankruptcy in the case of partners, see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 175, and the cases there cited.

(t) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 1, *Harris v Amery* (1865), L R 1 C P 148, compare *Blundell v Wensor* (1837), 8 Sim 601; *Harrison v Heathorn* (1843), 6 Man & G 81, and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 44, 765.

(u) *Re Mexican and South American Co, Grisewood and Smith's Case, De Pass's Case* (1859), 4 De G & J 544, C A, *Maugham v Sharpe* (1864), 17 C B (N S) 443. The fact that shares in the partnership are transferable by delivery of certificates does not render it illegal (*Re Mexican and South American Co, Aston's Case* (1859), 4 De G & J 320, C A, compare *Re General Company for Promotion of Land Credit* (1870), 5 Ch App 363, affirmed *sub nom Reuss (Princess) v Bos* (1871), L R 5 H L 176), and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 764.

(x) But a joint venture for blockade running is not illegal (*Re Grasebrook, Ex parte Chavasse* (1865), 4 De G J & Sm 655). Partnerships formed for the following purposes have been held illegal—the sale of smuggled goods (*Biggs v Lawrence* (1789), 3 Term Rep 454, compare *Waymell v Reed* (1794), 5 Term Rep 599, and *Olugas v Penultima* (1791), 4 Term Rep 466); bookmaking or betting if carried on contrary to the Betting Act, 1853 (16 & 17 Vict c 119) (*Higginson v Simpson* (1877), 2 C P D. 76, and, as to wagering contracts, see title GAMING AND WAGERING, Vol XV., pp. 267 et seq.), secret paybroking (*Armstrong v. Armstrong, Lewis v. Armstrong* (1834), 3 My & K. 45, 64, *Gordon v. Howden* (1845), 12 Cl. &

SUB-SECT 2.—Effect of Illegality.

SECT. 1.

Legality of Partnership.

Court declines to recognise illegal partnership.

24. An agreement for an illegal partnership will not be specifically enforced, even though partly performed (y), nor can damages be recovered for breach of it (a), and, if the whole purpose of the partnership is illegal the court will not recognise it, or enforce any rights which the supposed partners would otherwise have (b), especially where the parties have agreed to enter, as partners, into a transaction which they know to be illegal (c). Therefore an action will not lie for an account of profits of illegal underwriting (d), even though defendant does not plead the illegality, if it is brought to the notice of the court (e), and if the plaintiff's case discloses the illegality of the transaction the court will not help him (f). It is no part of the duty of the court to aid either in

Fin 237, H L.) Partnerships for underwriting were formerly illegal (stat (1719) 6 Geo 1, c 18, repealed by stat (1824) 5 Geo 4, c 114, on this point, *Mitchell v Cockburne* (1794), 2 Hy Bl 379, *Watts v Brooks* (1798), 3 Ves 612, *Knowles v Haughton* (1805), 11 Ves 168, *Aubert v. Maze* (1801), 2 Bos & P 371, *Re Scott, Ex parte Bell* (1813), 1 M & S 751; *Everth v Blackburne* (1817), 2 Stark 66, *Booth v Hodgson* (1795), 6 Term Rep 405, *Lees v Smith* (1797), 7 Term Rep 338) But the persons insured could sue the supposed partners (*Brett v Bechworth* (1856), 3 Jur (N s) 31) An agreement by a solicitor to take into partnership an unadmitted person is illegal and void (*Williams v Jones* (1826), 5 B. & C 108, where evidence that the agreement was not intended to take effect until such person was admitted was rejected), but it is not illegal for a solicitor who holds public offices to agree that his emoluments shall form part of the profits of his firm (*Clarke v Richards* (1835), 1 Y & C (EX) 351, *Sterry v Clifton* (1850), 9 C B 110), or for a solicitor to agree to pay part of the profits of his business to an unqualified person (*Candler v Candler* (1821), Jac 225, 231, *Bunn v Guy* (1803), 4 East, 190), or for a retired solicitor to permit the use of his name by his former partners (*Aubin v Holt* (1855), 2 K & J 66), and see, further, title SOLICITORS

(y) *Ewing v Osbaldiston* (1837), 2 My & Cr 53 As to the incidents of illegal contracts, see, generally, title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 407 et seq As to specific performance generally, see title SPECIFIC PERFORMANCE

(a) *Duverger v Fellows* (1830), 5 Bing 248, affirmed (1832), 1 Cl & Fin 39, H L

(b) *Higginson v Simpson* (1877), 2 C P D 76

(c) *De Begnis v Armistead* (1833), 10 Bing 107; *Saffey v Mayer*, [1901] 1 K B 11, C A, *Holman v Johnson* (1775), 1 Cowp 341, *Cousins v Smith* (1807), 13 Ves 542, *Lees v Smith* (1797), 7 Term Rep 338

(d) *Knowles v Haughton* (1805), 11 Ves 168, and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 487

(e) *Scott v Brown, Doering, McNab & Co, Slaughter and May v Brown, Doering, McNab & Co*, [1892] 2 Q B 724, C A

(f) *Gedge v Royal Exchange Assurance Corporation*, [1900] 2 Q B 214, compare *Thomson v Thomson* (1802), 7 Ves 470, and see, generally, title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 407—409 Where partners are engaged in illegal contracts, one of them, who pays the whole of a partnership debt without the express request of his partners, cannot enforce contribution (*Fiskney v Reynous* (1767), 4 Burr 2069, and *Petrie v Hannay* (1789), 3 Term Rep 418, which were to the contrary effect, were overruled by *Cannan v Bryce* (1819), 3 B & Ald 179) Where certain directors knew at the time of issuing a prospectus, relying on which a person bought shares in the company, that the project was impracticable, it was held that the plaintiff was entitled only to the relief which he might have had if the project had been a bubble *ab initio*, namely, to be repaid his purchase-money (*Harvey v Collett* (1846), 15 Sim 332) As to the disabling effect of an association being illegal, see, further, titles COMPANIES, Vol V., p. 767; TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS.

SECT 1 **Legality of Partnership**

But the court will enforce rights of innocent parties

carrying out an illegal contract or in dividing the proceeds arising from an illegal contract between the parties to that illegal contract, and no action can be maintained either for the one purpose or for the other (q)

But after an illegal transaction has come to an end the court will interfere to prevent those who have, under the illegal contract, obtained money belonging to other persons on the representation that the contract was legal, from keeping that money (g). A receiver has been appointed *pendente lite* where the defendant set up a claim, founded on alleged illegality, to the property of a partnership although he had accounted to the plaintiff for many years on the footing of partnership (h)

Partial illegality

25 If the fundamental objects of a partnership or society are legal, the fact that the articles or rules contain illegal provisions does not invalidate the whole (i), and, if the objects of the partnership can, and are intended to, be carried out without any breach of the common or statute law, the fact that one partner has been guilty of illegal acts in the conduct of the business does not make the partnership illegal or prevent an innocent partner from enforcing the partnership obligations (h)

Winding up

26 An illegal association cannot be wound up under the Companies Acts (l), at any rate at the instance of a creditor or shareholder who knew of the illegality (m)

(g) *Syles v Beadon* (1879), 11 Ch D 170, per JESSEL, M R, at pp 193, 196. In some old cases a distinction was drawn between enforcing an illegal contract and asserting rights to money which had arisen from it. If a partnership is not illegal in itself, the fact that the partners have evaded a statute is not a bar to an action by one of them against the others for an account (*Sharp v Taylor* (1848), 2 Ph 801, compare *Tenant v Elliott* (1797), 1 Bos & P 3, *Farmer v Russell* (1798), 1 Bos & P 296, *Thomson v Thomson* (1802), 7 Ves 470, but see *Re South Wales Atlantic Steamship Co* (1876), 2 Ch D 763, C A)

(h) *Hule v Hule* (1841), 4 Beav 369. Though the members of an illegal association have no corporate rights and do not form a legal partnership, they do not lose their legal rights as owners of property (*R v Frankland* (1863), Le & Ca 276, C C R). As to the embezzlement of property belonging to persons who are members of an illegal association, see titles COMPANIES, Vol V, p 768, CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 635, 652, 653, FRIENDLY SOCIETIES, Vol XV, p 189.

(i) *Collins v. Locke* (1879), 4 App Cas 674, P C, *Swaine v Wilson* (1889), 24 Q B D 252, C A, and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 766. Where the principal object of an association of more than twenty members was the management and investment of a trust fund, it was held not to be illegal (*Smith v Anderson* (1880), 15 Ch D 247, C A, in which *Re Arthur Average Association for British, Foreign, and Colonial Ships, Ex parte Hargrove & Co* (1875), 10 Ch App 542, was doubted, and see *R v Whitmarsh* (1850), 15 Q B 600, title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 45).

(k) *Thwaites v Coulthwaite*, [1896] 1 Ch 496, *Harvey v Hart*, [1894] W N 72, following *De Mattos v Benjamin* (1894), 63 L J. (Q B) 248, and distinguishing *Hugkinson v Simpson* (1877), 2 C P D 76.

(l) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 394, 768.

(m) See cases cited, title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 768, note (a). But it may be doubted whether the court would not interfere at the instance of an innocent creditor or shareholder (*Doolan v Midland Rail Co* (1877), 2 App. Cas. 792, per Lord BLACKBURN, at p 806), see title COMPANIES, Vol. V, p. 768.

SECT. 2.—*Personal Capacity.*SECT. 2.
Personal
Capacity.
—
Clergymen.

27. Clergymen, though generally prohibited by statute from engaging in trade, may be partners in firms exceeding six persons and in businesses which have devolved on them in certain specified modes (n). Contracts made by them as partners are not void (n), although they may be trading contrary to the statute (o).

28 A partnership between a British subject and an alien, other than an alien enemy resident in an enemy's country (p), is valid (q). But if any partner, whether a British subject or an alien, be resident in a hostile country, neither he nor his partner resident in England can recover money owing to his firm in the English courts (r). If a duly accredited member of a foreign embassy resident in England, whether a British subject or an alien, is a partner in an English firm, he cannot be sued in the English courts without his consent (s), but if he submits to the jurisdiction he is estopped from subsequently objecting to it (a).

29 If a partner becomes a convict, his share in the partnership is subject to the Forfeiture Act, 1870 (b).

30 An infant is not bound by a contract of partnership made by him during minority. But if he agrees with adults to be then partner and subsequently on behalf of the partnership enters into contracts with third persons, those contracts bind his adult partners, and they are entitled to insist that the partnership assets shall be applied in payment of the partnership liabilities before he receives anything (c). On attaining twenty-one the infant may repudiate the partnership contract (d), but he cannot, on such repudiation,

• (n) Pluralities Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 106), ss 29—31, see title ECCLESIASTICAL LAW, Vol XI, p 537. As to the position of Protestant Nonconformist ministers, see *ibid*, p 813.

(o) *Lewis v Bright* (1855), 4 E & B 917, *Hall v Franklin* (1838), 3 M & W 259.

(p) *Ex parte Bousmaker* (1806), 13 Ves 71, *Evans v Richardson* (1817), 3 Mer 469.

(q) *Wells v Williams* (1698), 1 Salk 46. As to the rights and duties of aliens, see title ALIENS, Vol I, pp 306 *et seq*.

(r) *McConnell v Hector* (1802), 3 Bos & P 113, *The Indian Chief* (1801), 3 Ch Rob 12, compare *The Jonge Klassina* (1804), 5 Ch Rob 297, and *The Portland* (1800), 3 Ch Rob 41. As to commercial domicile, see title CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI, pp 195, 196.

(s) *Macartney v Garbutt* (1890), 24 Q B D 368, *Magdalena Steam Navigation Co v Martin* (1859), 2 E & E 94, see *Musurus Bay v Gabban*, [1894] 2 Q B 352, 362, C A, and see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 431, 432.

(a) *Taylor v Best* (1854), 14 C B 487.

(b) 33 & 34 Vict c 23, ss 12, 21, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 429, *Re Baleman's Trust* (1873), L R 15 Eq 355, *Carr v Anderson*, [1903] 2 Ch. 279, C A.

(c) *Burgess v. Merrill* (1812), 4 Taunt 468, and see, further, title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, pp 53, 55.

(d) *Goode v Harrison* (1821), 5 B & Ald 147. "There is nothing to prevent an infant trading or becoming a partner with a trader, and until his contract of partnership be disaffirmed he is a member of the trading firm. But it is equally clear that he cannot contract debts by such

SECT 2
Personal
Capacity

recover a premium paid by him under a partnership contract on which he has acted (e), if he has derived any real benefit from the contract. It is otherwise if there has been an entire failure of consideration (f). If he adopts the contract and continues the partnership after attaining twenty-one, he is liable for the firm's debts contracted during his minority (g). An infant partner who commits a wrong, for example, by falsely representing his firm to be connected with a stranger's business, may be restrained by injunction and ordered to pay costs (h). So, also, an infant is liable in equity for fraudulent misrepresentation (i), as by holding himself out as a person of full age (k).

Lunatics.

31 An agreement for partnership or otherwise entered into by a person apparently sane, and not known by the other parties to be otherwise, is binding upon him, although he may in fact have been insane at the time, but if the other parties knew him to be insane the agreement will be set aside (l).

Married
women

32 A married woman, whether she has separate property or not, can enter into contracts (m). She may, therefore, become a partner either with her husband or with other persons, and her contracts, as such, bind her partners and the partnership assets (n), but, with certain exceptions (o), she is not personally liable in respect

trading" (*Lovell and Christmas v Beauchamp*, [1894] A C 607, per Lord HERSCHELL, L C, at p 611)

(e) *Re Burrows, Ex parte Taylor* (1856), 8 De G M & G 254, C A, *Wilson v Kearse* (1800), Peake, Add Cas 196, *Holmes v Blogg* (1818), 8 Taunt 35

(f) *Hamilton v Vaughan-Sherrin Electrical Engineering Co*, [1894] 3 Ch 589, compare *Corpe v Overton* (1833), 10 Bing 252

(g) *Goode v Harrison* (1821), 5 B & Ald 147, *Ex parte Moule* (1808), 14 Ves 602. "A trading of a sort is deposed to, but that was during infancy, if, however, that trading was carried on after the trader became adult, though in a much less degree, the quantity of trading would not make him the less a trader" (*Ex parte Moule, supra*, per Lord ELDON, L C, at p 603)

(h) *Woolf v Woolf*, [1899] 1 Ch 343, *Chubb v Griffiths* (1865), 35 Beav 127, *Lemprière v Lange* (1879), 12 Ch D 675, and see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, pp 75, 144

(i) *Re Jones, Ex parte Jones* (1881), 18 Ch D 109, 120, C A

(k) *Re Lees, Ex parte Lees, Ex parte Heatherly* (1836), 1 Deac 705, compare *Ex parte Watson* (1809), 16 Ves 265, and *Re Bates, Ex parte Bates* (1841), 2 Mont D & De G 337. "But no representation that the infant who so trades is of full age arises out of the mere fact of his carrying on the trade" (*Re King, Ex parte Unity Joint-Stock Mutual Banking Association* (1858), 3 De G & J. 63, C A)

(l) *Molton v Camroux* (1848), 2 Exch 487, *Imperial Loan Co v Stone* [1892] 1 Q B 599, C A, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, p 397. As to dissolution on the ground of insanity, see p 90, post.

(m) See title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 411

(n) Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 75), s 1

(o) By the custom of the City of London a married woman may trade within the City and contract as if she were a *feme sole* (*Ex parte Oarington* (1739), 1 Atk 206, *Beard v Webb* (1800), 2 Bos & P 93, 98, Ex Ch, *Re Grissell, Ex parte Jones* (1879), 12 Ch D 484, 488, C A, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 352), and a married woman, whose husband is a convicted felon (*Re Franks, Ex parte Franks* (1831), 7 Bing 762; *Re Grissell, Ex parte Jones, supra*), or is an alien enemy resident

SECT. 3.
Partnership
Capacity.

of her contracts (*p*). So far as she is concerned, the contracts and liabilities of a firm in which she is a partner can only be enforced, so long as she is under coverture, against her separate property which she is not restrained (*q*) from anticipating (*r*), whether such separate property is acquired by her before or after the contract or liability is made or incurred (*s*)

A married woman who is in partnership with her husband cannot be made a bankrupt (*a*), but if she carries on a trade separately from him in partnership with others, she becomes subject to the bankruptcy laws in respect of her separate property (*b*).

If she advances money to a partnership of which her husband is a member, she may prove in competition with other creditors (*c*).

SECT. 3.—Evidence of Formation.

SUB SECT. 1.—Writing

33. The formation and terms of a partnership may be evidenced by partnership articles under seal, by an agreement signed by the partners, by an unsigned document drafted by one partner and adopted and acted on by the others (*d*), and even by an informal

Evidence in writing

abroad (*Derry v Masarine (Duchess)* (1697), *Ld Raym* 147), can contract as a *feme sole*, compare *Barden v Keverberg* (1836), 2 M & W 61 (where the husband was an alien resident abroad, but not an enemy), or where she is living apart from her husband under a decree of judicial separation or a protection order, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 346. For cases in which husband and wife were living apart, but not pursuant to any judicial order, see *Cecil v Juxon* (1738), 1 Atk 278, *Haddon v Hladgate* (1858), 1 Sw & Tr 48, *Lamphir v Creed* (1803), 8 Ves 599.

(*p*) *Marshall v Rutton* (1800), 8 Term Rep 545, Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 75), ss 1, 12, 19, Married Women's Property Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 63), s 1, which altered the rule laid down in *Pallmer v Gurney* (1887), 19 Q B D 519, *Re Shakespeare, Deakin v Lakin* (1885), 30 Ch D 169, *Scott v Morley* (1887), 20 Q B D 120, C A, and see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 411.

(*q*) If she is restrained from anticipation her contracts may be enforced against income which has actually become payable to her, but not against future income which is subject to the restraint when the contract is made, although she may become a widow, or be divorced before receiving it, unless she is made a bankrupt, see, generally, title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 368, 369, 456.

(*r*) Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict, c 75), s 1, Married Women's Property Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 63), s 1, *Whittaker v Kershaw* (1890), 45 Ch D 320, C A, *Holby v. Hodgson* (1889), 24 Q B D 103, C A, *Re Lynes, Ex parte Lester & Co*, [1893] 2 Q B 113, C A.

(*s*) Married Women's Property Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 63), s 1. For form of judgment against a married woman, see *Scott v. Morley*, *supra*, at p 132, title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 455.

(*a*) *Re Helsby, Ex parte Helsby* (1893), 63 L J (Q B) 261.

(*b*) Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 75), s 1 (5); see also *Re Dagnall, Ex parte Soan and Morley*, [1896] 2 Q B 407, titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 9, 10, HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 352, 353; and see p 46, *post*.

(*c*) *Re Tuff, Ex parte Nottingham* (1887), 19 Q B D 88.

(*d*) *Baxter v West* (1860), 1 Drew & Sm. 173; *Worrie v Pern* (1708), 3 Bro. Parl Cas 548. For a collection of articles of forms of partnership, applicable to various circumstances, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol. IX, pp 458 *et seq*.

SECT 3 document initialled by the partners and intended only to form, **Evidence of** instructions for a formal document (e). But a partnership agree- **Formation** ment which is not to be performed within a year from its date, for example, a partnership for more than a year, cannot be enforced unless it is evidenced by writing (f), or there has been part performance (g).

A document signed by one person only, which would otherwise have been invalid for want of mutuality, may become evidence of the terms of a partnership if acted upon (h).

Proof by A partnership has been established by parol evidence even where **parol** articles of partnership were in existence (i), and an agreement of partnership may be proved by parol, although the partnership is to deal with land (l), but an agreement to share the profits of a particular piece of land, where no other partnership is shown, cannot be so proved (l).

SUB-SECT 2—Mode of Dealing

Mode of **34** The mode of dealing adopted by partners is evidence of the **dealing** formation and original terms of a partnership if such terms are not set forth in any document. Partners are bound by the duties and obligations which are implied in every partnership contract if, and so far as, the express contract does not deal with them (m).

Variation of The original terms of a partnership, even if evidenced by a **written terms** written instrument, may be varied by mutual consent, and the mode of dealing adopted or acquiesced in by all the partners is sufficient evidence of such variation (n). The rights and duties

(e) *England v Curling* (1844), 8 Beav 129

(f) Statute of Frauds (29 Car 2, c 3), s 4, *Williams v Jones* (1826), 5 B & C 108, *Tomkins v Rundell* (1871), 19 W R 413, see titles CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 361, 365, DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS, Vol X, p 420

(g) *Barter v West* (1860), 1 Drew & Sm 173, *Crowley v O'Sullivan*, [1900] 2 I R 478, see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 379 *et seq*

(h) *Heyhoe v Burge* (1850), 9 C B 431

(i) *Alderson v Clay* (1816), 1 Stark 405. Similarly admissions made by a person in a former action that he is a partner (*Studdy v Sanders* (1823) 2 D & Ry (N S) 347), or a verdict on an issue directed to try whether he is a partner, may be used as evidence to establish a partnership (*Whately v Menheim* (1798), 2 Esp 608). Even the advertisement of a dissolution may be so used (*Ex parte Matthews* (1814), 3 Ves & B 125).

(l) *Gray v Smith* (1889), 43 Ch D 208, C A, *per KEKEWICH, J*, at p 211, *Re De Nicola, De Nicola v Curler*, [1900] 2 Ch 410, citing *Forster v Hall* (1798), 3 Ves 696, *Dale v Hamilton* (1846), 5 Hare, 369, compare *Essex v Essex* (1855), 20 Beav 442

(l) *Cadduck v Skidmore* (1837) 3 Jur (N S) 1185 (a colliery), *Isaacs v Frans*, [1899] W N 261 (a mine), see title MINES, MINERALS, AND QUARRIES, Vol XX, p 544

(m) *Smith v Jeyes* (1841), 4 Beav 503

(n) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 19, *England v Curling, supra*, *Const v Harris* (1824), Turn & R 496, *Re Vale of Neath and South Wales Brewery Co, Keene's Executors' Case* (1853), 3 De G M & G 272, C A, *Coventry v Barclay* (1864), 33 Beav 1, *Pilling v Pilling* (1865), 3 De G J & Sm 162, C A (where the books were kept, and certain expenses were paid, otherwise than in accordance with the articles), *Austen v Boys* (1858), 2 De G. & J. 626, following *Geddes v Wallace* (1820), 2 Bl 270, H L, and see *Peat v Smith* (1889), 5 T L R. 806. If a parol agreement is alleged to vary the articles so as to affect the money interests of the partners, the intention to produce

of partners as defined by statute may be varied in the same way (o).

SECT. 4.—Duration of Partnership.

35 Where there is no express agreement to continue a partnership for a definite period there may be an implied agreement to do so (p). The fact that the partners have bought a lease for a fixed term is not in itself evidence of such an implied agreement (q), nor is the incurring of debts (a). The burden of proving such an implied agreement is upon the person who alleges its existence (b), and the provisions relied on must be clearly inconsistent with the general right to dissolve (c). There is no presumption that a sub-partnership is to be for the same term as the principal partnership (d).

36 If a partnership is continued beyond the stipulated period it is governed, in the absence of agreement to the contrary (e), by the terms of the partnership as they were at the expiration of the period, so far as they are applicable to a partnership at will (f), such as an arbitration clause (g), a power to nominate a successor (h), or a right of pre-emption (i). But provisions suitable to an agreement for a term of years are not so applicable, such as clauses for expulsion (j), clauses in the nature of penalties (k), and rights of pre-emption (l). The mode of realisation of assets prescribed by an agreement for a term of years may not apply to a dissolution at the

SECT. 3. Evidence of Formation.

Implied
agreement for
fixed term

Terms of
extension of
partnership
term.

Provisions
inapplicable
to partnership
at will.

such an effect must clearly appear by the evidence (*Lawes v Lawes* (1878), 9 (h D 98). In *Martindale v Martindale* (1855), 1 Jur (N S) 932, the court varied articles of partnership which were unduly onerous to the surviving partner, the new arrangement being more beneficial for infants who were interested in the estate of a deceased partner.

(a) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 19

(p) *Crawshay v Maule* (1818), 1 Swan 495. For a form of deed continuing a partnership, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol IX, p 586.

(q) *Syers v Syers* (1876), 1 App Cas 174, *Featherstonhaugh v Fenwick* (1810), 17 Ves 298, *Crawshay v Maule*, *supra*, *Jefferys v Smith* (1820), 1 Jac & W 298, 301, *Alcock v Taylor* (1830), Tambl 506, *Burdon v Barkus* (1862), 4 De G F & J 42, C A. On the other hand, a lease by one partner to his firm expires at the end of the term fixed for the partnership, although expressed to be for a longer period, see title LAND LORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, p 458, note (a), see also *Lacock v Carter*, [1912] 1 Ch 663.

(a) *King v Accumulative Assurance Co* (1857), 3 C B (N, s) 151

(b) *Burdon v Barkus*, *supra*

(c) *Baxter v Plenderleath* (1824), 2 L J (O S) (CH) 119

(d) *Frost v Moulton* (1856), 21 Beav 596. See, as to a sub-partnership, p 51, *post*.

(e) *Neilson v Mossend Iron Co* (1886), 11 App Cas 298, *Stewart v Gladstone* (1879), 10 Ch D 626, C A, *Essex v Essex* (1855), 20 Beav 442

(f) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 27 (1), *Campbell v Campbell* (1893), 6 R 137, H L, *Cox v Willoughby* (1880), 13 Ch D 863, *Daw v Herring*, [1892] 1 Ch 284, *Essex v Essex*, *supra*, *King v Chuck* (1853), 17 Beav 325

(g) *Gillet v Thornton* (1875), L R 19 Eq 599, *Cope v Cope* (1885), 52 L T 607

(h) *Oaffe v Murtagh* (1881), 7 L R Ir 411

(i) *Brooks v Brooks* (1901), 85 L T 453

(j) *Clark v Leach* (1862), 32 Beav. 14, affirmed (1863), 1 De G J & Sm 409

(k) *Hogg v Hogg* (1876), 35 L T 792

(l) *Yates v Fynn* (1880), 13 Ch. D 839

SECT 4
Duration of Partnership

Continuation of business

Single adventure

Indefinite period.

end of a subsequent partnership at will (*m*); and a surety for one of the partners is discharged by the new agreement for partnership at will which is implied by the continuation of the firm (*n*).

37. A continuation of the business by the partners, or such of them as habitually acted therein during the term, without any settlement or liquidation of the partnership affairs, is presumed to be a continuation of the partnership (*o*).

38 A partnership entered into for a single adventure or undertaking lasts only until the termination of such adventure or undertaking (*p*).

39 A partnership for an indefinite period may be determined at any time by any partner on giving notice to the others (*q*). The filing of a bill (*r*), the issue of a writ, or the delivery of a defence (*s*) is a sufficient notice (*t*)

Part IV.—Relations between Partners and Third Parties.

SECT 1—Power of One Partner to Bind the Firm.

SUB-SECT 1—General Principles

Authority of partners founded on agency

40 Generally speaking, partners are the agents of each other and of their firm for the purpose of carrying on the partnership business in the usual way (*a*). It follows that *prima facie* each partner has authority to do all acts incidental to the proper conduct of the business, and that such acts, subject to certain qualifications, bind his partners and his firm (*b*). An act done by any partner within the scope of his actual or implied authority renders the other partners liable to persons dealing with him as representing the firm (*c*).

Sleeping, retired, and deceased partners

A sleeping partner is bound by contracts made by the ostensible

(*m*) *Woods v Lamb* (1866), 35 L J (CH) 309.

(*n*) *Small v Ourre* (1854), 18 Jur 731, and see, generally, title GUARANTEE, Vol XV, p 546.

(*o*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c 39), s 27 (2).

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 32 (b), see *Reade v Bentley* (1858), 4 K & J 656, *McOlean v Kennard* (1874), 9 Ch App 336, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol IV, p 175, Vol IX, p 600.

(*q*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 26 (1). For a form, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol IX, p 603.

(*r*) *Shepherd v Allen* (1864), 33 Beav 577.

(*s*) *Syers v Syers* (1876), 1 App Cas 174.

(*t*) As to the date from which dissolution will be ordered, see *Lyon v Tweddell* (1881), 17 Ch D 529, C. A. "There is no technicality, no magic as to the mode of expression" (*Syers v Syers*, *supra*, per Lord CAIRNS, L.C., at p 183).

(*a*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 5, *British Homes Assurance Corporation, Ltd. v Paterson*, [1902] 2 Ch 404.

(*b*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 5, *Brettell v Williams* (1849), 4 Exch 623. As to the qualifications, see pp. 25, 33, *post*.

(*c*) *Bottomley v Nuttall* (1858), 5 C. B. (N. S.) 122; compare Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39), s 6, p 32, *post*.

partners in the ordinary course of the partnership business (d). A partner cannot escape liability by merely giving notice that he has sold his share in the business when he has not in fact done so (e). The death of a partner does not preclude the surviving partner or partners from drawing on the partnership account (f).

SECT. 1.
Power of
One Partner
to Bind
the Firm.

41 If, however, a partner's authority is limited by express agreement, the other partners, whether active or sleeping, are not liable to a person dealing with him who has notice of such limitation (g). But the express or implied authority of a partner cannot be limited by a private arrangement between the partners, of which the person dealing with the partner has no notice (h), except where the limitation is imposed upon a partner who is not known or believed by such person to be a partner (i).

Limited
authority.

An agreement by one partner to transact business in an unusual way does not bind his partners who have not authorised and have no notice of such agreement (k).

42 A partner cannot delegate his authority without the consent of his partners (l).

Delegation of
authority

SUB-SECT. 2—Instances of Implied Authority

43 The implied authority of partners extends to all matters necessary for carrying on the business of the firm in the usual way in which businesses of a like kind are carried on (m). But it only extends to transactions in the usual course of the partnership business (n).

Extent of
implied
authority.

Where the nature of the partnership business has been defined or agreed upon, no partner can compel the others to embark in a different business (o). Nor can a change be made in the nature

Agency
limited to
agreed
business

(d) *Beckham v Drake* (1841), 9 M. & W. 79.

(e) *Vice v. Fleming* (1827), 1 Y. & J. 227. It would be otherwise if the notice were held to amount to an unqualified restriction of future liability (*ibid.*)

(f) *Backhouse v Charlton* (1878), 8 Ch. D. 444.

(g) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39), ss. 5, 8, see note (q), p. 33, *post*, and *Alderson v Pope* (1808), 1 Camp. 404.

(h) *Edmunds v Bushell* (1865), L. R. 1 Q. B. 97, compare *Hambro v. Burnand*, [1904] 2 K. B. 10, C. A.

(i) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39), s. 5. It was said in *Watteau v Fenwick*, [1893] 1 Q. B. 346 (a case of agency), that an undisclosed principal was liable for the acts of his agent, although the latter was neither held out as such, nor expressly authorised, but the dictum must be regarded as of doubtful authority, and see *Kinahan & Co., Ltd. v Parry*, [1910] 2 K. B. 389, reversed [1911] 1 K. B. 459, C. A.

(k) *Bignold v Waterhouse* (1813), 1 M. & S. 255 (agreement to carry parcels free of charge).

(l) *Re Robinson, Ex parte Holdsworth* (1841), 1 Mont. D. & De G. 475.

(m) *Kirk v Blurton* (1841), 9 M. & W. 284, referred to in *Forbes v Marshall* (1855), 11 Exch. 166, and in *Stephens v Reynolds* (1860), 5 H. & N. 513, *per* MARTIN, B., at p. 517, *Nicholson v Erockett* (1860), 2 E. & E. 497, see *Winkersheim's Case* (1873), 8 Ch. App. 831; *Niemann v Niemann* (1889), 43 Ch. D. 198, C. A. (acceptance of shares). As to the implied authority of a partner to insure, see title INSURANCE, Vol. XVII, pp. 354, 355.

(n) *Hasteham v Young* (1844), 5 Q. B. 833. A bill given by a partner in respect of transactions not relating to the partnership does not render his partners liable (*Re Prothero, Ex parte Agace* (1792), 2 Cox, Eq. Cas. 312).

(o) *Natusch v. Irving* (1824), 2 Coop. temp. Cott. 358; *e.g.*, by adding

SECT 1
Power of
One Partner
to Bind
the Firm.

Acts beyond
 implied
 authority
 Deeds
 Guarantees

of the partnership business without the consent of all the partners (*p*)

44 A partner in a mercantile or other firm has no implied authority to execute deeds on behalf of the firm (*q*), nor does the implied authority of a partner extend to acts not usually incidental to the scope of the partnership business, for example, the giving of guarantees by a member of a mercantile firm (*r*). A guarantee signed by one partner in the name of the firm does not bind the other partners unless it is in the regular line of business of the firm, or unless he has their express authority to give the guarantee (*s*), and a continuing guarantee given to or for a firm is, in the absence of agreement to the contrary, revoked as regards future transactions by any change in the constitution of the firm (*t*)

Bills of
 exchange

45 A partner in a mercantile firm has implied authority to draw, accept, and indorse bills of exchange and other negotiable instruments on behalf of his firm (*u*), and the firm is liable although the transaction is fraudulent and unauthorised, if the holder has no notice of such fraud (*b*). But this implied authority does not extend to firms which are not mercantile partnerships, such as solicitors (*c*), or commission agents (*d*). The fact that a bill is given for a partner's private debt raises a presumption that he had no

marine insurance to life and fire insurances (*Singleton v Knight* (1888), 13 App Cas 788, P C)

(*p*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (8), see p 49, *post*

(*q*) *Harrison v Jackson* (1797), 7 Term Rep 207, *Marchant v Morton, Down & Co*, [1901] 2 K B 829. But, although a deed executed by one partner who has implied authority to borrow money may not be valid as a legal mortgage, it may create a good equitable security (*Re Boyd, Ex parte Bosanquet* (1847), De G 432, *Re Briggs & Co, Ex parte Wright*, [1906] 2 K B 209), and see Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 6. As to deeds executed by a partner in his own name, see p 32, *post*

(*r*) *Duncan v Loundes* (1813), 3 Camp 478, *Hasleham v Young* (1844), 5 Q B 833, *Brettel v Williams* (1849), 4 Exch 623

(*s*) *Crawford v Shirling* (1802), 4 Esp 207, *Sandilands v Marsh* (1819), 2 B. & Ald 673, *Brettel v Williams, supra*, *Re Smith, Fleming & Co, Ex parte Harding* (1879), 12 Ch D 557, 557, C A

(*t*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 18, see also title GUARANTEE, Vol XV, pp 498—501

(*u*) *Harrison v Jackson, supra*, at p 210, *Williamson v Johnson* (1813), 1 B & C 146, and see title BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS, Vol II, p 492

(*b*) *Weseman v Easton* (1863), 8 L T 637, *Sutton v Gregory* (1797), Peake, Add Cas 150 *Arden v Sharpe* (1797), 2 Esp 524, *Hogg v Skeen* (1865), 18 C B (N S) 426, *Musgrave v Drake* (1843), Dav & Mer 347, *Lane v Williams* (1892), 2 Vern 277, *Garland v Jacomb* (1873), L R 8 Exch 216, Ex Ch; *Bunarsee Dass v Gholam Hossein* (1870), 13 Moo Ind App 358, 363, *Wells v Masterman* (1799), 2 Esp 731

(*c*) *Hedley v Bainbridge* (1842), 3 Q B 316, *Garland v Jacomb, supra*. Nor has a partner in a firm of solicitors implied authority to give a post dated cheque (*Forster v Mackreth* (1867), L R 2 Exch 163). As to solicitors generally, see title SOLICITORS

(*d*) *Fyfe v Dutton* (1858), 23 L J (Ex) 69, and see, further, title AUCTION AND AUCTIONEERS, Vol I, p 521, BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS, Vol II, p 492, note (*a*).

authority to sign the name of the firm for that purpose and throws the burden of proving such authority on the holder of the bill (e); and the holder of a bill purporting to bind a firm will be restrained from negotiating it if he knows that it is in fact unauthorised or fraudulent (f)

NOTE 1
Power of
One Partner
to Bind
the Firm.

46 The implied power of a partner extends to the borrowing of money for the purposes of the business, where the business is of a kind that cannot be carried on in the usual way without such a power (g), but not for the purpose of providing the capital to be contributed by any individual partner (h). Where the limit of contribution is fixed by express agreement among the partners, a partner cannot, at all events as between himself and his partners, bind them by borrowing beyond the stipulated sum (i).

Borrowing
money

47 A surviving partner can give a valid security on the partnership assets for a debt incurred before the death of his partner (k), and a partner has authority to pledge the partnership property for partnership purposes after, as well as before, dissolution, in the course of winding up the business (l). But after the appointment of a receiver by the court, a partner, who has been a party to the order appointing him, cannot deal with the partnership assets so as to create a valid security (m).

Pledging
assets

48 An attempt by a partner to pledge the firm's credit for a purpose apparently not connected with its ordinary business does not bind his partners unless he has then express authority (n). Therefore a partner who holds shares as trustee for his firm cannot give a valid charge upon them for his private debt to a lender who

Pledging
partnership
credit or
assets for
private debt

(e) *Frankland v M'Gust* (1830), 1 Knapp, 274, P C, *Leverson v Lane* (1862), 13 C B (N S) 278, *Ridley v Taylor* (1810), 13 East, 175

(f) *Hood v Aston* (1826), 1 Russ 412. But if taken *bond fide* without such knowledge at the time, subsequent knowledge of the misconduct of the partner in giving the security is immaterial (*Swan v Steele* (1806), 7 East, 210)

(g) *E.g.*, an ordinary trading partnership (*Bank of Australasia v Breillat* (1847), 6 Moo P C C 152, 194; *Fisher v Tayler* (1812), 2 Hare, 218). As to mining partnerships, see *Dickinson v Vulpy* (1829), 10 B & C 128, *Ricketts v Bennett* (1847), 4 C B 686, and cases there cited. As to borrowing, for the purposes of the firm, by a partner in his own name, see p 33, *post*, see also title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, p 94

(h) *Greenslade v Dower* (1828), 1 Man & Ry (K B) 640

(i) *Re Worcester Corn Exchange Co* (1853), 3 De G M & G 180, 187

(k) *Re Clough, Bradford Commercial Banking Co v Cure* (1885), 31 Ch D 324

(l) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 38, *Butchart v Dresser* (1853), 4 De G M & G 542, C A, *Brown v Kulger* (1858), 3 H & N 853, *Re Lutherland, Ex parte Howden* (1842), 2 Mont D & De G 574, *Re Bourne, Bourne v Bourne*, [1906] 2 Ch 427. But, though he has authority to pledge the partnership property, this does not enable him to bind his partners personally (*Blaine v Holland* (1889), 60 L T 285, P C) nor are the other partners liable if the advances have been made solely on the credit of the borrowing partner and not on that of the partnership, and the application of the money to the purposes of the partnership does not *per se* make it liable (*Emly v Lye* (1812), 15 East, 7, *Smith v Craven* (1831), 1 Cr & J 500)

(m) *Hills v Reeves* (1882), 30 W R 439, affirmed, 31 W R 209, C A

(n) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 7, see also title MORTGAGE, Vol. XXI, p 95

§ 48 1
Power of
One Partner
to Bind
the Firm.

knows that they belong to the firm (o). But he can give a charge on partnership property for his own debt to a person who has no notice that the property is not his own (p), and, *prima facie*, a *bona fide* lender to a partner on the credit of the partnership is entitled to assume that the transaction is for partnership purposes and authorised, unless he has notice of suspicious circumstances which ought to put him on inquiry (q). A partner who has pledged the firm's assets for his private debt cannot sue, as a member of the firm, to set aside the transaction (r).

Receipt of
debts owing
to the firm.

49 A partner has implied authority to receive and give a good discharge for debts due to his firm, but not for a debt owing to one of his partners in his personal capacity (a). The appointment, however, by partners of a person to receive debts due to the firm does not revoke the implied authority of any partner to receive and give a valid receipt for such debts (b). A payment by a debtor of the partnership to one of the partners is *prima facie* a payment to the partnership (c).

Release of
debts owing
to and by
the firm

50 A partner has also implied authority to release a debt owing to his firm (d), even where it is released by deed executed by him "for self and partner" (e). But a covenant not to sue by one partner only does not release a partnership debt (f), and a partner cannot set off a debt owing to himself by way of release of a partnership debt so as to bind his partners in equity (g). A release, not under seal, of one partner by a creditor of the firm does not necessarily release the other partners (h), but a release, by receipt, of one debtor on a joint and several judgment debt has been held to release his co-debtor, where there was no ground for importing into the document an intention to reserve rights against the co-debtor (i). In the absence of fraud one partner may release a

Legal pro-
ceedings

-
- (o) *Wilkinson v Eykyn* (1866), 14 W R 470
 (p) *Raba v Ryland* (1819), Gow, 132, *Tupper v Haythorne* (1815), Gow, 135, n. But such assignment is subject to the partnership debts (*Young v Keighley* (1808), 15 Ves 557)
 (q) *Okell v Eaton and Okell* (1874), 31 L T 330, *Lloyd v Freshfield* (1826), 2 C & P 325, *Reid v Holmshed* (1825), 7 Dow & Ry (κ B) 444
 (r) *Brownrigg v Rae* (1850), 5 Exch 489. But an innocent partner may obtain equitable relief (*Midland Rail Co v Taylor* (1862), 8 H L Cas 751, *Piercy v Fynney* (1871), L R 12 Eq 69)
 (a) *Powell v Broadhurst*, [1901] 2 Ch 160. With regard to an equitable charge vested in two joint tenants, see *Matson v Dennis* (1864), 4 De G J. & Sm 345, C A
 (b) *Bristow and Porter v Taylor* (1817), 2 Stark 50
 (c) *Moore v Smith* (1851), 14 Beav 393
 (d) *Hawkshaw v Parkins* (1818), 2 Swan 539, and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 456
 (e) *Wilkinson v Lido* (1840), 7 M & W 81
 (f) *Walmesley v Cooper* (1839), 11 Ad & El 216, *Hutton v. Eyre* (1815), 6 Taunt. 289
 (g) *Piercy v Fynney*, *supra*, *Kendal v. Wood* (1871), L. R. 6 Exch. 248, Ex. Ch.
 (h) *Re Armistage, Ex parte Good* (1877), 5 Ch D 46, C A.; e.g., where the surrounding circumstances show that the release was limited, see *Re E. W. A.*, [1901] 2 K B 642, C A., per COLLINS, L J., at p 652
 (i) *Re E. W. A.*, *supra*, and compare title GUARANTEE, Vol XV., p. 562.

cause of action in which he and his partners are plaintiffs (*k*); but he must have express authority to consent to judgment (*l*), or to submit a dispute to arbitration (*a*), or to compromise an action (*b*). A managing partner has implied authority to defend an action against the firm in relation to the partnership business (*c*).

SECT. 1.
Power of
One Partner
to Bind
the Firm

51 Each partner has implied authority to pay debts owing by the firm. Part payment of a debt by a partner may be presumed to have been made by him as agent of the firm, and may, therefore, prevent a Statute of Limitation from running in favour of his partners (*d*); but part payment by a continuing partner after dissolution or other determination of the agency cannot generally be set up against a retired partner who pleads the statute (*e*). Payment of interest by continuing partners has, however, been held to bind a retired partner where it was really made on his behalf (*f*).

Payment of
debts.

52 A general power of attorney in favour of one member of a firm does not confer any authority on his partners (*g*), but a power of attorney by one partner to another, authorising him to sell all or any of the donor's property, enables him to sell the partnership property (*h*). Two powers of attorney (1) to do certain acts for him, including in general terms the indorsement of bills, and (2) to accept bills, given to his wife by a person who carried on business on his own account and also in partnership with others, were held not to authorise her to accept bills for the purposes of the partnership (*i*). A power of attorney for the purpose of exercising the powers and privileges under a specified deed of partnership has been held not to authorise a notice of dissolution and an assignment of the partnership assets (*k*).

Powers of
attorney

(*k*) *Arton v Booth* (1820), 4 Moore (C P), 192, *Barker v Richardson* (1827), 1 Y & J, 362, *Furnival v Weston* (1822), 7 Moore (C P), 356

(*l*) *Hambidge v De la Crouée* (1846), 3 C B 742, compare *Munster v Cox* (1885), 10 App Cas 680

(*a*) *Adams v. Bankhart* (1838), 1 Cr M & R 681, *Stead v Salt* (1825), 3 Bing 101, *Re Crowder & Co, Ex parte Nolte* (1826), 2 Gl & J 295, *Hutton v Royle* (1858), 3 H & N 500. In *Thomas v Itherton* (1878), 10 Ch D 185, C A, the co-partners were bound by acquiescence

(*b*) *Crane v Lewis* (1887), 36 W R 480. A release in compromise of an action against one partner for damages for a joint tort may release all the members of the firm (*Howe v Oliver* (1908), 24 T L R 781, *Brinsmead v Harrison* (1872), L R 7 C P 547, Ex Ch)

(*c*) *Tomlinson v Broadsmith*, [1896] 1 Q B 386, C A

(*d*) *Goodwin v Parton* (1880), 42 L T 568, C A, see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, p 74

(*e*) *Watson v Woodman* (1875), L R 20 Eq 721. It would be different if the partnership was dissolved upon terms which expressly or impliedly created an agency (*ibid*, at p 730)

(*f*) *Re Tucker, Tucker v Tucker*, [1894] 1 Ch 724, affirmed [1894] 3 Ch 429, C A, compare *Friend v Young*, [1897] 2 Ch 421, and see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, p 74, Mercantile Law Amendment Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict. c 97), ss 13, 14

(*g*) *Edmiston v Wright* (1807), 1 Camp 88, nor does it generally impose any liability on the firm for his wrongful acts in the exercise of the power (*Chilton v Cooke & Sons* (1877), 37 L T 607)

(*h*) *Hawksley v Outram*, [1892] 3 Ch 359, C A

(*i*) *Atwood v Munnings* (1827), 7 B & C 278, compare *Jacobs v Morris*, [1902] 1 Ch 816, C A

(*k*) *Harper v Godsell* (1870), L R. 5 Q. B 422

SECT 1

SUB-SECT 3 — *Wrongful Acts*

Power of
One Partner
to Bind
the Firm.

Liability for
torts

General
principle

53 If a partner, acting in the ordinary course of the partnership business, or with the authority of his partners, commits any wrongful act causing loss or injury to a third person; or, if acting within the scope of his apparent authority, he receives and misapplies, or the firm receives and any partner misapplies, money belonging to a third person, the firm is liable (*l*)

All the members of a firm are liable for the wrongful acts of a partner which are committed in the ordinary course of business as carried on by that particular firm, although the transaction in question may not be within the usual scope of similar businesses (*m*), or to secure an object which would be within the ordinary scope of the partnership business, if attained by legitimate means (*n*), but, in the absence of special circumstances, they are not liable for the fraud of one partner committed otherwise than in the ordinary course of the partnership business (*o*). The rule extends to damage caused by the negligence of a partner in the ordinary conduct of the partnership business (*p*)

Solicitors

54 Innocent partners in a firm of solicitors are liable for a fraud committed by their partner in transacting legal business (*q*), and for payment of the costs of an action commenced and prosecuted by one partner, without his partner's knowledge, in the name, but without the authority, of a plaintiff (*r*)

Misappropriation of
client's
money

If a member of a firm of solicitors, acting for the vendor on a sale ordered by the court, receives a deposit from the auctioneer and absconds with it instead of paying it into court, his partners are liable (*s*). An innocent partner where the other partners, acting under a joint and several power of attorney in favour of all the partners, misappropriate funds belonging to a customer, is liable to the customer (*t*), and the same rule applies to any money paid by a

(*l*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), ss 10, 11. *De Ribeyre (La Marquise) v Barclay* (1856), 23 Beav 107. As to liability in general for tort see title TORT

(*m*) *Rhodes v Moules*, [1895] 1 Ch 236, C A

(*n*) *Hamlyn v Houston & Co*, [1903] 1 K B 81, 85 C A

(*o*) *Hughes v Twissden* (1886), 34 W R 498, see *Cleather v Twissden* (1884), 28 Ch D 340, C A. "This is conceded to be beyond the scope of the business of solicitors, though, of course, it may be brought within it by special circumstances" (*ibid*, per BOWEN, L J, at p 349)

(*p*) *Ashworth v Stanwix* (1861), 3 E & E 701, *Mellors v Shaw* (1861), 1 B & S 437. As to the principles of liability for negligence, see titles MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, p 713, NEGLIGENCE, Vol XXI, pp 433 *et seq*

(*q*) *Brydges v Branfill* (1841), 12 Sim 369. So joint owners of a patent are liable for the fraud of one of them (*Lovell v Hicks* (1837), 2 Y & C (EX) 46, 478, 481). As to ownership of patents, see title PATENTS AND INVENTIONS, pp 130, 183 *et seq*, *post*

(*r*) *Norton v Cooper* (1856), 3 Sm & G 375, and see title SOLICITORS

(*s*) *Biggs v Bree* (1882), 30 W R 278. But compare *Re Lawrence, Ex parte Burdon* (1854), 2 Sm & G 367 (where the agent had so acted as to render it improbable that the innocent partner would have notice of the transaction), *Dixon v Wilkinson* (1859), 4 De G & J 508, C A.

(*t*) *Sadler v Lee* (1843), 6 Beav 324, *Marsh v Keating* (1834), 2 Cl. & Fin 250, H. L., *Reid v Rugby & Co*, [1894] 2 Q B 40, *St Aubyn v Smart* (1867), L R 5 Eq. 183, affirmed (1868), 3 Ch App 646

client to one partner of a firm of solicitors or bankers who are acting for him for any specific purpose connected with the business which he entrusts to them (b)

Partners in a firm of solicitors are, however, not liable for the fraud of their partner who, without their knowledge, wrongfully converts to his own use trust money properly invested in his name as trustee (c). It is otherwise if the trust money is used for the purpose of the firm with the knowledge of the other partners (d). Where a firm of solicitors acts for trustees, and one member of the firm so acts as to render himself a constructive trustee, his partners are not liable for his defaults in that character as distinguished from defaults as a solicitor (e) so when one of the members of the firm is an express trustee (f), and if a solicitor takes a conveyance of property to himself at the request of a client without the knowledge of his partners, they are not liable for his fraud in dealing with the property (g).

55 Innocent partners are liable for the misrepresentations of one of their partners in matters connected with the ordinary business of the firm (h).

SECT. 1
Power of
One Partner
to Bind
the Firm.

Funds
received by
a partner
and trustee.

Misrepresentation

(b) *Dundonald (Earl) v Masterman* (1869), L R 7 Eq 504 (solicitors), *Bishop v Jersey (Countess)* (1854), 2 Drew 143 (bankers). Where money belonging to a client was paid to the credit of a firm of solicitors for investment on a specified mortgage, and one of the partners, without the knowledge of his partner, appropriated the money and falsely represented to the client that the mortgage had been executed, the innocent partner was held liable to replace the money (*Blair v Bromley* (1847) 2 Ph 354, *Moore v Knight*, [1891] 1 Ch 547, *Sawyer v Goodwin* (1867), 36 L J (Ch) 578, but compare *Plumer v Gregory* (1874), L R 18 Eq 621), but it is no part of the ordinary business of a firm of solicitors or bankers to receive money belonging to a client for reinvestment generally, as distinguished from a specified investment, on the payment off of a mortgage, and, if one partner does so and misappropriates it without the knowledge of his partners, they are not liable (*Sims v Brutton* (1850), 5 Exch 802, *Bourdillon v Roche* (1858), 6 W R 618, compare *Willet v Chambers* (1778), 2 Cowp 814, *Harman v Johnson* (1853), 2 E & B 61, *Eager v Barnes* (1802), 31 Beav 579).

(c) *Coomer v Bromley* (1852), 5 De G & Sm 532.

(d) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 13 (1), *Re Moxon, Ex parte Heaton* (1819), Buck, 386, *Re Harford, Ex parte Poulson* (1844), De G 79. But the mere fact that the trust property has been used in the business or on account of the firm by one partner who is the trustee is not sufficient to render the other partners liable (Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 13, and as to liability of incoming partners, see *Tuyford v Trail* (1834), 7 Sim 92), unless they have notice (Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 13 (1)). Where the other partners are implicated in the breach of trust, the liability arising thereout is not merely joint, but joint and several (*Blyth v Fladgate, Morgan v Blyth, Smith v Blyth*, [1891] 1 Ch 337, 353, *Re Acraman, Ex parte Woodin* (1843), 3 Mont D & De G 399). Nothing in the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 13, affects the right of the parties defrauded to follow and recover the trust property from the firm if still in its possession or under its control (*ibid*, s 13 (2)).

(e) *Mara v Browne*, [1896] 1 Ch 199, C A, compare *Re Biddulph, Ex parte Burton* (1843), 3 Mont D & De G 364, *Palmer v S* (1907), 51 Sol Jo 653, and see title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES.

(f) *Re Fryer, Martindale v Pequot* (1857), 3 K & J 317.

(g) *Tendring Hundred Waterworks Co v Jones*, [1903] 2 Ch 615.

(h) *Rapp v Latham* (1819), 2 B & Ald 795, and see title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, p 712.

SECT 1
Power of
One Partner
to Bind
the Firm

Trespass
 Malicious
 prosecution
 Goods
 obtained
 by fraud

General
 rule

One partner is not liable for the trespass of another unless committed with his knowledge or ratified by him (i). If a partner maliciously prosecutes a person for stealing the partnership property, it would seem that neither the firm nor the other partners are liable to an action for malicious prosecution and wrongful imprisonment merely because the property was partnership property (a).

A partnership firm cannot acquire property in goods obtained by the fraud of one partner to which the rest are not privy (b).

SUB-SECT 4 — Acts done by Authorised Person in Name of Firm

56 All the partners of a firm are bound by acts and instruments done and executed in relation to the business by any person duly authorised, whether a partner or not, if done in the firm's name or with evident intention to bind the firm (c). A deed executed by one partner for himself and his partner in the presence of the latter binds both (d).

SUB-SECT 5 — Acts done in Name of Individual Partner

Execution
 and signature
 of documents

57 One partner cannot bind the others by a guarantee apparently unconnected with the partnership (e), but he may do so where a mutual authority is proved by a previous course of practice of, or by adoption of, the partners, or by the usage of similar partnerships (f). An approval of a draft agreement signed by one member of a firm may bind the other partners (g), and a contract for a lease signed by one partner has been held to bind the others, where an analogous parol contract had been entered into and possession taken by all (h). A bill drawn on

(i) *Petrie v Lamont* (1841), Car & M 93, and see title **TRESPASS**

(a) *Aibuckle v Taylor* (1815), 3 Dow, 160, and see, generally, title **MALICIOUS PROSECUTION AND PROCEDURE**, Vol XIX, pp 669 *et seq*

(b) *Kilby v Wilson* (1825), Ry & M 178, *per* ABBOTT, C J, at p 181

(c) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 6, see cases in note (i), p 33, *post*. But the general rules of law relating to the execution of deeds and negotiable instruments are not affected by this provision (Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 6), see titles **BILLS OF EXCHANGE**, **PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS**, Vol II, pp 459 *et seq*, **DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS**, Vol X, pp 355 *et seq*

(d) *Ball v Dunsterville* (1791), 4 Term Rep 313, *Burn v Burn* (1798), 3 Ves 573, 578. But usually an authority to execute a deed must be given by deed (*Steghite v Eggington* (1815), Holt (N P), 141), see title **DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS**, Vol X, p 363

(e) *Duncan v Lowndes* (1813), 3 Camp 478, *Hasleham v Young* (1844), 5 Q B 833

(f) *Brettel v. Williams* (1849), 4 Exch 623, 629, 630, where *Ex parte Gardom* (1808), 15 Ves 286, is commented on

(g) *Brogden v. Metropolitan Rail Co* (1877), 2 App Cas 666

(h) *Sharp v Melligan* (1856), 22 Beav 606, and all the partners are liable for the gas supplied to the place of business although leased to one of them only (*City of London Gaslight and Coke Co v Nicholls* (1826), 2 C & P 365). A deed signed by one partner only, not as an escrow, may bind him, though not binding on the others (*Bowker v. Burdett* (1843), 11 M. & W. 128, and see *Cumberlege v Lawson* (1857), 1 C B (N. S.) 709, *Lascarridi v Gurney* (1863), 9 Jur (N. S.) 302).

a firm, and accepted by one partner in the firm's name and in his own may bind the firm, but, if it does so, it does not bind him separately (i). A bill given for partnership purposes by one partner in his own name—and not in the firm's name—does not bind the other partner (k); but if given in a name which the jury finds to be intended for and substantially identical with, or habitually used as, that of the firm—though not strictly accurate—it binds the other partners (l).

SECT. 1.
Power of
One Partner
to Bind
the Firm

Bills of
exchange.

58 The mere fact that money, borrowed by a partner in his own name on security belonging to him personally, has been used for the purposes of his firm with the knowledge of his partners does not render them liable (m). There is no implication of law, from the mere existence of a trade partnership, that a partner has authority to bind the firm by opening a bank account on its behalf in his own name (n).

Money used
by firm

If one partner promises in his own name to pay a debt of his firm he alone is liable on such promise, and he cannot raise the defence that the debt was a joint liability (o).

Promise to
pay firm debt.

59 A retired partner has been held not liable for the price of goods ordered by himself and his partner before his retirement, where such price was, after dissolution, secured by the acceptance of the continuing partner alone, to whom the goods were afterwards delivered (p).

Retired
partner

SUB-SECT 6—*Ratification and Repudiation*

60 Transactions which would *prima facie* be within the implied authority of a partner do not bind his firm or partners if he has, in fact, to the knowledge of the person dealing with him, no authority to carry out such transactions (q).

Unauthorised
acts by
partner

(i) *Re Barnard, Edwards v Barnard* (1886), 32 Ch D 447. Nor is the partner severally liable if the bill is accepted by the partner "for the partnership and self" (*Malcomson v Malcomson* (1878) 1 L R 1r 228).

(l) *Re Adanson's Fibre Co, Miles' Claim* (1874), 9 Ch App 635.

(k) *Faith v Richmond* (1840), 11 Ad & El 339 (bill given in the name of "H & F" instead of "H & Co"), *Williamson v Johnson* (1823), 1 B & C 146, *South Carolina Bank v Case* (1828) 8 B & C 427, explained in *Nicholson v Ricketts* (1860), 2 E & E 497, per CROMPTON, J, and in *Re Adanson's Fibre Co Miles' Claim*, *supra*, per MELLISH, L J, at p 649, and see p 110, *post*.

(m) *Bevan v Lewis* (1827), 1 Sim 376. But he may be entitled to be indemnified by them (*Browne v Gibbins* (1726), 5 Bro Parl Cas 491, *Re Oundle Union Brewery Co, Croxson's Case* (1852), 5 De G & Sm 432).

(n) *Allhance Bank, Ltd v Kearsley* (1871), L R 6 C P 433.

(o) *Murray v Somerville* (1809), 2 Camp 98, n.

(p) *Re Christopher, Ex parte Harris* (1816), 1 Madd 583.

(q) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), ss 5, 8. *Galway (Lord) v Matthew* (1808), 1 Camp 402, *Heilbut v Nevill* (1869), L R 4 C P 354, affirmed (1870), L R 5 C P 478, Ex Ch. The holder of a bill indorsed or accepted by one partner cannot sue the other partners if he knew, when he took the bill, that the former had no authority to indorse or accept it (*Heilbut v Nevill, supra*, *Hogarth v Latham & Co.* (1878), 3 Q B D 643, C A, *Galway (Lord) v Matthew, supra*, *Arden v Sharpe* (1797), 2 Esp 524, compare *Greenlade v Dower* (1828), 7 B & C 635). Where the name of the firm is that of one of the partners, who does not carry on a separate business, a bill drawn or accepted in such name is presumed to be a partnership bill, unless it is proved to have been given as the bill of the individual partner and not of the firm (*Yorkshire Banking*

- SECT 1** But, when a partner exceeds his authority, the other partners may adopt the transaction, and are then bound by it (*r*), and they may be bound if they have notice of the transaction and raise no objection. But notice to him is not notice to them (*s*), nor is notice to a clerk employed by a partnership firm of unauthorised transactions by a partner constructive notice to an individual partner who has no actual knowledge of such transactions (*t*)
- Power of One Partner to Bind the Firm.**
- Ratification**
- Acquiescence** **61** A partner who merely complains of unauthorised transactions by his partner, but takes no further step and allows a record of such transactions to remain in the partnership books, may be bound by acquiescence (*a*)

SECT. 2.—*Liability of Partners to Third Parties.*

SUB-SECT 1 —*Nature*

- Joint liability on contracts** **62** Partners are jointly liable for the debts and obligations of the firm (*b*)
- Particular cases.** **63** A promissory note signed by one partner for himself and his partners *nominatim* may create only a joint liability although beginning "I promise to pay" (*c*), and a promissory note given by a firm (and a stranger as surety) has been held only to impose a joint liability on the members of the firm (*d*) An undertaking to pay the debts of a third party signed in the firm name and by each partner in his own name, so as to amount to a joint and several guarantee, creates a joint and several liability (*e*)
- Joint and several liability for torts** **64** Partners are jointly and severally liable for the wrongful acts or omissions of any of them which cause loss or damage to third persons, if such acts are either done by a partner in the ordinary course of the firm's business or with the authority of his partners (*f*) They are also jointly and severally liable where a partner receives and misapplies the money or property of a third person while acting

Co v Beatson (1), *Leeds and County Banking Co v. Same* (1879), 4 C P D 204, affirmed on different grounds (1880), 5 C P D 109, C A, compare *Lloyd v. Ashby* (1831), 2 B & Ad 23, *Re Blackburn, Ex parte Bolton* (1817), Buck, 100, but see *Windle v Crowther* (1831), 1 Cr & J 316

(*r*) *Wills v Dyson* (1816), 1 Stark 164

(*s*) *Williamson v Barbour* (1877), 9 Ch D 529, 536 With regard to the conditions which must exist to constitute a binding adoption of acts *a priori* unauthorised, see *Marsh v Joseph*, [1897] 1 Ch 13, C A, *per Lord Russell of Killowen*, C J, at p 246, and see title AGENCY, Vol. 1 pp 175 *et seq* In case of the repudiation of a contract entered into by one partner within the scope of his authority, the partnership is liable for everything done under the contract before receipt of notice of repudiation by the party contracting with the partner, or subsequently in respect of liabilities already incurred (*Smith v Ure* (1833), 2 Knapp, 188)

(*t*) *Lacey v Hill, Lacey v Hill* (1876), 4 Ch D 537, 549, C A; affirmed *sub nom Read v Bailey* (1877), 3 App Cas 94

(*a*) *Oragg v. Ford* (1842), 1 Y & C Ch Cas 280, 285

(*b*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c. 39), s 9 This provision is declaratory of the former law. With regard to the several liability of the estate of a deceased partner, see note (*p*), p. 35 *post*

(*c*) *Ex Clarke, Ex parte Buckley* (1845), 14 M & W 480.

(*d*) *Ex Manley, Ex parte Wilson* (1842), 3 Mont D. & De G. 57.

(*e*) *Ex Smith, Fleming & Co., Ex parte Harding* (1879), 12 Ch. D. 557, C A

(*f*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c. 39), ss 10, 12

within the scope of his apparent authority, and where the firm receives, in the ordinary course of its business, money or property which is misapplied by one or more of the partners while in the firm's custody (g). Partners in a firm of solicitors have been held jointly and severally liable for a breach of trust committed by one partner, in which they were implicated (h), and for misappropriation of moneys where an undertaking, within the scope of the partnership business, had been given by one partner to apply money, paid to him by a client of the firm, for a specific purpose (i).

NOTE 2.
Breach of trust
of partners
to third
parties.

65 Where a trustee improperly lends trust money to a firm, and the partners know or ought to be treated as knowing the facts, they themselves are implicated in the breach of trust, and are jointly and severally liable for it (j). Where, however, one partner (not a trustee) in a firm of bankers invests trust money on improper securities with the knowledge of his partners, they are jointly liable as bankers, but not jointly and severally liable as trustees (k).

Breach of
trust

66 Though partners are jointly liable to third persons, a partner who pays more than his share of a partnership debt, whether voluntarily or not (l), is entitled to contribution from his partners (m). Where one of two partners who are jointly liable has paid a judgment debt, he is entitled, in order to enforce his right to contribution, to an assignment of the judgment under the Mercantile Law Amendment Act, 1856 (n), but this right is subject to the equities subsisting between the debtors as partners (o).

Right of
partners to
contribution.

67 The estate of a deceased partner is severally liable, in a due course of administration, for the unsatisfied debts and obligations of his firm, subject to his separate debts (p), but

Deceased
partner

(g) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), ss 11, 12, *De Ribeyre (La Marquise) v Barclay* (1857), 23 Beav 107, *Re Collie, Ex parte Adamson* (1878), 8 Ch D 807, C A

(h) *Blyth v Fladgate, Morgan v Blyth, Smith v Blyth*, [1891] 1 Ch 337

(i) *Atkinson v. Mackreth* (1866), L R 2 Eq 570

(j) *Re Acraman, Ex parte Woodin* (1843), 3 Mont D & De G 399

(k) *Re Buddulph, Ex parte Burton* (1843), 3 Mont D. & De G 364, and see pp 30, 31, *ante*

(l) *Sadler v Nixon* (1834), 5 B & Ad 936, and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 472

(m) *Bouller v Peplow* (1850), 9 C B 493, *Sedgwick v Danell* (1857), 2 H & N 319, *Batard v Hawes* (1853), 2 E & B 287. A partner could not formerly, in the absence of special circumstances, sue for contribution at law, his remedy was in equity (*Sadler v Nixon, supra*)

(n) 19 & 20 Vict c 97, s 5

(o) *Dale v Powell* (1911), 105 L T 291

(p) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c. 39), s 9, and see titles CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 460, EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 309. This declares and settles the principle, which had long been acted upon in equity, that although partners were at law only jointly liable on contracts, a surviving partner could, in equity, obtain contribution from the estate of a deceased partner in respect of liabilities to which he was subject as such survivor, and that unpaid creditors might avail themselves directly of the equity which the surviving partner could thus insist upon (*Kendall v Hamilton* (1879), 4 App. Cas. 504). The fact that the remedy was enforced in equity at the instance of creditors of the firm has in some old cases been treated as an adoption by the former Court of Chancery of the rule of the *lex mercatoria* that partnership debts create a several as well as joint liability; see *Devaynes v Noble, Stoeck's Case* (1816), 1 Mer 529, 564. But this view was rejected by the House of Lords. see *Kendall v Hamilton, supra*, at p 538. As to the

SECT 2
Liability
of Partners
to Third
Parties.

Liability
runs from
date of
association

Liability in
case of
specific
adventures

joint covenants by partners, as lessees, are not construed as joint and several after the death of one partner, so as to render his estate liable for breaches after his death (q).

SUB-SECT. 2 —Duration

68 A person entering a subsisting firm is liable for the firm's debts incurred after he becomes a partner, but not, in the absence of contrary agreement, for previous debts (r). Thus the fact that a person who buys goods subsequently agrees to let another share in the profits does not enable the seller to sue such other person (s), and a person who, on joining a firm, becomes entitled, as between himself and the firm, to the rights of a partner from a past date cannot be sued for goods supplied to the firm between such past date and the time when he joined the firm (t).

In the case of a joint adventure relating to a specified cargo of goods supplied separately by the several adventurers, where it was agreed that no adventurer was to be answerable for anything ordered and shipped by any co-adventurer, their joint liability was held not to commence until the goods were on board (u). But where it was agreed that the goods were to be bought by or for the adventurers jointly, their liability was held to begin at the time of purchase (v).

A partner is liable for the debts incurred by his firm from the date fixed for the commencement of his partnership, although the

circumstances which determine whether the remedy against the estate of the deceased partner is or is not barred, see *Vulhamy v Noble* (1817), 3 Mer 593, 619, *Way v Bassett* (1845), 5 Hare, 55, *Brown v Gordon* (1852), 16 Beav 302, *Devaynes v Noble, Clayton's Case* (1816), 1 Mer 529, 572, *Wilkinson v Henderson* (1833), 1 My & K 582, *Ex parte Kendall* (1811), 17 Ves 514, 525, *Thorpe v Jackson* (1837), 2 Y & C (ex) 553 (which shows that the surviving partner is a necessary party to the action), *Braithwaite v Britain* (1836), 1 Keen, 206, *Winter v Innes* (1838), 4 My & C 101, *Cowell v Sikes* (1827), 2 Russ 191, compare *Mills v Boyd* (1842), 6 Jur 943, and see title EQUITY, Vol XIII, p 39. "As regards the partners where there is in equity no survivorship of property there is no survivorship of the liability" (*Beesford v Browning* (1875), 1 Ch D 30, C A, per JAMES, L J, at p 34, affirming S C (1875), L R 20 Eq 504, compare *Wilmer v Currey* (1848), 2 De G & Sm 347).

(q) *Clarke v Bickers* (1845), 14 Sim 639, and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 337, 338.

(r) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 17 (1), *Shurreff v Wilks* (1800), 1 East, 48, *Newton v Belcher* (1848), 12 Q B 921, *Beale v Mous* (1847), 10 Q B 976, *Lucas v Beach* (1840), 1 Man & G 417, *Dyke v Brewer* (1849), 2 Car & Kir 828, and see *Crauford v Cocks* (1851), 6 Exch 287. Knowledge by a creditor of the old firm that the new partner had joined the firm is not a necessary ingredient in determining his liability to such creditor (*Scott v Beale* (1860), 6 Jur (N s) 559). Promoters of a bill for a railway are liable from the date of association and not merely from the passing of the bill (*Holmes v Higgins* (1822), 1 B & C 74). But *quære* whether *Lucas v Beach*, *supra*, and *Holmes v Higgins*, *supra*, were really cases of partnership. As to the effect of novation upon contractual liability, see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 505 *et seq*.

(s) *Young v Hunter* (1812), 4 Taunt 582, compare *Mawman v Gillett* (1809), 2 Taunt 325, n.

(t) *Wileford v Wood* (1794), 1 Esp 182.

(u) *Saville v Robertson* (1792), 4 Term Rep 720.

(v) *Gouthwaite v Duckworth* (1810), 12 East, 421; compare *Barton v Hanson* (1809), 2 Taunt. 49; *Young v Hunter* (1812), 4 Taunt, 582.

partnership deed may be executed at a later date (w), notwithstanding an arrangement to the contrary between himself and his partners (e).

SECT. 2.
Liability
of Partners
to Third
Parties

An agreement for a partnership in certain events does not render the parties liable for the acts or defaults of each other as partners until the events happen, unless there has been "holding out" (b), and abortive negotiations for a partnership on the terms of certain draft articles are not sufficient to render the parties liable as partners (c).

Agreement
for partner-
ship

Where a person has an option of becoming a partner within twelve months from a specified date, he is not liable for goods supplied to the firm after that date and before his option is exercised (d), nor in respect of bills drawn before he becomes a partner (e).

Unexercised
option

69 A partner who retires does not thereby cease to be liable for the firm's liabilities incurred before his retirement (f) he remains liable until the partnership affairs are wound up, or such liabilities are discharged, unless the creditors accept the liability of the continuing partners by way of novation (g), and this is so although he may be only a sleeping partner (h). Costs, payable to the firm's solicitor in respect of an action commenced before, and pending at the time of, retirement, constitute a liability incurred when the solicitor was retained (i).

Liability
of retired
partner

No agreement between partners with regard to the incidence of a partnership liability can *per se* affect the rights of creditors (j). Therefore, an agreement by continuing partners to indemnify a retiring partner against the partnership debts does not extinguish the joint liability of the partners to creditors, although, as between the partners, the retiring partner is in the position of a surety (k). But a retiring partner may be discharged by an agreement between

Creditors not
bound by
agreement
fixing inci-
dence of
liability

(w) *Battley v Lewis* (1840), 1 Man & G 155, compare *Vere v Ashby* (1829), 10 B & C 288

(e) *Wilson v Lewis* (1840), 2 Man & G 197 But in the absence of an express stipulation to the contrary, a partnership commences from the date of the articles of partnership, and evidence of a parol agreement that it was to commence on a future date is inadmissible (*William v Jones* (1826), 5 B & C 108), see pp 21, 22, *ante*

(b) *Dickinson v Valpy* (1829), 10 B & C 128, *per PARKE, J*, at pp 141, 142 As to "holding out" as a partner, see p 13, *ante*

(c) *Re Vanderplank, Ex parte Turquand* (1841), 2 Mont D & De G 339, *Ex parte Peele* (1802), 6 Ves 602

(d) *Gabriel v Evill* (1842), 9 M & W 297

(e) *Ibid*, *Dickinson v Valpy, supra*

(f) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 17 (2)

(g) *Ibid*, s 17 (3), see *Newmarch v Clay* (1811), 14 East, 239 As to novation generally, see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 505 *et seq*

(h) *Court v Berlin*, [1897] 2 Q B 396, C A As regards executors of a deceased partner who are entitled to a share of profits, but do not take any part in conducting the business, see *Holme v Hammond* (1872), L R 7 Exch 218

(i) *Court v Berlin, supra*, but *quære* whether the retiring partner might escape liability for the costs incurred, after he retires, by withdrawing his retainer or by giving notice of dissolution to the solicitor (*ibid*, *per Lord ESHER, M R*, at p 399, and see *ibid*, *per A L SMITH, L J*, at p 401)

(j) *Gough v Davies and Gibbons* (1817), 4 Price, 200

(k) *Rodgers v Maw* (1846), 4 Dow & L 66, see *Oakeley v Pasheller* (1836) 4 Cl & Fin 207, H L, distinguished in *Swire v Redman* (1876), 1 Q. B D 536, and in *Oakford v European and American Steam Shipping*

SECT. 3.
Liability
of Partners
to Third
Parties.

Effect of
irregular
notice of
dissolution

Liability
contracted
without
notice of
partnership

himself, the members of the new firm and the creditors, such agreement being either express or inferred from the course of dealing between the creditors and the new firm (l).

70. A retiring partner may also be liable for subsequent debts if no proper notice of dissolution has been given (m), or even if such notice has been given but he has left his name in the firm style (n), unless he is a sleeping partner who has not been held out and is not known to the creditors as a partner (o). Liability for costs, incurred after the date of retirement, of an action begun before and pending at such date is not for this purpose a subsequent debt (p).

71. If a partner acting for his firm makes a contract of a personal character for a term of years in his own name with a person who has no knowledge of the partnership, such person may, on the death of the partner with whom he contracted, elect to put an end to the contract (q).

SECT. 3 — Legal Proceedings

SUB SECT. 1 — Actions by Partners

Firm.

72 A partnership firm is not a legal entity, like a limited company, nor is it, for all purposes, a "person" (r)

Co (1863), 1 Hem. & M 182, and followed in *Rouse v Bradford Banking Co*, [1894] A C 586, and see title GUARANTEE, Vol XV, p 443

(l) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 17 (3), *Hobson v Cowley* (1858), 27 L J (EX) 205, *Hooper v Keay* (1875), 1 Q B D 178, *Re Head, Head v Head*, [1893] 3 Ch 426, *Cripps v Tappin & Co* (1882), Cab & El 13, *Bilborough v Holmes* (1876), 5 Ch D 255, *Daniel v Cross* (1796), 3 Ves 277. But mere knowledge by the creditor of the change of firm is not sufficient to discharge the retiring partner (*Blew v Wyatt* (1832), 5 C & P 397, and see *Re Family Endowment Society* (1870), 5 Ch App 118, *Thompson v Percival* (1834), 5 B & Ad 925). As to the circumstances which determine whether a retiring partner is or is not discharged from liability, see *Thompson v Percival*, *supra*, *Bedford v Deakin* (1818), 2 B & Ald 210, *Kirwan v Kirwan* (1834), 2 Cr & M 617, *Dickenson v. Lockyer* (1798), 4 Ves 36, *Heath v Percival* (1720), 1 P Wms 682, *Benson v Hadfield* (1844), 4 Hare, 32, *Hart v Alexander* (1837), 2 M & W 484, *Harris v Farwell* (1851), 15 Beav 31, *Cummins v Cummins* (1845), 3 Jo & Lat 64, 87, *Spenceley v Greenwood* (1858), 1 F & F 297, *Brinsmead & Son v Locke & Son* (1889), 5 T L R 542, *Re Robertson, Ex parte Gould* (1834), 4 Deac & Ch 547; and compare *Re Worters, Ex parte Oakes* (1841), 2 Mont D & DeG 234, *Re Smith, Knight & Co, Ex parte Gibson* (1869), 4 Ch App 662. It is perhaps doubtful whether *Lodge v Deas* (1820), 3 B & Ald 611, and *David v Ellice* (1826), 5 B & C 196, could now be supported.

(m) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 36 (1), (2), *Parkin v Carruthers* (1800), 3 Esp 248, *Slack v Parker* (1886), 54 L T 212, *Farrar v Deslinne* (1843), 1 Car & Kir 580, *Osborne v Harper* (1804), 5 East, 225, see p 15, *ante*.

(n) *Williams v Keats* (1817), 2 Stark 290.

(o) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 36 (3); *Heath v Sansom* (1832), 4 B & Ad 172, "a dormant partner may retire from a firm without giving notice to the world" (*ibid*, per PATTESON, J, at p 177), *Evans v Drummond* (1801), 4 Esp 89, *Robinson v Wilkinson* (1817), 3 Price, 538; *Crawshaw v Maule* (1818), 1 Swan. 495; *Delman v Orchard* (1825), 2 C & P. 104; *Western Bank of Scotland v. Needell* (1859), 1 F & F 461; *Powles v Page* (1846), 3 C B 16.

(p) *Gow v. Bertus*, [1897] 2 Q. B 396, C A.

(q) *Roberts v. Drummond* (1831), 2 B & Ad. 303; compare *Stevens v Denning* (1854), 1 K & J 162.

(r) *Sadler v. Whiteman*, 1 K B 568, 689, C. A.; *Re Vagstad*

PART IV.—RELATIONS BETWEEN PARTNERS AND THIRD PARTIES.

All the members of a firm may sue on a contract made in the firm name, or by one of them as agent for the firm (s), and, when there is joint damage, all may sue in an action of tort, subject to exceptions (t). An agreement between partners authorising one partner to sue for penalties, payable by defaulting partners to the others, is binding on the parties to the agreement, but it does not bind other persons so as to enable him to sue them on behalf of the firm (u).

Part. 2.
Joint Pro-
cess.
Right of
members
to sue.

73 Actions by and against firms are regulated by a special code of procedure (a), although this procedure is optional, and partners may, where preferred, still sue and be sued in their individual names. The advantages of the new procedure in many cases are, however, obvious, and it is usually adopted in cases where it is applicable.

Present
practice.

74 Two or more partners carrying on business within the jurisdiction (b) may sue either a stranger or a member of the

Partners may
sue in firm
name.

Anthracite Collieries, Ltd (1910), 79 L J (CH) 769, *R v Holden*, [1912] 1 K B 483, 487, C C A, see note (q), p 5, ante. "In English law a firm as such has no existence" (*Sadler v Whitman*, [1910] 1 K B 868, C A, per FARWELL, L J, at p 889), compare title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 65.

(s) *Cothay v Fennell* (1830), 10 B & C 671, *Skinner v Stocks* (1821), 4 B & Ald 437, *Alexander v Barker* (1831), 2 Cr & J 133. Formerly they sued as individuals, and it was necessary for all the partners to be named as plaintiffs, subject to certain exceptions. A continuing partner has been held to be entitled to sue alone on a contract made with him and a retired partner jointly (*Atkinson v Loring* (1822), *Dow & Ry* (N P) 16), or made on his behalf, even after dissolution, by a retired partner (*Cox v Hubbard* (1847), 4 C B 317), and an active partner might sue without joining his sleeping partner as a plaintiff (*Leveck v Shafto* (1796), 2 Esp 468), and, if the contract is entered into with one partner personally he might sue in his own name without joining his partners (*Agacio v Forbes* (1861), 14 Moo P C C 160, and see *Jones v Robinson* (1847), 1 Exch 454, *Driver v Burton* (1852), 17 Q B 989, *Hudson v Robinson* (1816), 4 M & S 475). Further, the master and part owner of a ship might sue alone on contracts made by him in relation to the ship (*Cawthron v Trickett* (1864), 15 C B (N S) 754), and two members of a firm who made a contract without disclosing that it was on behalf of the firm could sue alone on it (*Clay v Southern* (1852), 7 Exch 717, compare *Lucas v De la Cour* (1813), 1 M & S 249), but an ostensible partner whose name appeared in the firm was held to be a necessary plaintiff, although he was in fact only in receipt of a salary (*Gurdon v Robson* (1809), 2 Camp 302). With regard to bills of exchange, see Bills of Exchange Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 61), s 23 (2), and title BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS, Vol II, pp 492 *et seq*.

(t) *Lengman v Pole* (1828), Mood & M 223, and see titles LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 614, TORT.

(u) *Radenhurst v Bates* (1826), 3 Bing 463.

(a) Contained in the Rules of the Supreme Court, see R S C, Ord 48A. For procedure in the Supreme Court generally, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE. See also title MAYOR'S COURT, LONDON, Vol XX, pp 289, 291, 296.

(b) If the firm has an office of its own in this country at which a partner or manager is in control carrying on the business, that is sufficient to bring it within R. S C, Ord. 48A, r. 1 (*Worcester City and County Banking Co v Furbank, Pauling & Co.*, [1894] 1 Q B. 784, C A; *Shepherd v Hirsch, Prichard & Co* (1890), 45 Ch D 231; *Lysaght v Clark & Co*, [1891] 1 Q B 552); see note (d), p. 40, *post*. If the firm has only an office in this country where business for the firm is done by an agent, the question whether it is carrying on business within the jurisdiction depends on the powers and authority of the agent. If the agent merely

SECT 9
Legal Pro-
ceedings.

Names of
partners must
be disclosed

firm (c) in the name of the firm (d) in which they were partners when the cause of action arose (e), and a judge may order the names and addresses of such partners to be furnished and verified on oath or otherwise (f). In an action by a partner in the firm name his partners may, upon his application, be compelled by attachment to obey an order for discovery obtained by the defendant (g).

If no such order is made, the plaintiffs must, on demand in writing by any defendant, declare the names and addresses of all the partners on whose behalf the action is brought, and if this is not done the action may be stayed on such terms as the court or a judge

has authority to take orders and transmit them to his firm, or to show samples, that is not "carrying on business" (*Baillie v Goodwin & Co* (1886), 33 Ch D 604, *Grant v Anderson & Co*, [1892] 1 Q B 108, C A) but, if he has power to conclude binding contracts on his own initiative on behalf of the firm, it is otherwise (*Compagnie Générale Transatlantique v Law (Thomas) & Co*, La "Bourgogne," [1899] A C 431, *Dunlop Pneumatic Tyre Co v Actien Gesellschaft fur Motor und Motorfahrzeugbau vorm Uddell & Co*, [1902] 1 K B 342, C A). The firm must have an office or fixed place of business in this country, the fact that a partner resides in, or that a partner comes regularly to this country for the purpose of transacting business for the firm is not sufficient (*Heinemann & Co v Hale & Co* [1891] 2 Q B 83, C A, *Singleton v Roberts, Stocks & Co* (1894), 70 L T 687, *Western National Bank of City of New York v Pires, Triana & Co*, [1891] 1 Q B 304, C A, *Indigo Co v Ogilvy*, [1891] 2 Ch 31, C A). A stand taken for nine days at a show may be a fixed place of business sufficient to bring a firm within the jurisdiction (*Dunlop Pneumatic Tyre Co v Actien Gesellschaft fur Motor und Motorfahrzeugbau vorm Uddell & Co*, *supra*). See, further, cases cited at pp 41 *et seq*, *post*, dealing with proceedings against a firm. A Scottish, Irish, or colonial firm is in the same position as a foreign firm for this purpose, for the question does not depend upon allegiance but on jurisdiction (*Worcester City and County Banking Co v Fubank, Pauling & Co*, [1894] 1 Q B 784, *per* Lord ESHER, M R, at p 787). As to service on unincorporated foreign companies, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 20, 21.

(c) R S C, Ord 48A, r 10

(d) *Ibid*, r 1. It has been held that this does not authorise a single individual trading under a firm name to sue in such name (*Mason & Son v Mogridge* (1892), 8 T L R 805), but the Court of Appeal has refused to set aside a judgment recovered in such an action (*Hirschfeldt v Elton* (1899), unreported, cited in *Yearly Practice of the Supreme Court*, 1912, p 691). In the case of a money lender trading alone under a registered firm name since the Money-lenders Act, 1900 (63 & 64 Vict c 51), it would appear that both his own name and his registered firm name should appear, see *Annual Practice*, 1912, p 777, title MONEY AND MONEY LENDING, Vol XXI, pp 48, 51. It has been doubted whether the rule applies to an action *in rem* (*The Assunta*, [1902] P 150, 154).

(e) There may of course have been a change in the personnel of the firm between the date of the cause of action and the issue of the writ. This is of no importance where the action is by the firm, but where the firm is defendant it may have serious consequences, see pp 43, 45, *post*.

(f) The alternative method (see the text, *infra*) of obtaining disclosure, *et c*, under R S C, Ord 48A, r 2, is only a "declaration in writing" and this being considered insufficient, *ibid*, r 1, was framed to enable either party to obtain an affidavit or other statement on oath. There can be no cross-examination on such an affidavit (*Abrahams & Co v Dunlop Pneumatic Tyre Co*, [1905] 1 K B 46, C A), nor can disobedience to an order for this disclosure be enforced by attachment (*Pike v Keene* (1876), 34 W R 322). As to proceedings in a county court, see title COUNTY COURTS, Vol VIII, p 456.

(g) *Spal and Edgelow v Kingston*, [1908] 2 K B 579, C A, and see

PART IV — RELATIONS BETWEEN PARTNERS AND THIRD PARTIES.

directs (h). After the demand is complied with the action proceeds in the name of the firm, but all the partners named in the declaration are in the same position as if each was an individual plaintiff (i).

SECT. 3.
Legal Proceedings.

75 A partner may sue strangers in the firm name, but if his partners object he may be ordered to give them an indemnity against the costs (j). A solvent partner and the trustee in bankruptcy of his insolvent partner may join as plaintiffs in an action to recover from a third person a bill belonging to the partnership and indorsed to such third person by the insolvent partner in fraud of his firm (k).

Action by a single partner.

76 Where two firms have a common partner, either of them may sue the other if both firms carry on business within the jurisdiction (l).

Actions between firms with a common partner

77 The separate debt owing by one partner cannot, as a general rule, in the absence of express or implied agreement, be set off against a debt owing to the firm (m), unless the indebted partner was the only ostensible partner when the debt to the firm was incurred (n), or has become the sole partner under an agreement which operates as a novation of the debt owing to the firm (o).

Set-off

SUB-SECT. 2 — Actions against Partners

78 Two or more persons carrying on business within the jurisdiction (p) may be sued, in respect of their partnership liabilities,

Actions against partners.

title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol. XI, p. 44, note (e). The court will not commit two partners for contempt in disobeying an order which has been served on one of them only (*Young v Goodson* (1826), 2 Russ 255).

(h) If an order to stay is not made, failure to comply with the demand will not justify the defendant in making default in appearance or prevent the plaintiff from obtaining judgment by default (Yearly Practice of the Supreme Court, 1912, p. 682, note to r. 2).

(i) R. S. C., Ord. 48A, r. 2. This rule does not appear to be applicable to an action by a limited partnership. In such a case the names can be ascertained by inspection of the register, see p. 109, *post*.

(j) *Whitehead v Hughes* (1834), 2 Cr. & M. 318, *Seal and Edgelow v Kingston*, [1908] 2 K. B. 579, C. A.

(k) *Heilbut v Nevill* (1869), L. R. 4 C. P. 354, affirmed (1870), L. R. 5 C. P. 478, Ex. Ch.

(l) R. S. C., Ord. 48A, r. 10. Formerly this was not so (*Bosanquet v Wray* (1816), 6 Taunt. 597), but a suit in equity could have been maintained (*Taylor v Midland Rail Co* (1860), 28 Beav. 287). Leave to issue execution in such a case must be obtained, see title EXECUTION, Vol. XIV, p. 8.

(m) *Gordon v Ellis* (1846), 3 Dow. & L. 803, *Jebson v East and West India Dock Co* (1875), L. R. 10 C. P. 300.

(n) *Stracey v Deey* (1789), cited 7 Term Rep. 361, n., *Muggeridge v. Smith & Co* (1884), 1 T. L. R. 166, compare *Baker v Gent* (1892), 9 T. L. R. 159, see also *Spurr v Cass*, *Cass v Spurr* (1870), L. R. 5 Q. B. 636, and see titles EQUITY, Vol. XIII, p. 163, SET-OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM.

(o) *Burgess v Morton* (1894), 10 T. L. R. 339, C. A.

(p) As to what amounts to carrying on business within the jurisdiction, see note (b), p. 39, *ante*. As to proceedings in a county court, see title COUNTY COURTS, Vol. VIII, p. 456. A foreign firm can agree that service on an agent within the jurisdiction shall be valid (*Montgomery v Liebenthal*, [1898] 1 Q. B. 487, C. A.), but it cannot agree that the court shall have power to direct service upon it out of the jurisdiction (*British Wagon Co.*

SECT 3
Legal Proceedings.

Service of writ.

in the name of the firm in which they were partners when the cause of action arose (q)

79. A writ against a subsisting firm may be served on any partner or partners (r), or at the firm's principal place of business (a) within the jurisdiction, on any person there having the control or management of the business (t). This operates as good service on every partner, even on those out of the jurisdiction (a). Every

v *Gray*, [1896] 1 Q B 35, C A) In the absence of any such agreement, if a firm does not carry on business within the jurisdiction, it is a foreign firm and the partners must be sued individually (*Western National Bank of City of New York v Perez, Triana & Co*, [1891] 1 Q B 304, C A); and service of a writ in the firm name has no effect (*ibid*), see also *Indigo Co v Ogilvy*, [1891] 2 Ch 31, C A, *Dobson v Festi, Rasini & Co*, [1891] 2 Q B 92, C A), and see R S C, Ord 11. If a foreign firm brings an action within the jurisdiction, a counterclaim may be made against it (*Griendtveen v Hamlyn* (1892), 8 T L R 231)

(q) R S C, Ord 48A, r 1, *Western National Bank of City of New York v Perez, Triana & Co*, *supra*. The name of a newspaper has been held not to be a firm name (*De Bernales v New York Herald*, [1893] 2 Q B 97, n), but the name of a proprietary club may be (*Firmen & Sons, Ltd v International Club* (1889) 5 T L R 612, 694, C A)

(r) Service upon one partner is sufficient to bind the firm, and it is not necessary to effect service on the other or others, except for the purpose of issuing execution against them in case they do not appear or admit liability upon the pleadings, or are not adjudged to be partners. Where more than one service is effected the time for appearance by the firm runs from the last service. In a case where service was effected upon a person having control (see the text, *infra*), and five days later upon a partner, and judgment in default of appearance was signed on the first service before the eight days had elapsed from service on the partner, the judgment was set aside (*Alden v Beckley & Co* (1890), 25 Q B D 543). Service should not be effected after judgment, but resort had to R S C, Ord 48A, r 8 (see pp 43, note (e), 44, note (h), *post*). Where one of the partners is an infant, service must be effected upon him in the way prescribed by R S C, Ord 9, r 4, see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 140, and see note (t), *infra*. So in the case of a lunatic defendant (*Fore Street Warehouse Co v Durrant* (1883), 10 Q B D 471)

(s) There does not appear to be any reported decision as to what makes a place of business the principal place, but probably it is the place where the administrative part of the business is carried on, and from which the different branches are controlled. As to service on unincorporated foreign companies, see title COMPANIES, Vol V pp 20, 21

(t) This does not include an agent of the firm whose only duty is to show samples and transmit orders (*Baillie v Goodwin & Co* (1886), 33 Ch D 604). Nor is a receiver and manager appointed by the court included in this term, since the person served must be the servant of the firm (*Re Flowers & Co*, [1897] 1 Q B 14, C A) (a bankruptcy case). The words of the rule are wide enough to include an infant if in control, and it is conceived that service on him would be good, inasmuch as the special mode of serving an infant provided by R S C, Ord 9, r 4, applies only where the infant is a party to the action

(a) R S C, Ord 48A, r 3. This mode of service is good where business is carried on within the jurisdiction, and it is immaterial that the partners are outside the jurisdiction, so far as service on the manager is concerned, or whether they are British subjects or not, so far as service upon them within the jurisdiction or upon the manager at the principal place of business is concerned. Therefore, though all the partners reside and are domiciled out of the jurisdiction, service upon a partner temporarily within the jurisdiction is a sufficient service upon the firm (*Pellington & Subson* (1886), 16 Q. B. D. 792; *Lysaght v. Clark & Co*, [1891] 1 Q B 552; *Worcester City and County Banking Co. v* *...*

PART IV.—RELATIONS BETWEEN PARTNERS AND THIRD PARTIES.

person served must be informed by notice in writing at the time of service whether he is served as partner or person having control or in both characters, and in default of such notice is deemed to be served as a partner (b). Substituted service may be ordered where there is no person in apparent control and no partner can be served (c).

But if the plaintiff knows that the partnership has been dissolved, he must serve personally every member of the firm within the jurisdiction whom he seeks to make liable (d), and must, of course, adopt the usual procedure in the case of any partners out of the jurisdiction (e)

Form 1.
Notice of
service.
Nature of
service.

Dissolved
firm.

bank, Pauling & Co., [1894] 1 Q B 784, C A ; *Shepherd v. Hirsch*, *Pritchard & Co* (1890), 45 Ch D 231)

(b) R S C, Ord 48A, r 4

(c) *Ibid*, Ord 9, r 2. *Shillito v Child & Co.*, [1883] W. N 208
Before an order for substituted service will be made, efforts to serve the person in control of the business and any partner must have been made unsuccessfully. Where there appears to be no one in control, and the address of one of the partners is known, and efforts to serve him have failed, an order will generally be made for service by post addressed to the place of business and to the partner's residence. Possibly, if the names and addresses of the partners cannot be found out, service may be ordered by post addressed to the place of business only. Substituted service cannot be ordered upon a partner who is resident out of the jurisdiction by service upon some one in this country, see *Worcester City and County Banking Co v Fribank, Pauling & Co.*, [1894] 1 Q B 784, C A, per Lord ESHER M R, at p 788. There cannot be good substituted service where personal service would not be legally possible (*ibid.*) But see *Coles v Gurney* (1815), 1 Madd. 187, *Leese v Martin* (1871), L R 13 Eq 77, *Figgins v Ward* (1834), 2 Cr & M 424

(d) R S C, Ord. 48A, r 3. This refers to liability of the individual partner. Even where the cause of action accrued before the dissolution, the plaintiff cannot make a partner who has since retired liable without serving him personally, unless he has appeared or admitted on the pleadings that he is a partner, or been adjudged to be one, see R S C, Ord 48A, r 8, *Wigram v Cox, Sons, Buckley & Co.*, [1894] 1 Q B 792. But, notwithstanding dissolution proceedings can be instituted against the late firm in the firm name, if the dissolution was after the accrual of the cause of action (*Re Wenham, Ex parte Buttams*, [1900] 2 Q B 698, C A), and any service upon the firm would make the partnership property liable to execution. Where there has been an entire change in the persons constituting the firm since the cause of action arose, suing in the firm name may cause difficulty (*Re Suwers, Ex parte Blum* (1879), 12 Ch D 522, 533, C A). In *Re Young, Ex parte Young* (1881), 19 Ch D 124, C A. (decided under the corresponding repealed Rules of 1875), it was held that a judgment against a firm would not support a debtor's summons against a retired partner who had not been served, nor had appeared nor admitted on the pleadings that he was a partner, nor had been adjudged to be a partner, although the debt had been contracted before the dissolution and the creditor was ignorant of the dissolution, and see *Davis v Morris* (1883), 10 Q B D. 436, 444. But where, after dissolution, a charging order was made upon the application of a judgment creditor against the partnership assets in the hands of a receiver, the court refused to discharge the order on the application of partners who had not been served with the writ in the action wherein the creditor had obtained his judgment (*Brand v. Sandground* (1901), 18 T L R 96).

(e) R. S. C., Ord. 11, see *Yearly Practice of the Supreme Court*, 1912, pp 61 et seq. Where a partner is outside the jurisdiction, leave must be obtained to serve him there, and can only be granted in the cases coming within R. S. C., Ord 11; see title *PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE*. But he must be made a party or be served within the jurisdiction, if it is sought

SECT 3
Legal Pro-
ceedings.

Appearance
by partners.

80. Persons served as partners must appear in their own names, but the proceedings continue in the firm's name (*f*). Persons served as in control need not appear unless they are partners (*g*). A person served as a partner may appear under protest denying that he is a partner, but this does not affect the plaintiff's rights against persons properly served (*h*). One partner may appear as "trading

to make his private property liable to execution. Even if he has appeared or admitted liability, it may be that he cannot be made personally liable, since the proviso in R S C, Ord 48A, r 8 (see title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, p 11), seems to exclude the operation of the rest of that rule.

(*f*) R S C, Ord 48A, r 5. A managing partner may authorise appearance being entered for all partners (*Tomlinson v Broadsmith*, [1896] 1 Q B 386, C A). If a married woman appears as sole defendant the writ should be amended by adding her name (*Re Handford (Frances) & Co, Ex parte Handford (Frances)*, [1899] 1 Q B 566, C A). The appearance must be entered for the individual partners by name, with the description "partners in the firm of," or "trading as," or "practising" or "carrying on business" in the firm name. An appearance by one partner describing himself as such is a sufficient appearance for the firm to prevent judgment from being signed in default against it (*Adam v Townend* (1885), 14 Q B D 103), and upon which to issue a summons for leave to sign judgment under R S C, Ord 14 (*Lysaght v Clark & Co*, [1891] 1 Q B 552), or a summons for directions under R S C, Ord 30. An infant partner must appear by a guardian *ad litem*, see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 140. Where more partners than one appear they need not appear by the same solicitor. Where the firm name is given incorrectly on the writ it may be corrected in the appearance. If there has been a dissolution of partnership since the accrual of the cause of action, the appearance may be entered for the persons who constituted the firm with the description "partners in the said firm of _____ at the time of the accrual of the alleged cause of action." If the dissolution has been caused by death since the accrual of the cause of action, an appearance cannot be entered for the executors of the deceased unless they have been added as parties, but it is otherwise where executors are carrying on the business of their testator and they are sued in the firm name. If an appearance is entered by one partner describing himself as trading in the firm name, the plaintiff is nevertheless entitled to apply under R S C, Ord 48A, r 1, for an order for disclosure of other partners' names, if any (*Munster v Cox* (1885), 10 App Cas 680, 682, 683).

(*g*) R S C, Ord 48A, r 6.

(*h*) *Ibid*, r 7. Where a person has been served as a partner (*ie*, simply served with the writ or with an added notice to that effect), he may, without leave, enter an appearance denying that he is a partner or that he was a partner at the time of the accrual of the cause of action. But such an appearance is not an appearance for the firm, and, in default of any proper appearance for the firm, judgment can be signed against the firm on any service other than that on the person, as a partner, who has appeared denying partnership. Therefore, if he was served as a partner and as the person having the control of the partnership business, judgment may be signed on the service upon him in the latter capacity, or the writ can be re-served on the controller, or manager, or a partner. The plaintiff may either issue a summons to amend the appearance on the ground that the person so appearing is, as a matter of fact, a partner, or wait till he has obtained judgment against the firm and then, if necessary for the purpose of enforcing it, apply to issue execution against him under R S C, Ord 48A, r 8, see title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, p 11. If he resorts to the former course the master may in a very clear case make an order amending the appearance or, if not, may direct an issue to be tried (*see ibid*). A person who appears under protest is not thereby precluded from applying to set aside the service of the writ upon him (*Mayer v Clarens* (1890), 7 T. L. R. 40). No appearance other than those mentioned above can be entered. The person served as having the control of the business cannot do so (see R S C, Ord 48A,

as A., B. & C.," and the proceedings may then be continued against him alone (i).

SECT. 3.
Legal Proceedings.

Notwithstanding the appearance by the partners in their individual names, the plaintiff may apply for discovery of the names and addresses of the persons who were partners when the cause of action arose (i). Any defence delivered must be a defence for the firm, not for the partners individually (k), though the partners may put in separate defences (l).

Discovery of names of partners.
Defence.

81 The above procedure is optional; and a plaintiff may, if he thinks fit, sue all the partners whom he seeks to make liable individually, but in such a case they must all be made defendants. If he sues some only of the partners the defendants can insist on the other partners being made parties if they are within the jurisdiction and can be found (m), but an active partner who has ordered goods may be sued alone and cannot plead the joint liability of a sleeping partner as a defence (n).

Action against individual partners.

82 In an action to enforce the joint liability of partners, an unsatisfied judgment against one of them is a bar to a future action against the others (a), but one or more of several partners who are jointly and severally liable may be sued without making them all defendants (b), notwithstanding an unsatisfied judgment against one of them for the same debt (c).

Unsatisfied judgment against one partner.

83. If all the partners are dead the legal personal representative of the last survivor may be sued in respect of a liability of

Action against personal representative.

r 6, unless he is, as a matter of fact, a partner. In *Robinson v Ward & Son* (1892), 36 Sol Jo 415, the court allowed a person, who claimed to be a partner, to enter an appearance and raise the defence that he was not a partner at the time of the accrual of the cause of action, and that the debt, therefore, was not his debt. There were special circumstances in this case, and it is conceived that it would not ordinarily be followed. As to the practice before R S C, Ord 48A, r 7, see *Davies & Co v André & Co* (1890), 24 Q B D 598, 606, 607, C A.

(i) R S C, Ord 48A, r 1. Where one partner, only, appeared as "trading as R & Co.," and the proceedings were continued and judgment obtained against him in that form, the plaintiff was not allowed to amend his judgment in order to issue execution against the firm (*Munster v Coe* (1885), 10 App Cas 680, affirming S C *sub nom* *Munster v Bailton & Co* (1883), 11 Q B D 435, C A), see note (f), p 44, *ante*, and note (h), p 46, *post*.

(k) *Ellis v Wadeson*, [1899] 1 Q B 714, 717. Even where one of two partners has died (*ibid*), at p 719).

(l) *Ibid*, at p 717. One partner is entitled to defend (*ibid*), and such defence is sufficient (*ibid*, *Taylor v Collier* (1882), 51 L J (CH) 853).

(m) *Robinson v Geisel*, [1894] 2 Q B 685, 687, C A. Whether he could sue only one, or whether he need join a sleeping partner as defendant, if his contract had been made with one partner only, and he had no knowledge of the partnership, see *De Mavor v Sanders* (1830), 1 B & Ad 398, *Mullett v Hook* (1827), Mood & M 88, overruling *Dubois v Lulent* (1814), 5 Taunt 609.

(n) *Ex parte Hodgkinson* (1815), 19 Ves 291; *Ex parte Norfolk* (1815), 19 Ves 454, *Re Starkies and Whiteside*, *Ex parte Chuck* (1832), 8 Bing 469.

(a) *King v Hoare* (1844), 13 M & W 494, *Kendall v Hamilton* (1879), 4 App Cas 504, and see title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, p 335.

(b) *Plumer v Gregory* (1874), L R 18 Eq 621: see p 34, *ante*.

(c) *Blyth v Fladgate*, *Morgan v Blyth*, *Smith v Blyth*, [1891] 1 Ch. 337, 353.

SECT 3
Legal Pro-
ceedings.

Discovery

Judgment
against a
firm.

the firm without making the legal personal representatives of the others defendants (*d*).

84. If partnership books contain entries relating only to the private affairs of a partner, he may claim to seal up such entries on producing the books in an action relating to the business of the firm (*e*).

85. Where a successful action is brought against a firm under the above procedure (*f*) the judgment is in form against the firm, and not against any partner individually (*g*), but it is in effect a judgment against all the partners (*h*). It will not, however, except as against partnership property, affect any partner out of the jurisdiction who has not appeared unless he has been individually served. The means of enforcing such a judgment are dealt with elsewhere (*i*).

(*d*) *Calder v Rutherford* (1822), 3 Brod & Bing 302, *Golding v Vaughan* (1782), 2 Chit 436, and see title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 308

(*e*) *Re Pickering, Pickering v Pickering* (1883), 25 Ch D 247, C A, and see title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol XI, pp 70, 71 and compare p 66, post

(*f*) See pp 42 *et seq*, ante

(*g*) *Jackson v Litchfield* (1882), 8 Q B D 474, C A. If one partner is an infant it is against the firm "other than —" (the infant partner) (*Lovell v Beauchamp*, [1894] A C 607)

(*h*) *Western National Bank of City of New York v Perez, Triana & Co*, [1891] 1 Q B 304, C A, *Re Handford (Frances) & Co, Ex parte Handford (Frances)*, [1899] 1 Q B 566, 570, *Clark v Cullen* (1882), 9 Q B D 355. It has been suggested that where one partner dies before action brought or between service of writ and judgment, judgment can only be obtained against the surviving partners and be enforced against them and the partnership assets, unless the legal personal representatives of the deceased partner are added as parties. Where all the partners die after service but before judgment, judgment cannot be entered at all (*Ellis v Wadeson*, [1899] 1 Q B 714, C A, *per ROMER, L J*, at pp 718, 719). Whether the action could be continued against the personal representatives depends upon the nature of the claim, see *Kirk v Todd* (1882), 21 Ch D 484, C A, *Ellis v Wadeson, supra*, at p 718. Where a firm is sued in its firm name, and an appearance is entered for only one person as though he were sole partner, the action should still go on against the firm in its firm name. In a case where this was not done, and the plaintiff took the subsequent proceedings against that partner individually, and judgment was signed against him, the plaintiff was not allowed to amend his judgment so as to make it a judgment against the firm in order to make another partner, whom he had since discovered, liable for the judgment debt (*Munster v Cox* (1885), 10 App Cas 680).

(*i*) See R S C, Ord 48A, r 8, and see titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 29, COUNTY COURTS, Vol VIII, pp 556, 557, EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp. 8, note (*c*), 10 11, p 45, ante. As to execution against a married woman partner and an infant partner, see title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, p 10, note (*k*), and see respectively, titles HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 417, 420, 456, INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 53, INTERPLEADER, Vol XVII, p. 589, note (*r*). As to bankruptcy proceedings against partners, see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II., pp 12, 13, 28, 61, 232, 238, 273. A petition in bankruptcy against a person trading individually who was in fact with another in partnership under his own name cannot support a receiving order against the other partner on the ground that service on the first partner is service on the firm (*Re A Debtor (No 3 of 1912), Ex parte The Debtor* (1912), 1 L J County Courts Reporter, 29). Executors carrying on testator's business cannot be adjudicated bankrupt as partners (*Re Fisher & Sons*, [1912] 2 K B 491).

PART IV.—RELATIONS BETWEEN PARTNERS AND THIRD PARTIES.

86. When a creditor sues and obtains judgment against some members of a firm, the matter passes into *res judicata*, and he cannot, in respect of the same matter, sue others who were not joined in the action (*k*). But a creditor who proves against the estate of a deceased partner, whom he believes to be the sole owner of a business, is not estopped from proceeding against a person, or the estate of a person, subsequently discovered to be a partner (*l*).

SECT. 3.
Local Proceedings.

Effect of judgment against a single part—

87 Debts owing to a firm may be attached although one or more partners may reside out of the jurisdiction, if the firm carries on business (*m*) within the jurisdiction and a partner or person having control or management (*n*) has been served within the jurisdiction with a garnishee order (*o*).

Garnishee order.

Part V.—Relations of Partners Inter se.

SECT 1—Good Faith Necessary.

88 Ordinary partnerships are by the law presumed to be based on the mutual trust and confidence of each partner, not only in the skill and knowledge, but also in the integrity, of every other partner. The utmost good faith is requisite in the relations between partners *inter se* (*p*).

Basis of relationship.

89 A partner must, accordingly, account to his firm for all benefit derived by him without the consent of his partners from all transactions concerning the partnership, and from the use of the property, name, or business connection of the partnership (*q*), including transactions after dissolution but before the complete winding up of the partnership (*a*). He must also account to his firm for the profits made by him in any business of the same nature as, and competing with, that of his firm, if he carries on any such business without the consent of his partners (*b*).

General duty to account for profit received

(*k*) *Kendall v Hamilton* (1879), 4 App Cas 504, see p. 45, *ante*, and title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, pp 335, 336

(*l*) *Re Hodgson, Beckett v Ramsdale* (1885), 31 Ch D 177, C A

(*m*) For cases illustrating the meaning of these words, see note (*b*), p 39, *ante*

(*n*) For cases illustrating the meaning of these words, see note (*t*), p 42, *ante*

(*o*) R. S. C. Ord 48A, r 9, Ord 45, r 1. As to garnishee proceedings generally, see title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp 90 *et seq*

(*p*) This principle is firmly established in equity. It is not expressly enunciated by the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), but is recognised and embodied in the provisions contained in *ibid*, ss 29, 30. The relationship of partners *inter se* is sometimes spoken of as "fiduciary," and in *Cassels v Stewart* (1881), 6 App Cas 64, Lord BLACKBURN, at p 79, said of a partner that it is "because he is an agent that the fiduciary character arises." The word "fiduciary" cannot, however, be applied to the partnership relation in a general or unqualified sense; see title EQUITY, Vol XIII, p. 156. and see *ibid*, note (*c*).

(*q*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 29 (1).

(*a*) *Ibid*, s 29 (2).

(*b*) *Ibid*, s 30. See *Dean v MacDowell* (1878), 8 Ch D 345, C A, compare *Burton v Wooley* (1822), Madd & G 367. *Gardner v. M'Cutcheon* (1842), 4 Beav. 534. *Somerville v. Mackay* (1810), 16 Ves. 382; *Lock v.*

SECT 1

Good Faith Necessary.

Rule against private profit

In the conduct of the firm's business a partner must not make any exclusive profit or private advantage for himself (c); but a partner may derive private benefit in matters entirely outside the scope of, and not in competition with, the business by the use of information acquired in the partnership business (d)

A partner must not place himself in a situation antagonistic to the interests of the firm (e) A managing partner should enter in the partnership books all money which he withdraws for his separate use, omission to do so or concealment of any such transaction may amount to fraud (f)

A covenant in a partnership agreement restraining competition between the partners will be enforced by the court (g).

Dealings between partners privately

90 One partner is not necessarily precluded by the fiduciary relationship from purchasing the share of another without the knowledge of the rest or from making, on his own account, a purchase, not being within the scope of, or in rivalry with or injurious to, the partnership (h)

Renewal of partnership lease

91 The renewal of a lease by one or more of the partners without the privity of the others enures for the benefit of all (i) The rule is the same when the intention to renew is communicated to the others if the latter are prompt to assert their rights (k), and

Innam (1854), 4 I Ch R 188, *Russell v Austwick* (1826), 1 Sim 52, *Miller v Maskay* (No 2) (1865), 34 Beav 295

(c) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 29 (1), compare *Fawcett v Whitehouse* (1829), 1 Russ & M 132, *Hichens v Congreve* (1828), 1 Russ & M 150

(d) *Aas v Benham*, [1891] 2 Ch 244, C A, and see p 47, *ante*

(e) *Burton v Wookey* (1822), Madd & G 367 (where the defendant obtained goods for the firm by bartering his own shop goods in exchange), *Beniley v Craven* (1853), 18 Beav 75, *Dunne v English* (1874), L R 18 Eq 524, but mere exposure to a temptation to be dishonest is not sufficient to justify the interference of the court (*Glassington v Thwaites* (1823), 1 Sim & St 124)

(f) *Re Hay, Ex parte Smith* (1821), Madd & G 2

(g) *Morris v Colman* (1812), 18 Ves 407, *Shackle v Baker* (1808), 14 Ves 468, see *Cooper v Page* (1876), 34 L T 90 (where one partner agreed to advance money to a third person on the terms that he should receive, by way of interest, a share of the profits of the business carried on by such person, held that this was a breach of a covenant "not to directly or indirectly engage in any other business"), and *Cooper v Watlington* (1784), 2 Chit 451 (where it was held, upon the construction of particular articles, that the right of one partner to retire, under the contract, from the particular trade carried on by the partnership, could not be exercised with a view to setting up a similar separate trade elsewhere) As to retirement, see p 85, *post* As to the method of enforcing such covenants, see titles INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, pp 242 *et seq*, SPECIFIC PERFORMANCE As to covenants in restraint of trade, see titles MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, pp 88 *et seq*, TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS

(h) *Cassels v Stewart* (1881), 6 App Cas 64, *Trimble v Goldberg*, [1906] A C 494, P C

(i) *Clegg v Fishwick* (1849), 1 Mac & G 294, *per Lord COTTENHAM*, L C, at p 298 "the old lease was the foundation of the new lease, the tenant-right of renewal arising out of the old lease giving the partners the benefit of this new lease"

(k) *Clegg v Edmondson* (1857), 8 De G M & G 787, C. A, *Re Biss, Biss v Biss*, [1903] 2 Ch 40, 61, and see title MINES, MINERALS, AND QUARRIES, Vol XX, pp 513, 514, where the considerations specially affecting mining property are referred to.

it is immaterial whether the term of the partnership is definite or indefinite, or whether the lessors would have refused to renew to the partners who are not privy to the renewal (*l*). The representatives of a deceased partner may have a right to share in the benefit of a renewed lease (*m*). If one partner declines to concur in taking a renewed lease of property where a branch of the firm's business is carried on, and the articles provide that the business shall be carried on at such place as the partners agree, no other partner can take a renewed lease in his own name and insist upon continuing such branch on account of the firm (*n*).

SECT 1.
Good Faith
Necessary.

SECT 2 — Management of Partnership Affairs

92 The management of a partnership business is in the hands of all the partners, each being entitled to act, in the absence of any provision to the contrary (*o*). All partners entitled to act

93 With respect to matters connected with the ordinary carrying on of the partnership business, disputes among the partners may, in the absence of any express provision for their settlement, be decided by a majority of the partners (*p*), but the majority must act in good faith and every partner must have the opportunity of being heard (*q*). Power of majority

A majority of partners, however, cannot change the nature of the partnership business, for this purpose the assent of all is required (*r*). Nor can a majority, when selling their own shares in the partnership, sell the shares of the dissentient partners (*a*). Limitation of power of majority

94 The diligence required of a partner may be limited by the articles to that part of the business which is conducted by him (*b*). Diligence required.

(*l*) *Featherstonhaugh v Fenwick* (1810), 17 Ves 298

(*m*) *Clements v Hall* (1858) 2 De G & J 173, 1 A

(*n*) *Clements v Norris* (1878), 8 Ch D 129, C A

(*o*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (5). The powers of management are co extensive unless it is otherwise agreed (*Donaldson v Williams* (1833), 1 Cr & M 345). The exclusion of a partner may be restrained by injunction see p 80 *post*.

(*p*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (8). The admission of a pupil or apprentice with a view to train him in the knowledge of the business falls within "ordinary matters connected with the partnership business" (*Higley v Walker* (1910), 26 T L R 685), and see p 52, *post*.

(*q*) "I call that the act of all, which is the act of the majority, provided all are consulted and the majority are acting *bonâ fide*, meeting, not for the purpose of negativing what anyone may have to offer, but for the purpose of negativing what, when they are met together, they may, after due consideration, think proper to negative" (*Const v Harris* (1824), Turn & R 496, *per* Lord ELDON, L C, at p 525). If there is any agreement by the majority, before hearing the minority, to override in any event the views of the latter, such conduct is not consistent with good faith (*Great Western Rail Co v Rushout* (1852), 5 De G & Sm 200, 310). On the other hand, the minority must not be merely obstructive, and may, after reasonable discussion, be closed, see *Wall v London and Northern Assets Corporation*, [1898] 2 Ch 469, C A.

(*r*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (8). *Natusch v Irving* (1824), 2 Coop temp Cott 358, *A-G v Great Northern Rail. Co* (1860), 1 Drew & Sm 154; and see pp 25 26, *ante*. What are the limits of deviation that will justify the interference of the court on behalf of a dissentient minority depends on the circumstances of each case, and the right to relief may be lost through laches or acquiescence (*Gregory v Patchett* (1864), 33 Beav 595).

(*a*) *Chapple v Cadell* (1822), Jac 537

(*b*) *Smith v Mules* (1852), 9 Hare, 556.

SECT. 2
Management of Partnership Affairs.

Right of access to books

Remuneration for management

Allowance to surviving partner for management
 Winding up

New partner admitted only by consent of all

95. In the absence of contrary agreement each partner is entitled to access to the partnership books, which must be kept at the place of business of the firm (c). On dissolution partnership books may, by agreement, become the exclusive property of one partner (d); but when one partner is bankrupt the court will not take the books from solvent partners (e).

96 A managing partner, like any other partner, is not entitled to remuneration unless there is a special agreement to that effect (f). Agreement and acquiescence under pressure have been held not to debar the reopening of an account in which remuneration has been sanctioned by partners to a person who stood in the position of trustee for them (g). Such an agreement may be inferred where all the partners agree to give their whole time and attention to the business and then permit one of their number to act exclusively (h).

A surviving partner who carries on the business profitably, retaining the capital of his deceased partner, is entitled to just allowances for management (i), unless he is himself the executor of the deceased partner (k), but allowance for management during the conduct of a business is not payable for *interim* management between dissolution and the sale and distribution of assets (l).

SECT. 3—Admission of Other Partners.

97 Subject to any agreement a new partner may not be introduced without the consent of all the existing partners (m). The terms on which he is admitted are therefore usually determined by express agreement (n). An attempt by one partner to introduce a

(c) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (9)

(d) *Langen v Simpson* (1824), 1 Sim & St 600

(e) *Re Coverdale, Ex parte Finch* (1832), 1 Deac & Ch 274. Nor will the court take the partnership books and accounts out of the possession of the former managing partner to enable a receiver to make out the bills, if such partner offers free access to them for all purposes (*Dacie v John* (1824), 13 Price, 446)

(f) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (6), *Hutcheson v Smith* (1842), 51 Eq R 117, *Thornton v Proctor* (1792), 1 Anst 94, *Robinson v Anderson* (1855), 20 Beav 98, *Holmes v Higgins* (1822), 1 B & C 74 (where a partner did work as a surveyor), compare *Whittle v McFarlane* (1830), 1 Knapp, 311, P C (where remuneration for collection of book debts due to a preceding partnership was not allowed)

(g) *Barrett v Hartley* (1866), 14 W R 684

(h) *Airey v Borham* (1861), 29 Beav 620, compare *Webster v Bray* (1849), 7 Hare, 159, where inequality of labour was contemplated from the beginning

(i) *Brown v De Tastet* (1821), Jac 284, *Re Aldridge, Aldridge v Aldridge*, [1894] 2 Ch 97

(k) *Burden v Burden* (1813), 1 Ves & B 170, *Stoken v Dawson* (1843), 6 Beav. 371

(l) *Tibbitts v Phillips* (1853), 10 Hare, 355, see *Harris v Sleep*, [1897] 2 Ch 80, C A., where a partner, who was appointed receiver and manager on dissolution, was, in his accounts, allowed premiums paid to a guarantee society as his surety, as well as remuneration for services which were outside the scope of his duties as receiver and manager, although he undertook to act without salary

(m) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (7). This is a fundamental principle of the law of partnership, see note to *Crawshaw v. Morda* (1818), 1 Swan 495, at pp 509 *et seq*, compare *Loosegrove v. Nelson* (1834), 3 My & K. 1, 20

(n) For a form, see *Encyclopedia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol IX., p 586.

new partner without consent amounts only to an assignment of a share in the partnership (e). It may create a sub-partnership between the newcomer and his introducer, but does not confer upon the newcomer the rights of a partner as against the original firm (a).

Power to
assign share
of partner

98. Frequently it is provided that a partner may nominate one or more persons to succeed to his share of the business at his death or retirement. Upon the exercise of such power the firm comes under an obligation to admit the nominee as a partner (b), but cannot compel him to become a partner (c). Even if one partner has covenanted with another that his nominee shall become a partner with the latter, the court will not specifically enforce the covenant against the nominee, and, if no provision has been made for the event of his refusal to become a partner, the partnership will be declared dissolved, but without prejudice to any right of action which the covenantee may have against the covenantor or his estate for breach of the covenant (d).

Power to
nominate a
partner

A person who has an option to enter a partnership must comply *modo et formâ* with the conditions of it (e). He must make his election within the time fixed (f) if no time is fixed the option is lost unless it is exercised within a reasonable time (g). Before making his election he is entitled to have a reasonable time for inspecting the affairs of the partnership, but not to have the accounts formally taken (h). A nominee, who has an option to enter a partnership contingent upon his attaining twenty-one, cannot prevent the dissolution of the partnership before that time by the mutual consent of the partners (i). Though the effect of the agreement between the partners may be to create a trust of the share in favour of the nominee (k), it is not an immediate trust, but one to arise at a future time, at any rate when the nominee's right is contingent, and will attach only upon the then existing assets (l).

Conditions of
entry must
be complied
with

(a) *Bray v Fromont* (1821), Madd & G 5

(a) The rights of an assignee are dealt with elsewhere, see p 57, *post*, see also p 111, *post*. As to the term of a sub partnership, see p 23, *ante*.

(b) *Byrne v Reid, supra*. With regard to the remedies of a rejected nominee, see *M'Neill v Reid* (1832), 9 Bing 68, *Byrne v Reid*, [1902] 2 Ch 735, C A. For forms of nomination of new partners, compare *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol IX, pp 586, 606.

(c) *Madgwick v Wemble* (1843), 6 Beav 495

(d) *Downs v. Collins* (1848), 6 Hare, 418; *Lancaster v. Allsup* (1887), 57 L T 53, see also *Kershaw v Matthews* (1826), 2 Russ 62

(e) See *Brooke v Garrod* (1857), 3 K. & J 608, *Watney v Trust* (1876), 45 L J (CH) 412

(f) *Holland v King* (1848), 6 C B 727, and, during that period, surviving partners must not do any act prejudicial to the value of the business, which, in the event of the option being declined, is directed to be sold (*Evans v. Hughes* (1854), 18 Jur 691 (changing the firm-style))

(g) *Vaneitart v. Osborne* (1871), 20 W R 195

(h) *Pigott v. Bagley* (1825), M'Cle. & Yo 569

(i) *Ehrmann v. Ehrmann* (1894), 72 L T 17. But when a person assigns his business to three persons as partners, on the terms that there shall be reserved a share of the profits for his nominee, who is to have the option of being admitted a partner on attaining twenty-one, the partnership cannot be prematurely dissolved without the consent of such person (*Althausen v. Borries* (1867), 15 W R 739).

(k) *Page v Cox* (1852), 10 Hare, 163.

(l) *Ehrmann v Ehrmann* (1894), 72 L T 17 (where the observations in

SECT 3
Admission
of Other
Partners.

A power to introduce two sons as pupils or clerks, with the option of becoming partners, does not extend to the introduction of a third son as pupil or clerk to succeed a son who has died without becoming a partner (*m*) Executors having a duty to nominate certain persons as partners, with power to exclude one of them, have the right to exclude him if they, without fraud, unite in doing so (*n*)

Entry subject
to terms of
partnership

An incoming partner is subject to the terms of the partnership, except as varied by express agreement (*o*), though he may not be bound by a special term of which he had no notice (*o*)

SECT 4 —Partnership Property and Property of Separate Partners.

General rule
as to use

99 Partnership property may only be used for partnership purposes, and in accordance with the partnership agreement (*p*)

What partner
ship property
includes

100 Partnership property includes all property, rights and interests originally brought into the partnership stock, or subsequently acquired, by purchase or otherwise (*q*), for, and substantially involved in, the purposes of the business (*r*)

Presumption
as to property
purchased
with partner
ship funds

The mere fact that the business is conducted on property belonging to one partner does not necessarily make the property involved in the partnership dealings so as to become partnership property (*s*) On the other hand, if the property has been purchased out of partnership assets and held as part of the partnership stock, it is immaterial that it has not been actually used for carrying on the partnership business upon it or by means of it (*a*) Thus, where the transaction is in substance the purchase of a mixed property, for example, a farm and the stock as a going concern (*b*), or a nursery-ground and the business carried on upon it (*c*), the property so acquired is partnership property

Re Flavell, Murray v Flavell (1883), 25 Ch D 89, C A, of COTTON, L J, at p 102, are questioned)

(*m*) *Watney v Trust* (1876), 45 L J (CH) 412 (where there was a provision restricting the employment of clerks and servants), and see note (*p*), p 49, *ante*

(*n*) *Wainwright v Waterman* (1791), 1 Ves 311

(*o*) *Austen v Boys* (1857), 24 Beav 598, 606

(*p*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 20 (1) As to the devolution of partnership property, see p 55, *post*

(*q*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 20 (1), and see *Waleier v Waleier* (1873), L R 15 Eq 402 Property given to some only of the partners to replace lost partnership property is not included (*Campbell v Mullett* (1819), 2 Swan 551)

(*r*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 20 (1)

(*s*) *Davis v Davis*, [1894] 1 Ch 393, 401 Where the property upon which the business is carried on is, and is declared by the partnership agreement to be, the property of one partner, and the agreement contains no provision as to the tenancy of the partnership, but only a general direction that "all rent" is to be paid out of yearly profits, the court infers that the partnership was intended to hold the property on a tenancy during the continuance of the partnership, and not on a tenancy from year to year or at will (*Pocock v Carter*, [1912] 1 Ch. 663); and see note (*t*), p 85, *post*

(*a*) *Murtagh v Costello* (1881), 7 L R Ir 428 "If the property purchased is substantially involved in the partnership business, it is to be held as purchased for partnership purposes" (*ibid*, at p 436)

(*b*) *Davies v Ganes* (1879), 12 Ch D 813

(*c*) *Waterer v Waterer*, *supra*

Property bought with money belonging to the partnership is partnership property unless a contrary intention appears (d) Such intention may appear from the circumstances in which property is purchased (e).

101 Persons may be partners in profits made by the use of land of which they are co-owners, though the land itself or their interest therein is not partnership property (f) Other land purchased out of such profits, to be used in like manner, does not become partnership property in the absence of agreement, but is held by the partners as co-owners for the same estate or interest as the original land (g)

102 Partners are not precluded from effectually transferring partnership property to one or more of themselves, and such transfer is valid not only as between the partners themselves, but as against the partnership creditors (h) But good faith is essential to the transfer (i), and it must have been completed if the agreement remains executory the property remains joint (k).

SECT. 4.
Partnership
Property
and
Property
of Separate
Partners.

Contrary
intention
Land as
partnership
property
Assignments
by partners
to one of
themselves

(d) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 21, *Tibbitts v Phillips* (1853), 10 Hare, 355, *Helmere v Smith* (1) (1887), 35 Ch D 436, C A, *Wray v Wray*, [1905] 2 Ch 349 It is immaterial that the purchase is made in the name of one partner only, if it is clear that he is not to hold it for himself alone (*Morris v Barnett* (1829), 3 Y & J 384)

(e) It cannot be laid down as a universal rule that when lands are bought by partners in trade, and are paid for out of the partnership assets, they, of necessity, become part of the joint estate of the partners (*Re Laurence, Ex parte McKenna, Bank of England Case* (1861), 3 De G F & J 645, C A, per TURNER, L J, at p 659) But when the property is not only paid for with partnership money, but also bought for partnership purposes, the presumption that it is partnership property becomes practically conclusive (*ibid*, and see *Smith v Smith* (1800), 5 Ves 189)

(f) See *dicta*, in *Crawshaw v Maule* (1818), 1 Swan 495, per Lord ELDON, L C, at pp 518, 523, see also p 6, *ante*

(g) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 20 (3), *Steward v Blakeway* (1869), 4 Ch App 603, affirming S C (1868) L R 6 Eq 479, *Davies v Games* (1879), 12 Ch D 813 "It is not the law that partners in business who are owners of the property by means of which the business is carried on are necessarily partners as regards that property" (*Davis v Davis*, [1894] 1 Ch 393, per NORTH, J, at p 401) But in *Morris v Barnett* (1829), 3 Y & J 384, though the original land was not partnership property, land afterwards bought and paid for out of profits was, in the circumstances, held to be partnership property If co owners of business property agree that such property shall be partnership assets, and the trade is carried on there, the mortgagee of the interest of one of the partners is put upon inquiry with regard to the agreement between them when he is aware that the property is used for partnership purposes (*Cavander v Bulleel* (1873), 9 Ch App 79, where the mortgagee was postponed to the lien of the other partner for the excess share of debts discharged by the latter, though incurred after the date of the mortgage)

(h) *Bolton v Puller* (1796), 1 Bos & P 539, *Ex parte Ruffin* (1801), 6 Ves 119, and see, further, title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 220, *Re Henderson and Morley, Ex parte Freeman* (1819), Buck, 471 As to the effect of the assignment of a lease, see title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, p 577

(i) See *Re Lightoller, Ex parte Peake* (1816), 1 Madd 346, *Re Walker, Ex parte Walker* (1862), 4 De G F & J 509, C A, compare *Re Edwards-Wood, Ex parte Mayou* (1865), 4 De G J & Sm 664, title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p. 220. See also title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 635

(k) *Eg*, if payment is to be guaranteed by a surety and he refuses to

SECT 4
Partnership
Property
and
Property
of Separate
Partners.

On death of
 a partner
 Transfer of
 separate
 property
 to firm

Similarly, if the personal representatives of a partner sell his share to the surviving partner or partners, relying simply on a covenant of indemnity against the partnership debts; or if, on the true construction of the partnership articles, they lose their right against the surviving partner or partners to have the partnership assets applied to the payment of the partnership liabilities, the joint property becomes the separate property of the surviving partner or partners (l)

Conversely, the separate property of one partner may be converted into the joint property of the firm (m), but the mere fact that the profits of the partnership are made by means of the separate property of one partner does not convert that property into joint property (n). If the owner of a business holds out to the world, as a partner, a person who has in fact no interest in such business, and

join in the transfer (*Re Mallam, Ex parte Wheeler* (1817), Buck, 25), in such circumstances notice of the retirement in the *Gazette* and in circulars to customers do not suffice to complete the transfer (*ibid*), see also *Re Johnston and Danston, Ex parte Cooper* (1840), 1 Mont D & De G 358, *Re Kemptner* (1869), L R 8 Eq 286, *Re Head, Ex parte Kemp* (1893), 10 Moir 76, *Re Wright, Ex parte Wood* (1879), 10 Ch D 554, C A.

(l) *Re Simpson* (1874), 9 Ch App 572. On the other hand, if the articles are merely intended to vest the partnership assets in the surviving partner subject to payment of the partnership debts, the assets which were joint assets at the death remain joint assets, available to the joint creditors (*Re White, Ex parte Morley* (1873), 8 Ch App 1026, followed in *Re White, Ex parte Dear* (1876), 1 Ch D 514, C A, and *Re Mellor, Ex parte Manchester Bank* (1879), 12 Ch D 917, affirmed *sub nom Re Mellor, Ex parte Butcher* (1880) 13 Ch D 465, C A), and the executors having paid, or become liable for, the partnership debts are entitled to be indemnified out of such assets (*Re Daniel, Ex parte Rowell* (1896), 75 L T 143), compare *Re Head, Ex parte Kemp, supra*. In these cases there is no question of "order and disposition," they depend on the nature of the agreement between the parties, see *Re Mellor, Ex parte Butcher, supra*.

(m) *Re Bowers, Ex parte Owen* (1851), 4 De G & Sm 351 (where one partner "B" was separate owner of stock-in-trade and furniture, and it was inferred and held by the court that the stock-in-trade had become joint property, subject to an account in which the firm would be debited in favour of "B" with the value of articles which belonged to him or for which he had paid. A different inference was drawn as to the furniture which was held to have remained the separate property of "B"), distinguish *Re Fear, Ex parte Hare* (1835), 2 Mont & A 478 (where the furniture had been treated by the partners as joint property). For the principle of these cases, see *Re Ashley, Ex parte Murlon* (1840), 1 Mont D & De G 252, per Sir GEORGE ROSE, at p 261. Where the owner of a mill and its machinery admitted two partners, and the value of the property was entered in the partnership books as the amount of his capital, and all additions and improvements during the partnership were made at the expense of the firm, the property was held to have become joint property (*Robinson v. Ashton, Ashton v Robinson* (1875), L R 20 Eq 25, compare *Pilling v Pilling* (1865), 3 De G J & Sm 162; and *Hills v Parker* (1861), 7 Jur. (N S) 333). So, if a patent belonging solely to one partner is "dedicated to the purposes of the partnership," it becomes joint property (*Kenny's Patent Button-Holing Co v Somervell and Lutwyche* (1878), 38 L. T. 878).

(n) *Burdon v Barkus* (1862), 4 De G F & J 42, C. A., distinguishing *Jackson v Jackson* (1804), 9 Ves 591, *Fromont v. Coupland* (1824), 2 Bing. 170, *Smith v Watson* (1824), 2 B & C 401; and see *Poole v Carter*, [1912] 1 Ch 663. With regard to a sleeping partner, see *Re Starkey, Ex parte Chuck* (1831), Mont 364, 373; *Re Starkey, Ex parte Jennings* (1830), Mont 45.

permits him to act as such, and the two are jointly adjudicated bankrupts, the owner is estopped from saying that the assets of the business are not joint property (o); but where the holding out is only to a very few creditors, and there is no holding out to the world, it may be that there is no partnership and consequently no joint property (p).

103. Partnership property cannot be taken in execution for a separate judgment against one partner (q).

SECT. 4.
Partnership
Property
and
Property
of Separate
Partners.
—
Execution.

SECT. 5.—Shares in Partnerships.

SUB-SECT. 1.—Nature of Shares

104 The share of a partner is his proportion of the joint assets after their realisation and conversion into money and after payment and discharge of the joint debts and liabilities (a). Such share includes sums advanced by either partner beyond his due proportion (b), and, therefore, separate creditors of a partner cannot be paid out of partnership assets until the claims of the other partners upon the partnership are satisfied (c). A share of partnership assets bequeathed to a surviving partner is not thereby relieved from its liability for the joint debts (d), and, as a surviving partner must pay the firm's debts out of the assets, he may consequently give security for such a debt upon partnership property (e).

Partner's
share is in
net
assets only

105 Equity recognises no right of survivorship as regards partnership property at law the same doctrine applies, but is subject to exceptions (f). So far as the right of survivorship in

Partners are
tenants in
common as
regards assets.

(o) *Re Rowland and Crankshaw* (1866), 1 Ch. App. 421, *Re Pulsford, Ex parte Hayman* (1878), 8 Ch. D. 11, C. A.

(p) *Re Wright, Ex parte Sheen* (1877), 6 Ch. D. 235, C. A., compare *Re Reay, Ex parte Arboun, Ex parte Gonne* (1846), De G. 359. As to "holding out," see p. 13, *ante*.

(q) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39), s. 23 (1). But a charging order may be made on the interest of a partner, subject to the right of the other partners to redeem the interest charged (*ibid.*, s. 23 (2), (3), see p. 59, *post*). With regard to a charging order to give effect to such a judgment, see p. 59, *post*, and title EXECUTION, Vol. XIV, p. 11.

(a) *Garbett v. Veale* (1843), 5 Q. B. 408, and see *Marshall v. Maclure* (1886), 10 App. Cas. 325, 334, P. C. Joint debts are payable primarily out of joint assets if sufficient, even though secured by a charge on the separate property of one partner (*Re Rutson, Rutson v. Rutson*, [1898] 1 Ch. 667, affirmed [1899] 1 Ch. 128, C. A.), although one of the persons entitled to share in the assets—e.g., an infant partner—may not be personally liable for the joint debts (*Lovell and Christmas v. Beauchamp*, [1894] A. C. 607), and see titles EXECUTION, Vol. XIV, p. 10, note (k), EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol. XIV, p. 289, INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol. XVII, p. 53.

(b) *West v. Skip* (1749), 1 Ves. Sen. 239, Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39), s. 39. On this point see p. 103, *post*, and as to a partner's right to an indemnity and lien, see pp. 60, 61, *post*.

(c) *Croft v. Pike* (1733), 3 P. Wms. 180. *Holderness v. Shackels* (1828), 8 B. & C. 612; *West v. Skip*, *supra*.

(d) *Farguhar v. Hadden* (1871), 7 Ch. App. 1.

(e) *Re Clough, Bradford Commercial Banking Co. v. Cure* (1885), 31 Ch. D. 324, *Re Bourne, Bourne v. Bourne*, [1906] 2 Ch. 427, 434, C. A.; and see p. 98, *post*.

(f) *Jus accrescendi inter mercatores locum non habet*. But see *Reilly v. Walsh* (1848), 11 I. Eq. R. 22. In *Buckley v. Buber* (1851), 6 Exch. 164, it was held that the interest of a deceased partner in the firm's

SECT 5
Shares in
Partnerships

Conversion
as regards
partnership
land

partnership property exists, it applies only to the legal title and not to the beneficial interest (g) The estate of a deceased partner is entitled—not specifically, but in value—to a share of the articles used for the purposes of the business (h), and, on his death, the value of his share is regarded as the price to be paid by the continuing firm (i)

106 Land which is partnership property is deemed to be converted into personal estate as between the partners (including the representatives of a deceased partner) and also as between the heirs of a deceased partner and his personal representatives (k), unless a contrary intention is expressed (l) It may be deemed to be reconverted in some circumstances, for example, after termination of the partnership (m)

chattels did not devolve upon the surviving partners, but this case has been disapproved of and is of doubtful authority, and see, further, titles DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 6, 7, EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, pp 221 222

(g) So the undivided property of a deceased or retiring partner must not be continued in the business without an express or implied agreement (*Craushay v Collins* (1808), 15 Ves 218) A surviving partner is a trustee only as regards the shares of his deceased partners, notwithstanding a conveyance to the partners "and their heirs for ever"

(h) *Stuart v Bute (Marquis)* (1813), 11 Ves 657, 665 *Bligh v Brent* (1837), 2 Y & C (ex) 268, *Ashworth v Munn* (1880), 15 Ch D 363, 369

(i) *Ewing v Ewing* (1882), 8 App Cas 822

(k) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 22, see *Re Wilson, Wilson v Holloway*, [1893] 2 Ch 340 The rule is based on the following cases—*Lake v Gibson* (1729), 1 Eq Cas Abr 290, *Murtagh v Costello* (1881), 7 L R 1r 428, *Gordon v Scott* (1858), 12 Moo P C C 1, *Morris v Kearsley* (1837), 2 Y & C (ex) 139, *Re Cooper, Cooper v Cooper* (1878), 26 W R 785, *Crawshaw v Maule* (1818), 1 Swan 495, *Phillips v Phillips* (1832), 1 My & K 649, *Holroyd v Holroyd* (1859) 28 L J (Ch) 902, *Jeffreys v Small* (1684), 1 Vern 217, *Lake v Craddock* (1732), 3 P Wms 158, *Elliot v Brown* (1791), 3 Swan 489, n, *Houghton v Houghton* (1841), 11 Sim 491, *Essex v Essex* (1855), 20 Beav 442 (where the partnership was continued beyond the agreed term), *Ripley v Waterworth* (1802), 7 Ves 425, *Baxter v Brown* (1845), 7 Man & G 198, *Darby v Darby* (1856), 3 Drew 495 and see titles DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, p 7, EQUITY, Vol XIII, p 39 This rule was well settled notwithstanding some decisions which appear either to conflict with the current of authority or to have been based on special circumstances (*Randall v Randall* (1835), 7 Sim 271, *Thornton v Dixon* (1791), 3 Bro C C 199, *Bell v Phyn* (1802), 7 Ves 453, *Cookson v Cookson* (1837), 8 Sim 529) Where land belonging to an incorporated voluntary society was taken for public purposes the proceeds were held to belong to the persons who were members of the society at the time of sale (*Brown v Dale* (1878), 9 Ch D 78) It was formerly held that real estate, although partnership property, if not purchased out of partnership funds for partnership purposes, was not to be deemed converted unless required for the purposes of paying debts after the expiration of the partnership, see *Cookson v Cookson*, *supra* It may be doubted whether this decision would have been the same after the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 22 The proceeds of sale of such land were held to be real estate within stat (1736) 9 Geo 2, c 36, repealed by the Mortmain and Charitable Uses Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 42) As to the liability of partnership land to death duty, see title ESTATE AND OTHER DEATH DUTIES, Vol XIII, p 308, *Ashworth v Munn*, *supra*

(l) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 22, *Balmain v Shore* (1804), 9 Ves 500

(m) *Myers v. Myers* (1889), 61 L T 757, *Rowley v Adams* (1844), 7 Beav 548

107 Partners may convert their joint property into the separate property of one or more of their number (*n*). A partner may have the right to work a patent, although he may not be entitled to a share in the patent itself (*o*)

SECT. 5.
Shares in
Partnership

Conversion
into separate
property.

Prima facie,
shares of
partners are
equal

SUB-SECT 2—Amount of Shares

108 Subject to any agreement, express or implied, the rule is that partners share equally in capital and profits and contribute equally towards losses, whether of capital or otherwise (*p*). The rule of equality may be negatived by the terms of the contract (*q*) or by the course of dealing (*a*)

SUB-SECT 3—Dealings by a Partner with his Share.

109 A partner may assign his share to a third person, absolutely or by way of security, but cannot make the assignee a partner (*b*). Recognition by the other partners may, however, confer the rights of a partner on an assignee (*c*), and a partnership may be so constituted that the assignment of a share places the assignee in the position of the transferor (*d*). A partner who has an unconditional right to transfer his share is relieved from liability by an actual assignment, of which notice is given to the other partners, although the assignee may be insolvent (*e*)

Effect of
assignment
of a partner's
share

Liability of
assignor

The assignee or mortgagee of a share takes subject to the rights of the other partners, and is affected by equities arising between the assignor and his partners after the date of the assignment (*f*). An assignee of a share is entitled to the share of profits found

Rights and
liabilities of
assignee.

(*n*) *Bolton v. Puller* (1796), 1 Bos. & P. 539, see p. 53, *ante*

(*o*) *Kenny's Patent Button Holeing Co v. Somervell and Lutwyche* (1878), 38 L. T. 878

(*p*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39), s. 24 (1), *Peacock v. Peacock* (1809), 16 Ves. 49, *Robinson v. Anderson* (1855), 7 De G. M. & G. 239, C.A., affirming S.C., 20 Beav. 98 (where separate solicitors acted for the same clients, and were jointly interested in the profits). *Robinson v. Anderson, supra*, shows that the rule is the same both in general partnerships and in partnerships limited to a particular business or adventure. See *Farrar v. Bekwick* (1836), 1 Mood & R. 527

(*q*) *Robley v. Brooke* (1833), 7 Bl. (N.S.) 90, H.L., *Warner v. Smith* (1863), 1 De G. J. & Sm. 337, C.A.

(*a*) *Stewart v. Forbes* (1849), 1 Mac. & G. 137

(*b*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39), s. 31 (1), *Bray v. Fromont* (1821), Madd. & G. 5

(*c*) *Jefferys v. Smith* (1826), 3 Russ. 158

(*d*) *Mayhew's Case* (1854), 5 De G. M. & G. 837, C.A., *Fox v. Clifton* (1832), 9 Bing. 115, *Pinkett v. Wright* (1842), 2 Hare, 120. As to the case of a limited partnership, see p. 111, *post*

(*e*) *Jefferys v. Smith, supra*

(*f*) *Cavander v. Bulteel* (1873), 9 Ch. App. 79, *Smith v. Parkes* (1852), 16 Beav. 115, *Kelly v. Hutton* (1868), 3 Ch. App. 703, *Dodson v. Dounay*, [1901] 2 Ch. 620. The right of an equitable mortgagee of partnership property is not varied by a subsequent dissolution of partnership between the mortgagors and the bankruptcy of the continuing partner, although there has been a substitution of a separate collateral security for a joint collateral security given before the dissolution (*Re Draper, Ex parte Booth* (1832), 1 L. J. (BCY) 81), see also title MORTGAGE, Vol. XVI, p. 96

SECT 8
Shares in
Partner-
ships.

due to his assignor (*g*), and must accept the accounts agreed by the partners (*h*). A purchaser of a share must indemnify his vendor against the partnership liabilities (*h*), and he cannot call for accounts nor inspect books while the business is a going concern (*i*); nor interfere in the management or administration of the business (*k*). But an assignee or mortgagee is entitled, on dissolution, to call for an account from the dissolution (*l*), and is not affected by any agreement or dealing between the partners with regard to the assigned share, subsequent to and with notice of the assignment (*m*), and a mortgagee of shares in a mining partnership is entitled to foreclosure (*n*).

Right of pre-
emption

110 A continuing partner's right of pre-emption, under the partnership contract, is recognised by the court as a right of great value and importance, and is enforceable, in proper cases, by injunction or specific performance (*o*). Such a right may lapse if not exercised with due diligence on notice (*p*).

Assignment
of share to
a partner.

111 An assignment of his interest by one partner to another, where there are only two partners, operates as a dissolution (*q*), but where there are more than two the point is doubtful (*r*). Known insolvency of the concern does not vitiate the sale of his share by one partner to the other if no fraud is intended (*s*).

One of several partners may purchase the share of another for his own benefit, and not for the benefit of the firm (*a*). A purchase,

(*g*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 31 (1), *Glyn v Hood* (1859), 1 Giff 328, *Cavander v Bulteel* (1873), 9 Ch App 79.

(*h*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 31 (1), *Bergmann v Macmillan* (1881), 17 Ch D 423.

(*i*) *Dodson v Downey*, [1901] 2 Ch 620, see *Mills v United Counties Bank, Ltd*, [1912] 1 Ch 231, C A.

(*k*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 31 (1). A *bond fide* agreement for payment of salaries to partners has been held to be binding on assignees, as part of "management and administration" (*Re Garwood's Trusts, Garwood v Paynter*, [1903] 1 Ch 236).

(*l*) *Watts v Driscoll*, [1901] 1 Ch 294, C A, but if there has been no dissolution the account will be taken from the date of issue of the writ in an action by the mortgagee to realise his security, see *Whetham v Davey* (1885), 30 Ch D 574.

(*m*) *Watts v Driscoll*, *supra*, see *Re Garwood's Trusts, Garwood v Paynter*, *supra*.

(*n*) *Redmayns v Forster* (1866), L R 2 Eq 467.

(*o*) *Homfray v Fothergill* (1866), L R 1 Eq 567, and see *Stewart v Stuart* (1823), 1 L J (o s) (Ch) 61.

(*p*) *Rowlands v Evans, Williams v Rowlands* (1861), 30 Beav 302, so also if the offer cannot be made as provided by the articles (*Chapple v Cadell* (1822), Jac 537).

(*q*) *Heath v Samson* (1832), 4 B & Ad 172.

(*r*) Having regard to the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c 39), s 31, see *Emanuel v Symon*, [1907] 1 K B 235, *Sturgeon Brothers v. Salmon* (1906), 22 T. L. R 584. If it be the correct view that such an assignment does not operate as, or give an absolute right to, dissolution, it is at all events a circumstance which the court may consider in determining the question.

(*s*) *Re Lightoller, Ex parte Peaks* (1816), 1 Madd. 348.

(*u*) *Gassels v. Stewart* (1881), 6 App Cas. 64.

by solvent partners, of a share of a partner under an execution will be set aside if there is any unfairness in their conduct in respect of the sale (b).

SECT. 4.
Shares in
Partnership
Property.

SUB-SECT 4—Charging Orders.

112 Execution cannot be levied against partnership property for the separate debt of a partner (c), but the court may make an order charging the share of a partner who is a judgment debtor (d).

Enforcement
of judgment
for separate
debts

The effect of a charging order is the same as if the partner had executed or signed a document charging his share with the debt (e). Such an order is valid although the indebted partner may be a lunatic (f), but if he is a bankrupt it does not take priority over the title of his trustee (g).

Effect of
charging
order.

113 When a charging order is made, the court may appoint, by the same or a subsequent order, a receiver (h) of the partner's share of profits and of any other money coming to him from the partnership (i). It may also direct such accounts and inquiries and give such orders and directions as it might have done if the partner had given a charge, or as the case may require (k), but this will only be done in special circumstances (l).

Receiver
and other
relief in aid
of charging
order.

114 The partners of a member of a firm whose interest has been charged may redeem it (m), or, if the court directs the sale

Rights of
other
partners

(b) *Perens v Johnson, Johnson v Perens* (1857), 3 Sm & G 419

(c) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 23 (1). As to the practice before this Act see *Eddie v Davidson* (1781), 2 Doug (K B) 650; *Helmore v Smith* (1) (1887), 35 Ch D 436, C A, *Brown, Janson & Co v Hutchinson & Co*, [1895] 1 Q B 737, C A, [1895] 2 Q B 126, C A; and see title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, p 11

(d) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 23 (2), see R S C, Ord 46, rr 1, 1A, 1B, Irish R S C, Ord 46, r 23, and County Court Rules, 1903, Ord 25, rr 12, 13, and see titles COUNTY COURTS, Vol VIII, p 556; EXECUTION, Vol XIV, p 11. This provision extended the operation of the law relating to charging orders contained in the Judgments Acts, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 110) and 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 82), see *Sutton v English and Colonial Produce Co*, [1902] 2 Ch 502 (shares held "in own right" for purposes of qualification or for charging order), *Howard v Sadler*, [1893] 1 Q B 1, *Gill v Continental Gas Co* (1872), L R 7 Exch 332, *Cooper v Griffin*, [1892] 1 Q B 740, C A, *Re Owen*, [1894] 3 Ch 220

(e) *Brown, Janson & Co v Hutchinson & Co*, [1895] 2 Q B 126, 131, C A, see Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), ss 23 (2), 31 (1), and see titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 273, EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp 107, 108

(f) *Re Seager Hunt*, [1900] 2 Ch 54, n, C A

(g) *Wild v Southwood*, [1897] 1 Q B 317

(h) See titles EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp 11, 118 *et seq*, RECEIVERS

(i) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 23 (2). As to the effect of the appointment of a receiver, see *Brown, Janson & Co v Hutchinson & Co*, [1895] 1 Q B 737, 740, C A

(k) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 23 (2). As to the rights of a chargee, see *ibid*, s 31; p 58, *ante*

(l) *Brown, Janson & Co v Hutchinson & Co*, [1895] 2 Q B 126, C A. An account will not as a rule be ordered during the continuance of the partnership (*ibid*)

(m) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39), s 23 (3).

SECT 5
Shares in
Partnerships

To what
payments or
liabilities
the right
extends

of a share, they may purchase it (n), or they may dissolve the partnership (o)

SECT 6 —Right to Indemnity.

115 Subject to any express or implied agreement, each partner is entitled to be indemnified by his firm out of its assets, or by way of contribution by his partners, in respect of payments made and personal liabilities incurred by him in the ordinary and proper conduct of the partnership business, or in or about anything necessarily done for the preservation of the firm's business or property (p). The right extends to expenditure for partnership purposes made with the express or implied consent of the other partners (q); and it is immaterial that the expenditure proves to be useless or unprofitable if it has been approved of or ratified by the firm (r).

Interest on
advances

Payments or advances made by a partner for partnership purposes beyond the capital he has agreed to subscribe carry interest at 5 per cent per annum from the date of payment or advance (s)

To what pay-
ments the
right does
not extend

116 This right of indemnity does not extend to joint transactions where no partnership subsists (t). Nor does it extend to sums

(n) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 23 (3), see *Perens v Johnson*, *Johnson v Perens* (1857) 3 Sm & G 419

(o) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 33 (2)

(p) *Ibid*, s 24 (2), *Wright v Hunter* (1801), 5 Ves 792, *Robinson's Executor's Case* (1856), 6 De G M & G 572, C A, *McOwen v Hunter* (1838) 1 Dr & Wal 347, *Evans v Leathard* (1824), 2 Bing 133, *Browne v Gibbins* (1726), 5 Bro Pail Cas 491, *Prole v Masterman* (1855), 21 Beav 61, *Denton v Rodie* (1813), 3 Camp 493, *Re Norwich Yarn Co*, *Ex parte Bignold* (1856), 22 Beav 143

(q) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (2), *Hamilton v Smith* (1859), 7 W R 173, *Gleadow v Hull Glass Co* (1849), 13 Jur 1020, *Matthews v Ruggles Brise*, [1911] 1 Ch 194 (where the estate of a deceased partner, who had taken an onerous lease as trustee for his firm, was held entitled to be indemnified by his partners against money paid under the covenants in the lease, although such lease (with the other partnership assets) had been assigned to a limited company which covenanted to indemnify the partners including the trustee of the deceased, against the partnership liabilities)

(r) *Cragg v Ford* (1842), 1 Y & C Ch Cas 280 (where loss occurred through delay by one partner in selling), *Re Court Grange Silver-lead Mining Co*, *Ex parte Sedgwick* (1856), 2 Jur (N S) 949 (where there was acquiescence in liabilities incurred by a managing director), *Burden v Burden* (1813), 1 Ves & B 170 (where an allowance was made to a surviving partner for expenses of carrying on the business for himself and the children of the deceased partner, but not for his management or time and labour) *Burden v Barkus* (1861), 3 Giff 412 (a case of outlay by the firm on property belonging exclusively to one partner), *Pawsey v Armstrong* (1881), 13 Ch D 698, 707, *Re Dundee Union Brewery Co*, *Croxtall's Case* (1852), 5 De G & Sm 432, *Re Protestant Assurance Association*, *Ex parte Lettis and Steel* (1857), 26 L J (CH) 455

(s) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (3), *Spartak v Constantinidi* (1872), 20 W R 823 (where interest was allowed to two partners on sums advanced by them in excess of their due proportion of capital, such sums being treated as a debt wrongfully withheld), see also S C (1872), 21 W R 116, title MONEY AND MONEY-LENDING, Vol XXI, pp 38, 42

(t) *Sedgwick v Daniell* (1857), 2 H & N 319, see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 472,

paid by a partner for which the partnership is not liable (a), nor to losses due to his own fraud or culpable negligence in the conduct of the partnership affairs (b) On the contrary, he must compensate or indemnify the partnership against such losses (c)

SECT. 6.
Right to
Indemnity.

Partners are not entitled to be credited, as against the trustee of a bankrupt partner, with sums which he had paid as agent for the partnership, before he became a partner (d) The principle, moreover, does not extend to private loans from one partner to another, but is confined to partnership transactions (e)

117 The liability of a partner to contribute for this purpose may be expressly limited (f), and a person, though liable as a partner to persons dealing with the firm, may be relieved from liability to contribute to partnership debts as between himself and his partners by the method of dealing adopted by the firm (g)

Contrary
agreement—
express or
implied

The right of contribution does not exist if the partnership is itself illegal (h), but if the partnership is not illegal, the fact that the act for which the firm is liable is unlawful does not prevent an innocent partner from obtaining contribution from the guilty partners (i)

Where
partnership
illegal

118 The right to indemnity may be lost by laches (k) or by agreement between the partners whereby the partnership effects are converted into the separate property of each (l)

Loss of right.

SECT. 7 — *Partner's Lien*

119 On dissolution of partnership, each partner can insist that the partnership property shall be applied in payment of the partnership debts and liabilities, and that the surplus assets shall be applied in payment of what may be due to the partners after deducting any sums in which they may be indebted to the firm (m)

Nature of
right

(a) *Re Webb* (1818), 2 Moore (C P), 500, *M'Heath v Marjelson* (1785), 4 Doug (K B) 278 Whether this rule is applicable to a debt barred by a Statute of Limitation does not appear to have been decided

(b) *Thomas v Atherton* (1878), 10 Ch D 185, C A

(c) *Bury v Allen* (1845), 1 Coll 589, *Robertson v Southgate* (1848), 6 Hare, 536

(d) *Smith v De Silva* (1776), 2 Cowp 469, as explained in *Holderness v Shackels* (1828), 8 B & C 612, per Lord TENTERDEN, (C J, at p 618

(e) *Ryall v Rolle* (1749), 1 Atk 165 "The partnership stock is no further subject to debts from one partner to another than is the money which has been applied to the partnership" (*ibid*, per LEE, C J, at p 181)

(f) *Gullan v Morrison* (1847), 1 De G & Sm 421, *Re Worcester Corn Exchange Co* (1853), 3 De G M & G 180 As to the principles of contribution generally, see titles CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 471, 472, GUARANTEE, Vol XV, pp 526 et seq

(g) *Geddes v Wallace* (1820), 2 Blf 270, H L, and see *Dale v Powell* (1911), 105 L T 291

(h) See p 17, ante

(i) *Campbell v Campbell* (1840), 7 Cl & Fin 166, H L, see also cases cited at p 18, ante There is no lien for contributed money between co-owners who are not partners (*Kay v Johnston* (1856), 21 Beav 536), *Re Coulson's Trusts*, *Prichard v Coulson* (1907), 97 L T 754, compare *Leigh v Deckeson* (1884), 15 Q B D 60, C A, see *Re Leslie*, *Leslie v French* (1883), 23 Ch D 552, 564

(k) *West v Skp* (1749), 1 Ves Sen 239

(l) *Holroyd v Griffiths* (1856), 3 Drew 428, *Langen v Simpson* (1824), 1 Sim & St 600, see also *Re Langmead's Trusts* (1855), 20 Beav 20

(m) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 39 *West v Skp*

SECT. 7

**Partner's
Lien.**

Against
whom right
is available.

120. This right is available, and may be enforced not only against the partnership assets and the other partners, but also against all persons claiming through them in respect of their interests as partners, for example, assignees, personal representatives, trustees in bankruptcy, or judgment creditors (*n*), except purchasers or pledgees of specific assets of the partnership who might reasonably suppose that all the partnership debts had been paid or barred by lapse of time, or who otherwise deal with the surviving or continuing partner in good faith (*o*). During the continuance of the partnership the right to indemnity constitutes a lien which attaches to all the property of the partnership for the time being, whatever may be its variations and changes (*p*), but after dissolution it is limited to the partnership property existing as such at the date of the dissolution, and does not extend to property added to or substituted for the old stock by those who continue the business after that date (*q*).

SECT. 8 — *Division of Profits and Incidence of Losses*

Equal shares
unless other-
wise agreed

121 In the absence of express or implied agreement to the contrary, partners share equally in the capital and profits (*r*) of the business (*s*). This presumption may be negatived either by express agreement or by implication (*t*), and such an implication may arise from the course of dealing by the partners (*u*), but the burden of

(1749), 1 Ves Sen 239, and see, further, title LIEN, Vol XIX, pp 18, 19. For the suggested analogous rule in the case of a company, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 168, note (*s*).

(*n*) *West v Ship* (1749), 1 Ves Sen 239, *Cavander v Bulteel* (1873), 9 Ch App 79 (mortgagee), *Stocken v Dawson* (1845), 9 Beav 239 (executors), *Holderness v Shackels* (1828), 8 B & C 612, 618, *Re Butterworth, Ex parte Plant* (1835), 4 Deac & Ch 160 (trustee in bankruptcy), *Skipp v Harwood* (1747), 2 Swan 586 (execution creditors).

(*o*) *Re Langmead's Trusts* (1855), 20 Beav 20. 7 De G M & G 353. "It is really what one may call a general lien upon the surplus assets and does not affect each particular property so as to interfere with the right of the surviving partner to deal with the separate properties belonging to the partnership for the purpose of realisation and to give a good title to persons dealing in good faith with him in respect of those properties," and for this purpose "no real distinction can be drawn between real estate held for partnership purposes and personal estate" (*Re Bourne, Bourne v Bourne*, [1906] 2 Ch 427, C A, per ROMER, L J, at pp 432, 433).

(*p*) *West v Ship*, *supra*, *Skipp v Harwood*, *supra*.

(*q*) *Payne v Hornby* (1858), 25 Beav 280, compare title LIEN, Vol XIX, pp 19, note (*i*), 32.

(*r*) "There is no single definition of the word 'profits' which will fit all cases" (*Bond v Barrow Hematite Steel Co*, [1902] 1 Ch 353, per FARWELL, J, at p 366). The rise in value of fixed plant or real estate belonging to a partnership is profit (*Robinson v Ashton, Ashton v Robinson* (1875), L R 20 Eq 25, per JESSEL, M R, at p 28). Upon the construction of particular articles profits have been held to mean profits actually realised (*Croker v Kreeft, Kreeft v Croker* (1865), 13 L T 136, see also *Badham v Williams* (1902), 86 L T 191).

(*s*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (1), see *Farrar v. Rowland* (1836), 1 Mood & R 527; *Peacock v. Peacock* (1809), 16 Ves 49, *Robinson v. Anderson* (1855), 7 De G M & G 239, C A; compare *Sharpe v Cummings* (1844), 2 Dow & L 504.

(*t*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (1). *Bell v Barnett* (1872), 21 W. R. 119.

(*u*) *Stewart v. Forbes* (1849), 1 Mac & G 137.

proof is on the partner who alleges inequality (*v*). Even where one partner does much more work than another the rule of equality applies, subject to a claim for allowances for his extra work (*w*).

All the partners are entitled to share in the profits made by any one or more of them from transactions arising out of the business (*x*); but the salary received by a partner in respect of an official position held by him is not *prima facie* to be treated as profits so as to be shared by the others (*a*).

Sect. 2.
Division of
profits
between
partners
of a
partnership
transactions
divisible

122 The right to claim a share of profits may be lost, for example, by laches (*b*), where the interest is executory (*c*); but mere laches does not divest a partner of an interest which is executed, unless it amounts to an agreement or licence (*d*) or abandonment of his rights (*e*).

Effect of
laches.

123 A partner continuing the business with partnership assets after dissolution must account for profits (*f*) up to the winding up of the concern (*g*), and surviving partners who carry on the business must account for the profits of the share of a deceased partner up to the time of the liquidation of the assets (*h*).

Profits made
after dis-
solution

In the absence of a contrary agreement the outgoing partner, or his representative if he is dead, has a statutory right to elect to charge the continuing partner either with the share of profits which the court may find to be attributable to his share of the assets, or at his option, to interest at 5 per cent per annum from the date of

(*v*) *Robinson v Anderson* (1855), 7 De G M & G 239, C A

(*w*) *Webster v Bray* (1849), 7 Hare, 159, *Robinson v Anderson*, *supra*

(*x*) *Hancock v Heaton* (1874), 30 L T 592, and see *Bentley v Craven* (1853), 18 Beav 75, Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 29, and see pp 8, 55, *ante*

(*a*) *Alston v Sims* (1855), 1 Jur (N s) 438, but it is otherwise when so treated by the partners themselves (*Collins v Jackson*, *Jackson v Collins* (1862), 31 Beav 645)

(*b*) *Prendergast v Turton* (1841), 1 Y & C Ch Cas 98, *Jones v North Vancouver Land and Improvement Co*, [1910] A C 317, 328, P C, and where there has been laches the mere assertion of rights, unaccompanied by any act to give effect to it, is not sufficient to preserve them (*Olegg v Edmondson* (1857), 8 De G M & G 787, C A). Recognition may, however, counterbalance laches (*Penny v Pickwick* (1852), 16 Beav 246, *Clements v Hall* (1858), 2 De G & J 173, C A)

(*c*) Especially where expenditure has taken place in a speculative undertaking (*Norway v Rowe* (1812), 19 Ves 144, *M'Lure v Ripley* (1850), 2 Mac. & G 274)

(*d*) *Clarke and Chapman v Hart* (1858), 6 H L Cas 633, *Rule v Jewell* (1881), 18 Ch D 660, distinguishing *Clarke and Chapman v Hart*, *supra*, and *Prendergast v Turton*, *supra*

(*e*) *Palmer v Moore*, [1900] A C 293, P C, see *Lake v. Craddock* (1732), 3 P Wms 158

(*f*) *Crawshaw v. Collins* (1826), 2 Russ 325, but he may have a claim for "just allowances" (*ibid*, at p 347), see p 100, *post*

(*g*) But not necessarily in the same proportions as those in which the shares were held (*Willeit v. Blanford* (1842), 1 Hare, 253, *Yates v Finn* (1860), 13 Ch. D 839).

(*h*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39), ss. 29 (2), 42, *Vyse v Foster* (1874), L R 7 H L 318; *Horderm v. Horderm*, [1910] A C 465, P. C.; compare *Croft v Pyke* (1733), 3 P. Wms. 180 (a case of a bankrupt partner),

SECT. 8.
Division of
Profits and
Incidence
of Losses

dissolution on the value of such share⁽ⁱ⁾ This right exists even where the continuing partner has, under the partnership contract, an option to buy the share of the other partner, unless the terms of such option have been complied with in all material respects But where this has been done the outgoing partner or his representative is not entitled to any further share of profits his rights are governed by the partnership contract^(k) Profits left in the business are not necessarily regarded as capital, for example, for the purpose of bearing interest, unless there is an agreement to this effect, or unless they are treated as capital in the partnership books^(l)

How losses
are borne

124 The incidence of losses is, in the absence of express or implied agreement, borne equally^(m) When the profits are not shared equally, the losses are, in the absence of agreement, to be borne in the same proportions as the profits are shared⁽ⁿ⁾, although additional capital may be contributed by one partner^(o) The liability of a partner to contribute to losses may be limited or excluded by express or implied agreement^(p), and will not necessarily be extended by the fact that the loss is mainly attributable to his acts^(q)

Rights of
deceased
partner's
legal personal
representa
tive

125 The methods adopted during a partnership with regard to what is capital and what is income have been held, upon the construction of a deceased partner's will, to govern the interest of a deceased partner during the continuance of the business by his trustees or executors^(r) Partners for a specific undertaking cannot compel the executor of a deceased partner to accept a valuation, he is entitled to a share of the profits found due on completion of the undertaking^(s)

When
interest
payable

126 Except as provided by statute^(t), interest between partners is not allowed, unless there is an express stipulation, or a particular course of dealing between the partners as shown by the partnership books, or a trade custom to the contrary^(u), but the

(i) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 42 (1)

(k) *Ibid*, s 42 (2)

(l) *Dinkum v Bradford* (1869), 5 Ch App 519, 524 compare *Wood v Seales* (1866), 1 Ch App 369 *Finney v Mutrie* (1856) 12 App Cas 160, *P C Straker v Wilson* (1871), 6 Ch App 503, 510, *Ibbotson v Flam* (1865), L R 1 Eq 188, *Pilsworth v Mosse* (1862), 14 1 Ch R 163, *Garwood v Garwood* (1911), 105 L T 231

(m) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (1)

(n) *Re Albion Life Assurance Society* (1880), 15 Ch D 79, affirmed, 16 Ch D 83, C A

(o) *Nowell v Nowell* (1869), L R 7 Eq 538

(p) *Geddes v Wallace* (1820), 2 Bl 270, 11 L . see pp 9, 22, *ante*

(q) *Gragg v Ford* (1842), 1 Y & C Ch Cas 280 and see the cases cited with regard to the right of a partner to indemnity, p 60, *ante*

(r) *Gow v Forster* (1884), 26 Ch D 672 For instance, the conventional periods of accounting should, in the absence of agreement, be observed (*Browne v Collins* (1871), L R 12 Eq 586)

(s) *McOlean v Kennard* (1874), 9 Ch App 336

(t) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (3), see p 60, *ante*

(u) *Rishton v Grissell* (1868), L R 5 Eq 326, *Hill v King* (1863), 3 De G J & Sm 418, *Rhodes v Rhodes* (1860), 6 Jur (N s) 600, *Stevens v Cook* (1859), 5 Jur (N s.) 1415, *Millar v Craig* (1843), 6 Beav 433, *Cooke v Benbow* (1865), 3 De G. J. & Sm 1, C A, *Boddam v Ryley* (1783), 1 Bro C C 239 (1785), 2 Bro C C 2, (1787) 4 Bro Parl Cas 561 In this last case no interest was allowed to the estate of a surviving partner who had kept

court allows interest on the restitution of money of the firm which has been expended or withheld by a partner, and of secret profits made by a partner in breach of good faith towards his partners (?)

SECT 8
Division of
Profits and
Incidence
of Losses.

SECT 9—Accounts

127 Each partner, or his legal personal representative, is entitled to full information in relation to the partnership affairs and to accounts of the partnership dealings and funds from his partners (a) If a partner on retiring has left his capital in the business, reserving a right of access to the books, and liberty to call in his capital upon breach of provisions which are intended to satisfy him as to the continued solvency of the firm, his legal personal representative is, it seems, entitled to accounts at his discretion (b)

Right of
partners
(1) to
accounts.

128 Each partner is entitled to have access to and inspection of and to take copies of the firm's books personally (c) or, subject to reasonable limitations, by his agent (d) Such partner or agent is

(2) to inspection of books and documents.

the accounts so badly that a considerable interval elapsed before the balances could be ascertained. Even if the articles provide for the payment of interest on capital, such interest will not be payable after the date of the dissolution unless so agreed (*Watney v Wells* (1867), 2 Ch App 250, *Barfield v Loughborough* (1872), 8 Ch App 1). Nor is a partner under such articles entitled to be credited with the amount of undivided profits as additional capital, and accordingly to receive interest thereon, unless they have been so treated in the partnership books or otherwise left in the business as capital by agreement (*Dinham v Bradford* (1869), 5 Ch App 519). Under articles which provide for payment of interest on capital and also for payment of interest (instead of profits) on the value of the share of a deceased or retiring partner as it stands on the last account, the estate of a deceased partner has been held to be entitled to interest on his capital, and also interest on the value of his share instead of profits (*Browning v Browning* (1862), 31 Beav 316).

(v) *Evans v Coventry* (1857), 8 De G M & G 835, C A, *Hart v Clarke* (1854), 6 De G M & G 232, 254, C A, *Fawcett v Whitehouse* (1829), 1 Russ & M 132, *York and North Midland Rail Co v Hudson* (1853), 16 Beav 485, 505, see also *Stanton v Carron Co* (1857), 24 Beav 346, 362. But where accounts have not been asked for, or only demanded at irregular intervals, the accounting party will not be charged with interest on balances retained in his hands in the absence of any wilful withholding, or falsification of the accounts, or other fraudulent dealing with the money (*Turner v Burkinshaw* (1867), 2 Ch App 488).

(a) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 28, see *Habershon v Blunt* (1847), 1 De G & Sm 121 (where the plaintiff's share and interest in the partnership were seized under a *fi fa*, and sold by the sheriff to a person, who sold to plaintiff's partner, held that plaintiff was entitled to an account, as there might be something coming to him which was not realizable by the sheriff).

(b) *Re Bennett, Jones v Bennett*, [1896] 1 Ch 778, C A.

(c) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), ss 24 (9), 28, *Walmsley v Walmsley* (1846), 3 Jo & Lat 556 (where the books were withheld, and the court allowed 10 per cent as profits), *Taylor v Rundell* (1841), 1 L & C Ch Cas 128, *Re Martindale, Ex parte Trueman* (1832), 1 Deac & Ch 464 (where the assignees of a bankrupt partner obtained inspection of books which remained the property of both partners after dissolution, though a release had been executed), and see *Re Burnand Ex parte Baker, Sutton & Co*, [1904] 2 K B 68, C A.

(d) *Bevan v. Webb*, [1901] 2 Ch 59, C A.

SECT 9
Accounts

Books as
evidence.

Order for
production

bound to abstain from making improper use of information so obtained (e), and items not connected with the partnership business may be sealed up (f)

The partnership books are evidence for and against any of the partners in the absence of proof of any fraudulent or erroneous omission or insertion of items (g)

129 Where a partnership action is pending, books in daily use are usually ordered to be produced at the place of business, but production may be ordered in court where a party cannot be trusted with the custody of the books (h). A defendant partner may obtain production and inspection of the partnership books and documents before delivery of defence if they are in the plaintiff's hands and he cannot prepare his defence without such inspection (i), but, on an interlocutory application by a party whose status as a partner is disputed, production of books may be refused (k).

SECT 10 — *Enforcement of Rights of Partners Inter se.*

SUB-SECT 1 — *Parties to Partnership Actions*

All partners
must
generally be
parties or
represented

130 In an action for dissolution of partnership it is a general rule that all the partners who are within the jurisdiction must be before the court (l), especially where questions affecting the right of the partners *inter se* (m), or the construction of the article

(c) *Trego v Hunt*, [1896] A C 7, 26, compare *Mutter v Eastern and Midlands Rail Co* (1888), 38 Ch D 92, C A. As to production by partner who have allowed an executor to place his accounts in the general books, see *Freeman v Fairlie* (1817), 3 Mer 24, 43. The best account possible without undue labour and expense, must be furnished. As to the sufficiency of answers to interrogatories with reference to books of account, see *Drake v Symes* (1859), John 647, and as to sufficiency of description of numerous documents for the purpose of production in an action for account, see *Christian v Taylor* (1841), 11 Sim 401, 405, and title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol XI, p 60 note (g).

(f) *Re Pickering*, *Pickering v Pickering* (1883), 25 Ch D 247, C A. See title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol XI, pp 70, 71, and compare p 46, *ante*.

(g) *Lodge v Prichard* (1853) 3 De G M & G 906, C A, and, for the general principle on which partnership books are evidence for and against all the partners, see *Hill v Manchester and Salford Waterworks Co* (1833) 2 Nev & M (K B) 573, *per DENMAN, C J*, at p 582, and see, generally, title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 561.

(h) *Mertens v Haigh* (1860), John 735.

(i) *Pickering v Rugby* (1812), 18 Ves 484. The application is now habitual, see title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol XI, p 60.

(k) *Turney v Bayley* (1864), 4 De G J & Sm 332, C A, see *Turney v Bayley* (1864), 34 Beav 105. As to accounts and their production in an action, see pp 70 *et seq. post*.

(l) *Hills v Nash* (1844), 1 Ph 594, *Ireton v Lewes* (1874), Cas temp Finch, 96, *Simpson v Chapman* (1853), 4 De G M & G 154, 167.

(m) *Long v Yonge* (1830), 2 Sim 369. Injunctions against breaches of the agreement between the partners, e.g. against competitive trading, are dealt with elsewhere, see pp 81, 83, *post*, see also title TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS.

of partnership (n), are raised. The legal personal representative of a deceased partner should be a party although the deceased partner's estate may be reputed to be insolvent(o); and generally, where there is a diversity of interest, all the partners should be parties to (p) or represented in the action (q)

Where, however, all the partners, or a section of them, have the same interest and are numerous, one or more may sue or be sued as representing the others similarly interested (r); and, generally, where an action is for the benefit of all the partners, that is, where there is a community of interest, all those having similar interests may be represented, either as plaintiffs or defendants, by one or more of their number (s), and, if the common interest seems open to doubt, the court may, it seems, give liberty to amend (t)

Where two persons engage in the purchase of a joint cargo, but keep separate accounts with respect to each moiety, one of them is not a necessary party to an action for an account concerning

SECT. 10.
Enforcement of Rights of Partners Inter se.

Where parties may be represented by others

Persons who are not necessary parties

(n) *Baldwin v Lawrence* (1824), 2 Sim & St 18, *Seddon v Connell* (1840) 10 Sim 58, *Cockburn v Thompson* (1809), 16 Ves 321

(o) *Coz v Stephens* (1863), 11 W R 929, compare *Seddon v Connell*, *supra*, *Madox v Jackson* (1747), 3 Atk 405

(p) *Evans v Stokes* (1836), 1 Keen, 24, *Harvey v Bignold* (1845), 8 Beav 343, *Van Sandau v Moore* (1826), 1 Russ 441

(q) *Attwood v Small* (1838), 6 Cl & Fin 232, *Cramer v Bird* (1808), 1 R 6 Eq 143

(r) R S C, Ord 16, r 9 This rule has been acted upon in an action for dissolution and winding up of the affairs of an unregistered (but not illegal) friendly society consisting of 439 members, see *Re Lead Co's Workmen's Fund Society*, *Lowe v Governor & Co for Smelting down Lead with Pat and Sea Coal*, [1904] 2 Ch 196, title FRIENDLY SOCIETIES, Vol XV, p 190, see also *Wood v McCarthy*, [1893] 1 Q B 775 (where the president and secretary of a labour protection league consisting of about 4,000 members were sued, and authorised, against their will, to defend on behalf of all the members), *Andrews v Salmon*, [1888] W N 102, and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 319

(s) *Cockburn v Thompson*, *supra*, *Hichens v Congreve* (1828), 4 Russ 562, *Small v Attwood* (1832), 1 You 407, compare *Bedford (Duke) v Illia*, [1901] A C 1

(t) *Bainbridge v Biston* (1840), 2 Beav 539 The cases under the old practice are not altogether uniform. A distinction was drawn between an action for an account after the partnership had come to an end (*Richardson v Hastings* (1844), 7 Beav 301, see *Duxbury v Isherwood* (1864), 10 L T 712), and an action for dissolution (*Deeks v Stanhope* (1844), 14 Sim 57), or such an action for an account as was, in effect, an action for dissolution (*Abraham v Hannay* (1843), 13 Sim 581, compare *Seddon v Connell*, *supra*, *Sibley v Minton* (1857), 27 L J (CH) 53). In the former case it was held that an action might be maintained by some partners on behalf of themselves and others; in the latter, it was held that all the partners, however numerous, were necessary parties. In *Beaumont v Meredith* (1814), 3 Ves & B 180, it was held that all the members of a benevolent society must be parties to an action by some members against the trustees for an account, and in *Leigh v Thomas* (1751), 2 Ves Sen 312, a demurrer was allowed to a bill by representatives of sixty-four out of eighty seamen (see also *Moffat v Farquharson* (1788), 2 Bro C C 338), while in *Good v Blewitt* (1807), 13 Ves 397, a bill by the captain of a ship on behalf of himself and the crew for an account of prize money was sustained, see also *Anon* (1722), Prec Ch 592, *Taylor v. Salmon* (1838), 4 My & Cr 134, *Wallworth v Holt* (1841), 4 My & Cr 619

SECT 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se

Effect of
assignment
of share

Purchase of
deceased
partner's
share

Mortgage of
deceased's
property to
firm

Enforcement
of debts after
dissolution

Illegal
adventure

Loss of rights
by conduct

the moiety of the other (a), and persons who have merely a contingent right to become partners should not be joined in an action for dissolution and accounts (b)

131 The assignee of a share in a partnership is not, during the continuance of the partnership, a necessary party to an action against the other partners for an account, but after the dissolution of the partnership he may become so (c). The legal personal representative of a deceased partner may sue for accounts though he has assigned all the intestate's beneficial interest (d).

Where the share of a deceased partner is purchased by the surviving partners under a provision in the articles and the purchase money is allowed to remain in the business, contrary to the trusts of his will, all the partners who have notice of the trusts must be made defendants to an action by the beneficiaries claiming profits made by the employment of that money in trade, and not merely such of them as are trustees (e).

Where a partner creates an equitable mortgage upon the real estate of himself and a third party in favour of his firm and dies intestate, the firm cannot enforce the security without making his legal personal representative a party to the action (f).

An action for a debt due to the partnership may, as a general rule, be brought by a surviving partner (g), and a surviving partner must be brought before the court in an action to enforce a partnership debt against the estate of his deceased partner (h).

132 The subscribers to an illegal adventure which has not been carried out may recover their subscriptions, but they have no right to an account of dealings and profits (i).

133 A partner may by his conduct lose the right to have all the other partners before the court (k).

(a) *Weymouth v Boyer* (1792), 1 Ves 416, see also *Brown v De Tastet* (1821), Jac 284 (where an account was ordered between a partner and a sub-partner without making the other two principal partners parties to the action, one of them being ignorant of the sub-partnership, and the other out of the jurisdiction).

(b) *Ehrmann v Ehrmann* (1894), 72 L T 17.

(c) See Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 31. In *Williams v Poole* (1873), 21 W R 252, an assignee, after dissolution, was held not to be a necessary party, being merely a "dry trustee" for a satisfied mortgagee. A sub-partner has no right to an account from the principal partnership, but only from the partner with whom he is a sub-partner, therefore the other partners are not necessary parties to an action against that partner, see *Re Slyth, Ex parte Barrow* (1815), 2 Rose, 252, 255, and note (a), *supra*.

(d) *Clegg v Fishwick* (1849), 1 Mac & G 294 (where it was held that the effect of an assignment by an administratrix was to constitute her a trustee for the assignee).

(e) *Vyse v Foster* (1874), L R 7 H L 318, 335, compare *Pointon v Pointon* (1871), L R 12 Eq 547.

(f) *Scholefield v Heafield* (1837), 7 Sim 667.

(g) *Haig v Gray* (1859), 3 De G & Sm 741.

(h) *Hills v M Roe* (1851), 9 Hare, 297 (where the surviving partner was ordered to attend before the master), see *Re Hodgson, Beckett v Ramsdale* (1885), 31 Ch D 177, 192, C A.

(i) *Harvey v Collett* (1846), 15 Sim 332, see p 18, *ante*.

(k) *Boden v Fungahar* (1822), 1 L J (o s) (Ch) 21.

SUB-SECT 2 — *Actions for Fraud or Misrepresentation*(1) *Inducing Partnership*

SECT. 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

134 Fraud in the inception of a partnership agreement is a ground for the rescission of the agreement (l), and the fact that the plaintiff could have discovered the truth, for example, by examination of the partnership books, is not necessarily a bar to relief (m). Nor is the fact that there cannot be *restitutio in integrum* after the firm, in which the interest has been acquired, has become insolvent, an objection to the grant of relief (n). In a question of rescission of his contract by a partner, on the ground of fraud or misrepresentation, there is no analogy, in the case of such insolvency, between the case of an ordinary partnership and that of an incorporated company (n). The action by a defrauded partner against his fraudulent partner may be framed alternatively for rescission or dissolution (o).

Fraud
 invalidates
 an agreement
 though
 capable of
 discovery

Misrepresentation without fraud is a sufficient ground for rescission, and the repayment of capital advanced (p) and premium paid (a).

Misrepresentation

135 On the rescission of a partnership agreement on the ground of fraud or misrepresentation the innocent partner has the following rights — (1) a lien on, or right of retention of, the surplus assets, after discharge of the partnership liabilities, for the money paid by him for his share and for any capital contributed by him, (2) a right of subrogation to the rights of the partnership creditors in respect of payments made by him to them, (3) a right to be indemnified by the guilty partner against the partnership debts and liabilities (b).

Rights of
 defrauded
 partner on
 rescission

(l) *Beck v Kantorowicz*, *Kantorowicz v Carter*, *Kalb v Kantorowicz* (1857), 3 K & J 230 (where one partner made a secret profit on the purchase of property for the partnership). But it is no defence to an action for damages for breach of an agreement to become a partner that the plaintiff has been guilty of fraud in another partnership (*Andrewes v Garstin* (1861), 10 C B (N s) 444). For such an action generally, see *Figes v Ouller* (1822), 3 Stark 139, *Walker v Harris* (1793), 1 Anst 245. As to setting up a Statute of Limitation by way of defence to a claim for rescission, see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, p 50.

(m) *Rawlins v Wickham*, *Wickham v Rawlins* (1858), 1 Giff 355, compare *Eddell v Smith* (1864), 12 W R 899 (where the plaintiff continued the partnership after discovery of misrepresentation), and *Redgrave v Hurd* (1881), 20 Ch D 1, C A (where the contract of sale was rescinded and the deposit returned, but no damages were given), and see cases cited in title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, p 743, note (d). As to the nature of relief generally, see *ibid*, pp 742 *et seq*.

(n) *Adam v Newbigging* (1888), 13 App Cas 308, per Lord WATSON, at p 322, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 131, and compare title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, pp 736, 737.

(o) *Bagot v Easton* (1877), 7 Ch D 1, C A.

(p) *Adam v Newbigging*, *supra*.

(q) *Jauncey v Knowles* (1859), 29 L J (CH) 95.

(b) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 41. These rights are "without prejudice to any other right of the innocent partner" (*ibid*). This provision merely declares the previous law, see *Mycock v Bealson* (1879), 13 Ch D 384, *Adam v Newbigging*, *supra*, affirming *S C* (1886), 34 Ch D 582, C A. On the question whether an indictment for obtaining money by false pretences will lie against a person who induces another by

SEC 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se

Liability of
defrauded
partner to
firm's
creditors

Instances of
fraud or mis-
representation
entitling to
rescission

A person who is induced by fraud or misrepresentation to become a partner is liable to the partnership creditors in respect of all dealings taking place while he remains a partner and, in the event of bankruptcy of the partner by whom he was defrauded, will be allowed to prove for a premium paid on entering the partnership in competition with the separate creditors of the bankrupt partner, but not in competition with the joint creditors of the firm (c).

(11) *On Sale of Shares*

136. The sale of the share of one partner to another, on the footing of a balance sheet prepared by the vendor's accountant and believed by both parties to be substantially correct, may be set aside on proof that the balance sheet was grossly inaccurate and placed too high a value on the assets (d). So a purchase of a partner's share, at an undervalue, by a partner who kept the books and knew and concealed from his partner the inadequacy of consideration, may be declared void and set aside (e). But this relief will not be given when there has been no fraud or oppression, especially after long delay (f).

A sale by the executors of a deceased partner to the surviving partners will be closely scrutinised by the court, but will be supported if no unfair advantage has been taken of the executors (g). If, however, the sale is at a gross undervalue, it will be set aside (h). A sale by the executors of a deceased partner to a surviving partner for the purpose of resale to one of the executors has been set aside (i).

SUB-SEC 3 — *Accounts*

Order for
accounts,
when made

137. In an action by a partner, or a person claiming through him, for dissolution and winding up of the affairs of the partnership, the accounts (k) are usually directed at the trial, but an order for accounts may be made at any stage of the action (l).

fraudulent representation to enter into partnership with him and advance money as capital, see *R v Watson* (1857), Dears & B 348, C C R, and, as to this offence, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 698, note (a).

(c) *Re Hooper, Ex parte Broome* (1811), 1 Rose, 69, as explained in *Bury v Allen* (1845), 1 Coll 589, 598, n, 607. Although as against the guilty partner he may have an equity to say that he never was a partner, it will be difficult to say so as against third parties" (*Re Hooper, Ex parte Broome, supra, per Lord Eldon, LC*, at p 71).

(d) *Charlesworth v Jennings* (1864), 34 Beav 96.

(e) *Maddeford v Austwick, Austwick v Maddeford* (1826), 1 Sim 89 affirmed (1833), 2 My & K 279.

(f) *Knight v Marjoribanks* (1848), 11 Beav 322, approved in *Melbourne Banking Corporation v Brougham* (1882), 7 App Cas 307, P C, *Le Lightoller, Ex parte Peake* (1816), 1 Madd 346.

(g) *Chambers v Howell* (1847), 11 Beav 6, *Hordern v Hordern*, [1910] A C 465, P C, and see title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, pp. 297, 298.

(h) *Rice v Gordon* (1848), 11 Beav 265.

(i) *Cool v Collingridge* (1823), Jac 607.

(k) As to the right to an account, see pp 65 *et seq*, *ante*, and p 74, *post*.

(l) *Turquand v Wilson* (1875), 1 Ch D 85, see now R S C, Ord 33, rr 2—5, and, generally, see *ibid*, Ord 15. As to the time limit in an action for an account, see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol. XIX, p 171.

138 The court will not, as a general rule, order an account of partnership dealings unless the plaintiff also claims dissolution or alleges that the partnership is dissolved (*m*). But an account may be ordered without a claim for dissolution in a proper case, where a sufficient reason is shown for departing from the usual rule, for example, where a partner is trying to exclude his partner from some secret benefit or from the partnership, or to force him to a dissolution, or where there is a refusal to account, or where a limited account will meet the necessity or justice of the case (*a*).

Sect. 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

When
accounts
ordered even
where dis-
solution not
specifically
claimed

In an action for administration of the estate of a deceased partner the ordinary direction for an account of debts includes equitable debts, and therefore includes a debt due by the estate of the deceased partner on his separate account with the partnership, and a surviving partner can claim such a debt as a creditor of the deceased and have it ascertained by the taking of a partnership account (*b*).

139 It is no objection to a claim for an account that the defendant partner has stolen or embezzled the partnership assets and has not been first prosecuted for the felony (*c*), or that taking the accounts involves the settlement of claims in the nature of unliquidated damages (*d*).

Circum-
stances
insufficient
to bar relief

The court will direct an account in England of the transactions of a partnership business carried on abroad, as to which settled accounts have been established in the foreign court to the jurisdiction of which it is subject, if it be shown that the English partner has not been a party to the foreign proceedings, so that they are, as to him, *res inter alios acta* (*e*).

Concurrent
remedy where
business
carried on
abroad

Although the court will not, as a rule, give its assistance to persons who carry on an illegal business, an account may be ordered against a defendant who asserts the illegality of the partnership (*f*). Thus, accounts of a bookmaking business have been ordered at the

Accounts
of illegal
business

(*m*) *Forman v Homfray* (1813), 2 Ves & B 329, *Knehell v White* (1836), 2 Y & C (EX) 15, 21, *Loscombe v Russell* (1830), 4 Sim 8, *Leyborne-Popham v Spencer Brown* (1893), 9 T L R 309, *Richards v Davies* (1831), 2 Russ & M 347, compare *Waters v Taylor* (1808) 15 Ves 10. With regard to actions for dissolution generally, and the circumstances in which such actions will be stayed, see pp 90 *et seq*, *post*.

(*a*) *Harrison v Armitage* (1819), 4 Madd 143 (where *Forman v Homfray*, *supra*, was distinguished), *Richardson v Hastings* (1844), 7 Beav 301 (where the suit was brought to recover moneys and assets of the partnership, of which two members had possessed themselves), *Bentley v Bates* (1840), 4 Y & C (EX) 182 (where it was said by Lord ABINGER, 'B, that joint owners of a colliery are in the position of mercantile partners for some purposes only, and that the rule requiring a dissolution to be claimed was meant to apply only to mercantile partnerships'), *Fairthorne v Weston* (1844), 3 Hare, 387, *Chapple v Cadell* (1822), Jac 536, *Wallworth v Holt* (1841), 4 My & Cr 619.

(*b*) *Paynter v Houston* (1817), 3 Mer 297, *Woolley v Gordon* (1829), Tambl 11.

(*c*) *Roope v D'Avigdor* (1883), 10 Q B D 412.

(*d*) *Bury v Allen* (1845), 1 Coll 589.

(*e*) *Maunder v Lloyd* (1862), 2 John & H 718 (in which case it appeared that all the assets of the English partner were in England, so that no payment out of them could have been enforced except by proceedings upon the foreign judgment), see also note (*h*), p 74, *post*.

(*f*) *Sheppard v Ozenford* (1855), 1 K & J 491.

SECT 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

Defences to
action for an
account

Reopening
settled
accounts

instance of an innocent partner who had not intended that the business should be carried on in an illegal manner by his partners (*g*)

140 The following may be good defences to a partner's action for an account denial of partnership (*h*), illegality, fraud, or forfeiture under a power contained in the articles (*i*), laches (*k*); a Statute of Limitation (*l*), account stated (*m*), award, release by deed, or payment and acceptance of money under an agreement amounting to an accord and satisfaction (*n*)

141 Though a settled account between the partners is a good ground of defence to an action for an account (*o*), the court may, in special circumstances, reopen the accounts or give liberty to surcharge and falsify (*p*) Settled accounts are not usually reopened *in toto*, except upon the ground of fraud, or numerous and important

(*g*) *Thwaites v Coullthwaite*, [1896] 1 Ch 496, *Harvey v Hart*, [1894] W N 72 (where betting was merely collateral to the partnership), but see *Thomas v Dey* (1908), 24 T L R 272, and the "highwaymen" case, *Everet v Williams* (1725), L R 20 Eq 230, n

(*h*) As to discovery where the partnership is denied, see R S C, Ord 31, rr 6, 20, Irish R S C, Ord 31, rr 6, 19, and see title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol XI, p 52

(*i*) *Hart v Clarke* (1854), 6 De G M & G 232, C A, affirmed *sub nom Clarke and Chapman v Hart* (1858), 6 H L Cas 633

(*k*) As to the effect of laches generally, see title EQUITY, Vol XIII, pp 168 *et seq*, and see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, pp 170, 172, 174

(*l*) *Bridges v Mitchell* (1726), Gilb (CH) 224, *Noyes v Crawley* (1878), 10 Ch D 31, *Tatam v Williams* (1844), 3 Hare, 347 An executor of a deceased partner may be barred by lapse of time (*Knox v Gye* (1872), L R 5 H L 656, *Taylor v Taylor* (1873), 28 L T 189, *Bejemann v Bejemann*, [1895] 2 Ch 474, C A) But where the surviving partners, being the executors of their deceased partner, kept his share in the business and did not supply full information and accounts to the persons beneficially interested under his will, an account was directed against them at the suit of the beneficiaries after the lapse of thirty years (*Wedderburn v Wedderburn* (1836), 2 Keen, 722, (1838) 4 My & Cr 41), and time will not run against the executors of a deceased partner so long as there are outstanding assets to be got in and the parties have dealt with one another upon the footing of the account being still open (*Millington v Holland* (1869), 18 W R 184) Time does not run as between partners while the partnership continues (*Barton v North Staffordshire Rail Co* (1888), 38 Ch D 458, *per* KAY, J, at p 463, see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX p 171)

(*m*) As to "account stated," see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 489 *et seq*

(*n*) *Brown v Perkins* (1842), 1 Hare, 564 As to accord and satisfaction generally, see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 441 *et seq*

(*o*) As to pleading a settled account, see *Davies v Davies* (1837), 2 Keen, 534

(*p*) A single important error is sufficient, if fraudulent, to justify an order to open the whole account If it is not fraudulent, the proper order is to give liberty to surcharge and falsify (*Gething v Keighley* (1878), 9 Ch D 507, 510) Accounts will be reopened on the ground of fraud in spite of the existence of a stringent agreement against reopening (*Oldaker v Lavender* (1833), 6 Sim 239, *Sim v Sim* (1861), 11 I Ch. R 310, 321) In *Barrow v Barrow* (1872), 27 L T 431, goodwill had not been accounted for, and the account was in that respect and otherwise not in accordance with the terms of the articles The mere fact that the claimant has already had an account rendered to him will not preclude him, in the absence of acquiescence, from having an account taken by the

SECT 10.
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

errors, or mistakes affecting the whole account (g), otherwise the court will not usually do more than give liberty to surcharge and falsify (†). In the absence of fraud, accounts are not reopened in favour of a party who has stood by and acquiesced in them (s), but acquiescence in the principle of keeping an account does not amount to acquiescence in the accuracy of the items (t).

Acquiescence
 Basis on
 which
 accounts
 framed

142 Accounts must be taken according to the uniform practice of the firm (a), even if contrary to the method prescribed by the partnership deed (b), and, in the absence of agreement, the burden of establishing a system different from the ordinary method lies on the party who would gain by the varied system (c). The executors of a deceased partner are entitled to have his share ascertained on the basis of a balance sheet as prescribed by the articles although such balance sheet has not in fact been made out at the time of his death (d).

A partner is bound by the debit items of an account furnished by him, although the court may not accept his items on the credit side (e).

The whole partnership assets must be included in the accounts (f).

court (*Irvine v Young* (1823) 1 Sim & St 333, *Clements v Bowes* (1853), 1 Drew 684, *Hunter v Belcher* (1863), 2 De G J & Sm 194, C A, and compare titles AGENCY, Vol I, p 188, MISTAKE, Vol XXI, p 32, MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, p 216).

(g) *McKellar v Wallace* (1853), 8 Moo P C C 378, *Pitt v Clay* (1843), 6 Beav 503, *Williamson v Barber* (1877), 9 Ch D 529, *Gething v Keighley* (1878), 9 Ch D 547, 550, see *Re Webb, Lambert v Still*, [1894] 1 Ch 73, 84, C A, compare *Maund v Allies* (1840), 5 Jur 860, *Laing v Campbell* (1865), 36 Beav 3.

(r) *Gething v Keighley, supra*. Where a valuation was held to be merely incidental to the carrying out of the purchase of a deceased partner's share by a surviving partner, as provided for in the articles, the court allowed the account to stand subject to correction on proof of error of a clear and convincing character (*Hordein v Hordein*, [1910] A C 465, P C).

(s) *Scott v Milne* (1841), 5 Beav 215, (1843), 7 Jur 709, *Cuthbert v Ladbrough* (1872), 21 W R 98, *Millar v Craig* (1843), 6 Beav 433.

(t) *Mosse v Salt* (1863), 32 Beav 269.

(a) *Binney v Mutrie* (1886), 12 App Cas 160, P C. *Oventry v Barclay* (1863), 33 Beav 1, affirmed (1864), 3 De G J & Sm 320. *Pettyt v Jansson* (1819), Madd & G 146. The court will gather the intention of the parties from the combined effect of the articles and the usual practice of the firm (*Simmons v Leonard* (1844), 3 Hare, 581, see also *Crosskill v Bower*, *Bower v Turner* (1863), 32 Beav 86, *Re Barber, Ex parte Barber* (1870), 5 Ch App 687, *Garwood v Garwood* (1911), 105 L T 231, C A).

(b) *Jackson v Sedgwick* (1818), 1 Swan 460, but see *Lawes v Lawes* (1878), 9 Ch D 98 (where a parol agreement to vary the time fixed by the articles for settling accounts was held not to have been intended to affect the money interests of the partners). In the absence of special agreement, the practice of making annual rests, so as to allow interest on the balances credited to the partners, will not be continued after dissolution (*Barfield v Loughborough* (1872), 8 Ch App 1, 7, and see title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, p 228).

(c) This principle was recognised where a surviving partner, who carried on the business, claimed compound interest (*Bate v Robins* (1863), 32 Beav 73).

(d) *Hunter v Dowling*, [1893] 3 Ch 212, C A, affirming *S C*, [1893] 1 Ch 391.

(e) *Morehouse v Newton* (1849), 3 De G & Sm 307.

(f) An unsaleable asset should be valued. For instance, in accounts taken upon dissolution an unassignable contract held by one partner on

SECT 10
Enforce
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se

Parties
entitled to
an account

143. Not only a partner himself, but his legal personal representative or trustee in bankruptcy, may have an account against the other partner or his legal personal representative, but an assignee or mortgagee of a partner's share has no right to an account from the other partners during the continuance of the partnership, although on dissolution he becomes entitled to an account from the date of the dissolution (*g*). In special circumstances strangers to the partnership are entitled to an account (*h*), and the persons beneficially interested in the estate of a deceased partner, whose executor, being also a partner, uses the testator's assets in the business, are entitled to accounts from the executor, but not from the other partners unless they have notice of a breach of trust by the executor (*i*). But, where surviving partners deal with the property of their deceased partner, knowing it to belong to his estate, they are fixed with notice of the trust on which it is held (*k*).

When action
for payment
lies

144 In a series of monthly accounts, in which the balances are not carried forward from one account to another, payment of the balance on the last account does not, it seems, bar an action for the payment of balances on preceding accounts (*l*), and when the partners, on dissolution, agree to divide the partnership property *in specie*, and one partner takes the whole according to a valuation, an

behalf of the firm must be retained by him and valued as an asset (*Ambler v Bolton* (1872), L R 14 Eq 427), and see p 63, *ante*, and p 103, *post*.

(*g*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 31.

(*h*) The following are instances in which this right has been recognised — *Law v Law* (1845), 2 Coll 41 (where residuary legatees obtained an account, the executors of a deceased partner having agreed to purchase the shares of the other partners), *Pointon v Pointon* (1871), L R 12 Eq 547, *Newland v Champion* (1748), 2 Coll 46, n (where a separate creditor of a deceased partner was plaintiff), *Millar v Craig* (1843), 6 Beav 433, *Cropper v Knapman* (1836), 2 Y & C (Ex) 338, *Maunder v Lloyd* (1862), 2 John & H 718, compare *Taylor v Taylor* (1873), 28 L T 189.

(*i*) In order to ascertain what profits were made from a breach of trust of this kind Lord ELDON, L C, ordered the executor to produce attested copies of books in the custody of the executor's partners or agents, who were not parties to the suit (*Freeman v Fairlie* (1817), 3 Mer 24, as explained in *MacDonald v Richardson*, *Richardson v Marten* (1858), 1 Giff 81, 87, and see *Hue v Richards* (1839), 2 Beav 305, *Vyse v Foster* (1872), L R 13 Eq 602).

(*k*) *Travis v Milne*, *Milne v Milne* (1851), 9 Hare, 141. In *Hue v Richards*, *supra*, the widow of a deceased partner who was beneficially interested under his will was held entitled to production of accounts from the testator's executors, one of whom was the surviving partner, and, generally, such an action may be maintained, whether the executor is a partner or not, "in all cases where the relation between the executors and the surviving partner is such as to present a substantial impediment to the prosecution by the executors of the rights of the parties interested in the estate against the surviving partners" (*Travis v Milne*, *Milne v. Milne*, *supra*, per TURNER, V C, at p 151, compare *Bennetfield v Baxter* (1886), 12 App. Cas. 167, P C; *Yeatman v Yeatman*, (1877), 7 Ch. D 210, commenting on *Bousher v Watkins* (1830), 1 Russ & M 277, and see *Davies v Davies* (1837), 2 Keen, 534, 539).

(*l*) *Brerly v. Cripps* (1836), 7 C & P 709. One account is in the circumstances as final as any other, *secus*, if they have been intended to form part of one general account, see *Fromont v. Coupland* (1824), 2 Bing 170.

action by the other partner for the amount payable to him may be maintained notwithstanding that the partnership accounts remain otherwise unadjusted (m).

SECT. 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

145. A surviving partner who is also executor of his deceased partner has a right of retainer in respect of an unascertained balance owing by his testator to the partnership (n).

Right of
retainer
Indebtedness
between
partners only.

146. Partners are not, as regards partnership dealings, considered as debtor and creditor *inter se* until the concern is wound up or until there is a binding settlement of the accounts (o). It follows that one partner has no right of action against another for the balance owing to him until after final settlement of the accounts (p); but a partner may have a right of action against another for a debt which is independent of the partnership accounts (q).

147. Dissolution and mutual settlement of accounts are sufficient consideration for an implied promise to pay the balance, and no express promise is necessary to support an action for the same (r).

Effect of
dissolution
and settle-
ment of
accounts
Payment into
court

148. When it can be shown by admissions or by a binding report, or at all events after judgment by a case of probability amounting to reasonable certainty, that a certain sum will be found due upon the taking of a partnership account, such sum may be ordered on motion to be paid into court (s), and money shown to have been

(m) *Jackson v Shepherd* (1834), 2 Cr & M 361. "There may be special bargains by which particular transactions are insulated and separated from the winding up of the concern and are taken out of the general law of partnership" (*ibid*), per BAYLEY, B, at p 366, compare *Coffee v Brian* (1825), 3 Bing 54, *Lomas v Bradshaw* (1850), 9 C B 620.

(n) *Re Morris's Estate, Morris v Morris* (1874), 10 Ch App 68, and see title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 258.

(o) *Richardson v Bank of England* (1838), 4 M & Cr 165, *Borill v. Hammond* (1827), 6 B & C 149, *Carr v Smith* (1843) 5 Q B 128, *Clark v Glennie* (1820), 3 Stark 10, and as to the authority of a partner, who is appointed to wind up the partnership affairs, to settle the necessary accounts, see *Luckie v Forsyth* (1846), 3 Jo & Lat 398.

(p) *Smith v Barrow* (1788), 2 Term Rep 476, *Fromont v Coupland* (1824), 2 Bing 170, *Prole v Masterman* (1855), 21 Beav 61, *Weston v Abrahams* (1869), 20 L T 586. As to the situs of such cause of action when the business has been carried on by partners resident in different jurisdictions, see *Luchmeechund v Mull* (1860), 3 L T 603, P C.

(q) *Simpson v Rackham* (1821), 5 Moo & P 612, *Worrall v Grayson* (1836), 1 M & W 166.

(r) *Rackstraw v Imber* (1861), Holt (N P), 368 (where the continuing partner sought unsuccessfully to attach conditions to his payment), *Moravia v Levy* (1786), 2 Term Rep 483, n (where, however, there was an express promise to pay), *Foster v Allanson* (1788), 2 Term Rep 479, 483, compare *Wray v Milestone* (1839), 5 M & W 21, and see, generally, title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 489 *et seq*.

(s) *London Syndicate v Lord* (1878), 8 Ch D 84, C A, per JESSEL, M R, at p 87; *Wanklyn v Wilson* (1887), 35 Ch D 180, *Nutter v Holland*, [1894] 3 Ch 408, C A, *Freeman v Cox* (1878), 8 Ch D 148 (where the defendant admitted that he had had the money of the firm in his hands), *Neville v Matthewman*, [1894] 3 Ch 345, C A; *Richardson v Bank of England*, *supra* (where the motion was refused on the ground that the defendant not only did not admit the accuracy of the accounts, but disputed

Sect 10
Enforce
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

Costs

In case of
misconduct

received by a partner improperly, or in breach of agreement or good faith, will be ordered to be paid into court (t)

149 The costs of taking accounts are, as a general rule, payable out of the partnership assets (u) But negligence or other misconduct by a partner renders him liable for the costs of an action as far as it has been occasioned thereby (a) If the partnership assets are not sufficient to pay the costs the partners must contribute in proportion to their shares after adjusting their rights in other respects (b), thus, partnership debts and liabilities, including debts and balances due to partners by the firm in respect of advances, take priority over the costs (c)

numerous items in it), *Re Beeney, Ffrench v Sproston*, [1894] 1 Ch 499 (which shows that the admission may be oral only), *Holth v Burton*, [1892] 3 Ch 226, C A (where an admission made in error was allowed to be withdrawn, but upon the terms of bringing money into court), *Gaskell v Chambers* (No 3) (1858), 26 Beav 360, *Creak v Capell* (1821), Madd & G 114 (motion on master's report after confirmation, but pending objections to it refused), compare *Toulmin v Copland* (1837), 3 Y & C (EX) 625, 643, and, generally, *Richardson v Bank of England* (1838), 4 My & Cr 165

(t) *Foster v Donald* (1820), 1 Jac & W 252, followed in *Birley v Kennedy* (1865), 6 New Rep 395, *Re Benson, Elletson v Pullers*, [1899] 1 Ch 39, *Costeker v Horrox* (1839), 3 Y & C (EX) 530, *Jervis v White* (1802), 6 Ves 738 Money received by a partner on account of the partnership is not money received in a fiduciary capacity, and a partner is not liable to attachment under the Debtors Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 62), s 4 (3), for disobeying an order to pay into court money in his hands belonging to the partnership (*Piddocke v Burt*, [1894] 1 Ch 343), see titles CONTEMPT OF COURT, ATTACHMENT, AND COMMITTAL, Vol VII, p 301. EQUITY, Vol XIII, p 156

(u) *Butcher v Pooler* (1883), 24 Ch D 273, C A "An order for payment of costs out of the assets is a discretionary order within R S C, Ord 55, and is not appealable" (*ibid*, per BOWEN, L J, at p 280), *Jones v Welch* (1855), 1 K & J 765, *Bonville v Bonville* (1865), 35 Beav 129, *Hamer v Giles, Giles v Hamer* (1879), 11 Ch D 942, *Austin v Jackson* (1879), 11 Ch D 942, n, *Newton v Taylor* (1874), L R 19 Eq 14 (where the accounts were settled under an award, in pursuance of an arbitration clause contained in the articles, and the costs were made payable out of the assets and in the same proportions as if the accounts had been taken by the court)

(a) *Hamer v Giles, Giles v Hamer, supra*, *Norton v Russell* (1875), L R 19 Eq 343 (where a defendant was ordered to pay costs up to hearing, he had admitted default in rendering accounts, but there was no allegation or denial that anything was due from him) In *Dean v MacDowell* (1878), 8 Ch D 345, C A, the plaintiffs obtained an account of alleged secret profits by a partner in another business, and by a supplemental bill claimed not only those profits, but the partner's whole interest in the business The first claim was dismissed without costs as the defendant's conduct had been blameworthy, but the second claim was dismissed with costs as wholly unfounded

(b) *Ross v White*, [1894] 3 Ch 326, C A

(c) *Roske v Crannis* (1890), 63 L T 272 (where funds had been voluntarily brought in after dissolution by a partner), *Potter v Jackson* (1880), 13 Ch. D 845 (where a balance was owing to a partner for rent of property occupied by the firm and for capital advanced by him), compare *Davy v Scarth*, [1906] 1 Ch 55 (where a partner, who had been appointed receiver, was held to be entitled to payment of his remuneration and costs in that capacity, although he was unable to pay a sum which he owed to his firm), and see Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 44 (b) (2)

SUB-SECT 4—*Receivers*

SECT. 10.

Enforcement of Rights of Partners Inter se

150 The court has jurisdiction to appoint a receiver (*d*) whenever it is just and convenient (*e*), on the application of any partner, whether plaintiff or defendant (*f*), or of other persons interested in the preservation of the partnership assets, such as the legal personal representatives of a deceased partner (*g*), especially where the surviving partner fails to get in the assets (*h*). The jurisdiction may be exercised although an agreement for reference to arbitration exists (*i*)

Jurisdiction to appoint receiver

151 The court will not usually appoint a receiver on interlocutory motion before the trial of an action in which substantial issues are raised, but it will do so if the property is in danger (*k*), or if the partnership has been or is about to be dissolved, or if satisfied that special grounds, for example, misconduct, for such appointment exist (*l*)

Appointment where dissolution inevitable or special grounds shown

Danger to the property is always a ground for the appointment (*m*). Thus the court will appoint a receiver, although the partnership is not dissolved, where a partner is guilty of such breaches of his duty as a partner as would, if proved at the hearing, entitle his partner to a dissolution (*n*), or of embezzling the assets (*o*),

Circumstances which justify appointment —
(1) misconduct,

(*d*) As to receivers and the appointment of receivers generally, see title RECEIVERS, compare titles COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 376 *et seq*, MORRIS, Vol XXI, pp 261 *et seq*

(*e*) Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), s 25 (8), see Lindley, Law of Partnership, 8th ed, pp 610—623

(*f*) *Katsch v Schenck* (1849), 13 Jur 608

(*g*) *Davis v Amer* (1854), 3 Drew 64

(*h*) *Estwick v Coningsby* (1683), 1 Vern 118

(*i*) *Machin v Bennett*, [1900] W N 146, see also *Pini v Roncoroni*, [1892] 1 Ch 633, *Law v Garrett* (1878), 8 Ch D 26, (*C A*), *Plews v Baker* (1872), L R 16 Eq 564, and see title ARBITRATION, Vol I, p 454

(*k*) *Bowker v Henry* (1862), 6 L T 43, *Fairburn v Pearson* (1850), 2 Mac & G 144 (where an issue was directed whether the partnership had been dissolved or not), (*Chapman v Beach* (1821), 1 Jac & W 504 (where the existence of a partnership was denied)

(*l*) *Smith v Jeyes* (1841), 4 Beav 503, *Waters v Taylor* (1808), 15 Ves 10, 28, *Roberts v Eberhardt* (1853), Kay, 148, *Goodman v Whitcomb* (1820), 1 Jac & W 589, *Baxter v West* (1858), 28 L J (CH) 169 (where a receiver was refused as it was not clear that the partnership might not still subsist), *Carlen v Drury* (1812), 1 Ves & B 154. Dissolution *per se* was not formerly considered sufficient ground for the appointment of a receiver without some breach of duty (*Harding v Glover* (1810), 18 Ves 281), but this view is scarcely consistent with recent cases, which seem to show that, in the case of a dissolved partnership, the appointment of a receiver is almost of course. In *Const v Harris* (1824), Turn & R 496, a receiver was appointed, with limited duties, to carry out a previous arrangement between the partners, and in *Hall v Hall* (1850), 3 Mac & G 79, Lord BRUCE, L C, at p 90, said, of *Const v Harris*, *supra*, that it was a peculiar case. The receiver there had a simple duty to perform, which might be considered purely ministerial. He was to receive the entrance moneys of a theatre and apply them according to the previous arrangement between the parties till the hearing of the cause.

(*m*) *Evans v Coventry* (1854), 5 De G M & G 911, C A, reversing S C, 3 Drew 75, compare *Sheppard v Orenford* (1855), 1 K & J 491

(*n*) *Smith v Jeyes*, *supra*

(*o*) *Oliver v Hamilton* (1794), 2 Anst 453

SECT 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

(2) danger
to asset,

(d) where
all partners
dead.

Limits of
jurisdiction

A partner
may be
appointed

Nature of
right of
partner to be
appointed

or of excluding his partner (*p*), or where a surviving partner insists on continuing the business with the assets of the deceased partner (*q*), or fails to get in the outstanding debts, or otherwise acts to the prejudice of the assets (*a*), or where an acting partner claims the whole property for himself (*b*), or where a new firm, being interested in giving long credit to the debtors of the old firm, forbears to press them (*c*) On the other hand, in the absence of misconduct or danger to the assets, a receiver will not be appointed unless dissolution is inevitable (*d*)

The court will readily appoint a receiver where all the partners are dead, as there is not the same mutual confidence between the personal representatives of partners as between the partners themselves (*e*)

152 The court will not appoint a receiver for a purpose, neither authorised nor assented to by the partners, which it could not authorise one partner to carry out against the will of the others (*f*)

153 The order frequently gives liberty to each partner to propose himself as receiver (*g*) A solvent partner will ordinarily be appointed receiver for the purpose of winding up the affairs of the firm where the others are bankrupt and there is no reason for distrusting him (*h*) But the court will direct him to give security, furnish accounts, and allow access to and inspection of the partnership books by the trustee in bankruptcy, and may order him to pay balances in excess of a stated amount into court or into a joint banking account of himself and the trustee This right of the solvent partner to wind up the affairs of the partnership is a personal

(*p*) *Wilson v Greenwood* (1818), 1 Swan 471, *Blakeney v Dufaur* (1851), 15 Beav 40

(*q*) *Madgwick v Wimble* (1843), 6 Beav 495

(*a*) *Estwick v Conningsby* (1882), 1 Vern 118, and see *Young v Bucket* (1882), 30 W R 511

(*b*) *Hale v Hale* (1841), 4 Beav 369 In an action for an injunction to restrain the defendant from drawing out of partnership funds more than the stipulated amount, and for a receiver, a receiver was appointed, pending a reference to arbitration, although there was no claim for dissolution of partnership (*Medwin v Dutcham* (1882), 47 L T 250)

(*c*) *Collinridge v Cook* (1837), 1 Jur 771

(*d*) *Lawson v Morgan* (1815), 1 Price, 303, a manager may, however, be appointed (*Tippetts v Phillips* (1853), 1 W R 163) In a mining partnership a receiver has been refused against a tenant in common, where the plaintiff had stood by and the mine proved profitable, and the defendant had incurred expenditure (*Norway v Rowe* (1812), 19 Ves 144, and see title MINES, MINERALS, AND QUARRIES, Vol XX, pp 513, 5 4), and against a partner who was also an unsatisfied mortgagee (*Rowe v Wood* (1822), 2 Jac & W 553) Mere disagreement and want of co-operation between the partners is not sufficient ground for the appointment of a receiver (*Roberts v. Eberhardt* (1853), Kay, 148), compare *Jefferys v Smith* (1820), 1 Jac & W 298, and see, generally, title MINES, MINERALS, AND QUARRIES, Vol XX, pp 511 *et seq*

(*e*) *Phillips v Atkinson* (1787), 2 Bro C C 272.

(*f*) *Niemann v Niemann* (1889), 43 Ch D 198, 202, C. A.

(*g*) *Blakeney v Dufaur* (1851), 15 Beav 40, compare *Pind v Boncorons*, [1892] 1 Ch 633, 637, *Sargant v Read* (1876), 1 Ch. D 600, 1 Seton, Judgments and Orders, 6th ed., p. 760

(*h*) *Re Upperton, Ex parte Stoveld* (1823), 1 Gl. & J 303, *Collins v Barker*, [1893] 1 Ch 578.

right, belonging to him in his character of partner, and cannot be transferred to a stranger, therefore the court will appoint a receiver on the application of the trustee of the bankrupt partner as against the purchaser of a solvent partner's share (i). A retired partner who is liable for the debts of the firm may be appointed receiver (k).

SECT. 10.
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

154 A receiver and manager, carrying on the business pending sale, may enter into such new contracts as are necessary for carrying on the business in the mode usual in the particular trade (l). A receiver is not the agent of the partnership, but acts on his own responsibility, and incurs personal liability for orders given and contracts made by him, subject to a right of indemnity out of the assets in respect of all proper transactions (m). Against the partners personally, however, a receiver appointed by the court has no right of indemnity (n).

Powers of
receiver and
manager

Liability of
receiver

Interference with a receiver is a contempt of court (o), and may be restrained by injunction (p) or punished by committal (q).

Interference
with receiver

There is no fixed rule with regard to the amount of remuneration of a receiver and manager, each case depends on its own circumstances (r). A partner appointed receiver with remuneration is entitled to be paid although he may be indebted to the firm (s).

Remuneration
of receiver

In the absence of an express covenant, a receiver and manager who is *junctus officio* will not be restrained from carrying on a similar business on his own account (t).

Receiver not
restrained
from
subsequent
competition

(i) *Fraser v Kershaw* (1850), 2 K & J 496

(k) *Hoffman v Duncan* (1853), 18 Jur 69

(l) *Taylor v Neate* (1888), 39 Ch D 538, 543 (where, however, a limit for the amount of such contracts was fixed which the receiver might not exceed without the consent of the partners or the court). It is not unusual to limit a period during which a receiver and manager may act as manager, with liberty to apply to the court on the expiration of that period, see 1 Seton, Judgments and Orders, 6th ed., pp 756, 757.

(m) *Burt, Boulton and Hayward v Bull*, [1895] 1 Q B 276, C A, *Boehm v Goodall*, [1911] 1 Ch 155, compare title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 379.

(n) *Boehm v Goodall*, *supra*. As to the effect of payments by a receiver so far as Statutes of Limitation are concerned see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX p 79.

(o) *Freeland v Stansfeld* (1854), 2 Sm & G 479, *Helmore v Smith* (2) (1886), 35 Ch D 449, C A (where a former clerk sent a circular soliciting business to customers of the firm), *King v Dopson* (1911), 56 Sol Jo 51 (where circulars were issued to the effect that the original undertaking was no longer carried on, and see title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, p 250). Judgment creditors should not levy execution against property of which a receiver has been appointed without the leave of the court (*Lane v Sterne* (1862), 3 Giff 629, *Defries v Creed* (1865), 13 W R 632). In a proper case the court will give liberty to the receiver to pay the judgment debt (*Mitchell v Weise, Ex parte Friedheim*, [1892] W. N 139) or give the applicants a charging order on the assets (*Armstrong v Paris* (1888), 4 L R 247, and see title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, p 11).

(p) *Dixon v Dixon*, [1904] 1 Ch 161, compare *Kilcat v Sharp* (1882),

(q) *King v Dopson*, *supra*. For procedure for committal, see title CONTEMPT OF COURT, ATTACHMENT, AND COMMITTAL, Vol VII, pp 309 *et seq*.

(r) *Prior v Bagster* (1887), 57 L T 760, *Day v Croft* (1840), 2 Beav 488, *Harra v Sleep*, [1897] 2 Ch 80, see title RECEIVERS.

(s) *Davy v Scarth*, [1906] 1 Ch 55.

(t) *Re Irish, Irish v Irish* (1889), 40 Ch D 49.

SECT 10

Enforcement of Rights of Partners Inter se

Jurisdiction to grant injunction

Position of partner claiming injunction

Claim for dissolution, when necessary

Exclusion of partner

Grounds for relief

SUB SECT 5—Injunctions

(1) In a Going Concern

155 The court may grant an injunction whenever it appears just or convenient (a), and will do so, at the instance of a partner, to restrain any other partner from acting contrary to the obligations imposed upon him by the partnership relationship, whether such acts are an actual breach of express stipulations or a breach of that good faith which is the implied duty of every partner

156 The plaintiff who claims an injunction against excluding him from the partnership must be a partner and not a servant of the firm (b), and must be in a position to perform his own part of the partnership contract (c)

157 In the case of a partnership for a fixed term (d) it is not necessary that a partner who claims an injunction should also claim a dissolution (e), but, as a general rule, an interlocutory injunction is not granted unless the plaintiff can show facts which, if proved at the trial, would entitle him to a dissolution (f). The exclusion of one partner by the others from the management of the business will be restrained, though dissolution is not claimed (g)

158 A partner may be restrained by injunction from entering into a new partnership with others for carrying on a business of the same nature and character as the old partnership before the expiration of the term of the old partnership, from publishing notices of dissolution, and from using the firm name of the old partnership in his new business (h), and generally, from carrying

(a) Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), s 25 (8), R S C, Ord 50, r 6. It must be just as well as convenient (*Beddow v Beddow* (1878) 9 Ch D 89 *per* JISSELL, M R, at p 93 *Day v Brownrigg* (1878), 10 Ch D 294, 307, C A), and see title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, pp 202 *et seq*, 249, 250, and see Lindley, Law of Partnership, 8th ed, pp 603—610

(b) *Walker v Hinch* (1884), 27 Ch D 460

(c) *Smith v Fromont* (1818), 2 Swan 330, *Const v Harris* (1824), Tinn & R 496, 524. As to the effect of active misconduct, or acquiescence in the misconduct of another, on the part of the applicant for relief, see title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, p 250, and as to the general principle involved, see *ibid*, pp 219 *et seq*, and see title EQUITY, Vol XIII, pp 70, 71

(d) As to whether it is necessary to claim dissolution in the case of a partnership at will, see title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, pp 249, 250

(e) *Fairthorne v Weston* (1844), 3 Hare, 387, *Watney v Trust* (1876), 45 L J (cu) 412, *Richardson v Hastings* (1844), 7 Beav 301

(f) *Smith v Jeyes* (1841), 4 Beav 503. Differences of opinion, even though they may develop into actual quarrels, are not enough to induce the court to interfere between partners in a going concern. There must be some definite act amounting to breach of faith, breach of the partnership contract, illegality or insolvency, or such gross misconduct as to imperil the business or to prevent it from being properly conducted, and in such cases the conduct complained of would usually be enough to enable the plaintiff to obtain judgment for dissolution if he desired, and framed his action with a view to, that relief, see cases cited in title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, p 250, note (g), *Lemann v Berger* (1876), 34 L T 235

(g) *Hall v Hall* (1850), 12 Beav 414. In *Anon* (1856), 2 K & J 441, a dissolution was claimed

(h) *England v Ourling* (1844), 8 Beav 129

SECT 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

on a business on his own account in the firm name (i), or with partnership assets (k), from using the assets of the firm in a separate business carried on for his own benefit (l), from altering the partnership property without the consent of his partner (m), or from drawing, accepting, or negotiating bills of exchange for his own purposes in the name of the firm (n)

So a partner may be restrained from writing plays for a rival theatre, contrary to a stipulation in the partnership deed (o); from using partnership assets for the renewal of a lease against the will of his partner (p), from using or granting licences to use a patent belonging to the partnership without the consent of the other partners (q), or, generally, from such conduct in the management of the business as would render it impossible for the business to be carried on in a proper manner, or would cause irreparable injury to it (r)

159 But an injunction will not be granted in respect of matters not falling within the express or implied obligations of the partnership agreement (s), nor in respect of a possible breach of the articles which may never happen at all and cannot happen till a future period (t)

Matters
outside
partnership
relationship

160 Partners may obtain an injunction to restrain a trader from carrying on business so as to suggest, contrary to the fact, that he is their partner or agent and so expose them to a risk of litigation or responsibility (a)

Injunction
against third
party

(u) *In Relation to Dissolution*

161 After dissolution, or during an action for dissolution, of partnership, the court will interfere by injunction, if necessary or

Injunctions
collary to
dissolution

(i) *Aas v Benham*, [1891] 2 Ch 241 C A

(k) *Turner v Major* (1862), 3 Giff 442

(l) *Gardner v M'Cutcheon* (1842), 4 Beav 534, see *Glaslington v Thwaites* (1823), 1 Sim & St 124 (where all the partners of a firm were proprietors of a morning newspaper and had agreed not to be concerned in any other morning paper, and some of them afterwards became proprietors of an evening newspaper, a general injunction to restrain competition, applied for by a partner interested in the morning paper only, was refused, the mere temptation of his partners to betray their duty to the morning paper not being sufficient ground for interference to such extent by the court, but a limited injunction was granted to restrain his partners from publishing news obtained at the expense of the firm in the evening paper before such news had appeared in the morning paper), see also *Turner v Major* (1862), 3 Giff 442

(m) *Elmslie v Beresford*, [1873] W N 152

(n) Holders with notice may also be restrained from negotiating such bills (*Hood v Aston* (1826), 1 Russ 412, see also *Jervis v White* (1802), 7 Ves 413)

(o) *Morris v Colman* (1812), 18 Ves 437

(p) *Clements v Norris* (1878), 8 Ch D 129, C A

(q) *Blachford v Hawkins* (1823), 1 L J (O S) (CH) 141

(r) *Anderson v Wallace* (1826), 2 Mol 540, *Francis v Spittle* (1840), 9 L J (CH) 230

(s) *Glaslington v Thwaites*, *supra*

(t) *Coates v Coates* (1821), Madd & G 287

(a) *Walter v Ashton*, [1902] 2 Ch 282

SECT 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se

Interference
with business

Improper
carrying on
of business

Wrongful
dealing with

Removal of
books

Trade secret

desirable, to preserve the assets, or to restrain any act by a partner which would interfere with the rights of the other partners, or with the systematic and equitable winding up of the business, by causing loss or depreciation of the assets or otherwise thus a lunatic partner will be restrained from interfering to the prejudice of the business (*b*), but a partner who has been temporarily insane will not be restrained from interfering, pending an inquiry into his state of mind at the time when his partners ask for dissolution (*c*)

A partner will be restrained from carrying on the business except for the purpose of winding it up (*d*), from carrying on a branch of the partnership business with partnership assets for his own benefit (*e*), from getting in debts owing to the firm (*f*), or other assets, especially if he has dealt, or is likely to deal, improperly with them (*g*), or from selling his share to a stranger if his partners are entitled, by contract, to an option to buy it (*h*)

A partner will be restrained from taking undue advantage of his legal title to eject a partner, or the legal personal representatives of a deceased partner, from property held by him in trust for the firm (*i*), or from applying the firm's assets for his own purposes, for example, from dealing with a partnership lease as his own property (*k*) So the executors of a deceased partner may be restrained from dealing with a renewed lease otherwise than as partnership property (*l*)

An injunction will be granted to restrain a partner from removing the partnership books from the place of business and keeping them elsewhere, though it amounts to an order to bring them back (*m*)

The court will restrain the publication of a trade secret where the information has been obtained through a partner's breach of contract or duty (*n*)

(*b*) *J v S*, [1891] 3 Ch 72, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, p 443

(*c*) *Anon* (1856), 2 K & J 441, see *Jones v Lloyd* (1874), L R 18 Fq 265

(*d*) *De Tastet v Bordenave* (1822), Jac 516

(*e*) *Turner v Major* (1862), 3 Giff 442, see *Re David and Matthews*, [1899] 1 Ch 378, 382

(*f*) *Read v Bowers* (1793), 4 Bro C C 441

(*g*) *O'Brien v Cooke* (1871), 5 I R Eq 51, *Harts v Schnader* (1803), 8 Ves 317

(*h*) *Homfray v Fothergill* (1866), L R 1 Eq 567

(*i*) *Hawkins v Hawkins* (1858), 4 Jur (N S) 1044

(*k*) *Elliott v Brown* (1791), 3 Swan 489, n

(*l*) *Alder v Fouracre* (1818), 3 Swan 489, see *Re Biss, Biss v Biss*, [1903] 2 Ch 40, 57, 61, C A But the lessor will not be restrained from granting the renewed lease

(*m*) *Greutrex v Greutrex* (1847), 1 De G & Sm 692, see Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (9)

(*n*) *Morrison v Moat* (1852), 21 L J (CH) 248, C A, affirming S C (1851), 9 Hare, 241, followed and applied in the following cases of master and servant or principal and agent — *Tuck & Son v Priestor* (1887), 19 Q. B D 629, C A, *Lumb v Evans*, [1893] 1 Ch. 218, C. A, *Robb v Green*, [1895] 2 Q. B 315, C A In *Morrison v Moat*, *supra*, the defendant was a volunteer Different considerations would arise if the defendant were a purchaser for value of the secret without notice of any obligations

162 After dissolution, if the assets are divided between the partners, each of them is entitled, in the absence of contrary agreement, to use the name of the old firm, unless the other partners would thereby be exposed to a risk of litigation or responsibility; and an injunction will not be granted to restrain such use (o), unless it exposes the other partners to risk of liability (p). Whether this danger exists depends on the circumstances of the case (q).

Although the court has refused to restrain a surviving partner, who was also executor and trustee of a deceased partner, from carrying on a similar business, a surviving partner must not carry on a rival business so as to lead to the belief that it is the partnership business, and so appropriate the goodwill of the business (r).

Where, on dissolution, the goodwill of the business becomes the property of one of the partners, another partner will not be restrained from stating that he was formerly a partner in the old firm, but he will be restrained from using the name of the firm so as to suggest that he is carrying on the old business (s), and a continuing partner, who has purchased the assets, but not the goodwill, *nominatim*, may be restrained from using, in the style of the firm, the name of his former partner (h).

If two partners have agreed that, on dissolution of the partnership, the goodwill shall belong solely to one of them, the other will be restrained from doing anything calculated to depreciate its value. Accordingly, although he may, in the absence of contrary agreement, do business with the customers of the old firm, he will be restrained from canvassing them and from soliciting them either to deal with him or not to deal with the purchasing partner (c).

affecting it (*Monson v Moat* (1851), 9 Hare, 241, 263), and see title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, pp 254, 255, MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, p 126. But an injunction to restrain publication, by a partner, of a book explanatory of a patent which belonged to the partnership was refused, as publication was not likely to injure or endanger the patent (*Blackford v Hawkins* (1823), 1 L J (O S) (CH) 141).

(o) *Banks v Gibson* (1865), 34 Beav 566. As to trade names, see title TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES, AND DESIGNS.

(p) *Webster v Webster* (1791), 3 Swan 490, n.

(q) *Burchell v Wilde*, [1900] 1 Ch 551, 564, C A (where the court held that the risk was "not substantial in any business sense"), *Townsend v Jarman*, [1900] 2 Ch 698, see *Gray v Smith* (1889), 43 Ch D 208, C A, *Chappell v Griffith* (1885), 53 L T 459, compare *Lewis v Langdon* (1835), 7 Sim 421 (where an injunction was granted against the executor of a deceased partner), and *Hill v Fears*, [1905] 1 Ch 466, and see *Levy v Walker* (1879), 10 Ch D 436, C A.

(r) *Davies v Hodgson* (1857), 25 Beav 177, 182, 183, *Re David and Matthews*, [1899] 1 Ch 378, 383. Where a surviving partner bought his deceased partner's share of the trade property from his executors, a legatee of a share of the deceased partner's goodwill was held not entitled to enforce a sale of the goodwill (*Roberston v Quidington* (1860), 28 Beav 529).

(s) *Hookham v. Pottage* (1872), 8 Ch App 91, compare *Matthews v Hodgson* (1886), 2 T L R 899, C A.

(h) *Scott v Rowland* (1872), 20 W R 508.

(c) *Trego v Hunt*, [1896] A. C. 7, approving *Labouchere v Dawson* (1872), L R. 13 Eq 322, and *Leggott v Barrett* (1880), 15 Ch D 306, C A, applied in *Jennings v Jennings*, [1898] 1 Ch 378, *Gillingham v Biddow*, [1900] 2 Ch 242. By the exercise of this jurisdiction, a partner who has become entitled by contract to the goodwill is placed in the same position as any other purchaser of the goodwill of a business, compare *Churton*

SECT. 10 Enforcement of Rights of Partners Inter se.

Injunctions after dissolution

Use of firm name

Competing business

Trade name

Conduct tending to depreciate goodwill
Solicitation of old customers

SECT 10
Enforce-
ment of
Rights of
Partners
Inter se.

Breach of
 agreement
 against
 competition

Injunctions
 against
 partners
 who are
 purchasers
 of shares

Publication
 of discon-
 tinuance of
 connection

But the restriction from canvassing does not apply to a partner expelled under a power in the articles (who, however, must not carry on the business as the business of the old firm), nor to a purchaser from the trustee in bankruptcy of a bankrupt partner (*d*)

If a partner, who has sold his share of the business to his partners, has undertaken not to compete with them, he will be restrained by injunction from acting contrary to such undertaking (*e*) But where a vendor has aided his wife in subsequently commencing a similar business with her separate property, the court may refuse to restrain the vendor from breach of an agreement not to carry on or be interested in any similar business (*f*)

163 Where a partner has agreed to buy his partner's share of the business, the court may refuse, pending an action for specific performance of the agreement, to restrain him from publishing the accounts of the business with a view to its resale to a company (*g*) If a partner who has agreed to buy his partner's share carries on the business with the whole assets, without paying the purchase-money, the vendor's remedy is not by an injunction but by an action for an account, unless the purchaser commits acts of waste (*h*)

164 On dissolution a partner may be restrained from advertising that a publication belonging to the partnership, which ought to be sold as an asset, will be discontinued, but not from advertising the discontinuance of his connection with it (*i*)

v Douglas (1859), John 174, *Crutwell v Lye* (1810), 17 Ves 335 (where Lord ELDON, L C, gave a definition of "goodwill" which is now regarded as too narrow, see *Trego v Hunt*, [1896] A C 7, 17, 23, 27), *Curl Brothers, Ltd v Webster*, [1904] 1 Ch 685, see also titles INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, p 249, TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS

(*d*) *Dawson v Beeson* (1882), 22 Ch D 504, 507, C A, *Walker v Mottram* (1881), 19 Ch D 355, C A see *Mogford v Courtenay* (1881), 45 L T 303

(*e*) *Turner v Evans* (1852), 2 De G M & G 740, C A, *Williams v Williams* (1818), 2 Swan 253, compare *Clifford v Phillips* (1907), 51 Sol Jo 748 So, too, a breach of a mere undertaking not to compete, upon which an arbitrator has acted in fixing the price of the goodwill, has been restrained upon the ground of fraud and bad faith, although the award was silent with regard to the restriction (*Harrison v Gardner* (1817), 2 Madd 198) See *Dean v MacDowell* (1878), 8 Ch D 345, C A (where it was held that the remedy for breach of covenant not to engage in business except for the benefit of the partnership is by action for an injunction or dissolution, and that an action for an account of profits made in the business which is not a competing business cannot be maintained, nor can the business itself be claimed as part of the partnership assets), see also note (*a*), p 76, *ante*

(*f*) *Smith v Hancock*, [1894] 2 Ch 377, C A (where the Court of Appeal dismissed plaintiff's appeal, but without costs)

(*g*) *Marshall v Watson* (1858), 25 Beav 501

(*h*) *Cofton v Horner* (1818), 5 Price, 537

(*i*) *Bradbury v. Dickens* (1859), 27 Beav 53

Part VI.—Dissolution.

SECT 1.—*Otherwise than by the Court.*SUB SECT 1—*On Notice*

SECT 1.

Otherwise
than by the
CourtPartnership
at will

165 Subject to any agreement between the partners (*h*), a partnership for an indefinite period may be dissolved by any partner at any moment by notice to the others (*l*). The dissolution takes effect from the date specified in the notice, or, if none is specified, from the date of the communication of the notice (*m*).

166 The notice must amount to an unambiguous intimation of a final intention to dissolve the partnership (*n*), and must be served on all the partners unless the articles otherwise provide (*o*). A notice duly given cannot be withdrawn without the consent of the partner or partners served (*p*), and is valid although the partner receiving it is a lunatic (*q*). Even if the partnership has been originally constituted by deed, a written notice signed by the partner

Essentials
of notice.

(*k*) See *Moss v Elphick*, [1910] 1 K B 846, C A, affirming S C, [1910] 1 K B 465 (where an agreement that the partnership was to be terminated "by mutual arrangement only" was held to be an agreement within the meaning of the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 32). For forms of deeds of dissolution, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol IX, pp 591, 594.

(*l*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), ss 26 (1), 32 (c), *Crawshaw v Maule* (1818), 1 Swan 495, 508, *Peacock v Peacock* (1809), 16 Ves 49, *Heath v Sansom* (1832), 4 B & Ad 172, 175, *Miles v Thomas* (1839), 9 Sim 606, 609. If the business has been carried on upon property belonging to one partner and there has been no lease thereof to the firm, any right of occupation which the other partner had ceases upon the dissolution (*Denham v Gray* (1847), 5 C B 138), see p 23, *ante*, and see note (*s*), p 52, *ante*.

(*m*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 32. A partnership at will is dissolved, in the absence of previous notice, from the date of service, not from the date of issue, of the writ in an action for dissolution (*Insworth v Jordan*, [1896] W N 2). As a dissolution is subject to the taking of the accounts, no partner can reap an unfair advantage by giving unseasonable notice (*Featherstonhaugh v Fenwick* (1810), 17 Ves 298, 309, compare *Chavany v Van Somme* (1770), 1 Swan 512, *n*). As to the effect of death, see p 86, *post*.

(*n*, Compare *Parsons v Hayward* (1862), 4 De G F & J 474, *Steuart v Gladstone* (1879), 10 Ch D 626, 650, C A.

(*o*) *Wheeler v Van Wart* (1838), 9 Sim 193, *Van Sandau v Moore* (1826), 1 Russ 441.

(*p*) *Jones v Lloyd* (1874), L R 18 Eq 265. *A fortiori* if there accrues to the recipient of the notice an option to purchase the share of the retiring partner (*Warder v Stilwell* (1856), 3 Jur (N S) 9). Nor will a valid notice become inoperative owing to an irregularity in the mode of taking the accounts consequent upon it (*Steuart v Gladstone*, *supra*, at p 654). The parties may, however, waive a valid notice by subsequent negotiations (*Laycock v Bulmer* (1844), 13 L J (Ex) 156).

(*q*) *Robertson v Lockie* (1846), 15 Sim 285, *Mellersh v Keen* (1859), 27 Beav 236, but see Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (a), (b), Lunacy Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 5), s 119, and title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, p 443.

SECT 1
Otherwise
than by the
Court.

When
 partnership
ipso facto
 determines

giving it is sufficient (r), and in some cases formal notice is not necessary (s)

SUB SECT 2—*On Effluxion of Time or Completion of Adventure*

167 Subject to any agreement between the partners, a partnership for a fixed term, or for a single adventure, is dissolved by the expiration of the term or by the completion of the adventure, as the case may be (t), except so far as it is deemed to continue for the purpose of winding up its affairs (a)

SUB SECT 3—*On Death of Partner*

Effect of
 death

168 Subject to any agreement between the partners, a partnership is dissolved as regards all the partners by the death of any partner (b). If a partner gives a valid notice of a dissolution but dies before the expiration of the notice, the partnership is dissolved by the death and not by the notice (c)

Relation of
 personal
 representatives to
 surviving
 partners
 Termination
 of liability
 for partner
 ship debts

Unless the articles otherwise provide, neither the surviving partners nor the personal representatives of a deceased partner are entitled or bound to continue a partnership, though the term thereof may be unexpired at the time of the death (d)

169 No notice of the death is necessary in order to terminate the liability of the deceased partner for partnership debts contracted after his death (r). Where goods are ordered before, but delivered

(r) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 26 (2), see *Doe d Waithman v Miles* (1816), 4 Camp 373. If the partnership deed requires dissolution by deed only, a submission under seal of all matters in dispute, followed by an award under seal vesting the partnership assets in one partner as trustee for the purpose of winding up the business, is a sufficient compliance with the deed (*Hutchinson v Whitfield* (1830), Hayes, 78).

(s) *Pearce v Lindsay* (1860), 3 De G J & Sm 139 (where, after disputes and attempted settlement of accounts, a long correspondence as to items of account ensued, without any reference to new business or continuing connection), *Bigshaw v Parker* (1847), 10 Beav 532 (where the partnership was determinable on a specified event which happened).

(t) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 32 (a), (b), and see p 24, *ante*

(a) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 38, and see p 97, *post*. As to the continuation of a partnership beyond the fixed term without any express new agreement, see Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 27 and p 23, *ante*

(b) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 33 (1), *Crawshaw v Collins* (1808), 15 Ves 218, 227, *Vulliamy v Noble* (1817), 3 Mer 593, 614, *Crawshaw v Maule* (1818), 1 Swan 495, 508, and see title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 221

(c) *Bell v Nevill* (1866), 15 W R 85

(d) *Pearce v Chamberlain* (1750), 2 Ves Sen 33, *Gillespie v Hamilton* (1818), 3 Madd 251, see *Lancaster v Allsup* (1887), 57 L T 53, title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 221

(e) *Vulliamy v Noble*, *supra*, at p 614, *Crawshaw v Maule*, *supra*, at p 508, *Deraynes v Noble*, *Houlton's Case* (1816), 1 Mer 528, 616, and see Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39) s 36 (3). As to the effect of dissolution, by death or otherwise, on contracts with persons employed by the firm, see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 431, *Phillips v Alhambra Palace Co*, [1901] 1 Q B 59, *Tasker v Shepherd* (1861), 6 H & N 575, *Friend v Young*, [1897] 2 Ch 421, 429, see also title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, p 94

after, the death of a partner, the debt accrues on the delivery of the goods, and the vendor therefore, although he had no notice of the death, cannot make the deceased partner's estate liable for the price (f)

SECT. 1
Otherwise
than by the
Court.

SUB-SECT 4—*On Bankruptcy of Partner*

170 Subject to any agreement between the partners, a partnership is dissolved as regards all the partners by the bankruptcy of any partner (g), and the estate of the bankrupt thereupon ceases to be liable for the partnership debts incurred after the bankruptcy, though the party dealing with the firm is ignorant of it (h)

Bankruptcy
dissolves a
partnership

SUB-SECT 5—*On Making of Charging Order on Partner's Share*

171. If a charging order is made (i) upon a partner's share in respect of his separate debt, the other partners may dissolve (k)

Charging
order.

SUB-SECT 6—*On Partnership becoming Illegal*

172 Whenever on the happening of any event the partnership business itself, or the carrying on thereof by the members of the firm in partnership, becomes illegal, the partnership is *ipso facto* dissolved (l)

Illegality.

(f) *Friend v Young*, [1897] 2 Ch 421 (where a contract of agency was held to be determined by the death of a partner in the agent's firm), *Bagel v Miller*, [1903] 2 K B 212, and see Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 9, title AGENCY, Vol I, pp 233, 234

(g) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 33 (1), see *For v Hanbury* (1776), Cowp 445, 448, *Hague v Rolleston* (1768), 4 Burr 2174, *Thomason and Haggip v Freie* (1808), 10 East, 418, 426, from which cases it would appear that the dissolution takes effect from the act of bankruptcy, subject to the doctrine of relation back, and see Bankruptcy Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict c 52), s 43, title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 161, 181 *et seq.* *Re Houghton and Watts, Ex parte Robinson* (1833), 3 Deac & Ch 376. It is the adjudication and not the presentation of the petition which dissolves the partnership (*Ex parte Smith* (1800), 5 Ves 295). The rule that, on the bankruptcy of one partner, the firm is dissolved was, before the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), held not to apply to mining partnerships (*Re Bosron, Ex parte Broadbent* (1834), 1 Mont & A 635, 638, *Bentley v Bates* (1840), 4 Y & C (EX) 182, but see the criticism of these cases in *Dodds v Preston* (1888), 59 L T 718, C A). Such cases seem to be now governed by the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 33 (1).

(h) *Ibid*, s 36 (3), see also p 111, *post*. A proviso forfeiting a partner's share on his bankruptcy is void, see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 161, see also *ibid*, pp 13, 28, 61, 68.

(i) Under the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 23 (2), see p 59, *ante*.

(k) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), ss 23 (2), 33 (2), see *Brown, Janson & Co v Hutchinson & Co*, [1895] 1 Q B 737, C A, per LINDLEY, L J, at p 738, title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, p 11. Under the former law, the taking in execution of a partner's share dissolved the partnership, and the execution creditor became a tenant in common with the other partners of the partnership property (*Skipp v Harwood* (1747), 2 Swan. 586, *Taylor v Fields* (1799), 4 Ves 396, *Chapman v Koops* (1802), 3 Bos & P 289, *Mayhew v Merrick* (1840), 7 C B 229, *Aspinall v London and North Western Rail Co* (1853), 11 Hare, 325, 330, compare *Johnson v Evans* (1844), 7 Man & G 240).

(l) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 34. *Esposito v Ruden*

SECT 1

SUB-SECT 7—*On Expulsion of Partner*

Otherwise
than by the
Court

Power of
expulsion of
partner

Rights of
partner

173 Expulsion of a partner by a majority is invalid, unless power is reserved by express agreement (*m*) A power of expulsion conferred by articles of partnership cannot be exercised to determine a partnership at will arising after the expiration of the term (*n*) Such power must be exercised in the utmost good faith (*o*) by all the partners whose concurrence may be necessary under the partnership contract (*p*)

A partner whom it is proposed to expel is, as a general rule, entitled to an opportunity of meeting the case against him (*q*) He must be given a reasonable opportunity of explanation (*r*), and his partners are not entitled to spring a notice of dissolution on him without giving him preliminary warning and calling his attention to the cause of complaint (*s*)

SECT 2—*By the Court*SUB SECT 1—*Courts having Jurisdiction*

Jurisdiction

174 The courts which have jurisdiction to dissolve a partnership in England are the following —

High Court

(1) The High Court of Justice, to the Chancery Division of which

(1857), 7 E & B 763, Ex Ch, and see *Griswold v Waddington* (1818), 15 Johnson's Reports, 57, affirmed (1819), 16 Johnson's Reports, 438 With regard to illegal partnerships, see pp 16 *et seq*, ante

(*m*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 25

(*n*) *Clark v Leach* (1863), 1 De G J & Sm 409

(*o*) *Barnes v Youngs*, [1898] 1 Ch 414, *Carmichael v Evans*, [1904] 1 Ch 486 It must not be exercised for the exclusive benefit of one or more partners individually, but for the benefit of the whole partnership (*Blisset v Daniel* (1853), 10 Hare, 493, 522, see also *Steuart v Gladstone* (1879), 10 Ch D 626, 650, C A)

(*p*) *Smith v Mules* (1852), 9 Hare, 556, 570, and see *Fisher v Jackson*, [1891] 2 Ch 84, 93, 94, *Blisset v Daniel*, *supra*

(*q*) *Barnes v Youngs*, *supra* But this is not so when the power is vested in one partner only in terms which show that he is to be sole judge for himself (*Russell v Russell* (1880), 14 Ch D 471, distinguishing *Blisset v Daniel*, *supra*, and *Wood v Woad* (1874), L R 9 Exch 190) "The sole ground of the other decisions, that it was a power given to a number of persons, not to be exercised capriciously, of course disappears when you have a power given to a single person which could be exercised capriciously" (*Russell v Russell*, *supra*, per JESSEL, M R, at p 480) The same cases have also been distinguished from a case in which the power of expulsion arose under a specific provision that no partner should directly or indirectly enter into any other business "They are no authorities for holding that notice must be given in case of a specific provision It is rather analogous to the ordinary clause in a lease" (*Cooper v Page* (1876), 34 L T 90, per HALL, V C, at pp 92, 93) Nor is it necessary to hear the accused partner when the partner giving the notice is not in a quasi-judicial position, *e g* when the notice of expulsion merely puts certain proceedings into train whereby the question whether another partner is entitled to expel him can be determined (*Green v Howell*, [1910] 1 Ch 495, C A.). For an appropriate form of notice, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol IX., p 605

(*r*) *Wood v Woad*, *supra*, *Blisset v Daniel*, *supra*, compare *Cooper v Page*, *supra*

(*s*) *Barnes v Youngs*, *supra*, per ROMER, J, at p 418. compare *Green v Howell*, *supra* For appropriate forms of notice, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol IX., p 605

all causes and matters for the dissolution of partnerships or the taking of partnership accounts are specially assigned (a)

SECT 2
By the
Court.

(2) The Chancery Courts of the Counties Palatine of Lancaster and Durham, in respect of persons and things within the areas of their respective jurisdictions (b)

Palatine
courts
County
courts.

(3) The county courts, which have the same jurisdiction as the High Court in actions for dissolution of partnership in which the aggregate partnership assets do not exceed £500 in amount or value (c)

(4) The judge in lunacy, who has power to dissolve a partnership in the case of a partner becoming a lunatic (d)

Lunacy judge

SUB-SECT 2—Action for Dissolution

175 An action to enforce a dissolution of partnership must be commenced by writ and not by originating summons (e) It is no objection to such an action that the partnership is one at will only (f), or that it might be wound up under the statutory provisions (g) for winding up companies (h) If the terms of the partnership are disputed, the court may on dissolution order an inquiry (i), and alternative claims may be made for dissolution and rescission of the partnership contract (k)

Form of
action for
dissolution

(a) Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), s 34 (3), Judicature Act (Ireland), 1877 (40 & 41 Vict c 57), s 36 (5), see title COURTS, Vol IX, pp 60, 61 For the origin of the growth of the exclusive jurisdiction of equity, see title EQUITY, Vol XIII, pp 4 *et seq*, 38, 39

(b) See Chancery of Lancaster Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 23), s 3, Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 23 (2), title COURTS, Vol IX, pp 120 *et seq*

(c) County Courts Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 43), s 67 (7), see title COUNTRY COURTS, Vol VIII, p 445 For provisions relating to the transfer to the Chancery Division of an action commenced in the county court, and for transfer to the county court from the Chancery Division of actions which might have been commenced in the county court, see title COUNTRY COURTS, Vol VIII, pp 440, 442 Similar provisions for Ireland are contained in the County Offices and Courts (Ireland) Act, 1877 (40 & 41 Vict c 56), ss 33 (1), 35—37

(d) Lunacy Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 5), s 119, re enacting the first clause of the Lunacy Regulation Act, 1853 (16 & 17 Vict c 70), s 423, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 414, 442, 443 The power is exercisable by a master (Lunacy Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 65), s 27 (1), Rules in Lunacy, 1892, r 10) In Ireland the Lord Chancellor may, when a partner becomes a lunatic, dissolve a partnership (Lunacy Regulation (Ireland) Act, 1891 (34 & 35 Vict c 22), s 73)

(e) As to the general practice in the Supreme Court, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE As to the grounds upon which dissolution may be ordered, see pp 90 *et seq*, *post* As to the effect of dissolution upon contracts of service with the firm, see title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, pp 94, 95, and see *ibid*, p 113

(f) *Master v Kirton* (1796), 3 Ves 74

(g) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 648

(h) *Clements v Bowes* (1852), 17 Sim 167, 174

(i) *Thorp v Holdsworth* (1876), 3 Ch D 637 (where an order for dissolution was made on motion for judgment on admissions in the pleadings, the defendant disputing the terms of the partnership agreement, but admitting the partnership and not disputing the right to dissolve)

(k) *Bagot v Easton* (1877), 7 Ch D 1, C A

SECT 2

By the
Court.Reference to
arbitration

176 The right of a partner to claim a dissolution by the court may be controlled by an arbitration clause contained in the partnership articles (*l*). If such clause applies to all matters in dispute between the parties, the arbitrators have power to award a dissolution (*m*), and, upon the application of the defendant, the court may order a stay of the action and refer the matter to arbitration (*n*). But the court has complete discretion in the matter. Therefore, if charges of fraud or dishonesty or of want of good faith are made *bonâ fide* by one partner against the other, or if questions of law are likely to arise which are more fit for the court than a lay tribunal (*o*), or if the attempted reference is made vexatiously (*p*), a stay of the action for dissolution may, and generally will, be refused (*q*).

SUB SECT 3 — *Grounds of Dissolution.*(1) *Insanity*Effect of
insanity.

177 The insanity of a partner does not *per se* dissolve the partnership (*r*), but is a ground for the dissolution thereof by the court by reason of the incapacity of the insane partner to perform his part of the partnership contract(s), and the court will not compel

(*l*) As to the validity of such a clause, see *Lee v Page* (1861), 30 L J (CH) 857. Whether the matters in dispute fall within the clause is a question for the court to decide (*Puery v Young* (1879), 14 Ch D 200, C A), unless the parties have expressly agreed to leave it to the arbitrator (*Willesford v Watson* (1873), 8 Ch App 473, *Gillett v Thornton* (1875), L R 19 Eq 599, 605), and see title ARBITRATION, Vol I, pp 445, 451.

(*m*) *Russell v Russell* (1880), 14 Ch D 471, approved of in *Walmsley v White* (1892), 40 W R 675, C A, see *Vaudrey v Simpson*, [1896] 1 Ch 166, 168, *Machin v Bennett*, [1900] W N 146, *Belfield v Bourne*, [1894] 1 Ch 521, 523, *Law v Garrett* (1878), 8 Ch D 26, C A (where the forum selected by the partner was a foreign commercial court), *Plews v Baker* (1873), L R 16 Eq 564, see also *Green v Waring* (1764), 1 Wm Bl 475, *Simmonds v Swaine* (1809), 1 Taunt 549.

(*n*) Under the Arbitration Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 49), s 4, see title ARBITRATION, Vol I, p 451. The onus of showing that the case is not suitable for arbitration is on the party opposing the application to stay (*Vaudrey v Simpson*, *supra*, *Cook v Catchpole* (1864), 10 Jur (N S) 1068). The court will, in special circumstances, appoint a receiver pending the arbitration, see *Plews v Baker*, *supra*, *Pini v Roncoroni*, [1892] 1 Ch 633, *Gillett v Thornton*, *supra*. In *Law v Garrett*, *supra*, a receiver was refused, but liberty was given to apply, so also in *Machin v Bennett*, *supra*, but without prejudice to an application at a later stage.

(*o*) *Vaudrey v Simpson*, *supra*, see *Russell v Russell*, *supra*, questioning the reasoning of WICKENS, V C, in *Willesford v Watson* (1871), L R 14 Eq 572, 578, compare *Cave v Crew* (1893), 41 W R 359, *Turnell v Sanderson* (1891), 64 L T 654.

(*p*) *Barnes v Youngs*, [1898] 1 Ch 414, *Joplin v Postlethwaite* (1889), 61 L T 629, C A.

(*q*) *Witt v Corcoran* (1873), 8 Ch App 476, n, compare *Willesford v Watson* (1873), 8 Ch App 473, 480.

(*r*) *Wrexham v Hudleston* (1734), 1 Swan 514, n; *Waters v Taylor* (1813), 2 Ves & B 299, 303, *Anon* (1855), 2 K & J 441, 447. Until dissolution the power of a lunatic to bind his firm seems to continue notwithstanding the rule that the lunacy of the principal revokes the authority of an agent (*Yonge v Toynbee*, [1910] 1 K B 215, C A). If, however, an action for dissolution be pending, the lunatic may be restrained from interfering (*J v S*, [1894] 3 Ch 72).

(*s*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (a), *Jones v Noy*

partners to carry on the business in conjunction with the committee of the lunatic partner (a)

In order to constitute such a ground the disorder must be permanent and not merely of a temporary character, for if there is a prospect of recovery the court will not dissolve the partnership (b)

If the court is not satisfied that the insanity is permanent and still exists at the time when relief is sought, an inquiry may be directed (c), but, if the partner has been found lunatic by inquisition, such inquiry may not be necessary (d)

178 Relief may be given not only on the application of any partner, but also on that of the committee or next friend of the insane partner or other person entitled to intervene on his behalf (e)

179 The costs of the action, in the absence of special circumstances, are paid out of the partnership assets (f)

180 When the partnership is a partnership at will, it is dissolved, in the absence of previous notice, from the issue of the writ (g), but, if notice to dissolve has been served on the lunatic partner, then from the date of such notice (h) If the partnership is for a fixed term, it is dissolved from the date of judgment (i), if, however, provision has been made in the articles for dissolution in the event of insanity, the dissolution takes effect from the date contemplated in them, and not from the date of judgment (k)

SECT. 2.
By the
Court.

Insanity
must be
permanent

Inquiry may
be ordered

Applicants
for relief

Costs of
action

Date of
dissolution

(1833), 2 My & K 125, 129, *Leaf v Coles* (1851), 1 De G M & G 171, 174, *Sayer v Bennet* (1784), 1 Cox, Eq Cas 107, 109

(a) *Rowlands v Evans*, *Williams v Rowlands* (1861), 30 Beav 302

(b) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (a), *Jones v Noy* (1833), 2 My & K 125, 129, *Pearce v Chamberlain* (1750), 2 Ves Sen 33, 35, *Wrexham v Hudleston* (1734), 1 Swan 514, n, *Sayer v Bennet*, *supra*, *Leaf v Coles*, *supra*, *Jones v Lloyd* (1874), L R 18 Eq 265. *Anon* (1855), 2 K & J 441, 452, *Sadler v Lee* (1843), 6 Beav 324

(c) As in *Sayer v Bennet*, *supra*, *Paley v Patey* (1836), 5 L J (CH) 198 (where, the action being brought by the lunatic, his committee was added as a party), *Kirby v Carr* (1838), 3 Y & C (EX) 184, 9 C sub nom *Kirby v Cox*, 8 L J (EX EQ) 31

(d) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (a), see *Milne v Bartlett* (1839), 3 Jur 358

(e) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (a), see *Besch v Frolich* (1842), 1 Ph 172, *Fisher v Melles* (1870), L R 18 Eq 268, n, *Jones v Lloyd*, *supra* (where a receiver was appointed on the application of the next friend, but it was doubted whether he could carry the action further, and whether a committee ought not to be appointed for this purpose), but see the Partnership Act 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (a)

(f) *Jones v Welch* (1855), 1 K & J 765, following the order in *Besch v Frolich*, *supra*

(g) *Kirby v Carr* (1838), 3 Y & C (EX) 184.

(h) *Mellersh v Keen* (1859), 27 Beav 236, *Robertson v Lockie* (1846), 15 Sim. 285

(i) And not retrospectively from issue of the writ *a fortiori*, not from the date of commencement of the insanity (*Besch v Frolich*, *supra*, *Sander v. Sander* (1845), 2 Coll 276, *Leaf v Coles* (1852), 1 De G M & G 417, *Jones v Welch*, *supra*)

(k) *Bajshaw v. Parker* (1847), 10 Beav 532

SECT. 2

By the
CourtPermanent
incapacity(ii) *Disablement*

181 Permanent incapacity, arising otherwise than from insanity, of a partner to perform his part of the partnership contract is a ground for dissolution by the court, on the application of any other partner (l)

(iii) *Conduct Prejudicial to Partnership*

Misconduct

182 Such conduct by a partner as, in the opinion of the court, is calculated to prejudice the carrying on of the partnership business affords a ground for its dissolution by the court, on the application of an innocent partner (m). Regard must, however, be had to the nature of the partnership (n), thus, the adultery of a partner is no reason for dissolving a mercantile partnership, but the immoral conduct of one of two medical partners who also act as accoucheurs may be a sufficient ground (o), and embezzlement of trust funds of clients by a solicitor entitles his partner to an immediate dissolution (p).

(iv) *Breach of Partnership Agreement and Unreasonable Conduct*Breach of
contract

183 Wilful persistent breaches of the partnership contract by a partner afford ground for dissolution by the court, but merely trivial or occasional violations are not sufficient, unless in the latter case they are also serious (q).

(l) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (b), *Whitwell v Arthur* (1865), 35 Beav 140 (where the incapacity was due to paralysis as, however, the health of the partner improved before the trial, further proceedings were stayed, but liberty to apply was reserved)

(m) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (c)

(n) *Ibid* As to what is infamous conduct in a professional respect, see, as to medical men, title MEDICINE AND PHARMACY, Vol XX, pp 321, 322, and as to solicitors, *Re a Solicitor, Ex parte Law Society*, [1912] 1 K B 302, title SOLICITORS see also *Clifford v Timms*, [1908] A C 12, affirming *Hill v Clifford*, *Clifford v Timms*, *Clifford v Phillips*, [1907] 2 Ch 236, C A, and reversing *Clifford v Timms*, [1907] 1 Ch 420 (a case of "professional misconduct" by a dentist), *Clifford v Phillips*, [1908] A C 15

(o) See *Snow v Milford* (1868) 18 L T 142, *per* Lord ROMILLY, M R, at p 143, *Anon* (1855), 2 K & J 441, *per* WOOD, V C, at p 445

(p) *Essell v Hayward* (1860), 30 Beav 158, compare *Pearce v Foster* (1886), 17 Q B D 536, C A, which shows that conduct may be prejudicial to the business, though not directly connected with it, e.g., gambling on the Stock Exchange by a confidential clerk justifies his dismissal from a business which has nothing to do with stock and share dealings, and the conviction of a partner for travelling on the railway without a ticket, with intent to avoid payment of the fare, may justify a notice of expulsion (*Carmichael v Evans*, [1904] 1 Ch 486)

(q) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (d), *Goodman v Whitcomb* (1820), 1 Jac & W 589, 592, *Loscombe v Russell* (1830), 4 Sim 8, 11, *Anderson v Anderson* (1857), 25 Beav 190 (where one instance of breach of the partnership contract in eight years was held to be insufficient ground for the interference of the court, though, as both parties admitted that it was useless to continue the partnership, a dissolution was ordered) "It must be a studied, prolonged and continued inattention to the application of one party calling upon the other to observe that contract," i.e. the contract of partnership (*Marshall v Colman* (1820), 2 Jac & W 266, *per* Lord ELDON, L C, at p 268)

Generally, the court interferes whenever the conduct of a partner in matters relating to the partnership business renders it not reasonably practicable for the other partner or partners to carry on the business on the footing originally contemplated, without injury to all parties (1)

SECT. 2.
By the
Court.

Unreasonable
conduct
Grounds for
relief

Thus, while mere partnership squabbles are not sufficient to induce the court to order a dissolution (a), if a state of complete and permanent animosity exists, so that the breach between the partners is irreparable and mutual confidence is destroyed, the court will grant relief (a). Similarly, neglect to account for money received, especially if so frequent as to be almost systematic (b), or the application of sums received to the payment of private debts (c), or refusal to account and the taking away of the partnership books (d), being acts inconsistent with the duty of a partner and destructive of the mutual confidence which ought to subsist between partners (e), afford good grounds for relief.

184 The court will not order dissolution on the application of the partner guilty of misconduct (f), nor, on the other hand, will it usually order such a partner to pay the costs of an action for dissolution by another partner up to the trial (g).

No relief to
defaulting
partner

(v) *Partnership Business Carried on at a Loss*

185 Every partnership is entered into with a view to profit, and, if the business can only be carried on at a loss, the whole purpose of the partnership fails, and it may be dissolved upon the application of any partner, although the original term for which it was formed has not expired (h).

Failure to
make profits

(r) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (d), *Waters v Taylor* (1813), 2 Ves & B 299, *Harrison v Tennant* (1856), 21 Beav 482, *Watney v Wells* (1861), 30 Beav 56, 60, *Smith v Jeyes* (1841), 4 Beav 503, 505

(s) *Wray v Hutchinson* (1834), 2 My & K 235

(a) *Baxter v West* (1860), 1 Drew & Sm 173 *Harrison v Tennant*, *supra*, *Leary v Shout* (1864), 33 Beav 582, *Atwood v Maude* (1868), 3 Ch App 369, 373, compare *Pearce v Lindsay* (1860), 3 De G J & Sm 139, C A

(b) *Cheesman v Price* (1865), 35 Beav 142

(c) *Smith v Jeyes*, *supra*

(d) *Charlton v Poulter* ("the Brewers' Case") (1753), 19 Ves 148, n

(e) *Smith v Jeyes*, *supra*, at p 506

(f) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (d) "No party is entitled to act improperly and then to say that the conduct of the partners and their feelings towards each other are such that the partnership cannot continue, and this court will not allow any person so to act and thus to take advantage of his own wrong" (*Harrison v Tennant*, *supra*, per ROMILLY, M R, at p 492) Lord CAIRNS' dictum to the contrary effect in *Atwood v Maude*, *supra*, at p 373, has now been definitely displaced by the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (d)

(g) *Hawkins v Parsons* (1862), 8 Jur (N S) 452

(h) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (e), *Jennings v Baddeley* (1856), 3 K & J 78, *Bailey v Ford* (1843), 13 Sim 495 (where the court, on motion before the hearing, appointed a person to sell the business and wind up the partnership), see *Re Suburban Hotel Co* (1867), 2 Ch App 737, per Lord CAIRNS, L J, at p 744 If the errors can be

SECT 2

By the
Court.On just and
equitable
grounds(v1) *Where Dissolution is Just and Equitable*

186 The court may dissolve a partnership in any case where circumstances have arisen which, in its opinion, render it just and equitable to do so (i).

SECT 3 — *Return of Premiums.*Discretion to
order return of
whole or part
of premium

Exceptions

187 If a partnership, on entering into which one partner has paid a premium to the other, is for a fixed term, and is prematurely dissolved, the court may, in the absence of any agreement regulating the matter, or waiver, or release express or implied (k), order the return of the whole or a proportionate part of the premium (l)

This equity, however, does not arise if the dissolution is due to death (m) or bankruptcy, unless attributable to some breach of partnership duty on the part of the partner who received the premium (n), or if the partnership has been dissolved by an

attributed to special circumstances and cannot clearly be traced to any inherent defect in the business, the court will refuse the relief (*Handyside v Campbell* (1901), 17 T L R 623) See also *Baring v Dir* (1786), 1 Cox, Eq Cas 213, compare *Wilson v Church* (1879), 13 Ch D 1, C A, per COTTON, L J, at p 65 "If the purposes of the partnership cannot be carried into effect with any reasonable prospect of profit, the court can, and does, dissolve the partnership", and see S C, *sub nom National Bolivian Navigation Co v Wilson* (1880), 5 App Cas 176

(i) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 35 (f) The question what is just and equitable within the meaning of this provision has not, apparently, formed the subject of judicial decision, but the similar provision in the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 129, enabling the court to wind up a limited company when it is just and equitable, has not been read as being *ejusdem generis* with the preceding words of that enactment, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 397, and cases there cited

(k) See *Bond v Milburn* (1871), 20 W R 197, explained in *Rooke v Nisbet* (1881), 50 L J (CH) 588, compare *Andrewes v Jones* (1865), 12 L T 229, *Brewer v Yorke* (1882), 46 L T 289, C A

(l) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 40 "The principle upon which the court interferes is that the consideration, in respect of which the money is paid, fails and is not obtained by the person who pays the money, in consequence of an unforeseen interruption" (*Freeland v Slansfeld* (1854), 2 Sm & G 479, per STUART, V-C, at p 484), see similar statements of the principle in *Tattersall v Groote* (1800), 2 Bos & P 131, per Lord ELDON, L C, at p 134, in *Bullock v Crockett* (1862), 3 Giff 507, per STUART, V-C, at p 512, and in *Edmonds v Robinson* (1885), 29 Ch D 170, by KAY, J, at p 175 As to premiums paid under misrepresentation, see *Jauncey v Knowles* (1860), 29 L J (CH) 95, and p 69, *ante*

(m) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 40, *Whincup v Hughes* (1871), L R 6 C P 78, *Ferns v Carr* (1885), 28 Ch D 409 But if the partner taking the premium knows at the time that he is suffering from a fatal disease and this is not known to the partner paying the premium, on the death of the former during the term an apportionment may be ordered on the ground of fraud (*Mackenna v Parkes* (1866), 15 L T 500), and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 483

(n) *Alhurst v Jackson* (1818), 1 Wils (CH) 47 (where it is said "Bankruptcy is the contingency incident to every partnership It is not a breach of the contract it is a determination of the partnership by the means by which it was in its nature liable to be determined") But the court has ordered a return of part of the premium where the partner who paid the premium was made bankrupt by the recipient (*Hamil v Stokes* (1817), 4 Price, 161), and where the recipient became bankrupt, having

SECT 3
Return of
Premiums.

agreement containing no provision for a return of any part of the premium (o) or when the dissolution is brought about by the misconduct of the partner who has paid it (p). Incompetence is not misconduct and does not, in itself, form a bar to this equity, especially if such incompetence was known to the partner receiving the premium at, or almost at, the commencement of the partnership and was the ground of his demanding an increased premium (q)

Where the partnership has been dissolved without any fault of either party (r), or if there are faults on both sides (s), or if the recipient of the premium has himself caused the dissolution (t), the equity will be enforced by the court (u)

Where
equities are
equal

188 In determining the amount of premium to be returned the primary consideration is that of time, that is, the ratio of the actual to the agreed term of the partnership, the premium, being treated as paid for the whole term, is apportioned between the time which the partnership lasted and the unexpired residue (a)

Amount of
premium
returnable.

been in embarrassed circumstances at the commencement of the bankruptcy, the partner who paid the premium had no notice thereof (*Freeland v Stansfeld* (1854), 2 Sm & G 479), but a return will not be ordered where he had notice (*Akkurst v Jackson* (1818), 1 Wils (CH) 47)

(o) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 40 (b) *Lee v Page* (1861), 30 L J (CH) 857 *Belfield v Bourne*, [1894] 1 Ch 521, 527, compare *Handyside v Campbell* (1901), 17 T L R 623

(p) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 40 (a), *Atwood v Maude* (1868), 3 Ch App 369, *Yates v Cousins* (1889), 60 L T 535, *Bullock v Crockett* (1862), 3 Giff 507, *Bluck v Capstick* (1879), 12 Ch D 863 (where the unpaid premium was ordered to be paid by the guilty partner) Conduct, though objectionable and such as would entitle his partner to a dissolution, is not sufficient to deprive the partner paying the premium of his right to return of premium (*Wilson v Johnstone* (1873), L R 16 Fq 606) nor is it material that the latter is the party who seeks the dissolution (*Atwood v Maude*, *supra*)

(q) *Atwood v Maude*, *supra*, at p 375, *Brewer v Yorke* (1882), 46 L T 289, C A, where BRETT, L J, at p 293, said "Mere incompetence, however great, without proof of damage caused thereby, ought not to be ground for declining, upon a dissolution of partnership, to return the proportionate amount of premium", but HOSKER, L J, dissented from this statement of the law (*ibid*, at p 295)

(r) *Atwood v Maude*, *supra*, compare *Airey v Borham* (1861), 29 Beav 620

(s) *Astle v Wright* (1856), 23 Beav 77, *Pease v Hewitt* (1862), 31 Beav 22

(t) See cases cited in note (p) *supra*, *Bullock v Crockett*, *supra*, and see *Bury v Allen* (1845), 1 Coll 589 (where the misconduct was principally that of the partner receiving the premium), *Hamil v Stoker* (1817), 4 Price, 161

(u) Compare the cases, relating to apprenticeship, cited in title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, pp 104, note (n), 105, note (k)

(a) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 40, which provides that regard is to be had to two matters, namely (1) the terms of the partnership contract, and (2) the actual duration of the partnership "The court has always treated it, I believe, as a mere arithmetical question" (*Wilson v Johnstone*, *supra*, per WICKENS, V C, at p 609). see *Bury v Allen*, *supra*, *Pease v Hewitt*, *supra*, *Brewer v Yorke*, *supra* But it is difficult to apply "the principle of extension of the premium over the whole term of the partnership" where part of the consideration is not referable to the whole of the agreed period (*Bullock v Crockett*, *supra*), and in many decisions before the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), it

SECT 3

Return of
PremiumsQuestion
dealt with
at trialPower of
arbitrator

189 The question of a return of premium should be dealt with at the trial of the action for dissolution, afterwards the leave of the court is necessary, and this is only given if the circumstances are such that the court would give leave to bring a supplemental action (*h*)

When the articles contain an arbitration clause wide enough to empower the arbitrators to award a dissolution, they also have power to consider the terms of the dissolution, including the question of the amount, if any, of premium to be returned (*c*)

Partnership
at will

190 If a premium is paid by a partner on entering into a partnership at will, none, as a general rule, is returnable, in the absence of fraud, or of an express stipulation on the point (*d*)

SECT 4 — *Notice of Dissolution*Advertis-
ment of
dissolution

191 Any partner is entitled to give public notice of a dissolution or change in the membership of the firm, and to require the concurrence of his partners for that purpose in any necessary or proper acts which cannot be done without such concurrence (*e*)

Old
customers

192 Old customers of a firm, who deal with it after a change in its membership, are entitled to treat the former apparent partners as still being partners until they have actual notice of the change. As regards them, notice of the dissolution published in the *Gazette* (*f*) is not *per se* sufficient (*g*). But evidence has been admitted of facts showing that it was probable that an old customer had seen the *Gazette* (*h*)

Notice to old
customers

Notice to old customers is usually given by circular letter, but any mode by which actual knowledge is given suffices. Change by a bank of its forms of cheque may be sufficient notice to an old customer who has drawn cheques in the new form (*i*). One insertion of an advertisement of dissolution, in a newspaper proved to be taken by the customer and to have been left at his house, has been admitted as evidence of notice, though not proved to have reached his hands (*j*) but evidence of such insertion was excluded where it was not proved that he was in the habit of taking the

was said that the court would consider all the circumstances, see, *eg*, *Lyon v Tweddell* (1881), 17 Ch D 529, C A

(*b*) For example, if the facts were first discovered after the judgment in the action, see *Edmonds v Robinson* (1885), 29 Ch D 170

(*c*) *Belfield v Bourne*, [1894] 1 Ch 521, distinguishing *Tattersall v Groote* (1800), 2 Bos & P 131

(*d*) See *Tattersall v Groote*, *supra*, at p 134. But, in the case of a partnership for no definite time, the recipient cannot dissolve the partnership immediately and retain the premium, see *Featherstonhaugh v Turner* (1858), 25 Beav 382, 391

(*e*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 37, see *Troughton v Hunter* (1854), 18 Beav 470, *Hendry v Turner* (1886), 32 Ch D 355

(*f*) As to publication of notice in the *Gazette*, see the text, *infra*

(*g*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 36 (1), *Graham v Hope* (1792), Peake, 208 [154], *Gorham v Thompson* (1791), Peake, 60 [42], *Re Hodgson, Beckett v Ramsdale* (1885), 31 Ch D 177, 184, C A.

(*h*) *Godfrey v Macaulay* (1795), Peake, 209, n

(*i*) *Barfoot v Goodall* (1811), 3 Camp 147

(*j*) *Jenkins v Blizzard* (1816), 1 Stark 418

newspaper, though it circulated in the town where he resided (*k*). The execution by a customer of a power of attorney to the new firm has been held to be powerful evidence of knowledge of the retirement of a partner (*l*), and proof of the preparation and transmission by a solicitor of the draft of a deed of dissolution may throw upon him the burden of showing the abandonment of intention to dissolve (*m*).

SECT. 4.
Notice of
Dissolution.

193 Sufficient notice is given to those who have not dealt with the firm before the date of the change or dissolution by the insertion of an advertisement in the *London, Edinburgh, or Dublin Gazette*, according as the firm has its principal place of business in England, Scotland, or Ireland (*n*). It is immaterial whether they have seen the advertisement in the *Gazette* or not, but an advertisement in any other newspaper cannot be given in evidence without preliminary proof that the customer was in the habit of taking that paper (*o*). A public advertisement in papers, taken at a reading room where the creditor was in the habit of reading the papers, has been received as evidence of knowledge, in a case in which there was no notice in the *Gazette* (*p*).

New
customers.
Sufficient
notice

SECT 5 —Winding up of Partnership Business

SUB-SECT 1—Continuation of Partners Authority

194 After dissolution, the partnership subsists merely for the purpose of completing pending transactions, winding up the business, and adjusting the rights of the partners (*q*), and for these purposes,

After
dissolution
partnership
continues for
winding up
only

(*k*) *Norwich and Lowestoft Navigation (Proprietors) v Theobald* (1828), Mood & M 153

(*l*) *Hart v Alexander* (1837), 2 M & W 484

(*m*) *Palerson v Zachariah and Arnold* (1815), 1 Stark 71

(*n*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 38 (2) see *Wrightson v Pullan* (1816), 1 Stark 375, *Godfrey v Turnbull and Macauley* (1795), 1 Esp 371, *sub nom Godfrey v Macauley* (1795), Peake, 209, n. As to the liability of a sleeping partner, see p 38, *ante*. A notice of a dissolution in the *Gazette* is admissible to prove such dissolution without being stamped (*Jenkins v Blizard* (1816), 1 Stark 418) but a notice in the *Gazette* of an agreement to dissolve, in order to be admissible as proof of such agreement, must be stamped (*May v Smith* (1795), 1 Esp 283). As to stamp duty generally, see title REVENUE. For a form of notice of dissolution and other forms relating thereto, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol IX, p 607, Vol XVI, p 453. The signature of the notice of dissolution must be verified by a statutory declaration made by a solicitor of the Supreme Court.

(*o*) *Leeson v Holt* (1816), 1 Stark 186

(*p*) *Rooth v Quin and Jauncy* (1819), 7 Price, 193, but as to the weight of such evidence see *Hart v Alexander, supra*, at pp 491, 494, see also *W'iver v Humble* (1812), 16 East, 169

(*q*) *Beak v Beak* (1675), 3 Swan 627, n, *Crawshay v Maule* (1818), 1 Swan 495, 507. Where the business of a partnership, the term of which had expired, was continued by both partners merely for the purpose of realisation and winding up, it was held that their conduct showed an intention not to continue the former business, and that a clause in the partnership articles, providing for purchase by the survivor of the share of the other on his death, had ceased to be applicable (*Myers v Myers* (1891), 60 L J (CH) 311). As to drawing on partnership banking accounts by a surviving partner, see title BANKERS AND BANKING, Vol I, pp 604, 605.

NOTE 5
Winding up
of Partner
ship
Business

Power to
pledge assets,
receive debts
etc

Rights of
creditors

Lapse of time

Arrangement
between
partners

and these only, the authority, rights and obligations of the partners continue (?)

195 Each partner has, after dissolution, authority to give a valid security on partnership property for money required for the completion of a pending contract (s), and any partner may, it seems, after dissolution, receive a debt and give a release or take a bill for it, although the terms of dissolution provide that, as between the partners, the debts should only be received by one of them (a).

Where two partners enter into a joint speculation with a third party, and afterwards dissolve partnership, the dissolution of their partnership does not prevent the third party, who continues to rely upon their joint responsibility, from holding them jointly liable (b).

A recognition of a debt in a letter from one ex-partner of a dissolved firm to another was held not to amount to such a promise or undertaking (c) to pay the debt as to take it out of the Statutes of Limitation (d), and part payment of a debt by a continuing partner after dissolution does not prevent a Statute of Limitation from running in favour of a retiring partner (e).

An arrangement between the members of a dissolved partnership that the debts of the firm shall be paid and the affairs wound up by a particular partner does not bind creditors of the firm even if they have notice of such arrangement (f), but a charge by a partner on

(r) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 38 compare *Booth v Parks* (1828), 1 Mol 465, *Wood v Braddick* (1808), 1 Taunt 104, 105, *Leuis v Reilly and Watson* (1841) 4 Per & Dav 629 "There may be a partnership, where, whether the parties have agreed for the determination of it at a particular period, or not, engagements must, from the nature of it, be contracted, which cannot be fulfilled during the existence of the partnership, and the consequence is, that for the purpose of making good those engagements with third persons it must continue, and then, instead of being, as it was a general partnership, it is a general partnership, determined, except as it still subsists for the purpose only of winding up the concerns" (*Crawshaw v Collins* (1808), 15 Ves 218, *per* Lord ELDON, L C, at p 226) "Where the partnership business is in one sense at an end, still you have not therefore put an end to the joint transactions. They must necessarily be carried on for the purpose of winding up the concern and everything belonging to it" (*Crawshaw v M'Vicar* (1844), 8 Beav 100, *per* Lord LANGDALE, M R, at p 116) With regard to the difference between a continuing partnership and one in course of winding up as affecting the liability of a retired partner for acts of the continuing partner, see *Smith v Winter* (1838), 4 M & W 454, see also pp 24, 37, *ante*

(s) *Butchart v Dresser* (1853), 10 Hare, 453, affirmed on appeal, 4 De G M & G 542, C A As to the power of a surviving partner, after dissolution, to give security for a past partnership debt, see *Re Clough Bradford Commercial Banking Co v Cure* (1885), 31 Ch D 324, and see p 27, *ante* As to pledges in favour of bankers, see title BANKERS AND BANKING, Vol I, p 634

(a) *King v Smith* (1829), 4 C & P 108 But as between the partners there would be accountability, see p 47 *ante*

(b) *Ault v Goodrich* (1828), 4 Russ 430

(c) See title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, pp 58 *et seq*

(d) *Re Hindmarsh* (1860), 8 W R 203

(e) *Watson v Woodman* (1875), L R 20 Eq 721 The rule is different where the retirement is secret (*Re Tucker, Tucker v Tucker*, [1894] 3 Ch 429, C A), see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, pp 74, 76.

(f) *Smith v Jameson* (1794), 5 Term Rep 601

his private property to secure his firm's banking account (g) is not available as a security for debts to the bank which are incurred after his death by the surviving partners who continue the business (h)

SECT. 5.
Winding up
of Partner-
ship
Business.

SUB-SECT. 2 — Distribution of Profits made after Dissolution

196 Deeds of partnership frequently provide that, when a partner retires or dies, the continuing or surviving partners shall buy his share, or have the option of doing so, upon specified terms with regard to time and mode of payment, rate of interest, or proportion of profits instead of interest, and other matters. Where such a provision is made and complied with in all material respects by the continuing or surviving partners, the outgoing partner is not entitled to any further or other share of the profits made after dissolution, except to the extent, if any, prescribed by such provisions (i)

On purchase
of share of
outgoing
partner.

Where a surviving partner exercises an option to buy a deceased partner's share at a valuation, but such valuation is not completed till some months after the death, the dissolution takes effect as at the date of the death, and the executors of the deceased partner are entitled to a share of profits up to the date of the valuation and to interest on the amount of the valuation after that date. But compensation for his work will, as a rule, be allowed to the surviving partner before ascertaining the amount of profit divisible (k)

Effect of
delay in
valuation
of share.

197 If there is no such provision (l), or if the terms of such an option (l) are not complied with, and the remaining partners continue to use the assets in the business, the outgoing partner or his estate has the option of taking either interest at 5 per cent per annum on the value of his share of the assets, or such share of the profits made after dissolution as the court may find to be attributable to the use of such share (m). Where executors of a

Where there
is no purchase
of share

(g) As to advances by bankers, see title BANKERS AND BANKING, Vol I, pp 630 *et seq*

(h) *Bank of Scotland v Christie* (1841), 8 Cl & Fin 214, H L

(i) Partnership Act 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 42 (2), compare *Vyse v Foster* (1874), L R 7 H L 318, with *Willetts v Blanford* (1842), 1 Hare, 253, and see p 64, *ante*

(k) *Yates v Finn* (1880), 13 Ch D 839, 841, *Brown v De Tastet* (1821), Jac 284, 298, 299, see p 63, *ante*. Such compensation was refused where the surviving partner was executor of the deceased, and carried on the trade for himself and the children of the deceased (*Burden v Burden* (1813), 1 Ves & B 170, *Stocken v Dawson* (1843), 6 Beav 371, 376, affirmed on appeal, *Stocken v Dawson* (1848), 17 L J (Ch) 282, 285, compare *Cook v Collingridge* (1823), Jac 607, 621, 623)

(l) See the text, *supra*, and p 63, *ante*

(m) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 42 (1), see p 63, *ante*. For the principle on which the court acted before this statute, see *Wedderburn v Wedderburn* (No 4) (1856), 22 Beav 84, *per* ROMILLY, M R., at p 99, see also *Vyse v Foster* (1874), L R 7 H L 318. It was well established that the use of the assets after dissolution, by partners who continued the business, entitled the outgoing partner to share in the profits produced by their use until a final settlement of accounts (*Featherstonhaugh v Fenwick* (1810), 17 Ves 298, 309, *Turner v. Major* (1862), 3 Giff 442)

SECT 5
Winding up
of Partner-
ship
Business

Duty of
 court to
 ascertain
 proportion
 Nature of
 inquiry

Circum-
 stances to be
 considered

Rules
 applicable
 where trust
 money used
 by partner
 who is trustee
 or executor

deceased partner accept interest on the value of their testator's share from dissolution to the date of payment, they cannot subsequently elect to take a share of profits instead (n).

198 It is a question for the court what proportion of the profits made after dissolution are, in the special circumstances, properly attributable to the assets of a retiring, bankrupt, or deceased partner (o). So, when continuing partners continue to use the assets of the dissolved partnership in the business, a retiring partner may be entitled to an inquiry what assets have been so used, what use has been made of them, and an account of the profits made in such business since the dissolution (p), and, in ascertaining the amount of the share of an outgoing partner, the value of the good will of the business, if any, must be taken into account, but it depends upon circumstances whether or not it has any appreciable value (q). The share of profits payable after dissolution in respect of the assets of a retiring, bankrupt, or deceased partner is not necessarily the share to which he was entitled before dissolution (r).

199 In the case of a loan of trust money forming part of the estate of a deceased partner by his trustees, of whom two were his surviving partners, to the members of his late firm, although the loan may be secured by mortgage of partnership property (a) the trustees are personally liable not only to make good the money so used, but to account for the profits made by such use, or to pay interest at 5 per cent per annum, and in such a case an inquiry will be directed whether it is to the interest of the *cestui que trust* to take interest or profits (b). If the partners of such trustees have notice of the breach of trust they are under the same liability (b). So, where the executor of a deceased partner improperly uses his testator's assets in the business carried on by

(n) *Smith v Everett* (1859), 27 Beav 446

(o) *Simpson v Chapman* (1853), 4 De G M & G 154, per TURNER, J. I at pp 171, 172, following and approving *Willett v Blanford* (1842), 1 Hare, 253

(p) *Featherstonhaugh v Fenwick* (1810), 17 Ves 298, 309

(q) *Smith v Everett*, *supra*, at pp 455, 456, and, as to disposal of good will, see p 104, *post*

(r) "The nature of the trade, the manner of carrying it on, the capital employed, the state of the account between the partnership and the deceased partner at the time of his death, and the conduct of parties after his death may materially affect the rights of the parties" (*Willett v Blanford*, *supra*, per WIGRAM, V-C, at p 272). The inquiry should be whether the profits were made by any and what application of the fund constituting the capital at the date of dissolution, or by the application of any other and what funds (*Crawshay v Collins* (1808), 15 Ves 218, see Lord ELDON's subsequent observations as to his decree in the latter case in *Crawshay v Collins* (1826), 2 Russ 325, 330, in *Brown v De Taslet* (1821), Jac 284, at p 297, and in *Cook v Collingridge* (1823) Jac 607, 622, 623). Where trade was carried on by a surviving partner, with the larger capital of a deceased partner, wrongfully claiming to do so on his own account, the court apportioned the profits to capital, after making all proper allowances including compensation for management to the surviving partner (*Yates v Finn* (1880), 13 Ch D 839).

(a) *Townend v Townend* (1859), 1 Giff 201, see *Flockton v Bunning* (1868), 8 Ch App 323, n

(b) *Flockton v Bunning*, *supra*

him as surviving partner, he is the person liable to account; but persons subsequently taken into partnership by him are not liable unless they have notice of the breach of trust (*c*).

Where an executor or trustee is charged with interest instead of profits, such interest may, upon special grounds—for example, where there was a duty to call in and accumulate—be calculated with yearly rests, although his partners may only be liable to make good the principal sum with simple interest (*d*).

SECT 5
Winding up
of Partner-
ship
Business.

Compound
interest.

200 The circumstances in which the assets are employed after the expiration of the partnership term by one partner may be such as to imply a new partnership at will, in which event the rights of the parties may continue to be governed by provisions applicable to the previous partnership (*e*).

New partner-
ship

SUB-SECT 3 — *Realisation and Disposal of Assets*

(1) *In General*

201 Upon dissolution each partner is entitled, as against the other partners in the firm, and all persons claiming through them in respect of their interests as partners, to have the partnership property applied in payment of the firm's debts and liabilities, and to have the surplus assets applied in payment of what is due to the partners after deducting what may be due from them to the firm (*f*). Subject to any contrary agreement, this implies a right to have the assets sold (*g*) to provide a fund for discharge of liabilities, and for the adjustment of the rights of the partners among themselves.

Right of
application
of assets

Implied right
to sale

Partnership articles often contain provisions intended to obviate a sale, especially in the event of a partial dissolution, and such provisions, if they can be acted upon, bind the partners. If, however, such provisions cannot be carried out, a sale may be necessary, although the articles may provide for the distribution of the assets among the partners *in specie*, and in this event any partner or his representatives may apply to the court to wind up the affairs of the firm (*h*).

Provisions
to obviate
sale

(*c*) *Macdonald v Richardson, Richardson v Marten* (1858), 1 Giff 81, 39

(*d*) *Jones v Foxall* (1852), 15 Beav 388, 395, 396, *Williams v Powell* (1852), 15 Beav 461, 470. For the principles on which the court acts in cases of this kind, see also *Docker v Somes* (1834), 2 My & K 655, per Lord BROUGHAM, at p 655, *Vyse v Foster* (1874), L R 7 H L 318, per Lord SELBORNE, at p 344, and see title MONEY AND MONEY LENDING, Vol XXI, p 43.

(*e*) *Parsons v Hayward* (1862), 4 De G F & J 474, see p 23, *ante*.

(*f*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 39. This provision gives express statutory recognition and effect to the equitable lien which a partner has on the property of the firm and on the shares of his co-partners, see, further, pp 61, 62, *ante*.

(*g*) *Wild v Milne* (1859), 26 Beav 504, *Featherstonhaugh v Fenwick* (1810), 17 Ves 298, *Burdon v Barkus* (1861), 3 Giff 412, (1862), 4 De G F & J 42, C A, *Steward v Blakeway* (1869), 4 Ch App 603, 609, compare *Re Bourne, Bourne v Bourne*, [1906] 2 Ch 427, 430, 431, C A, *Rigden v Pierce* (1822), Madd & G 353.

(*h*) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 39. *Taylor v Neale* (1888), 39 Ch D 538, compare *Cook v Collingridge* (1823), Jac 607, and as to the principles upon which the court acts in ordering a sale, see

SECT 5

(u) Sale by Order of Court

Winding up
of Partner-
ship
Business

When sale
may be
ordered.

202. A sale may be ordered by the court where an option for a surviving or continuing partner to purchase at a valuation is not exercised (i) or is a fraud upon the bankruptcy law (k), but where an agreement for purchase by a surviving partner at a valuation cannot be carried out in the precise manner stipulated, in consequence of the omission to provide for an umpire, the court may decline to order a sale and substitute itself for the arbitrators (l)

Sale of
partnership
land

203 When land is partnership property, properly so called, the court will order it to be sold, even though there are no outstanding partnership debts (m), but when it is really the subject not of partnership, but of joint ownership, it is not partnership property (n)

Order for
sale by court

204 A sale under an order of the court will be carried out in the manner most beneficial to the common interest (o). Such an order may be made on motion before trial of the action, where the partnership is clearly dissolved (p), or even where it is not dissolved but the position of the business is daily growing worse (q)

Mode of sale

The matter is frequently referred to a master in order that he may consider the best course to pursue, and the best way of selling (r), if necessary, a receiver and manager may be appointed until sale (s), and generally the court will mould its order to meet the circumstances of each case. For instance, when one partner has a greatly preponderating interest in the concern, liberty may be given to him

the text, *supra*. The same principles should, so far as practicable, guide the partners in disposing of the assets out of court. With regard to the valuation of and mode of dealing with unsaleable assets, see p 103, *post*

(i) *Downs v Collins* (1848), 6 Hare, 418

(k) *Wilson v Greenwood* (1818), 1 Swan 471, *Collins v Barker*, [1893] 1 Ch 578, *Whitmore v Mason* (1861), 2 John & H 204

(l) *Dinham v Bradford* (1869), 5 Ch App 519. "It is not the very essence and substance of the contract, so that no contract can be made out except through the medium of the arbitrators" (*ibid*, per Lord HATHERLEY, 1 C, at p 523 approved in *Horden v Horden*, [1910] A C 465, 474 P C). But in *Collins v Collins* (1858), 26 Beav 306, the court declined to appoint an umpire on the refusal of the valuers of the parties to do so.

(m) *Wild v Milne* (1859), 26 Beav 504, and see *Re Bourne, Bourne v Bourne*, [1906] 2 Ch 427. As between the real and personal representatives of deceased partners, the proceeds of sale of partnership land are deemed to be personal estate, see p 56, *ante*.

(n) *Steward v Blakeway* (1869), 4 Ch App 603, see also p 6, *ante*. In such a case a co owner is entitled to partition, but not to a sale, except under the Partition Acts, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 40), and 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 17), see title PARTITION, Vol XXI, pp 834 *et seq*.

(o) *Taylor v Neate* (1888), 39 Ch D 538, *Leaf v Coles* (1851), 1 De G M & G 171

(p) *Crawshay v Maule* (1818), 1 Swan 495, compare *Broadwood v Goding* (1835), 5 L J (Ch) 96

(q) *Bailey v Ford* (1843), 13 Sim 495

(r) *Wilson v Greenwood*, *supra*, *Madgwick v Wimple* (1843), 6 Beav 495, 502, *Leaf v Coles*, *supra*, *Crawshay v Maule*, *supra*, at p 529, compare *Blyth v Blyth* (1861), 4 L T 536

(s) *Waters v Taylor* (1813), 2 Ves & B 299 (where the court allowed the parties to submit proposals for the *interim* management of an opera house), and see title RECEIVERS

to submit proposals for the purchase of the shares of the other partners (f).

The court may give liberty to all or any of the partners to bid, but in that event the conduct of the sale is not given to those who have such liberty, neither may they interfere in any way with the sale (a).

In the absence of fraud, a partner who is entrusted with the winding up of the partnership affairs is not solely liable for loss resulting from an injudicious sale of the assets (b).

205 Book debts should be sold with the business when it is sold as a going concern (c).

Assets which are unsaleable must be charged in the accounts at a valuation (d).

SECT. 5 Winding up of Partner- ship Business.

Liberty for
partners to
bid
Liability for
loss on sale

Book debts.

Unsaleable
assets

(iii) Payment of Losses

206 In the absence of contrary agreement, losses, including losses of capital, are payable first out of profits, next out of capital, and, in case of deficiency, by the partners in the proportions in which they would be entitled to share profits (e).

How losses
prima facie
payable

Where partners agree to contribute capital in unequal shares but to divide the profits equally, and the assets prove insufficient to make good the capital, each partner is treated as liable to contribute an equal share of the deficiency, and then the assets are applied in paying to each partner rateably what is due to him from the firm in respect of capital (f).

Losses of
capital

(iv) Application of Assets Realised

207 The assets, including contributions, if any, by partners to make up losses and deficiencies of capital, are applicable in the following manner and order —

Order of
application
of assets

(1) Payment of the liabilities of the firm to persons who are not partners,

(2) Repayment rateably of advances by partners to the firm,

(3) Repayment rateably of the capital of the partners,

(i) *Syers v Syers* (1876), 1 App Cas 174, 183 (where an inquiry was directed what was the value of the interest of the other partners)

(a) *Wild v Milne* (1859), 26 Beav 504, *Dean v Wilson* (1878), 10 Ch D 136

(b) *Cragg v Ford* (1842), 1 Y & C Ch Cas 280

(c) *Johnson v Hume* (1864), 34 Beav 63, and the title of a periodical published by a partnership firm has been held to form part of the assets which ought to be realised, for what it may be worth, on dissolution (*Bradbury v Dickens* (1859), 27 Beav 53)

(d) This rule has been applied to emoluments from personal appointments (*Smith v Mules* (1852), 9 Hare, 556), and to an unassignable mail held by a partner (*Ambler v Bolton* (1872), L R 14 Eq 427). But a specific undertaking, which is the object of the partnership, may be held to be called out, and the ultimate account postponed until its completion (*McClean v Kennard* (1874), 9 Ch App 336)

(e) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 44 (a), and see p 64, ante

(f) *Garner v Murray*, [1904] 1 Ch 57. This was also the rule before 1890 (*Wood v Scoles* (1866), 1 Ch App 369, *Binney v Muir* (1886), 12 App Cas 160, P C). As to shares in a partnership, see, generally, pp 55 seq ante

SECT 5

Winding up
of Partner-
ship
Business

Indebtedness
in respect
of outgoing
partner's
share
Goodwill

Sale of
goodwill
includes right
to use name

(4) Distribution of the residue, if any, among the partners in the proportion in which profits are divisible (g).

208 In the absence of contrary agreement, the amount payable by the other partners in respect of the share of a deceased or outgoing partner is a debt from the other partners accruing at the date of death or dissolution, as the case may be (h)

(v) *Disposal of Goodwill*

209 The goodwill of the business carried on by a partnership forms part of the assets to be realised upon distribution (i)

210 The sale of the goodwill of a business, in the absence of contrary agreement, includes the right to use the name of the firm (k), unless such use is calculated to lead the public to believe that the vendor is still carrying it on and thus to subject him to liability (l). Where, however, goodwill is assigned but the actual use of the name is not assigned, the rights arising from the assign

(g) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 44 (b), *Binney v Nutrie* (1886), 12 App Cas 160, P C

(h) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 43

(i) *Re Davul and Matthews*, [1899] 1 Ch 378, 382, *Jennings v Jennings*, [1898] 1 Ch 378, 384, *Hall v Barrows* (1863), 4 De G J & Sm 150, 159, *Johnson v Helleley* (1864), 34 Beav 63 (where book debts were ordered to be sold with the business, so that the purchaser might secure the customers of the old firm) *Page v Ralliffe* (1896), 74 L T 343, *Hill v Fearis*, [1905] 1 Ch 466. Whether there is any goodwill or not seems to be a pure question of fact, and not of mixed law and fact (*A G v Boden*, [1912] 1 K B 539, 559). The grounds upon which goodwill ought to be treated and valued as a partnership asset are laid down in *Wedderburn v Wedderburn* (No 4) (1856), 22 Beav 84, *per ROMILLY, M R*, at p 104, as follows: "The goodwill of a trade, although inseparable from the business, is an appreciable part of the assets of the concern, both in fact and in the estimation of a court of equity. Accordingly, in reported cases, Lord ELDON held that a share of it properly, and as of right, belonged to the estate of the deceased partner. It does not survive to the remaining partners, unless by express agreement, but it may by agreement, as it may be agreed that any particular portion of the partnership assets shall so survive. Goodwill manifestly forms a portion of the subject matter which produces profits which constitutes partnership property and which is to be divided between the surviving partners and the estate of the deceased partner according to the terms of the contract, and when that is silent according to their shares in the concern. There is considerable difficulty in defining accurately what is included under this term 'goodwill,' and it seems to be one species of connection in trade which induces customers to deal with a particular firm. It varies almost in every case, but it is a matter distinctly appreciable which may be preserved (at least to some extent) if the business be sold as a going concern, but which is wholly lost if the concern is wound up, its liabilities discharged, and its assets got in and distributed. I am of opinion then that, both on principle and on the authority of decided cases, and on the ordinary rule—

I must, whenever there is a reputation and *comble* (1843), 6 Beav constituting goodwill, treat that as part of the *estate*, *supra*, at p 529.

(k) *Banks v Gibson* (1865), 34 Beav 566, 569
names, see title TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES, where the court allowed the

(l) *Chatteris v Isaacson* (1887), 57 L T 177, *Element of an opera house*)
8 Ch. App. 91; *Burchell v Wilde*, [1900] 1 Ch
Jarman, [1900] 2 Ch 698, compare *Levy v. W*
C A

ment are qualified by limiting the use of the name to which the goodwill is annexed, so as not to impose a personal liability on the assignors (*m*). If the goodwill is not sold, each partner may use the name of the firm, if he does not by doing so hold out the other partners as being still partners with him (*n*). If a partner agrees to retire and his partners buy his share but do not take any express assignment of the goodwill, they are not entitled to continue the use of his name as part of the style of the firm (*o*), and where a business is carried on under the name, solely or with any addition, of an outgoing partner who is still living and not bankrupt, a purchaser of the business including the goodwill is not entitled to use the name of the outgoing partner in such a way as to suggest that he is still connected with the business (*p*), unless the right to use the firm name is expressly assigned (*q*).

SECT. 5.
Winding up
of Partner-
ship
Business.

211 The vendor of the goodwill of a business is not, in the absence of contrary agreement or fraudulent breach of faith, precluded from carrying on a similar business in his own name (*a*), or from announcing that fact by general public advertising (*b*). He may deal with customers of the old firm (*c*), but he must not, directly or indirectly, canvass or solicit the customers of the old firm, either personally by private circulars or by public advertisements of such a nature as to be, in effect, appeals to old customers (*d*).

Rights of
Vendor

Though the vendor may carry on a similar business, he must not do so in the name of the old firm, and must not represent his business as the same business or as a continuation of the business the goodwill of which has been sold (*e*), nor may he issue circulars which suggest that he is still carrying it on (*f*). This rule is founded on the principle that a vendor must not derogate from his own grant (*g*). It therefore binds the persons who, as vendors, obtain the benefit of the consideration for the goodwill, but it does not bind persons who are not beneficially interested in

Restrictions
affecting
vendor of
goodwill

(*m*) *Townsend v Jarman*, [1900] 2 Ch 698, 705

(*n*) *Burchell v Wilde*, [1900] 1 Ch 551, C A, see p 1 ante

(*o*) *Gray v Smith* (1889), 43 Ch D 208, C A, and see *Jennings v Jennings*, [1898] 1 Ch 378, 384, 388, *Rosher v Young* (1901), 17 T L R 347

(*p*) *Scott v Rowland* (1872), 26 L T 391

(*q*) *Townsend v Jarman*, *supra*, at p 705

(*a*) *Shackle v Baker* (1808), 14 Ves 468, *Hamison v Gardner* (1817), 2 Madd 198, 221

(*b*) *Labouchere v Dawson* (1872), L R 13 Eq 322, approved of and adopted in *Trego v Hunt*, [1896] A C 7

(*c*) *Leggott v Barrett* (1880), 15 Ch D 306, 310, 313, 315, C A, overruling on this point *Ginesi v Cooper & Co* (1880), 14 Ch D 596

(*d*) *Labouchere v Dawson*, *supra*, *Curl Brothers, Ltd v Webster*, [1904] 1 Ch 685 (further extending the rule in *Trego v Hunt*, *supra*)

(*e*) *Churton v Douglas* (1859), John 174, 195, 198, *Orutwell v Lye* (1810), 17 Ves 335, *Hookham v Pottage* (1872), 8 Ch App 91

(*f*) *Vernon v Hallam* (1886), 34 Ch D 748, 752

(*g*) A sale of the goodwill of a business may include the benefit of a covenant precluding competition by persons employed by the vendor in such business (*Jacoby v Whitmore* (1883), 49 L T 335, C A, *Automobile Carriage Builders, Ltd v Sayer* (1909), 101 L T 419, *Townsend v Jarman*, *supra*, per FARWELL, L J, at p 704), and, as to covenants in restraint of trade, see, generally, title TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS

SECT 5
Winding up
of Partner-
ship
Business

such consideration, for example, a bankrupt whose share in the goodwill is sold by his trustee in bankruptcy (*h*), or a partner who has been expelled under a provision in the articles (*i*), or a receiver who has carried on a business for the benefit of other persons under an order of the court (*j*)

The same rule applies where the goodwill becomes, on dissolution, the property of one of the partners, either by purchase in the ordinary way or pursuant to a provision in the articles (*k*)

Valuation of
goodwill

212 An agreement that on dissolution the partnership assets shall be taken by one partner includes goodwill, and it must be valued on the footing that the outgoing partner is entitled to carry on a similar business (*l*)

Partners
restricted
against
competition

213 On a sale by the court in a partnership action it is usual and proper to state in the particulars or conditions of sale that the vendors are to be at liberty to carry on a similar business (*m*) It follows that the value of the goodwill, as an asset to be disposed of, is enhanced if the outgoing partners are bound by contract not to carry on a similar business, and it is a question of construction, usually arising on the articles, whether or not they are so bound (*n*) A vendor of the goodwill, whether a partner or not, may of course preclude himself by contract from using the name of the firm (*o*)

Assets
included
on sale of
business

214 On the sale of a partnership business the goodwill (*p*) and

(*h*) *Walker v Mottram* (1881), 19 Ch D 355, 364, C A

(*i*) *Dawson v Beeson* (1882), 22 Ch D 504, 509, 511, C A

(*j*) *Re Irish, Irish v Irish* (1888), 40 Ch D 49

(*k*) *Jennings v Jennings*, [1898] 1 Ch 378, *Trego v Hunt*, [1896] A C 7, overruling *Pearson v Pearson* (1884), 27 Ch D 145, C A, compare *Gillingham v Beedlow*, [1900] 2 Ch 242 (where a provision in articles that an outgoing partner might set up a similar business in the neighbourhood was held to be merely declaratory, and not to authorise solicitation of old customers) For definitions of goodwill, see *Trego v Hunt*, *supra*, per Lord HERSCHELL, at p 17, and *Churton v Douglas* (1859), John 174, 188 Lord ELDON's definition of goodwill in *Cruttwell v Lye* (1810), 17 Ves 335, at p 346, as 'nothing more than the probability that the old customers will resort to the old place' must now be regarded as inadequate, see *Trego v Hunt*, *supra*, at pp 17, 27

(*l*) *Keynolds v Bullock* (1878), 26 W R 678, *Hall v Barrows* (1863), 4 De G J & Sm 150 But goodwill is not included in a valuation of the property and effects of the business (*Chapman v Hayman* (1885), 1 T L R 397)

(*m*) *Johnson v Helleley* (1864), 34 Beav 63 For the decree in *Cook v Collingridge* (1823), Jac 607, in which the principles applicable to the valuation of goodwill as an asset on the sale of a partnership business were laid down by Lord ELDON, L C, see 27 Beav 456, n

(*n*) *Cooper v Watson* (1784), 3 Doug (K B) 413, S C, *sub nom Cooper v Watlington*, 2 Chit 451, *Kennedy v Lee* (1817), 3 Mer 441, 455

(*o*) *Pomeroy (Mrs), Ltd v Scalé* (1906), 23 T L R 170 Whether a person selling a share in a business under a power of attorney is authorised to bind his principal not to carry on a competing business was discussed, but not decided, in *Hawksley v Outram*, [1892] 3 Ch 359, 375, 378, 381, C A A covenant, unlimited as regards space, not to carry on business in a specified name is not void as being in restraint of trade (*Vernon v Hallam* (1886), 34 Ch D 748, 751), see title TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS

(*p*) *Shipwright v Clements* (1871), 19 W R 599; *Kingston, Miller & Co, Ltd v Thomas Kingston & Co, Ltd*, [1912] 1 Ch 575

trade marks used in connection with the business (a) pass without express mention

215. Although upon the construction of particular articles, where a general account and valuation is to be taken on the death of a partner, it may be that the goodwill should be included (b), the value of the goodwill should not, in the absence of contrary agreement, be included in the periodical balance sheets of a partnership firm, and, therefore, where the value of a deceased partner's share is, by agreement, governed by such balance sheet, his estate is not entitled to treat the goodwill as an asset (c)

Where a surviving partner sells the partnership business, the estate of his deceased partner is entitled to a share of the purchase-money representing the value, if any, of the goodwill, but, having regard to the rights of the surviving partners to carry on a similar business, such value may be infinitesimal (d)

216 Articles of partnership may of course contain such provisions as entitle surviving partners to retain the benefit of the goodwill, subject to payment of a share of profits to the estate of the deceased partner. It is a question of construction in each case whether the provisions in the articles have that effect or not (e), and the court will give effect to a provision in partnership articles that goodwill shall not be valued on the assets being taken over by a surviving partner (f)

SECT 3.
Winding up
of Partner-
ship
Business.

When
goodwill is
to be treated
as an asset
.

Agreement
for retention
of goodwill

Part VII.—Limited Partnerships.

SECT 1 —Definitions and Constitution

217 The formation of limited partnerships is authorised by the Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (g) (in this part of the title frequently referred to as "the Act")

Statutory
creation

(a) *Shipwright v Clements* (1871), 19 W R 599, *Hall v Barrows* (1863), 4 De G J & Sm 150, compare *Benbow v Low*, *Low v Benbow* (1881), 44 L T 875

(b) *Wade v Jenkins* (1860), 2 Giff 509

(c) *Hunter v Douling* [1895] 2 Ch 223, *Scott v Scott* (1904), 89 L T 582, following *Stewart v Glidstone* (1879), 10 Ch D 626, C A

(d) *Smith v Everell* (1859), 27 Beav 446, compare *Mellersh v Keen* (1859), 27 Beav 236. It was at one time considered that, on the death of a partner, the goodwill belonged exclusively to the surviving partners (*Hammond v Douglas* (1800), 5 Ves 539, *Lewis v Langdon* (1835), 7 Sim 421), but it is now settled that it forms part of the assets of the firm in which the estate of the deceased partner is entitled to share, and, in the absence of contrary agreement, they are entitled to have it sold with the other assets (*Re David and Matthews*, [1899] 1 Ch 378, 382, see note (s), p 104, ante)

(e) *Smith v Nelson* (1905), 92 L T 313

(f) *Hordern v Hordern*, [1910] A C 465, P C

(g) 7 Edw 7, c 24, ss 2, 4. The Act, which came into operation on the 1st January, 1908, for the first time renders it possible for a person to become an actual partner in a British mercantile firm, upon the terms

- SECT 1**
Definitions and Constitution
- Limited partnership**
Limited partner
- General partner**
- Interpretation of terms**
- 218** A limited partnership must not consist, if carrying on a banking business, of more than ten partners, and if carrying on any other business, of more than twenty (*h*), of whom one at least is a general partner and one at least is a limited partner (*i*)
- 219** A limited partner is one who contributes a stated amount of capital or property, and who is not liable for the firm's debts beyond that amount (*h*), unless he acts in such a way as to deprive himself of the privileges of a limited partner (*l*) A corporation may be a limited partner (*m*)
- 220** A general partner is any partner other than a limited partner (*n*) General partners are liable for all the firm's obligations (*o*) They are, in effect, managing partners and, if the firm is wound up by the court, they are, subject to certain modifications, in the same position as directors of a company (*p*)
- 221** Under the Act (*q*) "firm," "firm name," and "business" have the same meanings as in the Partnership Act, 1890 (*r*)
- that his liability to the creditors of the firm shall be strictly limited, like that of a shareholder in a limited company, to a fixed amount, representing the capital invested by him in the business. He is in the position of a sleeping partner with limited liability. It was at one time and in some quarters anticipated that something of the same kind had been effected by the Partnership Law Amendment Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 86), commonly called "Bovill's Act," the main provisions of which are now incorporated in the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), ss 2, 3, by which the earlier Act was repealed (see pp 8 *et seq*, *ante*). But it was soon established by the decisions of the court that the first four sections of Bovill's Act were merely declaratory of the then existing law, and the investor under that Act found himself in a somewhat anomalous position. If his agreement was skillfully framed he was not a partner, but a creditor, precluded from proving in competition with other creditors of the firm, unless he took the wise precaution of obtaining some security for his loan, while if his agreement had been framed by an unskilful or careless practitioner who endeavoured to secure for him the rights of a partner, he might easily be saddled with the unlimited liabilities incurred by an ordinary acting or sleeping partner see pp 24, 34, *ante*
- (*h*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 4 (2) A partnership consisting of more than the prescribed number (see p 16 *ante*) cannot be registered as a limited partnership it must be incorporated as a limited company under the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), unless it is formed pursuant to some other Act, or to letters patent, or is engaged in working mines in the Stannaries, see *ibid*, s 1, title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 44
- (*i*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 4 (2) For forms of limited partnership deed, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XXI, pp 454, 460
- (*k*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 4 (2)
- (*l*) See p 110, *post*, and see Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), ss 4 (3), 6
- (*m*) *Ibid*, s 4 (4)
- (*n*) *Ibid*, s 3
- (*o*) *Ibid*, s 4 (2)
- (*p*) See p 113 *post*
- (*q*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 3
- (*r*) 53 & 54 Vict c 39, ss 4, 45; see pp 4, 5, *ante*

SECT. 2 — *Registration*SUB-SECT 1 — *Effect of Non registration*SECT. 2.
Registration.

222. If a limited partnership is not registered with the Registrar of Joint Stock Companies (s) it is treated as a general partnership, and the limited partners are then under the same liabilities as general partners (t) Moreover, each general partner is liable to a fine of £1 per day during default in registration (u)

Registration essential

Penalty for default

SUB-SECT 2 — *Particulars Required to be Registered*

223 On the formation of a limited partnership the following particulars must be registered, namely, the firm name, the general nature of the business, the principal business place, the full name of each partner, the date of commencement and term of the partnership, a statement that it is limited, the description of each limited partner as such, and the amount contributed by him, and whether in cash or how otherwise These particulars are to be contained in a statement signed by all the partners and sent by post or delivered to the registrar (v)

Statement on first registration

224 If any change is made in the firm name, the general nature, or principal place, of the business, the term or character of the partnership, the partners or the name of any partner, the sum contributed by any limited partner, or the liability of a partner by reason of his becoming a limited partner instead of a general partner, or *vice versa*, a notice specifying such change, signed by the firm, must be sent by post or delivered to the registrar within seven days for registration (x)

Notice of change in firm

225 Notice of any transaction by which a general partner becomes a limited partner, or of any assignment of a limited partner's share, must be advertised in the *London, Edinburgh, or Dublin Gazette*, according as the limited partnership is registered in England, Scotland, or Ireland (b)

Advertisement of changes

SUB-SECT 3 — *Provisions Relating to Registration*

226 The Registrar of Joint Stock Companies is the registrar under the Act (c)

Registrar

(s) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 15, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 37

(t) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c, 24), s 5 As to such liabilities, see pp 34 *et seq*, *ante*

(u) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 9 (2)

(v) *Ibid*, s 8 For form of application for registration containing the prescribed statement, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol XVI, p 467

(a) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 9 For form of notice, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol. XVI, p 470

(b) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 10

(c) *Ibid*, s 15 The several offices for the registration of such companies in London, Edinburgh, and Dublin are the offices for the registration of limited partnerships carrying on business within those parts of the United Kingdom in which they are respectively situated (*ibid*)

SECT 2	He must keep a register and index of all registered limited partnerships and statements in relation thereto (<i>d</i>)
Registration	Every such statement is to be filed in the registry, and a certificate of registration is to be sent by post to the registering firm (<i>e</i>)
Register	Such certificate, or a copy, certified by the registrar or assistant registrar, of any registered statement, is evidence in all civil and criminal proceedings (<i>f</i>)
Certificates	
Right of inspection	Any person may inspect the register and obtain a certified copy of, or extract from, any registered statement upon payment of the prescribed fees (<i>g</i>)
Penalty for false statement.	A person who knowingly makes, signs, sends, or delivers a false statement for registration is liable to imprisonment with hard labour for a maximum term of two years (<i>h</i>)

SECT 3—*Modifications of General Law of Partnership*

SUB-SECT 1—*In General*

Application of general law of partnership	227 The rules of law and equity relating to partnership, as consolidated and amended by the Partnership Act, 1890 (<i>i</i>), apply to limited partnerships with the modifications enacted by the Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (<i>k</i>). In addition to the provisions in relation to registration already mentioned (<i>l</i>), these modifications relate to the matters dealt with in the following sub-sections (<i>m</i>)
--	---

SUB-SECT 2—*Powers and Liabilities of a Limited Partner*

Powers.	228 A limited partner may inspect the firm's books and examine into the state and prospects of the business personally or by his agent, and may advise with the other partners thereon (<i>n</i>), but he must not take any other part in the management of the business, and he cannot bind the firm (<i>n</i>), nor may he withdraw any part of his capital (<i>o</i>)
Liabilities	So long as he complies with these provisions a limited partner is only liable for the firm's debts and obligations to the extent of his capital (<i>p</i>). If he withdraws any part of such capital he is liable to the extent of the amount so withdrawn (<i>q</i>), and, if he takes

(*d*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 14

(*e*) *Ibid*, s 13

(*f*) *Ibid*, s 16 (2). For form of certificate, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Preambles*, Vol XVI, p 469

(*g*) For inspection, not exceeding 1s, for certificate of registration, not exceeding 2s, for certified copies, not exceeding 6d per folio or (in Scotland) per sheet of 200 words (Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 16 (1))

(*h*) *Ibid*, s 12

(*i*) 53 & 54 Vict c 39 see pp 3 *et seq*, *ante*

(*k*) 7 Edw 7, c 24 s 7

(*l*) See p 109, *ante*

(*m*) See the text, *infra*, and p 111, *post*

(*n*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 6 (1)

(*o*) *Ibid*, s 4 (3)

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 4 (2)

(*q*) *Ibid*, s. 4 (3)

part in the management for any period, he is liable as a general partner for all debts and obligations incurred during such period (1)

SUB-SECT 3 — *Death, Bankruptcy, or Lunacy of a Limited Partner*

229 A limited partnership is not dissolved by the bankruptcy or death of a limited partner (s). His capital vests in his trustee in bankruptcy or his legal personal representative, who has, apparently, rights similar to those of an assignee of a share in an ordinary partnership (t).

If a limited partner becomes a lunatic, that event does not *ipso facto* dissolve the partnership, but, if his share cannot otherwise be ascertained or realised, the court may dissolve the partnership (s).

SUB-SECT 4 — *Other Modifications*

230 When differences arise about ordinary matters of business, the decision rests with a majority of the general partners (a) instead of a majority of all the partners, as in the case of an ordinary partnership (b). The general partners may admit new partners without the consent of a limited partner (c), although in the case of an ordinary partnership the consent of all the partners is required (d).

231 A person to whom a limited partner assigns his share with the consent of the general partners stands, in one important respect, in a different position from the assignee of a share in an ordinary partnership (e). He becomes a limited partner, and has all the rights previously belonging to the assignor (f).

If the share of a limited partner becomes charged to secure his separate debt this does not, as in the case of an ordinary partnership (g), entitle the other partners to dissolve the partnership (h).

232 A limited partner is precluded from exercising the usual right of a partner in an ordinary partnership of dissolving the partnership by notice (i).

SECT. 8.
Modifica-
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership.

Bankruptcy
or death of
limited
partner
Lunacy.

Special
powers of
general
partners

Assignment
of share of
limited
partner

Charge on
share

No right to
dissolve by
notice

(1) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 6 (1), see Lindley, *Law of Partnership*, 8th ed., pp 903, 904 (where the effect of an agreement as to the terms on which a partner may retire, or as to the rights of the trustee or executors of a bankrupt or deceased partner, are discussed), see also title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 75.

(s) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 6 (2), compare titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 161, EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 221, LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 442, 443, p 87, *ante*.

(t) See pp 51, 57, *ante*.

(a) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 6 (5) (a).

(b) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (8), see p 49, *ante*.

(c) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 6 (5) (d).

(d) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 24 (7), see p 50, *ante*.

(e) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 31, see p 57, *ante*.

(f) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 6 (5) (b).

(g) Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s. 33 (2), compare *ibid*, s 23 (2), see pp 59, 87, *ante*.

(h) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 6 (5) (c).

(i) *Ibid*, s 6 (5) (e), compare Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c 39), ss 26, 32 (c), see p 85, *ante*.

SECT 3

SUB-SECT 5—*Winding up on Dissolution.*

Modifica-
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership

Winding up
otherwise
than by the
court

233 Unless the court otherwise orders (*k*), the affairs of a limited partnership are, on dissolution, to be wound up by the general partners (*l*). In so doing they must, subject to the provisions of the Act (*m*), be guided by the rules applicable to the winding up of an ordinary partnership, treating the limited partners as sleeping partners (*n*).

SUB-SECT 6—*Winding up by the Court*(1) *In General*

How wound
up

234 A limited partnership, registered under the Act (*m*), may be wound up by the court as an unregistered company under the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (*o*). Such winding up is governed by the provisions of that Act (*p*) and of the Companies (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, relating to the winding up of registered companies (*q*), with certain exceptions and additions applicable to unregistered companies generally (*r*), and, with certain modifications applicable, to limited partnerships only (*a*).

Application
of general
practice

The winding up of companies by the court generally is dealt with elsewhere (*b*), and it is therefore only necessary to point out in what respects the practice, procedure and principles adopted and acted

(*k*) See p 114, *post*

(*l*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 6 (3). For form of deed of dissolution, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XVI, p 165

(*m*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24)

(*n*) See p 101, *ante*. This follows from the Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 7, which, in effect, renders the provisions governing an ordinary partnership applicable to a limited partnership in cases not specially provided for by the Act. The winding up by the general partners is, therefore, not a voluntary winding up within the meaning of the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), and there can be no winding up subject to the supervision of the court, see *ibid*, s 268 (1) (*u*), title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 648, and p 113, *post*

(*o*) 8 Edw 7, c 69, s 267

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 268

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 273

(*r*) The exceptions and additions are contained in the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 268, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 647 *et seq*

(*a*) The modifications applicable to the winding up of a limited partnership, other than those applicable to other unregistered companies, are contained in the Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909 (Stat R & O, 1909, p 608), which came into operation on the 1st April, 1909, see Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 268 (1) (*vi*), title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 647, note (*u*). The concurrence of the President of the Board of Trade is required in any rules modifying the provisions of the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), as applicable to the winding up of limited partnerships, and the Board has the same powers with regard to the appointment, removal, and salaries of officers, surveillance of liquidators, and duties, as in relation to the winding up of companies; see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 431—437

(*b*) As regards registered companies, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 391 *et seq*, and as regards unregistered companies, see *ibid*, pp 647 *et seq*.

upon generally do not apply to the winding up of a limited partnership and what additional or substituted provisions are applicable (c).

A limited partnership, being for this purpose an unregistered company, cannot be wound up voluntarily or subject to the supervision of the court (d).

(u) *Definitions*

235 In the application of the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (e), and the Companies (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, and the forms thereby prescribed, to the winding up of a limited partnership, the words "limited partnership" are substituted for "company," the words "general partner" for "director," "secretary" and "secretary or chief officer," the words "manager, clerk or servant" for "officer," the word "partner" for "member" and "shareholder," and the words "principal place of business as registered" for "registered office," except where the context or subject-matter otherwise requires (f), and except for the purposes of the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (e), s. 268, where "member" means only a "general partner" and "principal place of business" means "principal place of business as registered" (g).

(m) *Jurisdiction*

236 The High Court of Justice (h) is the only court which has jurisdiction to make an order for winding up a limited partnership registered in England (i), but the judge making such order may, then or afterwards, direct that the winding up of any limited partnership whose registered place of business is situated within the jurisdiction (h) of the Chancery Court of either of the Counties

SECT 3
Modifica-
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership.

No winding
up voluntarily
or under
supervision
Definitions.

Jurisdiction
of High Court

(c) The questions dealt with in this section are in the main arranged in the same order as the similar questions in title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 391 *et seq*, but in a few cases, *e g*, the right to inspect the file of proceedings (see p 116, *post*), and the powers of the Board of Trade (see note (a), p 112, *ante*), it has been thought more convenient to adopt a slightly different arrangement.

(d) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 267. It would seem to follow that the Official Receiver cannot present a petition for the winding up of a limited partnership under *ibid*, s 137 (2), see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 403, 648, and see note (a), p 112, *ante*.

(e) 8 Edw 7, c 69.

(f) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 1. In Ireland, no rules have been framed under the Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), but a limited partnership in Ireland can be wound up under the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), and Rules made thereunder in 1910 (*Re Rodger and the Limited Partnerships Act*, 1907 (1911), unreported).

(g) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 6.

(h) This jurisdiction has not been specially assigned to any particular judge under the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, s 69), s 132, but petitions have been heard and disposed of by the judges of the Chancery Division, who have jurisdiction to wind up companies (*Re Hughes & Co*, [1911] 1 Ch 342), and see title COURTS, Vol IX, p 61.

(i) The Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 131, does not apply, it is excluded by the Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 7.

(k) See also Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69),

SECT 3
Modifica-
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership

Inferior
 courts

Grounds for
 winding up
 by court

Inability to
 pay debts

Just and
 equitable
 grounds

Palatine of Lancaster or Durham, or of any county court having jurisdiction to wind up a company, shall proceed in such court (*l*)

(iv) *Grounds for Winding up*

237 A limited partnership may be wound up upon the same grounds as an unregistered company, namely, whenever it has been dissolved, or has ceased to carry on business, or is unable to pay its debts, or the court is of opinion that it is just and equitable for it to be wound up (*m*) If it carries on business as an assurance company, failure on its part to comply with certain statutory requirements affords an additional ground for winding up (*n*)

238 When failure to comply with a demand for payment of a debt of £50 or upwards is relied upon as evidence of inability to pay debts, the demand must have been served at the principal place of business as registered, by delivering it to one of the general partners or to some person having, at the time of service, the control or management of the business there, unless the court otherwise orders (*o*)

239 In deciding whether it is just and equitable to wind up a limited partnership the court will probably have regard rather to the principles upon which ordinary partnerships are ordered to be dissolved than those upon which limited companies are ordered to be wound up (*p*) Where a limited partnership is being carried on at a loss, and the general partner, having made several drawings on account of profits, refuses without any sufficient reason to sign the annual general account under which drawings in excess of profits would be repayable, and otherwise acts in a way calculated

s 268 (1) (1), as modified by the Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, rr 1, 6, title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 391, 650 This direction does not appear to be a transfer within the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 133, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 541, 542 There is no express statutory provision nor rule enabling the proceedings to be sent back to the High Court They are to "proceed" in the inferior court (Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 7), but any decision of such court is subject to the ordinary right of appeal in the case of a palatine court to the Court of Appeal, and in the case of a county court to the High Court, see title COURTS, Vol IX, pp 59, 62, 63

(2) Such court has all the powers of the High Court in relation to such winding up (Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 7) As to such courts, see titles COUNTRY COURTS, Vol VIII, pp 405 *et seq*, COURTS, Vol IX, pp 120 *et seq*

(*m*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 268, and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 650, 651

(*n*) Assurance Companies Act, 1909 (9 Edw 7, c 49), s 23, and see *ibid*, s 15, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 636 *et seq* The Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 137 (2), is not expressly excluded, but it is inapplicable, because a limited partnership cannot be wound up voluntarily or subject to supervision within the meaning of that Act, see note (*n*), p 112, *ante*

(*o*) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 11, and see note (*t*), p. 42, *ante*

(*p*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 7

prejudicially to affect the carrying on of the business, a winding-up order may be made as being just and equitable (g).

(v) *Practice*

240 A petition may be presented by any general partner or, in the name of the firm, by all the general partners (i). Creditors and contributories (s) may also petition either together or separately (t), but certain statutory restrictions imposed in the case of petitions by contributories of companies do not apply (a).

241 A petition for winding up must be presented to the High Court of Justice (a), and should be in the prescribed form as nearly as circumstances admit (b). It must be dated (c), and, if presented in the firm name, must be signed by all the general partners (d).

A petition, unless presented in the name of the firm by all the general partners jointly, if there are more than one, must be served upon the limited partnership at its principal place of business as registered, by delivering it to one of the general partners there, or to some person having at the time of service the control or management of the partnership business there, unless the court or a judge shall otherwise direct, and a petition presented in the name of the firm by all the general partners jointly, if there are more than one, or presented by any general partner, must be served on each of the limited partners personally, unless the court or a judge shall otherwise direct (e).

No express provision is made for the service of a petition presented by a creditor or a limited partner, but the rules contain a general provision that every notice and other document required to be served upon the limited partnership for the service of which no special mode is prescribed may be served by post or by leaving it at the principal place of business of the limited partnership as registered, in an envelope addressed to the limited partnership in the firm name as registered, and this provision probably applies (f).

SECT 8
Modifica-
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership.

Who may
petition

Presentation
and form of
petition

Service of
petition

(g) *Re Hughes & Co.*, [1911] 1 Ch 342

(r) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 11

(s) See Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 60), s 137

(1) (a), (b), (3): title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 401, 402

(t) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 8. The word "contributory" is not expressly defined, but the joint effect of the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 60), s 124, and the Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, rr 1, 3, is that every partner is for this purpose a contributory. A limited partner may, therefore, present a petition (*Re Hughes & Co.*, *supra*, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 398)

(a) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 8

(b) *Ibid.*, rr 9, 10. These rules exclude the Companies (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, rr 11, 25, 28 (Stat R & O, 1909, p 61), and R S C (Ireland), 1905, Ord 74, rr 1, 3, and prescribe the form of petition and the form of title for all proceedings in the winding up

(c) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 10

(d) *Ibid.*, r 9

(e) *Ibid.*, r 11, and see note (t), p 42, *ante*

(f) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 11. But in such a case it may be advisable to obtain the direction of the court

SECT 3
Modifica-
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership.

Procedure
before hearing
of petition
File of
proceedings
Right to
inspect file
and take
copies

Practice on
and after
hearing of
petition

Effect of
winding up
order

Power to stay
proceedings

242 The provisions of the Companies (Winding-up) Rules 1909, with reference to the distinctive number of the petition and other proceedings in the winding up, the presentation, filing, advertisement, and verification of the petition, and the attendance to satisfy the registrar that the rules have been complied with by the petitioner, are applicable, and must be complied with (*g*)

243 The petition and other documents in the winding up are placed in a continuous file, which is kept at the registrar's office, and not in the Central Office of the High Court of Justice (*h*)

Each general or limited partner is entitled free of charge to inspect the file of proceedings and to take copies or extracts (*i*)
 He may also be furnished with copies or extracts at the prescribed rate of payment (*k*)

244 The practice with regard to notice of intention to appear at the hearing, adjournment of the petition, substitution of a petitioner, the wishes of creditors and contributories, notice to, and the taking of possession by, the official receiver, and the completion, form, and gazetting of the winding-up order, is governed by the rules applicable to the winding up of a company (*l*)

The effect of an order to wind up a limited partnership is the same as that of a similar order in the case of a company, but no complication can arise from the previous existence of a voluntary winding up (*m*)

(vi) *Stay of Proceedings*

245 The provisions of the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908, and the Rules thereunder with respect to staying and restraining actions and proceedings against a company after the presentation of a petition for winding up and the making of a winding-up order (*n*), apply, in the case of a limited partnership (treated as an unregistered company), not only to actions against the firm, but also, where the application to stay or restrain is by a creditor, extend to actions and proceedings against any general or limited partner (*o*)

(*g*) Companies (Winding up) Rules, 1909, rr 11 (2), 16—21, 26, 27, 29—30, 32—36, and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 404—406

(*h*) Companies (Winding up) Rules, 1908, r 16, and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 558

(*i*) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 16

(*k*) Companies (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 19 This rule, as modified, provides in effect that every person who has been a general partner, manager, clerk, or servant of the limited partnership, and every duly authorised officer of the Board of Trade, is entitled free of charge, and every contributory and every creditor whose claim or proof has been admitted is entitled, on payment of a fee of 1s for each hour or part of an hour occupied, at all reasonable times to inspect the file of proceedings in the winding up and to take copies or extracts from any document there, or to be furnished with such copies or extracts at a rate not exceeding 4d per folio of seventy-two words

(*l*) See Companies (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, rr 33, 34, 36, 37—41. see also title COMPANIES, Vol-V, pp 408, 412, 413

(*m*) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 417 *et seq*

(*n*) See *ibid.*, pp 409, 533 *et seq*, 543, 653

(*o*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), ss 268 (1) (vii), 270, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 653

When an order has been made to wind up a limited partnership, no action or proceeding can be begun or continued against either the firm or any partner, except by leave of the court and subject to such terms as the court may require (p)

SECT. 2.
Modifica-
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership.

(vii) *Proceedings by Official Receiver*

246 The procedure with regard to a provisional liquidator, special manager (q), and official receiver (r), the statement of affairs (s), the preliminary report of the official receiver (a), the first meetings of creditors and contributories (b), and the further report of the official receiver (c), as prescribed in the winding up of companies, is applicable to limited partnerships with the following modifications —

Proceedings
by official
receiver

247 The statement of affairs must be made out, submitted, and verified by the general partners

Statement
of affairs

The preliminary report must deal with the contributions of the partners, the estimated amount of assets and liabilities, the causes of failure (if any), and the question whether inquiry is desirable with regard to the promotion, formation, failure, or conduct of the business of the limited partnership (d)

Preliminary
report

248 The official receiver must give notice to each limited partner to attend the first meeting, and it is the duty of every such limited partner to attend (e) He must also give similar notice to each of the general partners and such of the managers, clerks, and servants as in his opinion ought to attend, and it is then duty to do so (f)

First meeting

249 The official receiver may make a further report to the court stating the manner in which the partnership was formed, whether in his opinion any fraud has been committed in its promotion, formation, or otherwise, and any other matters which he considers it desirable to bring to the notice of the court (g)

Further
report

On consideration of the further report the court may, if fraud is

Public
examination
of promoters
and partners

(p) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), ss 142, 271, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 419, 533, 653

(q) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 420 *et seq*

(r) See *ibid*, pp 423 *et seq*, Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, rr 12, 14, 15

(s) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 425 *et seq*

(a) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 148 (1), see also title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 427, 428

(b) See *ibid*, p 428

(c) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 148 (2), see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 429 *et seq*

(d) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 12

(e) *Ibid*, r 15

(f) Companies (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 119, see also title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 428

(g) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 12, Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c 69), s 148 (2), see title COMPANIES, Vol. V. pp 429, 430.

SECT 3
Modifica
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership
 ———

suggested, direct the public examination of any person who has taken part in the promotion or formation of the partnership, or has been a general or limited partner, with regard to the promotion, formation, or conduct of the business of the partnership, or his own conduct as a partner (*h*) The procedure is the same as in the case of the winding up of a company (*i*)

Fees and
remuneration

250 The fees and remuneration of the official receiver are the same as in the case of a company (*h*)

(viii) *Powers and Duties of Liquidator*

Powers and
duties of
liquidator

251 The winding up is conducted by a liquidator (*l*), whose powers and duties are similar to those of the liquidator of a company (*m*), but he cannot prove in competition with separate creditors against the estate of bankrupt and insolvent contributories (*n*)

Committee of
inspection

The committee of inspection is elected in the same way and has the same powers as in the case of a company (*o*), and similar meetings of creditors and contributories are to be held (*p*)

Realisation
of assets.

252 The jurisdiction and procedure with regard to delivery of assets and documents to the liquidator (*q*), payment into the bank (*r*), discovery by private examination (*a*), and proceedings for misfeasance against promoters, general partners, managers, clerks, or servants of the partnership (*b*), are the same as in the winding up of a company, and the retrospective rights of the liquidator are also similar (*c*)

(ix) *The Contributories*

Contribu-
tories

253 The assets of a limited partnership, when realised by the liquidator, form the primary fund for payment of the debts and liabilities of the firm, the costs, charges and expenses of the winding up, and for adjustment of the rights of the partners among themselves. If such assets are insufficient, the partners, both past and present, limited and general, may be liable to contribute to

(*h*) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 12

(*i*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 175 (1), see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 430 *et seq*

(*k*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 268, repealing the Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 6 (4), see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 434

(*l*) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 17

(*m*) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 438—464

(*n*) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 17, see p 120, *post*

(*o*) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 438, 464 *et seq*

(*p*) See *ibid*, pp 466 *et seq*

(*q*) See *ibid*, pp 472, 473

(*r*) See *ibid*, pp 473, 474

(*a*) See *ibid*, pp 474 *et seq*

(*b*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 215, as modified by the Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 1, and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 478 *et seq*

(*c*) *Ibid*, pp 485 *et seq* It may, in some cases, be desirable for the liquidator to obtain a vesting order in respect of all, or some of, the assets.

the assets for these purposes. The partners so liable, or alleged to be so liable, are called "contributories" (*d*)

As regards limited partners, the existing capital of a limited partner, of course, forms part of the assets of the firm, and he is not liable to contribute anything further, unless he has drawn out or received back part of his capital, in which case he is liable to contribute the amount so drawn out or received back. Further, if he has during any period been a general partner, he is liable as a general partner in respect of partnership debts and obligations incurred during that period (*e*)

As regards general partners, a present general partner is under the same unlimited liability as in the case of an ordinary partnership (*f*). A past general partner is liable to contribute only in respect of debts and liabilities incurred while he remained a general partner, but, if he has been a limited partner, and has withdrawn any part of the capital contributed by him, as such, he is liable to contribute the amount so withdrawn (*g*)

Past partners, whether limited or general, are not liable to contribute unless the court finds that the existing partners are unable to pay the contributions required from them (*h*)

254 As against creditors who are not partners, no partner, whether limited or general, can prove in competition with such creditors for any money due to him from the firm in his character of a partner, although such sum may be taken into account in adjusting the rights of the partners among themselves (*i*)

255 In the event of the death of a solvent contributory, the rights of the liquidator against his estate are the same as in the winding up of a company (*k*). But, if the contributory dies insolvent, and an order is made for the administration of his estate according

SECT. 3
Modifications of
General
Law of
Partnership.

Contribution
by limited
partners

Contribution
by general
partner

Past partners

Creditors
having
priority over
claim of
partners

Pro of against
insolvent con-
tributories

(*d*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 124, compare *ibid*, s 269 (1), and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 487 *et seq*, 651, 652. In the winding up of a company the persons liable to contribute are the shareholders whose shares are not in fact fully paid, or although purporting to be fully paid are held by the court to be wholly or partially unpaid. But the term "contributory" is also applied to all shareholders entitled to participate in the surplus assets, if any, and therefore the list of contributories includes the names of fully paid shareholders, although no calls can be made upon them, see *Re Angelsen Colliery Co* (1866), 1 Ch App 555, title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 487. In the case of a limited partnership, therefore, the list of contributories probably includes the names of all the partners, whether liable to contribute to the assets or merely entitled to share in the surplus assets, if any.

(*e*) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 4, and see p 110, *ante*. This and the following provisions (see the text, *infra*) are substituted for the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 123 (see title COMPANIES Vol V, pp 161 *et seq*), which does not apply to limited partnerships (Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r. 3)

(*f*) See p 34, *ante*

(*g*) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 4 (2)

(*h*) *Ibid*, r 4 (3)

(*i*) *Ibid*, r 4 (4)

(*k*) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 490 *et seq*

SECT 3
Modifica-
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership

to the law of bankruptcy, the trustee of his estate represents him for the purposes of the winding up (*l*). Where such an order is made, or where a contributory becomes bankrupt or insolvent, the rights of the liquidator under the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (*m*), ss 127, 151, are modified, and he is precluded from proving against the estate in competition with the separate creditors for value of the contributory (*n*)

Rectification
of register

256 For the purpose of settling the list of contributories the court has power to rectify the register of the limited partnership in respect of the name of any partner, the sum contributed by any limited partner, and the nature of the liability of any partner (*o*)

List of con-
tributories

The list of contributories is settled by the liquidator (*p*), and, subject to the modifications already mentioned (*q*), the provisions relating to contributories in the winding up of a company apply to the case of a limited partnership (*r*)

Calls

Proof of debts
Distribution

257 The power of the court to make and enforce payment of calls and the procedure relating to the proof of debts and the distribution of the assets of a company among its creditors are dealt with elsewhere (*s*), and these provisions are applicable to the case of a limited partnership (*t*) subject to the modifications already mentioned (*u*)

(x) *Surplus Assets*

Distribution
of surplus
assets

258 After the debts and liabilities of the firm have been discharged, the surplus assets are distributed among the contributories, that is, the partners, according to their rights and interests (*a*). These rights and interests are adjusted by the court (*b*), and are governed by the law applicable to an ordinary partnership (*c*) rather than by the principles acted upon in the winding up of a company. These principles are dealt with elsewhere (*d*)

(xi) *Miscellaneous*

Stay.

259 The power to stay proceedings in the winding up (*e*) and

- (*l*) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 5
- (*m*) 8 Edw 7, c 69, ss 127, 151, see *ibid*, s 269 (2), see also title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 446, 447, 490
- (*n*) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 17
- (*o*) *Ibid*, i 13, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 496 *et seq*
- (*p*) *Ibid*, pp 494 *et seq*
- (*q*) See pp 118, 119, *ante*, and the text, *supra*
- (*r*) See title COMPANIES Vol V, pp 487 *et seq*
- (*s*) *Ibid*, pp 500 *et seq*, pp 507 *et seq*, 523 *et seq*
- (*t*) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, Introduction.
- (*u*) See pp 112 *et seq*, *supra*
- (*a*) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 4
- (*b*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 269 (1)
- (*c*) Limited Partnerships Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 24), s 7
- (*d*) See pp 101 *et seq*, *ante*, and compare the provisions applicable to a company as stated in title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 529 *et seq*
- (*e*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 144, and see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 543, 544

the provisions with regard to appeals are the same as in the case of a company (*f*)

260 In considering whether there has been a fraudulent preference, the presentation of the petition for winding up a limited partnership corresponds to an act of bankruptcy in the case of an individual (*g*). It may be, therefore, that a winding-up order alters the date at which such a transaction is invalid (*h*)

261 The Deeds of Arrangement Act, 1887 (*i*), although it does not apply to companies (*k*), applies to partnerships, whether limited or unlimited (*l*)

262 If, during the winding up, an application is made for the sanction of any compromise or arrangement (*m*), the court may hear a report by the official receiver on the terms of the scheme, the conduct of the general or limited partners, and any managers, clerks, or servants of the partnership, and any other matters which in the opinion of the official receiver or the Board of Trade ought to be brought to the attention of the court. This report is not placed upon the file unless the court so directs (*n*)

263 When any limited partnership has been wound up by the court on the ground of previous dissolution, or any other ground (*o*), and is about to be dissolved, the books and papers of the partnership and of the liquidators may be disposed of as the court directs (*p*)

264 Subject to the above modifications, the miscellaneous practice applicable to the winding up of companies by the court (*q*) appears to apply to the winding up of limited partnerships by the court

(xii) *Dissolution*

265 On the completion of the winding up of a company, the court makes an order dissolving it (*r*), and this provision is applied

SECT. 9.
Modifica-
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership.

Appeals.
Fraudulent
preference
Deeds of
arrangement

Sanction of
compromise.

Disposition of
books and
papers

Miscellaneous
practice

Order
dissolving
partnership

(*f*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 178, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 548 *et seq*

(*g*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 210, as modified by Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, Introduction, and r 1, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 544 *et seq*

(*h*) *Re Russell Hunting Record Co, Ltd*, [1910] 2 Ch 78

(*i*) 50 & 51 Vict c 57

(*k*) *Re Rileys, Ltd*, *Harper v Rileys*, [1903] 2 Ch 590

(*l*) See title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 329 *et seq*

(*m*) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 602

(*n*) Companies (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 74, as modified by the Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, rr 1, 14, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 603

(*o*) Limited Partnerships (Winding-up) Rules, 1909, r 19

(*p*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 222 (1); see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 563

(*q*) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 552 *et seq*

(*r*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 172, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 567 *et seq*

SECT 3
Modifica
tions of
General
Law of
Partnership

by the rules to the case of a limited partnership which is wound up by the court other wise than on the ground of previous dissolution (*s*)

(*s*) Limited Partnerships (Winding up) Rules, 1909, r 18 Of course, where the partnership has been dissolved before the winding up, an order purporting to dissolve it would be inappropriate See forms of deed of dissolution in Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XVI, p 465 Where there has been no formal dissolution before the winding up, the order referred to seems to correspond to the declaration made by the judgment usual in an action for dissolution of an ordinary partnership, see pp 88 *et seq*, *ante* But, as a limited partnership is, unlike a company, not a corporation, but merely a registered association of individuals under a contract, there is ground for the view that on the completion of the winding up it would *ipso facto* come to an end, even without a formal order for dissolution But the order enables the registrar to enter a minute of the fact of dissolution on the register

PART PERFORMANCE.

See CONTRACT, LANDLORD AND TENANT, SALE OF LAND,
SPECIFIC PERFORMANCE

PARTY AND PARTY COSTS.

See PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE, SOLICITORS.

PARTY WALLS.

See BOUNDARIES, FENCES, AND PARTY WALLS, EASEMENTS AND
PROFITS À PRENDRE

PASSAGE BROKERS.

See SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION.

PASSAGE COURT.

See ADMIRALTY, COURTS, INTERPLEADER

PASSENGERS.

See CARRIERS, NEGLIGENCE, RAILWAYS AND CANALS, SHIPPING
AND NAVIGATION

PASSING-OFF.

See MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES,
AND DESIGNS.

PASSIVE TRUST.

See TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES.

PASSPORT.

See CONSTITUTIONAL LAW.

PASTURE.

See AGRICULTURE, COMMONS AND RIGHTS OF COMMON.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS.

	PAGE
SECT 1 INTRODUCTORY - - - - -	127
Sub-sec't 1 General Nature of Letters Patent for Inventions -	127
Sub-sec't 2 Capacity to Obtain Letters Patent - - -	129
Sub-sec't 3 True and First Inventor - - - -	130
(i) In General - - - - -	130
(ii) As between Master and Servant - - - -	131
(iii) Invention Communicated from Abroad - - -	132
Sub-sec't 4 Subject-matter of a Patent - - - -	134
(i) Nature of the Art - - - - -	134
(ii) Novelty of the Art - - - - -	141
(iii) Utility - - - - -	150
SECT 2 APPLICATION FOR A PATENT - - - - -	152
Sub-sec't 1 Application - - - - -	152
Sub-sec't 2 Title - - - - -	154
Sub-sec't 3 Provisional Specification - - - -	155
Sub-sec't 4 Complete Specification - - - -	158
Sub-sec't 5 Claims - - - - -	161
Sub-sec't 6 Construction of Specifications - - - -	163
Sub-sec't 7 Procedure - - - - -	165
(i) Examination of Application - - - - -	165
(ii) Hearing before Comptroller - - - - -	167
(iii) Powers of Comptroller - - - - -	168
(iv) Appeal from Comptroller's Decision - - -	169
Sub-sec't 8 Amendment of Specifications - - - -	170
(i) At Instance of Comptroller - - - - -	170
(ii) At Instance of Applicant or Patentee - - -	170
(iii) Under Order of Court - - - - -	173
Sub-sec't 9 Acceptance of Specification - - - -	174
SECT 3 GRANT OF A PATENT - - - - -	175
Sub-sec't 1 Opposition to Grant - - - - -	175
(i) Who may Oppose - - - - -	175
(ii) Grounds of Opposition - - - - -	175
(iii) Procedure, and Powers of Comptroller - - -	177
(iv) Appeal to Law Officer - - - - -	178
Sub-sec't 2 Making the Grant - - - - -	178
SECT 4 REGISTER OF PATENTS - - - - -	179
Sub-sec't 1 Matters Entered in Register - - - -	179
Sub-sec't 2 Correction and Rectification - - - -	180
Sub-sec't 3 Inspection and Copies - - - - -	181
Sub-sec't 4 Register as Evidence - - - - -	181

	PAGE
SECT 5 MAINTENANCE OF A PATENT - - - - -	181
Sub-sect 1 Payment of Fees - - - - -	181
Sub-sect 2 Restoration of Lapsed Patent - - - - -	182
SECT 6 ASSIGNMENT AND DEVOLUTION OF PATENTS - - - - -	183
Sub-sect 1 What may be Assigned - - - - -	183
Sub-sect 2 Mode of Assignment - - - - -	184
Sub-sect 3 Registration of Assignments - - - - -	186
Sub-sect 4 Rights of Assignees - - - - -	187
Sub-sect 5 Assignment to Secretary for War or the Admiralty - - - - -	188
Sub-sect 6 Devolution on Bankruptcy or Death of Patentee - - - - -	189
Sub-sect 7 Vesting Order - - - - -	190
Sub-sect 8 Surrender of Patent to Crown - - - - -	190
SECT 7 LICENCES - - - - -	190
Sub-sect 1 Voluntary Licence - - - - -	190
(i) Nature - - - - -	190
(ii) Formalities - - - - -	192
(iii) Prohibited Conditions - - - - -	193
(iv) Rights and Obligations of Licensee - - - - -	194
(v) Assignment - - - - -	195
(vi) Revocation - - - - -	195
(vii) Royalties - - - - -	196
Sub-sect 2 Compulsory Licence - - - - -	197
(i) Petition to Board of Trade - - - - -	197
(ii) Proceedings before Board of Trade - - - - -	197
(iii) Powers of the Court - - - - -	198
SECT 8 TERM OF PATENT - - - - -	198
Sub-sect 1 Duration of Original Grant - - - - -	198
Sub-sect 2 Extension of Term - - - - -	199
Sub-sect 3 Patents of Addition - - - - -	205
SECT 9 REVOCATION OF PATENTS - - - - -	206
Sub-sect 1 By the Court - - - - -	206
Sub-sect 2 By the Comptroller - - - - -	207
(i) On Ground on which Grant might have been Opposed - - - - -	207
(ii) On Ground that Patent is Worked mainly Abroad - - - - -	208
SECT 10 LEGAL PROCEEDINGS - - - - -	210
Sub-sect 1 In respect of Infringement - - - - -	210
(i) The Infringement - - - - -	210
(ii) Parties - - - - -	214
(iii) Pleadings - - - - -	215
(iv) Interlocutory Proceedings - - - - -	219
(v) Hearing and Evidence - - - - -	221
(vi) Relief - - - - -	223
(a) Damages or Account of Profits - - - - -	223
(b) Injunction - - - - -	224
(c) Delivery up or Destruction of Infringing Articles - - - - -	224
(d) Certificate of Validity - - - - -	224
(e) Revocation - - - - -	225
(vii) Costs - - - - -	225
Sub-sect 2 In respect of Threats of Legal Proceedings - - - - -	227
SECT 11 INTERNATIONAL AND COLONIAL ARRANGEMENTS - - - - -	229
SECT 12 PATENT AGENTS - - - - -	230
Sub-sect 1 Register - - - - -	230
Sub-sect 2 Who may Act - - - - -	230
Sub-sect 3. Employment - - - - -	231
SECT 13 OFFENCES - - - - -	232

<i>For Copyright</i>	- -	See title	COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY.
<i>Designs</i>	- -	,	TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES AND DESIGNS.
<i>Merchandise Marks</i>	- -	„	TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES AND DESIGNS.
<i>Passing Off</i>	- -	„	TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES AND DESIGNS.
<i>Trade Marks</i>	- -	,	TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES AND DESIGNS.
<i>Trade Names</i>	- -	„	TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES AND DESIGNS.

SECT 1—Introductory

SUB-SECT 1—General Nature of Letters Patent for Inventions

266 The word “patent” has been used somewhat loosely, and is frequently employed instead of the word “invention,” often to denote the grant contained in a patent, and sometimes the privilege which is the subject-matter of such grant (*a*)

Meaning of
“patent”

The term “patent,” derived from Latin *patens*, merely signifies an open record made by the Crown in Chancery and under the Great Seal, and patents, or more correctly letters patent, are made for very many purposes besides granting sole rights to use inventions (*b*)

Meaning of
“patent” in
“patent law”

For the purposes of “patent law” “patent” means letters patent for an invention (*c*)

267 After a great controversy as to whether a man has as much natural and moral right to the produce of his mental exertions as to the profits of his corporeal labour and industry, it was held that an author has a natural right of property in his work (*d*) But an inventor is not in the same position as an author. An author creates his work. An inventor creates nothing. He merely, by his mental exertions and ingenuity, discovers what was already there. If Milton had not written “Paradise Lost,” it would never have been written. If Watt had not discovered the use of high-pressure steam, someone else would have done so.

Invention as
compared
with author
ship

An inventor may, of course, keep his invention to himself, and work it as a secret process, but, if he does so, he does so at the peril of losing any rights in it if it is discovered, and, except in virtue of some special grant, a man has no exclusive right of property in his invention (*e*). Such right may, however, be granted to him by letters patent of monopoly.

Invention as
property
only by
virtue of
monopoly

(*a*) The right which a patentee has by virtue of his patent is a chose in action (see title CHOSSES IN ACTION, Vol IV, p 363, *Re Heath's Patent*, [1912] W N 137) created by the exercise of the Royal Prerogative, and is entirely distinct from the right of property in a chattel created under it (*Edwards & Co v Picard*, [1909] 2 K B 903, 905, C A). The letters patent do not give the patentee any right to use the invention, that is a right which he would have as effectually if there were no letters patent at all. What the letters patent confer is the right to exclude others from manufacturing in a particular way, and using a particular invention (*ibid.*, citing *Steele v Rogers* (1893), 10 R P C 245, 251, H L, [1893] A C 232, 235).

(*b*) Hindmarch on Patents, p 77

(*c*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 93

(*d*) *Millar v Taylor* (1769), 4 Burr 2303, title COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY, Vol VIII, p 136

(*e*) Hindmarch on Patents, p 228

SECT 1

Intro-
ductoryMeaning of
"monopoly"Monopoly at
common lawEffect of
Statute of
Monopolies

268 A monopoly has been defined (*f*) as an institution or allowance by the King by his grant, commission, or otherwise, to any person or persons, bodies politic or corporate, of or for the sole buying, selling, making, working, or using any thing (*g*)

269 At common law it was not every monopoly that was valid Where a man had by his own charge and industry, or by his own wit and invention, brought any new trade into the realm, or any engine, tending to the furtherance of a trade, that was not used before, and that for the good of the realm, the King might grant him a monopoly patent for some reasonable time until the subjects might have learned the same, in consideration of the good that he brought by his invention to the commonwealth, otherwise not (*h*)

The common law, as defined by the Statute of Monopolies (*i*), declared all grants of monopolies whatsoever apart from those already in existence to be void, save those specially exempted by the following proviso (*j*) —

"Provided also that any declaration before mentioned, shall not extend to any letters patent and grants of privilege for the term of fourteen years or under hereafter to be made of the sole working or making of any manner of new manufactures within this realm to the true and first inventor and inventors of such manufactures which others at the time of making such letters patent and grants shall not use, so as also they be not contrary to the law nor mischievous to the State by raising the price of commodities at home or hurt of trade or generally inconvenient, the said fourteen years to be accounted from the date of the first letters patent or grants of such privilege hereafter to be made, but the same shall be of such force as they should be if this Act had never been made and of none other" (*k*)

With a few minor alterations, and taking into consideration that

(*f*) By Sir E Coke

(*g*) 3 Co Inst, c 85 181

(*h*) *Darcy v Allin* (1602), Noy, 173

(*i*) Stat (1623) 21 Jac 1, c 3

(*j*) *Ibid*, s 6

(*k*) The language of *ibid*, s 6 as Sir E COKE points out, shows that the Statute of Monopolies (1623) 21 Jac 1, c 3, did not, as is often supposed, create patents of monopoly, but merely preserved those that were valid at common law That being so, the necessity for the statute is not at first sight clear, and, to understand it, the political situation at the time of its enactment must be regarded Owing to the extravagant claims made by the Crown, and owing to the fact that all disputes came before the Star Chamber, which was virtually created by stat (1487) 3 Hen 7, c 1, and was abolished by stat (1640) 16 Car 1, c 10, grave abuses arose The statute was passed to remedy these, first by making all disputes triable in the courts of common law, and, secondly, by defining what were and what were not valid grants of monopolies The reason why these historical matters are still so important lies in the fact that on this question Sir E COKE was a violent partisan In his writings he puts so narrow a construction on the meaning of a valid monopoly that many of his propositions are no longer law, and several of the present difficulties and anomalies have arisen from the dilemma of rejecting such an authority or of accepting propositions which have no other support in law, see pp 150 *et seq*, *post*, and the remarks of EYRE, C J, in *Boulton v Bull* (1795), 2 Hy Bl 463, 491

innumerable decisions have crystallised any ambiguity of language into recognised forms, this is a statement of the present law

SECT. I.
Intro-
ductory.

270 The grant, in order to be valid, must be made to a person capable of being grantee, there must be a proper subject of the privilege granted, and the grant must be limited in time.

Essentials of
the grant.

SUB-SECT 2—*Capacity to Obtain Letters Patent*

271 The true and first inventor must be the grantee of a patent, but it does not follow that every true and first inventor can obtain a patent, for no one is entitled to a patent as of right (*l*)

Capacity.

Any person, whether a British subject or not, may apply for a patent (*m*)

The words "any person" do not exclude a married woman, the property in whose invention vests in her as separate estate (*n*), nor an infant (*o*), nor a lunatic (*p*)

The only limitation arises from the fact that every application must contain a declaration to the effect that the applicant is in possession of an invention whereof he claims to be the true and first inventor (*q*) It therefore follows that the applicant must be in a position to make such declaration

If a person claiming to be the inventor of an invention dies without making an application for the invention, application may be made by, and a patent granted to, his legal representative Every such application must contain a declaration by the legal representative that he believes the deceased person to have been the true and first inventor (*r*)

272 There are certain persons, however, who are incapacitated from becoming the grantees of letters patent

Incapacity.

It has been assumed (*s*) that the King could not become the grantee of a privilege of monopoly because he could not grant to himself, but as, in an ordinary patent, the king prohibits all others,

(*l*) Hindmarch on Patents, p 4

(*m*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 1

(*n*) Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 75), and see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 341 *et seq*

(*o*) See *Cheavin v Walker* (1877), 5 Ch D 850, C A, Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 83, and see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, pp 75 *et seq*

(*p*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 83, and see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 396 *et seq*

(*q*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 1 (3) As to the meaning of true and first inventor, see p 130, *post*

(*r*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 43 This was an alteration of the previous law, as, under the Patents, Designs, and Trade Marks Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict c 57), s 34, the application had to be made within six months of the death of the inventor See also p 153, *post*

(*s*) Hindmarch on Patents, p 34 The question has never been the subject of a decision, but Mr Hindmarch seems to have omitted to consider that a privilege of monopoly is not a grant to the patentee to manufacture according to his invention—for that he could do before (*Stears v Rogers* (1893), 10 R P C 245, 251, II L, [1893] A C 232, 237,—but a prohibition against all others so manufacturing, see note (*a*), p 127, *ante*.

SECT 1
Intro-
ductory.

including himself (*t*), from manufacturing, it is difficult to understand why he should not be able to prohibit everyone save himself, even though in form he is a grantee to himself

Corporations cannot be the true and first inventors of an invention, as opposed to an imported, invention, for invention is an act of the mind. It follows that they are incapacitated from being the sole grantees of a patent for such invention, for they could not make the necessary declaration (*a*).

On the ground of public policy, certain persons are incapacitated from becoming grantees of patents (*b*), as an alien enemy, or one who is to hold the grant in secret trust for an alien enemy (*c*), or a person who has obtained the knowledge necessary for the invention by reason of some public office which he holds (*d*)

SUB-SECT 3—*True and First Inventor*

(1) *In General*

True and
first inventor
or inventors
must be the
grantee or
grantees

273 It is necessary that the "true and first inventor" shall be the grantee of a patent (*e*). A true and first inventor must be the true and first inventor of every part of that which he claims to have invented (*f*). It follows, therefore, that in the case of joint inventors, that is to say, where the invention has been the outcome of the labour and ingenuity of more than one person, all such persons must be co-grantees (*g*). Provided that the true and first inventor or inventors be grantee or grantees, any number of other persons may be co-grantees of the patent, notwithstanding that they are not themselves true and first inventors (*h*).

Inventor

274 An inventor is a person who discovers or finds out something new, a frame, contriver, or deviser of what was before unknown (*i*). Invention is an act of the mind, and the person whose mind performs the act is the true inventor. If, therefore, the invention is suggested to a person by another (*k*), or is taken from a book (*l*), or from a model (*m*), it has not originated in his mind, and he is not the true inventor (*n*). Nor is a patent granted to him as true inventor valid, for he has committed a fraud upon

True inventor

(*t*) *Feather v R* (1865), 6 B & S 257, Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 29

(*a*) *Handmarch on Patents*, p 35

(*b*) *Co Litt* 2 b, *Shep Touch*, ed, 234, 235

(*c*) See plea in *Bloxam v Elsee* (1825), 1 C & P 558, (1827) 6 B & C 169

(*d*) *Patterson v Gds Light and Coke Co* (1876), 2 Ch D 812, C A, affirmed (1877), 3 App Cas 239

(*e*) Statute of Monopolies (1623), 21 Jac 1, c 3, s 6

(*f*) *Losh v Hague* (1838), 1 Web Pat Cas 202, *Tennant v —* (1802), 1 Web Pat Cas 125, n, *R v Arkwright* (1785), Dav Pat Cas 61

(*g*) For forms of agreement between joint inventors as to their respective rights, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol X, pp 101, 102

(*h*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s. 1 (1). As to the devolution of the legal interest of a co grantee, see *ibid*, s 37

(*i*) *Handmarch on Patents*, p 22

(*k*) *Tennant v —*, *supra*

(*l*) *R v Arkwright*, *supra*; *Hill v Thompson* (1818), 8 Taunt 375

(*m*) *Lewis v Marling* (1829), 4 C & P 52, 10 B. & C 22, C. A.

(*n*) *Gibson v. Brand* (1841), 1 Web Pat. Cas 627.

the Crown, not only by implication, but specifically; for his application for the patent must have been accompanied by a declaration that he was the true inventor (*o*), and he, knowing how he came by the invention, must have been aware that such declaration was false. Provided, however, that he was the true inventor, it matters not, so far as the first grant is concerned (*p*), whether his discovery was the result of an accident, of some happy thought, or of great study, labour, and expense (*q*).

SECT. 1.
Inventive
discovery.

In order to come within the benefit of the proviso of the Statute of Monopolies (*r*), the grantee must not only be a true but also the true and first inventor. The plea, therefore, that a person is not the true and first inventor may raise two issues—first, that a fraud has been committed on the Crown (*s*), and, secondly, that of the novelty of the invention (*t*).

True and first
inventor.

275 At common law the nature of a patent is that of a bargain between the inventor and the Crown, the consideration for which is the good brought by the invention to the commonwealth (*a*). For the purposes of a patent, therefore, the first inventor is he who discloses first to the public, and not he who in the secrecy of his closet discovers and keeps secret the invention (*b*). If several persons simultaneously discover the same thing, the party first communicating it to the public, under the protection of letters patent, is the true and first inventor (*c*). There may be many rivals who may be running on the same road at the same time, and the first who comes to the Crown and takes out a patent is the person who has the right to clothe himself with the authority of the patent and to enjoy its benefits (*d*).

Patent, a
bargain,
consideration,
the disclosure
of discovery

The test is this, did the public in this realm (*e*) know of the invention at the time of the grant? If they did, the patent is void. If they did not, the patentee, provided he is a true, is also the true and first, inventor.

Test of
validity,
absence of
knowledge of
public at
time of grant.

It follows from this that a man may be the true and first inventor of the rediscovery of a lost art (*f*).

Discovery of
lost art

(11) *As between Master and Servant.*

276 A man is allowed to use tools and devices to come by his invention, and a servant or workman may be, for this purpose, a

Master
entitled to
benefit of
invention

(*e*) See p 153, *post*

(*p*) These points may be material if an extension is applied for, see p 199, *post*

(*q*) *Crane v Price* (1842), 4 Man & G 580

(*r*) 21 Jac 1, c 3, s 6

(*s*) Hindmarch on Patents, p 447, *Walton v Potter* (1841), 1 Web Pat. Cas 585, 592

(*t*) Owing to the fact that particulars have to be furnished of want of novelty (see p 218, *post*), it would be highly dangerous to rely on this plea alone to raise this issue.

(*a*) *Ipswich Clothworkers' Case* (1614), Godb 252, and see p 128, *ante*, and p 142, *post*

(*b*) *Dollond v —* (1766), 1 Web Pat Cas 43

(*c*) *Forsyth v Riverside* (1819), Chitty, Prerogatives of the Crown, 182

(*d*) *Cornish v Keene* (1835), 1 Web Pat Cas 501, 508.

(*e*) As to inventions communicated from abroad, see pp. 132 *et seq*, *post*

(*f*) *Stead v Williams* (1843), 2 Web Pat Cas, 126, 135

SECT. 1.
Intro-
ductory.

Assistance
given, and
supplemental
improvements
made, by
servant.

mere tool If so, the invention is that of the master, and not of the servant (*g*)

If the master suggests the principle to the servant, and the servant assists him, then the master is the true and first inventor, and the servant is a machine, so to speak, which the master uses for the purpose of enabling him to carry his original conception into effect If in the course of experiments the servant makes valuable discoveries, accessory to the main principle and tending to carry that out in a better manner, such improvements are the property of the inventor of the original and improved principle, and may be embodied in his patent, and, if so embodied, the patent is not avoided by evidence that the servant made the suggestion of the subordinate improvement of the primary and improved principle (*h*)

Substantive
invention by
servant.

277 If, however, the servant makes a substantive invention, the question whether he has done so being a question of fact in each case, he is the true and first inventor thereof, for the mere relation of master and servant does not make the master the true and first inventor of the invention of the servant, even though the servant has employed the master's time, materials and money in arriving at his invention (*i*)

Servant as
trustee of
patent for
master

278 A totally different and distinct question may arise, namely, as to whether, the patent having been properly granted to the servant as the true and first inventor, he or the master is entitled in equity to the benefit thereof If satisfied from the relation of the parties, in all the circumstances of the case, a court of equity may grant a declaration that the servant holds the patent in trust for the master (*k*) Special contracts may be, and often are, entered into between master and servant to govern the relation between them regarding inventions, and a court of equity may grant specific performance of such contracts (*l*)

(iii) *Invention Communicated from Abroad*

"True and
first
inventor" is
construed as
including
"true and
first
importer"

279 The fact that an invention has been communicated to a person by another within this realm is a fatal objection to the grant of a patent to that person as true and first inventor (*m*) But the matter is otherwise if the communication is made without the realm and the person so receiving it is the first to import the invention into the realm At common law he who, in peril of his

(*g*) *Minter v Wells* (1834), 1 Web Pat Cas 132, *Bloxam v Elsee* (1825) 1 C & P 558, 567

(*h*) *Allen v Rawson* (1845), 1 C B 551, and compare *Barber v Walduck*, (1823), cited 1 C & P 567

(*i*) *Saxby v Gloucester Wagon Co* (1883), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 54, 56

(*k*) *Pashley v Linotype Co., Ltd* (1903), 20 R P C 633, *Edisona, Ltd v Forss* (1908), 25 R P C 546

(*l*) See title SPECIFIC PERFORMANCE As to damages for breach of contract between master and servant see title MASTER AND SERVANT Vol. XX, pp 107 *et seq* As to the duties of the servant towards his former master on the termination of the employment, see *ibid*, pp 120, 127

(*m*) See p 130, *ante*.

SECT 1
Intro-
ductory.

life and consumption of his estate or stock, brought in a new invention and a new trade within the kingdom was equally entitled to a patent with him who had made a new discovery of anything (n), and, as the Statute of Monopolies (o) was construed to intend to preserve all monopolies which would have been good at common law, the words "true and first inventor" have always been construed to include "true and first importer" (p).

280 The essential quality, common alike to the inventor and to the importer, which makes them "true and first inventors" within the meaning of the Statute of Monopolies (o), is this, that each, in his own way, is the first to make known within this realm a new invention. It follows, therefore, that the importation must be from outside the realm: it does not suffice if it merely is an importation from one part of the realm to another (q).

Importation must be from without the realm

281 The question as to whether the communication was made from abroad is one of fact in each case, the test being was the grantee the first person to make known within this realm the invention? (a). Provided that it is *bona fide* a communication from abroad, the patent is not avoided merely because the machinery of such communication operated within the realm, as, for instance, if a foreigner, resident abroad, sends his clerk to communicate the invention orally to the grantee within the realm (b).

Test of validity grantee the first to disclose within the realm

282 Although in law a foreigner resident abroad may be the proper grantee, as true and first inventor, of a patent communicated to him by another foreigner resident abroad (c), yet by the Patent Office Rules no such patent will be granted (d).

Foreigner resident abroad, as grantee

283 As, in the case of an inventor (e), it is irrelevant to consider how much labour, time, skill, or money was expended in coming by the invention, so, in the case of an importer, the law does not take into consideration his "merit" as an importer. He may be the mere servant or agent of the foreign inventor (e).

Position of importer in relation to third party

In this statement, however, the relation of principal and agent must be understood to exist only *inter partes*. The Crown deals with the importer alone as its grantee. It follows, therefore, that, should the question become relevant, the knowledge of the grantee

Position of importer as grantee

(n) *Ipswich Clothworkers' Case* (1614), Godb. 252

(o) 21 Jac. 1, c. 3

(p) *Edgeberry v Stephens* (1688), 2 Salk. 447, *Carpenter v Smith* (1841), 1 Web. Pat. Cas. 530, *Nichols v Ross* (1849), 8 C. B. 679, *Plimpton v Malcolmson* (1876), 3 Ch. D. 531

(q) *Brown v Annandale & Son* (1842), 1 Web. Pat. Cas. 433, H. L., *Roebuck v Stirling & Son* (1774), 1 Web. Pat. Cas. 45, H. L., *Walton v Bateman* (1842), 1 Web. Pat. Cas. 613

(a) *Darcy v Allin* (1602), Noy, 173, 178. Hindmarch on Patents, p. 29, raises several points, which have never been actually decided, as to the effect of the nationality and domicile of the communicator and the grantee, and the *locus* of the communication

(b) *Pilkington v Yeakley Vacuum Hammer Co* (1901), 18 R. P. C. 459, C. A., *Re Jameson's Patent* (1902), 19 R. P. C. 246

(c) *Re Wirth's Patent* (1879), 12 Ch. D. 303

(d) Patent Office Rules, 9th May, 1884

(e) *Crane v Price* (1842), 4 Man. & G. 580, see p. 131, *ante*.

SECT 1
Intro-
ductory.

Effect of
international
agreements.

is confined to his own actual knowledge, and that knowledge of his communicator cannot be used either for (f) or against (g) him.

284 In virtue of certain international agreements, a patentee in certain foreign countries can obtain a patent in this country in a peculiar way (h), which gives him certain advantages as to priority; but this question is not relevant in dealing with the meaning of first and true importer

SUB-SECT 4 —Subject-matter of a Patent

(1) *Nature of the Art*

Use of words
"manu-
facture,"
"trade,"
"art" in
relation to
subject-
matter.

285 A patent contains a grant That grant confers a privilege The subject-matter of that privilege—loosely spoken of as the subject-matter of the patent—must be, with two limitations hereafter dealt with (i), for the sole working or making of any manner of new manufacture which others at the time shall not use (k) It therefore becomes important to consider the meaning of the word "manufacture," and how far that meaning is modified by the governing words "working," "making," and "use" The word "manufacture" may be defined, first, as the art or practice of making or constructing any piece of workmanship, secondly, as anything made by art (l) The word "art" has very often been used as an equivalent to the word "manufacture" for the purposes and within the meaning of the Statute of Monopolies (m) The older common law cases speak of a trade or engine tending to the furtherance of a trade (n), or a new invention and a new trade (o). Be the word used "manufacture," "trade," or "art," the meaning is quite plain It signifies the dealing with, in some way, corporeal articles, and not abstract ideas Further, the Statute of Monopolies (p) goes on to deal with the question of raising the price of commodities at home, or of hurt of trade, and the form of the grant includes the vending of the invention It has therefore been held (q) that the manufacture or art must be an art for the production of vendible articles, or articles of trade or commerce capable of being bought or sold.

Words used in
relation to
corporeal
articles
capable of
being bought
or sold

Essential
charac-
teristics of
invention
discovery and
new art

286 There are, therefore, two necessary ingredients to an invention before it can be the subject-matter of a patent—discovery and a new art That every discovery does not produce a new art is clear For instance, the person who first discovered that light acted upon the salts of silver made a great discovery, but he did

(f) *Wegmann v Corcoran* (1879), 13 Ch D 65, C A.

(g) *Plimpton v Malcolmson* (1876), 3 Ch D 531

(h) See pp 229 *et seq*, *post*

(i) See pp 141, 142, and p 152, *post*

(k) See p 128, *ante*

(l) *Johnson's Dictionary*

(m) 21 Jac 1, c 3, see *Mitchel v Reynolds* (1712), 1 P Wms 181;
1 Hawk, P C, c 29, s 20, Bac Abr, tit Monopoly, Prerogative

(n) *Darcy v Allin* (1602), Noy, 173, 182

(o) *Ipswich Clothworkers' Case* (1614), Godb 252

(p) 21 Jac 1, c 3

(q) *Boulton v Bull* (1795), 2 Hy. Bl 463, *R. v Wheeler* (1819), 2 B & Ald 345, 349, *Cornish v Keene* (1837), 3 Bing (N C) 570.

SECT. 1.
Intro-
ductory.

not make a patentable invention, for he produced no new art; but the person who showed the public how this chemical truth could be used to produce the art of photography made a patentable invention. Again, when Galvani discovered the effect of an electric current from his battery on a frog's leg he made a great discovery, but no patentable invention (*r*). If a new art has been produced there has been a patentable invention, if not, there has only been an unpatentable discovery (*s*).

287 Although the law on this matter is simple, its application to any particular case is often very difficult (*t*). The question as to whether there has been invention is one of fact in each case, and it is therefore idle to multiply cases which only decide the facts arising therein (*a*).

Question as to whether there is invention is one of fact

288 Although the question is one of fact, it is nevertheless useful to consider what evidence the court regards in coming to the conclusion upon the fact

Evidence to be considered in arriving at conclusion of fact —

The commercial utility of the product is often very cogent, though not conclusive (*b*), evidence that there has been invention. If there has been a demand, and that demand has not been satisfied although many have tried, it is strong evidence in favour of the contrivance having required invention to contrive it (*c*), but care must be taken to distinguish this case from that where the demand itself has only recently come into existence, for in this latter case it may well be that the problem only lacked solution

Commercial utility as evidence of invention

(*r*) *Lane Fox v Kensington and Knightsbridge Electric Lighting Co*, [1892] 3 Ch 424, C A, per LINDLEY, L J, at p 428

(*s*) *Reynolds v Smith (Herbert) & Co, Ltd* (1902), 20 R P C 123; *Harwood v Great Northern Rail Co* (1865), 11 H L Cas 654, *Horton v Mabon* (1862), 12 C B (N s) 437, *Sarby v Gloucester Wagon Co* (1881), 7 Q B D 305, *Britain v Hirsch* (1888), 5 R P C 226, C A, *Welsbach Incandescent Gas Light Co v Daylight Incandescent Mantle Co* (1899), 17 R P C 141, C A, *Case v Cressy* (1900), 17 R P C 255, per BUCKLEY, J, at p 261, *Acetylene Illuminating Co v United Alkali Co* (1902), 20 R P C 161, 173, C A, 72 L J (CH) 214. The selection of a material the suitability of which was not previously known for a particular purpose may be the subject matter of a patent if the selection involves invention (*Re Bosch's Application for a Patent* (1909), 26 R P C 710, following *Kay v Marshall* (1836), 2 Web Pat Cas 34).

(*t*) *Vickers, Sons & Co v Siddell* (1890), 7 R P C 292, H L

(*a*) *Lyon v Goddard* (1893), 10 R P C 334, C A, per Lord ESHLR, M R, at p 344. "Has there been an exercise of the inventive faculties? That depends on a true view of all the circumstances, and it cannot be governed in any one case by a finding of fact, on a totally different invention, by a tribunal like the House of Lords. We must apply our mind to the specific facts before us and nothing is more pernicious, or likely to lead the court astray, than, when it has to decide a question of fact in one case, to wander into another case, to look at the decision of fact in that case, and then to see what differentiations there can be between the facts in the cited case and the one before the court. The court that travels on these lines always goes wrong" (*ibid*, per BOWEN, L J, at p. 346).

(*b*) *Reckman v Therry* (1896), 14 R P C 105, H L, *Fawcett v Homan* (1896), 13 R P C 398, C A, 12 T L R 507, *Longbottom v Shaw* (1891), 8 R P C 333, H L, *Morgan & Co v Windover & Co* (1890), 7 R P C 131, H L

(*c*) *Gosnell v Bishop* (1888), 5 R P C 41, 151, C A, *American Braided Wire Co. v. Thomson* (1890), 44 Ch. D 274, C A, *Blakey & Co v Latham & Co* (1889), 6 R. P. C. 184, C. A. 43 Ch D 23, *Elias v. Grovesend Tm*

SECT 1
Intro-
ductory.

because there was no incentive to attempt it, and that, as soon as that incentive came, the solution was so obvious that it required no invention (*d*) The strongest evidence of this kind, however, sometimes shows that the invention, though apparently trifling, made the whole difference between commercial success and failure, and if this is so the court is very loth to say that there is no invention. The merest "scintilla" of invention may be sufficient to support the patent Nor is the apparent simplicity of the invention, when once it has been invented and explained (*e*), nor the fact that it was come by through an accident (*f*), a bar to the patent

The nature
of the art
itself as
evidence of
invention

Again, the nature of the art itself may be some indication as to whether there has been invention or not For instance, analogous use of different things is much less certain to produce analogous results in chemistry than it is in mechanics, and consequently the decisions of the courts show a greater inclination to attribute invention to a new use of chemical process than to a new use of mechanical contrivance, assuming that the question turns on analogous user (*g*)

It will be seen that these questions are only germane to the evidence which should be tendered, and not to the main question, which is one of pure fact and must satisfy two conditions—(1) there must have been an exercise of the inventive faculties, (2) there must be a new art

Principle of
nature not a
new art with
out discovery
of means of
application

289 From the meaning of the words it is clear that a principle of nature cannot be an art in itself Therefore the discovery of a principle cannot be the subject-matter of a patent (*h*) But the discovery of a principle together with the means of putting it into practice may be good subject-matter (*i*)

The new art in this case is not the principle *per se*, for that *per se* is no art, nor the means of putting the principle into effect *per*

Plate Co (1890) 7 R P C 455, C A, *Gammons v Battersby* (1904), 21 R P C 322, C A

(*d*) *Losh v Haggis* (1838), 1 Web Pat Cas 202, 207, C A, *Ehrlich v Ihlie* (1888), 5 R P C 198, 205, *Edison Bell Phonograph Corporation v Smith and Young* (1894), 11 R P C 389 C A, *Hayward v Hamilton* (1881), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884 6, 117, *Parker and Smith v Satchwell & Co* (1901), 18 R P C 299, *British Vacuum Cleaner Co v Suction Cleaners Ltd* (1904), 21 R P C 303

(*e*) *Benno Jaffé und Darmstaedler Lanolin Fabrik v Richardson (John) & Co, Ltd* (1894), 11 R P C 93, 261, C A

(*f*) *Liardet v Johnson* (1778), 1 Web Pat Cas 53; *Crane v Price* (1842), 4 Man & G 580

(*g*) *Badische Anilin und Soda Fabrik v Leunstein* (1887), 12 App Cas 710

(*h*) *Boulton v Bull* (1795), 1 Carp Pat Cas 117, *Househill Coal and Iron Co v Neilson* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 673, H L, *Crossley v Potter* (1853), Macr 240

(*i*) *Neilson v Harford* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 331, *Walton v Bateman* (1842), 1 Web Pat Cas 613, *Hills v London Gas Light Co* (1860), 5 H & N 312, *Newton v Faucher* (1851), 6 Exch 859, 865, *Harwood v Great Northern Rail Co* (1860), 2 B & S 194, *per BLACKBURN, J*, at p 214; *Cannington v Nuttall* (1871), L R 5 H L 205, 225, *Dangerfield v Jones* (1865), 13 L T 142, *Jones v Pearce* (1832), 1 Web Pat Cas 122, *Jupe v Pratt* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 145, *Automatic Weighing Machine Co v Knight* (1889), 6 R P C 113, 297, C A, *Thomson v Moore* (1889), 6 R P C 628, 23 L R Ir. 599, 626, affirmed (1890), 7 R P C 325, H L

SECT. 1.
Intro-
ductory.

se, for that may be old (*h*), but the process of utilising the principle. For instance, Watt discovered that the efficiency of the steam engine could be greatly increased by keeping the cylinder hot and condensing the steam outside instead of inside. In his patent he showed means of doing so. It was objected against his patent, first, that it was for a principle, and therefore bad for want of good matter, and, secondly, in the alternative, that it was for the means of keeping the cylinder hot, which was well known, and therefore bad for want of novelty. It was held, however, that it was for neither, but for the process of working a steam engine on a new principle by means disclosed (*l*).

It is now settled beyond doubt that a process may be an art within the meaning and for the purposes of a patent (*m*). That being so, two alternatives present themselves—(1) the principle may be new, or (2) the principle may be old. In either case there may be good subject-matter, but the ambit of the two patents will be quite different. In the former case the pith and marrow of the invention is the principle, and, if the inventor has devised some way of carrying his new principle into effect, he is entitled to protect himself from all other modes of putting that principle into effect, that being treated as piracy of his original invention (*n*). In the latter case the pith and marrow of the invention is the means of carrying a known principle into effect, and protection will only be given for the particular means described (*o*).

New principle or application of old principle as subject-matter.

(*h*) *Otto v Linford* (1882), 46 L T 35, C A, *Neilson v Harford* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 331, *Househill Coal and Iron Co v Neilson* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 673, H L, *Muntz v Foster* (1844), 2 Web Pat Cas 96, *Edison Bell Phonograph Corporation v Smith* (1894), 11 R P C 148, 389, 10 T L R 522, *Electric Telegraph Co v Brett* (1851), 10 C B 838.

(*l*) *Boulton v Bull* (1795), 2 Hy Bl 463, *Hornblower v Boulton* (1790), 8 Term Rep 95.

(*m*) *Crane v Price* (1842), 4 Man & G 580, see *Hall v Jarvis* (1822), 1 Web Pat Cas 100, *Losh v Hague* (1838), 1 Web Pat Cas 202, 207.

(*n*) *Jupe v Pratt* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 145, applied in *Chamberlain and Hookham v Bradford Corporation* (1903), 20 R P C 673, H L, *Ashworth v English Card Clothing Co* (1903), 20 R P C 790, H L, *Consolidated Car Heating Co v Came* (1903), 20 R P C 745, P C, [1903] A C 509, *Sandow v Szalay* (1904), 21 R P C 33, 333, C A, *Haskell Golf Ball Co v Hutchison* (No 2) (1905), 22 R P C 478, *Minter v Wells* (1834), 1 Web Pat Cas 127, *Househill Coal and Iron Co v Neilson*, *supra*, at p 685, *Otto v Linford*, *supra*, *Crossley v Beverley* (1829), 1 Web Pat Cas 106, *Badische Anilin und Soda Fabrik v Levinstein* (1883), 24 Ch D 156, *Easterbrook v Great Western Rail Co* (1885), 2 R P C 201, *Automatic Weighing Machine Co v Knight* (1888), 6 R P C 297, 304, C A, *Automatic Weighing Machine Co v Combined Weighing Machine Co* (1889), 6 R P C 367, C A, 58 L J (Q B) 647, *Automatic Weighing Machine Co v National Exhibitions Association* (1891), 8 R P C 345, 9 R P C 41, C A, *Nobel's Explosives Co v Anderson* (1894), 11 R P C 519, C A, *per KAY, L J*, at p 527.

(*o*) *Proctor v Bennett* (1887), 36 Ch D 740, C A, *Siddell v Vickers, Sons & Co* (1888), 5 R P C 416, C A, 39 Ch D 92, *Needham v Johnson & Co* (1884), 1 R P C 49, C A, *Bovill v Pimm* (1856), 11 Exch 718, *Barber v Grace* (1847), 1 Exch 339, *Curtis v Platt* (1863), 3 Ch D 135, n.; *Lester v Leather* (1858), 8 E & B 1004, *Sazby v Olunes* (1874), 43 L J (EX) 228, H L; *Dudgeon v Thomson* (1877), 3 App Cas 34; *Nordenfjelt v Gardner* (1884), 1 R P C 61, C A, *Hocking & Co v. Hocking* (1888), 6 R P C 69, H L.

SECT 1

Intro-
ductory.Improvement
on something
known

290 An improvement on something known may be the subject-matter of a patent (*p*). Nor is it any bar to the patent that the art upon which it is an improvement is already the subject-matter of an existing patent (*q*). It may well be that the second patentee cannot use his improvement without infringing the first patent, and therefore must use it under licence from the first patentee, but that is not material on the question of whether his improvement patent has subject-matter or not (*r*).

Patent of
addition

291 Where a patent for an invention has been applied for or granted, the applicant or patentee may apply for a patent for any improvement or modification of the original invention as a patent of addition instead of as a substantive new patent. If granted, the patent of addition depends for its term on the original patent and certain fees are saved by the patentee (*s*).

New com-
bination of
matter
already
known.

292 A new combination may be the subject-matter of a patent although every part of the combination *per se* is old, for here the new art is not the parts themselves, but the assembling and working them together, which *ex hypothesi* is new (*t*). If the result produced by such a combination is either a new article, or a better article, or a cheaper article than before (*a*), such combination is an invention or a manufacture within the statute and may well be the subject-matter of a patent (*b*). It is none the less a new combination because the novelty consists in omitting some part of an old combination (*c*).

(*p*) Sir E. Coke says that it cannot be (*Bircot's Case* (1573), 3 Co. Inst. 184 Ex. Ch.), but this proposition has been overruled in terms again and again (*Ralston v. Smith* (1865), 11 H. L. Cas. 223, *Boulton v. Bull* (1795), 2 Hy. Bl. 463, 488), and, were it good law, it would vitiate many existing patents (*Morris v. Brunson* (1776), cited 2 Hy. Bl. 489).

(*q*) *Lister v. Leather* (1858), 8 E. & B. 1004, 1017, *Crane v. Price* (1842), 4 Man. & G. 580, *Hickton's Patent Syndicate v. Patents and Machine Improvements Co., Ltd.* (1909), 28 R. P. C. 339.

(*r*) *Lister v. Leather*, *supra*, *Crane v. Price*, *supra*.

(*s*) See pp. 205, 206, *post*, Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw. 7, c. 29) s. 19. For a form of application for a patent of addition, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol. XVI p. 495.

(*t*) *Newton v. Grand Junction Rail Co.* (1846), 5 Exch. 334, *Boulton v. Bull*, *supra*, at p. 487, *Huddart v. Grimshaw* (1803), Dav. Pat. Cas. 265, *Hill v. Thompson* (1817), 1 Web. Pat. Cas. 235, 237; *Brunton v. Hawkes* (1821), 4 B. & Ald. 541, 550, *Lister v. Leather*, *supra*, *Morton v. Middleton* (1863), 1 Macph. (Ct. of Sess.) 718, 721.

(*a*) *Morton v. Middleton*, *supra*, *Crane v. Price*, *supra*, *Murray v. Clayton* (1872), 7 Ch. App. 570, 584, *Marconi v. British Radio Telegraph and Telephone Co.* (1911), 28 R. P. C. 181, 27 T. L. R. 274, *British Westinghouse Electric and Manufacturing Co. v. Braulik* (1910), 27 R. P. C. 209 C. A.

(*b*) *Crane v. Price*, *supra*, *Cannington v. Nuttall* (1871), L. R. 5 H. L. 205, *Minter v. Wells* (1834), 1 Cr. M. & R. 505, *Huddart v. Grimshaw*, *supra*, *Allen v. Rawson* (1845), 1 C. B. 551, *Lister v. Leather*, *supra*. For instance, if the shearing of cloth from list to list by shears is known and the shearing of it from end to end by rotatory cutters is known, a combination of the shearing of it from list to list by rotatory cutters may be good subject-matter (*Lewis v. Davis* (1829), 3 C. & P. 502).

(*c*) For instance, iron pipes were made by forcing iron strips, heated at each edge to the welding point, through a hole in a die plate, in the centre of which hole was a solid mandril. The strip was bent round and the edges forced together by a file, while the mandril was for the purpose of keeping the centre of the pipe open. It was discovered that the mandril

It must, however, always be borne in mind that the exercise of the inventive faculties must have been called into play, and the mere combining of two elements of machinery or other things without invention is not the proper subject-matter of a patent. A combination may, but it does not follow that it must, be the subject-matter of a patent (*d*)

SECT. 1.
**Intro-
ductory.**

Combination must have exercised inventive faculty
Selection of one of a class of things or processes

293. It being known that a certain class of things will operate in a certain way, or it being known that a certain process will produce certain results, the selection of the best of the class, or of the conditions under which the process will give the best results, may be the subject-matter of a patent (*e*)

294 So far the class of inventions dealt with consists of some new means to arrive at either some new or old result. There is, however, a material difference between applying a new contrivance to an old object and an old contrivance to a new object (*f*). The same law still obtains, namely, that there must be an exercise of the inventive faculties and the production of a new art, but in this latter class of case it is most difficult to apply (*g*)

Classification of, and differentiation between, inventions

in fact was quite unnecessary and needlessly complicated the machine. It was held that the combination of passing strips of iron in the old way through the old hole but without the mandril was good subject-matter of a patent (*Russell v Cowley* (1835), 1 Cr M & R 864, and see *Booth v Kennard* (1856), 1 H & N 527, Ex Ch, *Wallington v Dale* (1852), 7 Exch 888, *Minter v Mower* (1837), 6 Ad & El 735, *Sarby v Gloucester Wagon Co* (1881), 7 Q B D 305, *Pneumatic Tyre Co v Tubeless Tyre Co and Capon Heaton* (1898), 15 R P C 74, 236, C A, 14 T L R 341, 16 R P C 77, H L, 15 T L R 127)

(*d*) *Williams v Nye* (1889), 7 R P C 37, *Thompson v James* (1863), 32 Beav 570, *Rushton v Crawley* (1870), L R 10 Eq 522

(*e*) *Hills v London Gas Light Co* (1860), 5 H & N 312. For instance, it was well known that all solutions of potassium cyanide would dissolve gold out of its ores to some extent. It was found that a very dilute solution was far superior to a strong solution, and it was held that the selection of the very dilute solution was good subject matter for a patent (*Cassell Gold Extracting Co v Cyanide Gold Recovery Syndicate* (1895), 12 R P C 232, C A). Again, it was known that a certain chemical process at all material temperatures produced substance X and substance Y. X was useful commercially, Y was of no value. About 90 per cent of the useless Y was produced for about 10 per cent of the useful X. It was discovered that by never allowing the temperature to rise above a certain point the production of the useful X was enormously increased. It was held that this selection of this particular condition of temperature was good subject-matter (*Saccharin Corporation v Chemicals and Drugs Co* (1899), 17 R P C 28, and see *Hartley's Patent* (1777), 1 Web Pat Cas 54, *Walton v Potter* (1841), 3 Man & G 411, *E v Culler* (1847), 3 Car & Kir 215, *Bush v Fox* (1856), 5 H L Cas 707 (application of a known machine to a new purpose), *Hill v Thompson* (1817), 1 Web Pat Cas 235, 237, *Macintosh v Everington* (1836), 2 Carp Pat Cas 180, *Walton v Potter, supra*, *Munis v Foster* (1844), 2 Web Pat Cas 96, 103, *Penn v Bibby* (1866), 2 Ch App 127 (application of an old material to a new purpose), *Hall v Jarvis* (1822), 1 Web Pat. Cas 100, *Pow v Taunton* (1845), 9 Jur 1056, *Steiner v Heald* (1857), 6 Exch 607 (application of an old process to a new purpose))

(*f*) *Losh v Hagus* (1838), 1 Web Pat Cas 202, 207

(*g*) The most instructive case (*Lane Fox v Kensington and Knightsbridge Electric Lighting Co.*, [1892] 3 Ch 424, C A, per LINDLEY, L J, at p 429) on this class of invention is that of *Harwood v Great Northern Rail Co* (1865), 11 H L Cas 654, where the invention was for the application of a

SECT I

Intro-
ductory.

Application
of old con-
trivance to
new purpose

295 A mere application of an old contrivance in the old way to an analogous subject without any novelty in the mode of applying such old contrivance to the new purpose is not such subject-matter as will support a patent (*h*). In every case arises a question of fact, whether the contrivance before in use was so similar to that which the patentee claims that there is no invention in the differences, if any, between the old contrivance and that for which the patentee claims a monopoly, and if there is none, then arises a further question of fact, namely, whether the purpose to which the contrivance was before applied and the new purpose are so analogous or cognate that there is no discovery or invention in the new application—whether, in short, it is mere application or not, for if there is invention or discovery producing a practical benefit (*i*) it is the valid subject of a patent. It must always be a question of degree—a question of more or less whether the analogy or cognateness of the purposes is so close as to prevent there being invention in the application. If there is any real invention, though a slight one, producing a beneficial result, there is subject-matter (*k*).

Use of tools

The above question often arises in one particular form, that of the new and more advantageous use of old tools. The mere application of an old tool to hitherto untried material (*l*), or in a better and more skilful way (*m*), is not proper subject-matter for a patent. It would be a very extraordinary thing to say that because all mankind eats soup with a spoon that a man could take out a patent because he says you might eat peas with a spoon (*n*). The rights of the public would be unduly curtailed if this were so (*o*).

Product of
manufacture
as subject-
matter

296 Finally, a most important class must be considered. Is the product of a manufacture *per se* the subject-matter of a patent?

well known iron plate, which had been used for joining wooden beams together, to join iron rails together, what is called a "fishplate" on railways. Although the judgment in that case was not unanimous as to the facts, all the judges were agreed as to the law.

(*h*) *Losh v Hague* (1838), 1 Web Pat Cas 202, 208, *Kay v Marshall* (1841), 8 Cl & Fin 245, H L, *Kalston v Smith* (1865), 11 H L Cas 223, *Hillis v Davison* (1863), 1 New Rep 234, *Mann v Ashby & Co* (1911), 28 R P C 492. This principle holds good even although there is commercial success (*Thermos, Ltd v Isola, Ltd* (1910), 27 R P C 388).

(*i*) As in the case of *Crane v Price* (1842), 4 Man & G 580.

(*k*) *Vickers, Sons & Co v Siddell* (1896), 7 R P C 292, H L. The question is one of pure fact in each case, and a multiplication of authority does not assist, but for a case where the court went very far in order to uphold a patent, see *Thomson v American Braided Wire Co* (1889), 6 R P C 518, H L, 5 T L R 537.

(*l*) *Brook v Aston* (1857), 8 E & B 478, *Patent Bottle Envelope Co v Seymour* (1858), 5 C B (N S) 164.

(*m*) *Dredge v Parnell* (1899), 16 R P C 625, H L.

(*n*) *Losh v Hague, supra*, per Lord ABINGER, C B, at p 208.

(*o*) For instance, it being known that paraffin was beneficial in cleaning paper-making machines, it was discovered that the evils which the paraffin removed could be prevented altogether by treating the clean machine with paraffin before starting it. It was held that this was not proper subject-matter, for anyone who used paraffin, as he had a perfect right to do, would be prevented from using it on a clean machine (*Partington and Kneller-Partington Paper Pulp Co v Hartlepool's Pulp and Paper Co* (1895), 12 R P C 295).

SECT. 1.
Introductory.

There is no decision on this point, but in these days when chemical patents are becoming more and more numerous the matter is of growing importance. At first sight it would seem that products *per se* would be good subject-matter, for they are something manufactured by art, which is one definition of manufacture, and the word "manufacture" in the Statute of Monopolies (*p*) is of extensive signification, and is applied not only to things made but to the practice of making (*q*).

The point, however, lies deeper than at first would be supposed (*r*). The nature of patent rights is that of a chose in action (*s*), that is to say, a right that can be enforced in a court of law, and the enforceable right is not to vest anything in the patentee (*t*), but to prevent anyone else making, using, or working the manufacture. In the sense of the word "manufacture" as hitherto used, namely, as equivalent to an art or trade, this is intelligible enough. But if a product *per se* is to be the subject-matter, the patentee has a right to prohibit anyone else not only from using some corporeal chattel in a particular way, but also from having that corporeal chattel at all. For instance, suppose a man discovers an element hitherto unknown and produces it in its pure state by any well-known process, he would be able to restrain anyone from digging up and selling the earth for the foundations of a house if that earth happened to contain a deposit of the element in a pure state, were the product of his invention *per se* subject-matter. If it is conceded that this is an absurdity, there is no logical difference between the case taken and that of the chemist who claims a dye stuff *per se* as the subject-matter of his patent. He discloses that A, B, and C, well-known chemical bodies, under certain conditions, make Q, a new and valuable dye stuff. He chooses to frame his claim so that Q, irrespective of the method, is the subject-matter *per se*. Another chemist makes X, Y, and Z, admittedly quite different chemically from A, B, and C, react together, and, in the molecular shuffle that follows, to his surprise Q results. He has not used his corporeal chattels X, Y, and Z in any way disclosed or claimed by the patentee, and yet he suddenly finds himself deprived of the free use of them, just as the builder was deprived of the use of his earth.

In the absence of any authority to show that a different law obtained for different classes of products, it is submitted that a product *per se* is not the subject-matter of a patent.

(u) Novelty of the Art

297 The statement that the subject-matter of a patent must be for the sole working or making of any manufacture (*a*) was made subject to two limitations (*b*). The first of these is that the manufacture shall be new, and that others at the time of the making of

Essential to validity of patent

(p) 21 Jac 1, c 3, see p. 134, *ante*

(q) *Boulton v Bull* (1795), 2 Hy Bl 463, *per* EYRE, C J, at p. 492

(r) It was never raised in the case cited in note (t), *infra*

(s) See p. 127, *ante*

(t) *British Mutoscope and Biograph Co., Ltd v. Holmes*, [1901] 1 Ch 671.

(a) See p. 134, *ante*

(b) See p. 134, *ante*

SECT 1
Intro-
ductory.

such patent or grant shall not use it (c). Novelty of the art is an essential to the validity of the patent, for otherwise there would be no benefit given to the public and consequently no consideration moving from the patentee, for the consideration which alone gives the Crown power to grant patents of monopoly is that the inventor shall bring into this realm some new trade or some engine tending to the furtherance of some trade (d), and, if the invention is not new, the inventor does not communicate to the public anything which they did not know before. If, therefore, the public has once become possessed of the knowledge of the invention, no patent granted subsequently will be valid (e). The public can become possessed of the knowledge of the invention in two ways—(1) by prior use of the invention, or (2) by prior publication (f).

Public knowledge sufficient to prevent validity,

Public user

A public use of an art will avoid a subsequent patent for it for three reasons—(1) because the public use of an invention is evidence of public knowledge, (2) because the Statute of Monopolies (g) expressly requires that an invention granted by patent shall be such as others at the time of making the patent or grant do not use, and (3) because every patent expressly requires that the invention comprised in it shall be new as to the public use of it (h).

Questions to be considered as to prior use.

298 The questions to be considered as to whether a prior use does or does not avoid a patent are two—(1) was the use public? and (2), assuming that which was used not to be identical with the invention, was it so near as to have given the public the knowledge of the invention? (i). Both are questions of fact.

Use must be in public

299 Dealing with the first, the use must be a public use, and by that is meant not necessarily a use by the public, but a use in public (j). The use need not have taken place in any public resort, such as a market-place. It is sufficient if it is without concealment, as where the article was openly manufactured (k) or exhibited in a shop (l), all the workmen knowing of the method (m), or where the

(c) Statute of Monopolies (1623), 21 Jac 1, c 3, s 6

(d) *Darcy v. Allin* (1602), Noy, 173, 182, *Ipswich Clothworkers' Case* (1614), Godb 252

(e) There are three statutory exceptions to this statement, see pp 144 *et seq.*, *post*

(f) As to prior publication, see p 146, *post*

(g) 21 Jac 1, c 3

(h) Hindmarch on Patents, p 108

(i) See p 145, *post*

(j) Where, for instance, a lock which anticipated the invention had been used on a man's gate, it was held that this was a public use (*Carpenter v. Smith* (1842), 9 M & W 300, 304)

(k) *Carpenter v. Smith* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 536, *Heath v. Smith* (1845), 2 Web Pat Cas 268, *Croysdale v. Fisher* (1884), 1 R P C 17, *Luster v. Norton Brothers & Co* (1886), 3 R P C 199, *Podmore v. Wright & Co* (1888), 5 R P C 380, *Westley, Richards & Co v. Perkes* (1893), 10 R P C 181

(l) *Humpherson v. Syer* (1887), 4 R P C 407, C A. There may be public user if the invention is exposed in a spot to which the public had not free access (*Stead v. Williams* (1843), 2 Web Pat Cas 126, 136, *Stead v. Anderman* (1846), 2 Web Pat Cas 147, 149). But the exhibition of a model to three or four persons is not public user (*Lewis v. Marling* (1829), 4 C & P 52; 55; *Bentley v. Fleming* (1844), 1 Car & Kir 587, *Winby v. Manchester etc. Steam Trawlers Co* (1889), 6 R P C 359)

(m) *Saxby v. Gloucester Wagon Co* (1883), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1883, 64.

SECT. 1
Intro-
ductory.

article was publicly exhibited in a shipbuilding yard with no precautions to secure secrecy (n) The manufacture of an article openly is sufficient to avoid a subsequent patent, and it is not necessary that a single piece should have been sold (o).

The secret use of the invention by a person in the privacy of his own closet does not constitute an anticipation for the purposes of avoiding the patent (p)

300 The same law obtains whether the use is by an ordinary member of the public or by the inventor himself If he has confined the use to the secrecy of his chamber the patent is not avoided, otherwise no experiments would be possible, for as soon as an experiment had been successful there would have been a prior use (q) Nor does the use in the presence of persons who are in confidential or fiduciary relationship with the inventor (r), such as workmen employed by him on the manufacture (a), or someone who is to test the efficiency of the invention, make the use a public one

Use may be
by inventor
or by member
of public

301 The public sale of an invention is public use of it, and, if made by the inventor himself, certainly avoids a subsequent patent, because, if the inventor could sell the invention, keeping the secret to himself, and, when it was likely to be discovered by another, take out a patent, he might have practically a monopoly for a much longer period than fourteen years (b) Besides which consideration, the public sale of an article before the date of a patent is evidence of the invention having been used and exercised for the purposes of commerce and not simply for the purpose of experiment (c) Therefore where, before the patent, even a single specimen of the article is sold within this realm (d), the patent is void, and it is

Public sale is
public use

(n) *Lifeboat Co v Chambers Brothers & Co* (1891), 8 R P C 418 A public exhibition on the road may be a public use (*Bierclon v Richardson* (1884), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 54)

(o) *Hancock v Somervell* (1851), Newton's London Journal, Vol XXXIX, 158, *Mullins v Hart* (1852), 3 Car & Kir 297, *Olliv v Holden* (1860), 8 C B (N s) 666, *Betts v Neilson* (1868), 3 Ch App 429, 436

(p) *Young v Rosenthal & Co* (1884), 1 R P C 29, *Dollond v —* (1766), 1 Web Pat Cas 43, *Hills v London Gas Light Co* (1860), 5 H & N 312, 336

(q) *Re Newall and Elliot* (1858), 4 C B (N s) 269

(r) For the effect of a disclosure to the public by such persons, see p 147, *post*, *Gadd and Mason v Manchester Corporation* (1892), 9 R P C 249, 516, C A

(a) *Smith v Davidson* (1857), 19 Dunt (Ct of Sess) 691, *Morgan v Seaward* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 187, *Useful Patents Co v Rylands* (1885), 2 R P C 255, *Humpherson v Syer* (1887), 4 R P C 407, C A, *Kurtz v Spence* (1887), 5 R P C 161, *Betts v Menzies* (1859), 1 E & E 990, 1008, (1862) 10 H L Cas 117, *Bentley v Fleming* (1844), 1 Car & Kir 587

(b) *Morgan v Seaward*, *supra*, at p 194, *Losh v Hague* (1838), 1 Web Pat Cas 202, 205, *Germ Milling Co v Robinson* (No 2) (1886), 3 R P C 399, 408, C A

(c) *Wood v Zimmer* (1815), 1 Web Pat Cas 44, n, *Germ Milling Co v Robinson* (No 2), *supra*, at p 405, *Gibson and Campbell v Brand* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 627, *Carpenter v Smith* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas, 530, 536, *Hollens v Capper & Co* (1888), 5 R P C 289

(d) *Honiball v Bloomer* (1854), 2 Web Pat. Cas. 199.

SECT 1
Intro-
ductory.

Sale by
person other
than patentee

immaterial whether the articles sold were made in the realm or abroad (*e*), or that the sale was a mere experiment to ascertain if the goods would stand wear or that buyers would take them (*f*).

A sale by some one other than the subsequent patentee may be the subject of different considerations. If, by the sale, the public has gained the knowledge of the invention, there has been a dedication of the invention to the public and no subsequent patent can be valid. Although there is some doubt as to the effect of a use or sale of an article made abroad which, though manufactured in accordance with the invention, does not in itself disclose to the public what the invention is (*g*), the more logical reasoning of the older cases would seem to be correct, namely, that such a sale will avoid the patent for the reason that, if it did not, he who had used the invention by selling the article would be restrained from doing what he had already done (*h*).

Distinction
between use
for profit and
experiments
incidentally
profitable

302 A distinction must be drawn between the use of an invention for profit and the carrying out of experiments which turn out to be successful and by a coincidence happen to bring profit to the inventor (*i*). But, though this is the principle of law, an inventor may lose his rights by continued use before application (*h*).

Exhibition
without
proof of
sale

303 So jealous is the law of any use of the invention for profit, that the exhibition of the articles subsequently patented (*l*), or the deposit of the articles in a warehouse for the purpose of sale (*m*), is sufficient to avoid the patent, even though no actual sale is proved.

Exhibition at
industrial or
international
exhibitions

An exception, however, is made in favour of certain exhibitions, since it is often of the greatest importance that an invention should become known to those interested in the trade to which it appertains at the earliest possible date, both in the interests of the public and of the inventor. The exhibition of an invention at an industrial or international exhibition, certified as such by the Board of Trade, or the publication of any description of the invention during the period of the holding of the exhibition, or the use of the invention for the purpose of the exhibition in the place where the exhibition is held, or the use of the invention during the period of the holding of the exhibition by any person elsewhere,

(*e*) *Jensen v Smith* (1885), 2 R P C 249

(*f*) *Lister v Norton Brothers & Co* (1886), 3 R P C 199, compare *Orley v Holden* (1860), 8 C B (N S) 666

(*g*) *Sunlight Incandescent Gas Lamp Co v Incandescent Gas Light Co* (1897), 14 R P C 757

(*h*) *Heath v Smith* (1854), 3 E & B 256, *per* ERLE, J, at p 273, *Cornish v Keene* (1835), 1 Web Pat Cas 501

(*i*) As where a man contracted to lay a cable, and in carrying out the contract made experiments which turned out to be successful and embodied the invention, it was held that this did not amount to using his invention for profit, as the profit came from the contract, which was not to use the invention, but to lay a cable in any way he chose, and consequently the use of the invention was merely a coincidence (*Re Newall and Elliot* (1858), 4 C B (N S) 269, distinguishing *Re Adamson's Patent* (1856), 6 De G. M & G 420)

(*h*) *Re Adamson's Patent*, *supra*

(*l*) *Lister v. Norton Brothers & Co*, *supra*

(*m*) *Mullins v Hart* (1852), 3 Car & Kir 297.

SECT. 1
Intro-
ductory.

without the privity or consent of the inventor, does not prejudice the right of the inventor to apply for and obtain a patent in respect of the invention, or the validity of any patent granted on the application, provided that (a) the exhibitor, before exhibiting the invention, gives the Comptroller (n) the prescribed notice of his intention to do so, and (b) the application for a patent is made before or within six months from the date of the opening of the exhibition (o)

By an Order in Council the Crown may apply this exception to any exhibition without a certificate from the Board of Trade, and may by the terms of the order relieve the exhibitor from the condition of giving notice to the Comptroller (p)

304 It is not necessary that the use should have been continued right down to the time of the grant of the patent (q) It has been frequently stated that there is no decision as to whether a rediscovery of a lost art can be the subject of a valid patent or whether the patent will be avoided for want of novelty, but it has been laid down that it is not necessary that the contrivance or machine should be in use up to the time of the letters patent, provided that it has been once in public use and the recollection of it has not been altogether lost (r), and by implication, therefore, if the recollection of the prior use has been altogether lost, a patent for the rediscovery of the invention might be good

Use need not
be continued
to date of
grant

305 The second question in the test (s) as to whether a prior use of the invention avoids the patent or not is, supposing that there has been a public use, was the thing used the invention or not? If the thing used was the actual invention the patent is avoided But it may be that the thing used falls short of the actual invention If so, it becomes a question of fact whether the thing used is so like the invention that the difference is merely colourable or whether it would take invention to come by the patented invention even with the knowledge of the prior user It is clear that this question is intimately connected with that of subject-matter, for, the extent of the advance in the public's knowledge having been narrowed down by the prior user, it at once becomes material to see if the step from the prior user to the invention, which is all that is new in the invention, is sufficient subject-matter to support the patent In this connection the same question arises as that which is dealt with hereafter on the question of how much information is necessary in a document in order to constitute anticipation for the purposes of avoiding the patent (a)

Identity of
thing used
with inven-
tion.

(n) As to the Comptroller, see p 168, *post*

(o) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 45 (1) In order to identify the invention the applicant must give the Comptroller a short description of it, together with drawings, where necessary, and any further information that the Comptroller may require (Patents Rules, 1908, r 101 (Stat R & O, 1907, p 779), see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol X, p 170)

(p) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 45 (2)

(q) *Househill Coal and Iron Co v Nelson* (1843), 9 Cl & Fin 788, H L.

(r) *Ibid*, per Lord Lyndhurst, L C, at p 803

(s) As to the first question, see p 142, *ante*

(a) See pp 166, 167, *post*

SECT 1

Introductory

Unsuccessful use no bar to patent for similar but successful invention

Abandonment as evidence of unsuccessful experiments

Public knowledge owing to prior publication.

Was there sufficient publication?

Public access to source of knowledge

306 As the mere use by way of experiment of the invention does not avoid the patent (*b*), so also unsuccessful experiments do not avoid a patent for a successful invention, nor does the user of a useless machine avoid a patent for a successful machine, notwithstanding that there are similarities between the two (*c*), nor is the exhibition of a model necessarily sufficient user of the actual machine (*d*)

307 While it is not necessary, in order to avoid a patent for want of novelty, that the use should have been continued down to the time that the patent was granted (*e*), the fact that what was done was abandoned may be very strong evidence that the user was of unsuccessful experiments and not of the complete invention, and therefore does not avoid the subsequent patent (*f*)

308 There is another way in which the public may gain the knowledge of the invention, and that is by a prior publication. As in the case of prior use, there are two questions of fact raised—(1) was there sufficient publication? and (2) if there was, did the document so published furnish sufficient knowledge?

Publication may be by writing or parol

309 The question as to whether there is sufficient publication depends on the following consideration. Was the document or communication part of the public stock of knowledge?—that is to say, had the public access to it in order to learn from it the knowledge which it contained? For, if a document is relied on, it is not necessary to show that any member of the public actually read it, provided they had an opportunity of doing so (*g*).

For instance, which is the commonest case of all, if the book is upon the shelves of some public library—in practice usually the Patent Office library—it is clearly accessible to the public, and the information therein contained is part of the public stock of knowledge, even though there is but one copy (*h*). Further, it is publication although the document is not in English, provided it is in some language with which those interested in the subject may be presumed to be familiar (*i*)

(*b*) See p 143, *ante*

(*c*) *Murray v Clayton* (1872), 7 Ch App 570, 581, *Barlow v Baylis* (1870), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 44, *Daw v Eley* (1867), L R. 3 Eq 496, *Pneumatic Tyre Co v East London Rubber Co* (1896), 14 R P C 77, *Jones v Pearce* (1832), 1 Web Pat Cas 122, 124, *Tangye v Stott* (1865), 14 W R 128, *Stead v Williams* (1843), 2 Web Pat Cas 126, 135; *Winby v Manchester etc Steam Tramways Co* (1889), 6 R P C 359

(*d*) *Lewis v Marling* (1829), 1 Web Pat Cas. 493. This case has never been overruled, and therefore it must be taken that the law is at present as stated, but it is doubtful whether the case would be followed if the same circumstances arose (*Winby v Manchester etc Steam Tramways Co*, *supra*)

(*e*) See p 145, *ante*.

(*f*) *Houskill Coal and Iron Co v Neilson* (1843), 9 CL & Fin 788, IL L; *Morgan & Co. v Windover & Co* (1888), 5 R P C 295, C. A., 4 T L R 425

(*g*) *Plimpton v Malcolmson* (1876), 3 Ch D 531, *Patterson v Gas Light and Coke Co.* (1877), 3 App Cas 239

(*h*) *Ibid*

(*i*) *Lang v. Guborne* (1862), 31 Beav. 133, *Harris v Rothwell* (1887), 35 Ch D. 416, 426, C. A.

310. The reason why it is sufficient to show that the book or document is accessible is that the court draws an inference that, if the public had an opportunity of making the information therein contained part of the general stock of public knowledge, they did so. This inference may, however, be rebutted (*k*).

SECT. 1.
~~Inte-~~
~~ductory.~~

Inference
as to
opportunity
taken by
public
Intention of
the publica-
tion may be
regarded

311. It is permissible to look at the intention of the publication as well as at the fact of the publication. Thus, where a report of a commission had been drawn up but not in fact published, the information therein contained was held to be part of the public stock of knowledge, for as soon as the referees in the performance of their public duty had prepared their report, the matter of that report was public property, and the referees had no power to agree among themselves to treat any communication therein contained as confidential (*l*). On the other hand, a patent will not now be held to be invalid by reason only of the invention in respect of which the patent was granted, or any part thereof, having been published prior to the date of the patent (*m*), if the patentee proves to the satisfaction of the court that the publication was made without his knowledge and consent and that the matter published was derived or obtained from him, and, if he learned of the publication before the date of his application for the patent, that he applied for and obtained protection for his invention with all reasonable diligence after learning of the publication (*n*).

Publication
without
knowledge
or consent.

There is a further remedial enactment in the case of a particular class of documents, namely, specifications. There is no virtue in the document relied on as prior publication being a specification of another patent (*o*). On the contrary, an invention

Publication
in specifica-
tion

(*k*) Thus, where it was proved that a single copy of a book was sent to the Patent Office library, and when it arrived was through some error put, not upon the ordinary shelves, but in a room accessible to the public for purposes other than reading and such that they would not expect to find a book there, and no information was given to the public that such a book was there or even existed at all in the catalogue or elsewhere, and where those who were most interested in the subject had failed at all material times to find the book or to find that such a book did in fact exist, the court held that the inference was rebutted and that the information therein contained was not part of the public stock of knowledge (*Plimpton v Spiller* (1877), 6 Ch D 412, C A). In *Lang v Gasborne* (1862), 31 Beav 133, ROMILLY, M R., at p 135, said that as soon as a book is exposed for sale in a shop there is sufficient publication, but this statement has been in terms said to go too far (*Patterson v Gas Light and Coke Co* (1877), 3 App Cas 239).

(*l*) *Patterson v Gas Light and Coke Co*, *supra*

(*m*) An exception is also made in the case of a publication made in connection with and for the purposes of an industrial exhibition, see p 144, *ante*.

(*n*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 41 (2). This provision reversed the law as laid down in *Pickard and Currey v Prescott*, [1892] A C 263.

(*o*) *Bells v Menzies* (1862), 10 H L Cas 117, *Cornish v Keene* (1837), 3 Bing (N C) 570, compare *Lawrence v Perry* (1835), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1834-6, 143, *Muntz v Foster* (1843), 2 Web. Pat Cas 93, *Hill v. Evans* (1862), 4 De G J & F. 288, *Young v. Fernie* (1864), 10 L T 861. A provisional specification does not become public by abandonment (*Orley v Holden* (1860), 8 C B (N S.) 666), unless it imparts sufficient information to the person subsequently working on it (*Bells v Nelson*

§ 302 1
Intro-
ductory.

covered by any patent applied for on or after the 1st day of January, 1905, is not to be deemed to have been anticipated by reason only of its publication in a specification left pursuant to an application made in the United Kingdom not less than fifty years before the date of the application for the patent, or of its publication in a provisional specification of any date not followed by a complete specification (p)

Did prior
publication
furnish
sufficient
knowledge?

Importance
as to nature
of knowledge
conveyed to
the mind of
the public

312 The second question of fact to be determined—namely, as to whether what has been published anticipates the invention—is rather more difficult to answer in the case of prior publication than it is in the case of prior user, for, in the latter case, there are two machines or two processes which can be compared in actual practice, while, in the former, the court has to construe words and then come to the conclusion what knowledge those words would convey to a public not knowing the present invention. Even where the prior document and the present specification are identical in language, it does not follow that the court can without evidence interpret the first as being an anticipation of the second. For where there are words of art, that is technical terms, it does not follow that those words of art bore the same meaning at the date of the prior publication as they did at the date of the specification. The true rule is if the terms of the prior publication and the present specification are identical, and if it is not disputed that the terms of art in one have the same meaning as the same terms used in the other, which from the lapse of time between the dates of the two documents may not always be the case, the court ought without evidence to determine that the first publication anticipated the second. But if, after construction and after the meaning of the parties in the two documents has been ascertained by the court, there is any difference between the two things which may be essential or material to the invention, and which either party contends is essential, then the identity in substance of the two inventions described is a matter to be established by extrinsic evidence (q). But although extrinsic evidence may and often must be called, it is confined to evidence of what knowledge the prior document would have conveyed to the mind of a person who had not the knowledge given by the present invention. It is often very difficult for the most honest minds to divest themselves of their present knowledge and form a true opinion of what the prior document would have conveyed to them if they had not known what by this time they do know. When the issue is that certain useful and sufficient information has been given to the public, the evidence of instructed and skilled men, conversant with the special literature, that no such information was in fact conveyed to their minds is far more to the point than

Expert
evidence

(1868), 3 Ch App 429, considered in *Plimpton v. Macdonald* (1876), 3 Ch. D 531, *Hill v. Evans* (1862), 4 De G J & F 288. As to provisional specification, see p 155, *post*

(p) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c. 29), s 41 (1)

(q) *Bette v. Menzies* (1862), 10 H L Cas 117. As to the admission of opinions of experts as evidence, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 480, 481

evidence of other like instructed and skilled men, who, speaking with all the new light thrown on the subject, conclude now that the information was then sufficient (r).

SECT. 1.
Intro-
ductory.

313 Assuming, however, that the court is satisfied that information would have been conveyed to the public, the question arises as to how much information is necessary to anticipate the invention. The test is, did the document supply sufficient information to enable the public to make a machine or carry out a process, which machine or process, if made or carried out, would have in fact anticipated the present invention? The latter half of this test has been already discussed on the question of prior user (s). On the question of the sufficiency of the information the document must be as full and complete as a specification. A barren general description, though containing some suggestive information or involving some speculative theory, will not avoid for want of novelty a subsequent invention unless it is ascertained that the antecedent publication involved the same amount of useful information (t).

Question of
quantum of
knowledge
imparted

314 It becomes, therefore, necessary to inquire what is the test of sufficiency in a specification (a).

The test of
sufficiency

In the first place, it is plain that the specification of a patent is not addressed to people who are ignorant of the subject-matter. It is addressed to people who know something about it, and of these there are various kinds. If it is a mechanical invention, there are first of all the scientific classes, including scientific mechanicians of the first class, eminent engineers, then there are scientific mechanicians of the second class, managers of great manufactories, great employers of labour, persons who have studied mechanics—not to the same extent as the first class, the scientific engineers, but still to a great extent—for the purpose of conducting manufactories of complicated and unusual machines, and who, therefore, must have made the subject a matter of very considerable study, and this class includes foremen, being men of superior intelligence, who, like their masters, would be capable of invention, and, like the scientific engineers, would be able to find out what was meant even from slight hints, and still more from imperfect descriptions, and would be able to supplement, so as to succeed, even from a defective description, and, even more than that, would be able to correct an erroneous description. The other class consists of the ordinary workman, using that amount of skill and intelligence which is fairly to be expected from him—not a careless man, but a careful man, though not possessing that great scientific knowledge or power of invention which would enable him by himself, unaided, to supplement a defective description, or correct an erroneous description.

Persons
to whom
information
must be
intelligible

(r) *Von Heyden v Neustadt* (1880), 42 L T 300, C A, per JAMES, L J at p. 302

(s) See pp 142 et seq, ante

(t) *Betts v Menares* (1862), 10 H L Cas 117

(a) The law is most clearly laid down by JESSER, M R, in *Plimpton v. Malcolmson* (1876), 3 Ch D 531, 568. As to provisional specification, see p 155, post. As to complete specification, see p 158, post.

SECT. 1.
Intro-
ductory.

Combination
of sources of
information.

To be a good specification a specification must be intelligible to the last-mentioned class. It is a bad specification if the first two classes only understand it, and if the third class does not (b).

315 It follows from this statement of the law (c) that more than one prior document may be used to show anticipation, though no one of them by itself would do so, provided that the combining of the information therein contained does not require more than the ordinary intelligence of such a careful workman. On the other hand, if it requires a mosaic of extracts from annals and treatises spread over a series of years to prove anticipation, it is not sufficient, for if it could be shown that a patentee had made his discovery by studying, collating, and applying a number of facts disseminated in the pages of such works, his diligent study of such works would as much entitle him to the character of inventor as the diligent study of the works of nature would do (d).

(m) *Utility*

Utility only
evidence of
good subject
matter.

316 The first and most ordinary sense of the word "utility" (e) is the commercial utility of the invention. This has no direct

(b) In *Plimpton v. Malcolmson* (1876), 3 Ch D 531, at p 576, after enunciating the proposition in the text, *supra*, JESSEL, M R, goes on to emphasise the point that an insufficient specification is not made sufficient merely because someone supplemented or corrected a defect or an error. "This intelligent workman, reading it for the first time, came to the conclusion that what was an abstract, or a condensed statement, of the specification was wrong, and looking at the drawing he had sufficient intelligence, as he describes it, but, as I should describe it, sufficient inventive power, to correct the mistake. You must not mislead people by telling them to do something wrong, and leaving them to find out the mistake. Therefore, if this were really the meaning of the letterpress, then I think it is clearly insufficient, because it tells you to do something which cannot be done to make the thing useful, though he did, by his own intelligence, in looking at the drawing, find out what was required. You must not give people mechanical problems and call them specifications. You may set to a dozen engineers a mechanical problem, and perhaps eleven out of the twelve will find it out, you may set to a dozen selected workmen a mechanical problem, and perhaps, of that dozen, three-fourths will find it out, but that is not the meaning of a sufficient specification."

(upon the objection that the experts ought to have found out the error) "I will assume that Mr Bramwell ought to have found it out, and I will assume that Mr Imray ought to have found it out, as well as Messrs Cowper, May and Hulse. What then? That is not the class to which these things are addressed. Supposing that these great mechanical engineers had found it out, it would only show that they had sufficient capacity to solve this mechanical problem, and no more" (*ibid*, at p 576, see also *Arkwright v. Nightingale* (1785), 1 Web Pat Cas 60, *Harmer v. Playne* (1809), Dav. Pat Cas. 311, 318, *Sturs v. De la Rue* (1828), 5 Russ 322, 327, *Galloway v. Bleaden* (1839), 1 Web Pat Cas 521, 524, *Elliott v. Aston* (1840), 1 Web Pat Cas 222, 224, *Buckford v. Shewes* (1839), 1 Web Pat Cas 214, *Neilson v. Harford* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 295, 314, *Gibson and Campbell v. Brand* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 627, 629, *Household Coal and Iron Co v. Neilson* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 673, 676, 9 Cl. & Fin 788, H L., *Morton v. Middleton* (1863), 1 Macph. (Ct. of Sess.) 715, 721, *Foxwell v. Bostock* (1864), 10 L. T. 144, 147).

(c) See p 148, *ante*

(d) *Van Heyden v. Neustadt* (1880), 14 Ch D 230, C. A., as reported, 42 L. T. 300; *Branton v. Hawkes* (1821), 4 B. & Ald 541

(e) The word "utility" is singularly unhappy in its application in patent

effect on the validity of the patent. As has been seen (*f*), the commercial utility may be evidence of sufficient subject-matter, but being merely evidence it follows that the absence thereof cannot be pleaded as a bar in law to the validity of the patent.

SECT. 1
Intro-
ductory.

Further, it is to be noticed that "utility" *eo nomine* does not occur in the Statute of Monopolies (*g*), and on that ground the real test is that the thing shall be new, not that it shall be useful, and the condition imposed by the statute (*g*) has been complied with when it has been proved to be new (*h*)

Real test is novelty, not utility.

317 Want of utility is often used as a compendious and inaccurate way of expressing two totally distinct grounds of invalidity. For instance, suppose a patent is obtained for improving a gun-lock by means of a certain hole through which air passes without powder, and suppose it turns out that the powder in fact passes through the hole with the air, it is often said that the invention is useless. There is here a confusion of language, for, if the statement is analysed, the following proposition becomes clear —The passing of air without powder does not take place by the means described *ex hypothesi* the passing of air without powder by the means described is the invention therefore the invention does not exist. It is obviously meaningless to predicate of a non-existing thing that it is either useful or useless.

Want of utility as a plea of invalidity

It does not follow from this that a patent may not be invalid on the ground that the supposed invention is useless. In the case referred to the patent was declared invalid (*i*), but the looseness and inaccuracy of the plea is more than a mere matter of words, for, unless the exact issue raised is understood, it is impossible to follow the reasons for which a patent is valid or the reverse.

318 The question at issue may be raised by two pleas, which need not in the least be necessarily connected. The first is that of want of subject-matter (*k*). The subject-matter of a patent must be a new manufacture or art (*l*). It follows, therefore, that if there is no new manufacture or art there is no subject-matter for a patent, and if in fact there is no invention, there can be no new art.

Pleas of invalidity
(1) want of subject-matter,
(2) insufficiency

The second plea by which the issue may be raised is that of insufficiency, and it is in substance upon that plea that most of the cases quoted in support of the plea of utility were decided. In the

Want of utility supporting plea of insufficiency

law. It has three distinct meanings, and confusion is constantly being created by the looseness with which the word is used, sometimes in the ordinary sense, sometimes in highly technical senses quite unjustified by any definition to be found in a dictionary.

(*f*) See p. 135, *ante*

(*g*) 21 Jac. 1, c. 3

(*h*) *Lewis v. Marling* (1829), 10 B. & C. 22. "The condition therefore, is that the thing shall be new, not that it shall be useful, and, although the question of utility has sometimes been left to a jury, I think the condition imposed by the statute has been complied with when it has been proved to be new," *per* PARKE, J., at p. 28.

(*i*) *Manton v. Parker*, (1814), Dav. Pat. Cas. 327

(*k*) Advocated by Mr. Webster after the remarks of PARKE, B., as to the possible objections to the plea of utility, which were not taken at the bar, and were expressly left on that ground undecided (*Morgan v. Seaward* (1836), 1 Web. Pat. Cas. 170, 197, n.).

(*l*) See p. 134, *ante*.

SECT 1
Intro-
ductory.

instance above given there was something which does exist and which is useless, namely, the description of the means by which the invention was sought to be carried into effect. Applying the test of sufficiency (*m*), no workman could make from the description in the specification a gun-lock having a hole through which only air would pass; therefore the specification is insufficient and the patent is void (*m*). Nor will the court entertain a discussion as to whether the patent can be made to work by other means, for this again is a confusion of language. For *ex hypothesi* the invention described in the specification does not work. The question, therefore, as to whether some other invention—possibly what the inventor thought he had described, but nevertheless other than that which in fact he has described—will work, though possibly interesting, is wholly immaterial (*n*).

Want of
utility
owing to
mischievous
nature as
regards the
State or
public good

319 There is another limitation in the Statute of Monopolies (*o*) besides that of novelty, namely that expressed by the words "so as also they be not contrary to law nor mischievous to the State by raising prices of commodities at home or hurt of trade or generally inconvenient (*p*)," and those inventions which are within this limitation have been called useless (*p*). Whatever name be applied to this class of inventions, the limitation certainly obtains, and no patent for an invention which is against public policy is valid. For instance, a patent for bulging a house would be invalid, for it would be absurd that one statute should reward persons for providing means of violating another (*q*). There is, however, a difference between violating and evading a law, and a patent for the purpose of evading a law is not necessarily against public policy (*r*).

SECT 2—Application for a Patent

SUB-SECT 1—Application

Several or
joint applica-
tion

320 An application may be made for a patent by any person applying in the prescribed form (*s*).

(*m*) See p 159, *post*

(*n*) The origin of this confusion lies in an unfortunate expression of Sir E Coke (3 Co Inst 184, where he lays down that it is a necessary ingredient in every patent that it shall have "*evidens utilitas*") Sir E Coke was using the word in a very different sense, and in that sense it may be used accurately, it awkwardly.

(*o*) 21 Jac 1, c 3, s 6

(*p*) By Sir E Coke (3 Co Inst 184) The instance that he gives is no more fortunate than his expression, see note (*n*), *supra* *Bircot's Case* (1573), 3 Co Inst 184, decided that a fulling mill was useless, not because it did not do what the inventor described, but for the exactly contrary reason, namely, that it worked all too well and put out of employment many hand fullers, which was against public policy, because it was ordained that man should full hats with his hands. This view has in terms been overruled (*Boulton v Bull* (1795), 2 Hy Bl 463), but the expression "utility" has remained.

(*q*) Hindmarch on Patents, p 142

(*r*) *Re Vassey's Patent* (1894), 11 R P C 591, 593

(*s*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 1 (1), (2), Patents Rules, 1908, r 5 (Statutory Rules and Orders, 1907, p 779). A pamphlet containing "Instructions to Applicants" may be obtained at the Patent Office, 9, Southampton Buildings, Chancery Lane, London. Forms are provided, on one of which the application must be made (Patent Office

In the case of a joint application it must be stated which of the applicants is or are the true and first inventor or inventors (*t*).

321 The applicant or applicants must make a declaration that he or they is or are in possession of an invention the title of which must be set out (*a*), and of which invention one or more of them claims to be the true and first inventor or inventors, and that to the best of his or their knowledge and belief the said invention is not in use by any other person or persons (*b*). If the applicant is the legal representative of a person who has died possessed of an invention (*c*) he must produce the usual evidence of his title at the Patent Office (*d*).

When filled in, the form must be signed by the applicant or joint applicants—in the case of a firm by each member of the firm—and an address for service, being either that of the applicant or his agent, must be provided (*e*). The Comptroller may subsequently require that this address shall be within the United Kingdom (*f*).

322 Applications must be made at or to the Patent Office (*g*). They may be sent through the post (*h*), in which case the rules

SECT. 2.
Application
for a
Patent.

Declaration.

Address for
service

Where
application
made

Rules, 1908, r 10, Sched II, Forms, No 1—1D Form No 1 is not applicable to the case of a corporation, but a foreign corporation may apply on Form 1A (*Re Société Anonyme du Générateur du Temple's Application for a Patent* (1895), 13 R P C 54) the distinction between the forms depends upon whether the application is for a patent for an invention as opposed to one for an importation, and whether it is made in the ordinary way as opposed to one made under the special international and colonial procedure (see p 229, *post*), and whether it is made for a substantive patent or for one of addition (see p 205, *post*), or for a secret patent (see p 189, *post*). As to proceedings on application, see the text *infra*.

(*t*) Patents Rules, 1908, Forms Nos 1—1D, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, pp 58 *et seq*. For the numbers of these forms under the Patents Rules, 1908, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XVI, pp 491 *et seq*, and see *ibid*, Vol XVI, pp 495, 496. A patent cannot be granted where the true and first inventor refuses the grant (*Wool, Hide and Skin Syndicate v Riches* (1902), 19 R P C 127, *per* KIRKWICH, J, followed in *Re A and B's Application* (1910), 28 R P C 454).

(*a*) Patents Rules, 1908, Forms Nos 1—1D For further particulars as to the title, see p 154, *post*.

(*b*) Patents Rules, 1908, Forms Nos 1—1D

(*c*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 43, *Edmunds' Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884 6, 281

(*d*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 11, and see p 129, *ante*

(*e*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 8 For forms of indorsement of address for service, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, p 61

(*f*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 8 The Comptroller General of Patents, Designs, and Trade Marks, and the examiners, officers and clerks of the Patent Office are appointed, and may be removed, by the Board of Trade, subject to the approval of the Treasury (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 63). The Comptroller-General carries on his duties at the Patent Office, 25, Southampton Buildings, Chancery Lane, London, which is provided by the Treasury (*ibid*, s 62 (1)). The salary of the Comptroller-General is £1,500 per annum, and it, as well as the salaries of the other officials and staff of the Patent Office, are appointed by the Board of Trade with the concurrence of the Treasury (*ibid*, s 63).

(*g*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 1 (2) They should be made to the Comptroller, Patent Office, 25, Southampton Buildings, Chancery Lane, London; see the Instructions to Applicants.

(*h*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 7

SECT 2
Application
for a
Patent.

Fees
Documents
accompanying
application

concerning the ordinary course of the post are observed (i), or they may be left at the Patent Office. In either case they are opened and numbered in the order of their receipt at the Patent Office (k). Certain fees are payable upon the application (l).

323. The application must be accompanied by two copies of either the provisional or the complete specification (m) drawn up on the prescribed forms (n). Furthermore, where the Comptroller deems it desirable, he may require that suitable drawings be supplied with the specification, or at any time before the acceptance of the same, and such drawings are deemed to form part of the specification (o). The drawings must bear the name of the applicant, but no descriptive matter (a), save the requisite numbering or other necessary identification marks, and a facsimile must be filed prepared on tracing cloth (b). The drawings must be delivered at the office with the specifications, or when required by the Comptroller (c), unless the applicant wishes the drawings of the provisional specification to be used for the complete specification, in which case he should give instructions to that effect (d). Where the invention is a chemical one the Comptroller may require typical samples and specimens to be furnished before the acceptance of the complete specification (e), and in duplicate, if so required (f).

SUB-SECT 2 --Title

Title
commencing
specification

324 Every specification, whether provisional or complete (g), must commence with a title (h), which title is embodied in the grant and is therefore part of the patent.

(i) Patents Rules, 1908, r 7, and see title POST OFFICE, pp 657 *et seq*, *post*

(k) Patents Rules, 1908, r 12. An application left at the Patent Office after office hours must bear the date of the following office day (*Re Matthews and Strange's Application for a Patent* (1910), 27 R P C 288)

(l) Patents Rules, 1908, r 4, Sched I *see*, application with provisional specification only, £1, with complete specification, £4. Fees cannot be paid by cheque or money order, or in cash, but applicants must use the stamped forms. For further information as to obtaining these forms, see the Instructions to Applicants, p 3.

(m) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 1 (3), Patents Rules, 1908, Forms Nos 1—1D.

(n) *Ibid*, Forms Nos 2, 3.

(o) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 2 (3). Copies of the instructions as to the preparation of drawings may be obtained from the Patent Office, and see Patents Rules, 1908, rr 19—25 (detailing requirements as to size, arrangement, paper, suitability for reproduction, delivery at the office etc.)

(a) *Ibid*, r 23.

(b) *Ibid*, r 24.

(c) Patents and Designs Act 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 2 (3).

(d) Patents Rules, 1908, r 26.

(e) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 2 (5), Patents Rules 1908, r 36.

(f) *Ibid*, r 36. Certain formalities are required for the delivery of such samples and specimens (*ibid*). *Quære* whether, where the Comptroller requires further samples, his decision is subject to an appeal to a law officer (*Re J Y J's Applications for Patents* (1910), 28 R P C 625). As to appeals to a law officer, see p 178, *post*.

(g) As to provisional specification, see p 155, *post*. As to complete specification, see p 158, *post*.

(h) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 2 (4). The title

325 The title should give a fair general description of the nature of the invention. This obviously connotes that within certain limits it must not be too wide. For instance, with regard to an invention consisting of an improved lamp, a title "for an improved method of lighting cities, towns and villages," was held to be too vague (i)

The objection that the title is too narrow and does not include the invention is more serious and may be fatal to the patent (k), because in this case there is no specification agreeing with the title (l). If the disagreement goes further and amounts to actual false suggestion, then *a fortiori* the patent may be held to be invalid (m).

Mere vagueness in the title, not amounting to disagreement with the specification, and in the absence of fraud, is not a ground for avoiding the patent after it has once been granted (n), and, as the specification and the patent itself are construed together (o), a title in itself defective may be cured by the specification (p). An objection that the title is defective may, however, be taken by the Crown before the granting of the patent, in accordance with statutory regulation (q).

SECT. 3.
Application
for a
Patent.

Title must
not be too
wide

Title must
not be too
narrow

Effect of
vagueness in
title

SUB-SECT 3 — *Provisional Specification.*

326 The specification which has to be lodged with the application is of one of two kinds, provisional or complete, and their purposes are different and distinct. While the complete specification has a double object (r), namely, to furnish sufficient and

Function of
specifications
in general and
of provisional
specification
in particular

is really a short statement of the invention (*Houshill Coal and Iron Co v Veilson* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 673, 678, 9 Cl & Fin 788, H L.)

(i) *Cochrane (Lord) v Smelhurst* (1816), 1 Stark 205, see also *Campion v Benyon* (1821), 6 Moore (C P), 71, *Felton v Greaves* (1829), 3 C & P 611, *Derosne v Favre* (1835), 2 Cr M & R 476, *Cook v Pearce* (1843), 8 Q B 1044, *Nichols v Haslam* (1844), 7 Man & G 378, *Beard v Egerton* (1847), 2 Car & Kir 667

(k) *Croll v Edge* (1850), 9 C B 479, *Oxley v Holden* (1860), 8 C B (N S) 666

(l) *Cook v Pearce, supra*, *Campion v Benyon, supra*, *R v Metcalf* (1817), 2 Stark 249, *Bainbridge v Wigley* (1810), 1 Carp Pat Cas, 270

(m) *R v Wheeler* (1819), 2 B & Ald 345, *Bloxum v Elsee* (1825), 1 C & P 558, (1827) 6 B & C 169, *Morgan v Seaward* (1837), 2 M & W 544, *Gibson and Campbell v Brand* (1841), 1 Web. Pat Cas 627, 634

(n) *Cook v Pearce, supra*, *Nichols v Haslam, supra*, *Oxley v Holden supra*, *Purrie v York Street Flax Spinning Co* (1892), 10 R P C 34, 31 L R Ir 3 (the last occasion on which the question of defective title was raised), see also *Sandow, Ltd v Szalay* (1905), 23 R P C 6, 14, H L (where it was held that it does not follow that the complete specification does not include a detailed way of performing the invention set out in the provisional specification, although the latter is not mentioned in the complete specification)

(o) *Hornblower v Boulton* (1799), Dav Pat Cas 221, 230, *Newton v Vaucher* (1851), 6 Exch 859, 866, *Neilson v Harford* (1841), 8 M & W 806, *Oxley v Holden, supra*, at p 707

(p) *Hills v London Gas Light Co* (1860), 5 H & N 312, *Electric Telegraph Co v Brett* (1851), 10 C B 838, see *Sandow, Ltd v Szalay, supra*

(q) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 3 (2).

(r) See p 159, *post*

SECT 2
Application
for a
Patent.

certain information to the public respecting what they are prohibited from doing whilst the privilege continues, and what they will be enabled to do after it has expired (s), the provisional specification has neither of these two objects in view. its object is to disclose what the nature (t) of the invention is (u).

Consideration
governing
choice of
specification

327 The choice which the applicant has to make is governed in practice by the following considerations —

(1) If he leaves the complete specification with his application he runs no risk of having his patent avoided on the ground of disconformity (a), and it may be to his commercial interest to have a patent granted with as little delay as possible,

Provisional
protection

(2) If he leaves his provisional specification with his application, and if, by the time for leaving the complete specification, he has come to the conclusion that his invention is a failure, he need not go to the expense of lodging a complete specification. Further, provisional protection is given to him during the period between the date of the application and the date of the sealing of the patent, during which period he may use and publish the invention without prejudice to his claim for a patent (b)

Description in
provisional
specification

328 As with the title so with the provisional specification, a fair and honest description must be given of the nature of the invention. It is manifest, however, that the provisional specification, though not so full and detailed as the complete specification, is intended to be fuller and more particular than the title. A further difference is also material. As has been seen (c), a defective title may be cured by the specification. A provisional specification, on the

(s) *Macfarlane v Price* (1816), 1 Stark 199, *Young v Rosenthal & Co* (1884), 1 R P C 29, *per Grove, J*, at p 31, *Allen v Duckett & Son* (1893), 10 R P C 397

(t) A provisional specification must describe the nature of the invention (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 2 (1))

(u) Before 1852, there was no provisional specification, and the patent was granted upon a condition that a specification—that is, a document answering to the present complete specification—should be enrolled in the Court of Chancery within a certain time. Provided that he were not found out (and that amounted to saying, provided that he did not go outside his title, for that was the only knowledge till his specification was enrolled that the law officers had) there was nothing to prevent a patentee from preparing a specification for a totally different invention from that for which he had applied. The object of the provisional specification is to prevent this very thing happening to the prejudice of another person who applies between the date of the application and the leaving at the Patent Office of the complete specification (*Newall v Elliott and Glass* (1864), 10 Jur (N S) 954, *Penn v Bobby* (1866), 2 Ch App 127, *Lucas v Miller* (1885), 2 R P C 155, *Moseley v Victoria Rubber Co* (1887), 4 R P C 241, *Morgan & Co v Windover & Co* (1887), 4 R P C 417, 422, 3 T L R 748, affirmed (1888), 5 R P C 295, C A, 4 T L R 425, *Woodward v Sansum & Co* (1887), 4 R P C 166, C A, 56 L T 347, *per LOPES, L J*, *Cassel Gold Extracting Co v Cyanide Gold Recovery Syndicate* (1895), 12 R P C 232, 257, C A, *Pneumatic Tyre Co v Leicester Pneumatic Tyre and Automatic Valve Co* (1899), 16 R P C 531, H L, *per Lord MACNAGHTEN*, at p 541)

(a) See p 161, *post*

(b) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 4

(c) See p 155, *ante*

other hand, cannot be used in aid of a defective complete specification for the purpose of explaining or enlarging it, and if the complete specification is vitiated for non-disclosure of the invention, the whole patent is vitiated (*d*)

329 In considering how a provisional specification should be drawn and what matters it should contain, it must be remembered that, if there is variance, it will not be the provisional but the complete specification that will be vitiated (*e*), and consequently regard must be had to what the invention is at that time (*f*)

Having ascertained that, a fair description of the invention must be given. Where it is possible this should be given in writing, but sometimes it is proper, or even necessary to clearness of expression, to make use of diagrams or drawings, and, where this condition of things obtains, drawings should be employed (*g*). Several points must be observed in drawing the specification, however —

(1) A description of the nature of the invention does not require a description of the manner in which the same is to be performed (*h*).

(2) There is no obligation to enter into more detail than is necessary to give a fair description of the invention (*i*)

(3) There is no obligation to restrict within the particular limitations of a claim what is the invention (*h*)

(4) Although the provisional specification is for the above considerations wide and has a larger ambit than the complete specification, it must nevertheless be drawn with the utmost good faith (*l*)

(*d*) *Mackelcan v Rennie* (1862), 13 C B (N S) 52

(*e*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 6 (3), *Siddell v Vickers* (1888), 39 Ch D 92, 97, C A, *Bailey v Robertson* (1878), 3 App Cas 1055, considered in *Horrocks v Stubbs* (1886), 3 R P C 221, *United Telephone Co v Harrison, Cox Walker & Co* (1882), 21 Ch D 720, *Walling v Stevens* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 240, *Hutchison v Patullo* (1888), 5 R P C 351, *Re Gaulard and Gibbs' Patent*, [1889] W N 60, C A. For a series of forms applicable to various inventions, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol X, pp 2, 64, 67

(*f*) *Woodward v Sansum & Co* (1887), 4 R P C 166, C A, 56 L T 347, *British Dynamite Co v Krebs* (1879), 1 Goodeve's Patent Cases, 88, H L, per Lord Cairns, L C, at p 92

(*g*) *Macfurlane v Price* (1816), 1 Stark 197, *Bloxam v Elsee* (1825), 1 C & P 558, 564, *Hastings v Brown* (1853), 1 E & B 450, 454, *Daw v Eley* (1867), L R 3 Eq 496, 500, n, and see Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 2. Drawings are part of the specification (*Morgan v Seaward* (1835), 1 Web Pat Cas 167, 173, *Morton v Middleton* (1863), 1 Macph (Ct of Sess) 718, 722), and may form a sufficient specification alone (*Brunton v Hawkes* (1820), 1 Carp Pat Cas 405, per ABBOTT, C J, at p 410, *Foxwell v Boslock* (1864), 10 L T 144, *Poupard v Fardell* (1869), 18 W R 127)

(*h*) *United Telephone Co v Harrison, Cox-Walker & Co*, *supra*, at p 747, and see pp 159, 160, *post*

(*i*) *Penn v Bibby* (1866), 2 Ch App 127, per Lord CHELMSFORD, L C; *Pneumatic Tyre Co v East London Rubber Co* (1896), 14 R P C 77, 98, 13 T L R 97, *Moseley v Victoria Rubber Co* (1887), 4 R P C 241, 248, 57 L T 142

(*k*) Instructions to Applicants, r 6, see in *Cassel Gold Extracting Co v. Cyanide Gold Recovery Syndicate* (1895), 12 R P C 232, C A, per SMITH, L J, at p. 257

(*l*) *R v Arkwright* (1785), 1 Web Pat Cas 64, *Woodward v Sansum*

SECT 2
Application
for a
Patent.

Matters to be
considered in
preparing
provisional
specification

SECT 3

Application
for a
Patent.Time for
lodging
complete
specification.Reference to
examinerDiscrepancy
between
provisional
and complete
specification.Additional
invention in
complete
specification

SECT 4—Complete Specification.

330. If no provisional specification is sent, the complete specification must accompany the form of application (*m*). Otherwise the applicant may leave the complete specification at any subsequent time within six months from the date of the application (*n*). Where application is made on the prescribed form (*o*) for an extension of time for leaving the complete specification, the Comptroller must, on payment of the prescribed fee (*p*), grant the extension of time applied for, but not exceeding one month (*q*).

331. Where a complete specification is left after a provisional specification, the Comptroller refers both to an examiner (*r*)

If the examiner reports that the invention particularly described in the complete specification is not substantially the same as that which is described in the provisional specification, the Comptroller may—

(1) refuse to accept the complete specification until it has been amended to his satisfaction, or,

(2) with consent of the applicant, cancel the provisional specification, and treat the application as having been made on the date at which the complete specification was left, and the application then has effect as if made on that date

Where the complete specification includes an invention not included in the provisional specification (*s*), the Comptroller may allow the original application to proceed so far as the invention included both in the provisional and in the complete specification is concerned, and treat the claim for the additional invention included in the complete specification as an application for that invention made on the date at which the complete specification was left (*u*)

& Co (1887), 4 R P C 166, 178, C A, 56 L T 347, *Cartwright v. Eamer* (1800), Goodeve's Patent Cases, 112. *Morgan v. Seaward* (1835), 1 Web Pat Cas 167, per AIDERSON, B, at p 174. *Neilson v. Harford* (1841), 8 M & W 806, *Simpson v. Holliday* (1865), 12 L T 99

(*m*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 1 (3)

(*n*) *Ibid*, s 5 (1) If a complete specification is not left within six months or the extended time, if any, the application is deemed to be abandoned (*ibid*, s 5 (2))

(*o*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 27, Form No 6, Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, p 88, and see *ibid*, Vol XVI, pp 492, 493 In the case of foreign patents, see Patents Rules, 1908, Form No 5, Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XVI, p 496

(*p*) £2 (Patents Rules, 1908, Sched I)

(*q*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 5 (1)

(*r*) *Ibid*, s 6 (1) For a series of forms of complete specifications applicable to various inventions, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, pp 63, 65, 70

(*s*) And the fact that two inventions are applicable to or form parts of the same machine, apparatus, or process is not to be taken to prove that they constitute one invention (Patent Office Rules, 1908, r 13 (1)) The Comptroller has entire discretion in deciding whether a specification contains more than one invention, and the law officer does not usually interfere with his decision (*Ee Z's Application for a Patent* (1910), 27 R P C. 285). As to appeals to a law officer, see p 178, *post*

(*a*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 6 (3) Where an applicant has put in two or more provisional specifications for cognate inventions, the Comptroller, if of opinion that they constitute a single invention, may accept one specification and grant a single patent thereon (*ibid*, s 16).

A patent cannot be held to be invalid on the ground that the complete specification claims a further or different invention to that contained in the provisional specification, if the invention therein claimed, so far as it is not contained in the provisional specification, was novel at the date when the complete specification was put in, and the applicant was the first and true inventor thereof (b).

SECT 2
Application
for a
Patent.

332 As has been seen, the functions of the title and the provisional specification are merely to disclose the nature of the invention (c). The function of the complete specification is to furnish sufficient and certain information to the public respecting what they are prohibited from doing whilst the privilege continues and what they will be enabled to do after the privilege has expired (d). The complete specification must therefore particularly describe and ascertain the nature of the invention and the manner in which the same is to be performed (e).

Function of
complete
specification

The essentials of the complete specification are therefore (1) sufficiency, (2) certainty, and (3) particularity

Essentials

333 It has long been held that the consideration for a patent is the good that the inventor brings to the commonwealth (f), and that being so, if the inventor does not divulge to the public what his invention is, so that, when the privilege expires, the public will be able to use the same, the consideration fails, and the grant is therefore void

Sufficiency

The description may be in writing alone, or, where necessary or expedient, it may be accompanied by drawings. It must be a fair one, expressed in terms which are sufficiently clear to enable those to whom it is addressed to carry out the invention (g). The specification, however, is not addressed to those wholly ignorant of the art, but to a workman reasonably skilled in the art (h), and it is such a workman who must be able to carry out the invention from the description in the specification alone

Sufficiency in
clearness

That being so, a question of fact arises in each case as to what was the state of the art at the date of the grant, and consequently whether the workman would be able from the knowledge he then possessed to carry out the invention from the description in the specification. For it is not necessary to describe what the workman would know. For instance, if it is necessary to use molten gold it would not be necessary to describe how the gold is to be put into a crucible and the crucible heated, because the workman would know how to do that, and so it may not be

(b) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 42. As to an objection to a patent that it has been granted for more than one invention, see p 179, *post*

(c) See pp 154 *et seq*, *ante*

(d) Hindmarch on Patents, p 159

(e) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 2

(f) *Ipswich Clothworkers' Case* (1614), Godb 252, *Darby v Allin* (1602), Noy, 173

(g) *Macfarlane v Price* (1816), 1 Stark 199; *Bloxam v Elsee* (1825), 1 C. & P 558, 564. An ambiguous specification will vitiate the patent (*British Ore Concentration Syndicate, Ltd v Minerals Separation, Ltd* (1909), 27 R P C 33, *per Lord HALSBURY*, at p 47. compare *Linotype and Machinery, Ltd v Hopkins* (1910), 27 R. P. C. 109, 112).

(h) See p 149, *ante*.

SECT. 2.
Application
for a
Patent.

necessary to state precisely all the former known parts of a machine and then apply them to those of the improvement, but on many occasions it may be sufficient to refer generally to them. So, also, in the instance of a common watch, it may be sufficient for the patentee to say—take a common watch and add or alter such and such parts, describing them (i). In the same way the specification may, and very often does, refer to another document, as to a former specification.

Sufficiency of
explanation.

334 On the other hand, the description must be sufficient for a workman not only to understand the general nature of the invention, but also to carry it into effect (k). It therefore follows that if experiment is necessary in order to carry out the invention the specification is insufficient (l).

Effect of
necessity for
experiments

A distinction must be here made between experiments which go to supplement the information contained in the specification and experiments which go to give necessary skill to the workman. The necessity for the former vitiates the patent, but the necessity for the latter does not. The nature of the invention may be such that it can only be carried out by a skilled manipulator, and provided that a sufficient description is otherwise given the necessity for practice to acquire that skill does not vitiate the patent (m).

Certainty
Effect of
misleading
description

335 Just as an insufficient description avoids a patent, so a description which actually misleads the public is equally fatal, and therefore if a patentee mentions that as an essential ingredient in the patent article which is not so, nor even useful, and thereby misleads the public, his patent will be void (n), and this will be so if a material statement in the specification is incorrect or untrue (o). On the other hand, although the specification must not describe a manner in which it is impossible to carry out the invention, it is not necessary to describe every manner in which it is possible to carry it out (p).

Particularity

336 The description must, however, be given with the utmost good faith (q). It is therefore incumbent upon the inventor not

(i) *Harmar v Playne* (1809), Dav Pat Cas 311, 318.

(k) "You must not set people mechanical problems and call them specifications" (*Plimpton v Malcolmson* (1876), 3 Ch D 531, per JESSE, M R, at pp 576, 577, compare *Watson, Laidlaw & Co, Ltd v Pott, Cassels and Williamson* (1911), 28 R P C 565, and see *Vidal Dyes Syndicate, Ltd v Levinstein, Ltd* (1912), 29 R P C 245, C A, following *Simpson v Holliday* (1866), L R 1 H L 315, per FLETCHER MOULTON, L J, at pp 269, 271, 272).

(l) *Plimpton v Malcolmson, supra*, *Turner v Winter* (1787), Dav Pat Cas 145, 154. For instance, where fusion was necessary to one part of the invented process, and the specification directed heat to be continued until the effect was produced, it was held that the omission of any direction to fuse was fatal to the patent (*Turner v Winter, supra*).

(m) *Boulton v Bull* (1795), 2 Hy Bl 463, 497, 498, *Neilson v Harford* (1841) 1 Web Pat Cas 314, *Plimpton v Malcolmson, supra*, at p 568, see *Edison and Swan Electric Light Co v Holland* (1888), 4 T L R 686, *British Dynamite Co v Krebs* (1879), Goodeve's Patent Cases, 88, 91.

(n) *Lewis v Marling* (1829), 1 Web Pat Cas 493, 495.

(o) *Neilson v Harford* (1841), 8 M & W 806, compare "*Z*" *Electric Lamp Manufacturing Co, Ltd v Marples, Leach & Co* (1910), 27 R P C per FLETCHER MOULTON, L J, at p 746.

(p) *Beckford v Shewes* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 211, 218.

(q) *Lewis v Marling, supra*, at p 496, *Sturte v. De La Rue* (1828), 1 Web Pat Cas 83.

only to disclose a way of carrying out his invention, but the best way that he knows (*r*). For instance, where a patentee disclosed an invention whereby he made verdigris, and from the specification an ordinary workman could make verdigris, such method being otherwise good subject-matter for a patent, the patent was avoided when it was shown that he had not disclosed what he knew to be the fact and of what in practice he had availed himself, namely, that an addition of nitric acid in the process made the production of verdigris cheaper and quicker (*s*), and the principle is carried so far that where an inventor wrapped up, in the technical language of chemical recipes, salts known by common names under which they might have been purchased from an ordinary druggist, and so misled the public into believing that the ingredients of his invention were complex chemical bodies instead of ordinary merchandise, the patent was held void (*a*).

SECT 2
Application
for a
Patent.
Illustration.

337 It follows from this that, where he legitimately may do so, it is the duty of the patentee to put into the complete specification any knowledge that he may have acquired after the provisional specification (*b*).

Knowledge
acquired after
provisional
specification

Where, however, anything turns upon it the complete specification must conform with the provisional (*c*). Here, again, it becomes a question of fact to be determined in each case. The rule which governs the decision may be stated in the following way —Does the general description of the invention in the provisional specification fairly foreshadow the particular improvement described in the complete specification or not? (*d*). It follows from this that if that which turns out to be an essential part of the invention is not mentioned in the provisional specification the complete specification does not conform (*e*).

Conformity
with pro-
visional
specification

SUB-SECT 3 — Claims

338 In order that the public may have sufficient and certain information respecting what they are prohibited from doing whilst the privilege continues (*f*), the patentee must particularly describe and ascertain the nature of his invention. In order that, after the privilege is expired, the public may be enabled to do what the patentee has invented (*g*), he must particularly describe and ascertain the manner in which the same is to be performed (*h*), and the ambit of his invention must be circumscribed by definite claims (*i*).

Necessity for
claims

(*r*) *R v Arkwright* (1785), 1 Web Pat Cas 64, 66, *Turner v Winter* (1787), 1 Web Pat Cas 77

(*s*) *Wood v Zimmer* (1815), 11olt (N R), 58, *Bovill v Moore* (1816), 2 Marsh 211

(*a*) *Savory v Price* (1823), Ry & M 1

(*b*) *Crossley v Beverley* (1830), 1 Web Pat Cas 112, 117, *Jones v. Heaton* (before 1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 404, n

(*c*) See p 158, *ante*, and p 164, *post*

(*d*) *Vickers, Sons & Co v Siddell* (1890), 15 App Cas 496, *Penn v. Bibby, Penn v Jack, Penn v Fernie* (1866), L R 3 Eq 308

(*e*) *Nuttall v Hargreaves*, [1892] 1 Ch 21, C A

(*f*) See pp 128, 129, *ante*

(*g*) See p 159, *ante*

(*h*) Hindmarch on Patents, p 159

(*i*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw. 7, c 29), s 2

SECT 2

Application
for a
PatentWhat must be
claimed

339 The meaning of the word "claim" is quite clear, and what must be claimed is the invention. That being so, if the claiming clause in the specification claims less than the invention the patent will be useless and perhaps void. In neither case will it give the patentee a monopoly for that which he has invented, because that has not been claimed as the invention. It may also be that, though the inventor has made a real invention, he may be unaware of that to which his invention in fact is due, and, if he does not claim that particular thing, his invention has not been claimed and his patent is void (*k*).

If, on the other hand, the claiming clause in the specification claims more than the invention, the patent will be void (*l*).

Claim need
not distin-
guish that
which is new
from that
which is old

340 As has been seen (*m*), it may be good subject-matter of a patent to invent a new combination of things *per se* old, or to improve a thing *per se* old, or to invent something to be used in combination with something *per se* old. It may be expedient or even necessary to mention in the claiming clause of the specification something which, though not the invention itself nor *per se* proper subject-matter of letters patent, helps to explain the invention. If the claiming clause is drafted so as to claim this thing *per se*, the patent is clearly bad, for it claims something which is not the invention. The mention, however, of such a thing in the claiming clause does not vitiate the patent. The old rule used to be that the claiming clause must clearly distinguish that which was old in the process or apparatus from that which was new, and only claim that which was new (*n*). This doctrine has, however, been considerably modified, and upon the authorities it is now established that if the claiming clause does in fact claim the invention and does not claim anything that is old *per se*, the patent is not avoided because in the

(*k*) For example, a patentee discovered that by heating certain chemicals in a closed retort, a certain valuable chemical product was the result. He described his method accurately, and then claimed the process. What he did not know was that the material of which the retorts were made was an essential to the process. The patent was held to be void (*Badische Anilin und Soda Fabrik v La Société Chimique des Usines du Rhône* (1897), 14 R P C 875). The matter may be looked at in two ways—either the description of the manner in which the invention is to be performed and the nature of it is insufficient, or else the claim is for more than what in fact has been invented, that is to say, for the process when carried out in retorts other than those made of the essential material, when in fact the invention cannot produce that which is claimed, on which ground the patent is equally void.

(*l*) For instance, where the patentee had discovered that certain alkalies and acids when combined together would produce a good and useful cement, and the specification stated that other alkalies and acids would answer the purpose, it was held that if it was a claim of all acids and alkalies it was clearly bad, as there are some that would not answer the purpose. If it was a claim of those only which would answer the purpose it was as clearly bad, in consequence of not stating those which would answer the purpose and distinguishing them from those that would not (*Sierens v Keating* (1848), 2 Exch 772), and see *Kelvin v Whyte, Thomson & Co* (1907), 25 R P C 177.

(*m*) See p 138, ante.

(*n*) See *Kay v Marshall* (1836), 2 Web Pat Cas 39, *Richerby v Duncan & Co* (1908), 25 R P C 248.

claiming clause that which is old is not distinguished from that which is new (o)

This question is, however, always subject to one overriding essential the claim must not be ambiguous. If it is ambiguous it is not a claim at all, for from the very meaning of the word "claim" it must, in order to be good, give sufficient and certain information to those to whom it is addressed as to what is claimed (p)

341 A distinction must be made between two very different things—first the purpose of the subject-matter of the invention, and secondly the purpose to which the invention can be put. If the first fails the patent is void (q). Consequently, if the claiming clause claims a purpose of the subject-matter of the invention which fails the patent is void (r). On the other hand, if a claim is made for the purpose to which the invention, otherwise properly described and claimed, may be put, the patent is not avoided merely because such purpose in fact fails (s).

SECT. 2.
Application
for a
Patent.

But claim must not be ambiguous

Distinction between purpose of subject-matter and purpose of invention

SUB SECT. 6—Construction of Specifications

342 The construction of specifications is for the court as a matter of law (t). The ordinary canons of construction apply (u). The ordinary meaning of the English language is applied except where words of art are used, when it becomes a question of fact as to what meaning such words bore at the time of the grant (v).

(o) *British United Shoe Machinery Co., Ltd. v. Fussell, Ltd.* (1908), 25 R. P. C. 631, following *Harrison v. Anderston Foundry Co., Ltd.* (1876), 1 App. Cas. 574, considering *Foxwell v. Bostock* (1864), 4 De G. J. & Sm. 298, and see *Lynch v. Phillips* (1909), 26 R. P. C. 389.

(p) For instance, where a patentee had claimed a combination machine for clipping horses and it became a material issue as to whether the invention claimed consisted of four subordinate parts or not, it was held that it was not sufficiently clearly claimed as such. "I have read and re-read with the greatest anxiety, the specification in the present case. I cannot find from beginning to end of it any sentence or any number of sentences as to which by any reasonable interpretation you can say that they make a claim to a subordinate combination of these particular items as constituting in itself a novelty, a new manufacture, a thing to be protected by the patent (*Clark v. Adie* (1877), 2 App. Cas. 315, per Lord CAIRNS, L. C., at p. 326).

(q) See pp. 134, 135, *ante*.

(r) See *Stevens v. Keating* (1848), 2 F. & F. 772, note (l), p. 162, *ante*.

(s) For instance, where a patentee described and claimed a certain metallic material, and claimed secondly "the manufacture of capsules of the new material," which manufacture was admitted *per se* not to be subject-matter of a patent, it was held that this, being merely a claim to a particular use to which the invention would be put, did not vitiate the patent (*Neelson v. Betts* (1871), L. R. 5 H. L. 1).

(t) *Bovill v. Pimm* (1856), 11 Exch. 718, 740. *Hills v. London Gas-Light Co.* (1857), 27 L. J. (Ex.) 60, and see *Clark v. Adie* (No. 2) (1877), 2 App. Cas. 423, per Lord BLACKBURN, at p. 436, *Seed v. Haggins* (1860), 8 H. L. Cas. 550, 561, *British Dynamite Co. v. Krebs* (1879), Goodeve's Patent Cases, 88.

(u) See titles DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS, Vol. X, pp. 433 *et seq.*, 444 *et seq.*, EVIDENCE, Vol. XIII, pp. 429, 430. The practice of examining and cross-examining expert witnesses as to the construction of specifications is irregular and prejudicial to proper trial (*Graphic Arts Co. v. Hunters, Ltd.* (1910), 27 R. P. C. 677).

(v) *Hull v. Evans* (1862), 4 De G. F. & J. 288, *Elliott v. Turner* (1845), 2 C. B. 446, Ex. Ch., *Derosne v. Fairie* (1835), 1 Web. Pat. Cas. 154, *Neelson v. Harford* (1841), 1 Web. Pat. Cas. 331, 370, *Wallington v. Dale*

SECT 2

Application
for a
PatentConstruction
applied to
specification
as a wholeEffective
result sought
forConstruction
applied
impartially

343. The specification is construed as a whole and the claiming clauses are not taken as isolated sentences, but are given the meaning which is a fair one considering their environment (*a*), which includes not only the specification, but also the title (*b*). The provisional specification may be used for the purpose to which it is addressed, namely, to describe and ascertain the general nature of the invention (*c*), but it cannot be used to supply a defect in the complete specification (*d*).

Although redundant claims do not invalidate a patent (*e*), the claiming clauses should if possible be construed so that each will be effective, and accordingly an attempt will be made to construe them as claims for different things (*f*).

344 The specification is construed impartially, neither for nor against the patentee (*g*). The court will certainly not be astute

(1852), 7 Exch 888, *United Telephone Co v Bassano* (1886), 3 R P C 295, C A, 31 Ch D 630, *Boyd v Horrocks* (1891), 9 R P C 77, H L, *Patent Exploitation, Ltd v Siemens Brothers & Co, Ltd* (1904), 21 R P C 541, 549, H L, see title DFLDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS, Vol X, p 449. In considering the state of knowledge at the time when the patent was obtained antecedent specifications may be consulted (*Couchman v Greener* (1884), 1 R P C 197, 199, H L, *Leeds Forge Co, Ltd v Deighton's Patent Flue and Tube Co, Ltd* (1902) 19 R P C 285, C A, see p 148, ante), but only in cases where the meaning of the specification is ambiguous and not clear (*Crosthwaite v Steele* (1889), 6 R P C 190, *Jandus Arc Lamp and Electric Co, Ltd v Johnson* (1900) 17 R P C 361). Knowledge subsequently acquired must not be applied (*King Brown & Co v Anglo-American Brush Corporation* (1892), 9 R P C 313, H L, per Lord Watson, at p 319, *Nobel's Explosives Co, Ltd v Anderson* (1894), 11 R P C 519, C A, per Lord Esher, M R, at p 523).

(*a*) *Neilson v Harford* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 295, 312, *Russell v Cowley and Dixon* (1835), 1 Web Pat Cas 457, 470, *Edison and Swan United Electric Light Co v Woodhouse and Rawson* (1887), 4 R P C 99, 107, C A, *Edison Bell Phonograph Corporation, Ltd v Smith and Young* (1894), 11 R P C 389, C A, per Lord Esher, M R, at p 395, *Parkinson v Simon* (1894), 11 R P C 493, C A, affirmed (1895), 12 R P C 403, H L, *Ingersoll Seigeant Drill Co v Consolidated Pneumatic Tool Co, Ltd* (1907), 25 R P C 61, H L, per Lord Loreburn, LC, at p 83. The proper way to read a specification is not to read the claim first, but, looking at the whole instrument, to read the specification first to see what the patentee says he has invented, and then to read the claim fairly to see whether he claims more than he desires to patent (*Arnold v Bradbury* (1871), 6 Ch App 706, cited with approval in *Edison Bell Phonograph Corporation, Ltd v Smith and Young*, supra, and followed in *Tubes, Ltd v Perfecta Seamless Steel Tube Co, Ltd* (1900), 17 R P C 569). The court may not refer to a part of the specification struck out by amendment (*Lake v Rotax Motor Accessories, Ltd* (1911), 28 R P C 532, 538, C A, following *Hattersley & Sons v Hodgson* (1906), 23 R P C 192, C A).

(*b*) *Orley v Holden* (1860), 8 C B (N S) 666, *Househill Coal and Iron Co v Neilson* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 679, H L, *Newton v Vaucher* (1851), 6 Exch 895, 864.

(*c*) *Parkinson v Simon* (1894), 11 R P C 493, 502, C A.

(*d*) *Mackean v Rennie* (1862), 13 C B (N S) 52.

(*e*) *Wenham Gas Co v Champion Gas Lamp Co* (1891), 9 R P C 49, 55, C A.

(*f*) *Parkinson v Simon*, (1894), 11 R P C 493, 502, C A, and see *Cassell Gold Extracting Co v Cyanide Gold Recovery Syndicate* (1895), 12 R P C 232, 257, C A, *British United Shoe Machinery Co, Ltd v Hugh Claughton, Ltd* (1906), 23 R P C 321.

(*g*) *Stevens v Keating* (1848), 2 Exch 772, at nisi prius (1847), 2 Web Pat Cas 181, per Pollock, CB, at p 187, *Dudgeon v Thompson* (1877), 3 App Cas 34, 53.

to construe it against a patentee (*h*). This is sometimes called a 'benevolent' mode of construction. Perhaps that is not the best term to use, but it may be described as construing a specification fairly, with a judicial anxiety to support a really useful invention if it can be supported on a reasonable construction of the patent. Beyond that the benevolent construction does not go (*i*).

SECT. 3.
Application
for a
Patent.

SUB-SECT 7 — *Procedure*

(1) *Examination of Application*

345 The Comptroller refers every application to an examiner (*h*). If the examiner reports that the nature of the invention is not fairly described, or that the application, specification, or drawings have not been prepared in the prescribed manner, or that the title does not sufficiently indicate the subject-matter of the invention, the Comptroller may refuse to accept the application or may require that the application, specification, or drawings be amended before he proceeds with the application, and in the latter case the application, if the Comptroller so directs, bears date as from the time when the requirement is complied with (*i*). Where the complete specification is left after a provisional specification, the Comptroller refers both specifications to an examiner as stated above (*m*).

Refusal or
amendment of
application
on examiner's
report

346 It is the duty of the examiner to make an investigation for the purpose of ascertaining whether the invention claimed has been wholly or in part claimed or described in any specification (other than a provisional specification not followed by a complete specification) published before the date of the application, and left

Investigation
of previous
specifications.

(*h*) *Bickford v Skewes* (1841), 1 Q B 938, *Plimpton v Spiller* (1877), 6 Ch D 412, 422, C A, *Otto v Linford* (1882), 46 L T 35, 39, C A.

(*i*) *Hinks & Son v Safety Lighting Co* (1876), 4 Ch D 607, *per* JESSEL, M R, at p 612, and see *Russell v Cowley and Dixon* (1835) 1 Web Pat Cas 457, *Simpson v Holliday* (1866), 12 L T 99, *per* Lord WESTBURY, at p 100, *Harrison v Anderson Foundry Co* (1876), 1 App Cas 574, 581, *Cropper v Smith* (1884) 1 R P C 81, 89, C A, 26 Ch D 700, cited with approval in *Benno Jaffé und Darmstaedler Lanolin Fabrik v Richardson & Co* (1894), 11 R P C 93, 261, C A, *Needham v Johnson & Co* (1884), 1 R P C 49, *per* LINDLEY, L J, at p 58, *Automatic Weighing Machine Co v Knight* (1889), 6 R P C 297, 307, C A. The court will, so far as is possible, construe every specification with candour (*Sellers v Dickinson* (1850), 5 Exch 312, 324, *Telley v Easton* (1852), Macr 48, 74), and will endeavour to give to the patentee the benefit of any ambiguous expression (*Edison Bell Phonograph Corporation, Ltd v Smith* (1894), 11 R P C 389, 400, C A), but the words "these our Letters Patents shall be construed in the most beneficial sense for the advantage of the Patentee" do not mean that the language is to be strained in favour of the patentee, but that if his language can be fairly construed so as to render his patent valid, it is to be so construed (*Hattersley & Sons v Hodgson* (1906), 23 R P C 192, H L, *per* Lord LINDLEY, at p 203). Where a claim can be construed so as either to make a patent reasonable and sensible or to make it utterly absurd, the court will give effect to the former of the two readings (*Plimpton v Spiller* (1877), 6 Ch D 412, C A, *per* JESSEL, M R, at p 423, followed in *Westinghouse v Lancashire and Yorkshire Rail Co* (1884), 1 R P C 98, *Haworth v Hardcastle* (1834), 1 Web Pat Cas 480, 485).

(*k*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s. 3 (1)

(*l*) *Ibid.*, s. 3 (2)

(*m*) *Ibid.*, s. 6 (1)

SECT. 2.
Application
for a
Patent.

Report as to
anticipation
Amendment
of specifica-
tion as a
result of
report

pursuant to any application for a patent made in the United Kingdom within fifty years next before the date of the application (*a*). If the examiner finds that the invention has been completely anticipated, he may at once make a provisional report to that effect, and the Comptroller may treat this as a final report (*b*) and refuse to grant the patent (*c*)

When anticipation, either complete or partial, has been reported, the applicant must be informed, and may, within two months, amend his specification so as to remove the objection (*d*). Thereupon, if the Comptroller is satisfied that the objection has been removed, he must, in the absence of any other ground of objection, accept the specification (*e*). But, if when the applicant has been so informed and the time for amendment has expired, the Comptroller is not so satisfied, he must appoint a time for hearing the applicant (*f*)

Investigation
of specifica-
tions sub-
sequent to
application,
but founded
on prior
application

347 The investigation thus provided for extends further, and an invention may be held to have been anticipated even where the anticipation is contained in a specification deposited by another person at a later date than that on which the application which is being investigated was made, provided that such later specification is deposited pursuant to an application which was made prior to the application in question (*g*), that is, the examiner's report is not complete until it is no longer possible for any such specification in pursuance of a prior application to be deposited. If during this period a later specification is left at the Patent Office, which is found to anticipate the specification under examination and to be in pursuance of a prior application, then the applicant must be informed, and within two months must either inform the Comptroller that he considers that no amendments are necessary, or apply for leave to amend his specification by way of disclaimer, stating specifically what amendments, if any, he is prepared to make in it to remove the objection of anticipation. If these amendments are satisfactory, the Comptroller may allow them to be made; otherwise he must give the applicant a hearing (*h*)

(*a*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 7 (1), *Re Parsons and Stoney's Application for a Patent* (1910), 27 R P C 491

(*b*) Patents Rules, 1908, rr 29, 32

(*c*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 7 (4)

(*d*) *Ibid*, s 7 (2), Patents Rules, 1908, r 30, the time may in proper cases be extended (Official Notice 16th November, 1909, Illustrated Official Journal (Patents), 17th November, 1909), see note (*g*), p 209 *post*. The amended specification must be investigated in the same way as the original specification (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 7 (2))

(*e*) *Ibid*, s 7 (3)

(*f*) *Ibid*, s 7 (4), Patents Rules, 1908, r 31. As to the procedure before and on the hearing, see Official Notice, 16th November, 1909, and p 167, *post*

(*g*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 8 (1), (2). An application is prior to another if the patent when granted would be of prior date to the patent granted pursuant to that other (*ibid*, s 8 (3)). *Ibid*, s 8, was directed not to come into force until ordered by the Board of Trade (*ibid*, s 8 (4)). The order enforcing it was laid before Parliament on 18th and 19th November, 1908

(*h*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 8 (2). As to the procedure on the hearing, see p 167, *post*.

348. A patent is not invalidated by a specification anticipating it if such specification is fifty years old or more (i)

Anticipation is no bar to the patent if the applicant can prove to the satisfaction of the court that the matter published was derived or obtained from him and was published without his knowledge and consent, and, if he learnt of the publication before he made his application, that he applied for and obtained protection for his invention with all reasonable diligence after learning of the publication (j)

SECT 2
Application
for a
Patent.

When
anticipation
is no bar

349 Reports of examiners are not in any case to be published or open to public inspection, and are only liable to production or inspection in any legal proceeding if the court or officer having the power to order discovery certifies that such production or inspection is desirable in the interests of justice (k)

When reports
may be
inspected

(u) *Hearing before Comptroller*

350 On appointing a time for the hearing above referred to (l), the Comptroller must give the applicant at least ten days' notice of the appointment. The applicant must, as soon as possible, notify the Comptroller whether or not he desires to be heard. After the hearing, or without a hearing if the applicant has not attended or has notified his desire not to be heard, unless the specification has been amended to his satisfaction (m), the Comptroller must determine whether a reference to prior specifications ought to be made in the applicant's specification by way of notice to the public, or whether in the event of the invention claimed having been wholly or specifically claimed in an earlier specification, he should refuse to grant a patent (n)

Hearing after
investigation
as to previous
specifications

Similar procedure prevails in relation to the extended investigation above referred to (o). In this case, after the hearing, or without a hearing if the applicant has not attended or has notified his desire not to be heard, the Comptroller must determine what reference, if any, to other specifications ought to be made in the applicant's specification by way of notice to the public (p)

Hearing after
extended
investigation

(i) Patent and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 41 (1)

(j) *Ibid*, s 41 (2)

(k) *Ibid*, s 68, and see title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol XI, pp 40, 43, 105

(l) See p 166, *ante*, Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 7

(m) As to amendment of specification, see p 166, *ante*, and pp 170 *et seq*, *post*

(n) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 7 (4), Patents Rules, 1908, r 31, modified by Official Notice, 16th November, 1909. The form in which such reference to prior specifications is to be made is as follows — "Reference has been directed in pursuance of section 7, subsection 4, of the Patents and Designs Act, 1907, to specification No of " (Patents Rules, 1908, r 32). Patents Rules, 1908, rr 30, 31 are somewhat modified by Official Notice, 16th November, 1909. As to appeals to the law officer, see p 178, *post*

(o) See p 166, *ante*, Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 8

(p) *Ibid*, s 8 (2), Patents Rules, 1908, r 93. As to appeal to the law officer, see p 178, *post*

NOTE 2 Application for a Patent.	351. Generally, before exercising adversely to the applicant the discretionary powers given to him by the statute or rules, the Comptroller must give ten days' notice, or such longer notice as he thinks fit, to the applicant, of the time when he may be heard personally or by his agent before the Comptroller (<i>q</i>) Within five days, unless the Comptroller appoints a longer time, the applicant must notify in writing to the Comptroller whether or not he intends to be heard (<i>r</i>) At any time the Comptroller may require the applicant to attend before him and make oral explanations or to submit a statement in writing within a time and with respect to matters notified by the Comptroller (<i>s</i>)
Notice of hearing	
Attendance of applicant	
Evidence.	The evidence at the hearing before the Comptroller is given by statutory declaration in the absence of directions to the contrary, but the Comptroller has power to order <i>in</i> <i>loce</i> evidence to be taken before him (<i>t</i>)
Notification of decision	The Comptroller must notify his decision to all parties affected (<i>a</i>)

(iii) Powers of Comptroller

General
powers

352 (1) Where the examiner reports that the nature of the invention is not sufficiently disclosed and defined to enable him to make the investigation already referred to (*b*), the Comptroller may require amendment of the specification and drawings, or any of them, and may direct that the application shall bear such date subsequent to its original date, and not later than the date when the requirement is complied with, as he may consider reasonably necessary to give sufficient time for the subsequent procedure relating to such application (*c*)

(2) He may, on request in writing, correct any clerical error (*d*)

(3) He must give the applicant an opportunity of being heard, if so required, whenever he intends to exercise his discretionary powers adversely to the applicant (*e*)

(4) He has power to take directions of the law officers if he is in doubt or difficulty (*f*)

(5) He may refuse to grant any patent for an invention which he thinks would in use be contrary to law or morality (*g*)

(*q*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 73, Patents Rules, 1908, r 102 As to powers of the Comptroller generally, see the text, *infra*

(*r*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 103

(*s*) *Ibid*, r 104

(*t*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 77

(*a*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 105

(*b*) See p 165, *ante*, Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 7 (1)

(*c*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 28 As to the powers of the Comptroller on the report of the examiner, see, further, pp 165, 166, *ante*

(*d*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 70 The request must be made on Form No 30 (fee 5s) (Patents Rules, 1908, r 95)

(*e*) See the text, *supra*

(*f*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 74

(*g*) *Ibid*, s 75 He may refuse to grant a patent if in his opinion the invention is not within the meaning of the word "invention" in *ibid*, s 93

(6) A certificate purporting to be under the hand of the Comptroller as to anything authorised by the statute is *prima facie* evidence (*h*)

(7) He has a general power of amendment where no special provision is made, and also power to enlarge time and to dispense with evidence (*i*)

SECT. 2
Application
for a
Patent.

(iv) *Appeal from Comptroller's Decision*

353 An appeal (*h*) lies to the law officer (*l*) from the decision of the Comptroller in the following cases — When appeal lies.

(1) Where the Comptroller refuses to accept an application or requires an amendment in it (*m*),

(2) Where the Comptroller refuses to accept a complete specification (*n*),

(3) Where the Comptroller decides to refuse the patent or to require the insertion of references on the ground of anticipation by previous specifications (*o*)

354 All such appeals must be made on the prescribed form (*p*), which must be filed within fourteen days of the decision, and a copy sent to the Law Officers' Department (*q*), and, where there has been opposition, to the opponent or applicant, as the case may be (*r*). The law officer may examine witnesses on oath and administer oaths for that purpose (*s*), he may regulate the practice and Procedure

(*Re Cooper's Application for a Patent* (1901), 19 R P C 53, *Re Johnson's Application for a Patent* (1901), 19 R P C 56)

(*h*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 78

(*i*) Patents Rules, 1908, rr 108, 109, 112

(*l*) The procedure in such appeals is governed by the Law Officers' Rules, rr 1—14 (Patents Rules, 1908, pp 77, 78, made in virtue of Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 40)

(*l*) *I.e.*, the Attorney General or Solicitor General for England (*ibid*, s 93) The Attorney General is not a court, and no prohibition will lie to him (*Ex parte Simon* (1888), 4 T L R 754, C A, and see title CROWN PRACTICE, Vol X, p 151)

(*m*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 3 (3)

(*n*) *Ibid*, s 6 (4)

(*o*) *Ibid*, s 7 (4)

(*p*) Patents Rules, 1908, Form No 4 (fee 13)

(*q*) At the Royal Courts of Justice, London, by prepaid letter post if desired (Law Officers' Rules, rr 3, 14)

(*r*) Law Officers' Rules, rr 1—3 No appeal may be entertained of which notice is not given within the above mentioned time, unless by leave obtained from the law officer (*ibid*, r 5) Seven days' notice of the hearing must be given, but, by leave of the law officer, shorter notice may be given (*ibid* r 6) As to the parties to be served with notice, see *ibid*, r 7

(*s*) See Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 77, Law Officers' Rules, r 8 Attendance for cross examination of any person who has made a declaration in the matter in question may be ordered (*ibid*, r 9) and conduct money must be tendered to witnesses required to attend for cross-examination (*ibid*, r 10) As to documentary evidence, see *ibid*, r 13 The law officer does not allow the cross examination of witnesses if there was ample opportunity for filing declarations at the hearing before the Comptroller (*Re Pitt's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 343, 345), nor does he allow further evidence to be given except with reference to matters which have occurred since the hearing before the Comptroller (Law Officers' Rules, r 8, *Hampton v Facer* (1887), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 13, *Re Cheesbrough's Patent* (1884), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884 6, 303)

SECT. 2. procedure before him; and he may order costs to be paid by either
Application for a Patent. party (t).
SUB-SECT. 8—Amendment of Specifications

(1) *At Instance of Comptroller*

On examiner's report **355** If the examiner reports that the specification or drawings accompanying the application have not been prepared in the prescribed manner, the Comptroller may require that they be amended before he proceeds with the application (u)

Specification including more than one invention Where a person making application for a patent has included in his specification more than one invention, the Comptroller may require or allow him to amend such specification and drawings, or any of them, so as to apply to one invention only, and the applicant may make application for a separate patent for any invention excluded by such amendment (v)

Invalid complete specification or disconformity Where a complete specification is left after a provisional specification, and the examiner reports that it has not been prepared in the prescribed manner, the Comptroller may refuse to accept the complete specification until it has been amended to his satisfaction (a). Similarly, if the examiner reports disconformity between the two specifications, the Comptroller may refuse to accept the complete specification until it has been amended to his satisfaction (b)

(u) *At Instance of Applicant or Patentee*

Request for amendment **356** An applicant may at any time, by request in writing left at the Patent Office, seek leave to amend his specification, including drawings forming part thereof, by way of disclaimer (c), correction,

(t) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 40, and see Law Officers' Rules, rr 11, 12

(u) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 3 (2) Drawings may be added by way of amendment (*Re Lang's Patent* (1890), 7 R P C 469) As to the report of the examiner, see pp 165 *et seq*, *ante*

(x) Patents Rules, 1908, r 13 (1)

(a) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 6 (2)

(b) *Ibid*, s 6 (3) For further instances (under *ibid*, ss 7, 8) of amendment of specifications, see p 166, *ante*

(c) A disclaimer strikes out what has been disclaimed, it cannot be read to explain the remainder of the specification (*Telley v Easton* (1857) 2 C B (N S) 706, see *Kalston v Smith* (1865), 11 H L Cas 223, *per* Lord WESTBURY, at pp 242, 243, *Re Ryland's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 665, following *Seed v Higgins* (1860), 8 H L Cas 550) A disclaimer, the construction of which is not to be affected by any prefatory remark (*Cunnington v Nuttall* (1871), 11 R 5 H L 205), may be made after a judgment adverse to the validity of the patent has been pronounced (*Derosne v Farie* (1835), 1 Web Pat Cas 158, 166, *Morgan v Seaward* (1838), 2 Carp Pat Cas 96 104), but a disclaimer is only allowed to correct parts of the specification which are neither material nor substantial (*R v Mill* (1851), 14 Beav 312, *per* ROMILLY, M R, at p 315) The power to amend by disclaimer ought to be exercised with great care and discretion (*R v Mill, supra*), but in cases of doubt the amendment should be allowed (*Re Bateman v Moore's Disclaimer* (1854), Macr 116, *Re Lake's Patent* (1887), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 16) A disclaimer operates from the date of the patent and not from the date of the granting of the application to amend (*R v Mill, supra*, questioning *Perry v Skinner* (1837), 2 M & W 471, *Re Lucas' Disclaimer* (1854), Macr 235; Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 21 (7), see *Andrew & Co v.*

or explanation (*d*), stating the nature of, and the reasons for, the proposed amendment (*e*)

The request must be accompanied by a duly certified copy of the original specification and drawings, showing in red ink the proposed amendment in such a way as to indicate clearly the alteration desired, and must be advertised (*f*) by publication of the request and the nature of the proposed amendment in the Illustrated Office Journal (Patents), and in such other manner, if any, as the Comptroller may direct (*g*)

357 At any time within one month from the first advertisement any person may give notice at the Patent Office of opposition to the amendment (*h*) Such notice must be on the prescribed form and must be accompanied by an unstamped copy, which is transmitted by the Comptroller to the person making the request as notice of the opposition (*i*)

Within fourteen days after the expiration of one month from the first advertisement of the request for leave to amend, the opponent may leave at the Patent Office statutory declarations in support of his opposition, and, on doing so, must deliver to the applicant copies thereof (*k*) If the opponent does not leave statutory declarations, the applicant may, if he wishes, within two months from the date of the first advertisement of his request, leave at the Patent

Sec. 2.
Application
for a
Patent.

Documents
accompany-
ing request

Notice of
opposition to
amendment.

Declarations
in support of
opposition

Declarations
in support of
amendment

Crossley Brothers (1892), 9 R P C 165, C A, *Stepney Spare Motor Wheel Co., Ltd v Hall*, [1911] 1 Ch 514) As to amendment by disclaimer in infringement actions, see pp 173, 210, *post*

(*d*) *Re Morgan's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 17 The function of an explanation is to explain more clearly the meaning of the patentee at the time he patented the invention (*Re Ashworth's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 6) It is not intended that the patentee should include subsequently obtained knowledge (*Re Beck and Justice's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 10, see *Re Johnson's Patent* (1896), 13 R P C 660) Clerical errors may be corrected by amendment (*Re Rubery's Patent* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 649, n, *Re Dismore* (1853), 18 Beav 538, *Re Redmund's Patent* (1828), 1 Web Pat Cas 649, n, *Re Nichols' Patent* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 650, *Alley's Patent* (1876), Johnson's Patentees' Manual, 169, 178, 2081, *Re Gore's Patent* (1884), 26 Ch D 105), but the authority of the Master of the Rolls is not now necessary (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 70)

(*e*) *Ibid*, s 21 (1) This provision does not apply when an action for infringement or proceeding before the court for the revocation of a patent is pending (*ibid*, s 21 (8), compare *ibid*, s 22, and *Gillette Safety Razor Co., Ltd v Gamage, Ltd* (1909), 26 R P C 745, and see p 208, *post*) As to such proceedings, see pp 210 *et seq*, *post* But the subsequent commencement of proceedings does not deprive the Comptroller of jurisdiction to allow the amendment (*Woolfe v Automatic Picture Gallery, Ltd*, [1903] 1 Ch 18, C A) A request for leave to amend (save under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 8 (2), and Patents Rules, 1908, r 33) must be made on Patents Form No 17 (Patents Rules, 1908, r 60), see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, p 89 Sufficient reasons must be given, see *Re Morgan's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 17, *Nordenfeldt's Patent* (1887), Griffin Patent Cases, 1888, 18

(*f*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 21 (2) An amendment not in accordance with the advertisement is not allowed (*Re v. A-G* (1888), 4 T L R 488)

(*g*) Patents Rules, 1908, rr 3, 60

(*h*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 21 (2).

(*i*) *Ibid*, s 21 (3), Patents Rules, 1908, r 61 (see *10a*)

(*k*) *Ibid*, r 62

SECT 2

Application
for a
Patent.Declarations
in answerDecision on
applicationAmendments
which cannot
be allowed

Office statutory declarations in support of his application, and, on doing so, must deliver to the opponent copies thereof (l)

The giving in of evidence by the parties, in answer to the declarations above referred to, and the subsequent hearing by the Comptroller are subject to the same rules as apply to the procedure on opposition to the grant of a patent (m)

358 Where notice of opposition is given, the Comptroller hears and decides the case (n) Where no notice is given, or the person so giving notice fails to appear, the Comptroller determines whether and subject to what conditions, if any, the amendment ought to be allowed (o) The decision of the Comptroller in either case is subject to an appeal to the law officer (p), who, if required, hears the parties and may make an order determining whether and subject to what conditions, if any, the amendment ought to be allowed (q)

359 No amendment can be allowed by the Comptroller which

(l) Patents Rules, 1908, r 64

(m) *Ibid*, r 63, 65, see p 175, *post*

(n) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 21 (3)

(o) *Ibid*, s 21 (4)

(p) See pp 169, 178, *ante*

(q) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 21 (5) Conditions are usually inserted unless there are exceptional circumstances (*Re Hearson's Patent* (1884) Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884 6, 309, *Re Davies and Davies' Patent* (1910), 28 R P C 50) The law officer may impose conditions that the applicant must pay the costs of the application in any event (*Re Klaber and Sternberg's Patent*, [1908] 1 Ch 847, *Re Chatwood's Patent* (1899), 12 R P C 370, *Singer & Co v Stassen & Son* (1884), 1 R P C 121, C A, *Re Westinghouse's Patent* (1885), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 315), or compel a patentee in an action of infringement who desires to amend to pay all the costs up to the time of leave to amend being given (*Winter v Baybutt Madeley & Co* (1884), 1 R P C 76, *Re Gaulard and Gibb's Patent*, [1887] W N 211, *Fusee Vestu Co v Bryant and May* (1887), 4 R P C 71, 34 Ch D 458, *Lang v Whitecross* (1889), 6 T L R 16, 57, C A), and, as a general rule, impose a condition that the amended specification is not to be receivable in evidence in any pending action (*Re Codd's Patent*, *Codd v Bratby* (1884), 1 R P C 209, *Allen v Doullton* (1887), 4 R P C 377, C A, *Bray v Gardner* (1887), 34 Ch D 668, C A, *spec'd* may be ordered not to bring any and a patentee who seeks leave to amend (particular persons (*Re Harrison's Patent* (1853), Macr 32), or during the continuance of the patent (*Medlock's Patent* (1865), 22 Newton's London J, 1, C A Journal (N s), 69), or prior either to a specified date (*Re Westinghouse's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Chesbrough's Patent* (1884), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 303), or for infringement prior to the date of the disclaimer (*Green v Lumsden* (1888), 38 Ch D 38, C A, *Lang v Whitecross* (1889), 5 R P C 232, *Haslam Foundry and Engineering Co v Goodfellow* (1896), 17 R P C 298, 29, 37 Ch D 118, *Deeley v Perkes*, [1896] A C 496, *Lang v Ludington Electric Co v Arc Lamp Co* (1903), 20 R P C 523, *Jandus v Arc Lamp Co* (1903), 21 R P C 115, *follow'd*, 17 R P C 298, 214, C A, [1900] 1 Ch 508, *Re Allison's Patent* (1900), 78, C A, *Gillette* 513, C A, *Re Alsop's Patent* (1905), 23 R P C 65, 373, C A), or may be ordered to submit to a dissolution of a prior invention for infringement (*Re Kenrick and Jefferson, Ltd's Patent* (1912), 27 R P C 25, applying *Dudgeon v Thomson* (1877), 3 App Cas 34)

would make the specification, as amended, claim an invention substantially larger than or different from the invention claimed by the specification as it stood before the amendment (g)

360 Where leave to amend is given, the applicant must, if the Comptroller so requires, and within a time to be limited by him, leave at the office a new specification and drawings as amended, to be prepared according to the Rules (i)

The amendment must be advertised forthwith by the Comptroller in the Illustrated Office Journal (Patents), and is deemed to form part of the specification (s)

361 Leave to amend is conclusive as to the right of the party to make the amendment allowed, except in case of fraud (t)

(iii) Under Order of Court

362 In an action for infringement (a) or in proceedings before the court for revocation of a patent (b), the court may make an order

SECT. 2
Application
for a
Patent.

Requirements
on leave being
granted.

Leave to
amend con-
clusive as to
right

Amendment
by leave of
court

(g) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 21 (6) The amendment claimed should not be too extensive (*Re Nairn's Patent* (1891), 8 R P C 444, *Re Garnett's Application for a Patent* (1899), 16 R P C 154, *Re Crist's Application for a Patent* (1903), 20 R P C 475), and see *Foxwell v Bostock* (1864), 10 L T 144, *Re Nordenfeldt's Patent* (1887), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 18, *Re Walker's Patent* (1887), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 22, *Re Serrell's Patent* (1888), 6 R P C 101, 103, *Rulston v Smith* (1865), 11 H L Cas 223, 254, *Re Lucas' Disclaimer* (1854), Macr 234, *Re Gaulard and Gibbs' Patent* (1889) 6 R P C 218, C A, *Heath v Frost's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 310, *Re Parkinson's Patent* (1896), 13 R P C 509, *Re Johnson's Patent* (1896), 13 R P C 659, *Re Vidal's Patent* (1898), 15 R P C 721 Such an amendment is void (*Ex parte Simon* (1888), 4 T L R 754, C A), but it would seem that if such an amendment is made and allowed the decision of the Attorney General, in the absence of fraud, is final and cannot be reviewed (*Moser v Marsden* (1895) 13 R P C 24, H L), and see note (b), p 169, ante

(r) Patents Rules 1908, rr 6, 19—25, 66

(s) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 21 (7) I.e., the amended specification takes the place of the original specification for all purposes, and the patentee may recover damages for infringements committed before the date of the amendment, provided that he proves to the satisfaction of the court that his original claim was framed in good faith and with reasonable skill and knowledge (*ibid*, s 23, *Wenham & Co v Carpenter, Todd & Co* (1887), 5 R P C 68, *Hopkinson v St James' and Pall Mall Electric Light Co* (1893), 10 R P C 62, *British United Shoe Machinery Co v Fussell & Sons* (1908), 25 R P C 368) Similarly where it is sought to re-amend an already amended specification, only the specification as amended, not the original specification, is considered, as in *Hattersley and Jackson's Patent* (1904), 21 R P C 233

(t) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 21 (7) But it is no guarantee that the specification, even when amended, will not still invalidate the patent (*Re Deeley's Patent* (1894), 12 R P C 65, 192, C A), and disconformity between an amended complete specification and the provisional specification is fatal to the validity of the patent, except as provided by Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 42 (*Re Gaulard and Gibbs' Patent* (1890), 7 R P C 367, H L, *Lane Fox v Kensington and Knightsbridge Electric Lighting Co* (1892), 13 R P C 221, 413, C A, [1892] 3 Ch 424, compare *Moser v Marsden*, *supra*, see p 159, ante

(a) See pp 210, *et seq*, post

(b) "Action or proceedings" means action or proceedings before judgment (*Cropper & Co v Smith* (1884), 1 R P C 254, 28 Ch D 148, *Lawrence v Perry & Co* (1885), 2 R P C 179, *Haslam & Co v*,

SECT 2
Application
for a
Patent.
—

allowing the patentee to amend his specification by way of disclaimer in such manner and subject to such terms as the court thinks fit (*c*), but no such amendment may claim an invention substantially larger than or different from the invention claimed in the unamended specification (*d*) Notice of such proceedings must be given to the Comptroller, who has the right, and may be directed, to appear and be heard (*d*)

Where an order has been made by the court the patentee must forthwith leave at the office an office copy of such order, together with the prescribed form, whereupon his specification is amended as directed by the order (*e*)

SUB-SECT 9—*Acceptance of Specification*

Time for
acceptance

363 Unless a complete specification is accepted within twelve months from the date of the application, the application, except where an appeal has been lodged, becomes void, but where an application is made for an extension of time for the acceptance of a complete specification, the Comptroller must, on payment of the prescribed fee (*f*), grant an extension of time to the extent applied for, but not exceeding three months (*g*)

Extension

Notice and
advertisement
of acceptance

364 On the acceptance of a provisional or complete specification, the Comptroller gives notice thereof to the applicant (*h*) He must advertise the acceptance of every complete specification in the Illustrated Office Journal (Patents) (*i*), and, upon such acceptance of a complete specification, the application and specification or specifications, with the drawings, if any, may be inspected at the Patent Office (*k*)

Effect of
acceptance.

365 After his complete specification has been accepted and until the patent is finally sealed, or the time for its sealing has expired, the applicant has the same privileges and rights as if the patent had been sealed on the date of the acceptance of the complete specification, but he may not institute any proceeding for infringement until a patent has been granted to him (*l*).

Hall (1887), 5 R P C 1, 24), and for the meaning of "action pending," see *Brooks & Co v Lycett's Saddle and Motor Accessories Co* (1904), 21 R P C 651, [1904] 1 Ch 512

(*c*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 22, R S C, Ord 53, r 23, see *Re Geipel's Patent*, [1903] 2 Ch 715, *Re Klaber and Steinberg's Patent*, [1908] 1 Ch 847, and see, further, pp 210 *et seq*, 216, *post*

(*d*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 22

(*e*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 113

(*f*) £2 for each month or part of a month The application should be made in Patents Form No 7 (Patents Rules, 1908, r 37), see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol X, p 88, and see *ibid*, Vol XVI, pp 492, 493

(*g*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 6 (5)

(*h*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 38

(*i*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 9, Patents Rules, 1908, r 38

(*k*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 9, there is a fee of 1s (Patents Rules, 1908, r 39, and Sched. I)

(*l*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 10.

SECT. 3.—*Grant of a Patent.*

SUB-SECT 1—*Opposition to Grant*

(1) *Who may Oppose*

SECT. 3.
Grant of a
Patent.

366. Any person (*m*) may, within two months from the date of the advertisement of the acceptance of a complete specification, give notice at the Patent Office of opposition to the grant of the patent on one of four prescribed grounds (*n*)

Opponent to
grant

The notice must be on the prescribed form (*o*), and must state the grounds of opposition. It must be signed by the opponent, and accompanied by a copy which the Comptroller must send to the applicant. But, if the opponent does not desire that the patent should be refused, but merely that the specification should be amended by disclaimer, or limitation, he should send, either with, or soon after, his notice of opposition, a written statement to that effect, indicating the general nature of the amendments required and any portions of the earlier specifications which he relies upon as necessitating the amendments (*p*).

Notice of
opposition

(11) *Grounds of Opposition*

367 Opposition to the grant of a patent can only be founded on one of the following grounds —

Four grounds
available

(1) That the applicant obtained (*a*) the invention from the opponent (*b*), or from a person of whom he is the legal represen-

(*m*) *R v Comptroller General of Patents, Ex parte Tomlinson* (1899), 18 R P C 233, C A, [1899] 1 Q B 909

(*n*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 11 (1) As to the grounds of opposition see the text, *infra*

(*o*) *I.e.*, Patents Form No 8

(*p*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 40

(*a*) The words "obtained from the opponent" in Patents Rules, 1908, r 41 (1), do not necessarily imply fraud, and fraud is not necessary to the proof. It is not sufficient to show that the invention has been handed to B from A through numerous intermediate parties, if B receives it in entire ignorance of the fact that it owes its origin to A. (Ruling by the Comptroller General, reported in 27 R P C Appendix, (1910A))

(*b*) See Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw. 7, c 29) s 11 (1), Patents Rules, 1908, r 41 (1). This ground of opposition succeeded in *Lott's Application* (1853), Johnson's Reports, 168, cited Higgins and Jones, Digest of the Law of Patents, 2nd ed., p 43, *Macfarlane's Application* (1883), Johnson's Reports, 168, *Re Marshall's Application* (1888), 5 R P C 661, *Re Griffin's Application for Patents* (1888), 6 R P C 296, *Re Stuart's Application for a Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 452, *Re Paterson's Patents*, *Re Draydon's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 295. Where this ground of opposition is taken the application may be allowed, but subject to terms, either granting the patent to the applicant and opponent jointly (*Re Luke's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 294), or granting the patent as an improvement of the invention of the opponent (*Re Hoskins' Patent* (1884), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 291, *Re Newman's Patent* (No 2) (1888), 5 R P C 279), or granting the patent to trustees for the applicant and opponent, *e.g.*, in the case of master and servant (*Russell's Patent* (1857), 2 De G & J 130, *Re David and Woodley* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 26), or on terms that the applicant shall assign a half share to the opponent (*Re Evans and Othway's Patent* (1884), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 279, *Garthwaite's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 284). The words of this "ground" do not apply to communications from abroad, and the source of such communication is immaterial and cannot be investigated by the law officer (*Re Edmunds' Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 281, decided on the words

SECT 1
Grant of a
Patent.

tative (c); and, in this case, statutory declarations in support of the allegation must be left at the office within fourteen days after the expiration of two months from the date of the advertisement of the acceptance of the complete specification, or such further time as the Comptroller may allow (d)

(2) That the invention has been claimed (e) in a complete specification which is, or will be, of prior date to the patent the grant of which is opposed, other than a specification deposited pursuant to an application made more than fifty years before the date of application for the patent (f)

(3) That the nature of the invention or the manner in which it is to be performed is not sufficiently or fairly described and ascertained in the complete specification (g), and, in this case, the notice of

" on the ground of the applicant having obtained the invention from him " in the Patents, Designs, and Trade Marks Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict c 57), s 11, followed in *Re Lake's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 415, and see *Re Meurs Gerkin's Application* (1910), 27 R P C 565

(c) An assignee is not the legal representative and cannot be heard in opposition (*Re Spiel's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 281), nor is the holder of a power of attorney (*Re Edmunds' Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884 6, 281)

(d) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 11 (1) (a), Patents Rules, 1908, rr 41 (1), 42 If evidence is not so left, the opposition is deemed to be abandoned (*ibid*, r 41 (1))

(e) It is not enough if the invention is only described, it must be claimed in a prior specification (*Re Von Buch's Application* (1888), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 40, compare *Re Wadham's Application for a Patent* (1909), 27 R P C 172)

(f) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 11 (1) (b), see 27 R P C Appendix (1910c), (1910d) For the ruling of the Comptroller where the two applications are concurrent, see *ibid*, 1910G The prior invention must be substantially the same as that of the applicant (*Re Todd's Application for a Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 487, *Re Thwaite's Application for a Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 515, *Re Daniels' Application* (1888), 5 R P C 413, *Re Aire and Calder's Glass Bottle Works and Walker* (1888), 5 R P C 345, *Re Wallis v Ratcliff's Application* (1888), 5 R P C 347, *Re Webster's Patent* (1888), 6 R P C 163 *Bailey's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884 6, 269, *Re Boulton's Application for a Patent* (1893), 10 R P C 275, *Re Bridge's Application for a Patent* (1901), 18 R P C 257, and see *Re Krupp Actiengesellschaft Germaniaerft Application* (1908), 25 R P C 809) An unimportant difference is insufficient (*Re Haythornthwaite's Application for a Patent* (1889), 7 R P C 70, *Re Hedges' Application for a Patent* (1895), 12 R P C 136, *Re Van Wye's Application for a Patent* (1909), 26 R P C 490 and the law officers will not interfere in cases of controversy and difficulty (*Re Lake's Patent* (1889), 6 R P C 584) The law officers will insert a disclaimer clause if it is clear that there will be a repetition of a claim and if the public is likely to be misled (*Re Stell's Patent* (1891), 8 R P C 236, *Re Cooper v Ford's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 275, *Re Anderson and McKinnel's Application* (1887), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 23, 25, *Re Lorrain's Patents* (1888), 5 R P C 142, *Re Gozney's Application* (1888), 5 R P C 597, *Re Hill's Application* (1888), 5 R P C 599) A disclaimer protects both the former inventor and the new inventor by limiting his claim (*Re Hoffman's Patent* (1890), 7 R P C 92), and may be either general or special, but the law officers do not encourage the latter (*Re Stell's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Southwell and Head's Patent* (1899), 16 R P C 362, *Re Anderson and McKinnel's Application*, *supra*, *Re Stieloff's Application* (1888), 5 R P C 484, *Re Mareden's Patent*, No 2 (1896), 14 R P C 174, *Re Brockie's Application* (1908), 25 R P C 113)

(g) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 11 (1) (c), *Re François' Application for a Patent* (1909), 27 R P C 86, *Re Wadham's Application for a Patent*, *supra*.

opposition should be accompanied by a written statement indicating in what respects the invention is alleged to be insufficiently or unfairly described or ascertained (*h*)

SECT 3
Grant of a
Patent.

(4) That there is disconformity between the invention claimed in the complete specification and that described in the provisional specification, and that the invention thus claimed in the complete specification forms the subject of an application made by the opponent in the interval between the leaving of the provisional specification and the leaving of the complete specification (*i*).

(iii) Procedure, and Powers of Comptroller

368 The opponent may (*h*), in any case, leave statutory declarations in support of his claim within fourteen days after the expiration of the two months from the date of the advertisement of the acceptance of the complete specification (*l*) The applicant may within fourteen days leave declarations in answer, and the opponent may reply in the same way, provided that his declarations are confined to matters strictly in reply (*m*) Where the opponent does not exercise his right of leaving such declarations, the applicant may leave statutory declarations in support of his application within three months from the date of the advertisement of the acceptance of his complete specification (*n*) Thereupon, and within fourteen days, the opponent may leave declarations in answer, and the applicant in this case has the right of reply within fourteen days, provided that his declarations are likewise confined to matters strictly in reply (*a*)

Evidence in
support of
opposition or
application
and evidence
in reply

Where a party leaves statutory declarations under the rules, he must deliver copies to the other party (*b*)

No further evidence may be left except by leave or requisition of the Comptroller (*c*)

369 On the completion of the evidence, or whenever he sees fit, the Comptroller appoints a time for the hearing of the case, giving the parties at least ten days' notice (*d*)

Hearing

(*h*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 41 (2)

(*i*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 11 (1) (*d*), see 27 R P C Appendix (1910A), *Re Wilson's Application for a Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 512, n, *Re Hudson's Application for a Patent* (1904), 22 R P C 218 To succeed on this ground there must be disconformity, the mere development of what is claimed in the provisional specification does not vitiate the patent (*Re Birt's Application for a Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 489, *Re Edwards' Patent* (1894), 11 R P C 461, *Re Muller and Muller's Application for a Patent* (1898), 15 R P C 718)

(*k*) If the opposition is on the first "ground" referred to at pp 175, 176, *ante*, statutory declarations must be left by the opponent (Patents Rules, 1908, r 42)

(*l*) *Ibid*

(*m*) *Ibid*, r 43

(*n*) *Ibid*, r 44

(*a*) *Ibid*, r 45

(*b*) *Ibid*, rr 42—45 The statutory declarations are left at the Patent Office (*ibid*)

(*c*) *Ibid*, r 46

(*d*) *Ibid*, r 47 If they do not desire to be heard they must as soon as possible notify the Comptroller to that effect If they desire to be heard,

SECT 3
Grant of a
Patent

After hearing the party or parties desirous of being heard, or, if neither party desires to be heard, then without a hearing, the Comptroller decides the case (e) and notifies his decision to the parties (f).

(iv) *Appeal to Law Officer*

Appeal to law
officer

370 The decision of the Comptroller is subject to appeal to the law officer, who, if required, hears the parties, if the opponent is in his opinion a person entitled to be heard in opposition to the grant of the patent (g), and decides the case (h)

SUB-SLECT 2—*Making the Grant*

Time for
sealing

371 If there is no opposition, or if, upon opposition, the case has been determined in favour of the applicant, and if he has left at the Patent Office the prescribed form, duly stamped, requesting that his patent may be sealed (i), the Comptroller causes the patent to be sealed as soon as may be with the seal of the Office (k). A patent cannot, however, be sealed after the expiration of fifteen months from the date of application, except in the following cases—

Exceptions to
general rule.

(1) Where the Comptroller has allowed an extension of time within which a complete specification may be left or accepted, a further extension of four months after the fifteen months is allowed for the sealing of the patent (l)

(2) Where the sealing is delayed by an appeal to the law officer

they must leave Patents Form No 9 at the Patent Office, and, if either party intends to refer to any publication (other than the specification) which has not been mentioned in the statutory declarations, he must give five days' notice and supply details of the publication both to the Comptroller and to the other party (Patent Rules, 1908, r 47)

(e) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 11 (2). The Comptroller may take any prior specification into consideration, although it is not raised as a ground of opposition (*Re Hughes and Kennaugh's Application for a Patent* (1910), 27 R P C 281)

(f) Patent Rules, 1908, r 47. The Comptroller may award costs (*Re Anderton's Patent* (1885), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 25)

(g) It is not everyone who can of right oppose the grant of a patent, it is a matter in every case for the law officer to decide, but he allows anyone who either directly as owner or assignee or otherwise is interested in showing that the grant would include an earlier patent (*Re Meyer's Application for a Patent* (1899), 16 R P C 526, *R v Comptroller General of Patents, Ex parte Tomlinson* (1899), 16 R P C 233, C A, [1899] 1 Q B 909, compare *Re Bainslow's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 286, *Re Macevoy's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 285, *Re Hookham's Patent* (1888), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 32). A patent agent is not so interested (*Re Heath and Frost's Patent* (1886), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1884-6, 288, *Re Lake's Patent* (1888), Griffin, Patent Cases, 1888, 35, *Re Hookham's Patent, supra*). As to patent agents, see pp 230 *et seq*, *post*

(h) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 11 (3). The law officer may obtain the assistance of an expert (*ibid*). As to procedure, see Law Officers' Rules, Patent Rules, 1908, pp 77, 78, and see p 177, *ante*

(i) Patent Rules, 1908, r 48, fee £1. The form of application is Patents Form No 10, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, p 166

(k) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 12 (1), (2). For the form of grant, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, p 167, and see *ibid*, Vol XVI, p 494, and for form of grant of patent of addition, see *ibid*, p 499

(l) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 12 (2) (a).

SECT. 3
Grant of a
Patent.

or by opposition to the grant of the patent, it rests with the law officer to direct the time at which the patent may be sealed (*m*)

(3) Where the patent is granted to the legal representative of an applicant who has died before the expiration of the time which would otherwise be allowed for sealing the patent, the patent may be sealed at any time within twelve months from the date of his death (*n*).

(4) Where, in consequence of the neglect or failure of the applicant to pay any fee, a patent cannot be sealed within the period allowed, the applicant may apply to the Comptroller (*o*), who may grant an extension, not exceeding three months (*p*)

(5) Where a patent is lost or destroyed, or its non-production is accounted for, the Comptroller may seal a duplicate (*q*)

372 Except as otherwise expressly provided, a patent must be dated and sealed as of the date of the application; but no proceedings can be taken in respect of an infringement committed before the complete specification was published (*r*)

Date of
patent.

373 A patent sealed with the seal of the Patent Office has the same effect as if it were sealed with the Great Seal of the United Kingdom, and has effect throughout the United Kingdom and the Isle of Man (*s*)

Validity of
grant

A patent is to be granted for one invention only, but when once it has been granted no one can in any legal proceeding raise the objection that it has been granted for more than one invention (*t*)

A patent granted to the true and first inventor cannot be invalidated by an application in fraud of him or by provisional protection obtained thereon (*u*)

SECT. 4 —Register of Patents

SUB-SECT 1.—Matters Entered in Register

374 A book called the Register of Patents is kept at the Patent Office (*a*), and in it are entered—

Entries on
register

(1) The names (*a*), addresses (*a*), and callings (*b*) of grantees of patents;

(*m*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 12 (2) (b) The opposition must be the cause of the delay Where there is opposition, but the cause of delay is the applicant's carelessness, the law officer may refuse to seal the patent (*Re A and B's Application for a Patent* (1896), 13 R P C 63, *Re A B's Application for a Patent* (1902), 19 R P C 556)

(*n*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 12 (2) (c)

(*o*, Patents Rules, 1908, r 48 The application should be made on Patents Rules, 1908, Form No 11, and the fee is £2 for each month or part of a month applied for

(*p*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 12 (2) (d)

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 44

(*r*) *Ibid*, s. 13, and see p 216, *post* A Convention application (see p 229, *post*) is entered on the Register as dated of the date on which the first foreign application was made (Patents Rules, 1908, r 83) As to the Register, see the text, *infra*

(*s*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 14 (1) As to grants under the Great Seal, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp. 476 *et seq*

(*t*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw. 7, c. 29), s 14 (2).

(*u*) *Ibid*, s 15 (1), and see p 169, *ante*.

(*a*) *Ibid*, s 28 (1), (2)

(*b*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 82.

SECT 4
Register of
Patents.

- (2) The title of the invention (*c*);
 - (3) The date of the patent (*c*),
 - (4) The date of the grant (*c*),
 - (5) The address for service of the grantee (*c*);
 - (6) Notifications of assignments and of transmissions of patents (*d*), of licences under patents (*e*), and of amendments, extensions and revocations of patents (*f*),
 - (7) Other matters affecting the validity or proprietorship of patents, for example, subsequent proprietorship, notice of interest, notification of documents of title (*g*),
 - (8) The date of the payment of renewal fees (*h*), and
 - (9) Notifications of failure to pay fees (*i*)
- No notice of any trust, expressed, implied, or constructive, can be entered in the Register (*j*)

SUB-SECT 2 — Correction and Rectification

Alteration
of address

375 If the patentee has altered his address or his address for service, he should notify the Comptroller on the prescribed form. The Comptroller must then cause the Register to be altered accordingly, but he may require that the altered address be in the United Kingdom (*k*)

Correction
of clerical
error
Rectification
by order of
court

The Comptroller may on a request in writing accompanied by the prescribed fee correct any clerical error in the Register (*l*)

376 Any person who considers himself aggrieved (*m*) by the non-insertion in, or omission from, the Register of any entry, or by any entry made without sufficient cause, or by any entry wrongly remaining on the Register, or by any error or defect in any entry, may apply to the court in the prescribed manner (*n*), and the court may make an order for making, expunging, or varying the entry complained of (*o*), and may decide any question that it may be expedient to decide in connection with such rectification of the Register. Four days' notice of such application must be given to

(*c*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 82

(*d*) See p 186, *post*

(*e*) See p 192, *post*

(*f*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 91, and see the text, *infra*, and see pp 199, 206 *et seq*, *post*. A special form (Patents Form No 29, fee 10s, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, p 171, and see *ibid*. Vol XVI, p 494) is provided for the use of those who wish to enter a notification of any document affecting the proprietorship of a patent

(*g*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 91, see Patents Form No 28, Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XVI, p 499 (application to register notice of interest)

(*h*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 92

(*i*) *Ibid*, r 93

(*j*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 66. But any document affecting the proprietorship of a patent may be registered (*Stewart v Casey* (1891), 9 R P C 9, C A, [1902] 1 Ch 104), see the text, *supra*, and, as to assignment of patents, see pp 183 *et seq*, *post*

(*k*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 84

(*l*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 70 (*c*)

(*m*) A person aggrieved may be the purchaser of a share of a patent another share of which has been entered on an assignment by a bankrupt (*Re Manning's Patent* (1902), 20 R P C 74)

(*n*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s. 72 (1)

(*o*) *Ibid*, s 72 (1), (2)

the Comptroller, who has the right and may be directed to appear (p). The order must direct that notice of the rectification shall be served on the Comptroller in the prescribed manner, who must then rectify the Register accordingly (q)

SECT 4.
Register of Patents.

SUB-SECT 3 — *Inspection and Copies*

377 The Register is open to the inspection of the public whenever the office is open to the public (r), unless it is required for official use (s) Inspection.

Certified copies, sealed with the seal of the Patent Office, of any entry in the register must be given to any person requiring the same on payment of the prescribed fee (t) Copies.

SUB-SECT 4 — *Register as Evidence*

378 The Register is *prima facie* evidence of any matters directed or authorised to be inserted therein (a), and printed or written copies of any entry, certified by the Comptroller and sealed with the seal of the Patent Office (b), are admitted in evidence in all courts in His Majesty's dominions, and in all proceedings, without further proof or production of the original (c) Register as evidence

SECT 5 — *Maintenance of a Patent.*

SUB-SECT 1 — *Payment of Fees*

379 A patent provides that it shall determine if the patentee does not pay all his fees by law required, and, after the fourth year from its inception, the payment of annual renewal fees is required (d) Renewal fees.

Such payments are made by means of the prescribed form (e), Mode of and time for payment

(p) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 72 (3), Patents Rules, 1908, r 113

(q) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 72 (4), Patents Rules, 1908, r 113 An appeal lies from any order made by the court for the rectification of the register (*Re Morgan's Patent* (1876), 24 W. R. 245, *Re Myer's Patent*, [1882] W. N. 53, 76)

(r) Patents Rules, 1908, r 110

(s) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 67, Patents Rules, 1908, r 94

(t) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 67 The fee is 1s for each certified copy (Patents Rules, 1908, Sched I)

(a) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 28 (3), see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 474, note (c)

(b) Such copies may be had from the Comptroller by written request on Patents Form No 31 (fee 5s)

(c) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 79, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 539

(d) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 17 (1), (2), and Patents Rules, 1908, Sched III The scale is as follows—Before the expiration of the fourth year from the date of the patent and in respect of the fifth year, £5, before the expiration of the fifth year and in respect of the sixth year, £6, and so on, the fee rising annually by £1 until the final payment—before the expiration of the thirteenth year and in respect of the fourteenth year, £14 (Patents Rules, 1908, r 52, and Sched I)

(e) Patents Rules, 1908, r 52, Patents Form No 13, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XVI, p 497

SECT 6
Main-
tenance of
a Patent.

and all or any of them may be paid in advance (*f*) The Comptroller must notify the patentee of the date when such fee will become due and of the consequences of non-payment thereof, giving him at least one month's notice (*g*). If the patentee fails to pay the fees in the prescribed times, the patent ceases, unless he applies (*h*) for an enlargement of time for payment, in which case the Comptroller must give him the time required, not exceeding three months (*i*)

SUB-SECT 2—Restoration of Lapsed Patent

Application
for restora-
tion

380 Where a patent has become void owing to the failure of the patentee to pay any prescribed fee within the prescribed time, the patentee may apply to the Comptroller for an order for the restoration of the patent (*k*). Such application must contain a statement on the prescribed form (*l*) of the circumstances which have led to the omission of the payment (*m*), and must be accompanied by one or more statutory declarations verifying the statement (*n*). If it then appears that the omission was unintentional (*o*) and that no undue delay has occurred in the making of the application, the Comptroller advertises the application in the Illustrated Office Journal (Patents) and in such other way as he thinks desirable (*p*).

Notice of
opposition

At any time within two months from the first of such advertisements in the Journal any person may give notice of opposition at the Patent Office on the prescribed form (*q*), and the Comptroller sends a copy of such notice to the applicant (*r*).

Order on
application.

Having heard the parties, the Comptroller issues an order either

(*f*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 52

(*g*) *Ibid*, r 54

(*h*) *Ibid*, r 52, Patents Form No 14, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XVI, p 408. An additional fee is charged for this extension of time, namely, £1 for the first month (or any part thereof), £2 for two, and £3 for three, months (Patents Rules, 1908, Sched 1)

(*i*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 17 (2)

(*k*) *Ibid*, s 20 (1)

(*l*) Patents Form No 15, which prescribes a fee of £20 (Patents Rules, 1908, r 55), see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XVI, p 408

(*m*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 20 (2)

(*n*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 55

(*o*) If the omission is intentional, under a mistake as to the law or practice, the patentee is not protected (*Re Land's Patent* (1910), 27 R P C 481, [1910] 2 Ch 236)

(*p*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 20 (3), Patents Rules, 1908, r 55

(*q*) *Ibid*, r 55, Patents Form No 16

(*r*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 20 (4). The opponent must, within 14 days after leaving his notice, leave one or more statutory declarations verifying the evidence on which he relies, and must deliver copies to the applicant (Patents Rules, 1908, r 56). The applicant may, within 14 days from such delivery, leave declarations in reply, if he does so, the opponent has the right to answer them in the same way, and no further evidence may be left except by the leave or requisition of the Comptroller, the procedure being similar to that in the case of opposition to the grant of a patent (*ibid*, r 57, and see *ibid*, rr 43, 46, 47, p 177, *ante*).

restoring the patent or dismissing the application. This order is subject to an appeal to the court (s)

In every such order, prescribed provisions must be inserted for the protection of persons who may have availed themselves of the subject-matter of the patent after the patent has been announced as void in the Journal (t), and the Board of Trade may compensate any person for money, time, or labour expended by him in the belief that such patent had become void (u)

SECT. 3.
Maintenance of a Patent.

Protection afforded by order in respect of use of subject matter

SECT. 6 — Assignment and Devolution of Patents.

SECT. 1 — What may be Assigned

381 Every person to whom a patent has been granted may assign (a) either the whole of, or a share in, the right granted (b), and he may include in the assignment all future patent rights of a like nature to the patent which he may acquire (c) He may

Assignment may be limited in effect or otherwise

(s) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 20 (5) As to the practice on such an appeal, see note (b), p 208, *post*

(t) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 20 (5) The provisions are prescribed by Patents Rules, 1908, r 58

(u) *Ibid*, r 59

(a) The power to assign a patent can only be given by the Crown (*Duvergier v Fellows* (1830), 10 B & C 826, *per* LILLIDALE, J., at p 829) The power is now given by the grant of letters patent, see Patents Rules, 1908, Form A, Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, p 167, and see *ibid*, Vol XVI, p 494 As to assignments of choses in action, generally, see title CHOSSES IN ACTION, Vol IV, pp 365 *et seq*

(b) For examples of assignment of a share in a patent, see *Dunnelliff v Mallet* (1859) 7 C B (N S) 209, *Walton v Lavater* (1860), 8 C B (N S) 162 An assignment of a share in the profits of a patent may create a partnership (see title PARTNERSHIP, pp 8 *et seq*, *ante*), but this can be avoided by granting a licence instead of making an assignment (1 Web Pat Cas 417, n) As to licences, see pp 190 *et seq*, *post* An assignment of a patent not yet granted may be good, and may be entered on the Register if the document leaves no doubt whatever as to the proposed patent referred to in it (*Re Parnell's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 126, *per* NORTH, J., at p 128, and see 27 R P C Appendix (1910e))

(c) *Printing and Numerical Registering Co v Sampson* (1875), L R 19 Eq 462 There is no "public policy prohibiting such contracts On the contrary, public policy is the other way" (*ibid*, *per* JESSEL, M R., at p 466), and an action will lie for breach of such an agreement (*London and Leicester Hosiery Co v Griswold* (1886), 3 R P C 251) Considerable care should be taken in drafting covenants to assign future improvements An improvement of a machine includes any machine which while retaining the essential or characteristic parts, or some of the essential and characteristic parts of the machine, yet by addition to or omission of or alteration made in those parts or some of them, achieves more quickly or more cheaply or in some better way the same result as, or achieves a better result than is achieved by the patented machine for the purpose for which it was contrived" (*Linotype and Machinery, Ltd v Hopkins* (1908), 25 R P C 665, C A, *per* BUCKLEY, L J., at p 670, compare *Wilson v Barbour and Combe* (1888), 5 R P C 245, *per* PORTER, M R., at p 254, see also *Valveless Gas Engine Syndicate v Day* (1899), 16 R P C 97 (engine worked by petroleum held to be an improvement on an engine worked by gas), *Davies v Curtis and Harvey, Ltd* (1902), 19 R P C 580, affirmed (1903), 20 R P C 561, C A (manufacture of a powder without an ingredient which was the essence of the patent held not to be an improvement), and see *Davies v Davies' Patent Boiler, Ltd* (1908), 25 R P C 823) A covenant by a patentee to assign all improvements of a patent does not cover patents acquired in which the patentee has a beneficial interest with other

SECT 6
Assignment
and Devolu-
tion of
Patents.

assign his patent for any part of or any place in the United Kingdom or the Isle of Man (*d*), and, where a patent contains two or more inventions severable in their nature, he may assign the separate parts to different persons (*e*).

Sub-SECT 2 — *Mode of Assignment*

Form of
assignment

382 A legal assignment (*f*) of a patent must be made by deed (*g*), but an assignment in writing not under seal may create an interest in a patent and operate as a valid equitable assignment (*h*). An assignment may be made to any number of persons (*i*) in any form of words (*j*), and may be created by way of mortgage (*k*) or in certain cases by the grant of a licence (*l*).

Effect of
various
clauses and
covenants

383 Unless the assignor warrants the validity of the patent assigned (*m*), the assignee cannot in the absence of fraud repudiate

persons, it extends only to patents of which the patentee has sole control either as true inventor or as a person to whom an invention has been communicated (*Pneumatic Tyre Co v Dunlop* (1896), 13 R P C 533, C A).

(*d*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 14 (1). For an example of a local assignment, see *Actien Gesellschaft fur Cartonnagen Industrie v Temler and Seeman* (1900), 18 R P C 6, per STIRLING, J, at p 14.

(*e*) Although a patent must only be granted for one invention, the specification may contain more than one claim, and it is no objection to a patent that it has been granted for more than one invention (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 14 (2), and see p 179, *ante*).

(*f*) The assignment of a patent must be stamped as though it were an actual conveyance on sale of "property" within the meaning of the Stamp Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 39), s 59 (1) (*Smelling Co of Australia v Inland Revenue Commissioners*, [1897] 1 Q B 175, C A), see titles REVENUE, SALE OF LAND. For forms of agreement for sale, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol IV, p 217, Vol X, pp 104 *et seq*, 121 and for forms of assignment, see *ibid*, pp 121 *et seq*.

(*g*) An agent authorised to make a legal assignment of a patent must be authorised by deed (*Hazlehurst v Rylands* (1891), 9 R P C 1, C A, per FRY L J, at p 7), and see title AGENCY, Vol I, p 154.

(*h*) *Re Casey's Patents, Stewart v Casey*, [1892] 1 Ch 104 C A, and see titles CHOSES IN ACTION, Vol IV, p 396, DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS, Vol X, pp 364-422.

(*i*) Formerly the number of persons to whom a patent could be assigned was limited by proviso in the letters patent (*Bloram v Elsee* (1827), 6 B & C 169; *Hesse v Stevenson* (1803), 3 Bos & P 565; *Duvergie v Fellows* (1830) 10 B & C 826).

(*j*) *Cartwright v Amatt* (1799), 2 Bos & P 43 (where an agreement by deed to assign a patent on the determination of a future event was held to pass the legal interest in the patent without assignment on the event happening), and see note (*u*), p 186, *post*.

(*k*) See title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, pp 130 *et seq*, *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol VIII, p 685. In an assignment by way of mortgage, it is usual for the mortgagee to covenant that he will not seek leave to amend the specification or drawings without the written consent of the mortgagor.

(*l*) As to a licence amounting to an assignment, see note (*k*), p 191, *post*.

(*m*) The assignor usually covenants that he is the true and first inventor, and that the patent is valid, and this estops him from denying the validity of the patent in any action for infringement brought subsequently by the assignee (*Walton v Lavater* (1860), 8 C B (N S) 162, see *Hooking & Co v Hocking* (1887), 4 R P C 255, 434, C A, reversed (1888), 6 R P C 69, H L, see also title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, p 413), but he is not thus estopped either from denying a particular construction of the specification

the agreement on the ground that the patent is wholly worthless (n)

Where the consideration is a royalty reserved to the assignor, there is no obligation on the assignee to pay the fees necessary to maintain the patent, unless he covenants that he will do so (o)

An assignor may insert a covenant to protect himself from competition by the trade of the assignee, provided such covenant is not void as being to an unnecessary extent in restraint of trade, nor injurious to the public interests of the state (p), or he may reserve to himself the right to use the invention (q)

It is usual, in an assignment for a district, for the assignor to covenant to pay the renewal fees within the prescribed times, to give due notice of every such payment when made, and to repay on demand any sum paid by his co-owner (r), and until repayment to charge them, together with interest, on his share of the patent

SECT. 6.
Assignment
and Devolu-
tion of
Patents.

384 An assignee, who takes from a prior assignee with notice Assignee with notice

which is consistent with the validity of the patent (*Oldham v Langmead* (1789), cited in *Hayne v Maltby* (1789), 3 Term Rep 438, 441), or from giving evidence, though he may thereby assist a defendant to an action for infringement (*London and Leicester Hosiery Co v Griswold* (1886) 3 R P C 251) The estoppel may be contained in the recital (*Bowman v Taylor* (1834), 2 Ad & El 278, 293), but, if it contains no assertion of right except as assignee, the assignee may deny the validity of the patent in an action brought against him by the assignor (*Hayne v Maltby* (1789), 3 Term Rep 438), and see note (l), p 194, *post* In an action for misrepresentation in a company prospectus containing statements that a patent is valuable, the plaintiff must show, not that the patent is invalid, but that it was invalid at the date of the prospectus (*Stuvert v Passburg Grains Syndicate, Ltd* (1891), 8 R P C 400)

(n) *Hall v Conder* (1857), 2 C B (N S) 22, 53 A covenant for warranty of validity should show clearly (1) whether the question of validity is to be determined by the grantee warranting the validity of the patent in fact, or by the opinion of the assignee (*Hazlehurst v Rylands* (1891), 9 R P C 1, C A), (2) whether the guarantee is in the nature of a condition giving the assignee the right of repudiation on breach of the contract, or a mere warranty the remedy for breach of which is only damages (*Nadel v Martin* (1902), 20 R P C 723, C A, affirmed (1905), 23 R P C 41, H L, and see *Borchum v Wren* (1904), 21 R P C 683, *Henderson v Shiels* (1906), 24 R P C 108) There is no implied warranty, in the sale of a patented article, that the purchaser will be able to use the machine without interruption from a prior patentee (*Monforts v Marsden* (1895), 12 R P C 266)

(o) *Re Railway and Electric Apparatus Co* (1888), 38 Ch D 597 (where the assignee's covenant was to pay a royalty on articles manufactured or sold by the assignee under the patent 'while subsisting,' but there was no express covenant by the assignee to manufacture or sell)

(p) *Nordenfjelt v Maxim Nordenfjelt Guns and Ammunition Co*, [1894] A C 535

(q) *Howard and Bullough v Tweedales and Smalley* (1895), 12 R P C 519 The agents of an assignor who reserves to himself the right to use the invention may be restrained by the assignee from manufacturing and selling on the assignor's behalf articles made under the patent, if they are not merely the agents of, but the contractors for, the assignor (*ibid*)

(r) With reference to the payment of renewal fees, see also p 186, *post*. As to such fees, see p 181, *ante*

SECT 6
**Assignment and Devolu-
 tion of
 Patents**

Rights of
 legal and
 equitable
 assignees

of the terms upon which the patent was held by the prior assignee, holds the patent subject to such terms (s)

SUB-SECT 3—Registration of Assignments

385 A legal assignment entitles the assignee, on request and on proof of title, to be registered as the proprietor of the patent in the Register (t), but an equitable assignment can only be entered in the Register as a document affecting the proprietorship of the patent (u). An assignee of a patent by way of mortgage is not the proprietor of the patent, and must be registered as mortgagee (a).

Every assignee should register the assignment as soon as possible (b), otherwise he may lose his title (c), and may be unable to sue persons other than those who have notice of the assignment (d)

(s) *Dansk Rekyktriffl Syndikat Aktieselskab v Snell*, [1908] 2 Ch 127, following *Werderman v Société Générale d'Electricité* (1881), 19 Ch D 246, C A, as explained in *Bagot Pneumatic Tyre Co v Clipper Pneumatic Tyre Co*, [1902] 1 Ch 146, C A

(t) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 71. The assignment must be produced to the Comptroller, and the request for entry of the assignment in the Register must state the particulars of assignment (Patents Rules, 1908, rr 87, 88). As registered proprietor in law, the assignee has absolute power to assign, grant licences, or otherwise deal with the patent (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 71(3)), and, as a necessary incident to his proprietary rights, to sue for infringement, see *Duncan v Lockerbie and Wilkinson (Birmingham), Ltd* (1912), 133 L T Jo 57. But any equities may be enforced in like manner as in respect of any other personal property (*ibid*, *New Iron Tyre and Cycle Co v Spilsbury* (1898) 15 R P C 567, C A, [1898] 2 Ch 484. As to the Register, see p 179 *ante*).

(u) *Re Casey's Patents, Stewart v Casey*, [1892] 1 Ch 104, C A, *per* BOWEN, L J, at p 116. The document must be complete in itself and capable of specific performance (*Re Fletcher's Patent* (1893), 10 R P C 252, 62 L J (Ch) 938, *Re Hutchinson's Patent, Haslett v Hutchinson* (1891), 8 R P C 457, C A). As to specific performance generally, see title SPECIFIC PERFORMANCE.

(a) *Van Gelder, ApSimon & Co v Souerby Bridge Flour Society* (1890), 7 R P C 208, 211, C A, 44 Ch D 374. Every person entitled to an interest in a patent, either as mortgagee, licensee, or otherwise, may have notice of his interest entered in the Register (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 71(2)), and see p 180, *ante*.

(b) A title derived by an assignment granted by the executors of the grantee is good even though probate is not registered until after the date of assignment (*Elwood v Christy* (1864), 17 C B (N S) 754), but *quære* if the assignee has commenced his action before the registration of the probate (*ibid*).

(c) *New Iron Tyre and Cycle Co v Spilsbury*, *supra*.

(d) *Chollet v Hoffman* (1857), 7 E & B 686, *Hassall v Wright* (1870), L R 10 Eq 509. It would appear from these authorities, both of which were decisions under the Patent Law Amendment Act, 1852 (15 & 16 Vict c 83) s 35, that the registration of an assignment is a condition precedent to the assignee suing a third person without knowledge of the assignment. Under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 71(3), the registered proprietor of a patent has absolute power to assign, grant licences, or otherwise deal with the patent, but an assignee does not become the registered proprietor except on request and on proof of title (*ibid*, s 71(1)). Since the powers of a registered proprietor only vest in an assignee on registration of the assignment, he should register the assignment before suing, otherwise a defendant would "be liable to be sued at the same time for the same infringement by the grantee and by the assignee of the letters patent" (*Chollet v Hoffman*, *supra*, *per* Lord CAMPBELL,

SUB-SECT 4—*Rights of Assignees*

SMOT. 6.

Assignment and Devolution of Patents.

Rights of assignee as to protection of patent

Co ownership

386 Every registered assignee (e) has the right to maintain an action for infringement alone (f), to restrain the assignor and his subsequent licensees from using the invention without his licence (g), to seek leave to amend the specification or drawings of the patent (h), and to petition for the prolongation of the patent (i)

387 A co-owner of a patent may use the patent without the consent of the other co-owners (h), and, in the absence of agreement, is not bound to account to the other co-owners for any share of the profits so made (l)

C J, at p 694) The case is different where the persons sued are the assignor and subsequent licensees from the assignor with notice of the assignment, although the principle to be applied is the same (*per* MALINS, V C, in *Hassall v Wright* (1870), L R 10 Eq 509, at p 515). It would seem that the registration of an assignment relates back to the date of the assignment (*Hassall v Wright, supra*), but in an action for the infringement of a patent, where an account is ordered to be taken, in the case of an assignee, the account is only taken from the date of the registration of the assignment (*Elwood v Christy* (1865), 18 C B (N S) 491)

(e) An equitable assignee cannot sue without bringing the legal owner before the court (*Bowden's Patents Syndicate v Smith & Co* (1904), 21 R P C 438, [1904] 2 Ch 86 and see *Duncan v Lockerbie and Wilkinson (Birmingham), Ltd* (1912), 133 L T Jo 57). Where an assignee sues for infringement, he must show that the assignment was complete before the issue of the writ, otherwise he must join the assignor as a party to the suit (*Bowden's Patents Syndicate v Smith & Co, supra*, *Spennymoor Foundry v Catherall and Geldard* (1909), 26 R P C 822)

(f) See notes (t), (d), p 186, *ante*. The assignee of a share in a patent has the same right as the assignee of the whole patent, and he can sue alone without joining the owner of the other share (*Dunnelliff v Mallet* (1859), 7 C B (N S) 209)

(g) *Hassall v Wright* (1870), L R 10 Eq 509. The assignor may, however, expressly reserve the right to use the invention, see p 185, *ante*

(h) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), ss 21, 71 (3), 93. In the case of an assignment by way of mortgage, the mortgagor should be made a party to the application (*Van Gelder, Apsimon & Co v Sowerby Bridge Flour Society* (1890), 7 R P C 41, 59 L J (CH) 492)

(i) *Russell v Lednam* (1845), 14 M & W 574, 588. An extension may be granted to an assignee where the patentee has agreed to have any connection with the working of the patent (*Re Napier's Patent* (1861), 13 Moo P C C 543), or where the assignee has sustained loss by helping the patentee in developing the patent (*Re Bodmer's Patent* (1849), 6 Moo P C C 468, *Re Normand's Patent* (1870), L R 3 P C 193). An assignee does not, however, stand in the same favourable position as the inventor (*Re Norton's Patent* (1863), 1 Moo P C C (N S) 339), and the application may be granted subject to conditions (*Re Pitman's Patent* (1871), L R 4 P C 84, 87, *Re Herbert's Patent* (1867), L R 1 P C 399, *Re Markwick's Patent* (1860), 13 Moo P C C 310) or, in the case of a joint application, to the patentee alone (*Re Bovill's Patent* (1863), 1 Moo P C C (N S) 348), and see note (o), pp 204, 205, *post*. An assignee has no *locus standi* to apply for the revocation of a patent under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), ss 11 (1) (a), 26 (*Re Gascoigne's Patent* (1909), 27 R P C 78)

(k) But he cannot dispose of the interests of the other co-owners by assigning the whole patent to a third party (*Re Horsley and Knighton's Patent* (1869), L R 8 Eq 475). As to revocation, see pp 206 *et seq*, *post*

(l) *Mathers v Green* (1865), 35 L J (CH) 1, see Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 37. This applies even where he is co-owner of one moiety and also mortgagee of the other moiety (*Steele v Rogers* (1892), 9 R P C 177, C A, [1892] 2 Ch 13, affirmed (1893), 10

SECT. 6.
Assignment and Devolution of Patents

Usual clauses in assignment of share of patent

Hence it is usual, in an assignment of a share in a patent, to insert covenants binding the parties and all future owners to account to each other for the profits made by them respectively, and to grant, or to concur with the other owners in granting, licences (*m*). It is also usual for the assignee to covenant that he will perform and observe any stipulations which bind the assignor and to indemnify him from future breaches, and for each owner to pay his proper share of renewal fees and to charge his share in the patent with the repayment of any moneys which may be paid by any other owner on his behalf in this respect (*n*).

Where a patent is worked solely by one co-owner, it is usual for the other co-owners to reserve to themselves the right to use the assigned share on agreed conditions and to enter a notification of such right on the register (*o*).

Effect of partnership.

388 Where a partnership in a patent is created (*p*), each partner may use the patent as an asset of the partnership, both during and after the termination of the partnership, and may restrain an assignee of any other partner who has taken an assignment with notice of the partnership (*q*).

Sub Sect. 5—Assignment to Secretary for War or the Admiralty

Assignment of invention for improvement in instruments or munitions of war

389 The Secretary of State for War (*r*) or the Admiralty (*s*) may acquire by assignment, either for or without valuable consideration, all the benefit of an invention and of any patent obtained or to be obtained for an invention of any improvement in instruments or munitions of war (*t*).

R P C 245, H L., [1893] A C 232) A co owner can sue alone either for an injunction or for an account (*Sheehan v Great Eastern Rail Co* (1880), 16 Ch D 59, 62), and see *Smith v London and North Western Rail Co* (1853), 2 F & B 69, compare *Beigmann v Macmillan* (1881), 17 Ch D 423 (where it was held that when an assignment is made of a share of profits, arising from the working of a patent under licences, any account taken must be taken in the presence of all the parties interested).

(*m*) It is usual for the co owners to covenant that they will grant licences jointly and will share all benefits arising therefrom in proportion to their shares.

(*n*) Compare the covenant usually inserted in assignments for a district, see p 185, *ante*.

(*o*) As to the Register, see p 179, *ante*.

(*p*) A partnership in a patent may be created by the assignment of a share in the profits arising from the working of a patent, see p 183, *ante*.

(*q*) *Kenny's Patent Bullonholeing Co v Somerrell and Lutwyche* (1878), 26 W R 786. This applies even where the patent is taken out by and registered in the name of one partner only, and it is that partner who assigns the patent (*ibid*), and see title PARTNERSHIP, pp 53, 57, *ante*.

(*r*) See title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, pp 92 *et seq*.

(*s*) See *ibid*, pp 88 *et seq*.

(*t*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 30 (1), (2). Such assignment effectually vests the benefit of the invention and patent in the Secretary of State or the Admiralty on behalf of His Majesty, and all covenants and agreements therein contained for keeping the invention secret and otherwise are valid and effectual and may be enforced by them (*ibid*, s 30 (2)). Communication of any such invention to the Secretary of State or the Admiralty, or to any person authorised by them to investigate it, is not deemed "use or publication" so as to prejudice the grant or validity of a patent for it (*ibid*, s 30 (12)).

If the Secretary of State for War or the Admiralty certifies that, in the interest of the public service, the particulars of the invention and of the manner in which it is to be performed should be kept secret (*u*), the application and specifications, drawings, and any amendment of the complete specification and any copies of such documents and drawings must be placed in a sealed packet (*a*), which is kept by the Comptroller until the expiration of the term of the patent (*b*), unless the Secretary of State or the Admiralty authorises the packet to be delivered to some other person (*c*), and neither the documents contained in the sealed packet, nor any copy thereof, are open to the inspection of the public (*d*)

SECT 6
Assignment
and Devola
tion of
Patents.

Certificate
as to secrecy

The Secretary of State or the Admiralty may consent to waive the benefit of the above provisions, in which case the specifications, drawings and documents are thenceforth kept and dealt with in the ordinary way (*e*)

Waiver of
special
provisions

Unless and until such invention is reassigned to the inventor by the Secretary of State or the Admiralty, various special rules apply (*f*)

Reassign-
ment.

SUB-SECT 6—Devolution on Bankruptcy or Death of Inventor

390 On a patentee being declared bankrupt the patent vests in the trustee in bankruptcy (*g*), and the trustee may sue for and

Effect of
bankruptcy
of patentee

(*u*) The Secretary of State or the Admiralty must certify to the effect mentioned in the text, *supra*, before the publication of the complete specification (*ibid*, s 30 (3))

(*a*) If the assignment takes place before application for a patent has been made, the packet is sealed by authority of the Secretary of State or the Admiralty and delivered to the Comptroller (*ibid*, s 30 (4)) But where the Secretary of State or the Admiralty certifies under *ibid*, s 30 (3) (see note (*u*), *supra*), after application for a patent has been made, it is the duty of the Comptroller forthwith to place the necessary documents in a packet sealed by his authority (*ibid*, s 30 (8)) In this case the provisions of Patents Rules, 1908, r 97, apply as far as practicable, see the text, *infra* On an application (made on Patents Form No 1b) for a secret patent, the Comptroller may not communicate the application or any documents relating thereto to any member of his staff except to a deputy or special examiner to make the necessary investigations and report (Patents Rules, 1908, r 97), nor is the application, or the acceptance of any specification relating to the invention, advertised, nor is the grant open to opposition under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 11 (see p. 175, *ante*, Patents Rules, 1908, r 97 (2)) The patent must be sealed as soon as possible after acceptance of the complete specification, and is registered in a Confidential Register at the Patent Office, no entry being made in the ordinary Register (*ibid*, rr 97 (31), 98)

(*b*) Such patent remains in force for fourteen years from its date, and no fees are payable in respect of it (Patents Rules, 1908, r 97 (4))

(*c*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 30 (5), (6) On the expiration of the term of the patent the packet must be delivered to the Secretary of State or the Admiralty (*ibid*, s 30 (7))

(*d*) *ibid*, s 30 (10), Patents Rules, 1908, r 97 (1)

(*e*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 30 (11)

(*f*) See Patents Rules, 1908, r 97 (1)—(4) On such reassignment the patent is removed from the Confidential Register and thereafter the same fees are payable, and the patent is subject to the same terms and conditions as if it had not been a secret patent (Patents Rules, 1908, r 99)

(*g*) *Hesse v Stevenson* (1808), 3 Bos & P 565, *Blozam v Elare* (1827),

SECT 6
Assignment
and Devolu-
tion of
Patents.

Devolution
on death.

recover in respect of infringements, whether committed before or after the act of bankruptcy (*h*).

391 On the death of a patentee the patent vests in his personal representative, and the executor or administrator, as the case may be, may sue for and recover in respect of infringements committed during the lifetime of the deceased, provided the probate of the will or grant of letters of administration has been entered on the Register (*i*)

SUB SECT 7—Vesting Order

Vesting order

392 A patent being a chose in action (*h*), the court has jurisdiction (*l*) to make an order vesting the patent rights in such person as it may appoint (*m*)

SUB-SECT 8—Surrender of Patent to Crown

Intestacy of
patentee on
dissolution of
company

393 On the death of a patentee who dies intestate and without next of kin, or on the dissolution of a company which is the registered owner of a patent, the patent vests in the Crown (*n*).

SECT 7—Licences

SUB-SECT 1—Voluntary Licence

(1) *Nature*

Who may be
licensors

394 A licence to work and use a patent (*o*) may be granted by

6 B & C 169, *M'Alpine v Mangnall* (1846), 3 C B 496, and see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 161. A patent granted to a bankrupt before his discharge vests in the trustee (*Hesse v Stevenson* (1808), 3 Bos & P 565)

(*h*) *Bloxam v Elsee* (1827), 6 B & C 169. In an action for infringement and for an account of profits against a bankrupt the trustee may be made a defendant under R S C, Ord 17, r 4, and the amount of profits therein found due is a provable debt in the bankruptcy (*Watson v Holliday* (1882), 20 Ch D 780, and see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 136)

(*i*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), ss 37, 71. As to the death of a person possessed of an invention without having made application for a patent, see *ibid*, s 43, title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, pp 227, 228

(*k*) See *Steers v Rogers*, [1893] A C 232

(*l*) Under the Trustee Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict 53), s 35, see title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES

(*m*) *Re Heath's Patent* (1912), 29 R P C 389, 56 Sol Jo 538, *per* SWINFEN EADY, J (where the grantee of the patent had gone abroad and could not be found), compare *Re Taylor's Agreement Trusts*, [1904] 2 Ch 737

(*n*) Treasury Solicitor Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 18), Intestates Estates Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict c 71) and see titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, p 158, DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, p 30. A purchaser of a patent from the liquidators of a company which is the registered owner of a patent should be careful to obtain the execution of the assignment before dissolution of the company (*Re Taylor's Agreement Trusts*, *supra*). It would appear that a patent merges as soon as the legal interest vests in the Crown (*ibid*, *per* BUCKLEY, J, at p 742, compare *Re Higginson and Dean, Ex parte A-G*, [1899] 1 Q B 325)

(*o*) As to the meaning of "patent," see p 127, *ante*. The licence may be in respect of an invention for which a patent has been applied for, but which has not yet been granted (*Otto v. Singer* (1889), 7 R P C 7; 6 T. L. R. 52).

the patentee (a), or by one of several co-owners (b), or by the mortgagee of a patent (c)

SECT. 7.
Licences.

395. A licence may be express or implied, revocable or irrevocable (d), assignable or not assignable (e), or general, limited, or exclusive

Nature of
licences.

A licence is implied from an unconditional sale of a patented article which gives the purchaser the right to use it in any way he chooses (f)

A licence may be limited either as to time or place (g), or as to the manufacture or use alone of an article (h), or as to the use in a particular manner (i)

An exclusive licence is a licence whereby the patentee covenants to grant no licences other than to the licensee during the term of the licence (k), and it may be limited as to time or place

(a) The power to grant licences is given by the grant of the letters patent (Patents Rules, 1908, rr 49, 50, Form A, Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, p 167, and see *ibid*, Vol XVI, p 494 For forms of agreement for licences, see *ibid*, Vol X, pp 115 *et seq*, and for forms of licence, see *ibid*, pp 139 *et seq*)

(b) The power of a co owner to grant a licence without the consent of the other co owners depends in each case on the words in the patent (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 37, compare *Mathers v Green* (1865), 1 Ch App 29, *Powell v Head* (1879), 12 Ch D 686) It would seem that a co owner must account for the profits made by granting a licence (*Mathers v Green*, *supra*), and see p 187, *ante*

(c) In an action for redemption, a mortgagee is liable to account for royalties made by granting a licence as being profits made by him as mortgagee in possession (*Steers v Rogers* (1892), 9 R P C 177, C A [1892] 2 Ch 13, affirmed (1893), 10 R P C 245, H L, [1893] A C 232), and see title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, p 199, note (u)

(d) See p 195, *post*

(e) See note (g), p 195, *post*

(f) *National Phonograph Co of Australia, Ltd v Menck*, [1911] A C 336, P C, following *Betts v Willmott* (1871), 6 Ch App 239, *Incandescent Gas Light Co v Cantelo* (1895), 12 R P C 262, 11 T L R 381 In order to bind a purchaser, any restrictions must be brought to his mind at the time of the sale (*Incandescent Gas Light Co v Cantelo*, *supra*), and, as to estoppel, see title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, p 418

(g) *Société Anonyme des Manufactures de Glaces v Tilghman's Patent Sand Blast Co* (1883), 25 Ch D 1, C A

(h) *Basset v Graydon* (1897), 14 R P C 701, H L A full licence to use and exercise gives the purchaser a general licence, as if the words "make, use, exercise and vend" had been included (*Dunlop Pneumatic Tyre Co v North British Rubber Co* (1904), 21 R P C 161, C A, *per* STIRLING, L J, at p 183) Under a licence to manufacture and sell, a licensee is entitled to manufacture by his agent, who may be either an English or a foreign agent (*ibid*)

(i) *Société Anonyme pour la Fabrication d'Appareils d'Eclairage v Midland Lighting Co and Altendorf and Wright* (1897), 14 R P C 419

(k) An exclusive licence may be an assignment if it is irrevocable and imposes obligations both on the grantor and grantee, and if there is no clause reserving to the grantor the right to sue for infringements (*Guyot v Thomson* (1894), 11 R P C 541, C A, *per* LINDLEY, L J, at p 554, [1894] 3 Ch 388; compare *Heap v Hartley* (1888), 5 R P C 603, *per* BRISFORD, V-C, at p 608, affirmed (1889), 6 R P C 495, C A, 42 Ch D 461) As to the incidents of a licence coupled with an interest, see and compare titles DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS, Vol X, p 362, LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 338, 339, MINES, MINERALS, AND QUARRIES, Vol XX, p 568, REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

SECT 7

Licences.

Crown in
same position
as licensee.

396 The Crown has power to use any invention on such terms as may be settled by the Treasury, either by agreement or after hearing the parties, and is in the same position as an ordinary licensee (*l*)

(*u*) *Formalities*

Form.

397 A licence should be granted by deed (*m*), but may be granted by an agreement either in writing not under seal (*n*) or by word of mouth (*o*). It may be entered in the Register (*p*), and must be stamped (*q*)

Usual
provisions.

398 It is usual for the licensor to covenant that the patent is valid so far as his acts or omissions are concerned (*r*), that he has power to grant the licence, and that if he grants licences to other persons on more favourable terms the licensee shall have the benefit of such

(*l*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 29. The Crown may act by any Government department, their agents, contractors or others (*ibid*), but contractors who manufacture and supply a patented article without a licence, in answer to a tender by a Government department, are not Government contractors unless they act under a contract with a Government department (*Dixon v London Small Arms Co* (1876), 1 App Cas 632). The patentee's remedy is by petition of right (*Feather v R* (1865), 6 B & S 257), see title CROWN PRACTICE, Vol X, pp 28 *et seq*

(*m*) The grant of letters patent provides that no person shall use the invention without the licence of the patentee under his hand and seal, but this must be read with the proviso that nothing in the patent shall prevent the granting of licences in such manner and for such considerations as they may by law be granted (Patents Form A, see *Chanter v Dewhurst* (1844), 12 M & W 823)

(*n*) The court will uphold an agreement in writing if the licensee has received benefit from it and has worked or used the patented article under the agreement (*Chanter v Dewhurst, supra*. *Post Card Automatic Supply Co v Samuel* (1889), 6 R P C 560). In the case of an executory agreement made subject to the execution of a formal deed, the parties to the agreement, when they have altered their position, are in equity in the same position as if the deed had been executed (*Post Card Automatic Supply Co v Samuel, supra*, *Tweedale v Howard and Bullough, Ltd* (1896), 13 R P C 522), and see title SPECIFIC PERFORMANCE

(*o*) The court will likewise uphold a parol agreement under which the licensee has received benefit or has worked or used the patented article (*Crossley v Dixon* (1863), 10 H L Cas 293, *Coppin v Lloyd, Coppin v Palmer* (1898), 15 R P C 373)

(*p*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), ss 28, 71 (2), Patents Rules, 1908, rr 85—91, see p 180, *ante*. Registration does not give a title to a licensee as against a prior assignee, who registers his assignment subsequent to the grant of the licence, if the licensee had notice of the assignment (*New Lion Tyre and Cycle Co v Spilsbury*, [1898] 2 Ch 137, 484, C A)

(*q*) *Smelling Co of Australia v Inland Revenue Commissioners*, [1897] 1 Q B 175, C A (if by deed, as a deed, see title REVENUE). An agreement in writing must be stamped before it can be received in evidence (*Wilson v Union Oil Mills Co* (1891), 9 R P C 57, 62, compare *Chanter v Johnson* (1845), 14 M & W 408, and see title REVENUE)

(*r*) It is usually provided in a licence that the licence shall cease and determine if the invention is declared invalid, see *Cheetham v Nuttall* (1893), 10 R P C 321. But if the judgment of the court declaring the invention to be invalid is subsequently reversed (by consent or otherwise) the licence is not terminated (*ibid*).

terms (a); and for the licensee to covenant that he will pay the royalties as they become due (b), render accounts, and if necessary allow the licensor to inspect the premises and machinery (c).

SECT. 7.
Licences.

(III) *Prohibited Conditions*

399 It is unlawful to insert in a contract for the sale or lease of, or licence to use or work any article or process protected by, a patent (d), a condition which prohibits a purchaser, lessee or licensee from using (e) any article, whether patented or not, or any patented process, supplied or owned by any person other than the seller, lessor, or licensor, or his nominees (f), or which requires the purchaser, lessee, or licensee to acquire from the seller, lessor, or licensor, or his nominees, any other article not protected by the patent (g). But this prohibitive provision does not apply if the seller, lessor, or licensor proves that, at the time the contract was entered into, the purchaser, lessee, or licensee had the option of purchasing the article or of obtaining a lease or licence on reasonable terms without such conditions, and the contract entitles the purchaser, lessee, or licensee to relieve himself of his liability to observe any such condition by giving three months' notice in writing to the other party (h). Such a contract may, in any case, be determined by three months' notice in writing at any time after the expiration of the patent under which the article was protected at the date of the contract (i).

Prohibited conditions as to use of patented articles.

(a) *Cheetham v Nuttall* (1893), 10 R P C 321

(b) The licence usually contains a proviso to the effect that default in payment by the licensee shall determine the licence

(c) As to conditions prohibited by statute, see the text, *infra*

(d) Every contract made after the 28th August, 1907, is subject to Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 38 (*ibid*, s 38 (1)), and every contract made before the 28th August, 1907, for the lease of or licence to use or work any patented article or process which, had the contract been made after the 28th August, 1907, would, by *ibid*, s 38, have been null and void, may be determined by three months' notice in writing, subject to the party giving notice paying such compensation as may be either agreed upon or awarded by an arbitrator appointed by the Board of Trade (*ibid*, s 38 (3)). As to contracts in restraint of trade, see title TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS

(e) But a condition is not void because a person is prohibited from selling any goods other than those of a particular person (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 38 (5) (a))

(f) A lessor or licensor may reserve to himself or his nominees the right to supply new parts in order to put or keep the article in repair (*ibid*, s 38 (5) (d)). As to repairs amounting to infringement, see p 212, *post*

(g) *Ibid*, s 38 (1) (a), (b)

(h) The person giving notice must pay such compensation as may be either agreed upon or awarded (*ibid*, s 38 (1) (ii))

(i) *Ibid*, s 38 (2). This applies to every contract made either before or after the 28th August, 1907, but, in the case of a contract made before the 28th August, 1907, the party giving notice is liable to pay compensation (*ibid*). The insertion in a contract made after the 28th August, 1907, of a void condition is a good defence to an action for infringement (*ibid*, s 38 (4)). Nothing in *ibid*, s 38, is to affect any independent right of determining a contract (*ibid*, s 38 (5) (c))

H

SECT 7

Licences

Right to sue
Estoppel.

(iv) Rights and Obligations of Licensee

400 A licensee suing for infringement must join the licensor as a party to the proceedings (j)

A licensee by deed cannot during the term of the licence (k) dispute the validity of the patent (l) unless the licensor has expressly warranted validity (m), but he may do so if the agreement is not under seal and he has not actually used the invention (n), or if he is the equitable assignee of an exclusive licence (o), and he is in any case entitled to dispute the ambit of the licensor's invention,

(j) *Heap v Hailley* (1889), 42 Ch D 461, C A, per FRY, I. J., at p 470. As to the right of an exclusive licensee to sue alone, see *Renard v Levinstein* (1865), 2 Hem & M 628, *Cochrane & Co v Martins (Birmingham), Ltd* (1911), 28 R P C 284, and see p 191, ante. In *Heap v Hailley, supra*, PAGL WOOD, V C, held that where the owners and licensees of a patent were co plaintiffs, and the owners assigned their interest, the licensees were not prevented from obtaining the relief to which they were entitled and maintaining the suit alone. But it should be noted that the new owners were added to the suit as defendants. In *Cochrane & Co v Martins (Birmingham), Ltd, supra*, it was held that under an exclusive licence the patentee's title is given to the licensee for the purpose of action. The defendant, however, had withdrawn his plea that the licensee was not entitled to sue. A licence coupled with a grant is different, since it conveys an interest in property.

(k) *Crossley v Dixon* (1863), 10 H L C 293, *Rodgers v Mullinor* (1893), 10 R P C 21. The licensee may, however, covenant not to dispute the validity of the patent even after termination of the licence, in which case his only defence in an action by the licensor is non infringement (*Walls v Frierett Press Manufacturing Co* (1910), 27 R P C 400, 718 C A). Subject to such a condition a licensee on the determination of the licence is as much at liberty to dispute the validity of the patent as the rest of His Majesty's subjects (*Armann v Lund* (1874), L R 18 Eq 330, see title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, p 413, note (b)).

(l) *Hall v Conder* (1857), 2 C B (N S) 22, *Smith v Scott* (1859), 6 C B (N S) 771, *Clark v Adie* (No 2) (1877), 2 App Cas 423, *Ashworth v Iaw* (1890), 7 R P C 231. The grant of a licence does not warrant the validity of the patent (*Hall v Conder, supra*), nor the fitness of the articles sold under it, for the purposes of such sale (*Chanter v Hopkins* (1838), 4 M & W 399, and see *Monforts v Marsden* (1895), 12 R P C 266). As to sale of goods generally, see title SALE OF GOODS. A licensee may be estopped from denying the validity of the patent by way of recital (*Cutler v Lower* (1848), 11 Q B 973, *Bourman v Taylor* (1834), 2 Ad & El 278, compare *Hayne v Maltby* (1789) 3 Term Rep 438), or by implied covenant (*Rand v Nelson* (1842), 8 Cl & Fin 726 H L, *Hills v Laming* (1853), 9 Exch 256, *Noton v Brook* (1861) 7 H & N 499, *Hall v Conder, supra*, at p 53, *Trotman v Wood* (1864) 16 C B (N S) 479, *Laidet v Hammond Electric Light and Power Supply Co*, [1883] W N 96), or by user under the licence (*James v Pinner* (1856), 6 E & B 930, *Besserman v Wright* (1858), 6 W R 719, *Crossley v Dixon* (1863), 10 H L Cas 293 (user under a licence granted verbally)) and see title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, pp 366, et seq 413. Where an agreement to grant a licence guarantees the validity of the patent, and the person to whom the licence is to be granted commences to manufacture before the actual grant of the licence, he is not estopped from denying the validity of the patent (*Henderson v Shiel* (1906), 24 R P C 108). But it would seem that if the licence had actually been granted the doctrine of estoppel would apply (*Henderson v Shiel, supra*, per PARKER, J., at pp 115, 116).

(m) *Wilson v Union Oil Mills Co, Ltd* (1892), 9 R P C 57,

(n) *Chanter v Leese* (1838), 4 M & W 295

(o) *Pidding v Franks* (1849), 1 Mac & G 56

and to show that what he has done is outside the limit covered by the patent (*p*)

SECT. 7.
Licences.

(v) Assignment

401 A licence may be assigned (*q*), and where a patentee accepts royalties from the assignee he may be estopped from denying the validity of the assignment (*r*) Assignment of licence.

(vi) Revocation

402 The terms of a licence may make it revocable (*a*), but, in the absence of such terms, and where it is clear that the intention of the parties to the agreement is that the licence should be irrevocable, neither party can terminate the licence without the other party's consent (*b*) By express terms

A mere licence is determinable at pleasure (*c*), but a licence imposing obligations on both parties (*d*), or coupled with an interest, is not revocable at will (*e*) By implication

(*p*) *Crossley v Dixon* (1863), 10 H L Cas 293, *Clark v Adie* (No 2) (1877), 2 App Cas 423 *Couchman v Greener* (1884), 1 R P C 197, 11 L J, *Useful Patents Co v Rylands* (1885), 2 R P C 255, *Siemens v Taylor* (1892), 9 R P C 393. A licensee may likewise contest the existence of the invention (*Munhead v Commercial Cable Co* (1894), 11 R P C 317, 12 R P C 39). Inspection may be ordered against a licensee where the machine, the subject matter of the dispute, is being worked either by the licensor or licensee, unless the licensee objects, the court has no control over a licensee who is not a party to the suit (*Gorm Milling Co v Robinson* (1885), 3 R P C 11, *per KAY, J.*, at p 14).

(*q*) A licence is not really assignable (*Bower v Hodges* (1853), 22 L J (C P) 194, *per JERVIS, C J.*, at p 198 cited with approval in *Lawson v Macpherson (Donald) & Co, Ltd* (1897), 14 R P C 696), but a licence granted to A and his assigns shows an intention not to limit the licence to the licensee exclusively, and acts as an estoppel, giving an assignee a good defence against the original licensor (*Bower v Hodges, supra*, *Lawson v Macpherson (Donald) & Co Ltd, supra*). A licensee may convert his business (including the benefit of the licence) into a limited company (*Bown v Humber & Co* (1888), 6 R P C 9), and to that extent a licence may also be said to be assignable (*Lawson v Macpherson (Donald) & Co, Ltd, supra*). For a form of mortgage of a licence, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol VIII, p 693.

(*r*) *Lawson v Macpherson (Donald) & Co, Ltd, supra*. As to assignment of a patent, see pp 183 *et seq, ante*, and as to estoppel, see notes (*l*), (*h*), p 194, *ante*. As to royalties, see p 196, *post*.

(*a*) A clause giving a power of revocation to one party only does not give the other party power to determine the licence (*Guyot v Thomson* (1894), 11 R P C 541, C A, [1894] 3 Ch 388, (*Guyot v Thomson* (1897), 14 R P C 249). For a form of notice of revocation, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol X, pp 165, 166. As to the effect of a clause that the licence shall determine if the patent is declared invalid, see note (*r*), p 192, *ante*.

(*b*) *Kenny's Patent Buttonholing Co v Somervell* (1878), 26 W R 787.

(*c*) *Wood v Leadbitter* (1845), 13 M & W 838, *Crossley v Dixon* (1863), 10 H L Cas 293, followed in *Redges v Mulliner* (1892), 10 R P C 21, (*Coppin v Lloyd, Coppin v Palmer* (1898), 15 R P C 373, but, where a licence revocable at will has been revoked by one of the parties, the circumstances may give the other party a cause of action for breach of contract (*Kerrison v Smith*, [1897] 2 Q B 445).

(*d*) *Guyot v Thomson*, [1894] 3 Ch 388, C A. A licence to use a patent coupled with obligations on the grantor and grantees is not necessarily a licence coupled with an interest (*ibid*, *per LINDSEY, L J.*, at pp 397, 398).

(*e*) *Wood v Leadbitter, supra*, *Ward v Livesey* (1887), 5 R P C 102.

SECT 7

(vii) *Royalties***Licences.**

Effect of
failure to pay
royalties.

403 A licensee who fails to pay the royalties reserved by the licence is liable to an action by the licensor for their recovery (*f*), and it is no defence that the patent has been declared void unless there was a covenant by the licensor to the effect that he had power to grant the licence and that the patent was valid (*g*). The only defence open to the licensee is that he was induced to take the licence by fraud or misrepresentation (*h*).

A licensee may be entitled to recover royalties he has paid after and in ignorance of a breach of covenant by the licensor (*a*).

A licence coupled with an interest is liable to forfeiture if the conditions are broken (*Ward v Livesey* (1887), 5 R P C 102), in which case the claim to take the benefit of the forfeiture and to assert the termination of the licence need only be in writing, although the licence is under seal (*Ward v Livesey, supra*, and see note (*k*), p 191, *ante*). It would appear that a revocation of a licence under seal, other than by forfeiture, must be by deed (*Ward v Livesey, supra*), and see title DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS, Vol X, p 362.

(*f*) A licensor, who is successful in such an action, may obtain an account against the licensee, but an account is not granted unless there are profits to account for, and unless all the parties interested are before the court (*Bergmann v Macmillan* (1881), 17 Ch D 423). Interest may be payable by the licensee if the royalties in arrears are a sum certain, payable at a certain time fixed definitely by the instrument itself (*Muirhead v Commercial Cable Co* (1894), 11 R P C 317, *per* KENNEDY, J, at p 347, following *Merchant Shipping Co v Armitage* (1873), L R 9 Q B 99, Lx Ch, *Duncombe v Brighton Club Co* (1875), L R 10 Q B 371, *per* BRACKBURN, J, at p 373), and see title MONEY AND MONEY LENDING, Vol XXI, pp 38, 39.

(*g*) *Grover and Baker Sewing Machine Co v Millard* (1862), 8 Jur (N S) 713. A licensee under a licence without such a clause, and for a certain term, is bound to pay royalties until the term expires, although the patent has been declared void (*African Gold Recovery Co v Sheba Gold Mining Co* (1897), 14 R P C 660). In the absence of express covenant to maintain the patent, there is no obligation on a licensee to pay the fees necessary for that purpose (*Re Railway and Electric Appliances Co* (1888), 38 Ch D 597, and see note (*o*), p 185, *ante*).

(*h*) *Jandus Arc Lamp and Electric Co v Johnson* (1900), 17 R P C 361, and see *Hall v Conder* (1857), 2 C B (N S) 22, *Laves v Purser* (1856), 6 E & B 930, title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, pp 653 *et seq*. A licensee cannot seek to dispute the validity of the patent under a plea of misrepresentation (*Jandus Arc Lamp and Electric Co v Johnson, supra, per* FARWELL, J, at p 373), but where a licence is granted subject to an inquiry as to the validity of the patent the licensee can, in an action for royalties, dispute the validity of the patent (*Wilson v Union Oil Mills Co* (1891), 9 R P C 57).

(*a*) The licensee's right to recover is a question of construction as to what is the meaning of the parties at the time in the particular case (*Mills v Carson* (1892), 10 R P C 9, C A, *per* Lord ESHER, M R, at p 15, *Lines v Usher* (1897), 14 R P C 206, C A, *per* Lord ESHER, M R, at p 209, affirming the judgment of CHARLES, J, S C (1896), 13 R P C 685). In *Lines v Usher, supra*, the licensor undertook to protect and defend his patent during the continuance of the agreement from infringements. The court held that to mean that the licensor would do all that was necessary to maintain and keep the patent alive, and that a failure to pay renewal fees was a breach of this agreement, and that the result was, not damages, but forfeiture of the royalties payable under it (S C, 14 R P C, *per* LOPES, L J, at p 210). In *Mills v Carson, supra* (distinguished in *Lines v Usher*, 13 R P C, *supra, per* CHARLES, J, at p 689), it was held that although the failure to pay renewal fees was a breach of the covenant for

SUB-SECT 2—*Compulsory Licence.*

(1) *Petition to Board of Trade*

SECT 7
Licences.

404 Any person interested may present a petition to the Board of Trade alleging that the reasonable requirements of the public with respect to a patented invention have not been satisfied, and praying for the grant of a compulsory licence, or, in the alternative, for the revocation of the patent (b)

Allegation in petition.

The reasonable requirements of the public are not deemed to have been satisfied if—

Grounds upon which allegation based.

(1) By reason of the default of the patentee to manufacture, to an adequate extent and to supply on reasonable terms, the patented article, or any parts thereof which are necessary for its efficient working, or to carry on the patented process to an adequate extent, or to grant licences on reasonable terms, any existing trade or industry, or the establishment of any new trade or industry, in the United Kingdom is unfairly prejudiced, or the demand for the patented article or the article produced by the patented process is not reasonably met, or

(2) Any trade or industry in the United Kingdom is unfairly prejudiced by the conditions attached by the patentee to the purchase, hire, or use of the patented article or to the using or working of the patented process (c)

(u) *Proceedings before Board of Trade*

405 The petition and an examined copy of it must be left at the Patent Office with a request on the prescribed form, and must be accompanied by affidavits or statutory declarations in proof of the allegations contained in the petition, together with any other documentary evidence in support (d) Copies of all these documents must be delivered to the patentee and to any other person who is alleged to have made default (d) These persons may give notice of opposition to the petition, by leaving the prescribed form at the Patent Office, and may, within fourteen days after being invited to do so by the Board, leave their affidavits or declarations in answer, delivering copies to the petitioner, who may reply to them in the same way within fourteen days, confining himself to matters strictly in

Evidence in support of petition

quiet enjoyment, yet on the construction of the agreement the covenant for quiet enjoyment and the covenant to pay royalties were not sufficiently co extensive to make the one condition precedent to the other, and, further, where there are express conditions on which payment is to cease, the court does not infer other conditions not in the agreement (*Mills v Carson* (1892), 10 R P C 9, C A, per Lord ESHER, M R, at p 15)

(b) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 24 (1)

(c) *Ibid*, s 24 (5) Such a petition, which must be made on Patent Form No 20, must show clearly the nature of the petitioner's interest and the grounds upon which he claims to be entitled to relief, and must state in detail the circumstances of the case, the terms upon which he asks that an order may be made and the purport of such order, and the name and address of the patentee and of any other person who is alleged in the petition to have made default (Patents Rules, 1908, r 68) For a form of notice to the patentee of intention to present such a petition, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol X, p 165

(d) Patents Rules, 1908, r. 69 The request is made on Patents Form No 19 (fee £1)

SECT 7.
Licences

Powers of
the Board of
Trade

Reference to
the court

reply (e) No further evidence may be left except by the leave or requisition of the Board (f)

406 The Board of Trade, if not satisfied that a *prima facie* case has been made out for proceeding further with the petition, has power to dismiss it (g) If so satisfied, the Board may first attempt to bring about an agreement between the parties (h), failing which agreement it must refer the petition to the court (i), with all documentary evidence, and with certified copies of all entries in the Register relating to the patent in question and any other information which it appears to the Board may be of service to the court in ascertaining what persons should be made parties to the proceedings The Board must give notice to the parties that the petition has been referred to the court (j)

(m) *Powers of the Court*

Hearing

407 The court hears the petition so referred (k), and, at the hearing, the patentee and any other person claiming an interest in the patent as exclusive licensee or otherwise are made parties to the proceeding, and the law officer, or counsel representing him, is entitled to appear and be heard (l)

Order of the
court

408 If it is proved to the satisfaction of the court that the reasonable requirements of the public have not been satisfied, the patentee may be ordered to grant licences on such terms as the court may think just, or, if the court is of opinion that the reasonable requirements of the public will not be satisfied by the grant of licences, the patent may be revoked by order of the court, but such order is not to be made before the expiration of three years from the date of the patent, or if the patentee gives satisfactory reasons for his default (m)

Effect of
order

409 An order of the court directing the grant of a licence, without prejudice to any other method of enforcement, operates as if it were embodied in a deed granting a licence and made between the parties to the proceedings (n)

SECT 8—Term of Patent

SUB-SECT 1 Duration of Original Grant

Term of
patent

410 The term limited in every patent for the duration thereof is, unless otherwise expressly provided, fourteen years from its date (o)

(e) Patents Rules, 1908, r 70 The Board may alter the times prescribed for the hearing of evidence upon terms and upon notice to the parties interested (*ibid*)

(f) *Ibid*, r 71

(g) *Ibid*, r 72

(h) *Ibid*, r 73

(i) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 24 (2)

(j) Patents Rules, 1908, r 74

(k) See the text, *supra* As to setting down and the hearing of the petition, see R S C, Ord 53A, r 7 (c), (d)

(l) Patents and Designs Act 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 24 (4), and see R S C, Ord 53A, r 7 (b) No evidence may be given upon any issues other than those raised upon the original petition (*ibid*, r 7 (a))

(m) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 24 (3)

(n) *Ibid*, s 24 (6) As to the operation of such a deed, see pp 194, 195, *ante*

(o) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 17 (1)

SUB-SECT 2—*Extension of Term*

SECT. 8

Term of Patent.

411 A patentee may (p), after advertising, in manner provided (q) by Rules of the Supreme Court (r), his intention to do so,

As to the maintenance of a patent during these years, see pp 181 *et seq*, ante

Application by petition to the court.

(p) The petitioner may be the administratrix of the patentee (*Re Dounton's Patent* (1839), 1 Web Pat Cas 565, P C, *Re Heath's Patent* (1853), 8 Moo P C C 217), or his executor (*Re Bodmer's Patent* (1849), 6 Moo P C C 468, *Re Davies's Patent* (1893), 11 R P C 27, P C), or an assignee (*Re Morgan's Patent* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 737, P C, *Ledsam v Russell* (1848), 1 H L Cas 687, *Re Hardy's Patent* (1849), 6 Moo P C C 441, *Re Pitman's Patent* (1871), 8 Moo P C C (N S) 293, 297), a company (*Re Napier's Patent* (1861), 13 Moo P C C 543), or its trustees (*Re Pettit Smith's Patent* (1850), 7 Moo P C C 133), the agent for a foreign inventor (*Re Newton's Patent* (1861), 14 Moo P C C 156), the importer of a foreign invention (*Re Claridge's Patent* (1851), 7 Moo P C C 394), a mortgagee applying with the patentee (*Re Bovill's Patent* (1863), 1 Moo P C C (N S) 348, *Re Church's Patents* (1886), 3 R P C 95, 100, P C), or an exclusive licensee (*Re Shone's Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 438, 440, P C). For definition of "patentee," see Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 93. The application of a company formed for taking over the invention as a speculative undertaking will, however, be refused (*Re Sillar's Patent* (1882), 1 Goodeve's Patent Cases, 581, *Re Duncan v Wilson's Patent* (1884), 1 R P C 257, P C, *Re Norton's Patent* (1863), 1 Moo P C C (N S) 339, *Re Hopkinson's Patent* (1896), 14 R P C 5, P C, *Re Clark's Patent* (1899), 16 R P C 431, P C).

(q) The court may excuse non compliance with any of the rules, and may give such directions as may be just and expedient (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3(a)). For cases in which rules have been relaxed, see note (r), *infra*. Non compliance with any provision of the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), cannot be excused, see *Re Adam's Patent* (1898), 16 R P C 1, P C.

(r) R S C, Ord 53A, r 3, commented on in *Re Johnson's Patent*, [1908] 2 Ch 487. A party intending to apply by petition must give public notice by advertising three times in the *London Gazette* and once at least in a London daily newspaper the price of which is not less than one penny (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3(a)), and if his principal place of business is situated in the United Kingdom, fifteen miles or more from Charing Cross, he must also advertise once at least in a local newspaper circulating in the district where such place of business is situated. If he has no such place of business, then if he carries on the manufacture of anything made under his specification in the United Kingdom, fifteen miles or more from Charing Cross, he must advertise once at least in a local newspaper circulating in the district where he carries on such manufacture. If he has no such place of business and carries on no such manufacture, then if he resides in the United Kingdom, fifty miles or more from Charing Cross, he must advertise once at least in a newspaper circulating in the district where he resides, see *ibid*, r 3(b), *Re London's Patent* (1897), 14 R P C 643, P C, *Re Poyser's Patent* (1907), 24 R P C 157, P C (where petitions were allowed to be presented before they had been advertised, on terms). In the case of a patentee residing abroad the advertisements should be inserted in newspapers circulating in the place of actual manufacture (*Re Derosne's Patent* (1844), 2 Web Pat Cas 1, 2, P C). The applicant must in his advertisements state the object of his petition and give notice of the day (i.e., an ordinary petition day not less than four weeks from the date of publication of the last of the advertisements in the *London Gazette*) on which he intends to apply to the court for a day to be fixed (hereinafter called "the appointed day" (see note (d), p 201, *post*)), before which the petition shall not be in the paper for hearing. Every advertisement must also state an address in the United Kingdom for service and give notice that notices of objection (see note (f), p. 201, *post*) must be duly lodged

SECT 8
Term of
Patent.

present a petition (s) to the court (t) praying that his patent may be extended for a further term, but such petition must be presented at least six months before the time limited for the expiration of the patent (a)

before the day named in the advertisements. A copy of such advertisements must be forwarded by the applicant to the solicitor to the Board of Trade when the first advertisement is sent to the *London Gazette*, and the Board of Trade thereupon causes such advertisement to be inserted in the three following issues of the Illustrated Official Journal (Patents) (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (b), (c))

(s) The petition must state fully everything with reference to the patent and the history of the matter, or it will be refused (*Re Putman's Patent* (1871), L R 4 P C 84, *Re Johnson's Patent* (*Willcox and Gibbs*) (1871), L R 4 P C 75, 83, *Re Ferranti's Patent* (1901), 18 R P C 518, P C, *Re Standfield's Patent* (1897), 15 R P C 17, P C), it must refer, where necessary, to prior or foreign patents (*Re Livel's Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 327, P C, *Re Henderson's Patent* (1901), 18 R P C 449, 453, 454, P C, *Re Putman's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Adair's Patent* (1881), 6 App Cas 176, P C, *Re Clark's Patent* (1870), 7 Moo P C C (N s) 255, *Re Johnson's Patent* (1908), 25 R P C 709, 728, 77 L J (C P) 737). *Uberrima fides* must be observed (*Re Horsey's Patent* (1884), 1 R P C 225, 226 P C). In special circumstances an amendment may be allowed (*Re Hutchinson's Patent* (1861), 14 Moo P C C 364). The petition must be accompanied by an affidavit as to publication of the advertisements referred to in note (r), p 199, *ante*. The statements contained in such affidavit may be disputed at the hearing of the petition (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (e)). The advertisements must be proved before the petition is tried (*Re Perkins' Patent* (1845), 2 Web Pat Cas 6, 8, P C).

(t) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 18. *I.e.*, a judge of the High Court selected by the Lord Chancellor for the purpose (*ibid.*, s 92 (2), see R S C, Ord 53A, r 1, Yearly Practice of the Supreme Court, 1912, p 754).

(a) But it should not be presented prematurely, for the profits accruing at the close of the life of the patent may materially affect the question of extension (*Re Macintosh's Patent* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 739, n, where, the petition having been presented eighteen months before the expiry of the patent, the application was ordered to stand over). Failure to present the petition before the six months commences is fatal (*Re Adam's Patent* (1898), 16 R P C 1, P C, *Re Jablockhoff's Patent* (1891), 8 R P C 281, P C, but see *Russell v Ledsam* (1848), 1 H L Cas 687). A petition must be presented within one week from the publication of the last of the advertisements in the *London Gazette*, and a copy of the petition must within the same time be furnished to the solicitor to the Board of Trade. The petition is made returnable for the day named in the advertisements (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (d)). In *Re Hutchinson's Patent*, *supra*, this rule was relaxed. In *Reece's Patent* (1881), Eng Rep Jan—Mar 1881, xiv, a supplementary statement was allowed to be delivered before the hearing to correct mistakes in the petition. Presentation is effected by the original petition and a copy thereof being taken to Room 138, Chancery Registrar's Department. The original must be stamped £1. Two printed copies of the specification of the patent must be lodged with a copy of the petition (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (h)), documents and copies are lodged at the chambers of the judge (*ibid.*, r 3 (r)), as to service of documents, see *ibid.*, r 3 (x). The petitioner must also lodge, not less than three weeks before the appointed day, two copies of the balance sheet of expenditure and receipts relating to the patent in question which must be proved on oath at the hearing (as to the accounts, see note (n), p 203, *post*). He must also at the same time furnish three copies of the specification and of the accounts to the solicitor to the Board of Trade, and on receiving two days' notice must give the solicitor to the Board of Trade reasonable facilities for inspecting and taking extracts from the books by reference to which he proposes to verify the balance sheet or from which

Notice may be given to the Court of objection to the extension (b)

SECT. 8.
Term of
Patent.

Notice of
objection.

Day for
hearing
Parties to the
proceedings

412 Upon the day named in the advertisements (c) the petition appears in the court list, and the petitioner applies to the Court to fix the appointed day (d)

413 The patentee (e) and any person who has given notice of objection (f) must be made parties to the proceeding (g), and the

the materials for the balance sheet have been derived (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (i)) Persons who have delivered particulars of objections are entitled to copies of the accounts at their own expense (*ibid*, r 3 (q))

(b) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 18 (1), (2) As to procedure on such notice being given, see note (f), *infra*, and note (g), p 202, *post* Objection may be taken on the ground of the patentee's neglect to bring an action for infringement (*Re Simister's Patent* (1842), 1 Web Pat Cas 721, 724, P C, *Re Pinkus' Patent* (1848), 12 Jur 234, P C), or on the ground of non introduction of the patent (*Re Patterson's Patent* (1849), 6 Moo P C C 469, *Re Norton's Patent* (1863), 1 Moo P C C (N s) 339) Extension may be refused where an invention only succeeds on subsequent improvements (*Re Woodcroft's Patent* (1841), 3 Moo P C C 171; *Re Bell's Patent* (1846), 10 Jur 363, P C), or where a patentee has granted an exclusive licence which is contrary to public policy (*Re Cardwell's Patent* (1856), 10 Moo P C C 488), or on the ground that extension would be contrary to the interests of the public (*Re McInnes' Patent* (1868), 5 Moo P C C (N s) 72) A *prima facie* case as to the validity of the patent must be made out to justify a grant of extension (*Re Erard's Patent* (1835), 1 Web Pat Cas 557, P C, *Re Johnson's Patent* (1908), 25 R P C 709, 77 L J (CH) 737, *Re Kay's Patent* (1839), 3 Moo P C C 24), for a patent which is clearly bad will not be extended (*Re Pinkus' Patent*, *supra*, *Re Betts' Patent* (1862), 1 Moo P C C (N s) 49, *Re Hills' Patent* (1863), 1 Moo P C C (N s) 258, 262, *Re Burlinghame, Innes, and Lee's Patent* (1898), 15 R P C 195, P C, *Re Stewart's Patent* (1885), 2 R P C 7), but in cases of doubt extension may be allowed (*Re Woodcroft's Patent* (1846), 2 Web Pat Cas 18, 30, P C, *Re Betts' Patent*, *supra*, *Re Hills' Patent*, *supra*, *Re Cocking's Patent* (1885), 2 R P C 151, P C, *Re Stewart's (Duncan) Patent* (1885), 3 R P C 7, P C, *Re Lyon's Patent* (1894), 11 R P C 537, P C) The fact that an action with reference to the validity of the patent is pending is no objection to an extension being granted (*Re Kay's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Henderson's Patent* (1853), 8 Moo P C C 217, *Re Lane Fox's Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 411, P C)

(c) See note (r), p 199, *ante*

(d) R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (f) As to the meaning of "appointed day," see note (r), p 199, *ante* The petitioner must, on the appointed day being fixed, give public notice of the same by advertising once at least in the *London Gazette* (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (g))

(e) The patentee must come to the court prepared to show that he has done his utmost to push the invention and get it launched on the market (*Re Stoney's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 518, 523, P C, *Re Henderson's Patent* (1901), 18 R P C 449, P C, *Re Johnson's Patent* (No 2), [1909] 1 Ch 114, *per* PARKER, J, at p 125)

(f) Any person desirous of opposing the petition must lodge a notice to that effect, giving an address in the United Kingdom for service He must also serve upon the petitioner a copy of such notice (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 18 (2)) Such notices must be lodged and served before the day named in the advertisements as that on which he, the petitioner, intends to apply for the appointed day to be fixed (see note (r), p 199, *ante*) (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (j)) The petitioner must serve a copy of his petition upon each person giving such notice (*ibid*, r 3 (k)), and each such person must within

(g) For note (g) see next page.

SPEC 8
Term of
Patent.

Comptroller has the right, and may be directed by the court, to appear (h) and be heard (i)

The Comptroller is not required to give notice of the grounds of any objection he may think fit to place before the court (j).

Considera-
tions for the
court

414 The court, in considering (k) its decision (l), has regard to the

three weeks after such service lodge two copies and serve upon the petitioner one copy, and lodge with the solicitor to the Board of Trade three copies in writing of particulars of the objections upon which he intends to rely against the granting of the prayer of the petition (*ibid*, r 3 (l)). This Rule gives to the court considerable latitude as to the particulars that must be given, and the considerations that apply are those applicable to pleadings generally (*Re Johnson's Patent*, [1908] 2 Ch 487), see title PLEADING, pp 417 *et seq*, post. Failure to lodge and serve such particulars of objections is deemed to be abandonment of opposition, and no person who has delivered such particulars of objections shall be entitled to oppose the granting of the prayer of the petition on any grounds not stated in such particulars (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (m), (n)).

(g) Any person who has lodged notice of opposition is entitled to be heard on the application to fix the appointed day, and every person who has lodged and served particulars of objection must be served by the petitioner with notice of the appointed day (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (o)).

(h) Whether the petition is opposed or not the Attorney General should, it seems, appear to watch the progress of the case made for the petitioner (*Re Erard's Patent* (1835), 1 Web Pat Cas 557, n).

(i) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 18 (3). The petition must not be entered in the list for trial until the expiration of the time limited for the lodging and service of the particulars of objections, and shall only be entered for trial on the lodging of an affidavit on behalf of the petitioner that all persons who have served him with notice of intention to oppose the prayer of his petition have been served with copies of the petition. The petition is entered for trial in Room 136, Chancery Registrar's Department. The petition, subject to any direction of the court to the contrary, is set down in the same manner as if it had been an assigned witness action, and shall be marked in the witness list not before the of 190, being the appointed day (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (p)). As to the meaning of "appointed day," see note (r), p 190, *ante*.

(j) R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (t).

(k) The court does not on the hearing determine the validity or invalidity of the patent (*Re Stewart's (Duncan) Patent* (1885), 3 R P C 7, 9, 10, P C; *Re Stoney's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 518, 521, 522, P C). nor will it consider whether the patent has lapsed (*Re Dolbear's Patent* (1896), 13 R P C 205). As to the admission of evidence at the hearing, see R S C, Ord 53A, r 21.

(l) The petitioner, in order to succeed, must make out a strong case both of hardship and upon the utility of the invention (*Re Erard's Patent* (1835), 1 Web Pat Cas 557, P C). A very special case showing the novelty, utility, and merit must be proved and that the remuneration due to the applicant has either failed altogether or has been very disproportionate to the merits of the invention (*Re Honiball's Patent* (1855), 9 Moo P C C 378, 393, *Re Downton's Patent* (1839), 1 Web Pat Cas 565, P C; *Re Jones's Patent* (1840), 1 Web Pat Cas 577, P C; *Re Morgan's Patent* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 737, P C; *Re Derosne's Patent* (1844), 2 Web Pat Cas 1, P C; *Re Pinkus' Patent* (1848), 12 Jur 234, P C; *Re Norton's Patent* (1863), 1 Moo P C C (N s) 339, 343, *Re McDougall's Patent* (1867), 5 Moo P C C (N s) 1, *Re Putman's Patent* (1871), L R 4 P C 84), and this applies even when the application is not opposed (*Re Perkins' Patent* (1845), 2 Web Pat Cas 6, 18, *Re Cardwell's Patent* (1856), 10 Moo P C C 488, 490). Extension will be granted if the patentee has sustained considerable loss either in connection with working the patent (*Re Swaine's Patent* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 559, P C; *Re Southworth's Patent* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 486, P C; *Re Derosne's Patent*, *supra*, or from litigation with reference to the patent

nature and merits (*m*) of the invention in relation to the public, to the profits (*n*) made by the patentee as such, and to all the circumstances of the case (*o*)

SECT 8
Term of
Patent.

Re Pettit Smith's Patent (1850), 7 Moo P C C 133. *Re Heath's Patent* (1853), 8 Moo P C C 217, or from the opposition of existing interests (*Re Stafford's Patent* (1838), 1 Web Pat Cas 563, P C, *Re Roberts's Patent* (1839), 1 Web Pat Cas 573, P C, and see note (*n*), *infra*), or from want of influence (*Payne's Patent* (1854), cited in Coryton's Laws of Letters Patent, p 220), or from the derangement of the labour market (*Re Napier's Patent* (1861), 13 Moo P C C 543). The grant of an extended term is anything but a matter of course (*Re Honiball's Patent* (1855), 9 Moo P C C 378, 393, *Re Jones's Patent* (1840), 1 Web Pat Cas 577, P C).

(*m*) There must be special merit (*Re Stoney's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 518, P C) the merits must be great (*Re Beanland's Patent* (1887), 4 R P C 489, 491), and must be proved (*Re Kelly's Patent* (1900), 17 R P C 476, P C), and merit differs in the circumstances, inasmuch as the inventor may have spent years of long and patient labour and of great and unaided ingenuity, or made his discovery by a happy accident or fortunate guess, or led up to it by earlier incomplete experiments (*Re Hills' Patent* (1863), 1 Moo P C C (N s) 258, 265). The necessary merit is not the ingenuity in giving the idea of the possibility of doing a thing, but the utility in the practical working of the invention (*Re Betts' Patent* (1862), 1 Moo P C C (N s) 49). The simplicity of an invention is a factor to be considered (*Re Muntz's Patent* (1846), 2 Web Pat Cas 113, 119, P C, *Re Hazeland's Patent* (1894), 11 R P C 467, 470, P C), but the merit of an importer is smaller than that of an inventor (*Re Soumes's Patent* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 729, 733), while that of a company which merely buys a patent for commercial purposes is none at all (*Electric Telegraph Co's Patent* (undated), cited 1 Moo P C C (N s) 346, P C, *Re Sillar's Patent* (1882), 1 Goodeve's Patent Cases, 581). Where parts of an invention have merit, extension may be allowed as to those particular parts (*Re Bodmer's Patent* (1853), 8 Moo P C C 282, *Re Lee's Patent* (1856), 10 Moo P C C 226, *Re Napier's Patent* (1881), 6 App Cas 174, P C, *Re Church's Patents* (1886), 3 R P C 95, P C, *Re Burlingham, Innes and Lee's Patent* (1898), 15 R P C 195, P C, *Re Lodge's Patent*, [1911] 2 Ch 46, 365); but where there is no merit at all the application fails (*Re Kelly's Patent* (1900), 17 R P C 476, P C). Inutility is a bar to the application being granted, strong evidence of which is that the invention has not been put into practical use (*Re Simister's Patent* (1842), 4 Moo P C C 164, *Re Woodcroft's Patent* (1846), 2 Web Pat Cas 18, 29, P C, *Re Bakewell's Patent* (1862), 15 Moo P C C 385, *Re Allan's Patent* (1867), 4 Moo P C C (N s) 443, *Re McDougal's Patent* (1867), 5 Moo P C C (N s) 1, *Re Herbert's Patent* (1867), 4 Moo P C C (N s) 300), but that fact may be rebutted by showing that it was due to the patentee being in pecuniary difficulties (*Re Wright's Patent* (1839), 1 Web Pat Cas 575, P C), or that there was only a limited market in view of the valuable nature of the patent (*Re Herbert's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Thompson's Patent* (1902), 19 R P C 565, 568, P C), or that the invention by its nature did not at once come into use (*Re Jones's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Currie and Immis' Patent* (1897), 15 R P C 63, P C, *Re Board's Patent* (1908), 25 R P C 537, P C), or that it was used abroad (*Re Hughes' Patent* (1879), 4 App Cas 174).

(*n*) Failure to keep account may be a ground for dismissing the petition (*Re Lawrence and Kennedy's Patent* (1910), 27 R P C 232). In estimating the profits, the patentee may deduct expenses caused by litigation (*Re Roberts's Patent*, *supra*, at p 575, *Re Kay's Patent* (1839), 1 Web Pat Cas 568, 572, P C, *Re Galloway's Patent* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 724, 729, P C, *Re Betts' Patent*, *supra*, and see note (*l*), p 202, *ante*) but the costs of settled actions may be disallowed (*Re Hills' Patent*, *supra*). He may deduct expenses caused by experiments (*Re Bate's Patent* (1836), 1 Web Pat Cas.

(*o*) For note (*o*) see next page.

SECT 8

Term of
Patent.Nature of
order.

If it appears that the patentee has been inadequately remunerated by his patent, the court may by order extend the term of the patent for a further term not exceeding seven, or, in exceptional cases, fourteen years, or may order the grant of a new patent for such term as may be specified in the order, with any restriction, conditions, and provisions the court may think fit (*p*)

739, n, *Re Kay's Patent*, (1839), 1 Web Pat Cas 568, P C), the expenses of bringing the invention into use (*Re Galloway's Patent* (1843), 1 Web Pat Cas 724, P C, *Re Newton's Patent* (1861), 14 Moo P C C 156, *Re Carr's Patent* (1873), L R 4 P C 539), expenses caused by payments to patent agents (*Re Poole's Patent* (1867), 4 Moo P C C (N s) 452, 456), but a loss occasioned by the sale and repurchase by the patentee will not be allowed (*Re Wield's Patent* (1871), 8 Moo P C C (N s) 300). On the other hand, the patentee must add the profits arising from sale for exportation (*Re Hardy's Patent* (1849), 6 Moo P C C 441, *Re Johnson's Patent* (*Willcox and Gibbs*) (1871), 8 Moo P C C (N s) 282, 291, *Re Adair's Patent* (1881), 6 App Cas 176), and care must be taken to keep the accounts as patentee and as manufacturer distinct (*Re Betts' Patent* (1862), 1 Moo P C C (N s) 49, *Re Hills' Patent* (1863), 1 Moo P C C (N s) 258, *Re Saxby's Patent* (1870), 7 Moo P C C (N s) 82, 86, *Re Trotman's Patent* (1866), 3 Moo P C C (N s) 488). Items foreign to the patent must not be included in the accounts (*Re Clarke's Patent* (1899), 16 R P C 433). Expenditure in the patent business must be kept distinct from expenditure in a general business (*Re Duncan and Wilson's Patent* (1884), 1 R P C 257, *Re Willacy's Patent* (1888), 5 R P C 690), and receipts in respect of the patented article must be distinguished from receipts in respect of other articles (*Re Yates' Patent* (1887), 4 R P C 151, 152, *Re Willan and Robinson's Patent* (1896), 13 R P C 550). Profits made in respect of foreign patents for the same invention must be disclosed (*Re Newton's Patent* (1884), 1 R P C 177, *Re Barff and Bower's Patent* (1895), 12 R P C 385, 386, *Re Peach's Patent* (1901), 19 R P C 65, P C), and, where the patentee has granted licences to manufacture in consideration of royalties, the profits of the licensees, as well as the royalties received, should be set out (*Re Trotman's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Shone's Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 438, compare *Re Thomas's Patents* (1892), 9 R P C 367). Where the patent rights have been transferred to a company, it is essential to deposit not only the patentee's accounts of his profits, but accounts also of the profits of the company (*Re Deacon's Patents* (1887), 4 R P C 122), and what dealings have taken place in the shares of the company should appear (*Re Lane-Fox's Patent* (1892), 9 R P C 411, see *Re Parsons' Patent* (1898), 15 R P C 394, *Re Duncan and Wilson's Patent* *supra*). The profits of each year should be kept distinct (*Re Perkins' Patent* (1845), 2 Web Pat Cas 16, *Re Yates' Patent* (1887), 4 R P C 151, 152), as well as the expenditure (*Re Yates' Patent*, *supra*). Where no profits have been made, such strict proof of accounts as is required where profits have been made is not necessary (*Re Thompson's Patent* (1902), 19 R P C 565). The accounts of the petitioner must be clear and precise and must leave no doubt as to what the applicant's remuneration has been (*Re Betts' Patent*, *supra*, *Re Hills' Patent*, *supra*, *Re Trotman's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Saxby's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Clark's Patent* (1870), 7 Moo P C C (N s) 255, *Re Henderson's Patent* (1901), 18 R P C 449, *Re Wuterich's Patent* (1903), 20 R P C 285, [1903] A C 206, compare *Re Darley's Patent* (1891), 8 R P C 384, *Re Lake's Patent* (1891), 8 R P C 230, [1901] A C 240), and are considered before the merits of the invention (*Re Wield's Patent* (1871), 8 Moo P C C (N s) 300, *Re Houghton's Patent* (1871), 7 Moo P C C (N s) 309, commenting on *Re Saxby's Patent*, *supra*, and *Re Clark's Patent*, *supra*). Destruction of the patentee's books is no excuse for not supplying proper accounts (*Re Yates and Kellett's Patent* (1887), 4 R P C 150, P C, 12 App Cas 147, compare *Re Markwick's Patent* (1860), 13 Moo P C C 310).

(o) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 18 (4)

(p) *Ibid*, s 18 (5) But the court has not power to award a second period

The court has power to extend the patent as to one or more of its claiming clauses without extending it as to all of them (q)

SECT 8.
Term of
Patent.

415 In the case of opposition to the petition for extension, the court may award costs in favour of or against the opponents (r)

Partial
extension.
Costs
No appeal.

416 The decision of the court is final (s).

SUB-SECT 3—*Patents of Addition*

417 A patent of addition is a patent which is granted in respect of any improvement in or modification of an invention for which a patent has either been granted or applied for, but which is granted only for the same term as that of the original patent or for so much of that term as is unexpired, so that the patent of addition will not remain in force after the expiration of the original patent (t)

Definition.

of extension after the first has elapsed (*Re Thompson's Patent*, [1909] 2 Ch 447, confirming the rule laid down in *Re Goucher's Patent* (1865), 2 Moo P C C (N S) 532) It is only where the value of the disclosure largely exceeds the benefit derived by the patentee that he can be said to have been inadequately remunerated (*Re Johnson's Patent* (No 2), [1909] 1 Ch 114, per PARKER, J) Where the petitioner is an assignee, a condition may be imposed securing either an annuity (*Re Whitehouse's Patent* (1838), 1 Web Pat Cas 473, P C, *Russell v Ledsam* (1848), 1 H L Cas 687, *Re Markwick's Patent* (1860), 13 Moo P C C 310, *Re Herbert's Patent* (1867), 4 Moo P C C (N S) 300, *Re Pitman's Patent* (1871), L R 4 P C 84, 87), or a share of the profits to the inventor (*Re Hardy's Patent* (1849), 6 Moo P C C 441 *Re McCulloch's Patent* (1908), 25 R P C 684), and such conditions may be imposed where the inventor has made nothing by the invention (*Re Bodmer's Patent* (1849), 6 Moo P C C 468) Conditions may also be imposed either that the article is to be sold to the public at a fixed price (*Re Hardy's Patent*, *supra*, *Re Hart's Patent* (1908), 25 R P C 299), or securing the invention to the Crown for the public service (*Re Pettit Smith's Patent* (1850), 7 Moo P C C 133, *Re Napier's Patent* (1881), 6 App Cas 174, P C, compare *Re Schlumberger* (1853), 9 Moo P C C 1, *Re Lancaster's Patent* (1864), 2 Moo P C C (N S) 189)

(q) *Re Lodge's Patent*, [1911] 2 Ch 46, per PARKER, J, at p 57

(r) R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (u) A successful opponent is usually awarded costs (see *Westrupp and Gibbins' Patent* (1836), 1 Web Pat Cas 554, 556) But if much expense has been occasioned by relying upon patents which are not anticipations, and unsatisfactory witnesses have been called, the opponent's costs may be refused (*Re Homball's Patent* (1855), 9 Moo P C C 378, 394) If the petition is abandoned, the opponent is allowed his costs (*Re Brown's Patents* (1886), 3 R P C 212, P C, *Re Macintosh's Patent* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 739, n) If there is no ground for the opposition, costs are given to the petitioner (*Re Downton's Patent* (1839), 1 Web Pat Cas 567, and see *Re Church's Patents* (1886), 3 R P C 95, P C) Where there have been two or more opponents a lump sum has been divided between them (*Re Jones's Patent* (1854), 9 Moo P C C 41, *Re Hopkinson's Patent* (1896), 14 R P C 10, *Re Ferranti's Patent* (1901), 18 R P C 518, P C) If the petition fails the court may not except in special circumstances give more than one set of costs amongst all the opponents (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (v), see *Re Imray's Patent* (1908), 26 R P C 11) The Comptroller and the Board of Trade are not entitled to any costs in relation to their appearance on or opposition to the petition (R S C, Ord 53A, r 3 (w)) Except as above expressly provided, the costs of all proceedings are in the discretion of the court (*ibid*, r 9) As to other proceedings, see Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s. 24, and p 197, *ante*, as to petitions for revocation, see p 206, *post*, and as to infringement proceedings, see pp 210 *et seq*, *post*

(s) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 92 (2)

(t) *Ibid*, s 19 (1), (2), (3) A patent of addition upon a patent of

SECT 8

Term of Patent

Procedure on application

Effect of grant

The applicant or patentee, as the case may be, must apply for a patent of addition, and must leave specifications, drawings and documents in the same way as if he were applying for an ordinary patent (*u*) After the patent of addition has been granted, no additional fees are payable for its maintenance (*a*)

The grant of a patent of addition is conclusive evidence that the invention is a proper subject for such a patent, and the validity of the patent cannot be questioned on the ground that the invention ought to have been the subject of an independent patent (*b*)

SECT 9 —*Revocation of Patents*SUB-SECT 1 —*By the Court*

By whom petition presented

418 A petition (*c*) for the revocation of a patent may be presented

(1) By the Attorney-General, or any person authorised by him (*d*).

(2) By any person (*e*) alleging (*f*)—

(1) That the patent was obtained in fraud of his rights or of the

addition may be granted if the claims covered by the subsequent patent of addition, earlier patent of addition, and original patent can be included in one claim (*Re McFely's Application* (1912), 29 R P C 386)

(*u*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 10

(*a*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 19 (3)

(*b*) *Ibid*, s 19 (4)

(*c*) No proceeding lies for revocation of a patent granted for an invention in relation to which a certificate has been given by the Secretary of State or the Admiralty (*ibid* s 30 (9)), and as to such inventions, see pp 169 *et seq*, *ante* A defendant in an action for infringement (see pp 225 *et seq*, *post*) may, under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 32, counterclaim for revocation of the patent If so, he must, with his counterclaim, deliver particulars of objections as in an infringement action, see R S C, Ord 53A, r 15, and as to particulars of objections, see p 217, *post* The costs of a petition of revocation, whether under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 25, or by way of counterclaim, are dealt with in the same way as in an action for infringement (R S C, Ord 53A, r 23, see pp 225 *et seq*, *post*)

(*d*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 25 (3) (*a*), see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, p 73

(*e*) A person who has the right to petition on one of the above grounds may seek revocation on any of the other grounds (*Re Morgan's Patent* (1887), 5 R P C 186 He may be refused a hearing if he has no *locus standi*, and in cases of doubt the fiat of the Attorney General should be obtained (*Re Avery's Patent* (1887), 36 Ch D 307, 322, C A) A purchaser of a patent *pendente lite* has *locus standi* within the section (*Re Green's Application* (1910), 28 R P C 28) The Attorney General's fiat is not granted as of right, but in his discretion (*Shoe Machinery Co v Cutlan* (1895), 12 R P C 530, 535, C A, and see titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, p 75, CROWN PRACTICE, Vol X, p 31), and the Attorney-General has power to grant his fiat *nunc pro tunc* (*Re Dege's Patent* (1895), 12 R P C 448, *Re Jameson's Patent* (1902) 19 R P C 246)

(*f*) Any person presenting such a petition must deliver therewith particulars of objections to the validity of the patent, and no evidence, except by leave of the court, can be admitted in proof of any objection of which particulars are not delivered (R S C, Ord 53A, r 11) As to particulars of objections, see pp 225 *et seq*, *post* The respondent to the petition is entitled to begin and give evidence in support of the patent and, if the petitioner gives evidence impeaching the validity of the patent, the respondent is entitled to reply (R S C, Ord 53A, r 12) As to costs, see R S C, Ord 53A, r 22, and see note (*c*), *supra*

rights of any person under or through whom he claims (g); or

SECT 9
Revocation
of Patents

- (ii) That he, or any other person under or through whom he claims, was the true inventor (h), or
- (iii) That he, or any other person under or through whom he claims an interest in any trade, business, or manufacture, had publicly manufactured, used, or sold within this realm, before the date of the patent, anything claimed by the patentee as his invention (h)

The grounds of revocation by the court include—

Grounds of
revocation.

- (1) Every ground on which a patent might have been repealed by *scire facias* immediately before the 1st January, 1884 (i)
- (2) Every ground on which a patent may be revoked under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (k), either by the Comptroller, or as an alternative to the grant of a compulsory licence (l)

SUB-SECT 2—By the Comptroller

(1) On Ground on which Grant might have been Opposed

419 Any person who would have been entitled to oppose (m) the grant of a patent, or who is the successor in interest of a person who was so entitled, may, within two years from the date of the patent, apply to the Comptroller for an order revoking the patent on any one or more of the grounds on which the grant of the patent might have been opposed (n)

Who may
apply

The application must be made on the prescribed form, and must be accompanied by an unstamped copy of the form, which the Comptroller transmits to the patentee (o). The applicant may leave statutory declarations (delivering copies to the patentee) in every case, and he must do so if the ground of his application is that the invention was obtained from him by the patentee (o). The furnishing of further evidence and the subsequent hearing of the case are governed by the same rules as those regulating the proceedings on opposition to the grant of a patent (p).

Made of
application

An application under the above provision cannot be made when an action for infringement or proceedings for the revocation of a patent are pending in any court, except with the leave of the court (q).

When such
application
cannot be
made

(g) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 25 (3) (b). Where a patent is revoked on the ground of fraud the comptroller may grant a patent to the true inventor in lieu thereof (*ibid*, s 15 (2)). Fraud is used in its ordinary meaning, and does not include a mistake made *bona fide* (*Re Avery's Patent* (1887), 36 Ch D 307, 322, C A, *Re Ralston's Patent* (1909), 26 R P C 313, 331, 100 L T 386). Fraud must be strictly proved (*Re Jameson's Patent* (1902), 19 R P C 246, 254, *Re Mark's Patent* (1908), 25 R P C 553, 558).

(h) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 25 (3) (b).

(i) *Ibid*, s 25 (2) (a).

(k) 7 Edw 7, c 29.

(l) *Ibid*, s 25 (2) (b). Every such ground as is referred to in *ibid*, s 25 (2) (a), (b), is available as a defence to an action for infringement (*ibid*), see pp 217 *et seq*, *post*.

(m) As to opposition to the grant of a patent, see pp 175 *et seq*, *ante*.

(n) *Ibid*, s 26 (1).

(o) Patents Rules, 1908, r 75.

(p) *Ibid*, rr 43—47, 76, 27 R P C Appendix (1910F); see pp 175 *et seq*, *ante*.

(q) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 26 (1).

SECT 9

Revocation
of Patents.Nature of
order

420. The Comptroller, having given notice of the application to the patentee, and after hearing the parties, if desirous of being heard, may make an order (1) revoking the patent, or (2) requiring the specification to be amended by disclaimer, correction or explanation, or (3) dismissing the application (1). But the Comptroller cannot revoke the patent unless the circumstances are such as would have justified him in refusing to grant the patent had the proceedings been proceedings in opposition to the grant of a patent (2).

The Comptroller may also make an order for revocation after receiving an offer from the patentee to surrender it, and after giving notice of the offer and hearing the parties desiring to be heard (a).

Appeal.

421 The decision of the Comptroller is subject to an appeal to the court (b), and the decision of the court is also subject to appeal (c).

(11) *On Ground that Patent is Worked mainly Abroad*

Who may
apply

422 Any person may, at any time not less than four years after the date of a patent, apply to the Comptroller for the revocation of the patent on the ground that the patented article or process is manufactured or carried on exclusively or mainly outside the United Kingdom (d).

Evidence in
support of
application

The application must be made on the prescribed form (e) and accompanied by statutory declarations in support of the allegations, and copies must be delivered to the patentee or his agent

(r) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 26 (2)

(a) *Ibid.*, s 26 (3)

(b) *Ibid.*, s 26 (4) All appeals to the court from a decision of the Comptroller are brought by petition presented to the court within one calendar month of the decision of the Comptroller or within such further time as the court may under special circumstances allow (R S C, Ord 53A, r 4). Dilatoriness on the part of petitioner's agents is not a "special circumstance" (*Re Beldam's Patent*, [1911] 1 Ch 60, 63). The period of the Long Vacation counts in computing the "calendar month" (*ibid.*). The petition must state the nature of the decision appealed against, whether the appeal is from the whole, or part only, and if so, what part, of such decision, and also the grounds of the appeal, and no grounds, other than those so stated, shall, except with the leave of the court, be allowed to be taken by the appellant at the hearing (R S C Ord 53A, r 4). The appeal to the court, subject to any direction of the court to the contrary, is set down in the same manner as if it were an assigned witness action, and is heard and disposed of in due course (*ibid.*, r 5). The appeal is set down in Room 136, Chancery Registrar's Department. In all proceedings before the court the evidence used must be the same as that used at the hearing before the Comptroller, and no further evidence may be given except by the leave of the court (*ibid.*, r 6). As to evidence before the Comptroller, see pp 177, 178, *ante*. It should be noted that the procedure above indicated is the same in appeals to the court in proceedings for restoration of lapsed patent (see Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 20, pp 182, 183, *ante*), and in proceedings for revocation under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw. 7, c 29), s 27 (see the text, *infra*).

(c) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 92 (2)

(d) *Ibid.*, s 27 (1), *Re Hatchesk's Patents, Ex parte Zerenner*, [1909] 2 Ch 68, *Re Bremer's Patent, Ex parte Braulik, Re Högnier's Patent, Ex parte Braulik*, [1909] 2 Ch 217, *Re Fiat Motors, Ltd's Application*, [1911] 1 Ch. 66, *Re Green's Application*, [1911] 1 Ch 754

(e) Patents Form No 24 (fee £2), Patents Rules, 1908, r 78.

SECT. 9
Revocation
of Patents

Within fourteen days, or such further time as the Comptroller may allow, the patentee must leave statutory declarations at the Patent Office declaring whether the allegations made by the applicant are correct or incorrect. If they are incorrect it must be declared to what extent and in what place the patent is worked in the United Kingdom, but if they are correct and the patent is not worked in the United Kingdom to an adequate extent, the declarations must set out the reasons why it is not so worked (*f*). Copies of these declarations must be sent to the applicant, and he in turn must within fourteen days leave statutory declarations in answer, supplying copies to the patentee.

The Comptroller then intimates whether he intends to hold a preliminary hearing or whether he will try the whole case at one hearing (of the date of which he must give ten days' notice, allowing extra time for the hearing of further evidence) (*g*). At the hearing he may take *vuâ voce* evidence in lieu of or in addition to the evidence by declaration, and may require the attendance of any declarant or other person whose evidence he thinks desirable (*h*). Fixing the hearing

423 The Comptroller thereupon, if satisfied (*i*) that the patent is not worked to an adequate extent in the United Kingdom, and if the patentee fails to give satisfactory reasons (*h*) why the patent is not so worked, may make an order— Nature of order

(*f*) The patent will not be revoked if the patentee proves that he has done his best to establish an industry in this country in the article which is the subject of his patent (*Re Bremer's Patent, Ex parte Braulik, Re Hagner's Patent, Ex parte Braulik*, [1909] 2 Ch 217, 224).

(*g*) Patents Rules, 1908, rr 78—81, as amended and modified by an official notice issued by the Patent Office in 1909, see [1909] W N, Part II, p 198, 53 Sol Jo 487, and see *Re Hagner's Patents* (1909), 26 R P C 198. It appears still to be necessary that the applicant, when sending copies of his declarations or of other documents to the patentee, and *vice versa*, should furnish the Comptroller with evidence of the delivery of such copies.

(*h*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 77, Patents Rules, 1908, r 81. A patentee cannot be called upon to produce his witnesses either for cross examination or for examination by the Comptroller General until a *prima facie* case is made out under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 27 (1) (*Re Lahl's Patent* (1909), 26 R P C 443, following *Re Hatschek's Patents* (1909), 26 R P C 228, [1909] 2 Ch 68).

(*i*) In considering whether there is a proper case for revocation under this provision the Comptroller or the court should have regard primarily to the public interest, not, at least first of all, to that of individuals, see *Re Taylor's Patent*, [1912] 1 Ch 635, 642, 643.

(*k*) See *Re Taylor's Patent, supra* (where, in the circumstances of that particular case, having regard to the threat of an infringement action, "satisfactory reason" was held to have been shown "It can never be sufficient for a patentee defending himself under the section [*i.e.*, Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 24] to prove that he cannot now start an industry with any chance of profit. The question really is, Could he have done so if he had used his monopoly fairly as between home and foreign trade, or if he had devoted the time and money which he has expended in developing a foreign industry to developing a home industry" (*Re Hatschek's Patents, Ex parte Zerenner*, [1909] 2 Ch 68, *per PARKER, J.*, at p 89). It is not necessary to inquire whether what has been done in the United Kingdom is or is not in derogation of the rights of the patentee, or to exclude from the computation what has been done in derogation of such rights (*Re Fiat Motors, Ltd's Application*, [1911] 1 Ch 66), or to determine whether at the precise moment when the petition was lodged there was a manufacture of

SECT 9

Revocation
of PatentsVariation in
order

(1) revoking the patent forthwith (*l*) or
 (2) revoking the patent after a reasonable interval, specified in the order, unless in the meantime it is shown to his satisfaction that the patent is worked in the United Kingdom to an adequate extent (*m*) Where such interval has been allowed and the patent is not worked in the United Kingdom to an adequate extent, but the patentee gives satisfactory reasons why it is not so worked, the Comptroller has power to extend the period mentioned in the previous order for such period not exceeding twelve months as may be specified in the subsequent order (*n*)

No order may be made which is at variance with any treaty, convention arrangement, or engagement with any foreign country or British possession (*o*)

Appeal.

424 Any such decision of the Comptroller is subject to appeal to the court, and on any such appeal the law officer or such other counsel as he may appoint is entitled to appear and be heard (*p*)

The decision of the court on such appeal is final (*q*)

SECT 10 — *Legal Proceedings*SUB-SECT 1 — *In respect of Infringement*(1) *The Infringement*

Infringement

425 The grant of letters patent is the grant of an exclusive privilege to the patentee, that he "by himself, his agents and licensees, and no others may make, use, exercise and vend the said invention" (*r*), and, in order that the patentee may have the sole use and enjoyment of his invention, the letters patent prohibit all subjects of the King within the United Kingdom and the Isle of Man from in any way using or imitating the invention during the term of fourteen years, without the patentee's consent (*r*)

What
constitutes
infringement

426 A person commits an infringement of letters patent when, without the patentee's consent, he does some act prohibited by the letters patent (*s*) A patent may be infringed by (1) using the invention or any colourable imitation thereof in the manufacture of articles, or by putting the invention in practice in any other way,

carrying on of a patented process (*Re Green's Application*, [1911] 1 Ch 754) The substance of the matter must be looked at Temporary suspension of manufacture because of over manufacture in prior months will not exclude the jurisdiction of the court (*Re Green's Application*, *supra*, per PARKER, J at p 757) A misapprehension of the section is not a "satisfactory reason" within the section (*Re Worring and Kortenbach's Patent* (1909), 26 R P C 163) As to proceedings under the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7 c 29), s 24, see pp 197 *et seq*, *ante*

(*l*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 27 (2) (*a*)

(*m*) *Ibid.*, s 27 (2) (*b*), see *Re Boul's Patent* (1909), 26 R P C 383; *Re Kent's Patent* (1909) 26 R P C 666, compare *Re Osborn's Patent* (1909), 26 R P C 819

(*n*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 27 (3)

(*o*) *Ibid.*, s 27 (2)

(*p*) *Ibid.*, s 27 (4), see *Re Bremer's Patent* (1909), 26 R P C 449 For the procedure on such appeal, see R S C, Ord 53A, rr 4—6, see note (*b*), p. 298, *ante*

(*q*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 92 (2) In all proceedings before the court the court has all the powers of the Comptroller see R. S C, Ord 53A, r 8

(*r*) See p 128, *ante*

(*s*) *Wallon v. Bateman* (1842), 1 Web Pat Cas 613, 615.

(2) by using, or selling, or otherwise dealing in articles made in accordance with the invention; or (3) by making for use or sale, or by selling, articles which counterfeit or resemble, or which differ only colourably from, articles made in pursuance of the invention, but there can be no infringement of an invalid patent (*a*)

SECT 10
Legal Proceedings.

The intention of an infringer is quite immaterial (*b*) It is also immaterial whether the infringer knew or not that he was in fact infringing a patent (*c*)

Intention of infringer

427 Importation into this country, for use or sale, of infringing articles manufactured abroad, is an infringement (*d*) Importation into British waters for the mere purpose of transshipment may, by reason of continuing user, constitute an infringement (*e*), but persons acting only as Custom House agents for an importing firm are not infringers (*f*)

Importation

The Crown, and its agents or servants, have the right to use any invention patented in this country, on such terms as may be agreed upon with the approval of the Treasury, or, in default of agreement, as may be settled by the Treasury, after hearing all parties interested (*g*)

Crown rights

If a defendant has in fact put an infringing article to the purpose for which it was intended whilst the article was in his possession, then such possession amounts to a user, and he is liable to have an injunction granted against him (*h*)

Liability of parties using article

A user by way of *bond fide* experiment only, and not with the intention of selling or using for profit or advantage, is not necessarily an infringement (*i*), but the use of an infringing article to the advantage of the purchaser may be an infringement although it is purchased for the purpose of experiment or for instructing pupils (*k*) The use of an invention for a purpose other than that described by the patentee may amount to an infringement (*l*), and to

(*a*) *Challander v Royle* (1887), 36 Ch D 425, 435

(*b*) *Stead v Anderson* (1847), 2 Web Pat Cas 151, *Young v Rosenthal & Co* (1884), 1 R P C 29

(*c*) *Nobel's Explosives Co v Jones, Scott & Co* (1881), 17 Ch D 721, C A, (1882) 8 App Cas 5, but see Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 33

(*d*) *Walton v Lavater* (1860), 8 C B (N S) 162, *Elmslie v Boursier* (1869), L R 9 Eq 217, *Von Heyden v Neustadt* (1880), 14 Ch D 230, C A, *United Telephone Co v Sharples* (1885), 2 R P C 28, 29 Ch D 164 As to the use for the purposes of navigation of a foreign vessel within the jurisdiction, see Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 48

(*e*) *Nobel's Explosives Co v Jones, Scott & Co*, *supra*, *Nelson v Betts* (1871), L R 5 H L 1

(*f*) *Nobel's Explosives Co v Jones, Scott & Co*, *supra* As to the liability of agents generally, see p 215, *post*

(*g*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 29

(*h*) *Adair v Young* (1879), 12 Ch D 13, C A, *United Telephone Co v London and Globe Telephone and Maintenance Co* (1884), 1 R P C 117 26 Ch D 766, *Dunlop Pneumatic Tyre Co v British and Colonial Motor Car Co* (1901), 18 R P C 315, compare *British United Shoe Machinery Co, Ltd v Collier (Simon), Ltd* (1910), 27 R P C 567, H L, per Lord LOREBURN, L C, at p 571, 26 T L R 587

(*i*) *Freasson v Loe* (1878), 9 Ch D 48, 66, *United Telephone Co v Sharples*, *supra*, *Proctor v Bayley & Son* (1888), 6 R P C 106

(*k*) *United Telephone Co v Sharples*, *supra*, *British Motor Syndicate, Ltd v Taylor & Sop*, [1900] 1 Ch 577 (transport of infringing article for purpose of selling it abroad)

(*l*) *Cannington v Nuttall* (1871), L R 5 H L 205, see also *Edison and*

SECT 10
Legal Pro-
ceedings

Vendor of
patented
article

renew the parts essential to a patented combination is an infringement (*m*)

A person who sells a patented article without the consent of the patentee infringes the letters patent (*n*) The mere offering for sale of an infringing article in the possession of the vendor may constitute infringement (*o*), but the sale of component articles is not, in itself, an infringement, even though the vendor knows that they will be used by the buyer for the purpose of infringing a patent (*p*).

It is also an infringement to sell in this country articles manufactured abroad by a process patented here (*q*), but the plaintiff must in general prove that the articles sold were in fact manufactured by the patentee's process (*r*)

Purchaser of
patented
article

A purchaser who buys a patented article from the patentee or his agents may resell it or use it however and wherever he pleases, unless his rights have been restricted at the time of the purchase (*s*)

Facts
necessary to
be proved

428 In an action for infringement, it is necessary for a plaintiff to establish that the defendant, dealing with what he is doing as a matter of substance, is taking the invention claimed by the patent, not the invention which the patentee might have claimed if he had been well advised or bolder, but that which he has in fact and substance claimed on a fair construction of the specification (*a*) Another way of stating the same thing is that the plaintiff must show that the defendant has taken the pith and essence of his invention (*b*)

Novelty
Infringement
of inventions
for obtaining
new objects

429 When the invention is for a new way of attaining a new object the novelty of the object attained is itself a feature of the invention, and the disclosure of it is part of the consideration given in return for the monopoly conferred by the grant of letters patent In cases involving patents for inventions of this nature a defendant will infringe if he attains the same result by adopting means the same as, or substantially the same as, those disclosed by the patentee On the other hand, when a patentee has merely invented a new way of attaining an old result, the essence of his invention is the particular way of doing it that he has described and claimed, and there is no infringement unless a defendant has used that particular method (*c*)

Swan Electric Light Co v Holland (1888), 5 R P C 459, *Higgs v Goodwin* (1858), E B & L 529

(*m*) *Dunlop Pneumatic Tyre Co v Holborn Tyre Co* (1901), 18 R P C 226, *United Telephone Co v Nelson*, [1887] W N 193

(*n*) See p 210, ante

(*o*) *Oxley v Holden* (1860), 8 C B (N S) 666

(*p*) *Townsend v Haworth* (1875), 12 Ch D 831, n, *Sylvia v Howarth* (1879), 12 Ch D 826, 833

(*q*) *Wright v Hitchcock* (1870) L R 5 Exch 37, 47, *Elmslie v Boursier* (1869), L R 9 Eq 217, *Van Heyden v Neustadt* (1880), 14 Ch D 230, C A

(*r*) On this point, see *Saccharin Corporation v Dawson* (1902), 19 R P C 169, *Saccharin Corporation v Jackson* (1903), 20 R P C 611

(*s*) *Betts v Wallmott* (1871), 6 Ch App 239

(*a*) *Nobel's Explosives Co v Anderson* (1894), 11 R P C 115, per ROMER, J, at p 127

(*b*) *Wenham Gas Co v Champion Gas Lamp Co* (1891), 9 R P C 49, C A, *Incandescent Gas Light Co v De Mare Incandescent Gas Light System* (1896), 13 R P C 301, *Collins & Sons v Green and Oadbury, Ltd* (1912), 29 R P C 217, *Gramophone Co, Ltd v Ruhl* (1910), 28 R P C 20, C A, *Hoffman Manufacturing Co, Ltd v Auto Machinery Co, Ltd* (1911), 28 R P C 141, C A

(*c*) *Martin and James v Consett Iron Co, Ltd* (1907), 25 R P C 27,

Accordingly the first thing to be done is, by construing the specification, to ascertain what is the real scope of the invention claimed. In so doing regard must be had to the state of knowledge of the art at the date of the patent (*d*)

SNOT. 10
Legal Proceedings.

If a man has in fact used the essence of an invention he is still an infringer, even though he has improved upon it, and it is quite immaterial that he may have taken out a patent embodying his own improvements (*e*), although it may well be that such later patent is valid and protects the improvements

430. A patent may sometimes be infringed by taking a part only of the invention. This depends on whether what is taken is the substance of the patentee's invention, and in deciding the question of substance the court may look to the relative importance of the parts taken and the parts omitted (*f*). In many specifications, however, the patentee takes pains to state specifically what he considers to be the essential feature or features of his invention. When this has been done, the court adopts the patentee's own statement, and has regard to it in construing the specification

Taking part of invention

431 It is sometimes supposed that a patent may yet be infringed, though the invention has not been identically copied. This view is not strictly accurate. There can be no infringement without identity, but the identity may be hidden by additions or subtractions or by the use of mechanical equivalents. In inventions of the type which produce a new result by a new method the substitution of a contrivance, known to be an equivalent of the patentee's method, for producing the same result, is generally an infringement of the patent (*g*). Where, however, the patent is for a new way of attaining an old result, unless the actual means employed by the patentee have been taken, there is usually no infringement. The true question invariably is one of fact, namely, Has the patentee's claimed invention been substantially taken? (*h*)

No infringement without identity

Effect of additions, subtractions or mechanical equivalents

C A, *Harrison Patents Co., Ltd v Nicholson & Sons, Ltd* (1908), 25 R P C 393, *C A*, *Foden v Wallis and Stevens, Ltd* (1908), 25 R P C 783, *C A*, *Blackstone v Bamford & Sons* (1909), 27 R P C 125, *Nicholls v Kershaw* (1910), 27 R P C 237, *Riley v Taylor* (1910), 27 R P C 747, *C A*, *British, Foreign and Colonial Automatic Light Controlling Co., Ltd v Metropolitan Gas Meters, Ltd* (1911), 29 R P C 209

(*d*) The way to approach the question of infringement was well set out per Lord ALVERSTONE, C J, in *Presto Gear Case and Components Co v Orme, Evans & Co* (1900), 18 R P C 17, *C A*, at p 23, see *Vidal Dyes Syndicate, Ltd v Levinstein, Ltd* (1912), 20 R P C 245, *C A*, and see p 146, ante

(*e*) *Neilson v Harford* (1841), 1 Web Pat Cas 295, 310, *Thomson v Moore* (1889), 6 R P C 426, *C A*, *Pulkington (Peter), Ltd v Massey* (1904), 21 R P C 421, and see *Lynch and Wilson & Co., Ltd v Phillips & Co* (1908), 25 R P C 694, 708

(*f*) *Incandescent Gas Light Co v De Mare Incandescent Gas Light System* (1896), 13 R P C 301, 330, *Luke and Elliot v Rotax Motor Accessories, Ltd* (1911), 28 R P C 532, *C A*, per COZENS HARDY, M R, at p 540

(*g*) *Sellers v Dickinson* (1850), 5 Exch 312, and see *Marconi v British Radio Telegraph and Telephone Co., Ltd* (1911), 28 R P C 181, per PARKER, J, at p 217, *Stone & Co., Ltd v Broadfoot & Sons, Ltd* (1909), 26 R P C 361, 380, *British Vacuum Co., Ltd v Eaton Hotels Co., Ltd* (1908), 25 R P C 617

(*h*) *Clark v. Adie* (1875), 10 Ch App 667, *Sellers v Dickinson, supra*.

SECT 10
Legal Pro
ceedings

Substitution
of chemical
equivalents

432 The substitution of chemical equivalents is governed by the same principles as govern the use of mechanical equivalents. But it is quite lawful for any person to accomplish the result attained by the patentee by the use of a substance not known to be a chemical equivalent at the date of the patent (*i*), and it must be remembered that it is much more difficult to say that one chemical body is the equivalent of another than that one well-known mechanical device is the equivalent of another.

New combina
tion of parts

433 Some of the difficulties arising in connection with the substitution of equivalents are most frequently met with in patents for a new combination of parts. The patentee is, however, entitled to the same protection and on the same principles (*k*) as he would be for any other type of patent. There may be infringement by using so much of the combination as is material (*l*), but the patent does not afford protection against the separate use of integers embodied in the combination (*m*).

(u) Parties

Plaintiff.

434 The plaintiff in an action for infringement may be the original grantee, provided he has not parted with the whole of his interest in the patent. Other persons who may be plaintiffs are (1) the owner of a distinct and several part of a patent (*n*), (2) one of several joint owners, without joining his co-owners, if the defendant does not object (*o*), and a defendant who intends to object must do so at once (*p*), (3) a married woman, if the patent is her separate property (*q*), (4) an assignee, even though the defendant is the original grantee (*r*), (5) the assignee for a district (*s*), but in this case the act of infringement must take place within the assignee's district, (6) the assignee of a portion of a patent (*t*).

Position of
assignees and
licensees

435 The assignment of a patent should be registered, but registration is not essential to enable an assignee to sue (*u*). A trustee, a trustee in bankruptcy or his assignee (*a*), the executors or administrators of a deceased patentee, and a mortgagor may each sue in his own name. A mortgagee cannot sue infringers, and his interest in a patent is not such as to make him a necessary party in an action (*b*). Neither a general nor an exclusive licensee can

(i) *Heath v Unwin* (1855), 5 H L Cas 505, see also *Automatic Weighing Machine Co v Knight* (1889), 6 R P C 113, 300, C A.

(k) *Clark v Adie* (1875), 10 Ch App 667, per JAMES, L J, at p 675.

(l) *Sellers v Dickinson* (1850), 5 Exch 312.

(m) *British United Shoe Machinery Co v Fussell & Sons* (1908), 25 R P C 631, C A, and see pp 138, 139, ante.

(n) *Dunnichiff v Mallet* (1859), 7 C B (N S) 209.

(o) *Davenport v Richard* (1860), 3 L T 503.

(p) *Stechan v Great Eastern Rail Co* (1880), 16 Ch D 59.

(q) *Westhead v Keene* (1838), 1 Beav 287, *Bergmann v Macmillan* (1881), 17 Ch D 423.

(r) *Walton v Lavater* (1860) 8 C B (N S) 162, *Boulton v Bull* (1795), 2 Hy Bl 463, *Electric Telegraph Co v Brett* (1851), 10 C B 838.

(s) See pp 183, 184, ante.

(t) *Dunnichiff v Mallet*, *supra*.

(u) See note (d), p 186, ante, *Stewart v Casey* (1891), 8 R P C 259, 65 J. T. 40.

(a) *Bloxam v Elset* (1827), 6 B & C 169, 9 Dow & Ry (κ B) 215; *Anderson v Patent Oxonite Co*, (1886), 3 R P C 279.

(b) *Van Gelder Apsmon & Co v Sowerby Bridge Flour Co* (1890), 7, R P C. 306, C A, 44 Ch D. 374, and see p 186, ante.

sue (c), nor can a mere agent for a foreign patentee maintain an action in his own name (d)

§ 10
Legal Pro-
ceedings.
Defendants.

436 Any person who infringes, whether he is a principal (e) or a servant or an agent, may be made a defendant (f) A company may be made a defendant, and the directors of a company may be made personally liable for acts of infringement by workmen of the company acting under their direction (g) Foreigners resident within the realm may be made defendants (h) Manufacturers of an infringing article need not necessarily be joined as defendants (i), but they and persons who have bought such articles may be joined as co-defendants or may be sued separately (h) Innocent carriers may be restrained from dealing with or handling infringing articles, and when the consignee can be discovered he should be joined as a co-defendant (i)

(iii) Pleadings.

437 An action for infringement is commenced by writ issued out of the High Court of Justice, either in the King's Bench or Chancery Division Patent actions may also be tried in the Chancery Court of the County Palatine of Lancaster (n) The ordinary rules as to service of the writ apply (o)

Commence-
ment of
proceedings.
Courts
having
jurisdiction
service

(c) *Heap v Hartley* (1889), 6 R P C 495, C A, 42 Ch D 461, see note (h), p 191, ante

(d) *Adams v North British Rail Co* (1873), 29 L T 367

(e) *Sykes v Haworth* (1879), 12 Ch D 826, *Gregory v Piper* (1829), 9 B & C 591, *Lyons v Martin* (1838), 8 Ad & El 512, *Sharrod v London and North Western Rail Co* (1849), 4 Exch 580, 587 *Gordon v Rolt* (1849), 4 Exch 365, *Whalman v Pearson* (1808), L R 3 C P 422, *Betts v De Vitre* (1868), 3 Ch App 429, 441, see also *Savage & Co v Brindley* (1896), 13 R P C 266, as to the making of materials to be used in infringing, though the materials themselves are not infringements, and see title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, pp 256, 257

(f) *Betts v Neilson* (1865), 6 New Rep 221, *Adair v Young* (1879), 12 Ch D 13, 19, C A, *Betts v De Vitre* (1864), 11 Jur (N S) 9, *Day v Davies* (1904), 22 R P C 34

(g) *Muthias v Yells* (1882), 46 L T 497, C A, *Betts v De Vitre* (1864), 11 Jur (N S) 9, *Betts v De Vitre* (1868), 3 Ch App 429, 441, *Spencer v Ancoats Vale Rubber Co* (1888), 6 R P C 46, C A, *Welsbach Incandescent Gas Light Co v Daylight Incandescent Mantle Co* (1899), 16 R P C 344, *Welsbach Incandescent Gas Light Co v New Incandescent (Sunlight Patent) Gas Lighting Co* (1900), 17 R P C 247, [1900] 1 Ch 843, *A G v Beirmondsey Vestry* (1883), 23 Ch D 60, C A

(h) *Caldwell v Vanhussengen* (1851), 9 Hare, 415, *Vuvasseur v Krupp* (1878), 9 Ch D 351, C A, *Toni Tyre Ltd v Palmer Tyre, Ltd* (1905), 22 R P C 369

(i) *Moser v Marsden* (1892), 9 R P C 214 [1892] 1 Ch 847, C A

(k) *Penn v Bibby*, *Penn v Jack*, *Penn v Fernie* (1866), L R 3 Eq 308, *United Telephone Co v Walker and Oliver* (1886), 4 R P C 63, 67, 56 L T 508, *Proctor v Bennis* (1887), 4 R P C 333, C A, 36 Ch D 740

(l) *Washburn and Moen Manufacturing Co v Ounard Steamship Co* (1889), 6 R P C 398, 403 Plaintiffs desirous of obtaining an injunction against a person who, having made a contract of indemnity with the defendants, has been made a third party, should amend by joining him as a defendant (*Edison and Swan Electric Light Co v Holland* (1889), 6 R P C 243, 286, C A)

(n) But a county court has no jurisdiction where the validity of a patent is in question; see *R v Halifax County Court Judge*, [1891] 2 Q B 263, C A, see titles COUNTY COURTS, Vol VIII, p 431, COURTS, Vol IX, p 121

(o) See title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE,

- NOTE 10**
Legal Proceedings
 Indorsement of writ
- In an action for infringement the writ is usually indorsed with a claim for (1) an injunction restraining the defendant, his agents and servants, from infringing the plaintiff's Letters Patent No —, (2) damages, or, at the plaintiff's option, an account of profits; (3) delivery up or destruction of all infringing articles within the defendant's possession or control, (4) costs
- Usual pleadings.
- 438** After service of the writ the usual pleadings (*p*) are (1) a statement of claim, which must be accompanied by particulars of breaches; (2) a defence, which must be accompanied by particulars of objections
- Statement of claim
- 439** In the statement of claim the plaintiff should allege that he is the grantee or registered legal owner of the letters patent, or, if his title has devolved upon him by assignment, or by operation of law, the facts resulting in such devolution should be clearly stated. It is not necessary to allege the validity of the patent, or that the invention is new (*q*), or that the original patentee was the true and first inventor (*r*). Nor is it necessary to set out any part of the specification. If, however, the specification has been amended, this should be pleaded, and it should be asserted that the original specification was drawn in good faith and with reasonable skill and knowledge (*s*). Several patents may be sued on in one action, provided that no inconvenience or oppression will arise from the plurality of issues (*t*). The court may on motion (*u*) allow the patentee on terms (*v*) to amend his patent by way of disclaimer (*u*)
- Particulars of breaches
- 440** Particulars of breaches are particulars of the time, place, and manner in which the plaintiff alleges that his patent has been infringed by the defendant. The defendant is entitled to have adequate notice of the case to be made against him (*x*). When the defendant is a seller or user, and not a manufacturer of the infringing articles, greater particularity may be required (*y*). One instance at least of each type of infringement complained of must be given, and the plaintiff must specify which of the claims in his specification he alleges have been infringed (*a*), but he may allege that all the claims have been infringed, the reasonableness or otherwise of such an allegation being a matter to be considered in relation to the costs of the trial (*b*). Leave to amend particulars of breaches
-
- (*p*) As to pleading generally, see title PLEADING, pp 418 *et seq*, post
 (*q*) *Amory v Brown* (1869), L R 8 Eq 663
 (*r*) See *Ward Brothers v Hill & Son* (1901), 18 R P C 491
 (*s*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 23
 (*t*) *Saccharin Corporation v Wild & Co* (1903), 20 R P C 243, C A, [1903] 1 Ch 410, *Saccharin Corporation v White & Sons* (1903), 20 R P C 454, C A, 88 L T 850, *Saccharin Corporation v Alliance Chemical Co* (1905), 22 R P C 175, C A
 (*u*) R S C, Ord 53A, r 23
 (*v*) As to terms see *Gillette Safety Razor Co v Luna Safety Razor Co*, [1910] 2 Ch 373
 (*w*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 22, p 173, ante
 (*x*) *Needham v Ozley* (1863), 1 Hem & M 248, *Mandleberg v Morley* (1893), 10 R P C 256, *Bailey v Kynock* (No 2) (1874), L R 19 Eq 229, 231; *Hensler and Guignard v Hardie* (1894), 11 R P C 421, see also R. S. C., Ord 53A, rr 13, 16, 19, 20, 21
 (*y*) *Mandleberg v Morley* (1893), 10 R P C 256
 (*a*) R. S. C., Ord 53A, r 16
 (*b*) *Hacham & Co. v Hull* (1887), 4 R P C 203, 206,

may be given by the court (c) Further particulars may be ordered and may be postponed till after discovery has been obtained (d). If the validity of the patent has been in question in a previous action, and a certificate of validity has been obtained, the certificate should be pleaded (e)

SMO. 10
Legal Pro-
ceedings.

441 It is necessary for the defendant in his defence to state all the grounds on which he intends to rely The defences open to a defendant are as follows —

Defence.

He may (1) deny the plaintiff's title to the patent in suit, (2) deny that he has infringed as alleged or at all, (3) plead leave and licence, (4) allege that the letters patent are invalid (f), (5) allege that the patented article is produced exclusively, or mainly, outside the United Kingdom (g), (6) allege facts justifying revocation of the patent on the ground that the reasonable requirements of the public with respect to the invention have not been satisfied (h); (7) allege a contract embodying prohibited terms or conditions (i), (8) allege that at the time of the infringement he was not aware, nor had he reasonable means of making himself aware, of the existence of the patent, but this plea is available only as a defence to a claim for damages, not to a claim for an injunction (j)

442 In an action for infringement, a defendant who by his defence attacks the validity of the patent in suit, must, with his defence, deliver particulars of the objections to validity upon which he intends to rely at the trial (k) Leave to amend particulars of objections may be obtained from the court upon such terms as to the court shall seem just (l), but no objection to validity can be taken at the trial, unless the objection has been pleaded (m) Where there are two or more defendants representing the same interest it is not necessary for every defendant to deliver particulars of objections (n)

Particulars
of objections
to validity

(c) R S C, Ord 53A, r 19, see also *Shoe Machinery Co v Cullan* (1895), 12 R P C 342

(d) *Russell v Hatfield* (1885), 2 R P C 144

(e) See pp 224 *et seq.*, *post*

(f) In the case of this plea, particulars of objections must be delivered, see the text, *infra*

(g) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 25 (2), *Re Hatschek's Patent* (1909), 26 R P C 228

(h) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), ss 4, 25 (2)

(i) See Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 38, and see p 193, *ante*

(j) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 33

(k) R S C, Ord 53A, rr 14, 15, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, *British, Foreign and Colonial Automatic Light Controlling Co, Ltd v Metropolitan Gas Meters, Ltd*, [1912] 2 Ch 82, see *Colman v Cook & Co* (1912), 29 R P C 175, C A, and see note (b), p 206, *ante*

(l) R S C, Ord 52A, r 19 As to the terms on which leave is as a rule granted, see *Otto v Sterne* (1885), 2 R P C 139, *Parker v Marguen's Filtré Rapide Co* (1888), 5 R P C 207 *Badische Anilin und Soda Fabrik v La Société Chimique des Usines du Rhône* (1897), 14 R P C 875, 881, *Edison Telephone v India Rubber Co* (1881), 17 Ch D 137, *Blakey & Co v Latham & Co* (1888), 6 R P C 29, 36, but the judge has an absolute discretion (*Pascall v Toope* (1890), 7 R P C 120, *Woolley v Broud* (1892), 9 R P C 429, *Wilson and Wilson Brothers Bobbin Co v Wilson & Co* (1899), 16 R P C 315, C A)

(m) *Re Andrews' Patent, Alsop Flour Process, Ltd v Flour Oxidising Co, Ltd* (1908), 25 R P C 477, H L, *British United Shoe Machinery Co v Fussell & Sons* (1908), 25 R P C 631, 659, C A; and see R S C, Ord 53A, r 21

(n) *Smith v Cropper* (1885), 10 App Cas 240

SECT 10

Legal Proceedings.

Grounds of attack

The validity of a patent may be attacked on any of the following grounds —(1) That the patentee was not the true and first inventor (the defendant who pleads this should give the name of the person he alleges is the true and first inventor), (2) that the alleged invention is not new, (3) that the alleged invention is not proper subject-matter for letters patent, (4) that the alleged invention is not useful, which, as has been seen, is a compendious and inaccurate method of pleading want of subject-matter and insufficiency (o), (5) that the alleged invention is not sufficiently ascertained or described in the specification, (6) that there is disconformity between the provisional and complete specifications, (7) that the alleged invention has been the subject of a prior grant of letters patent

Want of novelty

443 The plea of want of novelty may be set up on account of either prior publication in some book, specification or other document, or of prior public user of the invention. Sufficient particulars must be given of the book or specification to enable the plaintiff to identify it. The pages of the books should be given, and when the specifications cited are of a bulky and complex nature the parts relied on should be specified, but a defendant may rely on the whole of the book or specification (p). In the case of prior public user (q) the defendant must give the most minute particulars, and also, where possible, obtain for the plaintiff inspection of the article so used (r).

Want of subject-matter

The plea of want of subject-matter raises the point as to whether the invention is a new manufacture within the meaning of the Statute of Monopolies (s). It also raises the point whether, in view of the common general knowledge of the public at the date of the patent, any exercise of the inventive faculty was required on the part of the patentee to produce the alleged invention (t). In pleading common public knowledge, no individual instances need be given, specifications may not, however, be used as evidence of general knowledge, unless they have been specifically mentioned, either under the plea of want of novelty or the plea of common knowledge (u). Specifications may be shown to be part of the common public knowledge, but they are not necessarily a part of such knowledge (a).

(o) See p 151, *ante*

(p) *Holliday v Heppenstall* (1889), 6 R P C 320, C A, 41 Ch D 109; *Heathfield v Greenway* (1893), 11 R P C 17, *Siemens v Karo*, *Barnett & Co* (1891), 8 R P C 376, *Sidebottom v Fielden* (1891), 8 R P C 266, 270, *Nettlefolds v Reynolds* (1891), 8 R P C 410, C A, *Edison-Bell Consolidated Phonograph Co v Columbia Phonograph Co* (1900), 18 R P C 4

(q) *Crosthwaite Fire Bar Syndicate v Sensor* (1909), 26 R P C 260, [1909] 1 Ch 801, *Minerals Separation, Ltd v Ore Concentration Co* (1905), *Ltd* (1909), 26 R P C 413, [1909] 1 Ch 744, C A, *Re Brown's Patent* (1906), 23 R P C 790, C A, *Carnegie Steel Co v Bell Brothers* (1907), 24 R P C 82, C A

(r) R S C, Ord 53A, r 18

(s) 21 Jac 1, c 3, s 6 see p 128, *ante*

(t) *Re Max Muller's Patent* (1907), 24 R P C 465, 479, and see pp 146 *et seq*, *ante*

(u) *Solvo Laundry Supply Co v Mackie* (1893), 10 R P C 68, *Automatic Weighing Machine Co v Knight* (1889), 6 R P C 297, 302, C A; *English and American Machinery Co v Union Boot and Shoe Machine Co* (1894), 11 R P C 367, C A

(a) *Solvo Laundry Supply Co v Mackie*, *supra*.

444 An assignor of a patent who is afterwards sued for infringing the patent he assigned is estopped by his deed from attacking the validity of the patent (*b*), and a partner who has assigned the whole of his interests in a patent by a deed of dissolution of partnership is estopped from attacking validity in an action for infringement brought against him by his former partner (*c*)

SMOT 10
Legal Pro-
ceedings.
Estoppel

A licensee may be estopped from attacking the validity of the patent the subject of his licence (*d*)

A defendant who has had judgment given against him in a former action cannot attack the validity of the same patent in a subsequent action (*e*), even though he desires to do so on new grounds (*f*) Where, however, the defendant in the later action is different from the defendant in the former he may attack validity (*g*)

A plaintiff whose patent has been held to be invalid is estopped from recovering against the same defendant in a subsequent action, unless the invalidity has been removed by amendment of the specification (*h*)

Estoppel by deed or by record must be specially pleaded (*i*)

445 A defendant in an action for infringement of a patent, if entitled to present a petition to the court for the revocation of the patent, may, without presenting such petition, apply by way of counterclaim for the revocation of the patent (*k*)

Counter-
claim for
revocation

(iv) *Interlocutory Proceedings*

446 To obtain an interlocutory injunction the usual course is to proceed by way of motion in the Chancery Division The plaintiff must establish a *prima facie* case of the validity of his patent, and of infringement, and he must not have been guilty of laches (*l*)

Interlocutory
injunction

In establishing a *prima facie* case of validity, there is a strong presumption in favour of validity if the patent has been worked and enjoyed undisturbed for a number of years (*m*) This requirement as to validity is satisfied if the plaintiff is able to show that in a previous action the patent had been upheld, and, if the defendant

Prima facie
case of
validity

(*b*) *Chambers v Crichley* (1864), 33 Beav 374, *Bowman v Taylor* (1884), 2 Ad & El 278, *Bowman v Rostron* (1835), 2 Ad & El 295 *Walton v Lavater* (1860), 8 C B (N S) 162, and see title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, pp 365 *et seq*, 413

(*c*) *Chambers v Crichley*, *supra*, *Gonville v Hay* (1903), 21 R P C 49, see also *Armann v Lund* (1874), L R 18 Eq 330

(*d*) See p 194, *ante*

(*e*) *Thomson v Moore* (1889), 6 R P C 426, C A, (1890), 7 R P C 325, H L, 23 L R Ir 599, 626, *Brown and Brown Brothers & Co v Hastie & Co* (1906), 23 R P C 361, H L

(*f*) *Shoe Machinery Co v Cutlan* (No 2) (1896), 13 R P C, 141, 145

(*g*) *Otto v Steel* (1886), 3 R P C 109, C A

(*h*) *Horrocks v Stubbs* (1895), 12 R P C 540, *Re Deeley's Patent* (1894), 11 R P C 72

(*i*) *Magrath v Hardy* (1838), 4 Bing (N C) 782, *Bowman v Rostron* (1835), 2 Ad & El 295

(*k*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 32 For conditions governing the right to present a petition for revocation, see pp 206 *et seq*, *ante*

(*l*) See title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, p 258

(*m*) *Dudgeon v Thomson* (1877), 30 L T 244, *Oxford and Cambridge Universities v Richardson* (1802), 6 Ves 689, *Bickford v Skewes* (1837), 1 Web Pat Cas 211, *Wheatstone v Wilde* (1861), *Griffin, Patent Cases*, 1884—6, 247.

SECT 10
Legal Pro-
ceedings.

Prima facie
case of
infringement

admits validity (*n*) or is estopped from denying validity (*o*), the court deems this sufficient to warrant the grant of an injunction.

Unless some very strong evidence of validity in support of the motion is presented, the court seldom grants an interlocutory injunction in respect of an alleged infringement of a new patent (*p*).

A *prima facie* case must also be made out in respect of infringement (*a*), one clear case, however, of infringement will suffice (*b*)

The court may grant the injunction although the defendant offers to keep an account (*c*) It is, however, a very common practice for the court to order the motion to stand until the trial of the action on the defendant undertaking to keep an account

The court will consider the probability of grave injury to one side or the other arising from the grant, or of the refusal to grant, the injunction sought When an injunction is granted, the plaintiff is required to undertake to pay any damage resulting from the injunction should he subsequently prove to be wrong (*d*)

Delay in seeking an interim injunction, unless it can be satisfactorily explained (*e*), usually prevents the injunction being granted

An *ex parte* injunction may be obtained after issue of writ, provided the plaintiff can show that he would suffer great injury by delay (*f*).

Evidence.

447 The evidence on the application for the injunction is given upon affidavit The affidavit must state who is the patentee, and also that the invention is useful and novel, that a sufficient specification has been filed, and it should also clearly state wherein the alleged infringement consists An affidavit made on "information and belief" should show the source from whence the information has been obtained (*g*)

Interrogatories
and
discovery.

448 The rules relating to the administration of interrogatories and the discovery of documents which apply in ordinary actions apply equally to patent cases (*h*)

Documents dealing with alleged prior users have been held to be privileged (*i*) Communications between a patentee and his patent agent made at the time of the preparation of the specification are not privileged (*j*) The fact that discovery might lead to the disclosure of trade secrets does not deter the court from

(*n*) *Duroch v Mellor* (1845), 26 London Journal, 268

(*o*) *Clarke v Fergusson* (1859), 1 Giff 184 see p 219, *ante*

(*p*) *Caldwell v Vanvlassengen* (1851), 9 Hare, 415, *Lister v Norton Brothers & Co* (1884), 1 R P C 114, *British Tanning Co v Groth* (1889), 7 R P C 1

(*a*) *Briggs & Co v Lardeur* (1884), 1 R P C 126, *Anderson v Patent Oronite Co* (1886), 3 R P C 279

(*b*) *United Telephone Co v Sharples* (1885), 29 Ch D 164

(*c*) *Plimpton v Spiller* (1876), 4 Ch D 286, C A

(*d*) *Muntz v Greenfell* (1842), 2 Web Pat Cas 88, 91, *United Telephone Co v Tasker* (1888), 5 R P C 628, C A, title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, p 222

(*e*) *United Telephone Co v Equitable Telephone Association* (1888), 5 R P C 233

(*f*) See title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, p 274

(*g*) *Saccharin Corporation v. Chemical and Drugs Co* (1898), 15 R P C 53, C A

(*h*) See title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol XI, pp 35 *et seq.*

(*i*) *Carnegie Steel Co v Bell Brothers* (1907), 24 R P C 82, C A

(*j*) *Mosley v Victoria Rubber Co* (1886), 3 R P C 351, 55 L T. 482,

ordering it, if it is necessary in the interests of justice; but the court does what it can to protect the party compelled to disclose his secrets (*k*)

SECT. 10
Legal Pro-
ceedings.

Interrogatories tending to establish the fact of infringement are allowable (*l*)

449. The granting of an order for inspection is in the discretion of the court (*n*), and the court requires that a *prima facie* case of infringement shall first be made out (*o*) Sometimes the inspection is limited to scientific witnesses, who are required to refrain from disclosing any secrets which do not affect the question of infringement (*p*) A plaintiff may be allowed to take samples for analysis from the defendant's goods in order to test identity of composition of such goods and the patentee's goods (*q*) Mutual inspection by the parties may be ordered (*r*)

Inspection.

(v) Hearing and Evidence

450 Infringement actions are tried without a jury, unless the court otherwise directs (*s*) If the action is commenced in the Chancery Division, a jury cannot be obtained (*t*)

Proceedings
at trial

The court may, and on the request of either party must, call in the aid of an assessor specially qualified and try the case wholly or partially with his assistance (*u*) The court may also refer the matter to a referee, for the purpose of having experiments performed for the benefit of the court (*a*)

When a plaintiff is bringing a number of actions on the same patent against a number of defendants, the several actions may be consolidated, on the application of the defendants, so as to enable

(*k*) *Renard v Levinstein* (1864), 10 L T 94

(*l*) *Bovill v Smith* (1866), L R 2 Eq 459, *Swinborne v Nelson* (1853), 16 Beav 416, and see title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol XI, p 94, note (*n*)

(*n*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 34, and R S C, Ord 53A, r 18, *McDougall Brothers v Partington* (2) (1890), 7 R P C 351, 357, see title DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND INTERROGATORIES, Vol XI, pp 67 *et seq* An application for inspection may be made on motion to the court, or by summons, and supported by evidence on affidavit

(*o*) *Bovill v Moore* (1815), 2 Coop temp Cott 56, *Batley v Kynock* (1874), L R 19 Eq 90 (*Heatham v Oldham* (1888), 5 R P C 617

(*p*) *Flower v Lloyd*, [1876] W N 169, *Swan v Edwin Sinclair Tyre Co* (1903), 20 R P C 435

(*q*) *Patent Type Founding Co v Walter* (1860), 8 W R 353

(*r*) *Davenport v Jepson* (1862), 1 New Rep 307, *Germ Milling Co v. Robinson* (1885), 3 R P C 11

(*s*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 31 (1)

(*t*) *Warner v Murdoch, Murdoch v Warner* (1877), 4 Ch D 750, C A An infringement action in the King's Bench Division is not usually tried with a jury, unless there is an allegation of fraud (*Lucas (Joseph), Ltd v Miller & Co, Ltd* (1900), 17 R P C 165, C A) or a libel is involved (*Appleby's (Alfred) Twin Roller Churn, Ltd v Eadie (Albert) Churn, Ltd* (1899), 16 R P C 318)

(*u*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 31 (1), *Hattersley & Sons v Hodgson* (1903), 20 R P C 591, (1904), 21 R P C 517, C A, (1905), 22 R P C 229, C A

(*a*) Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), s 56, *Badische Anilin und Soda Fabrik v Levinstein* (1883), 24 Ch D 156, *Edison and Swan Electric Light Co v Holland* (1888), 5 R P C 459, *Moore v Bennett* (1884), 1 R P C 129, *North British Rubber Co. v Mackintosh & Co.* (1894), 11 R P C 477

- SECT 10**
Legal Proceedings
Evidence
- issues common to all the actions (for example, validity) to be tried in one action (*b*)
- Expert evidence**
- 451** The evidence must be given orally upon oath or affirmation (*c*) A patentee who has assigned the whole of his interest is a competent witness for the assignee (*d*) A licensee is also a competent witness
- In actions for the infringement of patents the evidence of expert witnesses is usually very important (*e*) Expert evidence is admissible to explain in what ways an invention has been used by an alleged infringer, to explain such differences as exist between an invention and the alleged infringement, or to explain technical terms and what are or are not mechanical equivalents, and to describe how machines work, at the same time pointing out what is new and old in the patentee's specification Evidence may also be given as to whether the features claimed by the patentee as his invention are to be found in the defendant's machines (*f*) An expert may be asked what difficulties, if any, a patentee has solved, but he may not say whether there is "subject-matter" in an alleged invention, nor give his opinion on whether there is infringement, for these are matters for the court and jury respectively
- Plaintiff's proof**
- A plaintiff must prove his patent and his specification unless these are admitted (*g*), and must prove the fact of infringement by showing that the defendant has made, sold, or used the manufacture, articles, or process, as the case may be
- Evidence where want of novelty or subject-matter pleaded**
- 452** When want of novelty has been pleaded, the plaintiff must give *prima facie* evidence that his invention is new (*h*), and, after such evidence has been given, the burden of proof that the invention is not novel by reason of prior publication or prior use is on the defendant
- On the issue of subject-matter, the plaintiff must put his specification in evidence, that the judge may see its terms and determine the ambit of its claims When the specification has already been construed by a court, the construction put upon it is adopted by another court of equal authority, provided the construction is not dependent on matters external to the specification itself, or, if there are such external facts, provided that they are not materially different from those before the previous court (*i*)
- Models may be put in by way of evidence in the same way as, and under the conditions which regulate the admission of, documents (*j*).
- (*b*) R S C, Old 49, r 8, *Amos v Chadwick, Robinson v Chadwick, Smith v Chadwick*, (1876), 4 Ch D 869, *Edison Bell Phonograph Corporation v Smith* (1894), 11 R P C 148, 389, C A, and see Yearly Practice of the Supreme Court, 1912, pp 698, 699
- (*c*) See title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 590 *et seq*
- (*d*) *Rloram v Elsee* (1825), 1 C & P 558, 563
- (*e*) On the functions of an expert witness, see *Brooks v Steele and Currie* (1896), 14 R P C 46, *per* LINDLEY, L J, at p 73, and see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 437, note (*h*), 480—482
- (*f*) *Seed v Higgins* (1860), 8 H L Cas 550
- (*g*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), ss 14 (1), 79
- (*h*) *Turner v Winter* (1787), 1 Web Pat Cas 77, 81
- (*i*) *National Optical Glazed Brick and Tile Co v Grand Hotel, Birmingham* (1901), 18 R P C 249, *Ehrlich v Ihlee* (1888), 5 R P C 437, 449, C A,
- (*j*) As to documentary evidence generally, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 510 *et seq*

453 In default of appearance by a defendant, the plaintiff may on motion obtain judgment, upon formally proving his title and the fact of infringement (*h*)

SECT. 10.

Legal Proceedings,

Default of appearance.

(vi) Relief

(a) Damages or Account of Profits

454 A plaintiff who succeeds in upholding the validity of his patent, and who proves infringement, may be entitled, at his option, either to an account of profits or to damages, but he is not entitled to both against the same defendant (*i*) By taking an account of profits he condones the infringement (*m*) A plaintiff may, however, have an account of profits against one defendant and damages against another defendant in the same action (*n*)

Damages or account of profits

The measure of damages is the loss actually suffered by the plaintiff, and not the profit made by the infringer The loss must be the natural and direct consequence of the defendant's acts (*o*) In calculating the damages, the loss of profit owing to competition may be considered (*p*), and in computing the damages due to competition, the plaintiff's establishment charges may be taken into consideration (*q*) Sometimes the amount may be fixed by considering what the defendant would have had to pay in royalties on his sales (*r*)

Measure of damages

455 Innocent infringers of patents granted after the 1st January, 1908, can now obtain relief from damages (*s*) The burden of proving innocence is on the infringer, as he is *prima facie* liable for damages

Relief from damages

456 In an inquiry as to damages, a defendant must give full information regarding the number of infringing articles he has sold, and the names and addresses of purchasers (*t*)

Inquiry as to damages

On electing to have an account of profits, a plaintiff may require the defendant to file a complete affidavit showing how many infringing articles he has made or sold (*u*) The defendant may

(*k*) *Pneumatic Tyre Co v Chisholm & Co* (1896), 13 R P C 488, *Edison United Phonograph Co v Young* (1894), 11 R P C 489, see title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 185 *et seq*

(*l*) *Neilson v Betts* (1871), L R 5 H L 1, 22, *De Vitre v Betts* (1873), L R 6 H L 319

(*m*) *Neilson v Betts*, *supra*

(*n*) *Booth v Tootal, Broadhurst Lee Co* (1894), 11 R P C 175, *Penn v Bobby*, *Penn v Jack*, *Penn v Fernie* (1866), L R 3 Eq 308

(*o*) *United Horse Shoe and Nail Co v Stewart & Co* (1888), 5 R P C 260, 268, 13 App Cas 401, and see *Meters, Ltd v Metropolitan Gas Meters, Ltd* (1911), 28 R P C 157, C A, 104 L T 113, *Clement Talbot, Ltd v Wilson* (1909), 26 R P C 467, and see, generally title DAMAGES, Vol X, pp 310 *et seq*

(*p*) *British United Shoe Machinery Co, Ltd v Fussell & Sons, Ltd* (1910), 27 R P C 205

(*q*) *Leeds Forge Co v Deighton's Patent Flue Co* (1907), 25 R P C 209

(*r*) *English and American Machinery Co v Union Boot and Shoe Machine Co* (1895), 13 R P C 64, *British Motor Syndicate v Taylor (John) & Sons* (1900), 17 R P C 723, C A, *American Braided Wire Co v Thomson & Co* (1890), 7 R P C 152

(*s*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 33

(*t*) *American Braided Wire Co v Thompson & Co* (1888), 5 R P C 375, *Saccharin Corporation v Chemicals and Drugs Co* (1900), 17 R P C 612, C A A statement of any offer made by the defendant to agree a certain sum as damages and refused by the plaintiff may be ordered to be inserted in the order directing the inquiry (*British Vacuum Co, Ltd v Exton Hotels Co, Ltd* (1908), 25 R P C 617, 630)

(*u*) *Murray v Clayton* (1872), L R 15 Eq 115, *Saccharin Corporation v Chemicals and Drugs Co*, *supra*

SECT 10
Legal Pro-
ceedings.

also be interrogated, and compelled to produce his books (a). The amount due on an account of profits is a debt provable in the bankruptcy of the defendant (b)

(b) *Injunction*

Injunction.

457 On the principle that a person who has already infringed a patent will be likely, unless restrained, to continue to infringe, a successful plaintiff in an action for infringement may obtain an injunction against the defendant (c). Actual infringement is not necessary, a threat to infringe, or an obvious deliberate intention to infringe, by a defendant entitles a plaintiff to an injunction (d). Where there are many infringers of the same patent a patentee should not commence a large number of actions and apply for injunctions in each case, he should take proceedings against one, and inform the others what he is doing (e).

A person who commits a breach of an injunction or who knowingly aids and abets another in doing so is guilty of contempt of court (f).

(c) *Delivery up or Destruction of Infringing Articles*

Order for
delivery up or
destruction of
infringing
articles

458 A successful plaintiff may obtain an order of the court for delivery up or destruction of all infringing articles within his control or possession (g), unless such an order would be unreasonable (h).

(d) *Certificate of Validity*

Certificate of
validity

459 In an action for infringement in which the validity of a patent has been upheld, the court may certify that the validity of the patent came in question (i). The certificate should be applied for by the plaintiff at the close of the trial. For the prevention of collusion between parties, and for the protection of the public, the judge is bound not to grant a certificate, unless validity has in fact been proved to his satisfaction (l). When the defendant does not

(a) *Saxby v Easterbrook* (1872), L R 7 Exch 207

(b) *Watson v Holliday* (1882), 20 Ch D 780

(c) See, generally title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, pp 206 *et seq*

(d) *Frearson v Loe* (1878), 9 Ch D 48, 65, *Dowling v Billington* (1890) 7 R P C 191, C A, *Shoe Machinery Co v Cullin* (1895), 12 R P C 342, *British United Shoe Machinery Co v Collier (Simon), Ltd* (1909), 26 R P C 21, 534, C A, (1910), 27 R P C 567, H L, *Adair v Young* (1879), 12 Ch D 13, C A

(e) *Bovill v Crate* (1865), L R 1 Eq 388. An interim injunction is rarely granted in cases where the patent has not been established (*Trautner v Patmore* (1911), 29 R P C 60).

(f) *Dick v Haslam* (1891), 8 R P C 196, *Incandescent Gas Light Co v Sluce* (1900), 17 R P C 173, C A, and see titles CONTEMPT OF COURT, ATTACHMENT AND COMMITTAL, Vol VII, pp 306 *et seq*, INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, pp 291 *et seq*

(g) *Plimpton v Malcolmson* (1876), 3 Ch D 531, *Vavasour v Krupp* (1878), 9 Ch D 351, 360. The alternative order should be asked for at the trial, the option cannot be exercised on a subsequent motion to vary the minutes of the order (*British Westinghouse Electric and Manufacturing Co, Ltd v Electrical Co, Ltd* (1911), 28 R P C 517, 532, 55 Sol Jo 689).

(h) *Siddell v Vickers, Sons & Co* (1887), 5 R P C 81, 101, *Automatic Weighing Machine Co v Fearby* (1893), 10 R P C 442, *United Telephone Co v London and Globe Telephone and Maintenance Co* (1884), 26 Ch D 766.

(i) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 35. A second certificate may be granted where further grounds of objection are raised in a subsequent action against a patent the validity of which has been certified (*Flour Omidness Co, Ltd v Hutchinson* (1909), 26 R P C 597).

(l) *Stocker v Rodgers* (1843), 1 Car & Kir 99, *Peroni v Hudson* (1884), 1 R P C 261, *Gall v O'Neill and Brown* (1909), 27 R P C 18.

appear, or when an action is settled during the progress of the trial, *prima facie* evidence of validity may be given, and if the judge is satisfied a certificate is usually granted (*h*). No appeal lies from the decision of a judge on the question of the grant of or the refusal to grant a certificate (*m*).

SECT. 10
Legal Pro-
ceedings.

When a certificate of validity has been obtained, no further certificate need be sought in any subsequent action on the same patent (*n*), unless the patent has been amended since the grant of the certificate (*o*).

460 The effect of obtaining a certificate is that, in any subsequent action for infringement of the patent, the plaintiff, if successful, may, unless the court otherwise directs, obtain his full costs as between solicitor and client (*p*). It is for the defendant to show that he should not pay solicitor and client costs under this provision (*q*).

Effect of
certificate of
validity

(e) *Revocation*

461 When a defendant, who has counterclaimed for revocation, proves successful in an action against him for infringement, the court may revoke the patent (*r*). Where, however, the court holds the patent invalid on some ground that admits of removal by amendment of the specification, the court may, instead of revoking the patent, order the amendment required (*s*).

Revocation
of patent

(vii) *Costs*

462 The costs of an action for infringement are in the discretion of the judge before whom the action is tried (*t*). It is important at the conclusion of the trial to ask for a certificate that the particulars of breaches, or the particulars of objections, as the case may be, were reasonable and proper, as no costs are allowed on taxation in respect of any particulars not so certified (*u*). The costs

Costs

(*b*) *Haydock v Bradbury* (1886), 4 R P C 74, *Chadburn's (Ship) Telegraph Co v Robinson* (1905) 22 R P C 468, *Edison United Phonograph Co v Young* (1891), 11 R P C 489, *Brooks & Co v Lyett* (1903), 20 R P C 390, *Consolidated Pneumatic Tool Co v Churchill & Co* (1905), 22 R P C 367, see also *Delta Metal Co v Maxim Nordenfoll Guns and Ammunition Co* (1891), 8 R P C 248, *Cloughie v Foster* (1903), 21 R P C 17, *Morris and Bastie v Young* (1891), 12 R P C 457, *H L, Ferguson Superheaters, Ltd v Askern Coal and Iron Co, Ltd* (1912), 29 R P C 431.

(*m*) *Haslam Co v Hall* (1888), 5 R P C 144 C A.

(*n*) *Edison and Swan Electric Light Co v Holland* (1889), 6 R P C 243, C A.

(*o*) *Brooks & Co v Rendall, Underwood & Co* (1906), 24 R P C 17.

(*p*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 35, and see the text, *infra*.

(*q*) *Automatic Weighing Machine Co v National Exhibitions Association* (1891), 8 R P C 345, *United Telephone v Paterson* (1889), 6 R P C 142, see also *Saccharin Corporation v Dawson* (1902), 19 R P C 165, 173, *Proctor v Sutton Lodge Chemical Co* (1888), 5 R P C 184.

(*r*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 32, and see p 219, *ante*. For conditions under which revocation may be obtained, see pp 206 *et seq.*, *ante*.

(*s*) See also pp 172, note (*q*), 208, *ante*, Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (9 Edw 7, c 29), s 22.

(*t*) R S C, Ord 65, r 1, and see titles PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE, SOLICITORS.

(*u*) R S C, Ord 53A, r 22 see also *Rowcliffe v Morris* (1886), 3 R P C 145, *Duckett & Son v Sankey & Son* (1899), 16 R P C 357, *British, Foreign and Colonial Automatic Light Controlling Co, Ltd v Metropolitan Gas Meters, Ltd* (1912), 29 R P C 303, [1912] 2 Ch 82. As to taxation of costs generally, see title SOLICITORS.

SECT 10
Legal Pro
ceedings

Plaintiff's
costs

of witnesses attending in respect of any alleged breach are not allowed, unless the particulars of such breach are certified (a).

A plaintiff who succeeds in an action in which he has been able to plead the possession of a certificate that the validity of the patent in suit had been called in question in a previous action for infringement, is entitled to have his full costs as between solicitor and client, unless the court otherwise directs (b). A plaintiff whose conduct is oppressive may be deprived of his costs even though he is successful in the action (c). A plaintiff may discontinue after the defence has been delivered by leave of the court, upon such terms as to costs as the court may direct (d).

Costs on
several issues

Where one party is successful on some issues and the other party is successful on others, the costs should be apportioned (e). Provided the issues have been kept quite distinct, the costs are apportioned where one party has succeeded on the issue of invalidity and failed on the issue of infringement (f).

Special
allowances

The directors of a limited company whose servants have infringed a patent are personally liable for the costs (g).

When it is necessary to have scientific evidence proper fees paid to experts who have been called as witnesses will be allowed, but the fees of experts who are not witnesses but merely advise counsel are not allowed, unless a special order of the court to that effect is obtained (h). Costs on the higher scale are only allowed in cases of great difficulty (i).

(a) *Honiball v Bloomer* (1854), 10 Exch 538, *Longbottom v Shaw* (1889), 6 R P C 510.

(b) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 35, see p 225, ante, and see *Flour Orlising Co, Ltd v Hutchinson* (1909), 26 R P C 597. This provision does not apply to counterclaims (*British Vacuum Cleaner Co, Ltd v London and South Western Rail Co* (1910), 27 R P C 649, 670).

(c) *Unn v D'Albuquerque* (1865), 34 Beav 595, and see *Gill v Phillips & Son, Ltd* (1911), 29 R P C 397, R S C, Oid 26 r 1.

(d) *Wilcox and Gibbs' Sewing Machine Co v James Brothers* (1897), 14 R P C 523, *Brooks & Co v Lycett* (1902), 19 R P C 166. As to costs in cases where a counterclaim for the revocation of the patent is not proceeded with, see *Babcock and Wilcox, Ltd v Water Tube Boiler and Engineering Co* (1910), 27 R P C 626.

(e) *Badische Anilin und Soda Fabrik v Levinstein* (1885), 29 Ch D 306, 418, C A, compare *Vidal Dyes Syndicate, Ltd v Levinstein, Ltd* (1912), 29 R P C 245, C A, and see *Ossum Lamp Works, Ltd v "Z" Electric Lamp Manufacturing Co, Ltd* (1912), 29 R P C 401, 429. *True and Variable Electric Lamp Syndicate v Bryant Trading Syndicate* (1908), 25 R P C 461, *Crosthwaite Fue Bar Syndicate, Ltd v Senior* (1909), 26 R P C 713, 733.

(f) *Phillips v Ivel Cycle Co* (1890), 7 R P C 77, 85, *Cassel Gold Extracting Co v Cyanide Gold Recovery Syndicate* (1894), 11 R P C 638, (1895), 12 R P C 232, 258, C A, *Sunlight Incandescent Gas Light Co v Incandescent Gas Light Co* (1897), 14 R P C 757, *Dunlop Pneumatic Tyre v Wapshare Tube Co* (1900), 17 R P C 433, *Kaye v Chubb & Sons* (1887), 4 R P C 289, 300, *Haskell Golf Ball Co v Hutchinson* (1906), 23 R P C 125.

(g) *Betts v De Vitre* (1868), 3 Ch App 429, 441, *Spencer v Ancoats Vale Rubber Co* (1888), 6 R P C 46, C A.

(h) *Consolidated Pneumatic Tool Co v Ingersoll Sergeant Drill Co* (1908), 25 R P C 574.

(i) *Gadd and Mason v Manchester Corporation* (1892), 9 R P C 516, C A. Three counsel may sometimes be allowed. The court will only give the costs of shorthand notes in exceptional circumstances, but it is

It is not usual for a stay upon a judgment to be granted; but sometimes when the matter is of great importance to the defendants a stay pending appeal is allowed, terms being usually imposed that the defendant shall keep an account and proceed with his appeal without delay (k)

SECT. 10
Legal Pro-
ceedings.
Stay

SUB SECT 2—In respect of Threats of Legal Proceedings

463 Where any person (l), claiming to be the patentee of an invention, by circulars (m), advertisements, or otherwise (n), threatens (o) any other person with legal proceedings or liability in respect of any alleged infringement of the patent, any person aggrieved thereby may bring an action against him and may obtain an injunction against the continuance of such threats, and may

usual for the parties to agree that the costs shall be costs in the cause, or to make some other mutually acceptable arrangements, see *Dunlop Pneumatic Tyre Co v Wapshure Tube Co* (1900), 17 R P C 433, *Bradford Dyers' Association v Bury* (1901), 19 R P C 125, *Osram Lamp Works, Ltd v "Z" Electric Lamp Manufacturing Co, Ltd* (1912), 29 R P C 401, 429, compare *Wilson v Wilson Brothers Bobbin Co, Ltd* (1911), 28 R P C 741, 744, and see *British Westinghouse Electric and Manufacturing Co, Ltd v Braulih* (1910), 27 R P C 209, 233, C A

(k) *Hocking & Co v Fraser & Co* (1885), 3 R P C 3, 7, *North British Rubber Co v Mackintosh & Co* (1894), 11 R P C 477, *Proctor v Benning* (1887), 4 R P C 333, 363, C A, *Osram Lamp Works, Ltd v "Z" Electric Lamp Manufacturing Co, Ltd*, *supra*, at p 430

(l) A person who has been restrained from publishing threats does not break the injunction by subsequently bringing an action for infringement (*Beven v Welsbach Incandescent Gas Light Co, Ltd* (1902), 20 R P C 69), nor by subsequently issuing threatening circulars in the capacity of agent for a third person (*Ellam v Martyn & Co* (1898), 16 R P C 28)

(m) For example of threats by circular, see *Cars v Bland Light Syndicate, Ltd* (1910), 28 R P C 33. An interlocutory motion to restrain the issue of circulars may be refused or ordered to stand over until after the trial of the action for infringement (*Household v Fawburn* (1884), 1 R P C 109, *Barnett v Barrett's Screw Stopper Bottling Co* (1884), 1 R P C 9, *Sharp v Brauer* (1886), 3 R P C 193), or on an undertaking to prosecute the action for infringement with due diligence (*Mackie v Soho Laundry Supply Co* (1892), 9 R P C 465). For form of order staying a "threats action" where the defendant offers an undertaking to commence an action for infringement, see *Wrightson v Taylor, Maddox & Co* (1907), 24 R P C 347

(n) The words "or otherwise" are not to be confined to threats *ejusdem generis* with "circulars or advertisements," but cover letters written in answer to inquiries (*Slunner & Co v Shew & Co*, [1893] 1 Ch 413, C A) or written without prejudice (*Kurtz v Spence* (1887), 5 R P C 161), or written by a solicitor (*Ingels v Hubert Unchangeable Fyclel Syndicate, Ltd* (1902), 19 R P C 201, following *Barrett v Day* (1890), 7 R P C 54, *Thiffield and East Riding Pure Linseed Cake Co v Waterloo Mills Cake and Warehousing Co* (1886), 31 Ch D 638, *Combined Weighing and Advertising Co v Automatic Weighing Machine Co* (1889), 42 Ch D 665, approved in *Slunner & Co v Shew & Co*, *supra*), but a mere general warning is not a threat (*Crowther v United Flexible Metallic Tubing Co, Ltd* (1905), 22 R P C 549, and see *Challender v Royle* (1887), 36 Ch D 425 C A, discussed in *Johnson v Edge* (1892), 9 R P C 142, C A)

(o) It is not necessary that the letter should refer specifically to any patent, in order to constitute a threat (*Douglas v Pintsch's Patent Lighting Co*, [1897] 1 Ch 176). The threat must refer to some actual infringement on which an action for infringement may be founded (*Willoughby v Taylor* (1893), 11 R P C 45), or may refer to an intended infringement if the infringement when carried out would amount to an actual infringement (*Johnson v Edge*, *supra*, per LINDLEY, L J, at p 148), but it need not be made to the person bringing the action to restrain (*Johnson v Edge*, *supra*).

SECT 10
Legal Proceedings.

recover such damage, if any, as he has sustained thereby, if the alleged infringement to which the threats related was not in fact an infringement of any legal rights of the person making the threats (*p*). But no action will lie if the person (*q*) making the threats with due diligence commences and prosecutes an action for infringement of his patent (*r*).

(*p*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 36 The section confers an entirely new right in which malice is not an issue between the parties, the plaintiff is relieved from establishing malice as he had to do in the old common law action (*Craig v Douding* (1908), 25 R P C 259, C A, *per* COZENS HARDY, M R, at p 262, 98 L T 291) Express malice must be proved to obtain under the common law an interlocutory injunction to restrain threats (*Parnell v Dredge* (1896), 13 R P C 392, following *Halsey v Brotherhood* (1880), 15 Ch D 514, *Bonnard v Perryman*, [1891] 2 Ch 269, C A) The plaintiff in an action to restrain threats may, if the validity of the patent is asserted in the defence, join issue in reply (*Dowson, Taylor & Co v Diosophone Co* (1895), 12 R P C 95, C A)

(*q*) A person simply entitled to the benefit of an agreement for the assignment of a patent is not within the proviso of the section by reason of the fact that the patentee has commenced an action for infringement (*Kensington and Knightsbridge Electric Lighting Co v Lane Fox Electrical Co*, [1891] 2 Ch 573)

(*r*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 36 Due diligence applies to the word "prosecute" as well as to "commence" (*Voelker Incandescent Mantle, Ltd v Welsbach Incandescent Gas Light Co, Ltd* (1901), 18 R P C 494), but the date from which an action must be proceeded with with due diligence is the date of the threat and not of the act done against which the threat is directed (*Haskell Golf Ball Co v Hutchinson* (1904), 21 R P C 497, following *Challender v Royle* (1887), 36 Ch D 425, C A) To come within the proviso it is not necessary that the action should be commenced after the action to restrain threats (*Barrett v Day* (1890), 7 R P C 54), the action for infringement may be commenced before the threats are made (*Berliner v Edison Bell Consolidated Phonograph Co, Ltd* (1899), 16 R P C 336, and see *Dunlop Pneumatic Tyre Co, Ltd v New Seddon Pneumatic Tyre Co, Ltd* (1897) 14 R P C 332, C A) An action for infringement is none the less proceeded with with due diligence because it is subsequently abandoned (*Peck v Hinder, Ltd* (1898), 15 R P C 113, *Tenler v Stevenson & Sons* (1897), 15 R P C 24, *Colley v Hart* (1890), 7 R P C 101, *English and American Machinery Co v Gave Machine Co* (1894), 11 R P C 627), or because it is dismissed by the court (*Colley v Hart supra*), or because delay is caused by the patentee's endeavour to combine his action for infringement with the action for threats by counterclaim (*Colley v Hart, supra*) an action for infringement must be brought with reference to infringements of the same and not of a different character (*Combined Weighing and Advertising Co v Automatic Weighing Machine Co* (1889), 42 Ch D 665, 671), but an action for infringement is within the proviso if brought against a person who although he has not been threatened is using the alleged infringement ("*Z*" *Electric Lamp Manufacturing Co, Ltd v Osram Lamp Works, Ltd* (1911), 28 R P C 479), and although the particulars of breaches do not specify all the articles in connection with which the threats are made (*Lycett Saddle Co, Ltd v Brooks & Co, Ltd* (1904), 21 R P C 656) An action for infringement on an amended specification is in substance an action for infringement within the proviso, although an application to amend the specification is pending, and the statement of claim in the infringement action asks for leave to put the amended specification in evidence (*Hall v Stepney Spare Motor Wheel, Ltd* (1910), 27 R P C 233, and see S C, [1911] 1 Ch 514) A threat of an action for infringement may be a "satisfactory reason" within the Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw. 7, c 29), s 27 (2), for refusing to revoke a patent (*Re Taylor's Patent*, [1912] 1 Ch 635), see note (k), p 209, *ante* As to proceedings for infringement, see pp 210 *et seq*, *ante*.

SECT 11 — *International and Colonial Arrangements.*

SECT 11.

**Inter-
national
and
Colonial
Arrange-
ments.**

Inventions
patented
abroad

464 A person who has applied for protection for an invention in a foreign State (*a*), of which the Government has made arrangements with the Crown for mutual protection of inventions, is entitled to a patent for his invention in priority to other applicants (*b*). The patent will bear the same date as the date of the application in the foreign State (*c*), if the application in this country is made within twelve months from the first application for protection in the foreign State (*d*), but the grantee of such a patent is not entitled to recover damages for infringements happening prior to the actual date on which his complete specification is accepted in this country (*e*).

465 The application for such a patent must be made in the same manner as an ordinary application (*f*), but it must be accompanied by a complete specification (*g*), it must contain a statutory declaration that foreign application has been made for protection of the invention, it must specify all the foreign States or British possessions in which, and the official date or dates at which, any such application has been made, and it must be signed by the person or persons by whom such application was made (*h*).

Mode of
application

Further, a copy or copies of the specification or specifications and drawings or documents filed or deposited by the applicant in the Patent Office of the foreign State or British possession must be left with the application, or within such further time (*i*) not exceeding three months as the Comptroller may allow, and such copy or copies must be certified or otherwise verified to the Comptroller's satisfaction (*j*). If any document is in a foreign

Documents
accompanying
application

(*a*) As to the foreign States affected by this provision, see note (*q*), p 230, *post*

(*b*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 91 (1) "Person" includes corporation (*Re Carcz's Application for a Patent* (1889), 6 R P C 552, *Re Société Anonyme du Générateur du Temple's Application for a Patent* (1895), 13 R P C 54-56). As to the right to oppose such application and the grounds of opposition, see 29 R P C Appendix, 1912 (A).

(*c*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 83. The payment of renewal fees etc is reckoned from this date. The dates of both the foreign and the British application are to be entered in the Register, see p 179, *ante*.

(*d*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 91 (1). A foreign patentee may obtain a patent in this country in the ordinary way without availing himself of the privileges of this provision (*British Tanning Co v G.oth* (1891), 8 R P C 113, 60 L J (n) 235, *Acetylene Illuminating Co v United Alkali Co* (1902), 19 R P C 213, [1902] 1 Ch 494), and see p 129, *ante*.

(*e*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 91 (1).

(*f*) *Ibid*, s 91 (3).

(*g*) *Ibid*.

(*h*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 15. If the original signatory is dead, the application must be signed by his legal representative. The patent is only granted to the person who has actually sought protection in the foreign country (*Re Shullenberger's Application for a Patent* (1889), 6 R P C 550, *Re Carcz's Application for a Patent* (1889), 6 R P C 552).

(*i*) Application for such extension must be made on Patents Form No 5 (fee £2 for each month of extension) (Patents Rules, 1908, r 16).

(*k*) *Ibid*. "*Prima facie* the foreign specification should be considered and examined on precisely the same principles as an English patent" (ruling of the Comptroller General, reported in the 27 R P C Appendix (1910b)).

SECT 11
Inter-
national
and
Colonial
Arrange-
ments

Non-
 acceptance
 Publication
 States and
 colonies
 affected.

language it must be accompanied by a translation verified to the Comptroller's satisfaction (*l*)

If the complete specification is not accepted within twelve months, it and the drawings become open to public inspection (*m*)

466 A patent granted under any international or colonial arrangement is not invalidated by the publication of a description, or by the use of the invention in this country, during the twelve months in which the application may be made (*n*)

The above provisions (*o*) for mutual protection of inventions apply only to those foreign States to which they are declared to be applicable by Orders in Council (*p*), and where a colonial legislature has made satisfactory provisions for the protection of inventions patented in this country, an Order in Council may be issued applying the provisions to that colony with any variations or additions stated in the Order (*q*)

SECT 12 —Patent Agents.

SUB-SECT 1 —Register

Register of
 Patent
 Agents

467 A Register of Patent Agents is kept by the Chartered Institute of Patent Agents (*i*), containing a list of all agents registered, their names in full, their addresses, the dates of their registration, and any other additions which the council of the Institute may consider worthy of mention (*s*) Printed copies are published annually by the Institute, and such copies are evidence of the contents of the Register (*t*)

Registrar

The Register is kept by a Registrar appointed by the Institute (*u*), whose duty it is to make such corrections and alterations in the Register as are ordered by the rules (*a*), or by the Institute (*b*), or by the Board of Trade (*c*), and the Board of Trade hears appeals from decisions of the Registrar or the Institute (*d*)

SUB SECT 2 —Who may Act

Patent agent

468 A patent agent is defined to be an agent for obtaining

(*l*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 16

(*m*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 91 (3).

(*n*) *Ibid*, s 91 (2)

(*o*) See the text, *supra*

(*p*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 91 (4)

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 91 (5) An International Convention for the Protection of Industrial Property exists between Belgium, Brazil, Denmark with Faroe Islands, France with Algeria and colonies, Great Britain with New Zealand and Queensland, Italy, Japan, Netherlands with Dutch East Indies, Surinam and Curaçoa, Norway, Portugal with the Azores and Madeira, Santo Domingo, Servia, Spain, Sweden, Switzerland, Tunis, and the United States of America Similar arrangements for the mutual protection of inventions have been made between Great Britain and each of the following States and colonies —Honduras, Mexico, Paraguay, Tasmania, Uruguay, Western Australia, see Instructions to Applicants, pp 7, 8

(*r*) The Register is kept pursuant to rules made by the Board of Trade by virtue of *ibid*, s 86 (1) (Register of Patent Agents Rules, 1908, Stat R & O, 1907, p 856, see *Patent Agents (Institute) v Lockwood*, [1894] A C 347)

(*s*) Register of Patent Agents Rules, 1908, r 3

(*t*) *Ibid*, r 4

(*u*) *Ibid*, r 5

(*a*) *Ibid*, rr 11–15

(*b*) *Ibid*, rr 14, 20

(*c*) *Ibid*, rr 6, 14, 16–19.

(*d*) *Ibid*, rr 21–27.

SECT. 12.
Patent

patents in the United Kingdom (e), and no person is entitled to describe himself as a patent agent, whether by advertisement, by description on his place of business, by any document issued by him, or otherwise, unless he is registered as a patent agent (j)

Only persons qualified in one of the following two ways may be registered —(1) persons who prove to the satisfaction of the Board of Trade that they were *bond fide* practising as patent agents before the 24th December, 1888 (q), (2) persons who have passed the examination or examinations prescribed by the Board of Trade (h) and regulated by the Institute (i). The successful candidate receives a certificate (g) from the Institute, and on presenting this to the Registrar (k) is entitled to be registered as a patent agent (l).

Qualifications
for registra-
tion

469 The Comptroller must refuse to recognise as agent any person who neither resides nor has a place of business in the United Kingdom or the Isle of Man (m), and may refuse to recognise as agent, or to receive further communications relating to patents from —(1) any person whose name has been erased from the Register for unprofessional conduct (n) and not restored (o), (2) any person who after being given an opportunity of being heard is proved to the satisfaction of the Board of Trade to have been guilty of an offence or misconduct which would have rendered him liable, if his name had been on the Register, to have his name erased (p), (3) any company which, if it had been an individual, the Comptroller could refuse to recognise as agent (p), (4) any company or firm in which any such individual is manager, director, or partner (q).

Persons who
must or may
not be
recognised
as patent
agents.

SUB-SECT. 3 — Employment

470 All communications to the Comptroller may be signed and

What a
patent agent
may do

(e) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 84 (4)

(f) *Ibid.*, s 84 (1), (3). As to the Register of Patent Agents, see p 230, *ante*. Anyone knowingly contravening this provision is liable to a fine of £20, but anyone may act as an ordinary agent for a patentee, and describe himself as "agent," without infringing it (*Graham v Fanta* (1892), 9 R P C 164, *Graham v Eli*, *Graham Hughes*, *Graham v Barlow* (1898), 15 R P C 259).

(g) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 84 (2). Such persons must send a statutory declaration in the prescribed form to the Board in support of their allegation (Register of Patent Agents Rules, 1908 Appendix A, Form 2), and the Board may require further proof (Register of Patent Agents Rules 1908, r '6). Until such persons are registered they have no *locus standi* as patent agents, and are liable to a fine of £20 if they describe themselves as patent agents (*Starey v Graham* [1899] 1 Q B 406). A patent agent before the 24th December, 1888, must be registered and pay the necessary fees before he can continue practising as a patent agent (*Starey v Graham*, *supra*).

(h) Register of Patent Agents Rules, 1908, r 7—10

(i) *Ibid.*, r 9, 10. As to the Institute, see p 230, *ante*.

(j) Register of Patent Agents Rules, 1908, r 10 (c)

(k) As to the registrar, see p 230, *ante*.

(l) Register of Patent Agents Rules, 1908, r 7

(m) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 85 (3)

(n) As to professional misconduct, compare titles MEDICINE AND PHARMACY, Vol XX, p 321, SOLICITORS

(o) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 85 (1), Patents Rules, 1908, r 9, Register of Patent Agents Rules, 1908, r 17

(p) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 85 (1), Patent Office Rules, 1908, r 9, Register of Patent Agents Rules, 1908, r 17

(q) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s. 85 (2)

SECT 12
Patent
Agents

all attendances upon him made by a duly authorised agent (*r*), except that the Comptroller has power to require the personal signature or presence of an applicant, opponent or other person, and that certain documents must be signed by the individual himself (*s*)

Duties of
patent agent

A patent agent, though not bound to be accurately acquainted with patent law (*t*), is expected to be familiar with the practice of obtaining patents, and may be liable for the consequences of any failure to use the skill properly to be expected from him (*a*). He ought not to avail himself in competition with the patentee of information which he obtained in confidence when acting as his agent (*b*)

SECT 13 -- Offences

False entries

471 Any person who makes or causes to be made a false entry in any statutory register, or a writing falsely purporting to be a copy of an entry in any such register, or produces or tenders or causes to be produced or tendered in evidence any such writing, knowing the entry or writing to be false, is guilty of a misdemeanour (*c*)

False claim
of patent
rights

472 A person who falsely represents (*d*) that any article sold by him is a patented article is liable to conviction (*e*)

Use of words
"Patent
Office"

473 Any person who uses on his place of business, or on any document issued by him, or otherwise, the words "Patent Office," or any other words suggesting that his place of business is officially connected with, or is, the Patent Office, is liable to conviction (*f*)

Use of words
"patent
agent"

474 An offence is also committed if a person falsely describes himself as "patent agent" (*g*)

(*r*) Patents Rules, 1908, r 9

(*s*) *I.e.*, applications for patents, or for the revocation of patents, or for the restoration of lapsed patents, requests for leave to amend applications, specifications, or letters patent, authorisations of agents, notices of opposition, requests for issue of duplicate letters patent, and surrenders of letters patent (Patents Rules 1908, r 9)

(*t*) The Patent Office does not undertake to give legal advice or opinions on any subject connected with patent law, which, like other laws is left to the interpretation of professional men, see Instructions to Applicants, p 7. The remuneration of the patent agent is a matter for arrangement between him and the person employing him

(*a*) See title NEGLIGENCE, Vol XXI, pp 367-370

(*b*) *Wheatstone v Wilde* (1861), Griffin Patent Cases, 1884—6, 217

(*c*) Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7 c 29), s 89 (1), see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX p 743

(*d*) The term "false representation" includes the selling of an article having stamped, engraved or impressed on it or otherwise applied to it the word "patent," "patented," or any other word expressing or implying that the article is patented (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 89 (3) (which applies even when a provisional specification has been lodged but a patent has not been registered (*R v Wallis* (1886), 3 R P C 1, *R v Crompton* (1886), 3 R P C 367), compare *Cheavin v Walker* (1877), 5 Ch D 850, 863, C A, *Linoleum Manufacturing Co v Aarn* (1878), 7 Ch D 834))

(*e*) Penalty not exceeding £5 (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 89 (2)) A person whose complete specification has been accepted is regarded as having all the privileges of a patentee (*ibid*, s 10, *R v Townsend* (1896), 13 R P C 265)

(*f*) Penalty not exceeding £20 (Patents and Designs Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 29), s 89 (5))

(*g*) See p 230, *ante*. As to the unlawful use of the Royal Arms, see title TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES, AND DESIGNS

PAWNS AND PLEDGES.

	PAGE
PART I THE CONTRACT OF PAWN - - - - -	234
SECT 1 DEFINITIONS - - - - -	234
SECT 2 CLASSES OF PAWN - - - - -	235
PART II PAWNS AT COMMON LAW - - - - -	235
SECT 1 NATURE OF THE CONTRACT - - - - -	235
SECT 2 SUBJECT-MATTER - - - - -	236
SECT 3 MAKING OF THE CONTRACT DELIVERY - - - - -	238
SECT 4 EXTINCTION OF THE CONTRACT - - - - -	239
SECT 5 RIGHTS AND DUTIES OF PAWNEE - - - - -	239
Sub-sect 1 Who may Pawn - - - - -	239
(i) In General - - - - -	239
(ii) Mercantile Agents or Factors - - - - -	239
Sub-sect 2 Warranty by Pawner - - - - -	241
Sub-sect 3 Title and Property of Pawnee - - - - -	241
Sub-sect 4 Right to Redeem - - - - -	241
Sub-sect 5 Remedies of Pawnee - - - - -	242
SECT 6 RIGHTS AND LIABILITIES OF PAWNER - - - - -	243
Sub-sect 1 Property and Possession - - - - -	243
Sub-sect 2 Care of Pawn - - - - -	243
Sub-sect 3 Transfer of Pawnee's Rights - - - - -	244
Sub-sect 4 Remedies of Pawnee - - - - -	244
SECT 7 INTERVENING RIGHTS OF THIRD PARTIES - - - - -	245
Sub-sect 1 On Execution or Distress - - - - -	245
Sub-sect 2 On Bankruptcy - - - - -	246
Sub-sect 3 Rights of True Owner - - - - -	246
PART III PAWNS UNDER THE PAWNBROKERS ACT - - - - -	248
SECT 1 REGULATION OF PAWNBROKER'S BUSINESS - - - - -	248
Sub-sect 1 Pawnbroker's Licence - - - - -	248
Sub-sect 2 Conduct of Business - - - - -	249
SECT 2 PAWNING AND REDEMPTION OF PLEDGES - - - - -	250
SECT 3 SALE OF PLEDGES - - - - -	252
Sub-sect 1 Conduct of Sales - - - - -	252
Sub-sect 2 Application of Surplus - - - - -	252
SECT 4 DELIVERY OF PLEDGES - - - - -	253
Sub-sect 1 Production of Pawn-ticket - - - - -	253
Sub-sect 2 Damage to Pledge - - - - -	254
Sub-sect 3 Orders for Delivery - - - - -	254
SECT 5 OFFENCES - - - - -	255
Sub-sect 1 By Pawnbrokers - - - - -	255
Sub-sect 2 By Pawnors - - - - -	257
SECT 6 PENALTY AND PROSECUTION - - - - -	258

<i>For Agents-</i>	-	-	<i>See title</i>	AGENCY
<i>Auctioneer</i>	-	-		AUCTION AND AUCTIONEERS
<i>Bailment</i>	-	-		BAILMENT
<i>Bankruptcy</i>	-	-		BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY
<i>Bills of Sale</i>	-	-		BILLS OF SALE
<i>Capacity to Contract</i>	-	-		CONTRACT
<i>Criminal Offences Generally</i>	-	-		CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE
<i>Damages</i>	-	-		DAMAGES
<i>Distress</i>	-	-		DISTRESS
<i>Drunken Persons</i>	-	-		INTOXICATING LIQUORS
<i>Evidence</i>	-	-		EVIDENCE
<i>Execution</i>	-	-		EXECUTION
<i>Executors and Administrators</i>	-	-		EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS
<i>Factors</i>	-	-		SALE OF GOODS
<i>Infants</i>	-	-		INFANTS AND CHILDREN
<i>Interpleader</i>	-	-		INTERPLEADER
<i>Lien</i>	-	-		LIEN
<i>Limitation of Actions</i>	-	-		LIMITATION OF ACTIONS
<i>Lunatics</i>	-	-		LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND
<i>Money-lending</i>	-	-		MONEY AND MONEY-LENDING
<i>Mortgage</i>	-	-		MORTGAGE
<i>Police</i>	-	-		POLICE
<i>Recovering Stolen Goods</i>	-	-		CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE
<i>Right of Action</i>	-	-		ACTION
<i>Sale of Goods</i>	-	-		SALE OF GOODS
<i>Set-off</i>	-	-		SET-OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM
<i>Summary Jurisdiction Courts</i>	-	-		
<i>of</i>	-	-		MAGISTRATES
<i>Trade</i>	-	-		TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS
<i>Trover</i>	-	-		TROVER AND DETINUE

Part I.—The Contract of Pawn.

SECTION 1.—Definitions

"Pawn"	475 A pawn or pledge is a bailment of personal property as a security for some debt or engagement (a)
"Pawner"	* A pawner is one who, being liable to an engagement, gives to the person to whom he is liable a thing to be held as a security for the payment of his debt or the fulfilment of his liability (b)
"Pawnee"	A pawnee is one who receives a pawn or pledge (c)
"Pawnbroker"	A pawnbroker is one whose business it is to lend money, usually in small sums, upon pawn or pledge (c), and includes for

(a) Story, *Law of Bailments*, 9th ed, s 286. It is described by HOLT, C J, in *Coggins v Bernard* (1703), 2 Ld Raym 909, at p 913, 1 Smith, L C, 11th ed, pp 173, 178, as the fourth sort of bailment "when goods or chattels are delivered to another as a pawn to be a security to him for money borrowed of him by the bailor." The different definitions are collected in *Donald v Suckling* (1866), L R 1 Q B 585, 594, and see title BAILMENT, Vol I, pp 525, 562. For the definition of "pledge" under the Factors Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 45), see title AGENCY, Vol I, p 205, note (x).

(b) Bouvier's *Law Dictionary*, Vol II, p 631. Under the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 5, "pawner" is defined as a person delivering an article for pawn to a pawnbroker.

(c) Bouvier's *Law Dictionary*, Vol II, p 634.

statutory purposes every person who carries on the business of taking goods and chattels in pawn (*d*)

SECT. 1.
Definitions.

SECT 2—Classes of Pawn.

476 By reason of the statutory provisions affecting pawnbrokers (*e*) there are two classes of pawn. The Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (*f*), which imposes a number of restrictions and regulations for the protection of the pawner, applies only to cases where the sum borrowed is £10 or less, and where the pawnee is a pawnbroker within the statutory definition (*g*). In all other cases the contract is governed by the general law, which also applies to pawns under the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (*f*), unless expressly excluded thereby (*h*).

Pawns at
common law
and under
statute.

Part II.—Pawns at Common Law.

SECT 1—Nature of the Contract

477 The contract of pawn is one of the five classes of bailment (*i*). Two main peculiarities distinguish it from the contract of mortgage. (1) it is essential to the contract of pawn that the property pledged should be actually or constructively delivered to the pawnee, whereas in mortgage the property passes by the conveyance, and possession by the mortgagee is not essential in every case (*j*), and (2) whereas in the contract of mortgage the mortgagee has an absolute interest in the property subject to a right of redemption, in pawn the pawnee has only a special property in the pledge, while the general property therein remains in the pawner and wholly reverts to him on discharge of the debt or engagement (*k*).

Difference
between
pawn and
mortgage
Delivery of
pawn

Property in
pawn

478 Pawn is distinguishable from lien in that in the former a special property passes to the pawnee, while in the latter no right of property passes to the person exercising the lien, but only a right

Difference
between
pawn and
lien

(*d*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict. c. 94) s. 1, but a person is not deemed to be a pawnbroker for the purposes of the Act merely because he makes advances of sums exceeding £10 (*ibid.*, s. 10), see, further, p. 248, *post*.

(*e*) Now consolidated in the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict. c. 93), see pp. 248 *et seq.*, *post*.

(*f*) 35 & 36 Vict. c. 93.

(*g*) *Ibid.*, s. 10.

(*h*) *Jones v. Marshall* (1889), 24 Q. B. D. 269.

(*i*) See title BAILMENT, Vol. I, pp. 525, 562. The distinguishing characteristic of pawn is that a pawnee has a special property, but a bailor generally has the custody only (*Hartop v. Hoare* (1743), 5 Atk. 44, 46).

(*j*) *Ryall v. Rolfe* (1749), 1 Atk. 164, 168, see STORY, Law of Bailments, 9th ed., s. 287, and see title MORTGAGE, Vol. XXI, p. 73.

(*k*) *Ryall v. Rolfe*, *supra*, at p. 167, *Re Morritt*, *Ex parte Official Receiver* (1886), 18 Q. B. D. 222, C. A., *per FRY, L.J.*, at p. 234, *Jones v. Smith* (1794), 2 Ves. 372, *Fraser v. Byas*, [1895] W. N. 112.

SECT 1

Nature
of the
ContractFurther
distinctions

to detain the subject-matter of the lien until he is paid (*l*), and this right is not transferable to a third party (*n*)

479 Pawn has been described as a security where by contract a deposit of goods is made a security for a debt and the right to the property vests in the pledgee so far as is necessary to secure the debt, in this sense it is intermediate between a simple lien and a mortgage which wholly passes the property in the thing conveyed (*n*)

Pawn does not amount to an equitable mortgage (*o*), or to a bill of sale (*p*)

Stamp on
contract of
pawn

480 Since pawn or pledge is not a contract of mortgage, where it is reduced into writing it may be stamped as a simple agreement (*q*), even where such agreement contains an express power of sale by the pawnee (*r*)

SECT 2 — Subject-matter

Things
capable of
being
pawned

481 The subject-matter of the contract of pawn usually consists of goods and chattels capable of actual or constructive delivery (*s*), but other forms of personal property, including negotiable instruments, may be the subject of the contract where they can be identified (*a*)

Unlawful
pledges

482 Under various statutes pledges relating to the following kinds of property have been made unlawful (*b*) (1) Regimental equipments, arms and military stores generally (*c*), (2) naval

(*l*) *Kunemann v Brusemann* (1892), 67 L T 642, C A, *Thames Ironworks Co v Pater's Derrick Co* (1860), 1 John & H 93, see *Hollner v Florence* (1878), 3 Q B D 181, C A, *Gladstone v Bulley* (1817), 2 Mer 101, and as to the nature of lien, see title LIEN, Vol XIX, p 3

(*m*) *Donald v Suckling* (1866), L R 1 Q B 585, per BLACKBURN J, at p 612
(*n*) *Halliday v Holgate* (1868), L R 3 Exch 299, Ex Ch, per WILLES J, at p 302 For forms of receipt acknowledging receipt of pledged chattels, see *Encyclopedia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol 1, p 215

(*o*) *Carter v Wake* (1877), 1 Ch D 605, *Re Richardson, Shillito v Hobson* (1880), 30 Ch D 396, C A, per FRY, J at p 403

(*p*) *Re Handwick, Ex parte Hubbard* (1886), 17 Q B D 690, C A, and see title BILLS OF SALE Vol III, p 7

(*q*) *Harris v Birch* (1842), 9 M & W 591, and see *Smith v Cator* (1819), 2 B & Ald 778

(*r*) *Re Attenborough* (1855), 11 Exch 161 As to the exemption from stamp duty of special contracts under the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 24, see p 251, *post*

(*s*) *Coggs v Bernard* (1703), 2 Ld Rym 909, 1 Smith, L C, 11th ed, p 173 As to what constitutes delivery, see p 248 *post*

(*a*) The following cases serve as illustrations - *Taylor v Chester* (1869), L R 4 Q B 309 (half a £50 note), *Lokwood v Iner or Child (Lady) v Chanstall* (1742), 9 Mod Rep 275 (East India stock), *Donald v Suckling* (1866), L R 1 Q B 585 (debentures), *Langton v Haite* (1866) L R 6 Eq 160 (railway stock), *Halliday v Holgate* (1868), L R 3 Exch 299, Ex Ch (scrip certificates) As to injunction to restrain an unlawful pledge of negotiable instruments, see title INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, p 266

(*b*) Offences by pawnbrokers in their business are dealt with elsewhere see pp 255, 256, *post*

(*c*) Army Act, s 156 The following are the articles there enumerated — "Arms, ammunition, equipments, instruments, regimental necessaries, or clothing, or any military decorations of an officer or soldier, or any furniture,

stores (*d*) and seamen's clothing (*e*), (3) public stores (*f*), (4) police clothing (*g*), (5) workhouse property (*h*), (6) hosiery materials (*i*); (7) linen, apparel, unfinished goods or materials (*k*)

SMOKE 2
Subject-matter.

483 Every assignment of and every charge on, and every agreement to assign or charge, any deferred pay or military reward payable to an officer or soldier, or any pension payable to him or his widow, child, or other relative, or to any person in respect of any military service, is void (*l*)

Invalid
pledges
(1) Pensions.

bedding, blankets, sheets, utensils, and stores in regimental charge, or any provisions or stores issued for the use of an officer or soldier, or his horse, or of any horse employed in His Majesty's service." The offence consists in taking in pawn from a soldier or any person acting on his behalf, or in soliciting or enticing a soldier to pawn, or in assisting or acting for a soldier in pawning such articles. The burden of proof that he acted in ignorance is upon the defendant. Penalty on summary conviction—first offence, fine not exceeding £20, with treble the value of the property pawned, second offence, fine not less than £5 and not exceeding £20, with such treble value, or imprisonment with or without hard labour for a term not exceeding six months (Army Act, s. 156), as to the Army Act, see title ROYAL FORCES. As to arrest of offenders, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 300, note (*d*). As to enforcement of orders of courts of summary jurisdiction, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol. XIX, pp. 602 *et seq.* Similar offences and penalties are created by the Volunteer Act, 1863 (26 & 27 Vict. c. 65) ss. 28, 29, the Volunteer Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict. c. 81), ss. 3—5, and the Territorial and Reserve Forces Act, 1907 (7 Edw. 7, c. 9), s. 22, as to property of volunteer and territorial corps, and as to such property generally, see title ROYAL FORCES.

(*d*) Naval Discipline Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict. c. 109), s. 33.

(*e*) Seamen's Clothing Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict. c. 57), s. 4. This Act only extends to the following dockyard towns, namely, Portsmouth, Plymouth and Devonport, Chatham, Sheerness, Cork, and Queenstown (see *ibid.* Sched.). The term "seaman's property" means any clothes, slops, medals and necessaries, or articles deemed to be necessaries, for sailors on board ship, which belong to any seaman (*ibid.*, s. 3). For the definition of "seaman," see *ibid.*, and see title ROYAL FORCES. The burden of proof that he acted in ignorance is upon the defendant. Penalty for first offence, not exceeding £20, second offence similar penalty or imprisonment, with or without hard labour, for a term not exceeding six months (Seamen's Clothing Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict. c. 57), s. 4).

(*f*) Public Stores Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict. c. 25), s. 9 (unlawful possession by pawnbroker of public stores—penalty, not exceeding £10).

(*g*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 1), s. 17, (County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 93), s. 15 (unlawful possession of police clothing—penalty, not exceeding £10). As to police clothing generally, see title POLICE, p. 501, *post*.

(*h*) Poor Relief Act 1815 (55 Geo. 3, c. 137) s. 2. The offence consists in any pawnbroker or other person knowingly taking in pawn any clothing or goods provided for the use of the poor in workhouses, or any goods, materials, furniture, or provisions for the poor, or aiding or assisting therein or causing the marks to be obliterated, penalty, not exceeding £5 and not less than £1 (*ibid.*). As to such property, see title POOR LAW, p. 521 *post*.

(*i*) These include woollen, worsted, linen, cotton, silk, mohair, or silk material to be prepared, worked up, or manufactured. The offences consist in pawning by a person entrusted with such goods for the above purposes, or receiving in pawn without the consent of the employer such goods, knowing that they have been so entrusted (Hosiery Act, 1813 (6 & 7 Vict. c. 40), ss. 2, 4), and see title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol. XX, pp. 127, 128. Penalty, forfeiture of the full value of the goods and a sum not exceeding £10 for pawning and a sum not exceeding £20 for receiving in pawn (Hosiery Act, 1813 (6 & 7 Vict. c. 40), ss. 2, 4, 11).

(*k*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict. c. 93), s. 35, see further p. 256, *post*.

(*l*) Army Act, s. 141, and as to such pensions, see titles CHOSES IN ACTION Vol. IV, p. 401, ROYAL FORCES.

SECT 2

Subject-matter.

(2) Pawns by infants

484. A contract, whether by specialty or otherwise, entered into by an infant for the repayment of money lent or to be lent is absolutely void (*m*) This provision, it seems, makes it impossible for an infant to make a valid contract of pawn, and if any such contract be made the pawnee can neither recover the principal nor sue for interest (*n*)

(3) Pawns by drunken persons and lunatics.

485 It is an offence for a pawnbroker to take an article in pawn from a person who appears to be intoxicated (*o*), subject to this provision, a pledge by a drunken person follows the ordinary law of contract (*p*) Similar considerations apply in the case of a pledge by a lunatic (*q*)

SECT. 3--*Making of the Contract Delivery*

Delivery, actual or constructive, essential

486 Delivery of the thing pawned in consideration of the debt or advance is a necessary element in the making of a contract of pawn (*r*) Such delivery may be actual, in the sense of physical delivery of the pledge, or constructive, in the sense that, though the pledge is legally delivered, it does not actually pass from the hands of the pawner to those of the pawnee (*s*) Constructive delivery may be effected even where the pledge remains in the possession of the pawner for a special purpose (*t*) Delivery of a key of a warehouse in which goods are stored (*a*), or of the key of a room in which a collection is stored (*b*), or of a delivery order directing a warehouseman to deliver goods to the pawnee (*c*), is sufficient delivery in law to satisfy this essential of the contract

When advance and delivery not simultaneous

487 The advance and the delivery need not be contemporaneous, so long as the delivery is effected within a reasonable time after the advance has been made and is in pursuance of the contract (*d*), although, until possession is given, the intended pawnee has only a right of action on the contract and no interest in the thing pawned (*e*)

(*m*) Infants Relief Act, 1874 (37 & 38 Vict c 62), s 1, and see, generally, titles INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, pp 63 *et seq*, MONEY AND MONEY-LENDING, Vol XXI, p 33

(*n*) There is no direct authority on this point, but see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 69, and see p 255, *post*

(*o*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 32 As to offences generally, see pp 255 *et seq*, *post*

(*p*) See title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 342

(*q*) See title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 396 *et seq*

(*r*) *Martin v Reid* (1862), 11 C B (N S) 730, *per* ERLE, CJ at p 734 *Ayers v South Australian Landring Co* (1871), L R 3 P C 548, 554

(*s*) *Martin v Reid*, *supra*, *Meyers v Barber* (1860), L R 2 C P 38, 52

(*t*) *Reeves v Ayper* (1848), 3 Bing (N C) 136

(*a*) *Young v Lambert* (1870), L R 3 P C 142

(*b*) *Hilton v Tucker* (1888), 39 Ch D 669

(*c*) *Grogg v National Guardian Assurance Co*, [1891] 3 Ch 206

(*d*) *Huton v Tucker*, *supra*

(*e*) *Houes v Bull* (1827), 7 B & C 481, *Donald v Suckling* (1860), L R. 1 Q B 585, 613.

SECT. 4.—*Extinction of the Contract*

SECT. 4.

**Extinction
of the
Contract.**Extinction of
contract of
pawn.Property
handed back
for special
purpose

488 The contract of pawn is extinguished by the satisfaction of the debt or engagement and the redelivery of the property pledged to the pawner, since there is an implied undertaking on the part of the pawnee to redeliver the same to the pawner on payment by the latter of the sum advanced with interest (*f*). The essence of this extinction of the contract lies in the pawnee being divested wholly of his special property and possession in the property pledged (*g*). The pawnee, however, has the right to hand back to the pawner the property pledged for a special purpose without in the least affecting his security and without extinguishing the contract (*h*).

SECT. 5.—*Rights and Duties of Pawner.*SUB-SECT. 1—*Who may Pawn*(1) *In General*

489 Subject to the exceptions set out above (*i*), at common law the capacity of a pawner to enter into the contract is governed by the same rules as are applicable to contracts in general (*k*).

Who may
pawn at
common law(2) *Mercantile Agents or Factors*

490 The capacity of mercantile agents (*l*) or factors to enter into the contract of pawn is regulated by statute (*m*). At common law, mercantile agents cannot bind their principals to a contract of pledge without the express authority of the latter (*n*).

Mercantile
agents or
factors

491 Where a mercantile agent is, with the consent of the owner (*o*), in possession (*p*) of goods (*q*) or of the documents of

Power to
pledge

(*f*) *Singer Manufacturing Co v Clark* (1879), 5 Ex D 37, and see p 242 *post*. For a form of receipt, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol I, p 216.

(*g*) See *Babcock v Lanson* (1880), 5 Q B D 284.

(*h*) *North Western Bank v Poputer, Son, and Macdonalds*, [1895] A C 31 (where the pawnee returned a bill of lading to the pawner, making the latter his agent to sell the goods comprised therein), distinguishing *Ind & Son v Merchant Banking Co of London* (1883), 10 R (C of Sess) 1009.

(*i*) See p 238, *ante*.

Vol I, pp 205, 206. As to factors generally, see title SALE OF GOODS.

(*n*) *City Bank v Barrow* (1880) 5 App Cas 664, *Fuentes v Montis* (1868), L R 3 C P 268, *per* WILKES, J, at p 277.

(*o*) As to the effect of revocation of such consent, see title AGENCY, Vol I, pp 205, 206, and as to the presumption in favour of such consent, see *ibid*, p 206. As to when possession of documents of title is deemed to be with such consent, see *ibid*, p 205, note (*n*).

(*p*) As to when the agent is in possession of goods, see *ibid*, p 205, note (*f*). *Lamb v Attenborough* (1862), 1 B & S 831. As to the effect of obtaining possession by means of larceny by a trick, see titles AGENCY, Vol I, p 206, note (*d*), BANKERS AND BANKING, Vol I, p 638. CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 633. *Oppenheimer v Federal and Wyatt*, [1907] 2 K B 50, 56, C A.

(*q*) "Goods" include wares and merchandise (Factors Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 45), s 1(3)) and household furniture (*Lee v Butler*, [1895] 2 Q B 318, C A).

SECT 5
Rights and
Duties of
Pawner

title (a) to goods, any pledge (b) of the goods made by him when acting in the ordinary course of business of a mercantile agent is as valid as if he were expressly authorised by the owner of the goods to make the same, provided that the pledgee acts in good faith, and has not notice at the time of the pledge that the agent has no authority to make it (c)

What
"pledge"
includes.

492 The expression "pledge" in the case of a mercantile agent includes any contract pledging or giving a lien or security on goods, whether in consideration of an original advance or of any further or continuing advance, or of any pecuniary liability (d). A pledge of the documents of title to goods is deemed to be a pledge of the goods (e), but this provision only applies to mercantile agents, and does not make the pledging of documents of title by other persons valid so as to constitute an actual right in the goods themselves, as if they had been physically handed over to the pledgee (f)

Custom of
trade

493 A mercantile agent's statutory authority to pledge exists notwithstanding the custom of a particular trade that such an agent has no authority to pledge goods entrusted to him for sale (g), and the same principle applies to a mercantile agent who is entrusted with goods for sale on the terms of "sale or return" (h)

Sale or return

Sale of Goods
Act applied
to pledges

494 The provisions of the Sale of Goods Act, 1893 (i), as to dispositions by sellers and buyers of goods after sale and purchase are applicable to pledges made by such sellers and buyers either by themselves or by mercantile agents on their behalf (j)

(a) For the definition of "documents of title" see title AGENCY, Vol I, p 205, note (n) and see *Union Credit Bank v Mersey Docks and Harbour Board, Same v Same and North and South Wales Bank*, [1899] 2 Q B 205. As to the title given by a mercantile agent when selling goods, see titles AGENCY, Vol I, p 205, SALE OF GOODS.

(b) Goods entrusted by a mercantile agent to an auctioneer for sale are not dealt with by way of pledge even though the auctioneer before sale make advances upon them to the agent (*Haddington & Sons v Neale & Sons* (1907), 96 L T 786, see *Biggs v Evans*, [1891] 1 Q B 88), and see titles AGENCY, Vol I, p 205, SALE OF GOODS.

(c) Factors Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 45), s 2(1). As to pledges and other dispositions by mercantile agents of goods belonging to their principals, see, further, titles AGENCY, Vol I, pp 205, 206, SALE OF GOODS.

(d) Factors Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 45), s 1 (5).

(e) *Ibid*, s 3.

(f) *Tyngis v Robertson* [1898] 1 C 616. In this case the pledgor was held not to be a mercantile agent within the meaning of the Factors Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 45).

(g) *Oppenheimer v Attenborough & Son*, [1908] 1 K B 221 (C A).

(h) *Weiner v Harris*, [1910] 1 K B 285 (C A). Similarly, it is not beyond the ordinary course of business of a mercantile agent in the jewellery trade to raise money by pledging goods entrusted to him for sale (*Janesuh v Attenborough & Son* (1910), 102 L T 605). In deciding this question the actual disposition of goods and not the circumstances attending such disposition should be looked at although the surrounding circumstances (e.g., an unusual rate of interest) may be evidence against the pledgee as to the want of authority of the agent to pledge (*ibid*, per HAMILTON J, at p 282). A mercantile agent by asking a friend to pledge goods entrusted to him for sale is not pledging goods in the ordinary course of his business as a mercantile agent (*De Groot v Attenborough & Son* (1904), 21 T L R 19).

(i) 56 & 57 Vict c 71.

(j) See *ibid*, ss. 25, 47, and title SALE OF GOODS.

SUB-SECT 2 — *Warranty by Pawner*SECT 5
Rights and
Duties of
Pawner.

495 At common law, there is an implied undertaking on the part of the pawner that the property pawned is his own, or that he has the authority of the owner to pledge it, and that it may be safely delivered back to him (*h*)

Implied
warranty of
title,
but not of
quality

Generally speaking, the pawner does not warrant the quality of the property pawned, but if he makes a false and fraudulent representation as to such quality for the purpose of obtaining money thereby from the pawnee the pawner is indictable (*l*)

SUB-SECT 3 — *Title and Property of Pawnee*

496 Subject to the provisions relating to mercantile agents (*m*), mere possession by the pawner is not sufficient proof of property in the thing pawned against the real owner (*n*). Nor can a pawner confer on a pawnee any better title to the thing pawned than he himself has (*o*)

Possession no
proof of
property

If the pawner has no authority to make the pledge the pawnee cannot hold the goods pledged against the real owner (*p*), unless such owner has so acted as to clothe the pawnee with apparent authority to make the pledge (*q*). An authority to an agent to sell in circumstances particularly defined does not extend by implication to a pledge so as to give the pawnee a good title as against the real owner (*r*)

Unauthorised
pawn

497 Before redemption the pawner can sell the thing pledged, but, after such a sale, the purchaser has only the same interest in the thing as the pawner had (*s*)

Sale before
redemption

SUB-SECT 4 — *Right to Redeem*

498 The pawner has at common law (*t*) an absolute right to redeem the thing pledged upon tender (*t*) of the amount advanced, since the general property therein remains in him. In the absence of any agreement as to time for payment, he may redeem at any time during his life, and upon the pawner's death this right

Time

(*h*) *Singer Manufacturing Co v Clark* (1879), 5 Ex D 37, *per curiam*, at p 42, *Chesman v Fall* (1851), 6 Exch 341. As to illegal pawning, see p 257, *post*

(*l*) See title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 693, 694, *R v Ardley* (1871), 1 L R 1 C C R 301, *R v Robust* (1856) Deane & B 21, 1 C R

(*m*) See pp 239, 240, *ante*

(*n*) *Hoare v Parker* (1788), 2 Term Rep 376, *Kingsford v Merry* (1856), 1 H & N 503, 516, Ex Ch

(*o*) *Cole v North Western Bank* (1870), 1 L R 10 C P 354, Ex Ch, but see note (*q*), p 246, *post*

(*p*) *Williams v Barton* (1825), 3 Bing 139, Ex Ch

(*q*) *Cole v North Western Bank*, *supra*, *per* BLACKBURN, J, at p 363, *Henderson & Co v Williams*, [1895] 1 Q B 521, C A, and see *Fry and Mason v Smellie and Taylor* (1912) 106 L T 404, C A

(*r*) *City Bank v Barrow* (1880), 5 App Cas 664

(*s*) *Franklin v Nade* (1844), 13 M & W 481

(*t*) Special provisions as to redemption and tender of pledges, to which the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), applies, are dealt with elsewhere, see pp 251, 252, *post*

§ 500 5
Rights and
Duties of
Pawner

Statutes of
Limitation

Devolution of
right

Partners

Consolidation
of securities

continues against his executors (a) The right to redeem necessarily depends on tender of the debt by the pawner to the pawnee (b), and it is lost if the pawnee has lawfully sold the subject of the pledge (c)

499 The Statutes of Limitation do not bar the right to redeem a pledge during the pawner's lifetime (d)

500 There is authority for the proposition that this right of the pawner is personal to him, and that it is extinguished by his death and does not pass to his executor (e)

When goods are pledged by several partners jointly, the right to redeem lies in them jointly and not severally Any partner acting for the firm may redeem, but all must join if an action is brought to recover the thing pledged (f)

501 The principle of consolidation of securities contained in the law of mortgage (g) does not apply to a contract of pawn, at least as against the executor of a deceased pawner (h)

SUB-SIC 5—*Remedies of Pawner*

Trover by
pawner

502 A pawner may maintain trover against a pawnee who refuses to restore the pledge after tender of the debt (i), but if the ownership of the pledge is in doubt such refusal, if made reasonably, and to obtain a reasonable time for the purposes of investigation, will not ground such an action (h) In similar circumstances the assignee of a pawner may bring an action of trover (l), and may recover damages for non delivery (m)

(a) *Ratcliff v Davis* (1610) Yelv 178, Bic Abi tit Bailment

(b) *Coygs v Bernard* (1703), 2 Ld Raym 909, 917 1 Smith, L C, 11th ed, 173 at p 181

(c) See p 244, *post*

(d) *Kemp v Westbrook* (1719), 1 Ves Sen 278 A time may be fixed for redemption upon the expiration of which, in the absence of redemption, the pawnee has a power of sale, see *France v Clark* (1883), 22 Ch D 830, and p 244, *post* title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, p 37, note (a)

(e) *Ratcliffe v Davis supra* This rule is laid down strictly in this case, and has not been the subject of consideration since, but it was expressly disapproved of in *Cortelyou v Lansing* (1805), 2 Caine, New York Cases in Error, 200 (American decision), and it seems doubtful if it would be followed at the present time By the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 9, this right is expressly reserved to an executor of a deceased pawner in the case of a pledge to which that Act applies

(f) *Hurpin v Godall* (1870), L R 5 Q B 422 As to the rights of partners generally, see title PARTNERSHIP, pp 24 *et seq ante*

(g) See title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, pp 208 *et seq*

(h) *Vanderzee v Wallis* (1789), 3 Bro C C 21, where bankers who were pawnees of securities for a debt of £1,000, although the indebtedness of the testator to them largely exceeded that amount, were held to have no further lien on the securities than for the £1,000 and interest This decision apparently disapproves *Demandray v Micalf* (1715), Prec Ch 419

(i) *Anon* (1693), Salk 522, *Coygs v Bernard, supra*, and see, generally, title TROVER AND DETINUE

(l) *Vaughan v Watt* (1840), 6 M & W 492, and see *Clayton v Le Roy*, [1911] 2 K B 1031, 1051, C A

(m) *Franklin v Neale* (1844), 13 M & W 181

(n) *Bristol and West of England Bank v Midland Rail Co*, [1891] 2 Q B 653, C A

503. If the pawnee sells before he is entitled to do so, the pawnee may sue him in conversion, but in such a case the damages must be measured by the loss which the pawnee has actually sustained, taking into account the pawnee's interest in the goods at the time of the conversion (*n*). A sub-pledge does not amount to conversion (*o*).

SECT. 5
Rights and
Duties of
Pawnee.

Measure of
Damage

SECT. 6 — *Rights and Liabilities of Pawnee*

SUB-SECT. 1 — *Property and Possession*

504 The pawnee has a special property in the thing pledged, while the general property therein continues in the owner (*p*). Such special property exists so that the pawnee can compel payment of the debt (*q*), or can sell the goods when the right to do so arises (*r*). This property is a real right in the thing pledged as distinguished from a mere personal right of detention (*s*), and, moreover, is transferable in the sense that the pawnee can pledge his special interest (*s*), while in the case of a lien the unauthorised transfer of the subject of the lien does not transfer the personal right (*a*). This special property does not arise until possession is given to the pawnee (*b*).

Special
property of
pawnee

If during the contract there is any increase in the value of the security, the pawnee is entitled to that increase as part of his security (*c*).

Increase in
value of
security

SUB-SECT. 2 — *Care of Pawn*

505 The law requires nothing extraordinary of the pawnee, but only that he shall use ordinary care (*d*) for restoring the thing pledged (*e*). Further, if the pawnee loses the goods pawned without default on his part, he may still recover the debt, and the loss falls on the owner. If the pawnee keeps the goods after tender of the debt to him and they are stolen, he is liable, for after tender he keeps them at his peril (*f*).

Pawnee's
duty to take
care of pawn

(*n*) *Johnson v Stear* (1863), 15 C. B. (N. S.) 330, and see title DAMAGES Vol. X, p. 344.

(*o*) *Donald v Snukling* (1866) L. R. 1 Q. B. 560, and see p. 244, *post*.

(*p*) *Batcliffe v Davis* (1610), Yelv. 178, *Harper v Goddall* (1870), L. R. 5 Q. B. 422, see p. 242, *ante*. As to the insurable interest of a pawnee, see title INSURANCE, Vol. XVII, p. 524.

(*q*) *Coggs v Bernard* (1703), 2 Ld. Raym. 909, 1 Smith, L. C., 11th ed., p. 173.

(*r*) *Re Hardwick, Ex parte Hubbard* (1886), 17 Q. B. D. 690, C. A., *per Bowen*, L. J., at p. 698.

(*s*) *Donald v Snukling*, *supra*, *per* BLACKBURN, J., at p. 614.

(*a*) *Ibid.*, *per* BLACKBURN, J., at p. 612, and see *Trentell v Barandon* (1817), 8 Taunt. 100.

(*b*) *Howes v Bull* (1827), 7 B. & C. 481.

(*c*) Story, Law of Bailments, 9th ed., s. 292.

(*d*) For special statutory provisions applicable to the custody of pledges for sums of £10 and under, see pp. 251 *et seq.*, *post*.

(*e*) *Coggs v Bernard*, *supra*, at p. 917, 1 Smith, L. C., 11th ed., p. 173, at p. 184, *Syed v Carruthers* (1858), F. B. & E. 469 (accidental fire) (compare title BAILMENT, Vol. I, p. 514. For the principles of liability for negligence, see title NEGLIGENCE, Vol. XXI, pp. 362 *et seq.*, 430).

(*f*) *Anon* (1693), Salk. 522.

SECT 6
Rights and
Liabilities
of Pawnee

Pawnee's
right to use
pawn

506 The pawnee may not use the thing pledged if it would be the worse for such use, but, if this is not so, he may make a reasonable use of it at his own risk. If he is put to expense in his custody, he may take a reasonable profit from the property to recompense him. If to preserve the pledge reasonable use is necessary, the pawnee must make such use (*q*), and if the use of the property is beneficial thereto, it seems that the pawnee can use it (*h*).

SUB-SECT 3 *Transfer of Pawnee's Rights*

Assignment
of pawnee's
rights

507 The pawnee's special property in the thing pledged may be assigned to a third party by way of assignment of the pawnee's interest or of a subpledge by him (*i*). Such a transfer is not inconsistent with the contract of pawn so long as it purports to transfer no more than the pawnee's interest against the pawner, the pawnee in the meantime being responsible for due care being taken for the safe custody of the property (*h*). At the same time, the pawner may in such a case recover substantial damages if the property is damaged in the hands of the third party, or if he is prejudiced by any delay in the delivery of the property to him after tender of his debt (*l*).

SUB-SECT 4 *Remedies of Pawnee*

Power of
sale

508 The contract of pawn carries with it an implication that the security may be made available to satisfy the obligation (*m*). Under this implication the pawnee has a power of sale on default in payment if the time for payment has been fixed (*n*). If there is no stipulated time for payment, the pawnee may demand payment, and in default thereof may sell, upon notice to the pawner of his intention to do so (*o*), the pawner retaining his right to redeem at any moment up to sale (*p*).

Warranty of
title

509 If the pawnee is a pawnbroker, a sale by him does not carry with it any warranty as to the title of the goods sold (*q*).

(*q*) *Coggs v Bernard* (1703), 2 Ld Raym 909, 1 Smith L C, 11th ed, p 173, *Anon* (1693), Salk 322, *et q*, clothes would be the worse for use, not so jewels, which, however, would be used at the pawnee's risk: a horse may be ridden or a cow milked (*ibid*), see also *Cooke v Huddon* (1862), 3 F & F 229, where the consumption by the pawnee of part of some wine pledged to him was held to forfeit his rights therein.

(*h*) Story, *Law of Bailments*, 9th ed, ss 329, 330.

(*i*) *Donald v Suckling* (1866), L R 1 Q B 585, *Halliday v Holgate* (1868), L R 3 Exch 299, Ex Ch, and see *Mores v Conham* (1609), Owen, 123.

(*l*) *Donald v Suckling*, *supra*, per BLACKBURN, J, at pp 615, 616, and see *Nicholson v Hooper* (1838), 4 M & Cr 179.

(*l*) *Donald v Suckling*, *supra*, per BLACKBURN, C J, at p 618.

(*m*) *Re Morritt, Ex parte Official Receiver* (1886) 18 Q B D 222, C A, per COTTON, L J, at p 232, *Re Handwich, Ex parte Hubbard* (1886), 17 Q B D 690, C A, *Pothouses v Dawson* (1816), Holt (N 1), 383.

(*n*) *Re Morritt, Ex parte Official Receiver*, *supra*, per FRY, L J, at p 235.

(*o*) *Frame v Clark* (1883), 22 Ch D 830 (citing with approval Story, *Law of Bailments* 9th ed, p 275, s 308, and distinguishing *Re Tahiti Cotton Co*, *Ex parte Sargent* (1874), L R 17 Eq 273), *Pigot v Cubley* (1864), 15 C B (N 4) 701, *Martin v Reul* (1862), 11 C B (N 8) 730, *Burdick v Sewell* (1883), 10 Q B D 863, 367.

(*p*) *Re Morritt, Ex parte Official Receiver*, *supra*, per COTTON, L J, at p 232. As to the pawner's remedy against the pawnee in case of an illegal sale, see p 243, *ante*.

(*q*) *Monley v Attenborough* (1849), 3 Exch 500, cited with approval in *Sims v*

510 If sale by the pawnee of the pledge does not realise the amount of his debt, the pawnee can sue for the deficit, and there is nothing in the statutory special contract of pawn which affects the common law right (*s*)

SECT 6
Rights and Liabilities of Pawnee.

511 The pawnee has a right of action for his debt notwithstanding the possession by him of the pledge (*s*), subject to the rights of the pawner above mentioned (*t*)

Recovery of deficiency on sale

Where the pledge is of a perishable nature and no time for redemption has been fixed, this right of the pawnee remains, notwithstanding that the pledge perishes, and the pawner has no remedy (*u*)

Right of action for debt

512 Where the pawnee is wrongfully deprived of possession of the thing pledged he may maintain an action, and the measure of damage is the full value of the thing taken and not merely the amount for which it stands security (*a*). He may maintain such an action without joining the pawner as a party (*b*)

Right of action for trespass

513 The pawnee has no right of foreclosure since he never had the absolute ownership at law, and his equitable rights cannot exceed his legal title (*c*), the contract of pawn differing in this respect from that of mortgage (*d*)

No right of foreclosure

SECT 7 — *Intervening Rights of Third Parties.*

SUB-SECT 1 — *On Execution on Distress*

514 Where judgment has been obtained against the pawner of goods and execution issued thereon, the sheriff cannot seize the goods pawned unless he satisfies the claim of the pawnee (*e*)

Execution against goods pawned

If execution issues against a pawnee the sheriff may seize goods in pledge in the pawnee's possession, but may sell only those in respect of which the period for redemption has expired, with respect to the rest he has a right to possess the qualified property of the pawnee, to sell when the twelve months and a week have expired, or to receive any money paid for its redemption (*f*)

Harryat (1851), 17 Q B 281, 290. In the case of a pawnee, not a pawn broker, it seems that the ordinary principles of the law of sale of goods apply, see title SALE OF GOODS.

(*e*) *Jones v Marshall* (1889), 24 Q B D 269. As to such special contracts, see p 251, *post*.

(*f*) *Anon* (case 951) (1701), 12 Mod Rep 664, *per* HOLL, C J, *South-Sea Company v Duncomb* (1731), 2 Stark 919, *Lanton v Newland* (1817), 2 Stark 72.

(*g*) See pp 241 *et seq*, *ante*.

(*h*) *Ratcliffe v Davis* (1610), Yelv 178.

(*i*) *Swire v Leach* (1865), 18 C B (N S) 479, and see title DAMAGES, Vol X, pp 342--344. As to the nature of such possession, see p 241, *ante*.

(*j*) *Saule v Tankard* (1718), 1 Ves Sen 101.

(*k*) *Carte v Wake* (1877), 4 Ch D 605, *per* JESSE, M R, at p 606, *Fraser v Byers* (1895), 13 R 112.

(*l*) *Lockwood v Ever or Child (Tidy) v Chansellet* (1742), 9 Mod Rep 275.

(*m*) *Rogers v Annan* (1846), 9 Q B 592, *Legg v Evans* (1840), 6 M & W 63, and see title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, p 51.

(*n*) *Re Rollason, Rollason v Rollason, Hals's Claim* (1887), 34 Ch D 495. As to the fixed period of redemption in the case of pawnbrokers, see p 251, *post*, see also titles EXECUTION, Vol XIV, p 51, INTERPLEADER, Vol XVII, p 614.

SECT 7
Intervening
Rights of
Third
Parties

Distress
Bankruptcy
Bankruptcy
of pawner

Pawnbroker's
title against
trustee

Owner's
rights against
pawner of
stolen goods

515. Goods pledged with the pawnbroker are not liable to distress (g)

SUB SECT 2 — *On Bankruptcy*

516 The bankruptcy of the pawner or the pawnee transfers to the trustee in bankruptcy his respective property in the thing pledged (h)

The bankruptcy of the pawner renders the pawnee a secured creditor in the bankruptcy with respect to things pledged before the date of the receiving order and without notice of a prior available act of bankruptcy (i), but where the pawnee has notice of such an act he cannot, without the sanction of the court, receive payment of his debt and hand over the security (k).

A pawnbroker, who claims to hold pledges as against the trustee in bankruptcy of the pawner, must have complied with the statutory provisions as to the entry of pledges in his books (l) or his claim may be disallowed (m)

SUB-SECT 3 — *Rights of True Owner*

517 The owner of goods stolen and wrongfully pawned by the thief may maintain trover against the pawnee (n). Even a sale in market overt will not defeat the title of the true owner if the thief is prosecuted to conviction (o), although the latter principle does not apply where the goods have been obtained by fraud or other wrongful means not amounting to larceny (p). Where a chattel obtained by fraud is pledged, the pawner having obtained a voidable title thereto, and the owner seeks to avoid the fraudulent transaction and to recover it from the pawnee, the burden of proof that the pawnee took the chattel with notice of the fraud or otherwise than in good faith lies on the owner (q).

(g) *Swine v Leach* (1865), 18 C B (N S) 479. It should be noted that in this case the pawnee was a pawnbroker by trade, and his position was compared to that of a wharfinger or warehouse-keeper. The privilege does not, apparently, extend to goods pledged with a person not a pawnbroker, see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, pp 134 *et seq*. As to the measure of damages in cases of wrongful distress, see *ibid*, p 206.

(h) See, generally, title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 87 *et seq*, 114 *et seq*.

(i) Bankruptcy Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict c 52), ss 49, 168. Under the latter provision a secured creditor is defined as one "holding a mortgage charge or lien on the property of the debtor or any part thereof as security for a debt due to him from the debtor." As to proof by a secured creditor, see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 67.

(k) *Ponsonby, Baker & Co v Union of London and Smith's Bank, Ltd*, [1906] 2 Ch 444, C A.

(l) See p 249, *post*.

(m) *Ferguson v Norman* (1838), 5 Bing (N C) 76.

(n) *Leicester v Cherryman*, [1907] 2 K B 101, and see *Singer Manufacturing Co v Clark* (1879), 5 Ex D 37.

(o) Sale of Goods Act 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 71), s 24 (1), see title CRIMINAL LAW, Vol IX, pp 666, 688 *et seq*, and see title SALE OF GOODS.

(p) Sale of Goods Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 71), s 24 (2).

(q) *Whitehorn Brothers v Dawson*, [1911] 1 K B 463, and see Sale of Goods Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 71), s 23. This case, it seems, is distinguishable from the principles set out p 241, *ante*, and notes (c), (d), p 247, *post*, in that

518 In the Metropolitan Police District (*r*) the pawnee of goods stolen or unlawfully obtained, and subsequently unlawfully pawned or pledged, may be ordered to appear before a magistrate, to produce the goods and deliver them to the owner, either with or without payment by the latter according to the circumstances of the case. If the pawnee fails to obey the order or sells the goods after notice that they have been stolen, he is liable to forfeit the full value thereof (*s*). These provisions also apply in the case of goods unlawfully pledged although they were obtained lawfully (*t*).

**SECT. 7.
Intervening
Rights of
Third
Parties.**

Order for delivery of unlawfully pledged goods, in the metropolis

Where property has come into the possession of the police in connection with any criminal charge or under the Metropolitan or City of London Police Acts, 1839 (*u*), or under a search warrant (*v*), or under the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (*a*), a court of summary jurisdiction may, on application by an officer of police, or by a claimant of the property, make an order for the delivery of the property to the person appearing to the court to be the owner thereof, or, if the owner cannot be ascertained, may make such other order as may, in the circumstances, be just (*b*).

519 As against the true owner, the pawnee can obtain no better title than the pawner has (*c*), and cannot hold goods, pledged by the pawner without authority, to which the latter has no title (*d*).

Title where goods illegally pawned

520 Where adverse claims to property pledged are made against the pawnee, he may perhaps have a right to interplead, notwithstanding his interest in the debt for which the property has been pledged (*e*).

Interpleader

before the pawner at the time of the pledge had a title to the chattel which had not been avoided by the owner.

(*r*) See titles **MAGISTRATES**, Vol. XIX, p. 548, **POLICE**, p. 467 *post*.

(*s*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 71), s. 27. See title **MAGISTRATES**, Vol. XIX, p. 577.

(*t*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 71), s. 27, 28.

(*u*) 2 & 3 Vict. c. 47, s. 66, 2 & 3 Vict. c. xciv, s. 48.

(*v*) Larceny Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 96), s. 10. See titles **CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE**, Vol. IX, p. 310, **MAGISTRATES**, Vol. XIX, p. 606. As to the time within which proceedings by the claimant against the person in possession must be brought, see title **LIMITATION OF ACTIONS**, Vol. XIX, pp. 181, 182.

(*a*) 35 & 36 Vict. c. 93, s. 31.

(*b*) Police Property Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict. c. 30), s. 1 (1).

(*c*) *Cole v North Western Bank* (1875), 1 R. 10 Q. P. 374, Ex. Ch., and see *Kilmont v Bently* (1886), 18 Q. B. D. 322, *per* Lord Esher, M.R., at p. 320, see also p. 241, *ante*.

(*d*) *Williams v Barton* (1825), 3 Bing. 139, Ex. Ch., and see p. 241, *ante*, and cases there cited. It seems that this principle would hold good in the case of a pledge of goods belonging to a bill of sale holder or a vendor on a hire-purchase agreement which passes no property in the goods to the hirer. There seems to be no reported case where such property has been pawned without the consent of the owner.

(*e*) There is no reported case on this point. See title **INTERPLEADER**, Vol. XVII, p. 587. *De Rothschild Freres v Morrison, Kelcewicz & Co, La Banque de Paris et des Pays Bas v Same, La Banque de France v Same* (1890), 24 Q. B. D. 750, C. A. (wharfinger interpleading though having a claim for payment of charges), *Best v Hayes* (1863), 1 H. & C. 718 (auctioneer claiming commission), *Attenborough v St Katharine's Dock Co* (1878), 3 C. P. D. 450, C. A.

Part III.—Pawns under the Pawnbrokers Act (*f*).

SECT 1

Regulation of Pawn broker's Business

Pawnbroker's licence

SECT 1—*Regulation of Pawnbroker's Business.*

SUB-SECT 1—*Pawnbroker's Licence*

521 A pawnbroker who carries on business as such, and to whom the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (*g*) (in this part of the title referred to as "the Act"), applies in relation to loans not exceeding £10, must take out a yearly excise licence for carrying on his business (*h*). Such licence is only granted on the production and in pursuance of a certificate granted under conditions hereinafter set out (*i*), except in the case of a pawnbroker already licensed at the commencement of the Act (*j*), who, with his executors, administrators, assigns, and successors, is exempt from the necessity of obtaining such a certificate (*k*). Such exemption, while not confined to the business then carried on by him, but extending to shops subsequently opened by him (*l*), does not extend to a successor who sets up a new business in a town other than that in which the business to which he succeeded is situate (*m*).

Notice of application for licence

522 Before a certificate is applied for, the applicant must give twenty-one clear days' notice of his application by registered post to one of the overseers of the parish or place in which he intends to carry on business, and to the superintendent of the police of the district, and, twenty-eight days before the application, must cause a like notice to be affixed and maintained between 10 a.m. and 5 p.m. on two consecutive Sundays on the door of the church or chapel of the parish or place, and, if there is none, in some public or conspicuous place (*n*).

By whom certificate granted

523 Certificates are granted in the Metropolitan Police District and in other places within the jurisdiction of a stipendiary magistrate by a stipendiary magistrate (*o*), and in other cases by the district council of the district in which the application is made (*p*).

(*f*) The Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), and consequently this part of the present title apply only to contracts of pawn where the sum borrowed is £10 or less, and where the pawnee is a pawnbroker within the meaning of the Act, see p 235, *ante*.

(*g*) 35 & 36 Vict c 93. A person is not deemed to be a pawnbroker by reason only of his entering into contracts of pawn for sums exceeding £10 (*ibid*, s 10).

(*h*) *Ibid* s 37. For terms of licence and notice of application therefor, see *Encyclopedia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol X, pp 177, 178.

(*i*) Pawnbrokers Act 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93) ss 40-44, and see the text, *infra*.

(*j*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 39.

(*l*) *R v Inland Revenue Commissioners, Ohlson's Case and Garland's Case*, [1891] 1 Q B 485.

(*m*) *R v Inland Revenue Commissioners, Ex parte Silvester*, [1907] 1 K B 108.

(*n*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 12.

(*o*) *Ibid*, s 40. As to such magistrates, see title *MAGISTRATES*, Vol XIX pp 545, 548.

(*p*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93) Local Government Act,

An appeal lies from the decision of the authority, but no costs can be ordered against a district council if the appeal is successful (q)

SECT 1
Regulation
of Pawn-
broker's
Business.

—
—
Grounds for
refusal of
certificate

524 A certificate can only be refused on the following grounds or one of them (1) that the applicant has failed to produce satisfactory evidence of good character, (2) that the shop in which he intends to carry on business or any adjacent house or place owned or occupied by him is frequented by thieves or persons of bad character, (3) that he has not given the requisite notice (r)

525 A certificate must be in the prescribed form (s)

Form of
certificate
forger's

Forgery of a certificate or tender of a forged certificate is an offence punishable on summary conviction with a fine not exceeding £20 or imprisonment for six months with or without hard labour. A licence granted in pursuance of a forged certificate is void, and use of a forged certificate with knowledge that it is forged perpetually disqualifies a person from obtaining a licence (t)

526 The licence must be taken out yearly for each shop, and carries an excise duty of £7 10s. Every licence bears the date of issue and terminates on the 31st July in each year (u). Pawnbrokers who carry on business in partnership only require one licence for each place of business (v)

Excise duty
on licence

527 To act as a pawnbroker without a licence is an offence punishable with an excise penalty not exceeding £50 (a)

Penalty for
acting
without
licence

528 The conviction of a pawnbroker on indictment for fraud in his business or for receiving stolen goods renders the licence liable to cancellation by the court before which the conviction is obtained (b)

Cancellation
on conviction

SUB-SECT. 2 *Conduct of Business*

529 A pawnbroker must keep and use certain prescribed books and documents, which include pledge books, pawn tickets, sale-books, declarations of claim and loss, and receipts and forms of special contracts, and entries must be made therein in the manner

Books and
documents
to be kept

1894 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 73), s. 27, see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol. XIX, p. 266

(q) *R v Northumberland Justices, Ex parte Amble Urban District Council* (1907), 96 L. T. 700. As to such appeals see p. 259, *post*

(r) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict. c. 93), s. 13. For analogous cases where such grounds have to be considered, see title INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol. XVIII, pp. 54 *et seq.*

(s) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict. c. 93), s. 11, Sched. VI

(t) *Ibid.*, s. 44. As to the offence of forgery generally, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, pp. 711 *et seq.* As to the prosecution of offences punishable on summary conviction, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol. XIX, pp. 589 *et seq.*

(u) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict. c. 93), s. 37

(v) Excise Licences Act 1825 (6 Geo. 4, c. 81), s. 7

(a) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict. c. 93), s. 37. It seems that this provision only applies to pawnbrokers who actively carry on business as such, and does not apply to persons who in the ordinary way of business enter into contracts of pawn when their business has in itself no connection with pawnbroking, see the definitions of "pawnbroker," p. 234 *ante*. As to the recovery of excise penalties, see title REVENUE

(b) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict. c. 93), s. 38

SECT 1
Regulation
of Pawn
broker's
Business

Notices to be
exhibited

Secret
partnership

Acts of agent
or servant

Application
to personal
representa-
tives

Money
lending

indicated in the prescribed forms. Failure to comply with these provisions constitutes an offence (c)

530 A pawnbroker must keep exhibited in large characters over the outer door of his shop his full name with the word "pawnbroker." He must also keep exhibited in a conspicuous part of his shop, so as to be legible to persons doing business therein, the information which is contained on the prescribed form of pawn-tickets. Failure to comply with these provisions constitutes an offence (d)

It seems that an agreement for secret partnership in a pawnbroker's business is contrary to these provisions and that no legal partnership is thereby constituted (e), but at the same time contracts made in relation to the business so carried on are not void by reason only of such defect (f)

531 For the purposes of the Act (g) everything done or omitted by the servant, apprentice or agent of a pawnbroker in the course of or in relation to the business of the pawnbroker, is deemed to be done or omitted by the pawnbroker, and acts of a pawnbroker authorised by statutory provisions may be done by such servant, apprentice or agent (h)

532 The provisions of the Act (g) extend to executors and administrators of deceased pawnbrokers, except that they are not liable for any penalty or forfeiture personally, or out of their own estate, unless the same is incurred by their own act or neglect (i)

533 A pawnbroker in respect of business carried on by him in accordance with the Act (g) is not a "money-lender" within the Money-lenders Act, 1900 (h)

SECT 2 -Pawning and Redemption of Pledges

Pawn ticket

534 A pawnbroker must, on taking a pledge in pawn, give to the pawner a pawn-ticket, and must not take such pledge unless the pawner takes the pawn-ticket (l)

* (c) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 12. The prescribed form of these books and documents are found in *ibid*, Sched III, see Encyclopaedia of Forms and Precedents, Vol X, pp 178 *et seq*. As to the prosecution of offenders, see pp 256, 259, *post*

(d) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 13. As to the prosecution of offenders, see pp 258, 259, *post*

(e) So held in *Gordon v Houden* (1815), 12 Cl & Fin 237, H L., and *Armstrong v Armstrong*, *Lewis v Armstrong* (1834), 3 My & K 10, decided under stat (1800) 39 & 40 Geo 3, c 99 (now repealed), and not of certain authority under the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93)

(f) See p 257, *post*

(g) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93)

(h) *Ibid*, s 8

(i) *Ibid*, s 7

(k) 63 & 64 Vict c 51, s 6. The fact that he has on one occasion lent money on the security of a bill of sale does not make him such a "money-lender" (*Newman v Oughton*, [1911] 1 K B 792), and see title MONEY-LENDING, Vol XXI, p 44

(l) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 14. The forms of pawn-tickets are prescribed by *ibid*, Sched III. They contain, *inter alia*, the scales of charges, terms as to time of redemption, and directions as to the steps to be taken when the pledge is destroyed by fire, or the ticket is lost, mislaid, or

535. Where the loan exceeds 40s. but does not exceed £10 (*m*), the pawnbroker may make a special contract with the pawner, provided that he delivers to the pawner at the time of the pawning a special contract pawn-ticket signed by himself, and the pawner signs a duplicate thereof. Such a special contract is within the provisions of the Act (*n*) save as far as they are excluded by the terms of the special contract (*o*), and is also subject to rules of common law where these are not repugnant to the provisions of the statute (*p*).

SECT. 2.
Pawning and Redemption of Pledges.

Special contracts for loans over 40s.

536 The pawnbroker may only demand or take certain specified profits and charges on a loan on a pledge (*q*), unless the loan exceeds £10, when the statutory provisions do not apply at all (*r*). Specified profits and charges are provided where the loan exceeds 10s (*s*), but it is submitted that these only apply in cases where no special contract has been made (*t*). The pawnbroker must at the time of redemption, if required, give a receipt for the amount of the loan and profit paid to him (*u*).

Profits and charges allowed

537 Every pledge is redeemable within twelve months from the day of pawning, exclusive of that day, but seven days of grace are added within which, if not redeemed within the year, it continues to be redeemable (*v*).

Time for redemption

A pledge pawned for 10s. or less, if not redeemed within the year and days of grace, becomes, at the end of the days of grace, the absolute property of the pawnbroker (*a*). This provision does not, however, give the pawnbroker such a property in the pledge as would prevail against the claim of the real owner where the pledge had been pawned without the owner's consent by a person who has no title to the pledge (*b*).

Pledges for 10s. and under

stolen The pawnbroker is entitled to charge for the ticket itself, see *ibid*, Scheds III and IV. A pawn ticket is the subject of larceny (*R v Morrison* (1859), Bell, C O 158), and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 642).

(*m*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 10 (which altogether excludes from the Act contracts where the loan exceeds £10). For forms of special contracts for loans exceeding £10, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol X, pp 184, 186, 187.

(*n*) See note (*f*), p 218, *ante*.

(*o*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 24. This ticket is exempt from stamp duty (*ibid*). As in the case of ordinary pawn-tickets, a special form is provided, which must be used by the pawnbroker (*ibid*, s 12, Sched III, Form 7). In the absence of special terms, where the loan exceeds 40s., Sched III, Form 2, c, is provided.

(*p*) *Jones v Marshall* (1889), 24 Q B D 269.

(*q*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 15. The charges are set out in *ibid*, Sched IV.

(*r*) *Ibid*, s 10. In such a case none of the provisions of the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), apply, and any terms may be agreed upon as to profits and charges by pawner and pawnee.

(*s*) *Ibid*, s 15, Sched IV.

(*t*) *Ibid*, s 10 (2), 24.

(*u*) *Ibid*, s 15. This receipt is not liable to stamp duty unless the profit amounts to 40s. or more (*ibid*). As to stamp duty generally, see title REVENUE.

(*v*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 16.

(*a*) *Ibid*, s 17.

(*b*) *Singer Manufacturing Co v Clark* (1879), 5 Ex D 37, *per curiam*, at p 45.

SECT 2
Pawning
and
Redemption
of Pledges

Pledges for
over 10s
Who may
redeem

A pledge pawned for above 10s continues redeemable until disposed of by sale or otherwise, although the year of redemption and days of grace have expired (c)

538 The holder for the time being of the pawn-ticket is presumed to be the person entitled to redeem the pledge, and the pawnbroker, on payment to him of the loan and profit, must deliver the pledge to the person producing the pawn-ticket and is indemnified for so doing (d) This indemnity only applies as between the pawnbroker and the pawner, or the owner who has authorised the pledge, and in no degree affects the common law rights of an owner whose property has been pledged against his will (e)

SECT 3—*Sale of Pledges*

SUB SECT 1—*Conduct of Sales*

Unredeemed
pledges for
over 10s

539 A pledge pawned for a sum above 10s must, when disposed of by the pawnbroker, be disposed of by sale by public auction, subject to special regulations (f) The pawnbroker may bid for and purchase at such a sale a pledge pawned with him, and on purchase is deemed to be the absolute owner of the pledge purchased (g) A title thus acquired is not valid against the true owner of a pledge which has been fraudulently pawned without his consent by a pawner having no title thereto (h) At any time within three years after such an auction, the holder of the pawn-ticket may inspect the entry of the sale in the pawnbroker's book (i) and the authenticated catalogue of pledges (k) or either of them (l)

Right to
inspect
catalogues

SUB-SECT 2—*Application of Surplus*

Surplus to
be paid to
holder of
pawn ticket

540 Where after sale of a pledge pawned for a sum above 10s there appears in the pawnbroker's book to be a surplus over and above the amount of the loan and profit due at the time of the sale, the pawnbroker must, on demand, within three years after the sale, pay the surplus, the necessary costs and charges of the sale being first deducted, to the holder of the pawn-ticket If within twelve months before or after a sale resulting in a surplus another sale of a pledge or pledges of the same person results in a deficit, the pawnbroker has a right of set-off and is only liable for the balance due thereafter (m) These provisions do not affect the common law right of a pawnbroker to sue the pawner for a deficit after sale (n)

Set-off.

(c) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 18, and see p 251, *ante*

(d) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 25, see p 253, *post*

(e) *Singer Manufacturing Co v Clark* (1879), 5 Ex D 37

(f) See Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 19 Sched V, and see, further title AUCTION AND AUCTIONEERS Vol I, pp 507-508 As to the penalty for breach of statutory provisions by auctioneer see *ibid*, p 508, where the regulations are set out

(g) Pawnbrokers Act 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 19

(h) *Burrows v Barnes* (1900), 82 L T 721

(i) As to the pawnbroker's books, see p 249 *ante*

(k) As to this catalogue, see title AUCTION AND AUCTIONEERS, Vol I, pp 507, 508

(l) Pawnbrokers Act 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 21

(m) *Ibid* s 22

(n) *Jones v Marshall* (1889), 24 Q B D 269, see p 215, *ante*

SECT 4—*Redelivery of Pledges*SUB-SECT 1—*Production of Pawn-ticket*SECT 4
Redelivery
of Pledges.

541 The pawnbroker must on payment of loan and profit deliver the pledge to the person producing the pawn-ticket (*a*), but, subject to certain provisions (*b*), he is not bound to deliver back the pledge unless the pawn-ticket is delivered to him (*c*). These provisions only apply as between pawner and pawnee, and do not affect the rights of real owners of pledges pledged without their consent (*d*).

Redemption
by holder of
pawn ticket.

542 Any person claiming to be the owner of a pledge, but not holding the pawn-ticket, and alleging that the same has been lost, mislaid, destroyed, or stolen or fraudulently obtained from him, may apply to the pawnbroker for a printed form of declaration, which must be delivered to him by the pawnbroker (*e*). The declaration must be in the prescribed form (*f*), and may be made before a commissioner for oaths (*g*) or a justice by the applicant and by a person identifying him. If the applicant delivers such declaration to the pawnbroker, he acquires as between himself and the pawnbroker all the same rights and remedies as if he produced the pawn ticket (*h*).

Redemption
when ticket
lost or
stolenSworn
declaration

The declaration is not effectual unless it is duly made and delivered to the pawnbroker not later than on the third day after the day on which the form is delivered to the applicant, exclusive of a day or days on which the pawnbroker is prohibited from carrying on business, the pawnbroker being indemnified for not delivering the pledge to any person until the expiration of this period (*i*).

When
declaration
is effectual

543 The pawnbroker is further indemnified for delivering the pledge or otherwise acting in conformity with the declaration rule if he has actual or constructive notice that the declaration is fraudulent or false in any material particular (*h*).

Indemnity of
pawnbroker

544 The real owner of goods pledged without his consent is not confined for his remedy to the foregoing provisions, but may sue at once to recover the goods (*l*).

Real owner's
right of
action

545 A person who wilfully makes such a declaration knowing it to be false or not believing it to be true, is guilty of a misdemeanour and is liable to punishment by imprisonment or a fine (*m*).

False
declaration

(a) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 25

(b) See the text, *infra*

(c) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 26

(d) *Singer Manufacturing Co v Clark* (1879), 5 Ex D 37

(e) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93) s 29 (1). The delivery of the ticket by mistake to a third person, if that person has absconded and the ticket cannot be obtained from him, is a "loss" within these provisions (*Burslem v Attenborough* (1873), L R 8 C P 122).

(f) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93) Sched III, Form V

(g) Commissioners for Oaths Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 50), s 1, see titles EVIDENCE Vol XIII, p 627, SOLICITORS

(h) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 29 (2)

(i) *Ibid*, s 29 (2), (3)

(k) *Ibid*, s 29 (4)

(l) *Singer Manufacturing Co v Clark*, *supra*, at p 15

(m) Perjury Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 6), repealing that part only of the

SECT 4

**Redelivery
of Pledges.**

Liability of
pawnbroker
for damage
by fire

SUB-SECT 2 — *Damage to Pledge*

546 If a pledge is destroyed or damaged by or in consequence of fire, the pawnbroker is liable, on application within the period available for redemption, to pay the value of the pledge after deducting the amount of the loan and profit, such value to be the amount of the loan and profit and 25 per cent on the amount of the loan. The pawnbroker is entitled to insure to the extent of this value (n)

Liability of
pawnbroker
for damage
by neglect

547 Where a person entitled and offering to redeem a pledge shows to a court of summary jurisdiction that the pledge has become or has been rendered of less value than it was at the time of pawning by or through the default, neglect, or wilful misbehaviour of the pawnbroker, the owner may be awarded reasonable satisfaction in respect of the damage, and the amount awarded must be deducted from the amount payable to the pawnbroker or must be paid by the pawnbroker as the court directs (o). In order to obtain a remedy under this provision the owner must prove actual default or neglect in the pawnbroker, which is not presumed in the case of accident (p)

SUB-SECT 3 — *Orders for Delivery*

Orders for
delivery

548 An order for the delivery of goods and chattels to the owner may, on proof of ownership, be made by the court before which the conviction is obtained (q), either on payment of the loan or any part thereof to the pawnbroker, or without payment, according to the conduct of the owner and the other circumstances of the case, in the following cases —

(1) Where a person is convicted in a court of summary jurisdiction of knowingly and designedly pawning with a pawnbroker the property of another person without the authority of the owner,

(2) Where a person is convicted in any court of feloniously taking or fraudulently obtaining any goods and chattels, and it appears to the court that the same have been pawned with a pawnbroker,

(3) Where in any proceedings before a court of summary

Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 29, which deals with perjury in this matter, penalty, penal servitude for not more than seven years or imprisonment with or without hard labour for not more than two years, or a fine alone or added to the other penalties, and see also title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 490. Making a false declaration as to a pledge of greater value than £10 was held not to be an offence under the repealed provision (*R v Tregonning* (1899), 63 J P 504)

(n) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 27, and see title INSURANCE, Vol XVII, p 524

(o) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 28

(p) *Syred v Carruthers* (1858), E B & E 469 (accidental fire). This case was decided on similar words occurring in stat (1800), 39 & 40 Geo 3, c 99, s 24 (now repealed). As to the common law liability of pawnbrokers, see p 243, ante, titles BAILMENT, Vol I, pp 544, 564, NEGLIGENCE, Vol XXI, p 430.

(q) See the text, *infra*, and p 255, post

jurisdiction it appears to the court that any goods and chattels brought before the court have been unlawfully pawned (v)

SECT 4
Redelivery
of Pledges.

No bar to
action by real
owner

549 An order for delivery made by a court of summary jurisdiction is no bar to an action at common law by the owner against the pawnbroker for the return of the goods, where the order has been applied for by a person other than the owner (s)

550 A pawnbroker who, without reasonable excuse (proof whereof lies on him) (t), neglects or refuses to deliver a pledge to the person entitled to have delivery thereof is guilty of an offence (u), and a court of summary jurisdiction may, with or without imposing a penalty, order the delivery of the pledge on payment of the amount of the loan and profit (a)

Penalty for
non-delivery
to person
entitled

SECT 5 — Offences.

SUB-SECT 1 — By Pawnbrokers

551 A pawnbroker commits an offence (b) if he does any of the following things — (1) takes an article in pawn from any person apparently under the age of fourteen, whether offered by that person on his own behalf or on behalf of any other person (c), or from any person appearing to be intoxicated, (2) purchases or takes in pawn or exchange a pawn-ticket issued by another pawnbroker, (3) employs any servant or apprentice or other person under the age of sixteen years to take pledges in pawn, (4) carries on the business of a pawnbroker on Sunday, Good Friday, or Christmas Day, or a day appointed for public fast, humiliation, or thanksgiving, (5) under any pretence purchases, except at public auction, any pledge while in pawn with him, (6) suffers any pledge while in pawn with him to be redeemed with a view to his purchasing it, (7) makes any contract or agreement with any person pawning or offering to pawn any article or with the owner thereof for the purchase, sale, or disposition thereof within the time of redemption, (8) sells or otherwise disposes of any pledge pawned with him except at the time and in the manner authorised by the Act (d)

Offences in
relation to
conduct of
business

(r) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 30, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 688. As to the powers of magistrates in the metropolis generally, see p 217, *ante*.

(s) *Leicester & Co v Cherryman*, [1907] 2 K B 101. Even if the owner had applied for the order, *quære* whether there would have been an estoppel as against him (*ibid*).

(t) In the absence of dishonesty, the loss of the pledge by the pawnbroker is a "reasonable excuse" (*Allworthy and Walker v Clayton*, [1907] 2 K B 685).

(u) For penalty, see p 258, *post*.

(a) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 31.

(b) For penalty, see p 258, *post*.

(c) Children Act, 1906 (8 Edw 7, c 67), s 117, which raises the age to fourteen from twelve years as laid down in the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 32 mentioned in note (d), *infra*, and see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 172.

(d) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 32. As to offences by retailers of spirituous liquors taking pledges as security for a debt for such liquors, see title INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, pp 170, 171.

SECT 5

Offences

Pawning
balled
apparel,
unfinished
goods etc

553 A pawnbroker who knowingly takes in pawn any linen or apparel or unfinished goods or materials entrusted to any person to wash, scour, iron, mend, manufacture, work up, finish or make up, commits an offence, and is liable on summary conviction to forfeit a sum not exceeding double the amount of the loan, and to restore the pledge to the owner in the presence of the court or as the court directs (e). Unfinished goods or materials include any goods of any manufacture, or of any part or branch of any manufacture, either mixed or separate, or any materials whatever plainly intended for the composing or manufacturing of any goods, after such goods or materials are put into a state or course of manufacture or into a state for any process or operation to be performed thereupon or therewith, and before the same are completed or finished for the purpose of wear or consumption (f).

Search
warrant

553 The owner of any such articles above mentioned, if they have been pawned, or of an article unlawfully pawned (g), may obtain a search warrant, upon proof before a justice on oath of probable cause of suspicion, and that the goods, if unlawfully pawned, have been unlawfully obtained (h). The warrant must be executed within the hours of business at the shop of the suspected pawnbroker (h). Resistance to the search entitles the constable to break open the shop and is an offence. If the above-mentioned goods, or any of them, are found, the court must, on due proof of property by the owner, cause them to be restored to him (i).

Production of
books etc

554 A pawnbroker must at any time, when ordered or summoned by a court of summary jurisdiction, attend before the court and produce all books and papers relating to his business required by the court (k). Failure to comply with this provision is an offence (k).

Offences as to
sales.

555 The following acts and defaults by a pawnbroker with respect to pledges for loans of more than 10s are offences punishable summarily by a fine not exceeding £10 (l) — (1) Failing to comply with the provisions as to sale, (2) entering in his book a pledge as sold for less than the sum realised or failing to enter the same, (3) refusing to any person entitled thereto inspection of an entry of sale in his book or of the authenticated catalogue, (4) failing without lawful excuse (proof whereof lies on him) to

(e) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 35. The amount forfeited must be paid to the overseers of the poor of the parish in which the offence is committed (*ibid*). For the prosecution of offences punishable on summary conviction, see title MAGISTRATES Vol XIX, pp 589 *et seq*.

(f) Pawnbrokers Act 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 3.

(g) As to unlawful pawning, see p 257, *post*.

(h) As to such warrants in general, see titles CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE Vol IX, p 310, MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 576, POLICE, p 498, *post*.

(i) Pawnbrokers Act 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 36, and see p 254, *ante*.

(k) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 30. For penalty, see p 258, *post*.

(l) As to summary convictions generally, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 589 *et seq*.

produce such a catalogue on lawful demand, (5) refusing to demand the surplus to the person entitled thereto (*m*).

§ 507. 5.

Offences.

556. Where a pawnbroker is guilty of an offence against the Act (*n*) (apart from offences relating to licences (*o*)), any contract of pawn or other contract made by him in relation to his business of pawnbroker is not void by reason only of the offence, nor by reason only of the offence does he lose his lien on or right to the pledge or to the loan and profit. This enactment does not affect any provision relating to orders for delivery or restoration made by any court (*p*).

Contract of pawn not avoided by conviction of pawnbroker.

SUMMARY 2—By Pawnbrokers

557 Any person is guilty of an offence who knowingly and designedly pawns with a pawnbroker the property of another person, without being employed or authorised by the owner thereof to pawn the same, and is liable on summary conviction to a fine not exceeding £5 and, in addition thereto, any sum not exceeding the full value of the pledge as ascertained by the court (*q*). The fact that a person has been convicted of larceny of a chattel is no bar to a subsequent prosecution for unlawfully pawning the stolen chattel (*r*).

Illegal pawning of property of another

558 Any person is guilty of an offence (*s*) who (1) offers to a pawnbroker an article by way of pawn, being unable or refusing to give a satisfactory account of the means by which he became possessed of the article, (2) wilfully gives false information to a pawnbroker as to whether an article offered by him in pawn is his own property or not, or as to his name and address, or as to the name and address of the owner of the article, (3) not being entitled to redeem, and not having any colour of title by law to redeem a pledge, attempts or endeavours to redeem the same (*t*).

Pawning of goods by unlawful means

559 In the cases mentioned in the preceding paragraph, and where a pawnbroker reasonably suspects (*u*) that an article offered to

Detection of person illegally pawning goods

(*m*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 23

(*n*) Pawnbrokers Act 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93)

(*o*) See p 249 *ante*

(*p*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 31. As to such orders, see p 254, *ante*

(*q*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 33. The fine may be applied to compensate the person injured and to defray the costs of prosecution, but in case the person injured declines to receive compensation, or there is a surplus, the fine or surplus must be paid to the overseers of the poor of the parish in which the offence was committed (*ibid*). The pawnbroker himself may be the prosecutor (*Fancett v Bierman* (1898), 14 T L R 148). As to the prosecution of offences punishable on summary conviction, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 389 *et seq*

(*r*) *Pickford v Corsi*, [1901] 2 K B 212

(*s*) For penalty, see p 258, *post*

(*t*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 34

(*u*) The reasonable suspicion need not be a suspicion that the person offering the goods is himself the thief, nor need the pawnbroker leave his shop to make further inquiries (*Howard v Clarke* (1888), 20 Q B D 508). In an action for false imprisonment against a pawnbroker arising in such a case, the question as to whether the defendant's suspicion was reasonable is one for the judge and not for the jury (*ibid*), and see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 431

SECT 5
Offences.

him in pawn has been stolen or otherwise illegally or clandestinely obtained, he may seize and detain the person or article, or either of them, to be delivered up as soon as possible into the custody of the police, and in the case of a person so detained to be brought before a justice (b)

Compensation
to pawn-
broker

The pawnbroker, upon certificate of the justice, may in such a case be compensated for his expenses, trouble and loss of time, such certificate having the effect of an order of court upon the offender for the payment of the expenses of a prosecution (b) under the Criminal Law Act, 1826 (c)

London

Similar provision for detention is made, under special statutes, in cases arising in the Metropolitan Police District (d) and the City of London (e)

Detention of
person
producing
counterfeit
pawn ticket

560 A pawnbroker may, on reasonable suspicion that a pawn ticket has been counterfeited, forged or altered, detain the person uttering, producing, showing or offering the same and the ticket or either of them, and deliver the person and the ticket, or either of them, into the custody of the police (f)

SECT 6 — Penalties and Prosecution

Penalty for
offences under
the Act

561 A pawnbroker or other person found guilty of an offence under the Act (g), in respect of which no specific forfeiture or penalty is therein prescribed, is liable on summary conviction to a penalty not exceeding £10 (h)

Application
of penalties

562 Penalties in the absence of a special direction may be applied by the court (1) where the complainant is the party aggrieved, by paying one moiety of the penalty to him, and (2) where the complainant is not the party aggrieved, by paying him no part thereof, or such part only as the court thinks fit (i)

Amends for
frivolous
prosecution

563 Where it appears to the court that the information or complaint is frivolous, the informer or complainant may be ordered

(b) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93) s 34

(c) 7 Geo 4, c 61, s 23, now repealed and replaced by the Costs in Criminal Cases Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 15), s 9 (6), see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 324, note (t), 44a

(d) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47) s 66. As to the Metropolitan Police District, see titles MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 548, POLICE, p 167, post

(e) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 48

(f) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 49. Uttering a forged pawn-ticket with intent to defraud is an offence under the Forgery Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 98), s 23 as the same is an "accountable receipt" within that section (*R v Fitchie* (1857), Dears & B 175, C C R, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 719 *et seq*). A pawn-ticket is the subject of larceny (*R v Morrison* (1869), Bell, C C 158)

(g) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93)

(h) *Ibid*, s 45. As to the prosecution of offences punishable on summary conviction, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 589 *et seq*. A common informer may commence proceedings (*Caswell v Morgan* (1859), 1 E & E 809 (a case relating to penalties under a repealed Act))

(i) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s. 46.

to pay, as amends to the defendant, a sum not exceeding £5, recoverable as a penalty (*h*).

**SECT. 4.
Penalties
and Pro-
secution.**

564 A common informer compounding, delaying, or withholding any information for money directly or indirectly paid to him commits an offence (*l*).

Compounding
offences.

565 An appeal lies to quarter sessions from a summary conviction for an offence under the Act (*m*), in accordance with the general provisions governing appeals in summary jurisdiction (*n*).

Appeals in
general

566 An appeal from a refusal to grant a certificate for a licence (*o*), must be made to a court of general or quarter sessions of the district held not less than fifteen days, and unless adjourned by the court, not more than four months, after the decision complained of. Seven days' notice of the appeal and of the grounds thereof must be given to the other party by the appellant, who immediately thereafter must enter into the usual recognisance before a justice with two sureties. If the appellant is in custody he may be released therefrom on entering into the recognisance. The court may adjourn the appeal or confirm, reverse, or modify the decision or remit the matter with the opinion of the court thereon, or make such other order as it thinks just, and the court has a complete discretion as to costs (*p*).

Appeal from
refusal to
grant
certificate.

567 No order or conviction of the court of summary jurisdiction, the subject of an appeal, may be quashed for want of form or be removed by *certiorari* or otherwise at the instance of either party (*q*).

No *certiorari*.

568 Any person sued or prosecuted for anything done by him in pursuance or execution or intended execution of the Act (*r*) may plead generally that the same was done under those circumstances and give the special matter in evidence (*s*).

Pleading
special
matter

(*h*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 47.

(*l*) *Ibid*, s 48. For penalty, see p 258, *ante*.

(*m*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 52. Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict c 43), s 4 and Sched (repealing in part the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 52).

(*n*) Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 49), and see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 642 *et seq*.

(*o*) See p 249, *ante*. All other appeals are governed by the general law as to appeals to quarter sessions, for which see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 638—650.

(*p*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), s 52. This section has been repealed (see the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict c 43), s 4) except so far as it relates to an appeal in this particular matter.

(*q*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93) s 53, and see title CROWN PRACTICE, Vol X, pp 155, 160.

(*r*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93).

(*s*) *Ibid*, s 45.

PAYMASTER-GENERAL.

See CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, COURTS, REVENUE.

- - - - -

PAYMENT AND TENDER.

See CONTRACT, LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, MONEY AND MONEY-
LENDING, SALE OF GOODS

- - - - -

PAYMENT INTO COURT.

See COUNTY COURTS, PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE, RECEIVERS,
TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES

- - - - -

PEACE, ARTICLES OF THE.

See MAGISTRATES

- - - - -

PEACE, CLERK OF THE.

See LOCAL GOVERNMENT, MAGISTRATES

- - - - -

PEDIGREE.

See EVIDENCE

- - - - -

PEDLARS.

See MARKETS AND FAIRS, STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC.

PEERAGES AND DIGNITIES.

	1808
PART I. PEERAGE - - - - -	262
SECT. 1. IN GENERAL - - - - -	262
SECT. 2. DEGREES OF PEERAGE - - - - -	263
Sub-sect. 1. In General - - - - -	263
Sub-sect. 2. Dukes - - - - -	263
Sub-sect. 3. Marquesses - - - - -	263
Sub-sect. 4. Earls - - - - -	264
Sub-sect. 5. Viscounts - - - - -	264
Sub-sect. 6. Barons - - - - -	264
SECT. 3. CREATION OF PEERS - - - - -	265
SECT. 4. ESTATE IN AND DESCENT OF A PEERAGE - - - - -	269
SECT. 5. PRIVILEGES AND PRECEDENCE - - - - -	269
Sub-sect. 1. Privileges - - - - -	270
Sub-sect. 2. Precedence - - - - -	272
SECT. 6. EXTINCTION OF SUSPENSION OF A PEERAGE - - - - -	273
Sub-sect. 1. Failure of Issue - - - - -	273
Sub-sect. 2. Abeyance - - - - -	273
Sub-sect. 3. Merges - - - - -	274
Sub-sect. 4. Resignation and Surrender - - - - -	275
Sub-sect. 5. Forfeiture - - - - -	275
Sub-sect. 6. Deprivation - - - - -	276
SECT. 7. CLAIMS TO PEERAGE - - - - -	277
Sub-sect. 1. Jurisdiction - - - - -	277
Sub-sect. 2. Procedure and Evidence - - - - -	278
PART II. THE BARONIAGE - - - - -	283
PART III. KNIGHTHOOD - - - - -	286
PART IV. THE COLLEGE OF ARMS - - - - -	288
PART V. FOREIGN DIGNITIES, ORDERS AND DECORATIONS - - - - -	290
SECT. 1. DIGNITIES - - - - -	290
SECT. 2. ORDERS AND DECORATIONS - - - - -	290

<i>For Arms, Change of</i> - - - - -	<i>See title</i>	NAME AND ARMS, CHANGE OF
<i>Committee of Claims</i> - - - - -		CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Constitutional Law</i> - - - - -		CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Hereditary Offices</i> - - - - -		CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Judges</i> - - - - -		CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, COURTS.
<i>Law Officers</i> - - - - -		COURTS, PARLIAMENT
<i>Lord High Steward</i> - - - - -		COURTS, PARLIAMENT
<i>Lords of Appeal</i> - - - - -		COURTS, PARLIAMENT
<i>Name, Change of</i> - - - - -		NAME AND ARMS, CHANGE OF
<i>Parliament</i> - - - - -		PARLIAMENT
<i>Peers in Parliament</i> - - - - -		PARLIAMENT
<i>Prerogatives of the Crown</i> - - - - -		CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Privileges of Peers of Parliament</i> - - - - -		PARLIAMENT
<i>Public Officers</i> - - - - -		PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS
<i>State, High Officers of</i> - - - - -		CONSTITUTIONAL LAW

Part I.—Peerage.

SECT 1—*In General*

SECT 1.

In General.

Definition of
peerage

569 "Peerage" may be defined as a hereditary dignity to which is attached the right to a summons by name to sit and vote in Parliament (*a*) The right has, however, been modified by the Acts of Union (*b*) to this extent, that peers of Scotland and peers of Ireland sit in the Parliament of the United Kingdom by representative peers only (*c*)

Classification
of peers.

570 There are now five classes of peers —

(1) Peers of England. They are all entitled to a summons to the Parliament of the United Kingdom

(2) Peers of Scotland. They are represented in the Parliament of the United Kingdom by sixteen representative peers of Scotland (*d*)

(3) Peers of Great Britain. These are peers created between the dates of the Union with Scotland and the Union with Ireland. They are entitled to a writ of summons to the Parliament of the United Kingdom (*e*)

(4) Peers of Ireland. They are represented in the Parliament of the United Kingdom by twenty-eight elected representative peers of Ireland (*f*)

(5) Peers of the United Kingdom. These are peers created since the Union with Ireland other than peers of Scotland or Ireland, and the Lords of Appeal in Ordinary (*g*). They are entitled to a writ of summons to sit in Parliament (*h*)

Dignity of
a peer

571 Whereas the dignity of the Sovereign is world-wide, that of a peer is confined to the country in which it is held (*i*)

There are peers who are not lords of Parliament, and lords of Parliament who are entitled to be summoned and to sit and vote in Parliament but are not peers, for example, the Lords Spiritual (*k*)

(*a*) See title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 622 *et seq*. As to peerages for life, see p 269, *post*

(*b*) Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (6 Anne, c 11), Union with Ireland Act 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 67), and see titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, pp 10 *et seq*, PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 624 *et seq*

(*c*) See the text, *infra*

(*d*) Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (6 Anne, c 11), s 1, arts 22, 23, and see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 625. There is a fresh election for each Parliament. A peer of Scotland who is also a peer of Great Britain or of the United Kingdom may be, but is not usually, elected a representative peer

(*e*) See title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 622, and see *ibid*, note (*p*)

(*f*) Union with Ireland Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 67), s 1, art. 4, and see p 270, *post*, title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 626. Election is for life

(*g*) Appellate Jurisdiction Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 59), s 6, see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 628

(*h*) See title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 622

(*i*) *Douglas v Milford* (1480), Y B 20 Edw 4, fo. 6, pl 6, *Calvin's Case* (1608), 7 Co Rep 1 a, 15 b, 16 a, and see *Lord Advocate v Walker's Trustees*, [1912] A C 95, *per* Lord ATKINSON, at p 104

(*k*) See titles ECCLESIASTICAL LAW, Vol XI, p 387; PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 619, 621 .. *

SECT. 2.—*Degrees of Peerage.*SUB-SECT. 1.—*In General*

572 The right to a peerage is distinct from a title of honour conferring a particular rank in the peerage, which is a matter merely collateral (l)

Right to
peerage
distinct from
title of
honour

SUB-SECT. 2.—*Dukes*

573 "Duke" is the highest degree of peerage, though third in order of antiquity. The title, though formerly used as a special description of an earl (m), was in 1388 distinguished from the latter title by the creation of Edward, Earl of Chester, as Duke of Cornwall (n)

Dukes.

SUB-SECT. 3.—*Marquesses*

574 "Marquess" (o), the second degree of peerage in precedence, but fourth in antiquity, was first introduced into England as a title or dignity in 1385, when Robert de Vere, Earl of Oxford, was created Marquess of Dublin (p). The creation was by charter and for life only, and precedence was given between the dukes and earls (q)

Marquesses

(l) *Norfolk (Earldom) Peerage Claim*, [1907] A. C. 10, per Lord DAVEY, at p. 17.

(m) Selden, Vol. I, c. 8, s. 30.

(n) 2 Co. Inst. 5, 9 Co. Rep. 49 a. Charter, 11 Edw. 3 (held to be an Act of Parliament (*Prince's Case* (1605), 8 Co. Rep. 1)). The dignity and lands were entailed on the eldest son of the *de facto* king (*ibid.*), and see, further, title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol. VI, p. 368. Henry Plantagenet, Earl (Palatine) of Lancaster (see *Complete Peerage of England*, by G. E. C., Vol. V, p. 7) was, on 6th March 1350-1351, created Duke of Lancaster, and King Richard II. created several members of the Royal Family dukes. King Richard II. also created Robert de Vere, Earl of Oxford, to be Marquess of Dublin and afterwards Duke of Ireland, but both dignities appear to have been for life and to relate to the office of governor (see *Complete Peerage of England*, by G. E. C., Vol. IV, p. 321). John, Earl of Huntingdon, was created Duke of Exeter by King Henry IV. "*in Ducatu illo cingendo sibi gladium ac appositionem cappe capiti suo investimus ut est moris*" to hold to him and the heirs male of his body (Dignity of a Peer of the Realm, Vol. V, pp. 241, 242).

(o) Also spelt "marquis" (*Oxford English Dictionary*, Vol. VI).

(p) Selden, Vol. I, c. 4, p. 39, Vol. II, c. 6, p. 693, 2 Co. Inst. 5.

(q) *Rotuli Parliamentorum*, Vol. III, p. 209. The next creation was in 1397, when Richard II. created John, Earl of Somerset, marquess of the same, to him and the heirs male of his body. The title was extinguished by King Henry IV., and the Lords and Commons having petitioned His Majesty to restore the honour, the earl himself objected as the name of marquess was "strange in this kingdom." The words of creation were

de stilo titulo ac nomine Marchionis loci predicti per amicturam gladii investimus. The charter was granted in Parliament (Dignity of a Peer of the Realm, Vol. V, p. 117; *Rotuli Parliamentorum*, Vol. III, p. 488. Palmer, *Peerage Law in England*, pp. 3, 57). The name is supposed to have been first applied in Europe to lords marchers or governors of frontier provinces (Selden, Vol. II, c. 5, s. 54).

SECT 2

SUB-SECT 4 — *Earls*Degrees of
Peerage

Earls

575 "Earl" is the third degree of peerage in order of precedence, but first in antiquity (r) The name of a county was not an essential part of the dignity, but was used to distinguish earls of the same christian name (s)

Earldom.

An earldom is not confined to a place, but extends through the whole kingdom It was designed for the defence of the King and country and extends over all the land (t) It is an office as well as a dignity (u)

SUB-SECT 5 — *Viscounts*

Viscounts

576 "Viscount" is the most recent degree of peerage, and ranks after earls but above barons (a) The first introduction of the title into England was in 1440, when John Lord Beaumont was, by letters patent and investiture, created Viscount of Beaumont (b)

SUB-SECT 6 — *Barons*

Barons.

577 "Baron" is the fifth degree of peerage, and ranks after viscount At the time of the Conquest, and as late as Magna Charta, there were greater and lesser barons (c)

(r) Cruise, *Origin of Dignities*, c 1, s 55, 4 Co Rep 49 a The earldom of Surrey was created by King William II, and certain magnates are styled *comites* in Domesday Book These earls are, however, always called by their personal names, and it is doubtful whether they held English earldoms or were counts of Normandy If the latter, they were counts created by a duke, which power existed in dukes of the Empire Their status, therefore, was presumably below that of English earls when the latter were established The first charters now existing are those creating—(1) Geoffrey de Mandeville, Earl of Essex, to hold to him and heirs "*post eum hereditabiliter*", (2) Milo de Gloucester, Earl of Hereford, (3) Aubrey de Vere Earl of Cambridge, with liberty, if he could not have that name to choose from Oxfordshire, Berkshire, Wiltshire, and Dorsetshire The charter to Milo is printed in full, and the material parts of the others are given in Selden's *Titles of Honour* on the authority of chroniclers The charter to Geoffrey de Mandeville is in the British Museum, and has been printed in Palmer *Peerage Law in England*, p 241 Round, "*Geoffrey de Mandeville*" Barons are the only dignities known to have existed before the constitution of Parliament

(s) Round "*Geoffrey de Mandeville*," p 144

(t) *R v Knollys* (1694), 1 Ld Raym 10, 12, s C, sub nom *R v Knowles*, 12 Mod Rep 60

(u) *York (Earldom) Peerage Claim*, [1907] A C 10

(a) Selden, Vol II, c 5, s 31 see the letters patent creating John Lord Beaumont, to be Viscount Beaumont (printed in Palmer, *Peerage Law in England*, p 275)

(b) King Henry VI created this peerage, see 2 Co Inst 5, and see note (a), *supra* The Latin expression "*vice comes*" is not strictly equivalent, for it anciently meant the sheriff The dignity has always been created by letters patent in England, but in Ireland the three dignities of Buttevant, Fernoy, and Gormanston are in a list of prescriptive peerages recognised by King Henry VII Gormanston was created by patent in 1478, and the constitution of the other two are unknown (*Complete Peerage of England* by G E C, Vol III, p 326)

(c) Cruise, *Origin of Dignities*, 2nd ed, c 1, s 50 The word was anciently assigned to all military tenants in chief of the Crown (see the opinion of the author of the *Dignity of a Peer of the Realm*, Vol I, p 85), which is corroborated by the fact that such tenants in chief retained the title in Scotland long subsequent to the creation of Lords of Parliament,

Barony by tenure was not preserved by the Abolition of Tenures Act (*d*) and no longer exists (*e*)

SECT. 2.
Degree of
Peerage.

SECT. 3—Creation of Peers

578. Peers have been created by Act of Parliament, by charter by letters patent and, in England, by writ or summons to Parliament followed by a sitting (*f*)

Modes of
creation

579 A writ of summons, followed by a sitting, creates a barony only. A writ by the name of 'eul' does not create an earldom (*g*).

Baronies.
Effect of writ
of summons

A writ does not create a peerage if it can be referred to a previous instrument of creation (*h*)

There must be a sitting as well as a writ (*i*), and evidence to explain the absence of sitting is not enough (*j*), but proof of a sitting is *ipso facto* proof of the writ (*k*)

Necessity of
sitting

See also the charter of King Henry I (printed in the Statutes of the Realm, Vol I, p 1), containing the words *Si quis baronum, Comitum meorum, vel aliorum qui de me tenent*, "*si quis baronum, vel aliorum hominum meorum*" A "*homo regis*" was a tenant in chief, and the charter shows that baron and "*homo*" were distinct ranks forty years after the Conquest. For a fuller discussion on this question see the three first divisions of the Dignity of a Peer of the Realm. The opinion there expressed may be held to differ from that of the text, *supra*. It was in fact the object of the author of the Lords' Reports to reject all claims to peerage founded on tenure. It must be concluded that the reports and the rulings in various claims to baronies by writ go far to deny that the barons who obtained Magna Charta (see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 377, note (*l*)) were peers in the present meaning of peerage. Similarly, King Henry II in 1154 granted a charter which mentions "*Comites et Barones et omnes mei homines*" (Statutes of the Realm, Vol I p 4), and see note (*k*), *infra*.

(*d*) Stat (1860) 12 Car 2, c 24, see titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 380, note (*e*), REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL.

(*e*) *Berkeley Peerage* (1861), 8 H L Cas 21. Up to the accession of William III (1689) the theory that all peerage in its origin was by tenure of land was held by all judges and writers, but has now been abandoned, so that their authority is now of little value.

(*f*) *Prince's Case* (1605), 8 Co Rep 1. It is sometimes difficult to decide whether a particular instrument is an Act of Parliament or a charter granted in Parliament. But the distinguishing feature seems, as a rule, to be the assent of the Commons. The validity of the instrument may depend on this distinction, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI pp 454, 456. For example of such Acts, see Palmer, *Peerage Law in England*, ch 4. Although historical evidence tends to show that prominent dignities entitling or qualifying the holders to attend the King's Council or Parliament were created by public investiture by the Sovereign himself, and that written documents were evidence of creation rather than creation itself, the contrary opinion is, however, asserted that earldoms and higher dignities are created by charter or patent, and that investiture is the outward sign of creation.

(*g*) *Norfolk (Earldom) Peerage Claim*, [1907] A C 10.

(*h*) *Vaux Peerage* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 526.

(*i*) *Barony of Clifton* (1673), Collins on Baronies, p 292, *Freschville Peerage* (1677), Dignity of a Peer of the Realm Vol III, p 29.

(*j*) *De Wadhull Claim* (1892), Minutes of Evidence of Claims before Committee for Privileges.

(*k*) *Hastings Peerage* (1841) 8 Cl & Fin 144, *Vaux Peerage*, *supra*; *Biage Peerage* (1836), 6 Cl & Fin 757.

§ 19
Creation of
Peers

Summons
to Parliament
essential

First creation
of baron

A writ of summons to an assembly other than a Parliament consisting of lords spiritual and temporal and elected representatives of counties, cities and boroughs does not create a peerage (*l*)

The first creation of a baron by letters patent appears to have been in 1385 (11 Ric II), when John de Beauchamp of Holt, steward of the king's household, was created Lord de Beauchamp and Baron of Kidderminster to him and the heirs male of his body (*m*)

Creation of
new peerages

580 Since the Union with Scotland (*n*) no new peer of

(*l*) *De Wakkell Claim* (1892), Minutes of Evidence of Claims before Committee for Privileges. The first evidence of such a Parliament is the issue of writs by Simon de Montfort, Earl of Leicester, in 1264, when King Henry III was a captive, and this date was allowed in the claim to the barony of de Ros (Collins on Baronies, p 261). Subsequently this Parliament was abandoned the King not being a free agent, and it was held in the *Mowbray Claim* (1887), that the first Parliament, a summons to which may prove peerage, was that of 23 Edward I (Edward for Henry) in 1295.

(*m*) Dignity of a Peer of the Realm, Vol V, p 81, Palmer, Peerage Law in England, p 263. In the Dignity of a Peer of the Realm, Vol V, a number of charters and letters patent creating dignities are printed, of which a few relate to baronies. These creations are by letters patent of Kings Henry VI and Edward IV. The earlier creations contain no clear limitation, but some make provision for the sustentation of the dignity, which is limited to heirs or heirs male of the body. One Act of King Henry III (26th year), with its sequel, may be considered to throw light on the early constitution of baronies (Dignity of a Peer of the Realm, Vol V, p 244, Sir Harris Nicholas, Report, p 204). The Act recites that Warin, late Baron de Lisle, was seised of the lordship of Kingston Lisle in the county of Berks, that his estates descended to Elizabeth, Countess of Warwick, who left three coheirs, the eldest of them married to John Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury, that the earl and countess had granted the lordship to their son John, which lordship was the portion of the eldest coheir, that Warin and all his ancestors had the dignity of Baron and Lord of Lisle in right of the said manor and lordship beyond the memory of man. The King therefore grants the dignity of Baron de Lisle to John, son of the earl, with right to sit in Parliament. This supports the proposition that in the fifteenth century the heirs in possession of certain landed baronies had always belonged and ought to belong to the class styled "Barones Majores." Baronies have for the last four centuries been always created by letters patent with limitations to heirs male of the body (further special remainders being sometimes added), except in Scotland, where earldoms and baronies descendible to heirs were created down to the union of the kingdoms (Dignity of a Peer of the Realm, Vol V, p 252). King Henry VI, in his twenty fifth year, created the barony of Saye and Sele without words of limitation, and granted a provision limited to heirs and assigns (Complete Peerage of England, by G. E. C., Vol VII, p 64, *Saye and Sele Barony* (1848) 1 H. L. Cas 507). Whether the barony was created by this instrument or by writ, or whether the grantee was heir of an earlier barony, is open to argument, but the use of the word "assigns" must be noted as raising the question whether any of the letters patent creating dignities, without words of limitation expressly applied to the dignities, did in fact create hereditary peerages according to the law of England.

(*n*) Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (6 Anne, c. 11); and see titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, p. 10, PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p. 625.

England or Scotland can be created, and, since the Act of Union with Ireland (o), no new peer of Great Britain can be created. The Crown has, however, power to create any number of peers of the United Kingdom (p).

581 The Crown can only create one new Irish peerage for every three that become extinct, provided the number of Irish peers entitled to sit in the House of Lords does not fall below one hundred, in which case that number is to be maintained (q). But the extinction of one out of several peerages held by the same person will not give rise to the right, because the word "peerage" here means the status or condition of a peer (a). The creation of a new Irish peerage on the supposed extinction of an old one is not, however, affected by the revival of the latter (b).

582 A peerage is now (c) created by letters patent under the Procedure on creation of peerage

(o) Union with Ireland Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 67), and see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 626, 627

(p) See title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 445

(q) Union with Ireland Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 67), art 4

(a) *Fermoy Peerage Claim* (1856), 5 H L Cas 716. In this case the holder of an Irish earldom received, before the Act of Union, a new patent creating him an Irish baron with remainder over in default of heirs male of his body. He died without heirs male of his body, so that the earldom became extinct, but the barony went over. It was held that the extinction of the earldom was not, under the circumstances, an extinction within the meaning of the statute. As to extinction, see p 273, *post*.

(b) *Bloomfield Peerage* (1831), 2 Dow & Cl 344

(c) The ancient method of creation appears to have been by writ of summons. One of the demands of the barons conceded in Magna Charta (see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 377, note (b)) was that summonses must be addressed to the Barones Majores separately and individually when general summonses to the tenants in chief were addressed to the sheriffs of counties. But whether a tenant in chief became a greater baron by any form of creation, or whether, between the date of Domesday Book (1086) and that of the earliest writs of summons to Parliament, any person was created a baron with a territorial name of dignity, is unknown. In the subsequent writs one or two persons were summoned as barons, while the vast majority were called "chivalers." It is possible that these persons had been created barons by charter. No such charter, however, is known to exist. The writ of summons was "*ad consulendum ad tractandum de negotiis*" or some such words inapplicable to military service, followed by a sitting in Parliament (Co Litt 16 b, Com Dig, tit Dignity (C 3), *Vaux Peerage* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 526, *Braye Peerage* (1839), 6 Cl & Fin 757, *Hastings Peerage* (1841), 8 Cl & Fin 144, 157, *Wharton Peerage* (1845), 12 Cl & Fin 295). This created a peerage barony descendible to heirs (*ibid*), unless it appeared that the writ was addressed to an official (*Barony of Clifton* (1673), Collins on Baronies, p 292). The only use of this writ now remaining is the writ addressed to the eldest son of a peer of any degree calling him to the House of Lords in his father's barony, but this writ does not create a new dignity (*Ex parte Perry* (1782), 5 Bro Parl Cas 509). It, however, this mode of creation is still valid, it is doubtful whether or not a writ issued to such an eldest son in respect of a barony which his father does not in fact possess would create a barony descendible to heirs. For a collection of limitations from the reign of King Stephen to 20 Henry VI, see Palmer, *Peerage Law in England*, p 76. The mere sitting in Parliament under the King's writ only confers peerage, but not any particular rank in peerage (*Norfolk (Earldom) Peerage Claim*, [1907] A C 10).

SECT. 3

Creation of
Peers.

Great Seal by the Sovereign (*d*) A precept to pass the seal receives the Sign Manual superscribed, and the letters patent are countersigned by the Secretary of State for the Home Department (*e*) The letters patent are thereupon enrolled at the Public Record Office

Form of
letters
patent

583 The letters patent must specify the patentee and name of the dignity, the limitation thereof to future heirs of the patentee, and the limitation must be one known to the law (*f*)

Limitation of
grant.

The rule in England now is a limitation to heirs male of the body, with an occasional addition of special remainders, and there is a presumption of law that the limitation of an English peerage in a lost grant was to heirs male of the body (*g*) A limitation to heirs male, as distinguished from heirs male of the body, is void in England (*h*), but not in Scotland The presumption of law now in the case of a Scottish peerage the grant of which has been lost or cannot be found is that the limitation was to the heirs male generally (*i*), but this presumption is rebuttable (*k*)

Shifting
clause

584 A shifting clause in letters patent, directing that the dignity should pass from the holder of the dignity to another person by special remainder upon his succession to an older or greater dignity, is bad, but the letters patent themselves are not rendered invalid thereby, nor by reason of any limitation becoming incapable of taking effect (*l*) A special remainder after the

(*d*) See title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 476 Creation by writ being peculiar to the English peerage, it is doubtful whether a peerage of the United Kingdom can be created in this manner

(*e*) As to the functions of the Secretary of State for the Home Department see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, pp 82 *et seq*

(*f*) See title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 456, *Willes Claim of Peerage* (1869), L R 4 H L 128, *per* Lord CHELMSFORD, L C, at pp 153, 162, *Cope v De la Warr (Earl)* (1873), 8 Ch App 982, *Cruse, Origin of Dignities*, c 2 As to life peers, see *Wensleydale Peerage* (1856), 5 H L Cas 958, and p 269, *post* A grant without words of limitation is bad in England In Scotland a grant in fee would be presumed

(*g*) The first known limitation of an earldom to heirs male of the body was in 1322, on the creation of the earldom of Carlisle, it is, however, arguable whether the earldom of Winchester, created in 1207, was not so limited All the earldoms of the eleventh and twelfth centuries were limited to heirs, and the presumption that the limitation in a lost grant was to heirs male of the body is not founded in antiquity, see, further, *Norfolk (Earldom) Peerage Claim* [1907] A C 10, p 264, *ante*, and see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 457 *et seq*

(*h*) *Willes Claim of Peerage*, *supra*, *Devon's (Earl) Case* (1831), 2 Dow & Cl 200, see Sir Harris Nicholas, *The Devon Peerage* (1832), with appendices of the Nevill, Pubbeck, Lovell, and Oxford Cases, Finlayson, *History of Hereditary Dignities*, with special reference to the Earldom of Wiltes (1869)

(*i*) *Herries Peerage Claim* (1858), L R 2 Sc & Div 258, 3 Macq 585, *Perth Earldom* (1848), 2 H L Cas 865, *Mar Peerage* (1875), 1 App Cas 1, 24, 36, and cases there cited

(*k*) *Herries Peerage Claim*, *supra*, *Mar Peerage*, *supra*

(*l*) *Buckhurst Peerage Case* (1876), 2 App Cas 1, compare *Willes Claim of Peerage*, *supra* Such a clause may, however, be

exhaustion of the original limitation is good, the remainder taking effect as a new grant.

585 The naming of a place is not essential to the creation of a peerage (*m*)

586 A subject cannot refuse to accept a peerage (*n*), even if conferred upon him in his infancy (*a*)

SECT. 2.
Creation of
Peers.

Naming of
a place

Refusal of
grant

SECT. 4.—*Estate in and Descent of a Peerage*

587 A peerage is an incorporeal hereditament, inalienable and descendible according to the words of limitation contained in the grant (*b*)

Nature of
estate and
descent

A limitation to a man "and his heirs" will not carry it to collateral heirs (*c*). For the purposes of descent, therefore, this limitation is practically equivalent to "heirs of the body."

Baronies by writ are presumed to be limited to heirs (*d*)

Each successive heir to a peerage takes under the original grant

In the case of a lord of appeal in ordinary his dignity as a lord of Parliament does not descend to his heirs (*e*).

SECT. 5—*Privileges and Precedence*

SUB-SECT. 1—*Privileges*

588 The most important privilege of a peer is to sit and vote

to sit
and vote in
Parliament

valid to impede succession (*Cope v De la Warr (Earl)* (1873), 8 Ch App 982). An example of a shifting clause may be found in the very elaborate letters patent creating the earldom of Cromartie, printed in "the Cromartie Book," by Sir William Fraser.

(*m*) *R v Knollys* (1694), 1 Ld Raym 10, *Re Luett Carnac's (Sir J)* Will (1885), 30 Ch D 136

(*n*) *Egerton v Brownlow (Lord)* (1853), 4 H L Cas 1, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 456 457

(*a*) *Mortimer Sackville's Case* (1719), cited 2 App Cas 6, *n*, *Queensberry's (Duke) Case* (1719), 1 P Wms 582

(*b*) *R v Purbeck (Viscount)* (1660), Show Parl Cas 1, 5 *Norfolk (Earldom) Peerage Claim*, [1907] A C 10. A peerage cannot, therefore, be the subject of a trust or pass to a trustee in bankruptcy (*Buckhurst Peerage* (1876), 2 App Cas 1). But see *Re Luett Carnac's (Sir J) Will*, *supra*. In this case it was held that an hereditary dignity was "land" within the meaning of the Settled Land Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 38), s 37, see also *Re Aylesford's (Earl) Settled Estates* (1886), 32 Ch D 162, *Cowley (Earl) v Cowley (Countess)*, [1901] A C 450

(*c*) *De Ros Peerage* (1804), Minutes of Evidence of Claims before Committee for Privileges, Collins on Baronies, p 266

(*d*) *Vaux Peerage* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 526, *Braye Peerage* (1839), 6 Cl & Fin 757, *Hastings Peerage* (1841), 8 Cl & Fin 144

(*e*) Appellate Jurisdiction Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 59), s 6

SECT 5
Privileges
and
Precedence.
Disqualifica-
tions.

in Parliament (*f*) But a peer is disqualified for receiving a writ of summons and for sitting and voting in Parliament if he is (1) an infant (*g*), (2) an alien (*h*) not naturalised (*i*), (3) a bankrupt, during the continuance of the bankruptcy (*h*), or (4) convicted of treason or felony, until pardoned, or until completion of sentence (*l*)

A patent of a peerage for life does not confer the right to sit and vote in Parliament (*m*)

Peers
qualified to
sit in House
of Commons

589 Although peers of England, Scotland, Great Britain, and the United Kingdom are disqualified for election as members of the House of Commons, peers of Ireland, who have not been elected representative peers, are qualified to represent constituencies in Great Britain (*n*)

Peers
qualified
to vote at
parlia-
mentary
elections

590 Peers of England, Scotland, Great Britain, and the United Kingdom are disqualified for voting at elections of members of the House of Commons, and cannot be placed on the register of voters (*o*), but peers of Ireland, who have been actually elected and are serving as members of the House of Commons, are not so disqualified (*p*)

General rights
of Scottish
peers

591 Since the Union with Scotland a peer of Scotland cannot, merely by virtue of such peerage, sit and vote in Parliament, but he has all the privileges of the peerage of England except only that of sitting and voting in Parliament (*q*)

General rights
of Irish
peers

592 An Irish peer has, unless he chooses to waive them in order to become a member of the House of Commons, all

(*f*) *Norfolk (Earldom) Peerage Claim*, [1907] A C 10, 17, see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 779 As to representative peers of Scotland and Ireland see *ibid*, p 624, *Breadalbane Peerage Claim* (1872), L R 2 Sc & Div 269, see also title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 456

(*g*) Standing Order of the House of Lords 22nd May, 1685 and see titles INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 47, PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 622 623

(*h*) Act of Settlement, 1700 (12 & 13 Will 3, c 2), s 3

(*i*) Naturalization Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 14), s 7, see title ALIENS, Vol I, p 314

(*h*) Bankruptcy Disqualification Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 50), ss 6, 7, 8 A peer who commits an act of bankruptcy may be dealt with under the Bankruptcy Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict c 52), as though he had no privilege of Parliament (*ibid*, s 124), and see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 12, 88

(*l*) Forfeiture Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 23), s 2, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 428, 429

(*m*) *Wensleydale Peerage* (1856), 5 H L Cas 958

(*n*) Union with Ireland Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 67), s 1, art 4; see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 625

(*o*) *Beauchamp (Earl) v Madresfield* (1872), L R P C P 245, *Rendlesham (Lord) v Howard* (1873), L R 9 C P 252, *Bristol (Marquis) v Beak* (1907), 96 L T 55, and see title ELECTIONS, Vol XII, p 140 As to municipal elections, see *ibid*, p 183

(*p*) Anson, *Law and Custom of the Constitution*, Vol I, p 124

(*q*) Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (6 Anne, c 11), s 1, art 23,

the privileges of peerage except that of sitting in the House of Lords (i)

593 A peer is at all times free from arrest in civil cases (s), and process for contempt of court cannot, it seems, be served against him (t). Hence, a peer ought not to be appointed a receiver (a). An order of court may, however, be enforced against a peer by sequestration (b).

Where a party to legal proceedings desires to plead privilege of Parliament, for example, peerage, he must assert definitely that he is a peer, for, if he merely alleges facts on which the jury may find that he is a peer, he will be treated as being an ordinary person and will be estopped by judgment against him from setting up his peerage (c), and it has been held that, if the peerage is denied by the other side, the party pleading peerage must state in his reply how he claims the dignity (d).

594 In legal proceedings a peer of Ireland is entitled, if a lord of Parliament, to be described by his title of dignity, but, if he is not a lord of Parliament, he should be described by his proper name with the addition of his title and degree, but without the expression "commonly called," which is only used in the case of courtesy titles of sons of dukes, marquesses, viscounts, or earls (e).

595 A peer who is a plaintiff and out of the jurisdiction must give the usual security for costs (f).

596 A peer indicted for treason or felony must be tried by his peers (g).

This right is extended to Scottish peers by the Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (h), and to Irish peers by the Union with Ireland Act, 1800 (i), and to peeresses, whether married or sole, by statute (k).

SECT. I.
Privileges
and
Proceedings

Privilege from
process in
civil cases.

Right of
audience

Pleading
privilege.

Description in
proceedings

Security for
costs

Trial

(i) *Irish Peer's Case* (1806), Russ & Ry 117, *Robinson v Roleby (Lord)* (1803), 8 Ves 601

(s) *Shrewsbury's (Earl) Case* (1610), 9 Co Rep 6 b, 49 b, *Foster v Jackson* (1615), Hob 52, 61, *Couche v Arundel (Lord)* (1802), 3 East, 127, and see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 779, 780

(t) *Pheasant v Pheasant* (1670), 2 Vent 340, but see title CONTEMPT OF COURT, ATTACHMENT AND COMMITTAL, Vol VII, p 320, note (m)

(a) *A G v Gee* (1813), 2 Ves & B 208

(b) *Pheasant v Pheasant, supra*, *Eyre (Justice) v Shaftsbury (Countess)* (1723), 2 P Wms 103, 110, and, as to sequestration, see title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp 79 *et seq*

(c) *Digby v Alexander* (1832), 9 Bing 412

(d) *Stirling (Earl) v Clayton* (1832), 1 Cr & M 241

(e) *R v Graham* (1791), 2 Leach, 547

(f) *Aldborough (Lord) v Burton* (1834), 2 My & K 401, and, as to security for costs, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(g) *I.e.* his equals (*R v Audley (Lord)* (1631), 3 State Tr 401). This right is not strictly a privilege, because it is the ordinary right of every subject by Magna Charta and cannot be waived, and see titles CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 270, PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 653

(h) 6 Anne, c 11

(i) 39 & 40 Geo 3, c 67

(k) Stat (1441 2) 20 Hen 6, c 9, see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p. 653

MECH 5
Privileges
and
Precedence

Rights and
privileges of
peeresses.

Peers who are lords of Parliament have the privileges of members of Parliament (*l*)

A peer may act as advocate in civil and criminal causes (*m*)

597 Peeresses have the same rights and privileges, except that of sitting and voting in Parliament, as peers, and, although a peeress by marriage loses such rights and privileges if she marry a commoner, a peeress in her own right in the like event retains them (*n*)

SUB-SECT 2 — *Precedence*

Precedence in
Parliament

598 The precedence of peers in Parliament is regulated by statute (*o*), under which none but the King's children can sit on either side of the cloth of estate (*p*) in Parliament. The Lord Chancellor, the Lord Treasurer, the Lord President of the Council and the Lord Privy Seal, being of the degree of barons of Parliament or above, sit on the left side of the Parliament chamber above all dukes other than such as shall happen to be the King's son, brother, uncle, nephew, or brother's or sister's sons (*q*). After the Lord Privy Seal come the Great Chamberlain, the Constable, the Marshal, the Lord Admiral, the Grand Master or Lord Steward and the King's Chamberlain in the order named (*r*). If the King's Chief Secretary is a baron of Parliament or a bishop, he takes precedence of all barons or bishops not holding any of the above-named offices (*s*). All dukes, other than those above-mentioned, and all marquesses, earls, viscounts and barons not holding any of the offices aforesaid, take precedence according to seniority (*t*). If, however, the holders of the office of Lord Chancellor, Lord Treasurer, Lord President of the Council, Lord Privy Seal, or Chief Secretary are under the degree of a baron of Parliament, they sit at the upper end of a seat in the middle of the Parliament chamber in the order named (*a*).

Since the Union with Scotland, peers of Scotland take precedence next after peers of England of the same degree (*b*). Peers of Ireland, created before the Union with Ireland, take precedence next after peers of Great Britain of the same degree, if created

(*l*) See title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 779 *et seq*, 785 *et seq*

(*m*) See titles BARRISTERS, Vol II, p 371, PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 649, note (*h*), 754, note (*b*)

(*n*) *Rutland's (Countess) Case* (1605), 6 Co Rep 52 b, Co Litt 16 b, *Rivers' (Countess) Case* (1651), Sty 252, *Anon* (1676), 1 Vent 298, *Acton's Case* (1603), 4 Co Rep 117 a, compare *Cowley (Earl) v Cowley (Countess)*, [1901] A C 450 and see the text, *supra*

(*o*) Stat (1539) 31 Hen 8, c 10, and see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 455 456

(*p*) Stat (1539) 31 Hen 8, c 10, s 1

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 4, and see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, pp 57, 63. As to the places of archbishops and bishops, see titles ECCLESIASTICAL LAW, Vol XI, pp 387, 388, 404, PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 621

(*r*) Stat (1539) 31 Hen 8, c 10, s 5

(*s*) *Ibid*, s 6

(*t*) *Ibid*, s 7. The expression in the statute is "after ther auncients as it hathe ben accustomed"

(*a*) *Ibid*, s. 8

(*b*) Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (6 Anne, c 11), s 1 art 23

since the Union they rank *pari passu* with peers of the United Kingdom of the same degree (c)

SECT. 5.
Privileges
and
Precedence.

SECT. 6.—*Extinction or Suspension of a Peerage*

SUB-SECT. 1 — *Failure of Issue*

599 On failure of the heirs indicated at the creation of a peerage it becomes extinct (d).

Failure of
issue

SUB-SECT. 2 — *Abeysance*

600 The doctrine of abeyance relates not to the extinction but to the dormant existence of a peerage. It does not apply to Scottish peerages (e) and is of recent origin, not being known before the seventeenth, nor fully developed till the nineteenth century (f). It must be distinguished from coheirship, the law applicable to which is the common law.

Effect of
doctrine

When the owner of a fief died leaving no male issue but more than one daughter, his land fell to such daughters in equal shares, though in case of a landed barony it was held that the eldest must have the *caput baronie* where seisin was taken for the whole (g).

Abeysance
arising on
death

A dignity being impartible and all the daughters having equal right to it, the peerage right is held to be latent in all the coheirs (h).

(c) Union with Ireland Act 1800 (39 & 40 Geo. 3, c. 67), s. 1, art. 4.

(d) *Knollys' Case* (1694), Marcham's Report 464 *sub nom. R. v. Banbury (Earl)*, Skin 517, where the House of Lords held that the first Earl of Banbury left no sons, and consequently that the earldom became extinct by failure of issue.

(e) *Herries Peerage (Case)* (1838), L. R. 2 Sc. & Div. 258, 3 Macq. 585.

(f) The law of abeyance, as distinguished from coheirship, and first enunciated in the seventeenth century, is set forth in the letters patent dated 7th May, 1663, creating Mary, Countess of Kent, to be Baroness Lucas of Crudwell, which provided that if at any time after the death of the said Mary, and in default of heirs male of her body, begotten by the Earl of Kent, there should be more persons than one who shall be coheirs of her body, so that the King or his heirs might declare which of them should have the dignity or otherwise, the dignity should be suspended or extinguished, then, nevertheless, the dignity should not be suspended or extinguished, but should go and be held and enjoyed from time to time by such of the said coheirs as by course of descent, and the common law of the realm should be inheritable in other entire and indivisible inheritances as namely, an office of honour and public trust, or a castle for the necessary defence of the realm, and the like in case such inheritance had been given and limited to the said countess and the heirs of her body by the said Earl begotten. Except as to the earldom of Cromartie, which was not the subject of any judicial decision, this doctrine has not been applied to any dignity other than a barony by writ: the point was expressly left open in *Norfolk (Earldom) Peerage (Case)*, [1907] A. C. 10.

(g) 2 Pollock and Matland, 272, citing Bract, Vol. II, 272.

(h) It was formerly held to revert or be escheated to the fountain of honour, i.e. the Crown, but the law was subsequently ascertained to be that a peerage in coheirs was not extinguished, and that the Sovereign possessed it only so long as coheirship existed, so that if at any future time there should be but one heir, the right revived and the dignity was said to have been in abeyance (*Willoughby de Broke Case* (1695), Cruise, Origin of Dignities, p. 197, Collins on Baronies, p. 321, Skin 432).

SECT 6
Extinction
or Suspension
of
Peerage.

The King can terminate such abeyance in favour of one coheir (i), but cannot grant the dignity to anyone but a coheir (k)

An office of honour is not inherited by any one coheir but remains vested in all the coheirs, who must perform any duty pertaining to the honour by deputy approved by the Sovereign (l).

Abeyance
arising on
disqualifica-
tion

601 Abeyance may arise from the disqualification of the heir. Thus, when the heir to a peerage is an alien, the right to a writ of summons does not descend, but remains dormant until such time as the disqualification is removed (m)

Lapse of
time.

602 Lapse of time, if satisfactorily explained, is no bar to a claim to a peerage (n), but may give rise to a presumption against the right of the claimant (o)

SEE SECT 3 — Merger

MERGE.

603 If the holder of a peerage succeeds to the Crown, the dignity merges in the Crown and can only be revived or re-created by grant (p)

A barony by writ does not merge in a subsequent earldom (q)

(i) *Com Dig*, tit Dignity (C 3) title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 457, and see, further, pp 276, 278, *post*

(k) This power in the Sovereign was exercised frequently in the nineteenth century in respect of abeyances of long duration, some of the instances being remarkable

(l) See the claims to the office of Lord Great Chamberlain (1902), Wollaston, *Coronation Claims*, pp 296, 301, 302, see also (1625), Collins, *Prac* 173 (where, upon the death of the Earl of Oxford, leaving daughters and no male issue, it was reported to the King by the judges that his baronies reverted to the Crown to dispose of the King's measure and that the office of Great Chamberlain went to his heir at law) Nevertheless, the House of Lords recently resolved that the eldest coheir was entitled to the Barony of Lucas (*Minutes of Proceedings before the Committee for Privileges*, 1907), and see note (f), p 273 *ante*

(m) *Newburgh's (Earldom) Case* (1830), *Minutes of Evidence before the Committee for Privileges*. It was at one time held by the House of Lords that a Scottish peer was disqualified under the Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (6 Anne, c 11), from being created a peer of the United Kingdom (*Queensberry's (Duke) Case* (1720), 1 P Wms 582, *Brandon's (Duke) Case* (1711), *Lords' Journals*, Vol XIX, p 396) This decision has been reversed (*Brandon's (Duke) Case* (1782), *Lords' Journals*, Vol XXXVI, p 516 b) As to the effect of bankruptcy on a peer, see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 88, note (s), and as to the effect of a conviction for felony, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 429, and see p 270 *ante*

(n) *Com Dig*, tit Dignity (E) *Hastings Peerage* (1841), 8 Cl & Fin 144, 163—165, *Fitzwalter Peerage* (1844), 10 Cl & Fin 946, 957

(o) *De Wadhull Claim* (1862), *Minutes of Evidence before the Committee for Privileges*

(p) See *Oranmore's (Lord) Claim* (1836), 2 H L Cas 910, compare *Buckhurst Peerage* (1876), 2 App Cas 1, *per* Lord CAIRNS, L C, at p 28 The effect of the King becoming coheir to a barony by writ in abeyance has never been argued As to the titles of the Crown, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 360 Merger might arise if the Sovereign terminated the abeyance in his own favour, and see the text, *supra*

(q) *Ross Barony* (1666), Collins on Baronies, p 261, *Grey of Ruthyn Barony* (1649), Collins on Baronies, p 195, and see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 457, *supra*.

SUB-SECT 4—*Resignation and Surrender*

604 A peer of England cannot surrender, resign (*i*), or extinguish his dignity by fine, grant, or any other conveyance to the King (*a*)

A Scottish peer could resign his dignity into the hands of the king in order to extinguish it, or, which was usual, resign for a *novodamus* altering the course of descent (*b*).

SECT. 4.
Extinguishment
or Resignation of
Peerage.

Resignation and
surrender

SUB-SECT 5—*Forfeiture*

605 Forfeiture of all civil rights follows upon attainder (*c*) Dignities held by the attainted person, or to which any person claiming through him becomes heir, escheat to the Crown and the blood of the attainted person is "corrupted," so that he cannot subsequently inherit, nor transmit to his heirs the capacity to inherit, any dignity (*d*)

The barony of an attainted person is not preserved by his son having been summoned to Parliament in his father's barony prior to the attainder (*e*)

If, however, an attainted person dies without issue before becoming heir to a dignity, the succession to the dignity is not affected (*f*),

Forfeiture
consequent on
attainder

When succession or
subsequent
limitation
unaffected

(*g*) *Norfolk (Earldom) Peerage Claim*, [1907] A C 10 Before the seventeenth century it was supposed that a peer had power to surrender or resign, and many earls did in fact purport to do so

(*a*) *R v Purbeck* (1660), Show Parl Cas 1, 5, Com Dig, tit Dignity (E)

(*b*) The power seems to have been abolished by the Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (6 Anne c 11)

(*c*) Common law conviction of treason or felony, followed by sentence of death, involved attainder Persons can also be attainted by Act of Parliament, even after death (4 Bl Com 380, Co Litt 290 b, Chitty, Criminal Law, p 723) as to Bills of Attainder, see title COURTS, Vol IX, p 20, and see titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 457, PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 727

(*d*) 2 Bl Com 253, 4 Bl Com 380 Chitty, Criminal Law, pp 726 et seq

(*e*) *Montacute and Monthermer Peerages* (1874), 1 R 7 H L 305, per Lord CAIRNS, L C, at p 315, per Lord HATHERLEY, at p 316

(*f*) *Perth Earldom* (1848), 2 H L Cas 865, and see the *Southesk Earldom* (1848), 2 H L Cas 908 For example, if A has three sons B, C, and D, the line of B remains pure, the line of C becomes corrupt through attainder of a descendant, and the line of D remains pure The issue of B and C become extinct, and the descendant of D becomes heir of the person ennobled If in fact any descendant of C became heir, all the descendants of D are barred The chief authority for this statement of the law is the *Airlie Earldom* (1813), Parliamentary Papers, and Cruise, Origin of Dignities, p 131 The judges were sent for and delivered their unanimous opinion in the House of Lords by the mouth of the Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas on 2nd June, 1818 They held that an estate tail is not protected from forfeiture by the statute *De Donis Conditionalibus* (Statute of Westminster II (1285) 13 Edw 1, c 1) they discussed cases in Dyer, p 115 (*R v Hussey* (1596), Cro Eliz 519, *Sheffield (Lord) v Radcliffe* (1615), Hob 334, Ex Ch) and the opinion of Lord GILBERT, C B, as author of the title "Leases" in Bacon's Abridgement, who asserted that the donee of an estate tail holds by homage, fealty etc If a peerage is held by homage and fealty, as the ceremony of the Coronation indicates, the argument is perhaps irresistible In the *Airlie Earldom*, *supra*, the claimant consequently failed, and subsequently obtained an Act of Parliament reversing the

SECT. 6.
Extinction
or Suspend-
tion of
Peerage.

nor is the inheritance of a dignity under a special remainder barred by the attainder of an heir under the prior limitation (*q*)

On the attainder of one coheir to a barony in abeyance, the dignity does not escheat to the Crown, the title of the other coheir or coheirs is not affected (*h*).

Forfeiture
without
attainder

606 Forfeiture without attainder has been imposed by Act of Parliament (*i*), and no judgment can cause attainder or corruption of blood for forfeiture or escheat except judgment of outlawry (*k*)

Restitution
of blood

607 The effect of an attainder can only be removed by statute, which, in the case of attainder by Act of Parliament, takes the form of a repealing Act. Restitution of blood does not revive a forfeited dignity. It does, however, enable the attainted person or his heirs subsequently to inherit a dignity (*l*)

SUB-SECT. 6 — *Deprivation*

Deprivation

608 No peer can be deprived of peerage except by Act of Parliament (*m*)

attainder of the peerage and thus succeeded to the dignity. It will be observed, therefore, that the law of forfeiture as applicable to dignities has been extremely doubtful, and that although it is considered settled by authority of the *Aulie Earldom* (1813) (the dignity being Scottish, and brought within the law of England only by the Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (6 Anne, c 11), yet the decision rests on the supposition that the law of dignities follows that of land held in chief of the Crown. It is also worthy of note that the earldom of Aulie was limited to "heirs male," which limitation—it "heirs male of the body" is not implied—would be void (see p 268, *ante*), and none of the authorities quoted would apply compare the *Feniers (Earl) Attainder* (1760), 2 Eden, 373, Third Report on the Dignity of a Peer of the Realm, p 54, on the question whether attainder for felony has the same effect as attainder for treason, and the facts of the *Athol Case* (1813), Cruise, Origin of Dignities, 2nd ed., p 192 particularly in relation to the barony of Strange, see also the *Dacre Barony* (1805), and others, cited in Palmer, Peerage Law in England, pp 197—199.

(*q*) By the terms of the grant, enjoyment by the second grantee is made to depend on a future event. Both creations are emanations of the same royal prerogative, perfectly distinct and independent of each other; therefore, the forfeiture of the first by treason does not prevent the second from arising and taking effect at the time appointed (*Somerset's Dukedom Case*, Third Report on the Dignity of a Peer of the Realm, p 56).

(*h*) *Blaye Peerage* (1839), 6 Cl & Fin 757, *Camous Peerage* (1839), 6 Cl & Fin 789, *Beaumont Peerage* (1840), 6 Cl & Fin 868. As to abeyance, see p 273, *ante*.

(*i*) Stat (1534) 26 Hen 8, c 13 (now repealed).

(*k*) Forfeiture Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 23), s 1. The provision is not retrospective, and all the authorities applicable to peerage apply to the previous period, see, further, title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 428 *et seq*, and see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 467. A judgment of outlawry standing in the way of a claim to a dormant barony, though clearly erroneous, cannot be overlooked, but must be reversed (*Wharton Peerage* (1845), 12 Cl & Fin 295).

(*l*) *Montacute and Monthermer Peerages* (1874), L R 7 H L 305.

(*m*) Com Dig, tit Dignity (E), *Waterford's (Earl) Claim* (1832), 6 Cl & Fin 133, title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 457.

SECT. 7.—*Claims to Peerage*SUB SECT. 1.—*Jurisdiction*SECT. 7.
**Claims to
Peerage.**Jurisdiction
as to claims
to dignities.

609 The body of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal is an entity distinct from any House of Parliament (*n*)

Jurisdiction to determine a claim to a dignity exists only in the Sovereign, and can be delegated by him only, and has in fact been delegated by him at various periods to different authorities, such as the Lord Steward of England and the Court of the Marshal (*o*). A question of dignity or honour cannot be tried by a court of law (*p*)

610 The jurisdiction of the House of Lords is confined to claims to the right to vote there (*q*)

Jurisdiction
of House of
Lords

The House of Lords claims to have an inherent right to decide claims to Scottish and Irish peerages upon the ground that the petition is in fact a claim by the petitioner to be placed on a register of voters who elect members of the House (*r*)

(*n*) There are persons in possession of dignities both ecclesiastical and lay, who are not peers of Parliament, but are, it is apprehended, lords of the realm. Bishops and prelates, barons by tenure, if any, are examples; for the occupants of ancient episcopal sees are to some extent disqualified, and a baron by tenure could claim no writ of summons to the House of Lords. They may nevertheless be lords spiritual or temporal. It is to be observed, also, that the proclamation of a new Sovereign emanates from the lords spiritual and temporal taking such advice as they think proper, no reference to either House of Parliament appearing in the form used. See title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol. VI, p. 325. The original theory of monarchy is to this extent preserved. The subject is one not easily defined, and if the distinction is well founded it affects the question of jurisdiction, but see title PARLIAMENT, Vol. XXI, pp. 619 *et seq*.

(*o*) See title COURTS, Vol. IX, pp. 26, 116. Of trials in the Court of the Marshal in the seventeenth century, there are many records preserved at the College of Arms. See p. 288, *post*.

(*p*) *Cowley (Earl) v. Cowley (Countess)*, [1901] A.C. 450.

(*q*) This is evidenced by the passing and repealing of a Standing Order (now obsolete) to compel peers on first sitting in Parliament to hand in a pedigree showing the position of heirs to their dignities. The Earl of Berkeley made use of this order to hand in a pedigree showing his eldest son to be legitimate, thus raising a question which the peers, without reference from the Crown, had apparently no jurisdiction to try. The Standing Order was, probably for this reason, repealed. It is not evident that the question raised by the Earl of Berkeley could have been tried in any court before a right in someone had emerged. In *R v. Knollys* (1694), 1 Ld. Raym. 10, Holt, C.J., held that the question whether the person before the court was, or was not, earl was within his jurisdiction, and, contrary to the opinion of the House of Lords, he quashed an indictment for felony, because the person charged was described as Charles Knollys, whereas he ought to have been described as Earl of Banbury, and thus after the House of Lords had refused the claim of the person charged to be tried as a peer (Report of the Attorney General, p. 42, printed with the Minutes of Evidence before the Committee for Privileges).

(*r*) See *Waterford's (Earl) Claim* (1832), 6 Cl. & Fin. 133. This assertion has never been made where the claimant has petitioned the King, but in the years 1790-1793 certain persons claiming peerages voted at an election of Scottish peers, and the House summoned them to establish their right on a petition of a defeated candidate who desired that the return might be altered. The evidence in these claims was printed, probably the first

SECT 7
Claims to
Peerage

Persons claiming to vote as Irish peers petition the House of Lords that their names may be entered on the Roll of Irish Peers (*s*)

SUB-SECT 2 — *Procedure and Evidence*

Claims by
petition

611 A claim to peerage is initiated by petition to the Sovereign. The claimant must state the creation of the dignity, and the steps by which the right has devolved upon him (*a*)

Form of
prayer of
petition

612 In the case of a peerage of England, Great Britain, or the United Kingdom, the prayer of the petition is that a writ of summons to Parliament may be issued to the petitioner. In the case of a peerage of Scotland or Ireland, which is already on the Roll of Scottish or Irish peers, the prayer is that the petitioner may be admitted to vote at the election of representative peers. If the peerage is not on the Roll, a prayer that the peerage may be placed on the Roll is included.

If a barony is in abeyance, the petition prays that the Sovereign may be pleased to terminate the abeyance in favour of the petitioner. In that case the only question is whether or not the petitioner is a cohen to the barony, the termination of the abeyance being a matter of favour and not of right.

A mere statement of the alleged right by the claimant is not enough (*b*).

Report of law
officers and
reference to
Committee for
Privileges

The petition is sent to the Secretary of State for the Home Department, who refers it to the law officers of the Crown (*c*).

The law officers may report the claim proved and recommend a writ to be issued, but it is more usual to report that the claim is one fit to be referred to the House of Lords. The Secretary of State then presents it to the Sovereign, by whom it is invariably, though not necessarily, referred to the House of Lords, who refer it to the Committee for Privileges (*d*). The House or Committee thereupon appoint a day on which to hear the claimant or his counsel, and the

occasion of printing—the papers are very rare. As to the election of Scottish and Irish representative peers, see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 625 *et seq*.

(*s*) Such petitions are by Standing Orders referred to the Lord Chancellor of Great Britain, whose report is usually adopted, see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 627, note (*a*). In cases of difficulty or doubt the Lord Chancellor recommends reference to the Committee for Privileges, see *ibid*, p 641. For cases where the claim has already been dealt with by a committee of the Irish peers, see *Roscommon's (Earl) Claim* (1828), 6 Cl & Fin 97. *Waterford's (Earl) Claim* (1832), 6 Cl & Fin 133.

(*a*) The Standing Orders require the claimant to hand in a printed case, stating precisely the creation and limitation of the dignity and the steps by which the right has descended, and this in the form of separate paragraphs, the relative documents being stated with each paragraph, and usually printed *in extenso* in an appendix to the case. The printed case must be on the table of the House for a period defined in the Standing Orders. These vary from time to time and must be ascertained. Compare title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, pp 622, 623, 627.

(*b*) *Huntly Peerage* (1835), 5 Cl & Fin 349. As to the case when the right of the claimant's predecessor in the peerage is admitted, see title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 622.

(*c*) *Buckhurst Peerage* (1876), 2 App Cas 1, 17.

(*d*) This Committee is of the whole House, see title PARLIAMENT

SECT. 2.
Claims to
Peerage

law officers of the Crown appear nominally in opposition, and more especially to advise the House or Committee when asked (v) In a proper case the Committee may assign counsel to take up a case where the claimant is prevented by lack of means (f)

The Committee may in proper cases hear persons who are not claimants, but appear to be concerned (g)

It is the duty of the Committee to consider the effect of any clause in a patent in the case referred to it (h).

613 The admissibility of evidence in a peerage claim is entirely within the jurisdiction of the Committee hearing the claim, and the Committee is not bound by any decision of its predecessors (i), even in cases where the limitations in the patents are exactly similar (k), nor by any rules of evidence prevailing in the civil courts (l)

614 In all peerage claims evidence of creation, descent, and extinction of nearer heirs must be proved, and in addition, in a claim to be declared cohen to a barony in abeyance, the persons who are the other coheirs must, so far as it is known, be stated,

Vol XXI, p 641 It is not a court of record (see title COURTS, Vol IX, p 9), and is not bound by its own decisions or by those of any other court (*Devon's (Earl) Case* (1831), 2 Dow & Cl 200 *Willes Claim of Peerage* (1869), L R 4 H L 126), and see the text, *infra*

(e) As to counsel for the claimant becoming a law officer of the Crown during the hearing see *Tracy Peerage* (1843), 10 Cl & Fin 154, *Wharton Peerage* (1845), 12 Cl & Fin 295 *Shrewsbury Peerage* (1858), 7 H L Cas 1, *Fermoy Peerage Claim* (1856), 5 H L Cas 716

(f) *Roscommon's (Earl) Claim* (1828), 6 Cl & Fin 97

(g) *Slane Peerage* (1835), 5 Cl & Fin 23, *Braye Peerage* (1839), 6 Cl & Fin 757 *Shrewsbury Peerage*, *supra*, compare *Berkeley Peerage* (1861), 8 H L Cas 21

(h) *Buckhurst Peerage* (1876), 2 App Cas 1

(i) *Vaux Peerage* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 526, 541, *Braye Peerage* (1839), 6 Cl & Fin 757, 766, and see *Lalyme Peerage* (1912), *Times*, 16th July, *per* Lord HALSBURY

(k) *Willes Claim of Peerage*, *supra*, compare *Donoughmore Peerage* (1853), 3 H L Cas 822, *Huntly Peerage* (1838), 6 Cl & Fin 349 The following have been tendered in evidence in various cases and have been received or rejected according to the circumstances — private Acts of Parliament (*Wharton Peerage*, *supra*, *Shrewsbury Peerage*, *supra*), copies of inscriptions no longer legible (*ibid*, at p 27), inscriptions on tombs in churches (*ibid*, at p 22), statements in wills as to pedigree (*ibid*), incomplete documents and records (*ibid*, at p 32, *Slane Peerage*, *supra*, *Crawford and Lindsay Peerages* (1848), 2 H L Cas 534, and compare *Vaux Peerage*, *supra*), coat of arms in St George's Chapel, Windsor (*Berkeley Peerage*, *supra*, at p 37 *Shrewsbury Peerage*, *supra*), records from the Herald's College (*Vaux Peerage*, *supra*, at pp 541, 544, *Tracy Peerage*, *supra*, at p 157, *Shrewsbury Peerage*, *supra*, at pp 24, 31, 33) As to proof of handwriting, see *Fitzwallter Peerage* (1843), 10 Cl & Fin 193, *Shrewsbury Peerage*, *supra*, and see, further, title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 560, 561 In *Fauslar Peerage*, [1908] W N 226, a predecessor of the claimant having made out his claim in 1800, the claimant produced in evidence the testimony of relatives, an old family Bible, and monumental inscriptions (there being no early record of births, deaths, and marriages in Virginia, U S A, where the family had settled since 1750, and most of the records having been destroyed by the Northern Army during the American Civil War), and the Committee accepted secondary evidence in support of the claim to the barony.

(l) *Shrewsbury Peerage*, *supra*, at pp 15, 16.

SECT 7
Claims to
Peerage

and their pedigree proved (*m*), and it must be proved that they have all been served with notice of the claim (*n*)

To prove the creation of the dignity the claimant must produce the instrument of creation, or, if it cannot be found, the enrolment (*o*), or give such evidence as the House requires (*p*)

In the case of baronies by writ, the claimant must produce from the Close Rolls (*q*) the record of the writ of summons and proof of sitting from the Journals of the House of Lords (*r*). In cases before the dates of existing Journals (*s*), he must prove by record that the ancestor took part in some proceeding which necessitated his presence (*a*). This is sufficiently proved by evidence that a particular peer was appointed to do some act, hear some appeal, or be a member of some commission (*b*)

Evidence of
descent

615 The claimant must prove descent from the original grantee within the original limitation (*c*), except in proving a

(*m*) *Baye Peerage* (1839), 6 Cl & Fin 757. Strict proof of the pedigree of coheirs is not insisted on where conclusive proof is impossible, see *Baye Peerage, supra*. *Fitzwalter Peerage* (1843), 10 Cl & Fin 946

(*n*) *Vaux Peerage* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 526. *Baye Peerage, supra* at p 789, notice by post has been held insufficient (*Camoy's Peerage* (1839) 6 Cl & Fin 789, 791)

(*o*) *Tracy Peerage* (1843), 10 Cl & Fin 151, see p 278, *ante*

(*p*) In the case of ancient dignities, the instrument of creation is usually lost, but some act may be on record which implies creation, see the *Crawford and Lindsay Peerages* (1848), 2 H L Cas 534, where the proof accepted in the claim to the earldom of Crawford was an entry in the Lord Treasurer's accounts of the expense of creating that dignity and two royal Dukedoms in Parliament. As to proof by circumstantial evidence, see also *Mar Peerage* (1875), 1 App Cas 1. Statements by chroniclers and contemporary historians are not admissible as evidence of creation (*Vaux Peerage, supra*). In all such cases the existence of the dignity is abundantly proved by records, and it is merely its origin which required to be established, compare also *Perth Earldom* (1848), 2 H L Cas 865. The Committee may accept an examined copy coming from proper custody, in the absence of the original letters patent (*Lanesborough's (Earl) Claim* (1848), 1 H L Cas 510, n. *Saye and Sele Barony* (1848), 1 H L Cas 507, and compare *Humbly Peerage* (1838), 5 Cl & Fin 349), and the limitations of the peerage may be proved from the Journals of the House of Lords (*Saye and Sele Barony, supra*. *Re Dufferin and Lanesborough (Lord)* (1837) 4 Cl & Fin 568). As to the presumption where no evidence of the limitations is to be found, see p 268 *ante*. It is, however, always necessary to prove that every possible effort has been made to find the missing instrument, and the persons employed in the search are necessary witnesses.

(*q*) See Palgrave's Parliamentary Writs. If the Close Roll is lost the writ may be proved by other evidence.

(*r*) See title PARLIAMENT, Vol XXI, p 631

(*s*) There are no Lords' Journals before the time of Henry VIII, see *Vaux Peerage, supra*. As to proof of sitting, where there are no Lords' Journals in existence, see *Slane Peerage* (1835), 5 Cl & Fin 23

(*a*) What constitutes a proceeding in Parliament may be a matter of argument, see *Hastings Peerage* (1841), 8 Cl & Fin 144, 150, 151, 160—162. Cruise, Origin of Dignities, p 188

(*b*) *Botetourt Case* (1764), Palmer, Peerage Law in England, p 46 (the roll of 50 Edw 3, showing John, Lord Botetourt, to have been a member of Parliament, allowed as proof of sitting). In *Mowbray Peerage Claim* (1877), Minutes of Evidence of Proceedings before the Committee for Privileges a statement or recital in letters patent describing the patentee as Baron Mowbray was admitted to prove termination of an abeyance.

(*c*) *Grey de Ruthyn Case* (1640), Collins on Baronies, p 256,

claim to a barony which, although revived after being previously in abeyance, is again in abeyance, when it is sufficient to prove descent from the holder in whose favour it was last revived (*d*)

SECT. 7.
Claims to
Peerage.

If it has happened that the peerage, validly created, has ceased to exist or its extinction in law can be argued, the Committee may hear the argument and decide the question whether there is a dignity capable of being claimed before allowing any evidence of pedigree to be adduced (*e*)

616 Declarations by living (*f*) persons as to pedigree are admissible in peerage claims *quantum valant*. When made by near relations, they are always admitted (*g*). Any declaration made *post litem motam* may be rejected (*h*)

Declarations
as to pedigree
by living
persons

A peer may give evidence and subsequently participate in the judgment in the same case (*i*)

Resort may be had to an action to perpetuate testimony (*k*). But this course should not be adopted where the real question in dispute can be determined at once by other proceedings (*l*), for example, to obtain a declaration of legitimacy (*m*)

617 Where the letters patent creating a barony are lost the creation may be proved by proof of summons and sitting (*n*)

Documentary
evidence

Documents in public custody are proved by certified copies as in ordinary legal proceedings (*o*). Other documents must be proved by production of the original from proper custody (*p*)

(*d*) *Fitzwaller Peerage* (1843), 10 Cl & Fin 946

(*e*) This may happen in cases of attainder (see the *Southeast Earldom* (1848) 2 H L Cas 908), and the power was also exercised in the *Montrose Peerage Claim*, but the procedure of allowing a claimant to prove his right subject to attainder or other obstacle has been more often adopted

(*f*) As to declarations by deceased persons see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 469 *et seq*. A written declaration by a deceased person is not always admissible (*Berkeley Peerage Case* (1811), 4 Camp 401, and compare *Shrewsbury Peerage* (1858), 7 H L Cas 1)

(*g*) See, as to statements by remote relations, *The Huntly Peerage* (1818), 1 Cl & Fin 349, *Lindsay Peerage Case* (1877), Minutes of Evidence of Proceedings before the Committee for Privileges

(*h*) See title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 469. In the *Annandale Case* (1878), Minutes of Evidence of Proceedings before the Committee for Privileges, a printed case was admitted to prove that a pedigree alleged to come from the charter chest was in reality prepared *post litem motam*, see the *Berkeley Peerage Case*, *supra*, *Slane Peerage* (1835) 5 Cl & Fin 23

(*i*) *R v Five Popish Lords* (1685), 7 State Tr 1218, 1458, *R v Macclesfield (Earl)* (1725), 16 State Tr 767

(*k*) R S C, 1883, Ord 37 r 35, see title EQUITY Vol XIII, pp 45, 46

(*l*) *West v Sackville (Lord)*, [1903] 2 Ch 578, C A

(*m*) Under the Legitimacy Declaration Act, 1858 (21 & 22 Vict c 93), see title BASTARDY, Vol II, pp 433, 434, and see p 282, *post*

(*n*) See p 265, *ante*, *Hastings Peerage* (1841), 8 Cl & Fin 144, 150, 151

(*o*) Standing Orders of the House of Lords (Public Business), 1902, No 87, as amended 6th March, 1902, Journals of the House of Lords, 1902, Vol CXXXIV, p 96. As to the proof of wills prior to 1700, see the *Fitzwaller Peerage*, *supra*, at p 952, and see the *Shrewsbury Peerage*, *supra*, as to French marriage registers, see the *Perth Earldom* (1848), 2 H L Cas 865, as to the general rules for proof of records, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 517 *et seq*

(*p*) Proper custody in the case of private documents is the charter chest

§ 617
Claims to
Peerage

A document not coming from out of proper custody is *prima facie* inadmissible, and its condition as a ground for admission may be open to argument, as, for example, whether it is complete in respect of matter, signature or seal, and free from alteration or erasure.

Reports of proceedings on other claims are not evidence (a), but may be used for convenience and to assist the Committee (b), and leave to reprint the evidence is sometimes given.

Legitimacy

618 Questions as to legitimacy frequently arise in connection with claims to peerages. In such cases the ordinary law as to legitimacy in relation to succession to land and the effect of domicile thereon applies (c).

The status of legitimate or lawful heir may be questioned in respect of an ancestor, but has usually arisen in respect of the claimant himself at the instance of a counter-claimant or the Crown (d).

In such cases the physical fact of incompetency or of non-access (e) or of non-generating access, as the case may be, may always be fully proved by means of such legal evidence as is strictly admissible in every other case in which it is necessary, by the law of England, that a physical fact be proved (f).

of the family, or of the present possessor of estates acquired from an ancestor of the claimant, see the *Camouys Peerage* (1839), 6 Cl & Fin 789, 801 and see the *Chandos Peerage* (1802), Brydges Report, *The De Ros Peerage* (1804), Minutes of Evidence of Proceedings before the Committee for Privileges. An old attested copy of a deed coming from proper custody may be admissible (*Fitzwaller Peerage* (1843), 10 Cl & Fin 946, 953). An inscription on a portrait in proper custody has been received in evidence (*Camouys Peerage*, *supra*, at pp 801, 802, see, further, title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 505, 512 *et seq*).

(a) *Berkely Peerage* (1861), 8 H L Cas 21, 37.

(b) *Ibid*, at p 36, *Beaumont Peerage* (1840), 6 Cl & Fin 868, 871, *Braye Peerage* (1839), 6 Cl & Fin 757, 766.

(c) See titles BASTARDY, Vol II, pp 426, 437, CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI pp 182 *et seq*, 252 *et seq*, 272 *et seq*. HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 278 *et seq*, p 283, *post*. The liability of a peer to attend in Parliament when his presence is required does not prevent him from acquiring a foreign domicile (*Hamilton v Dallas* (1875) 1 Ch D 257).

(d) *Banbury Peerage Case* (1811), 1 Sim & St 153, fully reported in Nicolas Treatise on Adulterine Bastardy (1836), p 182. For a case where a claimant brought a petition in the Probate Division of the High Court of Justice under the Legitimacy Declaration Act, 1858 (21 & 22 Vict c 93), ss 4, 11, see *Sarkville-West v A-G*, [1910] P 143 and see titles BASTARDY, Vol II, pp 433, 434, EQUITV, Vol XIII, pp 45, 46. Whether a claimant can establish his status as lawful heir to a peerage, when his father or ancestor has contracted a marriage invalid by the law of England but valid in the country of domicile, has not yet been decided in a peerage claim. *Susser Peerage* (1844), 11 Cl & Fin 55, is not strictly relevant on this point. In that case the Duke of Sussex was married to Lady Augusta Murray validly by the law of Rome though the parties were not domiciled in Rome, but the marriage was invalid under the Royal Marriages Act, 1772 (12 Geo 3, c 11), s 1, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 370, 371.

(e) *Saxe and Sele Barony* (1848), 1 H L Cas 507.

(f) *Banbury Peerage Case*, *supra*, Minutes of Evidence of Proceedings before the Committee for Privileges, 269. Impotency and impossibility of access were formerly the only allegations which could rebut the presumption "*quter est quæ nuptias demonstrant*" As to access, see

Legitimation of illegitimate children by the subsequent marriage of their parents depends on the domicile of the father at the time of the marriage (q)

SECT. 7.
Claims to
Peerage

Part II.—The Baronetage.

619 The hereditary dignity of Baronet (h) was first instituted by King James I. in 1611, to be granted to those persons who should contribute to the expenses of the Plantation of Ulster (i) Institution of dignity

The dignity is created by letters patent under the Great Seal (k)

also *Gardner Peerage Case* (1821), *Potition, Case, and Minutes of Evidence of Proceedings before the Committee for Privileges*, *Claims to the Barony of Gardner, Le Marchant, Poulett Peerage*, [1903] A C 395. As to a declaration by either spouse as to non access before marriage, see *ibid*, per Lord HALSBURY, L C, at p 398, title BASTARDY, Vol II, p 429, note (d), as to evidence of a wife as to her child's legitimacy, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 479. The occasions on which such evidence is on general grounds admitted as relevant are rare see, further, *Saye and Sele Barony* (1848), 1 H L Cas 507, *Aylesford Peerage* (1885), 11 App Cas 1, and, as to incompetency, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 470 *et seq*.

(g) *Strathmore Peerage Case* (1821), *Minutes of Evidence of Proceedings before the Committee for Privileges* (father newly domiciled in England at time of marriage, no legitimation), *Lauderdale Peerage* (1885) 10 App Cas, 692 (father domiciled in Scotland children, though described in will as illegitimate, legitimised by death bed marriage), and see title CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI, pp 182 *et seq*.

(h) The meaning of the word "baronet" is obscure. A few examples exist of its use, and the distinction between the barones and barones majores in Magna Carta (stat 9 Hen 3, c 5) is suggested. There is, however, no satisfactory proof that the revival of any ancient rank was intended, and if King James invented the term it is noteworthy that the persons he wished to decorate were always called barons in Scotland. It is also clear that great doubt existed in 1611 whether the more important untitled gentlemen would accept the proposed title. The object was to raise money for State purposes, and there is evidence that some gentlemen were willing to advance the money without accepting the dignity. Hereditary knighthood existed in the Holy Roman Empire, but never obtained a footing in England, and cannot be considered as the foundation of baronetcy. It has been held that a baronetcy is an incorporeal hereditament, and, being limited to the heirs of the body, is within the Statute *De Donis Conditionalibus* (Statute of Westminster II (1285) 13 Edw 1, c 1), and is descendible as an estate tail and not a fee simple conditional, although no place be named in its creation (*Re Russell Carnac's Will*) (1885), 30 Ch D 136, where it was also held that a baronetcy was "land" within the meaning of the Settled Land Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 38), s 37. The soundness of this decision has been doubted (Hood and Challis *Conveyancing Acts*, 7th ed, p 298, and see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL).

(i) At the close of his reign, King James consented to establish an Order of Baronets for Scotland, the consideration for which was the colonisation of districts in New Scotland, called Nova Scotia. This dignity was territorial, and the charters granted a definitely bounded barony in regality, held feudally, with seisin taken at Edinburgh, together with the title of baronet. The letters patent were, therefore, of great length. Few of these were granted, and King Charles I granted the hereditary title of "knight baronet" without any lands to several persons.

(k) Previous to the granting of letters patent, there was issued by Commissioners a memorandum that A B had offered to charge himself

PART II
The
Baronetage.
Privileges.

There is now no limit to the number of baronetcies which the Crown may create (N)

620 The privileges of a baronet are set forth in the letters patent of creation, and comprise the right to the title or prefix "Sir," and the right to rank above all knights except Knights of the Garter (*m*), and immediately below the sons of barons, and he has no privileges except those stated in his patent (*n*). A baronet takes precedence amongst other baronets according to priority in date of creation (*o*)

The wife of a baronet is entitled to the prefix "Dame "

621 A claim to a baronetcy should be made by petition to

with the yearly entertainment of thirty foot (soldiers) for three years after the rate of *8d* a day for the plantation of Ulster, and that His Majesty having graciously accepted this service is pleased in recompence thereof to confer on him the dignity and place of a baronet. A royal warrant followed for the preparation of 'a booke in due form containing on grant of the dignity of baronett to the said A. B. and the heirs male of his body.' The first letters patent recited the King's desire to promote the plantation and the precise sum to be contributed.

(*l*) It had been originally promised that the number of baronets of England should not exceed 200 and that vacancies by extinction of issue should not be filled up. However, up to the time (1706) of the union with Scotland, 697 baronetcies of England, 58 baronetcies of Ireland, and 166 baronetcies of Scotland had been created. After the promulgation of the Union with Scotland Act, 1706 (6 Anne, c. 11) England and Scotland ceased to exist in contemplation of law, and it is conceived that no new baronetcy of either kingdom could be created, but whereas the question of the peerage of each kingdom was carefully dealt with in the Act, no reference to baronetcy appears therein.

(*m*) As to Knights of the Garter see p. 286, *post*. Some of the first created baronets claimed to be knighted and as the result of a controversy respecting their precedence the King covenanted that all the then baronets and the eldest sons or heirs apparent of baronets, should be knighted at their request on reaching the age of twenty one. This latter right was abolished by Royal Warrant dated 19th December, 1827. As, however, the status required for a baronet was that he possessed a thousand pounds a year in land, and that his father and grandfather at least must have been gentlemen of coat armour the vast majority must have been persons who could have been called upon to accept knighthood, whether or not the new grade had been founded.

(*n*) The King originally covenanted that he and his successors would never create any new dignity having precedence between barons lords of Parliament, and baronets, and it has been contended that a warrant granting precedence to the children of life peers is a breach of this covenant. It is thought, however, that a distinct hereditary dignity was meant.

(*o*) All the evidence relating to the status of a baronet which can be collected from the public records purports to be printed in (1) *The Herald and Genealogist*, Vol. III., (2) *A History of the Baronetage*, by Francis W. Duxley, published in 1900, (3) The preface to the *Baronetage*, by G. E. C., and (4) *The Baronetage* by an anonymous author, published in 1911, see also some observations by Selden, *Titles of Honour* Part 2. Careful study of such evidence raises grave doubt whether the King intended to create a degree of nobility, or whether he merely intended to grant a hereditary pre-eminence among squires similar to the distinction of knights-banneret and ordinary knights for the persons whom it was proposed to dignify with the prefix "Sir" and the suffix "Baronet" were those who would in the ordinary course of military tenure be called upon to accept knighthood.

the King in Council, and is heard by a committee of the Privy Council (p)

622 Provision has been made for an official roll of baronets to be drawn up (q) and maintained (r). A registrar has been appointed (a) and his duties are defined (b), and no person is to be officially styled a baronet unless his name appears on the roll (c)

**PART II.
The
Baronetage.**
Claim to
baronetcy.
Official roll.

Part III.—Knighthood.

623 Knighthood (d) is a personal dignity conferred for life. It is not in any sense a local title. It is an order of chivalry recognisable in every part of the King's dominions (e)

Knighthood
in general

An individual of the male sex is now legally entitled to be addressed with the prefix "Sir" (f) and to rank before untitled persons only (f) if the King or his especially appointed lieutenant (g) (who must be a knight (h)) has directed him to kneel before him, has

(p) Royal Warrant, 8th February, 1910, art. 4 (*London Gazette*, 15th February, 1910). A Committee of the Privy Council was appointed by Order in Council, 5th March, 1910 (*London Gazette*, 8th March, 1910). One such claim has already been heard: see *Baronetcy of Cor of Dunmanway* (1911), *Times*, 10th November. It was the practice of King James I. to refer claims to dignities to the Commissioners for exercising the office of Earl Marshal, and it was promised that baronetries should be subject to the same jurisdiction, but no commissioners or other functionaries to represent the Earl Marshal have existed for the last two centuries. The rights of the Earl Marshal are expressly saved by the Royal Warrant of the 8th February, 1910, except in so far as they are contained in the cancelled warrants of 3rd December, 1783, 24th February, 1785, 30th September, 1789 (Royal Warrant, 8th February, 1910, arts. 12, 13). The practice in future will probably be that if the Secretary of State, after obtaining a report from the King of Arms, finds any difficulty in advising the King as to the validity of any claim to be placed on the roll, the claim will be referred to the Attorney General for England, the Lord Advocate for Scotland, or the Attorney General for Ireland, as the case may be, for opinion, and ultimately to the Privy Council as above stated. The Legitimacy Declaration Act, 1858 (21 & 22 Vict. c. 43) gives no jurisdiction to investigate or decide a claim to a baronetcy (*Friedrich v. A. G.* (1874), L. R. 3 P. & D. 196).

(q) Royal Warrant, 8th February, 1910, arts. 1, 3.

(r) *Ibid.*, arts. 5, 6, 11. The fees to be paid by new baronets are laid down (*ibid.*, art. 10).

(a) *Ibid.*, art. 7. The first registrar and assistant registrar were appointed by Order in Council, 5th March, 1910.

(b) Royal Warrant, 8th February, 1910, arts. 8, 9.

(c) *Ibid.*, art. 2.

(d) For the history of knighthood out of England and the early history in England, see Selden, *Titles of Honour*; Nicholas, *History of the Orders of Knighthood of the British Empire*. The most authentic list of English knights is in Shaw, *List of Knights of England*.

(e) See *Lord Advocate v. Walker's Trustees*, [1912] A. C. 95, 104.

(f) As to foreign dignities and orders, see p. 290, *post*.

(g) The Lord Lieutenant of Ireland has, by virtue of his office, authority to confer knighthood (unanimous opinion of the judges summoned by the King in Council, 1823, see Nicholas, *History of the Orders of Knighthood of the British Empire*, xii).

(h) See, however, Nicholas, *History of the Orders of Knighthood of the British Empire*, xv.

PART III
Knighthood

struck his shoulder with a naked sword and has said "*Sous Chevalier au nom de Dieu*" and "Aïsse Sir Knight" or "*Avanery Chevalier*," or has created him a knight by letters patent (e)

**Orders of
knighthood .**
**Order of
the Garter**

624 The age of chivalry produced societies the membership of which was restricted to knights. Of these the earliest in England was a society, founded by King Edward III, of knights under the name of the Order of the Garter. The foundation of the order was in 1349. It is limited to twenty-five knights in addition to the Sovereign, who is head of the order, but the Sovereign has power to create additional Royal knights, and, although usually bestowed upon a peer, the recipient of the honour need not necessarily belong to the peerage (j). Knights of the Garter take precedence in England before Privy Counsellors and baronets (k).

**Order of the
Bath.**

Another society of knights in England, the precise origin of which is not clear, is that of the Bath (l). The Order of the Bath or rank of knighthood has, however, been so altered by its conversion into a military order by George II, and by a subsequent division into grades of companionship by King George III, that it has lost the mediæval character preserved by the Garter. The order is now divided into two branches, military and civil (m).

Other orders of knighthood are

**Order of the
Thistle**

Knights of St Andrew or the Thistle founded or revised in Scotland by King Charles II in 1687 (n), and re-established on the 31st December, 1703,

**Order of
St Patrick**

Knights of St Patrick, founded in Ireland by King George III. on the 5th February, 1783 (o), and revised in 1905,

(e) If a Sovereign knights a Sovereign he also passes his arm around the shoulders. It was formerly conferred by ceremonial investiture, which is now represented by the accolade, much of the ceremonial of the investiture still survives in the ceremony of the Coronation, *eg*, in the vesting of the King in garments of a sacerdotal character and guiding him with the sword and spurs, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 327. Knights have also been created by letters patent since 1777 (Nicolas, *History of the Orders of Knighthood of the British Empire*, xv).

(j) The Right Honourable Sir Edward Grey, Baronet, M P, Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, was made a Knight of the Garter in March, 1912.

(k) See p 284, *ante*.

(l) The bath was the first part of the ceremonial for creating a knight but to call knights of the twelfth century K B (see Shaw, *List of Knights of England*, Vol I, p 109) seems somewhat strange. It is considered that knighthood by baptism existed side by side with knighthood by accolade. The antiquity of the bath is illustrated by the Coronation ceremony. The ancient practice was for the King to bathe at the palace of Westminster, the day before he proceeded to the Abbey, with a number of youthful aspirants who were knighted by the King when crowned, after investiture as a knight by the Church.

(m) It is also divided into three classes, namely, Knights Grand Cross, Knights Commanders (both of which are entitled to be called knight after investiture with the insignia of the order and to take precedence of knights bachelor), and Companions, who take precedence of esquires but are not entitled to be called knight. Each class is restricted in point of numbers.

(n) Nicolas, *History of the Orders of Knighthood of the British Empire*.

(o) *Ibid*.

PART III.—KNIGHTHOOD.

Knights of the Order of the Star of India, founded in 1861, and used to reward service in connection with India (p).

Knights of St Michael and St George, founded in 1818 (q) to reward service in the Mediterranean, chiefly Maltese and Ionic, but now used to reward all colonial service,

Knights of the Order of the Indian Empire, founded to commemorate the title of Emperor or Empress of India in 1878 (r).

Knights of the Royal Victorian Order, founded in 1896 (s)

625 Knights bachelor, or ordinary knights, are those who are merely created knights but belong to no particular Order (t)

Ordinary knighthood is usually conferred upon the Judges of the Supreme Court of Judicature, the Attorney-General and Solicitor-General, and occasionally upon civic dignitaries on state occasions. There are numerous Orders and Dignities which do not confer any title or right of precedence (u)

(p) *London Gazette*, 25th June, 1861. It consists of the Sovereign, the Grand Master, and a fixed number of Companions divided into three classes, namely, Knights Grand Cross, Knights Commanders, and Companions.

(q) *Ibid*, 27th April, 1818. It comprises a fixed number of Knights Grand Cross, Knights Commanders, and Companions. Each class ranks next after the corresponding class of the Order of the Star of India.

(r) It consists of the Sovereign, Grand Master, and three classes, namely, Knights Grand Cross, Knights Commanders, and Companions. Each class ranks next after the corresponding class of the Order of St Michael and St George.

(s) *Ibid*, 24th April, 1896. It consists of the Sovereign and ordinary members. It is divided into five classes, namely, Knights Grand Cross, Knights Commanders, Companions, members of the Fourth and Fifth classes. Ordinary members must be subjects of the British Crown who have rendered extraordinary or important or personal services to the Sovereign. Foreign princes may be appointed honorary members. Knights Grand Cross and Knights Commanders rank after the corresponding classes of the Order of the Indian Empire. Companions rank after knights bachelor. Members of the Fourth Class rank after Companions of the Indian Empire. Members of the Fifth Class after the eldest sons of knights bachelors. The number of members is unlimited.

(t) Originally there were no orders of knights, but all knights were either knights banneret or knights bachelor. The distinction between these two classes was purely military, the former being entitled to a banner in time of war, and to have command over the latter who were only entitled to a pennon. The distinction appears to have become obsolete, and see 1 Bl Com, pp 404, 405.

(u) For instance, the Distinguished Service Order instituted by Royal Warrant dated the 6th September, 1886, the Imperial Service Order founded 8th August 1902, the Order of Merit, founded 23rd June 1903, the Order of Victoria and Albert, instituted in 1862, the Imperial Order of the Crown of India, instituted in 1878, the Kaiser-i-Hind medal, the Victoria Cross, instituted by Royal Warrant 29th January, 1856, the Volunteer Officers' Decoration, founded by Royal Warrant 25th July, 1892, the Indian Distinguished Service Medal, founded by Royal Warrant 25th June, 1907, the Albert Medal, founded by Royal Warrant 7th March, 1866, the Edward Medal, founded by Royal Warrant 13th July, 1907, and the Red Cross, founded by Royal Warrant 23rd April, 1883.

PART III.
Knighthood
 Order of the
 Star of India
 Order of St
 Michael and
 St George
 Order of the
 Indian
 Empire
 Royal
 Victorian
 Order
 Knights
 bachelor.

PART IV
The College
of Arms

Incorporation

Kings of
arms.

Part IV.—The College of Arms.

626 The College of Arms (*a*) was incorporated in 1556 by Royal Charter granted by King Philip and Queen Mary in fulfilment of the intention of King Edward VI (*a*)

It consists at present of three kings of arms, six heralds, and four pursuivants. They are under the jurisdiction of the Earl Marshal (*b*)

627 The kings of arms are certain heralds to whom at an early, though not perfectly ascertained, date the Sovereign granted the right and duty to exercise his right of granting arms

For the purpose of such grants, and for regulating the use of armorial bearings of such as possess them, there have existed for centuries two provincial kings of arms—Clarencieux (or Surrey) and Norroy (*c*)

About a century after the institution of the Order of the Garter (*d*), Garter King of Arms was instituted as an officer of that order, who was styled principal king of arms for all England, and his co-operation with each provincial king of arms in his respective province had, by the end of the seventeenth century, become essential (*e*)

Heralds.

The right to grant arms is inherent in the office of king of arms, but the exercise of that right is regulated by an order of the Earl Marshal of England directing the kings of arms not to create new arms in favour of any individual without a special warrant from the Earl Marshal in each case directed to Garter King of Arms and the appropriate provincial king of arms

Each king of arms has appropriate arms belonging to his office, which he is entitled to bear in conjunction with his family arms

628 The heralds (*f*) number six, and are known as Windsor, Chester, Lancaster, Somerset, York, and Richmond. Additional

(*f*) Also called the Heralds' College

(*a*) The charter is printed *in extenso* with a translation in Noble's College of Arms. The present building was built after the Great Fire on the site of Derby Place granted to the College by the charter. A chapter of the corporation is held every month, and has frequently issued under its common seal certificates of the armorial bearings, but more often of the descent of individuals

(*b*) This office is hereditary in the family of the Duke of Norfolk, for the duties of the Earl Marshal at coronations, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol. VI, p. 326, and see title COURTS, Vol. IX, p. 116

(*c*) Their jurisdictions were south and north of the Trent respectively, and see the text, *infra*

(*d*) See p. 286, *ante*

(*e*) In addition there is a fourth English king of arms, known as Bath or Gloucester, who is not a member of the College, whose jurisdiction is over the principality of Wales. There are also a Lyon King of Arms for Scotland and Ulster King of Arms for Ireland

(*f*) The number of heralds has varied from time to time. Heralds were originally, as their name imports, ambassadors or messengers, the bearers of compliment or defiance from one prince to another, habited for the purpose with the armorial insignia of their masters. The habit still survives in the herald's tabard.

heralds may be appointed for special purposes (g). It is not the function of a herald to grant arms, but to present memorials to the Earl Marshal. His duty is to assist the Earl Marshal in the work of his department.

PART IV.
The College
of Arms.

629 The pursuivants are four in number, known as Rouge Croix, Rouge Dragon, Bluemantle, and Portcullis. Pursuivants

630 In the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries most of the counties of England were visited two or three times by heralds acting as delegates for the kings of arms, with Royal authority to record the pedigrees of those who could produce evidence of the right to coat armour and to use the title of "esquire" and gentleman (h). Visitations.

The returns of these Royal commissioners, called visitations, are kept in the College of Arms and are evidence in the courts of law (i). They can be produced in evidence, and the proper witness to produce them is an officer of arms under subpoena (j).

631 The absolute jurisdiction of the Earl Marshal over all persons concerning themselves with armorial insignia, whether by personal use or as tradesmen (k), and visitations is now discontinued, but the jurisdiction is dormant, not abolished. It would still be in the power of the Sovereign to revive either if he so thought fit, and to appoint a judge of the court of the Earl Marshal on the latter's nomination (l). Jurisdiction of Earl Marshal.

632 It appears that the jurisdiction of the officers of arms in matters armorial cannot be challenged in any court of law (m). Most of the rights and duties of officers of arms have in course of time become obsolete, but it still remains the law that no man is entitled to the dignity of a gentleman and to armorial insignia except by record, and that such record exists only in the College of Arms. Jurisdiction of officers of arms.

(g) *E.g.*, Delhi Herald was appointed to act as Herald at the Coronation Durbar held in India in 1911.

(h) The practice began in 1545. The Royal commissions were addressed to the kings of arms in respect of their respective provinces. The commissions also gave authority to destroy all representations of coat armour the right to which was not proved.

(i) See title EVIDENCE, Vol. XIII, pp. 527-530.

(j) The visitations have often been received in evidence in peerage claims, but on some occasions the commission to hold a visitation has also been required. Contemporaneously with the visitations, there sat in London a court of the Earl Marshal, in which sat originally the Constable of England with the Marshal. In this court, now within the precincts of the College of Arms, or before the Commissioners to exercise the office of Marshal, many claims to dignities were tried, and the decisions are, it is apprehended, judgments of a court of record.

(k) As to the unlawful use of the Royal Arms see titles PATENTS AND INVENTIONS, p. 232, *ante*, TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES, AND DESIGNS.

(l) See title COURTS, Vol. IX, p. 116.

(m) See title NAME AND ARMS, CHANGE OF, Vol. XXI, p. 353 and the cases there cited.

Part V.— Foreign Dignities, Orders, and Decorations.

SECT 1

Dignities

Not recognised in law

Sect 1 — *Inquiries.*

633 Dignities created by foreign Sovereigns are not recognised by law in this country, but the right to bear them may be granted by the King

A petition stating good reason for leave to bear such a title in England is addressed to the King and sent to the Secretary of State for the Home Department in the same manner as other petitions for warrants of precedence, changes of name etc

Many foreign dignities confer the title of count or baron on all the children of the grantee, but of late years it has been usual to limit the permission to the eldest sons only in accordance with the English practice

A foreign title lawfully used in England gives in law no precedence, but it is usually recognised in courtesy

Sect 2 — *Orders and Decorations*

Not recognised in law

634 Orders and decorations granted by a foreign Sovereign are not recognised in law in this country (*n*)

Regulations for wearing foreign decorations

635 Regulations, by Royal command, have been issued respecting the wearing of foreign orders and medals (*o*)

(*n*) Ruling in the case of Knights of the Guelphic Order of Hanover founded in 1815 by George IV whilst Prince Regent, and not conferred since the death of King William IV in 1837

(*o*) See Foreign Office Regulations, 8th May, 1911. The rule is that no subject of His Majesty shall wear the insignia of any foreign order without having previously obtained His Majesty's permission to do so signified either—(1) by warrant under the Royal Sign Manual, or (2) by private permission conveyed through His Majesty's private secretary (*ibid* 1-1) (this rule, although expressed in the form of the King's wish, is of great antiquity and appears to have been observed for centuries)

Permission given by warrant under the Royal Sign Manual will enable the insignia of the foreign order to be worn at all times and without any restriction but private permission will only enable the insignia to be worn on the occasions specified in the terms of the letter from the King's private secretary conveying the Royal sanction (*ibid* 1-2)

The full and unrestricted permission by warrant under the Royal Sign Manual is designed, subject to the exception mentioned in *ibid* 1-4 (*infra*) respecting British naval or military officers during hostilities, to meet cases where the decoration may be said to have been earned by some valuable service rendered to the head of the State conferring it, or to the State itself. The private or restricted permission is contemplated for decorations which are more or less of a complimentary character. In either case the matter will be submitted to the King by His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs (*ibid* 1-3)

Full and unrestricted permission by warrant under the Royal Sign Manual is contemplated for a decoration conferred (a) On an officer in His Majesty's naval or military forces lent to a foreign Government or on an officer in His Majesty's naval or military forces attached by his Government to a foreign navy or army during hostilities, or on any British official lent to a foreign Government and not in receipt of any emoluments

SECT. 2
Orders and
Decorations.

from British public funds during the period of such loan. (b) On any person not at the time in the service of the Crown, who, while himself outside the limits of His Majesty's dominions, has rendered valuable services to the head of the State conferring the order, or to the State itself, within the period of two years immediately preceding the notification of the decoration to His Majesty's Government provided for in Foreign Office Regulations, 8th May, 1911, r 5 *infra*. The term "service of the Crown" comprises any person holding a Royal Commission, or any person in receipt of a salary from public funds in the United Kingdom, or in any British dominion, colony, or protectorate. (c) On any British subject employed in a foreign embassy or legation in the United Kingdom (*ibid*, r 4).

The desire of the head of a foreign State to confer upon a British subject the insignia of an order or the fact that he has done so must be notified to His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs either through the British diplomatic representative accredited to the head of the foreign State, or through his diplomatic representative at the Court of St James. His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs shall be under no obligation to consider claims that are not brought to his notice through one of these channels (*ibid*, r 5).

When His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs has taken the King's pleasure on any such application, and obtained His Majesty's permission for the person in whose favour it has been made to wear the insignia of a foreign order, he signifies the same to His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for the Home Department in order that he may cause a warrant, if it be a case for the issue of a warrant as defined in *ibid*, r 4, to be prepared for the Royal Sign Manual (*ibid*, r 6).

When such warrant has been signed by the King, a notification thereof is inserted in the *Gazette*, stating the service for which the foreign order has been conferred.

The warrant signifying His Majesty's permission may, at the request and at the expense of the person who has obtained it, be registered in the College of Arms. Every such warrant as aforesaid must contain a clause providing that His Majesty's licence and permission does not authorise the assumption of any style, appellation, rank, precedence, or privilege appertaining to a knight bachelor of His Majesty's realms (*ibid*, r 6).

When a British subject has received the Royal permission to accept the decoration of a foreign order he may, at any future time, accept the decoration of a higher class of the same order, to which he may have become eligible by increase of rank in the foreign service, or in the service of his own country, or any other distinctive mark of honour strictly consequent upon the acceptance of the original decoration, and common to every person upon whom such decoration is conferred (*ibid*, r 7).

Medals which constitute a particular class of a foreign order are subject in all respects to the above regulations in the same manner as higher grades of the order, except that permission to wear is given by letter and not by Royal warrant. The King's permission must be obtained for any other medal to be worn. No permission is needed to accept a foreign medal if it is not intended to be worn (*ibid*, r 8).

Naval and military attachés to His Majesty's missions abroad may, at the termination of their appointments, be given restricted private permission to wear, on certain specific occasions, the insignia of a foreign order conferred upon them by the chief of the State only in which their headquarters were situated (*ibid*, r 9).

PENALTIES, RELIEF AGAINST.

See EQUITY, LANDLORD AND TENANT

PENALTY.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, DAMAGES, EQUITY.

- - - - -

PENSIONS.

See CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, POLICE, ROYAL FORCES.

PERCOLATION.

See EASEMENTS AND PROFITS À PRENDRE, MINES, MINERALS, AND
QUARRIES, WATERS AND WATERCOURSES

- - - - -

PERFORMING RIGHTS.

See COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY.

- - - - -

PERJURY.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, EVIDENCE.

PERMANENT BUILDING SOCIETY.

See BUILDING SOCIETIES

- - - - -

PERPETUATING TESTIMONY.

See EQUITY, EVIDENCE.

PERPETUITIES.

	PAGE
PART I INTRODUCTORY - - - - -	291
PART II THE RULE AGAINST PERPETUITIES - - - - -	300
SECT 1 PERIOD ALLOWED FOR SUSPENSION OF VESTING - - - - -	300
Sub-sect 1 Statement of the Rule - - - - -	300
Sub-sect 2 Determination of the Time of Vesting - - - - -	305
Sub-sect 3 The Choice of Period Available - - - - -	308
SECT 2 INTERESTS SUBJECT TO THE RULE - - - - -	311
Sub-sect 1 Kinds of Property - - - - -	311
Sub-sect 2 Legal Interests - - - - -	312
(i) Real Estate - - - - -	312
(ii) Personal Estate - - - - -	316
Sub-sect 3 Equitable Interests - - - - -	317
Sub-sect 4 Interests under Contracts - - - - -	319
Sub-sect 5 Possible Extensions of the Rule - - - - -	322
SECT 3 INTERESTS TO WHICH THE RULE DOES NOT APPLY - - - - -	322
Sub-sect 1 Present Interests and Vested Future Interests - - - - -	322
Sub-sect 2 Certain Destructible Interests - - - - -	323
(i) In General - - - - -	323
(ii) Limitations Defensible by Disentail - - - - -	323
(iii) Trusts Defensible by Beneficiaries whose Interests must Vest within the Perpetuity Period - - - - -	326
(iv) Provisions for Raising Debts and Indemnities - - - - -	327
Sub-sect 3 Certain Charitable Gifts arising <i>in futuro</i> - - - - -	329
Sub-sect 4 Interests under Common Law Assurances - - - - -	330
Sub-sect 5 Contracts, as Binding the Person - - - - -	331
Sub-sect 6 Interests given by Operation of Law - - - - -	331
Sub-sect 7 Certain Rights of Entry - - - - -	331
Sub-sect 8 Interests the Nature of which is a Guarantee against Perpetuity - - - - -	332
SECT 4 APPLICATION OF THE RULE IN GENERAL - - - - -	332
Sub-sect 1 Date from which the Period is reckoned - - - - -	332
Sub-sect 2 Circumstances taken into Account - - - - -	333
Sub-sect 3 Duration of Limitations and Postponement of Enjoyment - - - - -	335
Sub-sect 4 Limitations to Classes and to Members of Classes - - - - -	341
Sub-sect 5 Limitations to Series of Persons - - - - -	347
Sub-sect 6 Alternative Independent Limitations - - - - -	348
SECT 5 FAILURE OF A LIMITATION UNDER THE RULE - - - - -	350
Sub-sect 1 Effect in General - - - - -	350
Sub-sect, 2. Void Restrictions on Valid Limitations - - - - -	352

PART I.
Intro-
ductory.

although private ownership of property involves a power of disposition of the whole interest of the owner, whether *inter vivos* or on death, such power should not be abused (*b*) Accordingly, the law has from early times discouraged dispositions of property which either (1) impose restrictions on future alienations of that property, or (2) fetter the future devolution or enjoyment of that property to an unreasonable extent (*c*)

This title is concerned only with the law which regulates dispositions fettering the future devolution or enjoyment of property (*d*) The law dealing with restrictions upon the future alienation of property is dealt with elsewhere (*e*), and is not the subject of this title

Perpetuities

637 The law affecting perpetuities as treated in this title is only concerned with interests arising *in futuro*, and not with interests arising *in presenti* It comprises two principal rules, which may be termed the rules against remoteness The first is known as the rule against perpetuities, and is to the effect that every limitation of property, unless it depends upon an estate tail, must, to be valid, vest, if at all, within a life or lives in being, and twenty-one years and a period of gestation afterwards (*f*) The second, which has been sometimes referred to as the rule against double or remote possibilities (*g*), is directed against contingent

Rules
affecting
perpetuities
Rules against
remoteness(1) rule
against
perpetuities.
(2) rule
against
double
possibilities

to which may be added the inconvenience and distress that would be brought on families whose estates are so fettered", and see *Norfolk (Duke) v Howard* (1683), 1 Vern 163, *per* NORTH, Lord Keeper, Feaine, Contingent Remainders, 10th ed., pp 562 *et seq*, Butler's note

(*b*) The principle forbidding abuse of the power of disposition is shortly expressed in the form "the power of alienation must not be exercised to its own destruction" (27 Law Quarterly Review, p 111, and see *Washburn v Downs* (1671), 1 Cas in Ch 213), but it does not appear to be sufficiently so expressed, as the fact that the property is completely alienable does not prevent the principle being infringed (*Re Hargreaves*, *Midgley v Talley* (1890), 43 Ch D 401, 406, C A, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 269)

(*c*) As to the principle of public policy, see, further, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 3, *Taylor d Alcyne v Hoide* (1757), 1 Burr 60, *per* Lord MANSFIELD, C J, at pp 115, 116, *Marlborough (Duke) v Godolphin (Earl)* (1759), 1 Eden, 404, *per* HENLEY, Lord Keeper, at p 416, *Re Parry and Duggs* (1885), 31 Ch D 130, C A, *per* FRY, L J, at p 134, *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, [1905] 1 Ch 535, *per* FARWELL, J., at p 542

(*d*) The principle against perpetuity existed "before and throughout the reign of King Henry VIII" (*Hope v Gloucester Corporation* (1855), 7 De J M & G 647, C A, *per* KNIGHT BRUCE, L J, at p 658), and was a principle of the common law (2 Preston, Abstracts of Title, p 145 *Re Nash*, *Cook v Frederick*, [1910] 1 Ch 1, 7, C A, *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, [1912] 1 Ch 343, 366, 367, C A) It existed prior to the introduction of the modern rule against perpetuities (see p 300, *post*), and perhaps was introduced after the statute of *Quia Emptores*, stat (1289) 18 Edw 1, stat 1, c 1 (2 Preston on Estates, p 307)

(*e*) See title GIFTS, Vol XV, pp 422 *et seq*

(*f*) See p 300, *post* Objection has been made to the name of the Rule against Perpetuities, see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 2, Jarman on Wills, 6th ed by Sweet, p 296, n (v), the name "Rule against Remoteness" is there proposed In the Conveyancing Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5 c 37), it is termed "the rule of law relating to perpetuities"

(*g*) The rule is now frequently referred to as the rule in *Whitby v Mitchell* (1890), 44 Ch D 85, C A

PART I
Intro
ductory.

Extended
meanings of
perpetuity

remainders of real estate limited to successive generations of unborn issue (*h*) These two rules, together with the statutory restrictions on accumulations (*i*), constitute the main subject of the law of perpetuities as treated in this title (*j*)

638 But although the law of perpetuities as treated in this title is only conversant with future interests, the word "perpetuity" has, in the history of English law (*h*), been sometimes used in a

(*h*) See p 364, *post*

(*i*) See p 370 *post*

(*j*) Besides the rules against remoteness, future interests are subject to the restraint of certain rules of limitation at common law, *e.g.*, the rule requiring a preceding estate of freehold to support a contingent remainder, and the rule that a limitation *in futuro* is, if possible construed as a contingent remainder and not as an executory limitation These common law rules are themselves designed to prevent perpetuity (*Re Nash. Cool v Frederick*, [1910] 1 Ch 1, 7, C A), see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL Executory interests in land on failure of issue of a person are also subject to be defeated by the statutory rule made by the Conveyancing Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 39), s 10, see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(*h*) The origin of the legal term "perpetuity" is not known, the use of the term in the courts does not appear to be reported until *Chudleigh v Case* (1595), 1 Co Rep 13 b it occurs also in *Anon* (1599), Cary, 8, per FERGUSON, L C, *Corbet's Case* (1600) 1 Co Rep 83 b, 84 a, 88 a, *Mildmay's Case* (1605) 6 Co Rep 40 a, *Portington's (Mary) Case* (1613), 10 Co Rep 35 b, 42 b, Essay on the Use of the Law (1629), Bacon's Works (Spedding's ed.) Vol VII, p 491, and the argument in the Case of Impeachment of Waste, *ibid*, p 544 Some learned writers are of opinion that the earliest meaning of the term was an inalienable estate, particularly an estate tail intended to be unbarrable (Jarman on Wills, 6th ed, p 281, 25 Law Quarterly Review, p 385, 49 Sol Jo 414, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, ss 141, 159) Early definitions of perpetuity, in fact, generally refer to an inalienable estate, as in *Washburn v Downe* (1671), 1 Cas in Ch 213 ("a perpetuity is where it all that have interest join and yet cannot buy or pass the estate"), compare *Scatterwood v Edge* (1697), 1 Salk 229 In *Stanley v Leigh* (1732), 2 P Wms 113, 1 M R, at p 686 688, defined it as "the limiting an estate in such a manner as would render it inalienable longer than for a life or lives in being at the same time and some short or reasonable time after" Lord St LEONARDS, in a note to Gilbert on Uses and Trusts, p 260, defines perpetuity as "such a limitation of property as renders it inalienable beyond the period allowed by law" From early times, however, the test whether a limitation *in futuro* caused a perpetuity appears to have been not so much whether the property was alienable as whether the estate limited was destructible on alienation, as in the case of contingent remainders and remainders after an estate tail (*Howard v Norfolk (Duke)* (1681), 2 Swan 454, per Lord NOTTINGHAM, L C, at p 460, Termes de la Ley (1708), *sub voce* Perpetuity), and see note (*h*) p 295, *ante* Compare Sanders on Uses and Trusts, p 196, where perpetuity is described as "a future limitation restraining the owner of the estate from aliening the fee simple of the property discharged of such future use or estate, before the event is determined or the period arrived when such future use or estate is to arise If that event or period be within the bounds proscribed by law, it is not a perpetuity" This definition was cited with approval in *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, 574, 586, C A The reported decisions passed from the consideration of unbarrable entails to that of indestructible executory limitations *in futuro*, which began to be recognised, within restricted limits, both for lands of inheritance (*Pay's Case* (1602), Cro Eliz 878, *Pells v Brown* (1620), Cro Jac 590; *Snowe v. Cuttler* (1664), 1 Lev 135) and for terms of years (*Anon* (1573), Dyer,

wider sense, and certain interests arising *in presenti* have been held void under the name of perpetuities (*l*) Examples of such interests *in presenti* are —

(1) Estates and interests limited *in presenti* with an unauthorised mode of devolution, for example, an estate of inheritance not known to the common law (*m*), an unbarable entail (*n*), an estate in which successive heirs take life estates only (*o*), the attempted entail of a chattel (*p*).

(2) Interests held on perpetual non-charitable trust, where no person or persons can take any benefit (*q*), for example, trusts to keep in repair a tomb not part of the fabric of a church (*r*)

PART I.
Intro-
ductory.

Interests *in presenti* considered to be void.

328 b (within a life the judges differing), *Manning's Case* (1609), 8 Co Rep 94 b, *Lampet's Case* (1612) 10 Co Rep 46 b), thus giving rise to the modern rule Definitions under the modern rule are given in note (*m*), p 301, *post* At all events there appears to be no doubt that the meaning of the word "perpetuity" was early extended to all devices intended to perpetuate the possession of estates in a prescribed line of succession (*Pearse v Reeve* (1661), Poll 29, 30, *Humberston v Humberston* (1717), 1 P Wms 332, *Mailborough (Duke) v Godolphin (Earl)* (1759), 1 Eden, 404, 416, *Smith d Doimer v Packhurst* (1742), 3 Atk 135, 136, H L, *Robinson v Hardecastle* (1786), 2 Bro C C 22 30 ("extending the estate"), and see the early instances of the popular use of the word collected in the (Oxford English Dictionary)

(*l*) The word "perpetuities" in the sense in which it is used in this and the following paragraph as applied to certain present interests, has no place in the law of perpetuities or the rules of remoteness as treated in the present title, which are concerned with future interests, and with future interests only

(*m*) *Mildmay's Case* (1605) 6 Co Rep 40 a According to this case, and *Scattergood v Fidge* (1699), 12 Mod Rep 278, *per* POWELL, J, at p 282, estates tail, from the time of the statute *De Donis Conditionalibus* (Statute of Westminster, II (1285), 13 Edw 1, c 1) until common recoveries were allowed, were looked upon as perpetuities (Pigott on Common Recoveries, p 10) A common law fee upon a fee was described as a perpetuity in *Gay v Gay* (1651), Sty 258, 274

(*n*) Gilbert on Uses (Sugden's ed), p 260 *Peutereis Co v Christ's Hospital* (1683), 1 Vern 161

(*o*) *Chudleigh's Case* (1595), 1 Co Rep 113 b, *per* POPHAM, C J, at p 138 a, *Clare v Clare* (1734), Cas temp Talb 21, *per* Lord TALBOR, L C, at p 26, *Wollen v Andrewes* (1824), 2 Bing 126, and see *Manning v Andrews* (1576), 1 Leon 256

(*p*) *Tatton v Mollineux* (1610), Moore (K B), 809, *Ireland v Payne* (1637), Poll 25, *Apprice v Flower* (1661), Poll, 27, and other early cases concerning limitations of a term on failure of issue

(*q*) See title CHARITIES, Vol IV, p 174 A conveyance of an advowson upon trust, as vacancies occur, to nominate fit persons to the living, where the trust is not for the benefit of a parish or otherwise charitable, and is not for the benefit of any person individually, has been said to be void under the rule against perpetuities (*Re Church Patronage Trust, Laurie v A G*, [1904] 2 Ch 643, C A, *per* VAUGHAN WILLIAMS, L J, at p 648)

(*r*) See titles BURIAL and CREMATION, Vol III, p 433, CHARITIES, Vol IV, pp 118, 174 A trust or condition to repair a tomb is not in itself illegal, and it has been held that, if limited within the perpetuity period, in which case no remote future interest will arise on its determination, it may be a valid condition (*Lloyd v Lloyd* (1852), 2 Sim (N S) 255, 264, *Re Dean, Cooper Dean v Stevens* (1889), 41 Ch D 552, 557, *Pirbright v Salwey*, [1896] W N 86) The ratio decidendi of the two last cited cases is "anomalous and not easy to explain" (Jarnman on Wills, 6th ed, p. 279, note (f)) In *Lloyd v Lloyd, supra*, there were two trusts for the repair of tombs one of the inheritance on a trust to

PART I.
Intro-
ductory.

(8) Gifts to trustees for non-charitable indefinite objects (s), or for non-charitable unincorporated institutions or societies which may last for an indefinite time (t). But no question of perpetuity can arise when the trust is intended to be one for the benefit of the individual members of such a body at the time when the gift becomes operative, or where the property can be transferred to a common fund held for such a body, and when so transferred will not be subject to any trusts which will prevent the existing members from spending it as they please (u)

repair a tomb, which the court held void as a perpetuity (*Lloyd v Lloyd* (1852), 2 Sim (N S) 255, 266), the other a condition that two annuitants should out of their life estates keep a tomb in repair, which was held binding on the annuitants. *KINDERSLEY, V-C, ibid*, at p 264, said "I am satisfied that a condition simply for keeping a tomb in repair is not a charitable one, and is not of itself illegal. It may be illegal to vest property in trustees in perpetuity for such a purpose. But the direction that the annuitants shall out of their life interests keep the tomb in repair is quite lawful and they are under an obligation, out of their annuities, to do so according to the direction of the will." Similarly, a trust or condition for maintaining specified animals is not charitable, but, if it does not violate any rule against remoteness, is not in itself unlawful, and see title CHARITIES, Vol IV, p 118. The question of its enforceability may depend upon the terms of the instrument and the circumstances of the case. There may be no *cestui que trust* directly interested in seeing to its enforcement, but when a trustee accepts a trust, the execution of which includes a lawful direction, or where an annuitant accepts an annuity subject to a lawful condition, the courts have not abstained from recognising such obligations. In *Pettingall v Pettingall* (1842), 11 L. J. (Ch) 176 the executor was held, upon the construction of the will, to be a beneficial legatee of the surplus of an annual sum, which he was directed to apply to the keeping of a mare. The court enforced the obligation by requiring full information to be given when required respecting the animal, by giving liberty to apply and by an undertaking to maintain the animal comfortably. In *Milford v Reynolds* (1848), 16 Sim 105, 116, 120, there was a charitable bequest, after deducting the annual amount required for the keep of specified horses. The order of the court included provision for the horses. In *Re Dean, Cooper Dean v Stevens* (1889), 41 Ch. D. 552, a trust annuity for the maintenance of certain horses and dogs was held valid. The latter case has been severely criticised and in so far as it decided that the life of an animal could be a life for the purpose of the perpetuity period (see p 308, *post*). A proper way of providing for specified animals has been said to be by giving an annuity to a custodian payable so long as any of them are living (*Re Howard* (1908), *Times*, 30th October).

(s) *Thomson v Shakespear* (1860), 1 De G. F. & J. 399, C. A., *Carne v Long* (1860), 2 De G. F. & J. 75, *Re Jones, Parker v Lethbridge* (1898), 70 L. T. 154 see title CHARITIES, Vol IV, pp 117 *et seq*.

(t) *Re Dutton* (1878), 4 Ex. D. 54, *Re Clark's Trust* (1875), 1 Ch. D. 497, *Re Swain, Phillips v Poole* (1908), 99 L. T. 604, see, further, title CHARITIES, Vol IV, p 119.

(u) *Cocks v Mannes* (1871), L. R. 12 Eq. 574, 586, *Re Delany's Estate* (1882), 9 L. R. Ir. 226, C. A., *Re Clarke Clarke v Clarke*, [1901] 2 Ch. 110. A question may arise whether the body must be and is capable of ascertainment. In *Re Delany's Estate, supra*, DEASY, L. J., at p 243, pointed out that the body in question in that case was easy of ascertainment. Interests held by or given to a fluctuating body which may last indefinitely may be rendered valid by being statutory (*Prestney v Colchester Corporation and A-G* (1882), 21 Ch. D. 111), charitable (*Goodman v Saltash Corporation* (1882), 7 App. Cas. 633), or derived under a Crown grant to a corporation with a condition in favour of the body or incorporating the body for the purpose (see *Willington v Maitland* (1866), L. R. 3 Eq. 103,

**PART I.
Intro-
ductory.**

Interests the
perpetual
nature of
which is not
objectionable.

639 The following estates and interests in property may last for an indefinite time, but if created or existing *in presenti* (v), so as to be vested in some person, persons, or corporation, there is no objection to them on any ground of perpetuity (a) —

(1) Easements and *profits à prendre* (b),

(2) Rentcharges and other similar interests in land lasting indefinitely (c), and all remedies to enforce them (d),

(3) Restrictive covenants and conditions running with land in equity (e),

109), title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 487, but in the latter case there must be evidence of the existence of such a corporation (*Rivers* (Lord) v *Adams* (1878), 3 Ex D 361, *Chesterfield* (Lord) v *Harris*, [1908] 2 Ch 397, 423, C A, affirmed, [1911] A C 623)

(v) When created to arise *in futuro*, all these interests referred to in the text, *infra*, except the statutory interests, appear to be subject to the rule against perpetuities, thus, as to the creation of easements *in futuro*, see note (t), p 311, *post*, and as to future gifts to charities, see p 329, *post*

(a) These interests are also referred to p 322 *post*, with regard to the application of the rule against perpetuities but see note (r), *supra*

(b) *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, C A, where JESSIE, MR, at p 583, described these interests as exceptions to the rules against remoteness, but see GRAY, Rule against Perpetuities, s 279 and see generally, title EASEMENTS AND PROFITS À PRENDRE, Vol XI, pp 233 *et seq*

(c) *Keppell v Bailey* (1834), 2 My & K 517, *per* Lord BROUGHAM LC, at pp 528, 529, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 599, where it is pointed out that, although corporeal property is clogged when subjected to these rights and its value may be proportionately decreased, its alienability is unaffected and its aptness for commercial dealings remains (but as to this reason, see *Re Hargreaves*, *Mudgley v Tatley* (1890), 43 Ch D 401, C A, and see note (b), p 295, *ante*, see, generally, title RENTCHARGES AND ANNUITIES

(d) *Jemott v Cowley* (1667), 1 Saund 112 c, *Foster v Foster* (1700) 2 Vern 386, where no question of perpetuity was raised. Such rights of entry pass on an assignment of the rentcharge to the assignee as part of his security (*Havegill v Hare* (1618), Cro Jac 510). The Conveyancing and Law of Property Act, 1881 (44 & 45 Vict c 41), s 44, confers rights of entry for distress and receipt of rent and profits on the owner of the rentcharge, so far as those remedies might have been conferred by the instrument under which it arises, but not further. The Conveyancing Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 37), s 6, to remove doubts, declares that the rule of law relating to perpetuities does not apply to these remedies and like powers and remedies conferred by any instrument for recovering or compelling payment of any annual sum within the Conveyancing and Law of Property Act 1881 (44 & 45 Vict c 41), s 44. The right of entry, in case of a rentcharge, need not be confined to the lands out of which the rent issues (Gilbert, Rents, p 41), and as between landlord and tenant the right of distress for rent may be extended to lands other than those demised, see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 156. With regard to the lands demised, the entry under the usual condition is valid by stat (1540) 32 Hen 8, c 34, see title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, p 586

(e) *Mackenzie v Childers* (1889), 43 Ch D 265, 279, and see *Coles v Sims* (1854), 5 De G M & G 1, C A, *per* KNIGHT-BRUCE, LJ, at p 7. As to the conditions under which such covenants may be binding, see *McLean v McKay* (1873), L R 5 P C 327, *Rogers v Hosegood*, [1900] 2 Ch 388, C A, and, as to restrictions under building schemes, see *Edleston v Reacher*, [1908] 2 Ch 374, 665, C A, *Reid v Beckerstaff*, [1909] 2 Ch 305, C A. As between landlord and tenant the question is whether the covenant touches or concerns the land, see *Ricketts v Enfield Churchwardens*, [1909]

PART I
Intro-
ductory.

- (4) Covenants and conditions running with land at law (*f*);
- (5) Customary rights (*g*),
- (6) Charities (*h*),
- (7) Interests held by corporations (*i*), a check on which is provided by the law of mortmain,
- (8) Interests derived under or by virtue of any statute (*k*),

Part II.—The Rule against Perpetuities.

SECT 1—*Period allowed for Suspension of Vesting*

SUB-SECT 1—*Statement of the Rule*

Short
statement.

640 The rule against perpetuities (*l*) may be shortly enunciated as follows—An executory devise or other future limitation to be

1 Ch 544, 554, 555, title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, p 587, note (*a*) In *Rogers v Hosegood*, [1900] 2 Ch 388, 405, 406 C A (adopted in *Muller v Trafford*, [1901] 1 Ch 54, 61, by FARWELL, J), COLLINS, L J said the first point to be determined is whether the covenant or contract in its inception binds the land In *Sharpe v Durant* (1911), 55 Sol Jo 423, however, an implied covenant not to interfere with a tramway crossing to be constructed *in futuro* was enforced against an assignee of the tramway As to covenants running with the land at equity, see *Tulk v Moxhay* (1848), 2 Ph 774, *Formby v Barker*, [1903] 2 Ch 539 C A, see also title EQUITY, Vol XIII, pp 100 *et seq*

(*f*) As to covenants running with the land at law, see *Muller v Trafford*, *supra*, at pp 60, 61 As to covenants running with the land, see generally, titles LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 584 *et seq* REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL

(*g*) See title CUSTOM AND USAGES, Vol X, pp 238 *et seq*, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, ss 572—588

(*h*) *Goodman v Saltash Corporation* (1882), 7 App Cas 633, 642, 650, 665 *Re Christchurch Inclosure Act*, (1888) 38 Ch D 520, 530, 531, 532, C A, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 689, and see title CHARITIES, Vol IV, pp 174 *et seq*

(*i*) See title CORPORATIONS, Vol VIII, pp 367 *et seq*, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, pp 299, 687

(*k*) *Prestney v Colchester Corporation and A G* (1882), 21 Ch D 111, *Re Christchurch Inclosure Act*, *supra*, at p 530, and see *Seren Oaks, Maidstone and Tunbridge Rail Co v London, Chatham and Dover Rail Co* (1879), 11 Ch D 625, *per JESSEL MR*, at p 635, and, as to remoteness in a statutory agreement, see *Manchester Ship Canal Co v Manchester Racecourse Co*, [1900] 2 Ch 352, 359, 360, affirmed, [1901] 2 Ch 37, 50, C A, compare *Taff Vale Railway v Amalgamated Society of Railway Servants*, [1901] A C 426, 429 Accordingly, estates tail may be rendered unbarred by statute, causing a statutory perpetuity (stat (1542-3) 34 & 35 Hen 8, c 20, Fines and Recoveries Act, 1833 (3 & 4 Will 4, c 74), s 18, compare *Re Bolton Estates*, *Russell v Meyrick*, [1903] 2 Ch. 461, C A) Powers of destroying such interests for the purpose of alienation in some cases are given by the Settled Land Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 38), s 58 (1) (i), and see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL

(*l*) The rule arose from the limits fixed for executory devises and bequests, as, to the beginning of which see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL the basis on which it proceeds, namely, that the validity of an interest depends on the distance in futurity of its vesting, was first

valid must vest, if at all, within a life or lives in being and twenty-one years and a possible period for gestation after, it is not sufficient that it may vest within that period—it must be good in its creation and, unless it is created in such terms that it cannot vest after the expiration of a life or lives in being and twenty-one years and the period allowed for gestation, it is not valid, and subsequent events cannot make it valid (*m*)

SECT. 1.
Period
allowed for
Suspension
of Vesting.

definitely laid down in *Norfolk's (Duke) Case* (1685), 3 Cas in Ch 1, H L. The necessity of some such rule was made manifest when it was decided that executory devises were sometimes allowable and were indestructible (see *Pells v Brown* (1620), Cro Jac 590, *Scattergood v Edge* (1699), 12 Mod Rep 278, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, c x). It is generally considered that it was an invention of the chancellors as to trusts and equitable interests (as in *Norfolk's (Duke) Case*, *supra*, *Chalfont v Oke* (1674), 1 Cas in Ch 239, *Lloyd v Carew* (1697), Prec Ch 72, H L.) adopted at common law as to legal rights under uses and executory devises, see *Re Ridley, Buckton v Hay* (1879), 11 Ch D 645, *per JESSE*, M R, at p 649, *1 G v Cummins* (1895), [1906] 11 R 406, *per PAILES*, C B, at p 408. For the history of the rule see 2 Hargrave, Juridical Arguments (argument in *Thellusson v Woodford*), Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, c xi, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, c v.

(*m*) *Dunqannon (Lord) v Smith* (1846), 12 Cl & Fin 546, H L, *per CRESWILL*, J, at p 563, adopted by Lord DAVEY in *Hancock v Watson*, [1902] A C 14, 17, compare *Re Thompson, Thompson v Thompson*, [1906] 2 Ch 199, *per JOYCE*, J, at p 202, 2 Preston, Abstracts of Title, p 159. For the purpose of this short statement the period of gestation is made a part of the definition, it is better for some purposes to omit it, and to add to the rule "for the purposes of this rule a child *en ventre sa mère* is considered as a life in being," as in Jarman on Wills, 5th ed, p 216, and Challis, Real Property, 2nd ed, pp 170, 171, approved in *Re Walmer's Trusts, Moore v Wingfield*, [1903] 2 Ch 411, 422, 423, C A, and see *Villar v Gilbey*, [1907] A C 139, 149. The rule is thus shortly stated by Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 201: "No interest is good unless it must vest if at all not later than twenty-one years after some life in being at the creation of the interest." Lewis's definition of the word "perpetuity" (Law of Perpetuity, p 164) is, "a future limitation, whether executory or by way of remainder, and of either real or personal property, which is not to vest until the expiration of, or will not necessarily vest within, the period fixed and prescribed by law for the creation of future estates and interests, and which is not destructible by the persons for the time being entitled to the property subject to the future limitation, except with the concurrence of the individual interested under that limitation." This definition has been accepted in several cases: see *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, 581, C A, *Dunn v Flood* (1883), 25 Ch D 629, *per NORTH*, J, at p 633, *Redington v Browne* (1893), 32 L R Ir 347, *per BROWNE*, J, at p 355, *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, [1905] 1 Ch 535, 541 (where FARWELL, J, explains the sense in which the word "destructible" is used in this definition), *Re Tyrrell's Estate*, [1907] 11 R 292, 295, C A. Challis, Real Property, 2nd ed, pp 170, 171, also separates the statement of the rule from that of the period prescribed by it, and confines it to "all future interests and claims in, to, or upon any specified property, which do not arise under or take effect by virtue of the rules of the common law and are not subsequent to an estate tail [and] with a few exceptions requiring specific mention." In order to avoid the complexity of the expression "vest" which occurs in the definition, the rule has been expressed in the form: "No interest subject to a condition precedent is good unless the condition must be fulfilled, if at all, within etc"; see 49 Sol Jo 360, following Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 1st ed, s 201, but this definition needs a peculiar meaning to be given to "condition" (see *ibid*, 2nd ed), and takes no notice of the effect of the rule on conditions subsequent. As to vesting, see, further, p. 303, *post*.

ART. 1

Period
allowed for
Suspension
of Vesting

Limit on
suspension
of vesting
The
perpetuity
period

641 The rule stated more fully is as follows —

First, subject to the exceptions hereafter mentioned (*n*), every future estate or interest in any kind of property, the rights in which are governed by the law of England (*o*), must be such that, at the time when the instrument creating it comes into operation (*p*), it can be predicated that, if the estate or interest vests at all, it must necessarily vest not later than at the end of a certain period (*q*)

Secondly, this period is the life of a person or the survivor of any number of persons (*r*) in being at the time of creation of such future estate or interest, and ascertained for that purpose by the instrument creating the same, and twenty-one years to be computed from the dropping of such life (*s*), but if no such person or persons are ascertained by the instrument, the period is twenty-one years computed from the time of creation of the future estate or interest (*t*)

In the following paragraphs this period is called "the perpetuity period" (*u*)

Children *en ventre
sa mère*.

Thirdly, a child who is *en ventre sa mère* at the time of creation of an estate or interest and is afterwards born alive, is deemed to be a person in being for the purposes both of the vesting of the estate or interest in him (*b*), and of being a life chosen to form the

(*n*) See p 322, *post*

(*o*) As to the property and interests bound by the rule, see, further, pp 311 312 *post* see also p 372, *post*

(*p*) In the case of dispositions by will, see p 332, *post* and with regard to the execution of powers, and, generally, as to the circumstances taken into account, see p 333 *post*

(*q*) *Norfolk s (Duke) Case* (1685) 3 Cas in Ch 1, H L ("The Case of Perpetuities" in Chancery), *Lloyd v Carew* (1698), Show Parl Cas 137 and other cases have merely extended the period the vesting of an executory limitation was thus allowed to be suspended first for a life (*Pells v Brown* (1620), Cro Jac 590, *Norfolk's (Duke) Case*, *supra*), two lives (*Goring v Bickerstaff* (1662), 1 Cas in Ch 4), or any number of concurrent lives (*Low v Burron* (1734), 3 P Wms 262), a life and one year (*Lloyd v Carew*, *supra*), or a reasonable time after the life (*Marks v Marks* (1718), 10 Mod Rep 419, *Goodtitle d Gurnall v Wood* (1740), 7 Term Rep 103, n), or up to twenty one years (*Stephens v Stephens* (1736) Cas temp Talb 22b)

(*r*) As to the qualifications necessary for the persons chosen, see p 308, *post*

(*s*) Compare the definition of the Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, pp 39, 69, which has been adopted with the reservation of the period there given as alternative to the twenty one years period, of the minority of some person *en ventre sa mère* at the dropping of such life, and ascertained for that purpose by such instrument," which perhaps still awaits judicial decision, see note (*b*), p 310, *post*

(*t*) *Cooke v De Vandes* (1803), 9 Ves 197, *Palmer v Holford* (1828), 4 Russ 403 *Speakman v Speakman* (1850), 8 Hare, 180, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity p 172

(*u*) It is convenient to use this term, as reference is continually made to "the period allowed by law for the vesting of executory interests" The Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, at pp 37, 39, used the term "the period of perpetuity."

(*b*) *The Hutton v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, H L, the second answer of the judges, *Blackburn v. Staples* (1814), 2 Ves & B 367, *Knapping v Tomlinson* (1864), 10 Jur (N S) 626, *Villar v Gilbey*, [1907] A C 139, 149 Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 147, regards *Stephens v Stephens*

perpetuity period (c) The perpetuity period may, therefore, be apparently extended by a period or periods for gestation, but only in those cases where gestation actually exists (d) This branch of the rule is applied whether it is for the advantage of the unborn child or not (e)

Fourthly, every condition subsequent which but for this rule would render void a validly created estate or interest is to that extent inoperative (f)

Fifthly (g), any estate or interest which does not necessarily satisfy the above rule is void from its creation (h), and events, subsequent to the date of the instrument which, or subsequent to the death of the testator whose will, created the estate or interest, which in fact make the vesting take place within the perpetuity period, have no effect so as to make the estate or interest valid (i)

Sixthly, the time of the death of the testator is deemed the time of creation of an estate or interest created by will, and the time of the execution of the instrument creating the power is deemed the time of creation of an estate or interest created by the execution of a power not tantamount to absolute ownership (j)

SECT. I.
Period allowed for Suspension of Vesting.

Conditions subsequent

Subsequent events

Time of creation

SUB-SECT. 2. *Determination of the Time of Vesting*

642 The rule is directed to ensure that the vesting of estates and interests takes place at a time not too remote. A limitation of

Object of the rule

(1736), *Cas temp Talb* 228, as the foundation of the rule (as in that case an executory devise to such a son of a living person as should attain twenty one was held valid) combined with stat (1698) 10 Will 3, c 22 sometimes cited as c 16, which provided that posthumous children should be able to take under limitations as if born in the lifetime of their parent

(c) *Theellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, H L, the first answer of the judges, *Long v Blackall* (1797), 7 Term Rep 100, *Re Widmer's Trusts* *Moore v Wingfield*, [1903] 1 Ch 874, per BUCKLEY, J, at p 879, affirmed, [1903] 2 Ch 411, C A, per STIRLING, L J, at p 422

(d) *Cadell v Palmer* (1833), 1 Cl & Fin 372, H L, the second and third answers of the judges

(e) *Re Widmer's Trusts*, *Moore v Wingfield*, [1903] 1 Ch 874, per BUCKLEY, J, at p 888, affirmed, [1903] 2 Ch 411, C A, per ROMER, L J, at p 421

(f) As to invalid gifts over, see p 350, *post*, as to invalid directions for settlement of valid gifts, see p 353, *post*, as to the restraint on anticipation of married women's interests, see p 352, *post*, and as to directions not affecting vesting, see p 338, *post*

(g) This is properly a corollary from the first rule, but for completeness it is convenient to state it as a coordinate separate rule, see *Dunannon (Lord) v Smith* (1816), 12 Cl & Fin 546, per TINDAL, C J, at p 612, H L, *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity* p 170

(h) It is not, therefore, void only for the excess, even where the excess could be clearly ascertained (*Hancock v Watson*, [1902] A C 14, 22, approving *Leake v Robinson* (1817), 2 Mer 362, 389), *Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report*, p 35

(i) *Jee v Audley* (1787), 1 Cox, Eq Cas 324, where KENTON, M R, said, at p 326, "the single question is not whether the limitation is good in the events which have happened, but whether it was good in its creation", and see *Southampton (Lord) v Hertford (Marquis)* (1813), 2 Ves & B 54, *Dunannon (Lord) v Smith*, *supra*, *Harding v Nott* (1857), 7 E & B 650, and, as to the circumstances taken into account, see, further, p 333, *post*

(j) *Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report*, pp 40, 69, and as to the date from which the period is reckoned, see, further, p 332, *post*

SECT 1
Period
allowed for
Suspension
of Vesting.

an estate or interest, and the estate or interest so limited, not vested within the perpetuity period are said to be "too remote," or to be "void for remoteness" if they are immediately vested, or must necessarily vest within the perpetuity period, they are not open to the objection of remoteness (*h*)

Vesting.

643 An estate or interest is or becomes vested (*l*) when, first, the person or persons, corporation, or body to whom or to which it is limited (in this title denoted by the term "the alienee") is or are ascertained and in existence and capable of being an alienee (*m*), secondly, the quantum of the estate and interest is ascertained, and thirdly, all other events have happened to enable the estate or interest to come into possession at once, subject to the determination at any time of the prior estates and interests

Quantum of
interest.

644 Where the interest of the alienee, therefore, may by possibility not be ascertainable until after the perpetuity period, the limitation is void (*n*)

The quantum of interest may be validly ascertained by reference to any property existing at the date of the creation of the limitation or to the value of such property (*o*)

Accumulated
property

645 Where the property is to be increased by accumulation, it is sufficient if within the perpetuity period there is a person in existence entitled to take the property, whatever its value or amount (*p*), that is to say, if the limitation is vested and in possession in other respects

But where the direction for accumulation forms a condition precedent to the interest of the alienee, and that accumulation may

(*h*) *Oddie v Brown* (1859), 4 De G & J 179, C A, per TURNER, L J, at p 196, *Redington v Browne* (1893), 32 L R Ir 347, per BEWLEY, J, at p 358

(*l*) As to vested and contingent estates generally, see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, s 118, observes that the rule does not concern itself with the secondary meaning of "transmissible" sometimes given to the word "vested"

(*m*) Lewis Law of Perpetuity, p 168 The alienee himself may be under disabilities, which are ignored in questions of perpetuity (*Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, [1912] 1 Ch 343 C A, per COZENS HARDY, M R, at p 355), *Ferland v Wilson* (1845), 4 Hare, 344, per WIGRAM, V C, at p 374

(*n*) *Curtis v Lukin* (1842), 5 Beav 147, 154, 156, *Redington v Browne* (1893), 32 L R Ir 347, 356, 357, *Savill Brothers, Ltd v Bethell*, [1902] 2 Ch 523 C A, *Re Thompson, Thompson v Thompson*, [1906] 2 Ch 199, per JOYCE, J, at p 202, and see the cases cited as to classes at p 343, post

(*o*) *Wood v Drew* (1864), 33 Beav 610 (where there was a direction to convey freeholds, on the expiration of each of certain leases, to be of equal annual value to the leasehold premises, the term in which had expired, but see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, s 205, n, compare *Re Wood, Tullett v Colville*, [1894] 2 Ch 310, 316, affirmed, [1894] 3 Ch 381, 384, C A, *Re Coulson's Trusts, Prichard v Coulson* (1907), 97 L T 754 (reservation of percentage of excess of proceeds under a future sale over a fixed amount), and see *Re Hurlbutt, Hurlbutt v Hurlbutt*, [1910] 2 Ch. 553, 559

(*p*) *Oddie v Brown*, *supra*, compare *Re Swain, Monckton v Hands*, [1905] 1 Ch 609, C A.

extend beyond the legal limits, and cannot be stopped and the fund disposed of by the alienee, the direction is void (q)

646 Assuming the limitation is valid as regards the quantum of interest limited, it may be invalid on either of two grounds (r): (1) that the description of the alienee is such that he may not necessarily be in existence and ascertainable within the perpetuity period(s), or (2) that, apart from the description of the alienee (who may be a living person in this case) (t), the events which must happen in order to render the estate or interest ready to come into possession at once, subject to the determination of prior estates and interests, are such that they may not necessarily happen within the perpetuity period (u). The question of uncertainty must be kept distinct from the question of remoteness, for the purpose of testing the question of remoteness, the uncertainty of the alienee existing at

SECT. I.
Period
allowed for
Suspension
of Vesting

Remoteness
in description
of alienee
or in the
contingent
events.

(q) As to accumulation, see p 370, *post* *Curtis v Lukin* (1842), 5 Beav 147, *Smith v Cuninghame* (1884), 13 L R 1 480, compare *Trustees, Executors, and Agency Co v Bush* (1908), 28 New Zealand Law Reports, 117, *Grand Trust Co v Russell* (1910), 179 Federal Reporter, 446.

(r) See Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 40, making a suggestion for legislation validating a limitation in one of these respects.

(s) *Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)* (1794) 2 Hy Bl 358 (the first son of A, a living person who had no son, that should be bred a clergyman), *Tregonwell v Sydenham* (1815), 3 Dow, 194, H L (the tenant in an unbarred entail at a remote event), *Tollemache (Lady) v Country (Earl and Countess)* (1834), 2 Cl & Fin 611, H L (the person from time to time Lord V), compare *Bacon v Proctor* (1822) 12 M & R 31, and *Mackworth v Hinman* (1836), 2 Keen, 658, and see *Ke v Dungannon (Lord)* (1841), 1 Dr & War 509, Sugden, Law of Property, p 330, *Dungannon (Lord) v Smith* (1846), 12 Cl & Fin 546, H L (the heir male of A attaining twenty one), *Ibbetson v Ibbetson* (1840) 5 My & Cr 26 (tenant in tail attaining twenty one), *Wainman v Field* (1854), Kay, 507 (tenant in tail becoming seised in fee simple), *Re Gage, Hill v Gage*, [1898] 1 Ch 498 (to unborn person on marriage), Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 40, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 464. The description of the alienee (not being a living person) may require him to survive a particular event or to be ascertained at the death of a particular person or class of persons, and the limitation is accordingly invalid if the event will not necessarily happen within the perpetuity period (*Jee v Audley* (1787), 1 Cox, Eq Cas 324 (to the daughters of A, and B his wife, living at the failure of C's issue), *Gooding v Keud* (1853), 4 De G M & G 310, C A (when youngest child of A attains twenty five), *Re Bowles, Page v Page*, [1905] 1 Ch 371 (determination of trusts)), or if the person at whose death the alienee is to be ascertained is unborn, or possibly unborn (*Courtier v Oram* (1855), 21 Beav 91 (to the testator's grandchildren living at the death of each of his present and future grandchildren), *Gooch v Gooch* (1853), 3 De G M & G 366 (grandchildren), *Hodson v Bull* (1845), 14 Sim 558, *Lett v Randall, Lett v Dooner* (1855), 3 Sm & G 83, *Buchanan v Harrison* (1861), 1 John & H 662, *Re Taylor's Trusts, Taylor v Blake*, [1912] 11 R 1 (husbands of children), *Re Boules, Page v Page, supra*). Thus the survivor of a class comprising unborn persons cannot be a direct alienee, see p 337, *post*. On the other hand, the limitation is valid where all the persons, at the death of the survivor of whom the alienee is ascertained, are alive or *en ventre sa mère* (*Long v Blackall* (1797), 7 Term Rep 100, *Thellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, H L, *Re Roberts, Repington v Roberts-Gawen* (1881), 19 Ch D 520, C A).

(t) *Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)*, *supra*, *Re Brown and Sibby's Contract* (1876), 3 Ch D 156, *Re Hargreaves, Midgley v Talley* (1890), 43 Ch D 491, C A, overruling *Atern v Lloyd* (1868), L R 5 Fq 383.

(u) *Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)*, *supra* (if A should have no son

§ 111
Period
allowed for
Suspension
of Vesting

Effect of rule
on construc-
tion.

all (a), or the uncertainty of the other events on which the limitation is contingent happening at all, is immaterial. If existing at all, the alienee must of necessity be ascertained, and, if happening at all, the events must be such as will, of necessity, happen within the perpetuity period (b).

647 The validity of every limitation, therefore, depends on the time of vesting, which is a matter to be decided on the construction of the words used (c).

If the words of the instrument are plain, they are taken and their meaning arrived at (d) exactly in the same manner as if there had been no law of remoteness, and as if the whole intention expressed by the words could lawfully take effect (e), without regard to the consequences (f).

bied a clergyman), *Cambridge v Rous* (1802) 8 Ves 12, 24 (if A leave no children attaining twenty seven), *Chamberlayne v Brockett* (1872), 8 Ch App 206 *per* Lord SLIBORNE, L.C., at p 212 (when land given for almshouse), *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, C A (whenever land required for the purpose of an undertaking), *Tynnell v Naylor* (1892), 11 New Zealand Law Reports, 118 (on property being used for sale of liquors), *Re Bowen, Lloyd Phillips v Davis*, [1893] 2 Ch 491 (establishment of a Government system), *Re Stratheden and Campbell (Lord)*, *Alt v Stratheden and Campbell (Lord)*, [1894] 3 Ch 265 (on the appointment of next officer to a corps), *Re Wood, Tullett v Cottrill*, [1894] 3 Ch 381, C A (when gravel pits worked out), *Kingham v Kingham*, [1897] 1 I R 170 (if property sold and money handed over), *Thomds v Thomas* (1902), 87 L T 58, C A and *Edwards v Edwards*, [1909] A C 275 (if minerals worked), *Re Bewick, Ryle v Ryle*, [1911] 1 Ch 116 (when estate clear of charges). See further, the cases cited in note (f), p 343, *post*, in which there were gifts over in default of any of classes of unborn issue attaining an age greater than twenty one.

(a) *Thellusson v Woodford* (1799), 4 Ves 227, 309, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 173. For the purpose of testing whether a limitation violates the rule it may be assumed that the alienee is certain or capable of being ascertained (*Smithwick v Hayden* (1887), 19 L R Ir 490, C A, *per* FITZ GIBBON, L.J., at p 495).

(b) *Cadell v Palmer* (1833), 1 Cl & Fin 372, H L (the person who would have been entitled, at the expiration of a term of years expiring twenty years after the death of the survivor of twenty eight persons living at the death of the testator, had the estates been settled in a certain strict settlement).

(c) The question of the validity of a limitation may therefore be brought before the court on originating summons (R S C, Ord 54, r 1, Ord 55, r 3, *Re Hargreaves, Mughly v Talley* (1890), 43 Ch D 401 C A).

(d) As to the construction of deeds and wills see titles DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS, Vol X, pp 433 *et seq*, WILLS.

(e) *Dungannon (Lord) v Smith* (1846), 12 Cl & Fin 546, 588, 599, H L, *Catlin v Brown* (1853), 11 Hare, 372, 375 (second rule), *Stuart v Cockerell* (1870), 5 Ch App 713, *Pearks v Moseley* (1880), 5 App Cas 714, *per* Lord SLIBORNE, L.C., at p 719, *Hutchinson v Tottenham* [1898] 1 I R 403, 418, *Re Wrightson, Battie Wrightson v Thomas*, [1904] 3 Ch 95, 106 C A, *Edwards v Edwards*, [1909] A C 275, 277, *Re Hume Public Trustee v Mabey*, [1912] 1 Ch 693.

(f) *Pearks v Moseley*, *supra*, *Speakman v Speakman* (1850), 8 Hare 180, 185, *Re Meritt, Meritt v Crossman*, [1891] 3 Ch. 197, *Whitby v Tom Iurdecke*, [1906] 1 Ch 783, 788, *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, [1912] 1 Ch 343, 365, C A, and see *Boughton v Boughton*, *Boughton v James* (1848), 1 H L Cas 406. Even where a limited and restricted construction of the instrument would have the effect of

Words cannot be struck out because they offend against the rule (g), but the meaning of words, apparently creating a remote limitation, may be controlled by other parts of the instrument, so that taking the instrument as a whole the limitation is valid (h)

In dealing, however, with words that are obscure and ambiguous, weight may be given to the consideration that it is better to fluctuate than to destroy the intention (i), which it is to be assumed was not meant to transgress the law (k)

Thus, there may be a particular clause which on one construction appears to offend against the rule against perpetuities but, if it is fairly capable of another construction which avoids that objection,

SECT. I.
Period
allowed for
Suspension
of Vesting.

When
meaning
controlled.
Intention
effectuated

supporting provisions otherwise wholly bad and even where there is an executory trust, the court will not depart from the meaning of the words in which the court is satisfied they have been used (*Boughton v James* (1814), 1 Coll 26, *per* KNIGHT BRUCE V-C, at p 43)

(g) *Hensman v Pearse* (1871), 7 Ch App 275, 283 Similarly, a gift cannot be split into gifts on several contingencies, unless so expressed (see p 349, *post*)

(h) Thus, a limitation over in itself void may be controlled by the prior provisions of the instrument (*Trickey v Trickey* (1832) 3 My & K 360, *Ilcombe v Gompertz* (1837), 3 My & Cr 127) A limitation apparently on general failure of issue may be thus confined to a failure of issue previously mentioned (*Blackborn v Fidley* (1720), 1 P Wms 600, 606, *Morse v Armonde* (Lord) (1826), 1 Russ 382, *Malcolm v Taylor* (1831), 2 Russ & M 416, 421 *Eno v Pno* (1847), 6 Hare, 171, *Lewis v Templer* (1864), 33 Beav 625 *Lewis*, Law of Perpetuity, p 373) As to void limitations on failure of issue, see note (k), *infra*

(i) *Pearls v Moseley* (1880), 5 App Cas 713, *per* Lord STUBBORN, J.C., at p 719, applied in *Re Bevan's Trusts* (1887), 34 Ch D 716, 718, *Re Turney, Turney v Turney*, [1899] 2 Ch 739, C.A., *Re Hobson's Will etc*, *Hobson v Sharp*, [1907] Victorian Law Reports, 724 In such a case words which might show that a gift is void may be rejected (*Smidmore v Smidmore* (1905), 3 Commonwealth Law Reports, 344)

(k) *Leach v Leach* (1843), 2 Y & C Ch Cas 495, *per* KNIGHT BRUCE V-C, at p 499 *E.g.* an executory limitation on failure of issue or heirs of a person which, according to the context or the construction adopted by the court, (1) may refer to a failure at any indefinitely distant future time in which case, unless an estate tail to cover all the issue precedes the limitation or is implied, the limitation will be void under the rule (*Darves v Speed* (1692), 2 Salk 675, affirmed Show Parl Cas 104, *Green v Rod* (1729) Fitz G 68, *Janesborough (Lady) v Far* (1733), Cas temp Talb 262, *Clare v Clure* (1734), Cas temp Talb 21, *Beauterl v Donner* (1724), 2 Atk 308, *Bodens v Watson* (1764), Amb 478, *Grey v Montagu* (1770), 3 Bro Parl Cas 314, *A G v Hud* (1782), 1 Bro C C 170, *Bigge v Bensley* (1783), 1 Bro C C 187, *Glover v Strothoff* (1786), 2 Bro C C 33 *Barlow v Salter* (1810), 17 Ves 479, *Griffiths v Grievie* (1810), 1 Jac & W 31, *Banks v Holme* (1821 1826), 1 Russ 394, n, II L, *Bristow v Boothby* (1826), 2 Sum & St 465, *Candy v Campbell* (1834), 2 Cl & Fin 421, H L, *Malcolm v Taylor* (1832), 2 Russ & M 416 (as to plate), *Wells v Malins* (1838), 3 Jur 36, *A-G v Bright* (1836), 2 Keen, 57, *Doe d Todd v Duesbury* (1841), 8 M & W 514, *Falkiner v Hornidge* (1858), 8 I Ch R 184, C.A., *Re Johnson's Trusts* (1866), L R 2 Eq 716, *Dawson v Small* (1874), 9 Ch App 651), or (2) may be restricted to a failure before some event connected with the limitations of the instrument, in which case, if that event is within the proper period, the limitation will be valid (*Lewis*, Law of Perpetuity, c xv, *Forth v Chapman* (1720), 1 P Wms 663, and the notes thereto (Tudor, L C Real Prop, 4th ed, 374), see title WILLS)

SECT 1
Period
allowed for
Suspension
of Vesting

the latter construction is preferred, especially if it is found to be in accordance with the general intention of the will (l)

In construing an ambiguous clause which, read in a particular way, offends against the rule, regard may be had to an expressed intention that the limitations shall not be contrary to the rule (m)

The circumstance that to hold the limitation void would attribute to the testator an intention of intestacy, is an element which has been taken into consideration (n)

SUBSECT 3—The Choice of Period Available

Choice of
lives

648 The choice of persons whose lives are chosen for the purposes of the perpetuity period may be quite arbitrary (o)

It is immaterial that such persons neither take any interest in the property (p) nor are connected with the persons having an interest therein in any way (q). There is no limit to their number (r)

Essential
qualifications

The qualifications necessary are that they must all be persons (s)

(l) *Martelli v Holloway* (1872), L R 5 H L 532, 548, *Re Mortimer Gray v Gray* [1905] 2 Ch 502, 506, C A., *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, [1912] 1 Ch 343, 365, *Re Hume, Public Trustee v Mabey*, [1912] 1 Ch 693, per PARKER, J., at p 698

(m) *Martelli v Holloway* (1872), L R 5 H L 532, per LORD CHELMSFORD, at p 548. As to the effect given to the words "as far as the rules of law will admit," with regard to executory and other gifts, see p 317, *post*. If a gift is not executory, but direct and unambiguous, and is such as to offend against the rule against perpetuities, these words do not render the gift valid (*Christie v Gosling* (1866), L R 1 H L 279, 290, *Re Exmouth (Viscount)*, *Exmouth (Viscount) v Praed* (1883), 23 Ch D 158, and see *Re Moore, Prior v Moore*, [1901] 1 Ch 936). In *Re Finch and Chew v Contract*, [1903] 2 Ch 486, an appointment on the trusts of an antecedent instrument or such of them as were "capable of taking effect" took effect with the trusts excluded which would have been void.

(n) *Montgomery v Woodley* (1800), 5 Ves 522, *Taylor v Frobisher* (1852), 5 De G & Sm 191, *Re Edmondson's Estate* (1868), L R 5 I q 389 (where in consequence "vested" was construed in a special sense), *Gosling v Gosling* (1859), John 265, 274, *Re Bevan's Trusts* (1887), 31 Ch D 716, and see *Re Wenmoth's Estate*, *Wenmoth v Wenmoth* (1887), 37 Ch D 266, 270, explaining *Elliott v Elliott* (1841), 12 Sim 276, and *Re Coppard's Estate*, *Howlett v Hodson* (1887), 35 Ch D 350, as decided on this ground. As to severable limitations, see p 347, *post*.

(o) *Cadell v Palmer* (1833), 1 Cl & Fin 372, H L., see the Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 38, suggesting a legislative change in this respect, *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity*, p 161.

(p) *Cadell v Palmer*, *supra*, compare *Beard v Westcott* (1813), 5 Taunt 393, *Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)* (1794), 2 Hy Bl 358, and see *Hopkins v Hopkins* (1739), 1 Atk 581, per LORD HARDWICKE, L C., at p 596.

(q) *Cadell v Palmer*, *supra*.

(r) *Theellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, H L. *Goring v Bickerstaff* (1662), 2 Cas in Ch. 4, established this principle for two lives as to limitations in trust of a term, compare *Lloyd v Carew* (1697), Show Parl Cas 137, as to shifting uses. In *Cadell v Palmer*, *supra*, the lives were twenty eight in number, and in *Robinson v Hardcastle* (1786), 2 Bro C C 22, 30, LORD THURLOW, L C., said that "a man may appoint a hundred or a thousand trustees, and that the survivor of them shall appoint a life estate, that would be within the line of a perpetuity."

(s) Having regard to the origin of the rule, allowing a suspense during lives, it has usually been assumed that the lives must be those of human

§ 407. 1.
Period
allowed for
Suspension
of Vesting.

who are or will necessarily (i) be ascertainable and in existence, or in gestation (a), at the time from which the instrument speaks (b), so that their lives are running concurrently (c), and that in effect there is but one life to consider, that of the longest liver of them (d), and that they must be such that the determination of their lives must be capable of being proved without difficulty (e).

Where the persons chosen are not practically ascertainable, the limitation, even though purporting to be confined within proper limits, is void for uncertainty (f).

In a will, the persons must be such as must necessarily be in being at the death of the testator (g).

649 The period of twenty-one years is a period in gross, without necessary reference to the minority of anyone (h). It may be denoted by the minority of any person, who may be the person in

Choice of
period of
twenty-one
years.

beings. If and in so far as *Re Dean, Cooper Dean v Steens* (1898), 41 Ch D 552, decided that the lives of animals could be taken for the purpose, it is generally regarded as wrongly decided (see Gray, *Rule against Perpetuities*, ss 905, 906, Jarman on Wills, 6th ed, pp 279, 297).

(i) *Gooch v Gooch* (1853), 3 De G M & G 366, 385.

(a) In accordance with the second branch of the rule, see p 302, *ante*.

(b) *Thellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, 11 Lr, and see p 312, *post*.

(c) "The candles are all lighted at once" (*Goring v Bucherstaff* (1662), Poll 31, *Love v Wyndham* (1670), 1 Mod Rep 50, *per* TWISDON J., at p 51, *Low v Burton* (1733), 3 P Wms 262, *per* Lord TALBOT, L C, at p 265, *Gooch v Gooch* (1853), 3 De G M & G 366, *per* Lord CRANWORTH, L C, at p 384).

(d) "Let the lives be never so many, there must be a survivor, and so it is but the length of that life" (*Scatterwood v Edge* (1697), 1 Salk 229). "The length of time depends not on the number but on the nature of the lives" (*Thellusson v Woodford*, *supra*, *per* Lord ELDON, L C, at p 145). Accordingly the following large classes of persons have been suggested as validly chosen — all the members of one of the Houses of Parliament (*Thellusson v Woodford*, *supra*, *per* Lord ELDON, L C, at p 146), all the members of the universities, or all persons insured in certain insurance societies (see S C (1799), 4 Ves 227, 244, 247), the boys of a named charity or public school (*Pownall v Graham* (1863), 33 Beav 242, *per* ROWLLY, M R, at pp 246, 247, and Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 38), all His Majesty's soldiers at the time (Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, p 167), all persons *in esse* capable of succeeding to a named dignity (*Banks v Le Despencer (Baroness)* (1840), 10 Sim 576, *per* SHADWELL, V-C, see *Re Exmouth (Viscount), Exmouth (Viscount) v Praed* (1883), 23 Ch D 158), all the living descendants of Her late Majesty Queen Victoria (*Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents* Vol XII, pp 630, 638, 644, 654), but see Jarman on Wills, 6th ed, p 297. Caution should, however, be observed in accepting the suggestion that these classes would all now be held to be validly chosen.

(e) *Thellusson v Woodford*, *supra*, *per* Lord ELDON, L C, at p 146, and see *ibid*, *per* MACDONALD, C B, at p 136.

(f) *Re Exmouth (Viscount), Exmouth (Viscount) v Praed*, *supra* (all the persons in existence at testator's death and afterwards attaining the title). *Re Moore, Prior v Moore*, [1901] 1 Ch 936 (all persons living at testatrix's death), see *Pownall v Graham* (1863), 33 Beav 242.

(g) *Gooch v Gooch* (1853), 3 De G M & G 366, 385 (testator's daughter's children, not necessarily born in his lifetime). In accordance with the rule (p 302, *ante*) they may be children *en ventre sa mère* at his death (*Thellusson v Woodford*, *supra*).

(h) *Cadell v Palmer* (1833), 1 Cl & Fin 372, 11 Lr, Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, p 160.

SEC. 1
Period
allowed for
Suspension
of Vesting.

Period for
 gestation.

Period where
 no lives are
 chosen

whom the interest is to vest (as in the case of an interest vesting on the majority of the absence (*v*)), or may be any other person, whether taking an interest in the property (*h*) or not (*l*).

650 The period is not an absolute period of twenty-one years and nine months, the addition of a period for gestation is only allowed where gestation exists (*m*)

651 The exact period of twenty-one years is the full extent of the perpetuity period in all cases where the lives of no persons are indicated for the purpose, accordingly, limitations vesting in persons possibly unborn at the end of a specific number of years more than twenty-one years from the date from which the instrument creating them operates, are invalid (*n*) In certain cases, however, where terms of years exceeding twenty-one years were settled in trust for persons in succession, whose interests under the trusts were valid with respect to the rule, provisions for recouping the beneficiaries in each case, at the end of the term, out of other property for the capital value lost by not selling the term of years, have been treated as valid (*o*)

(*v*) First so held in *Taylor d Smith v Biddall* (1678) 2 Mod Rep 289, a case doubted on another point (see *Dungannon (Lord) v Smith* (1816), 12 Cl & Fin 546, H L), followed in *Stephens v Stephens* (1736) Cas temp Talb 228 and see *Paullet v Dogget* (1688), 2 Vern 86, *Martin v Long* (1690), 2 Vern 151, *Thrustout d Small v Denny* (1750), 1 Wils 270 (see 2 Wils 337)

(*h*) *Wassensburgh v Ash* (1685), 1 Vern 234, 304, *Maddox v Staines* (1727), 2 P Wms 421, *Gulliver v Wickett* (1745), 1 Wils 105

(*l*) *Beard v Westcott* (1813), 5 Taunt 393 (where the person took an interest void under the rule). Thus vesting may take place when the unborn child of a living person attains majority (*Packer v Scott* (1864), 33 Beav 511 per ROMILLY, M R, at pp 512, 513), and the period prescribed by a will may extend until the youngest grandchild of the testator attains twenty one (*Shaw v Rhodes* (1836), 1 My & Cr 135, per BOSANQUIT, J at p 154) The inference has been drawn that such a person may be a child *en ventre sa mère* at the commencement of the twenty one years, see the Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, pp 39, 69, defining the rule (see note (*s*), p 302, *ante*), and that there may be three periods of gestation—that of the living person, of his child, who is to attain twenty one, and of the alienee The question arose, but was not decided in *Smith v Farr* (1838), 3 Y & C (ex) 328, see the opinions of Lewis (Law of Perpetuity, p 726 and Supplement, p 22) and Gray (Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 222) on this case According to *Cadell v Palmer* (1833) 1 Cl & Fin 372, H L, there may be, at all events two such periods of gestation

(*m*) *Cadell v Palmer*, *supra*

(*n*) *Palmer v Holford* (1828), 4 Russ 403, *Speakman v Speakman* (1850), 8 Hare, 180, and see *Crooke v De Vandes* (1805), 11 Ves 330, *Baker v Stuart* (1897), 28 Ontario Reports, 439 In *Luchlan v Reynolds* (1852), 9 Hare, 796, the gift was, on the construction adopted, restricted to lives in being In *Re Davison*, *Bowen v Churchill*, [1893] 3 Ch 421, where the beneficiaries under an invalid trust for sale, arising at the expiration of a lease with forty nine years unexpired, were certain named persons or their issue, the vesting took place within or at the end of lives in being

(*o*) *Re Gardiner*, *Gardiner v Smith*, [1901] 1 Ch 697 (provision for keeping on foot a policy of assurance), *Re Hurlbatt*, *Hurlbatt v Hurlbatt*, [1910] 2 Ch 553 (provision for a reserve fund), see *Wood v Drew* (1864), 33 Beav 610 (as to which see note (*o*), p 304, *ante*)

SECT. 2—Interests subject to the Rule.

SUB-SECT. 1—Kinds of Property

SECT. 2.
Interests
subject to
the Rule.

Property
subject to
the rule

652 The rule applies to all private property (*p*) the proprietary rights in which are governed directly by or by reference to the law of England (*g*), including property in colonies into which that law has been introduced (*c*)

Accordingly, real property, including freeholds, copyholds (*s*), and hereditaments, corporeal and incorporeal (*t*), and personal

(*p*) As to the question whether the rule against perpetuities extends to a Crown grant, and whether the Crown can generally, or in the interests of the public, annex to grants in fee conditions against alienation and other conditions which private persons are not competent to annex see *Cooper v Stuart* (1889), 14 App Cas 286, 290, P C, *Fowler v Fowler* (1866), 16 I Ch R 507 (where it was held that a grantee from the Crown does not by the grant acquire any particular privilege). *Flower v Harlopp* (1843) 6 Beav 476, 494, *Anon* (1506), Y B 21 Hen 7, fos 7, 8, *per* LAYTON, J., Bro Abi, tit Prerogative le Roy, pl 53, 102, Chitty, Prerogatives of the Crown, pp 386, note (h), 388, 2 Roll Abi, tit Prerogative le Roy, p 164, 6 Bac Abi, tit Prerogative (L), 3 *Rangimoeke v Strachan* (1895), 14 New Zealand Law Reports 477, *A G v Cummins* (1895), [1906] 1 I R 406. In *Thellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, 11 L., it was not disputed that the Crown was bound by the rule against perpetuities with regard to a possibly remote limitation of property to the Crown made by the will of a subject, see, generally, title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 496, 487.

(*q*) See title CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI pp 196 *et seq*. In *Raphael v Boehm*, (*Cockburn v Raphael* (1852), 22 L J (CH) 209, trusts declared by a testator domiciled abroad of his movable estate, with an express reference to the law of inheritance in Great Britain, were invalid by the rule. Provisions in a will infringing the rule against perpetuities, or the Thellusson Act (see p 370, *post*) are not rendered valid by execution of the will under the Domicile Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 121) (*Re Grassi*, *Stubberfield v Grassi*, [1905] 1 Ch 584, *per* BUCKLEY J., at p 592 referring to *Fieke v Carbery* (Lord) (1873), L R 16 Eq 461, a case under the Thellusson Act).

(*r*) *Yeap Cheah Neo v Ong Cheng Neo* (1875) L R 6 P C 381, approving *Choa Choon Neoh v Spottiswoode* (1669), Wood's Oriental Cases, Appendix, 1, 1 Kyshe's Reports, 216. As regards the applicability of the rule to an infant colony, see 1 Bl Com 107, *Cooper v Stuart* (1889), 14 App Cas 286, P C (a case of a Crown grant of public property in a young colony, to which the rule was, in the circumstances of that case, held inapplicable), and see title DEPENDENCIES AND COLONIES, Vol X, pp 565, 568.

(*s*) *Griffith v Harrison* (1791), 3 Bro C C 419, *Doe d Blesard v Simpson* (1842), 3 Man & G 929, *Blagden v Hancock* (1848), 16 Sim 371, *Taylor v Froisher* (1852), 5 De G & Sm 191, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 318.

(*t*) *Eg*, rights to minerals (*Thomas v Thomas* (1902), 87 L T 58, (C A), or to royalties thereon (*Edwards v Edwards*, [1909] A C 275), or to rents (*Harlopp v Carbery* (Lord) (1819), 1 Sanders, Uses and Trusts, 5th ed, p 205, an executory devise of a rent, see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 316, n). The question whether common law grants of incorporeal hereditaments (which may commence *in futuro*, see Gilbert, Rents, p 59, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, pp 598, 603) are subject to the rule has been frequently discussed. There was no limit fixed by the common law as to the time at which they might commence, see Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 29, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, pp 603, 619, 620. The decided preponderance of opinion, however, including that of the Real Property Commissioners (see 3rd Report, p 36), is in favour of the view that the limit fixed by the rule against perpetuities either

SECT. 2.
Interests
subject to
the Rule.

Lex loci situs

property (*a*), including chattels real and personal (*a*), are alike subject to the rule, in so far as interests of the nature hereinafter described (*b*) are created in them

653 The rule does not apply to immovable estate in Scotland or foreign countries, or to funds, bequeathed on trust to invest them in the purchase of immovable estates in Scotland or abroad, limited or to be settled in a manner valid by the law of the *lex loci situs*, although invalid by English law (*c*)

SUB SECT. 2 — *Equal Interests*

(1) *Real Estate*

Interests in
real estate

654 The following legal estates and interests in real estate (*d*) have been held to be subject to the rule —executory devises (*e*),

does or ought to apply, see Gray, *Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed, s 314. In *Ardley v St Pancras Guardians* (1870), 39 L J (CH) 871, however, objection on this ground seems to have been taken to an easement which would appear to have been invalid if the rule applied, the above mentioned passages from Lewis' *Law of Perpetuity*, and the *Real Property Commissioners'* 3rd Report, being cited in argument, but the easement was held validly created (see, however, Gray, *Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed, s 314). In *Gilbertson v Richards* (1860), 5 H & N 453, Ex Ch, a proviso that a rentcharge (which in that case appears to have been created by way of use) should arise as soon as mortgagees should enter on property was held valid on the ground that it took effect as a restriction on the estate of the mortgagees and was analogous to powers of sale, which are incidental to a mortgagee's estate, the *dutum* of *MARIN, B*, 5 C (1859), 4 H & N 277, at p 207, which was adopted and applied in *Birmingham Canal Co v Cartwright* (1879), 11 Ch D 421, 432, to the effect that a rent might be granted to arise in any contingency, however remote, if limited to an existing person capable of alienating it, being dissented from, and the latter case overruled, in *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, 572, 573, 584, 588, C A. *Sharpe v Durant* (1911), 55 Sol Jo 423, affirmed [1911] W N 158, C A, appears to be a decision that the rule applies to such interests but the decision is grounded only on the opinion of Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, pp 603, 619, 620. For the contrary view, see 27 *Law Quarterly Review*, p 151, as to the effect of the rule on the grant of an *interesse termini*, compare p 316, *post* as to common law assurances in general, see p 330, *post*, as to vested interests with postponed enjoyment, see p 338, *post*.

(*u*) The authorities as to the two kinds of property are treated as mutual "whenever you stop in the limitation of a fee upon a fee, there will we stop in the limitation of a term of years" (*Norfolk's (Duke) Case* (1685), 3 Cas in Ch 1, H L, *per* Lord NOTTINGHAM L C, at p 36), and compare the definition of a perpetuity in *Stanley v Leigh* (1732), 2 P Wms 686, *per* JENKINS, M R, at p 687, and the limits stated for personal estate in *Jee v Audley* (1787), 1 Cox, Eq Cas 324, Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, p 169.

(*a*) *Sheffield v Orery (Lord)* (1745), 3 Atk 282, *Jee v Audley*, *supra*.

(*b*) See the text, *infra*.

(*c*) *Fordyce v Bridges* (1847), 2 Ph 497, see, further, p 322, *post*.

(*d*) As to legal estates and interests in real estate, see, generally, title **REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL**, see also titles **SETTLEMENTS**, **TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES**, **WILLS**.

(*e*) Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, c x, see note (*l*), p 300, *ante*. The following are examples of executory devises which have been held valid —after a devise in fee simple, a devise over on a death without issue in the lifetime of a living person (*Fells v Brown* (1620), Cro Jac 590, *Roe d Sheers v Jeffery*

springing and shifting uses (f), legal contingent remainders (g); and certain rights of entry on breach of a condition subsequent (h)

655. The applicability of the rule to legal contingent remainders (s) has been the subject of much controversy (k). In any

SECT. 2.
Interests
subject to
the Rule.

Legal
contingent
remainders.

(1798), 7 Term Rep 589, Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, p 176), a devise to the eldest male lineal descendant of A living at the death of the survivor of all male descendants of the testator in being at the testator's death (*Thellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, 11 L.) or to the person who would have been entitled at the determination of a term expiring twenty years after the death of the survivor of twenty eight persons living at the testator's decease, had the estate been settled in a certain manner (*Cadell v Palmer* (1833), 1 Cl & Fin 372, H L.), a devise to the children of a living person, taking vested interests at birth or at an age under twenty-one (see p 345, *post*). The following, on the other hand, are examples of executory devises which have been held invalid—a devise to the first son of A who should be bred a clergyman (*Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)* (1794), 2 Hy Bl 358), to the children of a living person who should attain twenty two, or any other age greater than twenty one (*Bull v Pritchard* (1847), 5 Hare, 567, argued as an executory devise, see *Re Finch, Abbiss v Burney* (1881), 17 Ch D 211, C A, *per* MALINS, V C, at p 221), a devise in strict settlement, with a provision that no devisee should have a vested interest until the age of twenty four, so as to create an executory devise (*Re Wrightson, Battie Wrightson v Thomas*, [1904] 2 Ch 95, C A, explained in *White v Summers*, [1908] 2 Ch 256, 267, 269), a devise of unworked minerals under certain lands on being worked (*Thomas v Thomas* (1902), 87 L T 58, C A, see *Edwards v Edwards*, [1909] A C 275).

(f) *Darves v Speed* (1692), 2 Salk 675, *per* HOIT, C J, *Lloyd v Caren* (1697), Show Pail Cas 137, *Roe d Wilkinson v Tanner* (1757), 2 Wils 75, *Canwardine v Canwardine* (1758), 1 Fden, 27, 34, Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, p 149, *Blandford v Thackerell* (1793), 2 Ves 238, 241, 242, *Savill Brothers, Ltd v Bethell*, [1902] 2 Ch 523, C A. A shifting clause to take effect upon an estate in fee simple must be framed to do so within the proper limits (*Bennett v Bennett* (1864), 2 Drew & Sm 266, 276, Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 36).

(g) *Re Frost, Frost v Frost* (1889), 43 Ch D 246, *per* KAY, J, at p 251, *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, [1905] 1 Ch 535, and see *Whitby v Macnab*, [1906] 1 Ch 783, in each of these cases the remainder was created by will, or by way of use.

(h) See p 314, *post*.

(i) See note (g), *supra*.

(k) The majority of text writers, including Mr Fearn, considered that legal remainders were governed by the old rule against remote possibilities, also now known as the rule in *Whitby v Mitchell* (1890), 44 Ch D 85, C A, rather than by the modern rule against perpetuities, see 49 Sol Jo 414 (where a number of such opinions of text writers are collected). Others were of opinion that the modern rule applied or should be applied to them, and some even denied the existence of the old rule. *Whitby v Mitchell*, *supra*, has established that the old rule is in force and that it applies to legal remainders, *Re Frost, Frost v Frost*, *supra*, and *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, *supra*, have decided that the modern rule applies to them. The result of these authorities appears to be that legal remainders are subject to both rules. Professional opinion is, however, still divided on the subject, and the controversy has not been set at rest, see Farman on Wills, 6th ed, pp 368—373, and the notes thereto, Challis, Real Property, 3rd ed, p 273. As to the observations of SUGDEN, L C, in *Cole v Sewell* (1843), 4 Dr & War 1, to the effect that remoteness was out of the question in case of a remainder, see Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, Supplement, pp 97 *et seq*. Gray, *Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed, s 287, *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, *supra*, *per* FARWELL, J, at p 346.

SECT 2
Interests
subject to
the Rule

case, a legal contingent remainder, where the particular estate is limited to a person or persons in being, may be valid whatever the contingency on which it depends, though it might be invalid if limited as an executory devise (*l*) In such a case, the nature of a remainder affords a guarantee against remoteness, because the remainder, unless ready to take effect *eo instanti* on the determination of the particular estate, can never take effect at all as a remainder (*m*) As regards such a remainder limited by will, however, there is a doubt as to the effect thereon of the Land Transfer Act, 1897 (*n*)

By statute a legal contingent remainder, limited on a contingency not too remote under the rule, which would therefore be valid if limited as an executory devise, may take effect notwithstanding the determination of the particular estate before the contingent remainder vests (*o*)

Common law
conditions

656 Rights of entry by a grantor or his heirs (*p*), under or on breach of a common law condition subsequent, have been held to be subject to the rule, at all events in cases where the legal estate

(*l*) *Jack d Westby v Featherstone* (1829), 2 Hud & B 320, *Doe d Winter v Perratt* (1843), 9 Cl & Fin 606, H L., *Cole v Newell* (1848), 2 H. L. Cas 186, *Symes v Symes*, [1896] 1 Ch 272

(*m*) This rule does not apply if the determination of the particular estate is caused by forfeiture, surrender, or merger see Real Property Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 106), s 8, title REAL PROPERTY AND CHARTELS REAR

(*n*) 60 & 61 Vict c 65, ss 1, 2, see 49 Sol Jo 379 If the estate conferred by the Land Transfer Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 65), on personal representatives is sufficient to satisfy the feudal rule prohibiting abeyance of the seisin, and to prevent the application of the common law rule that a contingent remainder must be ready to take effect in possession *eo instanti* on the determination of the particular estate (as to which compare *Marshall v Gingell* (1882), 21 Ch D 790, 796, *Re Brooke, Brooke v Brooke*, [1891] 1 Ch 43), then it may be held that there is no reason against such a remainder in a will affected by the Land Transfer Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 65), taking effect according to the intention, although not ready to come into possession on the termination of prior estates Such, it has been decided, is the effect of similar enactments in other jurisdictions where the English common law is in force (*Re Beavis, Beavis v Beavis* (1906), 7 New South Wales State Reports, 66, *Re Campion*, [1908] South Australian Law Reports, 1) But it may result that there will be nothing to save such limitations from the objection, if any, of remoteness, compare *Re Finch, Abbiss v Bunney* (1881), 17 Ch D 211 (C A) It may, therefore, have to be decided whether an interest limited as a legal contingent remainder, on a contingency too remote under the rule, in a will of a testator dying on or after the 1st January, 1898, is void, notwithstanding that it is ready to come into possession on the termination of preceding life estates

(*o*) Contingent Remainders Act, 1877 (40 & 41 Vict c 33), s 1

(*p*) "The difference between a condition properly so called, and a conditional limitation or executory devise is that in the case of a condition, the estate is to revert to the grantor or his heirs, in the other cases it is limited over to other persons" (*Re Dugdale, Dugdale v Dugdale* (1888), 38 Ch D 176, per KAY, J., at p 179, *Fearne, Contingent Remainders*, p 15) In the case of conditional limitations and executory devises no difficulty arises in applying the rule against perpetuities Where a shifting use, not a right of entry, is adopted, the rule directly applies (*Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report*, p 37, see note (*f*), p 313, *ante*).

SECT. 2.
Interests
subject to
the Rule.

to be defeated by the right arises either in a will or by virtue of the Statute of Uses (q), but the question has occasioned much difference of opinion (r) Rights of entry or of re-entry in leases,

(q) 27 Hen 8, c 10, see *Re Macleay* (1875), L R 20 Eq 186 187, 188 (devise on condition not to sell out of the family), *Dunn v Flood* (1883), 25 Ch D 629, per NORTH, J., at pp 632, 633 (a right of entry on breach of restrictive covenant) and see S C (1885), 28 Ch D 586, C A, per BAGGALLAY, L J, at p 592 *Re Hollis' Hospital (Trustees) and Hague's Contract*, [1899] 2 Ch 540, 557, 555 (proviso for reverter on premises being employed or converted to uses other than those mentioned in the deed of lease and release), approved in *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth* [1905] 1 Ch 535, 545, 546, and applied in *Re Da Costa, Clarke v Church of England Collegiate School of St Peter*, [1912] 1 Ch 337 (devise construed to be an absolute gift, with condition as to publishing annual accounts of payments and receipts of a charity) It cannot be affirmed, however, that the question of the applicability of the rule against perpetuities to common law conditions has been finally discussed or settled in all its bearings It has been pointed out that the references to the subject in *Re Macleay, supra*, and *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth, supra*, were dicta According to the report in *Dunn v Flood* (1883), 25 Ch D 629, the power of entry was created by covenant only and in favour of the vendors, without mentioning their heirs and assigns In *Re Hollis' Hospital (Trustees) and Hague's Contract, supra*, BYRNE, J., while expressing a decided opinion that the condition was void, abstained from forcing the title on an unwilling purchaser the gift in question was to a charity, and was decided on the law of charities before the Charitable Uses Act, 1736 (9 Geo 2, c 36) As to the present law, see the Mortmain and Charitable Uses Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 42), s 4 (4) *Re Da Costa, Clarke v Church of England Collegiate School of St Peter, supra*, seems the only case where the heir of the grantor, or persons claiming through the grantor, were represented The reasoning (following that of the Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 30) of PATTIS, C B, in *A G v Cummins* (1895), [1906] 1 L R 406 (which was a case of a condition determining a determinable fee, upon payment of a sum of money by the Crown, in a grant operating at common law, independently of the Statute of Uses), does not seem to be altogether consistent with the cases above referred to It is submitted that the decision in *A G v Cummins, supra*, can stand consistently with those cases If there be such an estate as a determinable fee, it would appear to follow that there may be a valid condition determining the fee at an indefinite future time In America, conditions violating the rule against perpetuities have been frequently upheld In *Cooper v Stuart* (1889), 14 App Cas 286, 287, P C, the question was raised, but was not decided apart from the circumstances of that case, where the grant was a Crown grant in a young colony (see note (r), p 311, ante, see also Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, ss 305 312) The trend of modern authority is, however, decidedly in favour of applying the rule to common law conditions subsequent, and Mr Gray has expressed the opinion that "rights of entry for conditions broken are within both the letter and the spirit of the rule" (Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 304)

(r) The Real Property Commissioners (see 3rd Report, p 30) instanced a devise on condition of taking and continuing "name and arms," and reported that such rights, having been uninfluenced by the Statute of Uses, 27 Hen 8, c 10, or by the doctrine of trusts or devises, had never been considered to be subject to the rule They appear to have recommended that the rule should be applied to them by legislation The text-writers are divided on the subject—1 Sanders, Uses and Trusts, p 199, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 616, and Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 300 a, favour their inclusion, while others, including Challis, Real Property, 3rd ed, p 187, Sweet (note to Challis, Real Property, 3rd ed, p 207, and Jarman on Wills, 6th ed, pp 374—376, consider the rule inapplicable, and the dicta and decisions cited in note (q) *supra*, erroneous

SECT 2
Interests
subject to
the Rule.

necessarily incidental to and co-extensive with estates which are themselves unaffected by the rule, must be excepted from the rule (s)

(u) *Personal Estate*

Executory
bequests

657 Executory limitations of personal estate are subject to the rule (t)

Interests
termini

658 The *interesse termini*, created by the grant to a living person of a lease to commence at a fixed or ascertainable date *in futuro*, appears to be treated as a valid interest, although the date of commencement of the lease is fixed at a time too remote if the rule were applicable (a)

Future goods

659 The rule against perpetuities has also never been applied to assignments of future goods, the property in which at law passes on appropriation, which may take place at a possibly remote period (b) a present sale of such goods operates merely as an agreement for sale (c)

(s) See p 331, *post*

(t) *Maddox v Staines* (1727), 2 P Wms 422, *Brooks v Taylor* (1729), Mos 188, *Beauclerk v Dormer* (1742), 2 Atk 308, *Sheffield v Orreiry (Lord)* (1745), 3 Atk 282, 287, *Buttenfield v Buttenfield* (1748), 1 Ves Sen 133, 154, *Griffiths v Grueve* (1819), 1 Jac & W 31, *Lepine v Ferard* (1831), 2 Russ & M 378, *A G v Bright* (1836), 2 Keen, 57 The rule was established as to personal property with reference to bequests of future interests in terms of years (*Sanders v Cornish* (1631, Cro Car 230, *Lamb v Archer* (1694), 1 Salk 225, not following *Child v Baylis* (1618), Cro Jac 459, *Fletcher's Case* (1709), 1 Eq Cas Abr 193), and see 1 Eq Cas Abr 190, n. As regards the creation of future interests in chattels personal by will, see title WILLS, Jarman on Wills, 6th ed., pp 1453 *et seq*. As regards the creation of future interests in chattels personal by deed, see title PERSONAL PROPERTY, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., Appendix F, s 820

(a) *Smith v Day* (1834), 2 M & W 684, *Knight v City of London Brewery Co*, [1912] 1 K B 10, although in neither of these cases was any question of perpetuity raised. Such interests appear to be treated as vested interests, to which the rule does not apply, see *Redington v Browne* (1893), 32 L R Ir 347, *per Brindle, J*, at p 356. In *Norfolk's Case (Duke)* (1685), 3 Cas in Ch 1, II L, both PEMBERTON, C.J. (*ibid* at p 23), and Lord Keeper NORRIS (S C (1683) 1 Vern 164), considered that a new term might have been created, valid both at law and in equity, to commence on the contingency which, in that case, as applied to the trust of an existing term, they considered too remote, compare *Warman v Seaman* (1675), Poll 112 (term created after the death of the lessor and of any wife of his). 1 Sanders, Uses and Trusts, p 199, the Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 29, and Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, pp 613, 620 advocated the application of the rule to these interests. There must at common law be no uncertainty as to when the term commences or whether or not it shall commence at all (*Green v Edwards* (1591) Cro Eliz 216), and see, generally, title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, p 405

(b) See Sale of Goods Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 71), s 5, *Clements v Matthews* (1883), 11 Q B D 808, C A. Until appropriation, the grantee has only an equitable interest (*Joseph v Lyons* (1884), 15 Q B D 280, C A; *Hallas v Robinson* (1885), 15 Q B D 288, C A), see, further, title SALE OF GOODS

(c) Sale of Goods Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 71), s 5 (3),

SUB-SECT 3—*Equitable Interests*

SECT 3

Interests subject to the Rule.

660 Equitable estates and interests (*d*) of all descriptions, including contingent remainders of equitable estates (*e*), are subject to the rule. The mode in which the estate or interest is created, whether by devise, gift *inter vivos*, or contract, is immaterial (*f*)

Equitable interests generally.
Executory trusts.

661 Executory trusts are subject to the rule in common with other trusts (*g*), but they are executed by the court in such a way as to preclude the objection arising from the rule and moulded so as to carry out the intention of the testator as far as the rules of law admit (*h*). Any provisions which offend against the rule are omitted (*i*), modified (*l*), or confined within the perpetuity period (*l*), unless the creator of the trust has specifically or by necessary implication directed their inclusion (*m*), or the trust is wholly incapable of being executed so as to avoid the objection (*n*)

(Construction)

662 Where property is settled or directed to be settled in a particular course of succession, as far as the rules of law will admit (*o*), or with any other qualifying words to the like effect, then, according to the intention shown, the qualification may refer either to the quality of the property, to which the course of succession may be inapt (as in the case of personal property settled to follow real estate)—this being the ordinary sense of the words in such a case (*p*)—or to the length of time that the property is to be tied up, having regard to the rule against perpetuities

Construction of qualifying words in executory trusts.

In the first case, no executory trust is necessarily created, nor

(*d*) *Massenburgh v Ash* (1685), 1 Vern 234, 304, *Norfolk's (Duke) Case* (1685), 3 Cas in Ch 1, II L., *Dungannon (Lord) v Smith* (1816), 12 Cl & Fin 546, II L.

(*e*) *Re Finch, Abbess v Burney* (1881), 17 Ch D 211, C A., *Re Wilmer's Trusts, Moore v Wingfield*, [1903] 1 Ch 874, 879 affirmed, [1903] 2 Ch 411, C A., *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, [1905] 1 Ch 535

(*f*) *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, C A., per JESSET, M R., at p 581, C A.

(*g*) *Gower v Gioracchi* (1740), 5 Madd 337, *Me Thorough (Duke) v Godolphin (Earl)* (1759), 1 Eden, 404, 422, *Blackburn v Stables* (1814), 2 Ves & B 367, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 574

(*h*) *Christie v Gosling* (1866), L R 1 H L 279, 290

(*i*) *Miles v Hanford* (1879), 12 Ch D 691

(*k*) *Dorchester (Lord) v Effingham (Earl)* (1843), 10 Sim 537, n., *Holmore v Burrows* (1827), 1 Sim 512

(*l*) *Newcastle (Duke) v Lincoln (Countess)* (1797), 3 Ves 387 on appeal (1806), 12 Ves 218, II L., *Banks v Le Despencer (Baroness)* (1840), 10 Sim 576 (for the order, see S C (1843), 11 Sim 708, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity Appendix III), *Lyddon v Ellison* (1854), 19 Beav 565, *Shelley v Shelley* (1868), L R 6 Eq 540

(*m*) *Sackville-West v Holmesdale (Viscount)* (1870), L R 4 H L 511

(*n*) *Tregonwell v Sydenham* (1815), 3 Dow, 194, H L. (where a term was validly created, but the trusts declared of the term were incapable of execution, and there was a resulting trust to the heir, see Sugden, Property, p 326, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 419, on this case), Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 584

(*o*) As to such words, see also note (*m*), p 308, ante

(*p*) *Vaughan v Burslem* (1790), 3 Bro CC 101, *Lincoln (Countess) v Newcastle (Duke)* (1806), 12 Ves 218, H L., *Gosling v Gosling* (1862), 1 De G J & Sm 1, affirmed *sub nom Christie v Gosling* (1866), L R 1 H L 279; and see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., ss 364, 365.

SECT 2
Interests
subject to
the Rule

are the interests deemed to be settled to the limits of time allowed by the rule (q)

In the second case, if the intention is that the property is to be tied up as long as possible, then an executory trust may be created, but such trust must be executed by prolonging the settlement, not to the furthest limit possible in any event under the rules, but to that convenient limit which will enable the primary purpose of the instrument to be carried out (r). In such a case the court inclines to give life interests only to all persons, becoming entitled under the limitations, who are in existence at the date of the instrument, or the death of the testator, creating the limitations (s).

Trusts for
sale

663 A trust for sale arising at a time beyond the perpetuity period is invalid (t), but, where the trust for sale is mere machinery for facilitating a division between the persons for whom the property is destined, effect will be given to the equitable interests as if the trust for sale were omitted (a). Where, therefore, the vesting of these equitable interests is within the perpetuity period, they are not rendered invalid by the failure of the trust for sale (b), but devolve as if the property were unaffected by the trust for sale (c) but where the vesting of these equitable interests may not be within the perpetuity period, they are invalid (d).

On the other hand, an estate in trustees may be validly created although the beneficial interests are void for remoteness (e).

(q) See the cases cited in note (p), p. 317, ante. *Dechmont (Lord) v. St Albans (Duke)* (1820), 5 Madd 232 (where, however, the order made was reversed on appeal), *Tollemache (Lady) v. Coventry (Earl and Countess)* (1834), 2 Cl & Fin 611 II L. (see the argument in *Tollemache (Lady) v. Coventry (Earl and Countess)*, *supra*, of Sir C. PIRYS, S. G., and Mr. PIRSON, which is referred to in *Re Hill, Hill v. Hill*, [1902] 1 Ch 807, 813 814 C. A., as containing the *ratio decidendi* of the decision in *Tollemache (Lady) v. Coventry (Earl and Countess)*, *supra*), *Gosling v. Gosling* (1862) 1 De G. J. & Sm. J. 14. *Gower v. Grosvenor* (1740) 5 Madd 337, and *Trafford v. Trafford* (1746), 3 Atk 347, are not law on this point, see further REAL PROPERTY AND CHARITIES RELAT.

(r) *a) Lincoln (Countess) v. Newcastle (Duke)* (1806), 12 Ves 218, 236 II L., per Lord ELDON dissenting, *Williams v. Teale* (1847), 6 Harc, 239, *Shelley v. Shelley* (1868), L. R. 6 Eq 540.

(s) *Woolmore v. Lunnors* (1827), 1 Sim 519 per HART, V. C., at p. 526, adopted in *Banks v. Le Despencer (Baroness)* (1840), 10 Sim 576, 591, 594 per SHADWELL, V. C. *Williams v. Teale* (1847), 6 Harc, 239, 255, and see *Pounall v. Graham* (1863), 33 Beav 242.

(t) *Hale v. Pew* (1859), 25 Beav 335, *Re Wood, Tullet v. Colville*, [1894] 3 Ch 381, C. A., *Re Davies and Kent's Contract*, [1910] 2 Ch 35, C. A., *Re Bewick, Ryle v. Ryle*, [1911] 1 Ch 116.

(u) *Goodier v. Edmunds*, [1893] 3 Ch 455 following *Goodier v. Johnson* (1881) 18 Ch D 441, C. A., per JESSEL, M. R., at p. 446, followed in *Re Davenport, Bowen v. Churchill*, [1893] 3 Ch 421, and approved in *Re Appleby, Walker v. Lever, Walker v. Nisbet*, [1903] 1 Ch 565, C. A.

(v) *Goodier v. Edmunds*, *supra*, *Re Davenport, Bowen v. Churchill*, *supra*, *Re Appleby, Walker v. Lever, Walker v. Nisbet*, *supra*.

(w) *Goodier v. Edmunds*, *supra*, *Re Appleby, Walker v. Lever, Walker v. Nisbet*, *supra*.

(x) As in case of a gift to a class living or ascertainable at the time of sale (*Read v. Gooding* (1856), 21 Beav 478, *Blight v. Hartnoll* (1881), 19 Ch D 294, *Re Bewick, Ryle v. Ryle*, [1911] 1 Ch 116).

(y) *Tregonwell v. Sydenham* (1815), 3 Dow, 194, H. L., *Newman v.*

SECT. 2.
Interests
subject to
the Rule.

Trusts of
 indefinite
 duration.

664 The rule does not affect validly created trusts lasting a possibly indefinite period where the interests are vested and the beneficiaries may therefore, apart from disability, put an end to the trust (*j*), but an indefinite trust where the interests may not be vested within the perpetuity period, and the trust is therefore not so determinable, does not escape the rule (*q*)

A discretionary trust, therefore, of the income of a fund for the maintenance of a class of persons, some unborn, which may possibly last longer than the perpetuity period, is void (*h*). On the other hand, a trust of income, not discretionary, for the maintenance of the children of a living person, in equal shares, where the interest of each child is fixed, is not void, even although the trust may terminate after the perpetuity period (*i*)

SUBSECT. 4 — Interests under Contracts

665 The rule against perpetuities is not concerned with contracts as such, or with contractual rights and obligations as such. A contract to pay a sum of money, with interest in the meantime although unlimited in point of time is not, on that account, invalid (*h*). A contract may have reference to or be

Contracts in
 general

Newman (1839), 10 Sim 51, in both of which cases the beneficial interest went to the heir at law

(*j*) See pp 326, 327, *post*, and see title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES

(*g*) *Mainwaring v Barter* (1800), 5 Ves 458 (restraining disentail), *Thomson v Shakespear* (1860), 1 De G F & J 399, C A (to an officer for the time being), *Smith v Cunningham* (1884), 13 L R Ir 480, *Trustees, Executors, and Agency Co v Bush* (1908) 28 New Zealand Law Reports, 117, *Grand Trust Co v Russell* (1910), 179 Federal Reporter 446, and see p 297, *ante*, and as to limitations to a series, see p 347, *post*. As to gifts to the survivors of a class of unborn persons, see p 337, *post*

(*h*) *Re Blew, Blew v Gunner*, [1906] 1 Ch 624, not following *Re Wise, Jackson v Parrott*, [1896] 1 Ch 281, and *Re Watson, Cor v Watson*, [1892] W N 192. In *Longfield v Bantry* (1885), 13 L R Ir 101, a trust of a residue to apply the income on improvement of two estates at discretion was held to be confined to a reasonable time

(*i*) *Gooding v Read* (1853), 4 De G M & G 510, C A, explained and distinguished in *Re Blew, Blew v Gunner*, *supra*, see also *Patching v Barnett* (1881), 51 L J (Ch) 74, C A. In *Re O'Brien's Estate, Prytz v Trustees, Executors and Agency Co, Ltd* (1898), 24 Victorian Law Reports, 360, the same rule was applied, the shares of the children being fixed, but discretion being given as to the part of the share applied for maintenance. In *Pidford v Brown, Brown v Brown* (1876), 2 K & J 426, the discretionary trust was treated as a part of the void gift to the class and therefore itself void

(*h*) *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, 576, 580, C A, *Walsh v Secretary of State for India* (1863), 10 H L Cas 376, *Wilham v Vane* (1883), Challis, Real Property, Appendix V, II L, and as to a covenant to pay a sum of money on an indefinite failure of issue of a person, see *Pinbury v Elkin* (1719), 1 P Wms 563, *per PARKER, L C*, at p 566, *Pleydell v Pleydell* (1721), 1 P Wms 749, 750. A mere personal contract relating to land would not be enforceable against an assignee of the land unless it ran in equity with the land under the doctrine of *Tulk v Moxhay* (1848), 2 Ph 774, see p 299, *ante*, *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm*, *supra*, at p 582. Contracts running with the land in equity are an exception to the rule, either on the analogy of a covenant running with the land at law or of an easement (*ibid*, at

§ 172
Interests
subject to
the Rule

Contract
creating
limitations
of property

connected with land, for example, an ordinary contract for the sale or purchase of land, and yet, although unlimited in point of time, may be a mere personal contract unaffected by the rule (l)

666 But when a contract creates a right of property to arise *in futuro*, or in other words a limitation of property, the rule applies (m). What the rule applies to is not the contract, which in itself is not illegal, but the right of property or limitation which arises from the contract (n). An equitable estate or interest to arise *in futuro*, under a contract is also within the rule (o). Although a contract is not within the rule, a transfer of a contract may be within it (p).

Construction
of contract

A contract relating to a right of or equitable interest in property *in futuro* may be intended to create a limitation of land only, in which case if the limitation is to take effect beyond the perpetuity period, the contract is wholly void and unenforceable (q), or the contract may, upon its true construction, be a personal contract only, in which case the rule does not apply to it (r), or it may, upon its true construction, be, as regards the original covenantor, both a personal contract and a contract attempting to create a remote limitation, in which case the limitation will be bad for perpetuity, but the personal contract will be enforceable, if the case otherwise admits, against the promisor by specific performance or by damages (s), or against his personal representatives in damages only (t). In all cases it is a question of construction whether the contract is intended to create a limitation of property only, or a personal obligation only, or both.

Options to
purchase

667 A common example of an equitable interest to arise *in futuro* under a contract is an option to purchase or a right of pre-emption or repurchase in or collateral to a conveyance or to a lease for a term of more than twenty-one years (u). On the other hand,

(l) 583. As to covenants running with the land at law, see p. 300, *ante* p. 123, *post*. As to restrictive covenants binding the land, see p. 299, *ante*.

(l) *South Eastern Railway v Associated Portland Cement Manufacturers (1900), Ltd.*, [1910] 1 Ch. 12, C.A., per FARWELL, L.J., at p. 33. compare *Re Doyle's Estate*, [1907] 11 R. 204, 211.

(m) *South Eastern Railway v Associated Portland Cement Manufacturers (1900) Ltd.*, *supra*, at pp. 33, 34; *London and South Western Rail Co v. Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch. D. 562, per JESSE, M.R., at p. 582.

(n) *Worthing Corporation v Heather* [1906] 2 Ch. 532, 538, 539.

(o) *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm*, *supra*, per JESSE, M.R., at p. 581.

(p) See GRAY, *Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed., s. 329, n.

(q) *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm*, *supra*, at p. 580, see *Slancher Brothers v Duty* (1907), 123 American State Reports, 490.

(r) *Stocker v Dean* (1852), 16 Beav. 161, compare *Re Cousins Alexander v Cross* (1885), 30 Ch. D. 203, C.A. (devise, giving an option of purchase on death of annuitants).

(s) *South Eastern Railway v Associated Portland Cement Manufacturers (1900), Ltd.*, *supra*, at p. 33.

(t) *Worthing Corporation v Heather*, *supra*.

(u) *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm*, *supra*; *Worthing Corporation v Heather*, *supra*; *Woodall v Clifton*, [1905] 2 Ch. 257 C.A., and see titles LANDLORD AND TENANT Vol. XVIII, p. 301, SALE OF

such an option, confined to the lives of the parties and not more than twenty-one years after, is valid (a), it is not sufficient, however, to confine it to the period of continuance of a strict settlement, which may last an indefinite period (b). An option taken by a railway company may be valid if limited to the period within which the company has authority to take land (c).

SECT. 2
Interests
subject to
the Rule.

668 An option to arise on any intended sale or other particular kind of alienation by the owner, *e.g.*, a right of pre-emption or first refusal, is subject to the rules (d), and, to bind the land or property, must comply with it, unless the right is conferred by statute (e). It may be entirely void, even where limited to a proper period, if intended merely as a total check on alienation by the owner (f).

Rights of
pre-emption

669 The same rule applies to covenants to reconvey (g) and provisoes for repurchase (h), but not where such a covenant or proviso does not express the true nature of the transaction, as where the instrument is really a lease (i) or mortgage (l).

Rights of
repurchase

670 Such covenants or contracts to grant or renew leases (j) of land as do not run with the land are subject to the rule and

Covenants for
grant or
renewal of
leases

LAND. In *Re Adams and Kensington Vestry* (1884), 27 Ch D 394, C A, the option had been exercised without question.

(a) *Lloyd v New* (1697), Prec Ch 72, II L., *Marks v Marks* (1718), 10 Mod Rep 419.

(b) *Trevelyan v Trevelyan* (1885), 53 L T 853.

(c) *Kemp v South Eastern Rail Co* (1872) 7 Ch App 364, *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562 585 C A, and see title COMPULSORY PURCHASE OF LAND AND COMPENSATION Vol VI, pp 59, 63 *et seq*.

(d) *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm supra*, overruling *Birmingham Canal Co v Cartwright* (1879), 11 Ch D 421. In *Manchester Ship Canal Co v Manchester Racecourse Co*, [1901] 2 Ch 37, C A, however, the Court of Appeal held that an agreement conferring such a right did not create an interest in the land in that case. *Collier v Liddsom* (1815), 6 Taunt 224, was an action for damages on a covenant giving such an option in a lease for twenty-eight years.

(e) The statutory right conferred by the Lands Clauses Consolidation Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 18), s 128, is unlimited. see title COMPULSORY PURCHASE OF LAND AND COMPENSATION, Vol VI p 28, *Manchester Ship Canal Co v Manchester Racecourse Co*, [1900] 2 Ch 352, affirmed [1901] 2 Ch 37, C A.

(f) *Re Rosher, Rosher v Rosher* (1884), 26 Ch D 801, compare *Re Dugdale, Dugdale v Dugdale* (1888), 38 Ch D 176, and see title GIFTS, Vol XV, pp 422, 423.

(g) *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm, supra*, *Trevelyan v Trevelyan, supra*.

(h) *Re Tyrrell's Estate*, [1907] 1 I R 292, C A, overruling *Switzer & Co v Rochford*, [1906] 1 I R 399, see *Re Donoughmore's (Earl) Estate*, [1911] 1 I R 211 (redemption of rentcharges), *Northumberland (Duke) v Percy*, [1893] 1 Ch 298 (where the power to redeem was in fact severable).

(i) *District Land Registrar v Kauri Timber Co* (1902), 22 New Zealand Law Reports, 260, C A.

(k) As to mortgages, see p 362, *post*, and see title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, pp 72, 139, and, as to sinking funds, see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, c XVI.

(l) See *Muller v Trafford*, [1901] 1 Ch 54, 61, title LANDLORD AND

SECT 2
Interests
subject to
the Rule

Articles of a
company

therefore, if the grant is to be at a remote period, or the term of the lease cannot be ascertained until a remote period, the interest in the land created by the covenant is void (*m*)

671 The articles of association of a company under the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (*n*), take effect by way of contract between the members, and, accordingly, provisions in such articles restricting transfers of shares and enabling the directors to call for a transfer from a shareholder (*o*), or subjecting the shares of any shareholder to a lien for debts due to the company to arise at any time while he is registered as shareholder (*p*), are valid

SUB-SECT 5—Possible Extensions of the Rule

Application
to other
interests

672 As to the application of the rule to other interests, or in new cases and circumstances, it has been said that the range of interests to which the rule applies may be extended from time to time as the necessity arises (*q*), and that the court proceeds on the principle that the rule is to be applied where no other sufficient protection against remoteness is attainable (*r*)

SECT 3—Interests to which the Rule does not Apply

SUB-SECT 1—Present Interests and Vested Future Interests

Present
perpetual
interests

673 Certain perpetual interests are sometimes described as exceptions to the rule against perpetuities, it is perhaps more correct to say that, when they are created *in presenti*, the rule has no application to them (*s*)

Examples of such interests are—easements and *profits à prendre* (*t*), rentcharges and other similar interests in land lasting indefinitely and all remedies to enforce them (*t*), covenants and

— — — — —
TENANT, Vol XVIII, p 463 and, as to covenants running with the land see note (*n*), p 323, *post*

(*m*) *Hope v Gloucester Corporation* (1805), 7 De G M & G 647, C A, *Redington v Browne* (1893), 32 L R Ir 347, see *A G v Greenhall* (1863) 33 Beav 193, *A G v Catherine Hall (Master etc)* (1820), Jac 381, 395 (a devise, with a condition that the rent should remain unaltered) As to the *interesse termini* on an actual grant to a living person, see p 316, *ante*

(*n*) 8 Edw 7, c 69, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 1 *et seq* As to debentures, see p 364, *post*

(*o*) *Borland's Trustee v Steel Brothers & Co, Ltd*, [1901] 1 Ch 279, compare *A-G v Jameson*, [1904] 2 I R 644, 669, 679, 691, [1905] 2 I R 218, 225, 235, C A

(*p*) See *New London and Brazilian Bank v Brocklebank* (1882), 21 Ch D 302, C A, *Bradford Banking Co v Briggs* (1886), 12 App Cas 29, compare *Reardon v Provincial Bank of Ireland*, [1896] 1 I R 532

(*q*) See *Re Hollis' Hospital (Trustees) and Hague's Contract*, [1899] 2 Ch 540, *per* BYRNE, J, at p 552 (common law condition)

(*r*) *Re Ashforth, Sibby v Ashforth*, [1905] 1 Ch 535, *per* FARWELL, J, at p 545 (legal contingent remainder), see Challis, *Real Property* 3rd ed, pp 207—217, Jarman on Wills, 6th ed, pp 375—376, where the cases in this note and note (*q*), *supra*, are criticised, compare *A-G v Cummins* (1895), [1906] 1 I R 406

(*s*) As to exceptions arising from the *lex loci situs*, see p 312, *ante*

(*t*) As to these interests, see p 299, *ante*.

conditions binding land at law (*u*) or in equity (*v*), customary rights (*w*), charities (*x*), and interests held by corporations (*y*)

SECT 3
Interests
to which the
Rule does
not Apply.

674 All vested (*a*) interests are also outside the rule, even where they come into possession at any time *in futuro* (*b*)

Vested
interests

SUB-SECT 2 —*Certain Destructible Interests.*

(1) *In General*

675 Certain estates or interests which would otherwise be too remote are not considered as such, on account of their destructibility at the will of the owner of another estate to whom the right to destroy them is given by operation of law (*c*)

Destructible
interests
generally

The mere fact of destructibility by the owner himself is not sufficient to prevent an estate or interest from being too remote (*d*), a right in a living person to an interest which may vest at a time beyond the legal limit is not made valid by the fact that the person in whose favour it is made may release it (*e*)

(u) *Limitations Defeasible by Descent*

676 Limitations taking effect on the determination or in

Limitations
not con-
sidered too
remote

(u) *Muller v Trafford*, [1901] 1 Ch 54, 60 see p 300, *ante*. The exception is statutory, see stat (1540) 32 Hen 8, c 34. In a lease, therefore, conditions as between landlord and tenant in defeasance of the term are not invalid under the rule (*Re Tyrrell's Estate*, [1907] 1 I R 292, C A, per WALKER, L C, at p 298). As to the remarks of BULLER, J, in *Roe d Hunter v Galliers* (1787), 2 Term Rep 133, in reference to covenants against assignment, see Challis, Real Property, 3rd ed., p 186. Covenants for the renewal of a lease to the tenant for the time being are valid under the rule (*Pollock v Booth* (1875), 9 I R Eq 229, 607, C A, *Hare v Burgess* (1857), 4 K & J 45, per PAGE WOOD, V-C, at p 57, see *Re Tyrrell's Estate*, *supra*, *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, 579, C A, *Bridges v Hitchcock* (1715), 5 Bro Pail Cas 6). The fact that the covenant is for renewal on notice only does not appear to affect the present character of the right, but see 42 Sol Jo 628. The court, however, leans against perpetual renewal unless the covenant is clear, see title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 458, 461, 463. As to invalid covenants for renewal or grant of leases, see p 321, *ante*.

(v) See p 299, *ante*.

(w) See p 300, *ante*. As to future gifts to charities, see p 329, *post*.

(a) As to the meaning of "vested," see p 304, *ante*.

(b) *E q*, vested remainders and reversions. As to these interests, see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL.

(c) Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 164, defining perpetuity (see p 301, *ante*), explained in *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, [1905] 1 Ch 535, per FARWELL, J, at p 544, by reference to remainders after an estate tail. As to mortgages, see, further, p 362, *post*.

(d) *Cochrane v Cochrane* (1883), 11 L R Ir 361, 368.

(e) *Re Hargreaves, Midgley v Tatley* (1890), 43 Ch D 401, C A, and see *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm*, *supra*, per KAY, J, at p 572, Sanders on Uses and Trusts, 5th ed., p 503. *Averin v Lloyd* (1868), L R 5 Eq 383, and *Birmingham Canal Co v Cartwright* (1879), 11 Ch D 421, must be considered overruled, as must also the remarks of Lord BROCKHAM, L C, in *Keppell v Bailey* (1834), 2 My & K 517, at p 527, in so far as they depend on the contrary principle, compare Challis Real Property, 3rd ed., p 184.

Sect 3
Interests
to which the
Rule does
not Apply

Limitations
 taking effect
 on deter-
 mination of
 estate tail

Limitations
 in defeasance
 of estate tail

Application
 of exception
 to rule

defeasance of an estate tail, itself validly created, are not considered too remote, because of the right of the tenant in tail at common law, and now by statute, to destroy such limitations by barring the entail (*j*)

Accordingly, a charge of a specific sum (*g*), a power of appointment (*h*), and a term of years to secure contingent legacies (*i*), to arise, upon the contingency of failure of issue in tail, in favour of persons ascertainable on or before such failure of issue, are valid, and similarly a gift may be made to a class of issue to be ascertained at the determination of the estate tail, whether the gift is direct, or is to a trustee for the class, or upon trust to sell and divide the produce among the class (*h*)

Limitations in defeasance of an estate tail, which in their nature must take effect during the continuance of the estate tail, need not be confined to any limit of time names and arms clauses and shifting clauses operating on the succession to family estates are valid though extended to all the issue in tail (*l*)

The exception, however, only applies to such limitations as can be barred by a tenant in tail, estates and interests prior to the estate tail and estates not arising on the determination or in

(*f*) *Nicolls v Sheffield* (1787), 2 Bro C C 215, *Hensman v Pearce* (1871), 7 Ch App 275, *Van Grullen v Foxwell*, *Foxwell v Van Grullen*, [1897] A C 658, *per* Lord MACNAGHTEN, at p 679, *Lewis*, Law of Perpetuity, p 664, and see *Jack d Westby v Fetherstone* (1829), 2 Hud & B 320, *Cole v Sewell* (1848), 2 H L Cas 186 (where limitations in general default of issue took effect as contingent remainders after estates tail and were not too remote) The variable nature of estates tail renders them free from objection notwithstanding the possible infancy of tenants in tail (*Re Stamford and Warrington* (Earl), *Payne v Grey*, [1912] 1 Ch 343, 355, 366, C A) As to estates tail, see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELAIN REAL

(*g*) *Faulkner v Daniel* (1843) 3 Hare, 199

(*h*) *Bandon* (Earl) *v Moreland*, [1910] 11 R 220, 227

(*i*) *Maise v Ormonde* (Marquis) (1820), 5 Madd 99, *Goodwin v Clark* (1661) 1 Lev 35 *sub nom Goodwin v Clark* (1663), 1 Sid 102

(*h*) *Hensman v Pearce* (1871), 7 Ch App 275, where JAMES, L J, said, at pp 282, 283 "No limitation after estates tail is too remote, and it appears to us clear that whether the limitation be directly to a class of issue to be ascertained at the determination of the estate tail, or a gift to a trustee for such class, or upon trust to convey to such class, or to sell and to divide the proceeds amongst such class, is wholly immaterial, if the legal and beneficial interests should be both ascertainable at the moment of the determination of the estate tail" and see *Doe d Winter v Perratt* (1843), 9 Cl & Fin 606, H L, *Goodwin v Edmunds*, [1803] 3 Ch 455, *per* STIRLING, J, at p 462, *Re Haygarth*, *Wickham v Holmes*, [1912] 1 Ch 510, 518

(*l*) *St George v St George* (1767), Gilbert on Uses and Trusts (by Sugden), p 157, H L, *Nicolls v Sheffield* (1787), 2 Bro C C 215, *Doe d Heneage v Heneage* (1790), 4 Term Rep 13, *Carr v Erroll* (Earl) (1805), 6 Last, 58, *Harrison v Round* (1852), 2 De G M & G 190, 201, *Re Stamford and Warrington* (Earl), *Payne v Grey*, *supra*, *per* FLECHER MOULTON, L J, at p 363, compare *Stanley v Stanley* (1809), 16 Ves 491, *Bennett v Bennett* (1864), 2 Drew & Sm 266, see, accordingly, *Encyclopedia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol XIII, pp 622, 623 It was at one time the practice to confine these clauses within lives only being, see Butler's note to Co Litt 327 a.

defeasance of the estate tail (*m*) are not protected from becoming void under the rule (*n*)

The exception has not been held to protect any limitation which cannot vest until a time after the natural determination of the estate tail, or is to vest on a possibly remote contingent event which may not happen during the continuance of the estate tail and operate in defeasance of it (*o*) A limitation, after an estate in tail female or in tail male, on general failure of issue of the progenitor of the issue in tail, is void (*p*), except where it is, and takes effect as, a valid legal contingent remainder (*q*)

**SMO. &
Interests
to which the
Rule does
not Apply.**

Limitations
not protected

(*m*) Fines and Recoveries Act, 1833 (3 & 4 Will 4, c 74), s 15, and see *Doe d Lumley v Scarborough (Earl)* (1836), 3 Ad & El 2, 897, Ex Ch, explained in *Milbank v Vane*, [1893] 3 Ch 79, C A, and, as to the effect of disentail, see, generally, title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL

(*n*) *Case v Drosier* (1839), 5 My & Cr 246, *Scarisbrook v Skelmersdale* (1850), 17 Sim 187, *Floyer v Bankes* (1869), L R 8 Eq 115, *Sykes v Sykes* (1871), L R 13 Eq 56 The decision in the latter case has been criticised (see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, ss 469—472, but see Jarman on Wills, 6th ed, p 315, note (z))

(*o*) Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 669, Powell, Devises (Jarman s ed), p 408, Marsden, Rule against Perpetuities, p 147, see *Harlopp v Carbery (Lord)* (1819), cited in 1 Sanders on Uses and Trusts, 5th ed, p 205, which was a case of a limitation by way of use to arise after failure of issue not taking any estate in the settled property, it was held by the Court of King's Bench in Ireland that the limitation was void for remoteness Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 669, gives, as an example of the first kind of limitation mentioned in the text, *supra*, one to A and the heirs of his body, and, after the expiration of two years from failure of the issue of A, to B and his heirs With regard to the second kind of limitation, doubts have been expressed whether these limitations are wholly invalid, or invalid only so far as they may be capable of arising after the determination of the estate tail, it is contended by those who take the latter view that the limitations might take effect as an executory limitation of the fee simple in the event of the happening of the contingency prior to the exhaustion of the estate tail without the estate tail being barred (Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 672, Marsden, Rule against Perpetuities, p 147) In *Re Haygarth, Wickham v Holmes*, [1912] 1 Ch 10, the vesting of the limitation was confined to a proper period

(*p*) *Bristow v Boothby* (1826), 2 Sim & St 465 (affirmed (1829) by Lord LYNDHURST, L C see 3 My & Cr 151) Most of the cases of this class have been cases of devises by will of a reversion expectant upon an estate tail to which a testator was entitled under his marriage settlement or other instrument In such cases, where the devise is expressed to take effect upon failure of issue, it is bad for remoteness unless the issue referred to is the devise can be construed to be the same as the issue inheritable under the entail The court leans to that construction, but it is a question of construction in every case The issue contemplated by the devise and the entail were held to be the same in *Badger v Lloyd* (1700), 1 Ld Raym 523, *Lytton v Lytton* (1793), 4 Bro C C 441, *Egerton v Jones* (1830), 3 Sim 409, *Eno v Eno* (1847), 6 Haie, 171, *Lewis v Temple* (1864), 33 Beav 625, compare *Morse v Ormonde (Lord)* (1826), 1 Russ 382 (a remainder), *Sanford v Irby* (1828), 3 B & Ald 654, *Ellacombe v Gomperts* (1837), 3 My & Cr 127 In the following cases it was held that the issue contemplated in the devise were not the same as the issue inheritable in the entail, and the devises were consequently bad for remoteness — *Lanesborough (Lady) v Fox* (1733), Cas temp Talb 262, *Bankes v Holme* (1891), 1 Russ 304, n, H L, *Jones v Morgan* (1774), 3 Bro Pail Cas 323 As to estates tail implied from gift over on failure of issue, see title WILLS

(*q*) See note (l), p. 314, *ante*

§ 677
Interests
to which the
Rule does
not Apply

Trusts and
powers

677 Similar considerations apply to trusts and powers given to trustees on a strict settlement of real estate, if these trusts and powers are barrable by a disentail, they may be limited to continue throughout the estate tail and to be exercised on the failure of issue in tail (i). On the other hand, trusts which, though limited after an estate tail, are annexed to unbarriable prior limitations, as in the case of a minority clause providing for entry and receipt of rents by trustees during the minority of equitable tenants in tail (s), must be confined to the perpetuity period (t), it is immaterial what is the destination of the fund derived under the trust (u).

(11) *Trusts Defensible by Beneficiaries whose Interests must Vest within the Perpetuity Period*

Trusts deter-
minable by
beneficiaries

678 A trust is determinable by beneficiaries, apart from disabilities on their part (i), when all the beneficial interests become vested (a). Accordingly, a trust, which is necessarily so determin-

(r) *Biddle v Perkins* (1829), 4 Sim 135, *Wallis v Freestone* (1839), 10 Sim 225, *Briggs v Orford (Earl)* (1852), 1 De G M & G 363, C A, *Lantsbery v Collier* (1856), 2 K & J 709, *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)* *Payne v Grey*, [1912] 1 Ch 313, C A, see, further, p 362 *post*.

(s) See *Marshall v Holloway* (1820), 2 Swan 432, *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, [1911] 1 Ch 255, per WARRINGTON, J, at p 267.

(t) *Lade v Holford* (1763), 1 Wm Bl 428 (see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 464, note (2)), *Browne v Stoughton* (1846), 14 Sim 369, *sub nom Browne v Houghton*, 15 L J (Ch) 391, *Turvin v Newcome* (1856), 3 K & J 16, *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, *supra*, per WARRINGTON, J, reversed [1912] 1 Ch 343, C A, on the ground that no legal estate in the trustees anterior to the estate tail was to be implied: see Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, Supplement, p 176, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 372, 3 Jur (N S), Part 2, 181-27 Law Quarterly Review, p 156. In *Scarabuck v Skelmersdale*, (1850), 17 Sim 187 (see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 467, note (5)), and *Florey v Bankes* (1869), L R 8 Eq 115, similar powers were attached to a term prior to the estate tail, and were held void. In *Crosse v Glennie* (1843), 2 Y & C Ch Cas 237, the question was not argued, see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 465. The statutory minority clause in the Conveyancing and Law of Property Act, 1881 (4 & 45 Vict c 41) s 42 (see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 87) is not subject to the limit imposed by the rule (see note (k), p 300, *ante*), and confers powers wider than could be created by deed or by will, since it extends over the minority of a tenant in tail by descent, which in a deed or will would ordinarily be void (see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol XIII, p 235, and the form given *ibid*, p 327, compare *Re Glouc*, [1899] 11 R 337, *Re Couky*, [1901] 1 Ch 38).

(u) *Browne v Stoughton*, *supra*, per SHADWELL, V C, at p 378, *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, [1911] 1 Ch 255, 276. In *Marshall v Holloway*, *supra*, Lord ELDON, L C, held that, although the destination of the accumulated fund was not too remote, being held on the same trusts as those of the testator's personal estate, which were valid, yet the gift of the accumulated fund was void, because the accumulation which was a condition precedent to the gift might extend beyond the perpetuity period, see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 674. Jarman on Wills, 6th ed., 313, note (r).

(v) Such disabilities are ignored in questions of perpetuity, see note (m), p 303 *ante*.

(a) See title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES,

able within the perpetuity period, is not obnoxious to the rule on the ground that it may continue for an indefinite period (*b*)

The contingency on which the trust arises must, however, be such as will necessarily occur within the perpetuity period (*c*), and the mere possibility of the trust being so determined is not sufficient (*d*)

A trust for accumulation for any period for the benefit of any person is not therefore invalid if the person has a vested interest, in which case he is not bound to wait until the expiration of the fixed period, but may stop the accumulation and require payment the moment he is competent to give a valid discharge (*e*), and this is so in the case of trusts for accumulation for charities (*f*), but this is not the case where the interest of the person or charity in the accumulated sums is not absolute and free from conditions precedent extending beyond the perpetuity period (*g*)

SECT 3
Interests to which the Rule does not Apply.

Accumulation for a particular person

(iv) Provisions for Raising Debts and Incumbrances

679 A trust of the income of any property to be accumulated or applied for the purpose of paying incumbrances or debts of the settlor or testator or of any other person, or any similar provision for such debts or incumbrances, where the accumulation for a period invalid under the rule is not made a condition precedent to the employment of the property for that purpose, is not invalid, although it may last for an indefinite period (*h*)

Trusts to pay debts

(*b*) *Silvester v Bradley* (1842), 13 Sim 75, *Oddie v Brown* (1859), 4 De G. & J 179, C A, *Longfield v Bantley* (1885), 15 L. R. Ir 101, following (and citing) *Clements v Ledrim (Earl)*, otherwise unreported, and as to trusts for sale, see *Re Tweedie and Miles* (1884), 27 Ch D 315, *Re Douglas and Powell's Contract*, [1902] 2 Ch 296, 313. In *Tregonwell v Sydenham* (1815), 3 Dow, 194, 11 L., where a trust was declared of a term to accumulate the rents of the one estate to raise a certain sum and from time to time, as sums of £2,500 were raised, to invest in land to be settled on the person then in possession of another estate, the beneficial interest was held to result to the heir at law, but the term was held to be well created, and, apparently, the administrative trusts of the term also, the heir being entitled until the total sum was raised, compare *Smith v Cunningham* (1884), 13 L. R. Ir 480 (where the trust was not determinable)

(*c*) See p 317, *ante*

(*d*) *Cochrane v Cochrane* (1883), 11 L. R. Ir 361

(*e*) *Saunders v Vautour* (1841) C. & Ph 240, *Gosling v Gosling* (1859), 10 John 265, *Coventry v Coventry* (1865), 2 Drew & Sm 470, and compare *Re Couturier, Couturier v Shea*, [1907] 1 Ch 470, *Smidmore v Makinson* (1908), 6 Commonwealth Law Reports 243, and see titles EXECUTORIAL AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 264, TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES, and compare note (*p*), p 339, *post*

(*f*) *Wharton v Masterman*, [1895] A C 186, *Re Swain, Monckton v Hands*, [1905] 1 Ch 669, C A, and see title CHARITIES, Vol IV, p 157

(*g*) *Marshall v Holloway* (1820) 2 Swan 432 (see note (*u*), p 426, *ante*), *Smith v Cunningham* (1884), 13 L. R. Ir 480, *Trustees, Executors, and Agency Co v Bush* (1908), 28 New Zealand Law Reports, 117

(*h*) *Southampton (Lord) v Hertford (Marquis)* (1813) 2 Ves & B 54, 65, followed in *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, [1912] 1 Ch 343, 355, C A, *Bacon v Proctor* (1822), Turn & R 31 (where GRAHAM, B., grounded his decision on the reason that the enjoyment, not the property, was tied up, and the estate vested in the same manner as if the testator had created a term for payment of his debts), *Bateman v Holbkin* (1847), 10 Beav 426. In *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, [1911]

SECT. 3.
Interests
to which the
Rule does
not Apply.

Interests
subject to
such trusts

The same rule appears to apply to provisions for indemnity or exoneration (i)

A trust for payment of debts does not in general prevent the vesting of interests created subject to the trust (j), and such interests will be vested in spite of a declaration that the beneficiaries are not to be entitled until the debts are paid (k), but, where the directions of the will suspend all vesting until payment of the debts or until the fund is equal to the debts, the interests so suspended are invalid (l)

In a will, provision may be made for payment of a legacy to an existing person or persons ascertainable within the perpetuity period

1 Ch 255, *WARRINGTON, J*, at p 276, said that all that these two last cases (*Bacon v Proctor* (1822), Turn & R 31, and *Bateman v Hotchkiss* (1847), 10 Beav 426) decided was that where the purpose of a trust for accumulation, not in itself obnoxious to the rule against perpetuities, was the payment of charges on the estate the rents of which were being accumulated, that was a legal purpose. In *Briggs v Orford (Earl)* (1852), 1 De G M & G 363, C A, a power to cut timber and apply the proceeds towards payment of incumbrances was held good on the ground that it could be barred by the tenant in tail, and also, by Lord CRANWORTH, L J, on the ground that the contract between the parties that an incumbrance should be liquidated in a particular mode might extend over any time. The reason which is most easily understood for this exception from the application of the rule is that such trusts are not against public policy and are destructible on payment of the debts by the beneficiaries entitled subject thereto, whose interests are treated as vested, see *Tewart v Lawson* (1874), L R 18 Eq 490, *Norton v Johnstone* (1885), 30 Ch D 649, *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl)*, *Payne v Grey*, [1912] 1 Ch 343, C A, per FARWELL, L J, at p 368 (where the reason of the validity of such trust is stated). In *Soarsbruck v Skelmersdale* (1850), 17 Sim 187, a trust for accumulation to pay debts was held void, the trust to pay debts out of the proceeds arising only at the end of the void period. See also p 376, *post*.

(i) In *Marry v O'Dell* (1859), 10 I Ch R 22, a trust of lands conveyed by deed to indemnify a purchaser of other lands from certain rents was held valid on the analogy of trusts for payment of debts, the case is doubted, however, by Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 417. In *Morland v Cook* (1868), L R 6 Eq 252, as explained in *Austerberry v Oldham Corporation* (1885), 29 Ch D 750, C A, a covenant, made by co-owners on partition, for repair of a sea wall and charging their respective parts of the expenses on the lands allotted to them by way of rentcharge, was held valid without discussion on the point of perpetuity. In *Cassa major v Strobe* (1821), Jac 630, affirming S C (1819), 2 Swan 347, a trust deed of indemnity against a perpetual rentcharge was also held valid without discussion of any question of perpetuity, and see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol VI, p 487. As to rentcharges, see title RENTCHARGES AND ANNUITIES.

(j) *Marshall v Holloway* (1820), 2 Swan 432, per Lord ELDON, L C, at p 446, *Bacon v Proctor* (1822), Turn & R 31, and see *Carter v Barnadiston* (1718), 1 P Wms 505, *Bennett v Wyndham* (1857), 23 Beav 521.

(k) *Tewart v Lawson*, *supra*, compare *Collier v Walters* (1873), L R 17 Eq 252, and *Strong v Teatt* (1760), 2 Burr 901 (estates declared in lands unsold under trust for sale to pay debts), affirmed *Teatt v Strong* (1760), 3 Bro Parl Cas 219.

(l) *Bagshaw v Spencer* (1748), 1 Ves Sen 142, per Lord HARDWICKE, L C, at p 144, *Re Bewick*, *Ryle v Ryle*, [1911] 1 Ch 116 (trust to pay debts), *Tewart v Lawson*, *supra*, per HALL, V-C, at p 495 (trust to raise funds equal in amount to debts), *Girard Trust Co v Russell* (1910), 179 Federal Reporter, 446 (trust to raise funds equal in amount to debts of a State).

by means of a trust for accumulation which may exceed the perpetuity period (*m*), but not where the legacies are only contingently payable out of accumulations on a remote event (*n*)

680. If the debts or incumbrances are paid otherwise than under the trust for accumulation, as by the creditors enforcing their rights against the estate to be paid in a different way, or being paid off in administration by the court, any express or implied right in any beneficiary to have the estate administered and the accumulation continued, so as to recoup him, must be confined to the proper period (*o*)

SECT. 3.
Interests
to which the
Rule does
not Apply.

Accumulation
for recoup-
ment.

SUB-SECT. 3 — Certain Charitable Gifts arising in futuro

681 A gift over, on a possibly too remote event, from one charity to another has been held to be not invalid under the rule if the gift to the first charity is valid under the rule (*p*)

Certain gifts
over

(*m*) *Williams v Lewis* (1859), 6 H L Cas 1013, *Oddie v Brown* (1859), 4 De G & J 179, C A, see also *Bateman v Hotchkiss* (1847), 10 Beav 426

(*n*) *Smith v Cuninghame* (1884), 13 L R Ir 480, distinguishing *Williams v Lewis*, *supra*, *Oddie v Brown*, *supra*. In *Smith v Cuninghame*, *supra*, at p 486, CHATTERTON, V C, explains *Williams v Lewis*, *supra*, as being a case of "nothing more than a charge of £600 and a term to secure it which was clearly free from objection for remoteness"

(*o*) As to such rights, see *Tewart v Lawson* (1871), L R 18 Eq 490, applied in *Re Heathcote*, *Heathcote v Trench*, [1904] 1 Ch 826 (a decision under the Thellusson Act, see p 370, *post*), *Norton v Johnstone* (1885), 30 Ch D 649, *Re Green*, *Baldock v Green* (1888), 40 Ch D 610 (where no such right was implied), and see pp 376, 377, *post*. In *Baggott v Eastwood* (1886), 19 L R Ir 49, C A, *Re Heathcote*, *Heathcote v Trench*, *supra*, and *Re Webster*, *Thompson v Thompson* (1910), 102 L T 905, 907, the right of recoupment was expressly or impliedly given and was confined to the period proper in each case

(*p*) *Christ's Hospital v Grainger* (1849), 1 Mac & G 460. *Re Tyler*, *Tyler v Tyler*, [1891] 3 Ch 252, C A. The old case of *St Bartholomew (Prior) v St Paul's (Dean and Chapter)* (1537), 1 Dyer fol 33, pl 12, is to the contrary, but was prior to the recognition of executory limitations, see Gray, *Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed, s 124, note 5, *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity*, pp 77, 78. In *London Corporation v Alford* (1840), Cro Car 576, such a gift over was held void under the old doctrine against a possibility upon a possibility, see note (*g*), p 364, *post*. In *Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts v A G* (1826), 3 Russ 142, there was a gift to a charity, where the fund could not be immediately applied to the purpose, and a subsequently expressed gift to another charity pending the application of the fund to the first charity, the question of the rule against perpetuities was not discussed, and perhaps did not in fact arise. As to such immediate gifts to charities, where the particular application of the fund may not of necessity take effect within any assignable limit of time or may never take effect at all except on uncertain events, see title CHARITIES, Vol IV, pp 157, 175. In *Christ's Hospital v Grainger*, *supra*, the event upon which the gift over was to take effect was neglect for one year by the trustee to perform the charitable directions contained in the will in favour of the first charity, the *ratio decidendi* (S C, 1 Mac & G 464, and, in the court below (1848), 16 Sim 83, 100) was that the property was not less alienable on account of the gift over, this is not now considered a sufficient reason (*London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, C A, *Re Hargreaves*, *Midgley v Tatley* (1890), 43 Ch D 401, 406, C A). In *Re Tyler*, *Tyler v Tyler*, *supra*, the event upon which the gift over was to take effect was failure to keep the testator's family vault in good repair and rebuild when

SECT 3
Interests
to which the
Rule does
not Apply

Common law
assurances

Future gifts to charities are in other respects subject to the rule, as are gifts over to persons after gifts to charities (q).

SUP-SECT 4—*Interests under Common Law Assurances*

682 Legal estates and interests created by common law assurances and not derived under the operation of the Statute of Uses (r) were until recently considered to be exempt from the rule. But modern decisions have departed from this in certain cases in relation to common law conditions and some contingent remainders (s)

it should require, the question was whether the first charity was bound by the condition, not whether the gift over was valid, but the decision went on this ground. This decision has been severely criticised by text writers, see Jarman on Wills, 6th ed., pp 212, note (g), 280, note (u), Juridical Review, July, 1906, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., ss 603c, 603d. It is to be observed that in *Re Tyler, Tyler v Tyler*, [1891] 3 Ch 352 C A, the court pointed out that a trust or power to apply part of the money to the repair of the vault would probably have been void, but held that a condition merely creating a perpetual inducement to do what was a lawful act was not void. A case resting upon such a fine distinction will probably not be incautiously applied or extended, see *Re Lowen, Lloyd Phillips v Davis*, [1893] 2 Ch 491, where STIRLING, J., at p 494, said "The principle of these decisions [*re, Christ's Hospital v Granger* (1849), 1 Mac & G 460, and *Re Tyler, Tyler v Tyler*, *supra*] does not extend in my opinion to cases where (1) an immediate gift in favour of individuals is followed by an executory gift in favour of a charity, or (2) an immediate gift in favour of a charity is followed by an executory gift in favour of private individuals." Compare *Charitable Donations and Bequests (Commissioners) v De Clifford (Baroness)* (1841), 1 Dr & War 245, per SUGDIN, L C, at p 254, *Worthing Corporation v Heather*, [1906] 2 Ch 532, *Re Bailhe, Faithful v Sydney Industrial Blind Institution* (1907), 7 New South Wales State Reports, 265. The principle of *Christ's Hospital v Granger*, *supra*, further does not apply where an immediate gift in favour of a charity is followed by an executory gift over to such purposes as a charity or public body shall direct (*Re Friends' Free School, Clibborn v O'Brien* [1909] 2 Ch 675, *Re Da Costa, Clarke v Church of England Collegiate School of St Peter* [1912] 1 Ch 337), see also *Re Bond's Trusts, Bullen v Harris*, [1904] 1 Ch 270 (where on construction it was held that there had been no forfeiture under the gift over), Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 481. There appears to be no similar exception in the case of a gift to a corporation followed by an executory gift over to another corporation, see *Manchester Ship Canal Co v Manchester Racecourse Co*, [1900] 2 Ch 352, 360, affirmed, [1901] 2 Ch 37, C A (agreement for a perpetual right of pre-emption between two companies). It has been held that where a gift to a charity is conditional on the performance of acts (not relating to the subject matter of the gift) extending to a possibly remote period, the charity is not bound by the condition, and is entitled to a clean conveyance, free from the condition, unless there is a gift over to another charity (*Re Da Costa, Clarke v Church of England Collegiate School of St Peter* *supra*, *Re Tyler, Tyler v Tyler*, *supra*). As regards the ordinary rule that gifts subject to a condition must be accepted *cum onere*, see *A G v Christ's Hospital* (1790), 3 Bro C C 165, *A G v Christ's Hospital* (1830), 1 Russ & M 626, 628, *Gregg v Coates, Hodgson v Coates* (1856), 23 Beav 33, 38.

(q) See title CHARITIES, Vol IV, p 175

(r) 27 Hen 8, c 10

(s) *A G v Cummins* (1895), [1906] 1 I R 406, where PALLIS, C B, at p 410, said, "but for the Statute of Uses, the rule against perpetuities would, until the present, have had no relation to estates created by deed and as to other estates would have remained a purely equitable doctrine", and see *Re Tyrell's Estate*, [1907] 1 I R 292, C A, per WALKER, L C, at p 299; *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl), Payne v.*

SUB-SECTION 5 - *Contracts, as Binding the Person*

683 Contracts, in so far as they are merely personal, are outside the rule altogether (*t*)

SECT 3
Interests
to which the
Rule does
not Apply

SUB-SECTION 6 - *Interests given by Operation of Law*

684 Interests given by operation of law (*u*), for example, resulting uses and trusts (*a*), rights of escheat (*b*), and such rights of reverter as are conferred by operation of law (*c*), are not subject to the rule

Contracts.
Interests
given by
law

SUB-SECTION 7 - *Certain Rights of Entry*

685 Rights of entry (*d*) or of re-entry in leases (*e*) necessarily incidental to and co-extensive with legal estates and interests

Certain
rights of
entry

(*g*), [1912] 1 Ch 343, C A, per FARWELL, L J, at p 366, *Challis, Real Property*, 3rd ed, p 180, and as to Crown grants see note (*p*), p 311, *ante*. In *Savill Brothers, Ltd v Bethell*, [1902] 2 Ch 523, 540, C A, an exception in a conveyance was held void, if operating at common law, as creating a freehold *in futuro*, and if operating under the Statute of Uses, as invalid under the rule against perpetuities. The converse proposition was stated in *Thellusson v Woodford* (1799), 4 Ves 227, per BURR, J, at pp 327, 328. As to interests under such common law assurances, the common law rules of limitation may in general be sufficient protection against perpetuity. The rule has recently, however, been extended to certain rights of entry on common law conditions and certain legal contingent remainders, see p 313, *ante*, and as to the grant of incorporeal hereditaments *in futuro* by an assurance at common law, see p 311, *ante*. As to the creation of an *interesse termini*, see p 316, *ante*.

(*t*) *Walsh v Secretary of State for India* (1863), 10 H L Cas 376, *Witham v Vane* (1883), *Challis, Real Property* Appendix V, H L, *Borland's Trustees v Steel Brothers & Co, Ltd*, [1901] 1 Ch 279, *Worthing Corporation v Heather*, [1906] 2 Ch 532, *South Eastern Railway v Associated Portland Cement Manufacturers* (1900) *Ltd*, [1910] 1 Ch 12, C A, see *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl), Payne v Gey*, [1912] 1 Ch 343, C A, and see p 319, *ante*.

(*u*) *Re Blunt's Trusts, Wigan v Lynch* [1904] 2 Ch 767, and as to statutory interests, see note (*k*), p 300, *ante*.

(*a*) Thus, where a testator makes a charitable trust determinable in favour of the person to whom the property would by law result upon failure of the trust, the rule is not infringed (*Re Randall, Randall v Dixon* (1888), 38 Ch D 213, *Re Blunt's Trusts, Wigan v Lynch, supra*).

(*b*) Gray, *Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed, ss 204-205, *n*, see title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 23 *et seq*.

(*c*) *A G v Cummins* (1895), [1906] 1 I R 406 (reverter on a determinable fee created by a Crown grant). As to reverter on the dissolution of a corporation, see Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, p 621, titles COMPANIES, Vol V, p 568, CORPORATIONS, Vol VIII, p 401, DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, p 25. For examples of statutory rights of reverter on failure of a di position in mortmain see the School Sites Act, 1841 (4 & 5 Vict c 38), s 2, *A G v Shadwell*, [1910] 1 Ch 92, title EDUCATION, Vol XII, p 119, Literary and Scientific Institutions Act, 1854 (17 & 18 Vict c 112), s 4, title LITERARY AND SCIENTIFIC INSTITUTIONS, Vol XIX, p 201, and see title CHARITIES, Vol IV, p 180, note (*m*). Such rights have statutory validity.

(*d*) *E g*, a grant of a rentcharge with a right of entry for satisfying the rent in arrear (*Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report*, p 37, *Conveyancing Act, 1911* (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 37), s 6, see p 299, *ante*, title RENT CHARGES AND ANNUITIES), or a condition in a Crown grant determining a determinable fee (*A G v Cummins* (1895), [1906] 1 I R 406).

(*e*) *Re Tyrrell's Estate*, [1907] 1 I R 292, C A, per WALKER, L C, at p 298, see note (*u*), p 323, *ante*, and see title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 530 *et seq*.

SECT 3
Interests
to which the
Rule does
not Apply.

Certain legal
 contingent
 remainders

which themselves are unaffected by or not obnoxious to the rule, are exempt from the rule

SUB-SECT 8—*Interests the Nature of which is a Guarantee against Perpetuity*

686 A limitation, which would be void as an executory devise, may be valid as a legal contingent remainder limited after life interests which must expire within the perpetuity period, a limitation may therefore be preserved from remoteness by the rules of the common law that a future limitation shall if possible be construed as a contingent remainder rather than as an executory devise, and that a contingent remainder must be ready to come into possession *eo instanti* that the particular estate determines (*f*)

Interests
 ending
 within the
 period

687 Where the property limited is a term for an existing life or for existing lives or for not more than twenty-one years, or other interest of finite duration which must necessarily end within the perpetuity period, no limitation of that property can be void (*g*) In creating limitations out of an estate in fee simple, therefore, a term of years to cease within the proper limit may be created, and interests in that term may be limited, which could not be limited in the fee simple itself (*h*)

SECT 4—*Application of the Rule in General.*

SUB SECT 1—*Date from which the Period is Reckoned*

Date from
 which the
 period is
 reckoned

688 The date from which the perpetuity period is reckoned is the date from which the limitation operates as made by a person having a power of disposition equivalent to that of ownership (*i*)

Thus, for a limitation in a will, the period runs from the testator's

(*f*) *Jack d Westby v Feltherstone* (1829), 2 Hud & B 320. *Cole v Sewell* (1848), 2 H L Cas 186. *Symes v Symes*, [1896] 1 Ch 272, 276. As to legal contingent remainders, see p 313, *ante*

(*g*) *Low v Burion* (1734), 3 P Wms 262 (lease for three lives "Here can be no danger of a perpetuity, for all these estates will determine on the expiration of the three lives," *ibid*, per Lord TALBOT, LC, at p 264). *Wastneys v Chappell* (1714), 3 Bro Parl Cas 50 (lease for three lives). *Cadell v Palmer* (1833), 1 Cl & Fin 372, H L. As to *Love v Windham* (1670), 1 Lev 290, see Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, pp 675, 676. In *King v Cotton* (1732), 2 P Wms 674, no opinion was given by the court. In *Mogg v Mogg* (1815), 1 Mer 654, the rule of *cy-près* was applied to limitations of renewable leaseholds held for lives (Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 673), see also *Saltern v Saltern* (1742), 2 Atk 376 (limitation of lease for lives on failure of issue), Butler, note to Fearn's Contingent Remainders, p 500

(*h*) Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 678, *Cadell v Palmer*, *supra*, see Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 38, suggesting a legislative amendment

(*i*) *Rous v Jackson* (1885), 29 Ch D 521, not following *Re Powell's Trusts* (1869), 39 L J (Ch) 188, compare *Re Flower, Edmonds v Edmonds* (1885), 55 L J (Ch) 200, *Stuart v Babington* (1891), 27 L R Ir 551. In *Cooke v Cooke* (1887), 38 Ch D 202, an ante-nuptial settlement by an infant contained a covenant for the settlement of her real estate. It was held that the period should be calculated from the date of this instrument and not from the date of the actual conveyance to the uses of the settlement executed by her on attaining twenty one

death, and in a deed or non-testamentary instrument from the date of the instrument (*k*), provided that in each case the testator or the grantor or settlor has a full power of disposition by that kind of instrument, whether as owner or under a general power of appointment (*l*)

SECT. 4
Application
of the Rule
in General.

For a limitation in exercise of a special power of appointment the period runs from the creation of the power, that is to say, from the death of the testator whose will, or the date of the non-testamentary instrument which, created that power—these dates being the times from which the appointment operates when regarded as a disposition by way of delegation from the creator of the power (*m*)

Exercise of
special power.

SUB SECT 2—Circumstances taken into Account

689 The time for ascertaining the facts in applying the rule against perpetuities is the date of the death of the testator in the case of a limitation by will, and the date of the instrument in the case of limitation in a non-testamentary instrument (*n*) This is so even where the will or instrument creating the limitation is an appointment under a power, thus, in the case of an appointment under a power, the time for ascertaining the facts is the time of the execution, not of the creation of the power (*o*) After that date,

Time for
ascertaining
the facts

(*k*) *Long v Blackhall* (1797), 7 Term Rep 100, *Thellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, 138, 11 L. R. 1, *Cadell v Palmer* (1833), 1 Cl & Fin 372, 11 L. R. 1, *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity*, p 171, *Gray, Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed., s 231

(*l*) A general power of appointment is where the donee can appoint to anyone—a special power, where the objects are confined to a particular class, see title **POWERS** The distinction depends upon whether the objects are general or special, it does not depend upon whether the donee can exercise the power by deed or will, or by will only or by deed only (*Stuart v Babington* (1891), 27 L R Ir 551, per CHATILTON, V C, at p 556), see title **POWERS**

(*m*) *Re Thompson, Thompson v Thompson*, [1906] 2 Ch 199, per JOYCE, J, at p 202 “Where a will is made in exercise of a special power of appointment, the question whether an estate or interest appointed by it be too remote depends upon its distance from the creation, not from the exercise of the power” (Tudor, L C Real Prop., 4th ed., p 595, *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, Supplement*, p 27) As to special powers, see p 356, *post*, and see, generally, title **POWERS**

(*n*) *Vanderplank v King* (1843), 3 Hare, 1, per WIGRAM, V C, at p 17 (“To determine the validity of a given set of limitations, the will must be applied to the facts of that particular case as they stood at the death of the testator, and not as they stood at the date of the will”), *Faulkner v Dunst* (1843), 3 Hare, 199, 216, *Ferrand v Wilson* (1845), 4 Hare, 344, 377, *Dungannon (Lord) v Smith* (1846), 12 Cl & Fin 546, 11 L. R. 1, *Williams v Teale* (1847), 6 Hare, 239, per WIGRAM, V C, at p 251 (in considering the validity of limitations in a will, with reference to the state of the testator's family, “the state of the family must be looked to as it existed at the time of the death of the testator, and not as it existed at the date of the will”), *Re Mervin, Mervin v Crossman*, [1891] 3 Ch 197, 204, *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, Supplement*, pp 27, 64

(*o*) Appointees under a special power must be persons competent to have taken directly under the deed or will creating the power But “if the appointment is made by will, it does not, owing to the ambulatory nature of the instrument, take effect until the testator's death, and it follows that the persons intended to take under the appointment are not ascertained until that time” (*Jarman on Wills*, 6th ed., p 318) If a separate sum is appointed to each member of the class independently of the others, the

SECT 4

Application
of the Rule
in General

regard must, as a general rule (*p*), be had, not to the events which have actually happened, but to the events which might have happened. If the limitations are such that in a possible event the rules as to remoteness would have been infringed, then the limitations fail, although in the events which actually happened the legal period was not exceeded (*q*).

Admissibility
of evidence

690 In considering the validity of any limitation the court can look at evidence of facts existing when the instrument came into

appointment may be good as to some and bad as to others (*Jarman on Wills*, 6th ed., p. 319). See *Peard v Kekewich* (1852), 15 Beav. 166 (a case of a devise to A for life, remainder to A's children as he should appoint. A by his will directed the rents to be accumulated until his son B or other sons should attain twenty three. Direction held not remote as to B, who was unborn at date of will but three years of age at date of death of the original testator), *Morgan v Gronow* (1873), L. R. 18 Eq. 1 (where the fact of the marriage of a daughter affected an appointment), *Wilkinson v Duncan* (1861), 30 Beav. 111 (appointment by will under a special power to a class of daughters as and when they should attain twenty four years of age, held valid as to those who attained those years at the appointor's death, and void as to the others), compare *Von Brockdorff v Malcolm* (1885), 30 Ch. D. 172, *Re Hallinan's Trusts*, [1904] 1 I. R. 452 (appointment by will, under special power conferred by settlement, to a daughter on attaining twenty five, appointee was fifteen at date of testator's death, appointment held not void for remoteness), *Re Thompson, Thompson v Thompson*, [1906] 2 Ch. 199 (appointment by will, under a special power, to C for life and after her death for all her children who had attained or should attain twenty five if born in testatrix's lifetime, or twenty one if born after her decease. Held valid, because at the date of testatrix's decease, it was certain that the persons to take could be ascertained, their interests vested, and the amount of their shares fixed within the perpetuity period), see also *White v Stamps Commissioner* (1908), 8 New South Wales State Reports, 287. As to *Re Wright, Whitworth v Wright*, [1906] 2 Ch. 288, the case is said to depend on circumstances not reported, see 23 Law Quarterly Review, p. 9, and *Jarman on Wills*, 6th ed., p. 318, n.

(*p*) As regards taking subsequent events into consideration in case of a limitation with double aspect, see p. 348, *post*.

(*q*) *Re Walmer's Trusts, Moore v Wingfield*, [1903] 1 Ch. 874, *per* BUCKLEY J., at p. 879, approved S. C., [1903] 2 Ch. 411, 422, C. A. (where it was held that in the case of a child *en ventre sa mère*, as soon as the child is born, his life is retrospectively treated as a life in being, "the moment the child has been born you must treat that event for all purposes with reference to the rule against perpetuities as having become a fact prior to the death of the testatrix" (*ibid.*, at p. 420)), *Jes v Audley* (1787) 1 Cox, Eq. Cas. 324, 326 (to daughters of A living at a remote period), *Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)* (1794), 2 Hy. Bl. 358 (gift over on A having no son bred a clergyman, when A had no son at all), *Hodson v Bull* (1845), 14 Sim. 558 (gift over of child's share on failure of issue during life of child's husband or wife. Held void, because child's husband or wife might not be born at testator's death and might survive child for more than twenty one years), *Dungannon (Lord) v Smith* (1846), 12 Cl. & Fin. 546, H. L., *per* CRESSWELL, J., at p. 563 ("Unless it [an executory devise] is created in such terms that it cannot vest after 'the perpetuity period,' it is not valid, and subsequent events cannot make it so"), *Handing v Nott* (1857), 7 E. & B. 650, 657, 658 (where the limitation in fact was capable of taking effect within the perpetuity period, but it was held that that event could not affect the question whether the limitation was in its creation too remote). *Re Lowman, Devenish v Pestler*, [1895] 2 Ch. 348, 365, 367, C. A., *Re Beales' Settlement, Barrett v Beales*, [1905] 1 Ch. 256 (appointment to a class of children who in fact were all born in the life of the appointor).

operation (r), but not at evidence of what actually took place after that time, or at evidence of opinion or probability of even the highest degree (a). Accordingly, no evidence can be given that a woman is past child-bearing, nor does the court draw such an inference, however advanced her age (b).

Sec 4
Application
of the Rule
in General.

SUB-SECT 3—*Duration of Limitations and Postponement of Enjoyment*

691 The rule against perpetuities does not affect remoteness in the cesser of limitations (c). It is the vesting of the interest that is considered, not its duration. Accordingly, an interest may be

Duration of
Limitations

(r) *Re Wood, Tullett v Colville*, [1894] 3 Ch 381, 387, C A, *per* DAVEY, L J, at p 387 (trust to work out gravel pits and then sell, "It might have been in the highest degree probable at the time of testator's death that the gravel pits would be worked out within the legal period, but as I understand the law, the court cannot look at evidence of that kind"), *Re Thompson, Thompson v Thompson*, [1906] 2 Ch 199, *Vanderplank v King* (1843), 3 Hare, 1, *per* WIGRAM, V C, at p 13 (devise to a class of the children of the unborn children of testator's daughter K, "It is clear that for the purpose of determining whether the whole of that class can take, I must look at the events as they existed at the death of the testator. I cannot wait for subsequent events, so as to see whether a difficulty will be created by the birth of other children of J"), *Southern v Wollaston* (1852), 16 Beav 276 (gift to A for life, remainder to A's children who shall attain twenty five as tenants in common. Void for remoteness if A survives the testator, but good if A predeceases testator, because it must in that case vest if at all within lives in being), *Re Dawson, Johnston v Hill* (1888), 39 Ch D 155, *per* CHITTY, J, at p 159 ("The court does not merely allow evidence that a person mentioned in the will predeceased testator, but will allow evidence to show that the death of the person occurred at such a time before testator's death as rendered the gift valid"), *Re Russell, Dorrell v Dorrell* [1895] 2 Ch 698, C A (residuary gift in trust, after death of M and her husband, for all the daughters of M who should attain twenty one or marry under that age, with proviso for settlement of their shares on their children. Proviso held separable void in case of daughters born after testator's death, and good in case of a daughter born before testator's death). Evidence will be allowed of the fact that a person was *en ventre sa mère* at the death of the testator (*Thellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, H L, *Blackburn v Stabler* (1814), 2 Ves & B 367, *Storrs v Benbow* (1853), 3 De G M & G 390 (a gift of a sum of money "to each child that may be born to either of the children of either of my brothers lawfully begotten"), or the fact that the whole of a class of issue were then ascertained (*Southern v Wollaston, supra*, *Re Thompson, Thompson v Thompson, supra*), or that a line of issue had then failed (*Faulkner v Daniel* (1843) 3 Hare, 199).

(a) *Jee v Audley* (1787), 1 Cox, Eq Cas 324 (where KENYON, M R, refused to assume that it was impossible for persons of seventy years of age to have children), *Re Wood, Tullett v Colville*, [1894] 3 Ch 381, 387, C A (see note (r), *supra*), *Re Bewick, Ryle v Ryle*, [1911] 1 Ch 116.

(b) *Jee v Audley, supra*, *Re Sayer's Trusts* (1868), L R 6 Eq 319 (woman sixty-two at testator's death), *Re Dawson, Johnston v Hill, supra* (woman over sixty at testator's death), where *Cooper v Laroche* (1881), 17 Ch D 368, to the contrary effect, was explained.

(c) "The remoteness against which the rule for the prevention of perpetuities is directed, is remoteness in the commencement, or first taking effect, of limitations, and not in the cesser or determination of them" (Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, p 173 adopted in *Wormsley v Williams*, [1897] 2 Ch 255, 261), *Charitable Donations and Bequests (Commissioners) v De Clifford (Baroness)* (1841), 1 Dr & War 245 (a devise of a "qualified fee with gift over, gift over held to be void for remoteness"), *Re Randall*,

SECT. I
Application
of the Rule
in General.

given to an unborn person for life (d), or until marriage (e), or until any other event (f), provided it must vest, if at all, within the proper period, or, so far as the rule against perpetuities alone is concerned, to a succession of unborn persons whose interests are vested within the proper period (g), or to a number of unborn persons for life as tenants in common (h). In each of these cases

Randell v Dixon (1888), 38 Ch D 213 (charitable trust to pay income for particular purpose, without limit as to time. Held that when purpose at an end, the trust ceased and property fell into residue), *Re Blunt's Trusts*, *Wigan v Clinch*, [1904] 2 Ch 767 (bequest of a charitable trust annuity to be void in certain events without limit of time, on happening of event trust annuity held to be at an end and to fall into residue), *Douglas v Brownlee* (1884), 3 New Zealand Law Reports, 57, 63, C A (easement, where the easer was introduced by a proviso, subsequent to the grant).

(d) Examples of, or references to, gifts of life interests to unborn persons are to be found in many cases, e.g., *Cotton v Heath* (1638), 1 Roll Abr 612, *Marlborough (Duke) v Godolphin (Earl)* (1759), 1 Eden, 404, *per HENRY Lord Keeper*, at p. 415, *Hay v Coventry (Earl)* (1789), 3 Term Rep 83, 86, *Roulledge v Dorrit* (1794), 2 Ves 357, 366, *Williams v Teale* (1847), 6 Har, 239, 250, *Catlin v Brown* (1853), 11 Har, 372, *Gooch v Gooch* (1853), 3 De G M & G 366, *Stuart v Cockerell* (1870), 5 Ch App 713, *Hampton v Holman* (1877), 5 Ch D 183, *Re Ashforth*, *Sibley v Ashforth*, [1905] 1 Ch 535, 540. A life estate may therefore be given to the husband or wife of a living unmarried person, though such husband or wife is possibly unborn at the date of the gift, compare *Congreve v Harrison* (1847), cited in *Buchanan v Harrison* (1861), 1 John & H 662, *Re Merricks' Trusts* (1866), L R 1 Eq 551 (life estate given, after testator's son's death, to any wife he might marry and leave him surviving), *Re Harley*, *Peck v Satory* (1888), 39 Ch D 289, C A (life estate to two daughters' possibly unborn husbands good, but gifts over, on failure of class to be ascertained at the death of the survivor of the daughters and their husbands, bad for remoteness).

(e) *Re Gage*, *Hill v Gage*, [1898] 1 Ch 498 (appointment in exercise of special power, contained in appointee's marriage settlement, to daughters until marriage, with gifts over to a class to be then ascertained, the appointment to daughters held good because it commenced within the proper period, although it might extend beyond it, gift over held void for remoteness being in favour of a class who might not be ascertained until after the proper period), *Re Crichton's Settlement*, *Sweetman v Batty* (1912), 106 L T 588 (appointment under special power to a daughter while unmarried).

(f) *Wainwright v Muller*, [1897] 2 Ch 255, and see *Boughton v James* (1844), 1 Coll 26, 46, *Gooding v Read* (1853), 4 De G M & G 510, C A. "An estate that is to arise within the prescribed period, may be so limited as to determine on the happening of any event, however remote, as, for example, the indefinite failure of issue of a person, which is too remote a contingency for the commencement of limitations. But an estate can only be made to determine upon an event thus remote when by its original form and limitation, it will regularly cease by the happening of the contingency, as the term of the duration of the estate, for a power reserved to a person to determine the limitation on such remote event would be void" (Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p. 173, quoted in *Wainwright v Muller*, *supra*, *per* BYRNE, J., at p. 261).

(g) *Cadell v Palmer* (1833), 1 Cl & Fin 372, H L, *Garland v Brown* (1864), 10 L T 292, *Re Hargreaves*, *Midgley v Talley* (1890), 43 Ch D 401, C A, *per* COTTON, L J, at p. 405 (devises in trust of a series of life estates to sisters and sisters' children held good, but power of appointment given to the last survivor of the sisters and their children held void for remoteness). As to the possible invalidity of such a limitation under another rule, see p. 365, *post*.

(h) *Williams v Teale* (1847), 6 Har, 239, 250, *Gooch v Gooch* (1853), 3 De G M & G 366 (in this case a gift to children for their lives was assumed to include unborn children).

the limitation is valid without reference to the validity of the subsequent limitation (i) But no limitation can be made directly to the survivor of a number of unborn persons (k)

SECT. 4
Application
of the Rule
in General

(i) *Hampton v Holman* (1877), 5 Ch D 183, where JESSEL, M R, said, at p 188, "You might always give a life interest to an unborn person being a child of a person in being, and it did not matter what the gift over was after the death of such unborn child, it did not affect his interest". see *Re Roberts, Repington v Roberts Gawn* (1881), 19 Ch D 520, C A LEACH'S, M R, decision in *Hayes v Hayes* (1828), 4 Russ 311, to the effect that an estate for life to an unborn child is bad, unless followed by a vested interest, is regarded as a "ship" of that learned judge, and is not law, *Boughton v James* (1844) 1 Coll 26, 37, *Williams v Teale* (1847), 6 Hare, 239, 250 The statements in *Hay v Coventry (Earl)* (1789), 3 Term Rep 83, 86, *Evans v Walker* (1876) 3 Ch D 211, 213, and *Tregonwell v Sydenham* (1815), 3 Dow, 194, II L., per Lord REEDSDALE, at p 207, are ambiguous in this respect Such an estate for life may, however, be affected by the *cy près* doctrine, see p 367, post

(k) *Courtier v Oram* (1855), 21 Beav 91, *Gurland v Brown* (1864), 10 L T 292, see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 277, *Re Hargreaves, Midgley v Talley* (1890), 43 Ch D 401, C A (limitation to a named person and her children), *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, [1905] 1 Ch 535 (an estate tail limited to the survivor of unborn persons held void for remoteness, whether regarded as an equitable limitation or as a legal contingent remainder), *Whitby v Von Luedecke* [1906] 1 Ch 783 (appointment, in exercise of a special power conferred by appointor's marriage settlement, to children for life, with ultimate gift to survivor Held void for remoteness, because the survivor might be a person not ascertainable within twenty one years from the death of the appointor), *Re Crofton's Settlement Sweetman v Batty* (1912), 106 L T 558 (appointment to surviving daughter in case one dies in the lifetime of the other without leaving issue) *Atten v Lloyd* (1868), L R 5 Eq 383, suggesting the validity of such a gift on the ground of the power of alienation of each person over the contingent right, is overruled on this point by *Re Hargreaves, Midgley v Talley*, *supra* In *Ashley v Ashley* (1833), 6 Sim 358 SHADWILL, V C, construed a will as giving a life estate to A, remainder to A's children (unborn) for life as tenants in common, with cross remainders for life to the children of A, which were assumed valid without discussion This decision was criticised in *Stuart v Cockerell* (1869), L R 7 Eq 363, by MARINS, V C, at p 360, and by Marsden, Rule against Perpetuities, p 177 On the other hand, Gray (Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed s 207) defends the decision on the ground that the cross remainders all vested on the death of A As to whether *Cooke v Bowler* (1836), 2 Keen, 54, can be considered an authority for their invalidity, see Marsden, Rule against Perpetuities, p 179, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, ss 207a, 251 *et seq*, and see *Whitby v Von Luedecke*, *supra* As to a limitation to a number of unborn persons for their lives "with benefit of survivorship," the law is perhaps not settled, and the effect of the limitation appears to be a question of construction In *Gooch v Gooch* (1853), 3 De G M & G 366, 383, there is a *dictum* of Lord CRANWORTH, L C, that such a limitation is valid, on the ground that the unborn persons, together with the persons who had the fee, could convey the fee, but it is explained in *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, *supra*, by FARWELL, J, at p 541, that the Lord Chancellor was really thinking of a joint tenancy, and not of a gift to a number with a contingent limitation to the survivor of them, and that the reasons given are not easy to reconcile with *Re Hargreaves, Midgley v Talley*, *supra*, and *London and South Western Rail Co v Gomm* (1882), 20 Ch D 562, C A In *Whitby v Von Luedecke*, *supra*, BUCKLEY, J, at p 788, said "There is a difference between these two things—a vested estate for life" [i.e., in each unborn person] "which may fail to fall into possession and the gift of a contingent estate for life What I have here is a gift under which, as I understand the language, only the survivor

SECT 4

Application
of the Rule
in GeneralPostponement
of possessionEffect on
vesting

692 Similarly, the rule against perpetuities does not prescribe any limit within which estates and interests must come into possession, the rule does not concern itself with provisions postponing the enjoyment of estates and interests, if those estates and interests must be vested within the proper limits (l)

A limitation subsequent to an estate for life to an unborn person is not invalid under the rule against perpetuities so long as the vesting is not unduly postponed (m), thus, the contingency on which vesting is to take place must not depend on the death of the unborn tenant for life (n)

693 A direction that an unborn devisee or alienee shall not be entitled to possession of his estate until either attaining a certain age greater than twenty-one or other remote event, or the condition making a gift to an individual or class dependent upon the attaining of such an age or upon the happening of such an event, may be either a condition precedent to the vesting of the estate, and in that case may render the limitation void under the rule (o),

will be entitled to some estate", and accordingly the limitation in the latter case was held void

(l) *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity*, c xxii, *Montgomery v Woodley* (1800), 5 Ves 522 (devise of real estate, with a direction postponing devisees' possession until twenty five), *Dennis v Friend* (1863), 14 I Ch R 271 (devise giving vested estate at testator's death, with attempted postponement of possession until twenty three), and see *Tudor, L C Real Prop*, 4th ed., p 612

(m) *Evans v Walker* (1876), 3 Ch D 211, compare *Mogg v Mogg* (1815), 1 Mer 654, where Preston, at p 664, *acquendo*, said "A gift to an unborn child for life is good, if it stops there, but if a remainder is added to his children or issue as purchasers, it is not good, unless there be a limitation of time within which it is to take effect" this statement of the law was adopted by Wood, V C, in *Cutlin v Brown* (1853), 11 Hare, 372, 375, but it is correct only so far as the rule against perpetuities alone is concerned, see note (k) p 365 *post*, *Re Norton, Norton v Norton*, [1911] 2 Ch 27. As to whether the subsequent limitation can be void under another rule see *Honywood v Honnywood* (1905), 92 L T 814, H L, *per* Lord DAVEY, at p 815, and see p 365, *post*

(n) See note (s), p 305, *ante*, *Re Merricks' Trusts* (1866), L R 1 Eq 551, 558 (bequest of a fund after the death of testator's daughter, and any husband she might have surviving her, to four persons by name who should then be living, or to the lawful issue of such of them as should be then dead, held that it was not necessary for the "issue," construed as children, to survive the possible husband of testator's daughter, but that it was the possession only, and not the vesting of the remainder to the issue, which was postponed to the death of the possible husband), see also *Re Norton, Norton v Norton*, *supra*

(o) *Boughton v Boughton, Boughton v James* (1848), 1 H L Cas 406, 433 (limitation of real and personal estates upon trust to accumulate income, with a direction to divide the whole property with accumulations among a class consisting of all sons of testator's nephews living, until a son first attained twenty five, held that the gift was in the direction and was void for remoteness), *Re Wrightson, Battie-Wrightson v Thomas* [1904] 2 Ch 95, C A (direction in a codicil that no devisee under the will should have a vested interest or be entitled to possession until he attained twenty four, held that the effect of the codicil was to make the limitations in the will executory devises, and, as such, void for remoteness, and see the explanation of this case in *White v Summers*, [1908] 2 Ch 256, *per* PARKER, J., at p 267) For the rules as to vesting, see, generally, title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, compare note (p), p 339, *post*, and *Edmunds v Waugh* (1858), 4 Drew 275 (where a clause

SECT. 1
Application
of the Rule
in General.

or it may be merely a direction or condition postponing the enjoyment, the right to the estate being vested at birth or at some other time independent of the age or event concerned, in which case the limitation is not rendered invalid (p) A gift over on the devisee not attaining the required age is then construed as a limitation divesting the previous vested gift, and only the gift over is void (q) A provision, however, that the interest of an alienee is not to be "vested" until, or is to be "vested" at, such an age, is generally too strong to allow a construction rendering the gift valid (a), unless "vested" can be construed to mean "indefeasibly vested" (b) If interest is given for maintenance in

directing investment "within three months after my decease" was treated as merely parenthetical and indicating an intention as to the period of investment, and not as imposing a condition precedent)

(p) If there is a clear immediate gift, vesting is not postponed by subsequent equivocal words purporting to defer possession, or to suspend the beneficial use (*Dodson v Hay* (1791), 3 Bro C C 405, *Montgomery v Woodley* (1800), 5 Ves 522 (see note (l), p 338, *ante*), *Bingley v Broadhead* (1803), 8 Ves 415), or to defer payment (*Blease v Burgh* (1840), 2 Beav 221, *Saumarez v Saumarez* (1865), 34 Beav 432, see Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 511, and Supplement, p 170) The terms of a gift over may show that the previous gift confers a vested interest before the specified age (*Bland v Williams* (1834), 3 My & K 411 (gift over if previous donee should die under the specified age and without issue), and see note (q), *infra*) The fact that the fund given is to be separated at once or at the death of a tenant for life may be sufficient to cause the interests in the fund to vest at that period (*Griet v Griet* (1842), 5 Beav 123, *Harrison v Grimwood* (1849), 12 Beav 192) The direction for postponement in all cases where interests are previously vested is not effective after the alienee has become entitled to give a receipt, and has no effect on devolution of the property on death before twenty one and compare p 327, *ante*

(q) *Bland v Williams* (1834), 3 My & K 411 (gift over if any child should die under specified age and without issue), *Darves v Fisher* (1842), 5 Beav 501 (gift over if no child attain the specified age), *Harrison v Grimwood* (1849), 12 Beav 192 (gift over in case of death under specified age without issue), *Taylor v Frobisher* (1852), 5 De G & Sm 191 (gift over of shares of those dying under the specified age to the survivors), *Hobbs v Parson* (1854), 2 Sm & G 212 (gift over to the survivors of shares of those dying under the specified age), *Re Edmondson's Estate* (1868), 1 R 5 Eq 389, *per* PAGE WOOD, V C, at p 398 (gift over on death of children under the specified age)

(a) *Griffith v Blunt* (1841), 4 Beav 248 (shares of sons "to be vested at" twenty five, and of daughters at twenty five or marriage, and, if one child only, to be paid at twenty five or marriage, *Comport v Austen* (1841), 12 Sim 218 ("to become vested interests" at twenty five), *Re Morse's Settlement* (1855), 21 Beav 174 ("to be a vested interest in, and to be paid, transferred or assigned to" sons at twenty five, and daughters at twenty-five or marriage, with benefit of survivorship in case of death at twenty-five, and as to daughters in case of being unmarried as to this case, which was a case of a deed, see Jarman on Wills, 6th ed., p 1355, note (e)) *Rowland v Tawney* (1858), 26 Beav 67 ("to be considered as a vested interest" at the age of twenty five), *Re Wrightson, Battie-Wrightson v Thomas*, [1904] 2 Ch 95 C A)

(b) As in *Berkeley v Swinburne* (1848), 16 Sim 275, 281, 282 (gift over treating children's shares as original gifts to them, belonging to them from the death of the tenant for life, followed by clauses for their maintenance and advancement), *Taylor v Frobisher* (1852), 5 De G & Sm 191 (gift over if the child died without issue before the specified period In this case PARKER V C, said, at p 199 "The conclusion appears to me

SECT 4
Application
of the Rule
in General

the meantime, the gift may admit of being construed as vested at an earlier date, and not void (c), even where there is a discretion conferred on trustees to apply less than the whole income (d), but not where the alienees form a contingent class, or where an aliquot share is not appropriated to each legatee, or where the surplus income is to be accumulated (e). Where there is no gift except in a direction to pay, and the date of payment is too remote, the gift itself is too remote (f), but, where there is a valid gift with an independent and distinct direction to pay at a remote period, the latter direction does not affect the vesting or the validity of the gift (g). It is a matter of construction in each case.

irresistible that the testatrix intended the child so dying and leaving issue to retain his share as an interest transmissible to his representatives and considered that he would do so by force of the original gift"). *Re Baxter's Trusts* (1804), 10 Jur (N S) 845, *Re Edmondson's Estate* (1868), L R 5 Eq 389 (where PAGE WOOD, V-C, found two things in the will showing an intention not to postpone vesting. If a child's share was construed to be contingent (1) an accruer clause would have become useless and unnecessary, and (2) there would have been an intestacy as regards the share of a child dying under twenty five leaving issue).

(c) *Jackson v Manjoribanks* (1841), 12 Sim 93, *Davies v Fisher* (1842), 5 Beav 201 (payment postponed to twenty five, with an express direction to apply interest for maintenance during minority), *Bell v Cade* (1861), 2 John & H 122, *Tatham v Vernon* (1861) 29 Beav 604 (gift to daughters for life, and afterwards to pay and divide among their issue (children) then living, at twenty five, the whole interest being given in the meantime for their maintenance during minority). There are *dicta* in *Pearson v Dolman* (1866), L R 3 Eq 315, *per* PAGE WOOD, V C, at p 321, and in *Thoquas v Wilberforce* (1862), 31 Beav 299, *per* Lord ROMILLY, M R, at p 302, to the effect that where there is a "gap" or "chasm" between the direction as to interest during minority and as to principal at a subsequent age, there is a difficulty in holding that vesting is not postponed to the subsequent age, see also *Doe d Dolley v Ward* (1839), 9 Ad & El 582, *Willson v Cobley*, [1870] W N 48.

(d) *Fox v Fox* (1875), L R 19 Eq 286. This case may, however, have to be applied with caution. It was doubted in *Dewar v Brooke* (1880), 14 Ch D 529, and dissented from in *Re Winle, Tucker v Winle*, [1896] 2 Ch 711, but not disapproved by LINDLEY, M R, and JEUNE, P, in *Re Turney Turney v Turney*, [1899] 2 Ch 739, C A, see also *Hardcastle v Hardcastle* (1862), 1 Hem & M 405, *per* PAGE WOOD, V C, at p 410. The construction which was applied by JESSEL, M R, in *Fox v Fox supra*, was aided by a gift over. As to the effect of a gift over in aiding the construction in such a case, see *dicta* of JESSEL, M R, in *Re Parker, Barker v Barker* (1880), 16 Ch D 44, 46, and NEVILLE, J, in *Re Williams, Williams v Williams*, [1907] 1 Ch 180, 185, and Jarman on Wills 6th ed, pp 1411-1414 where it is suggested that *Fox v Fox, supra*, and *Re Winle, Tucker v Winle, supra*, can be distinguished and reconciled on this ground, see also *Re Levy, Cohen v Cohen* (1907), 7 New South Wales State Reports, 885.

(e) *Re Thatcher's Trusts* (1859), 26 Beav 365, *Re Parker, Barker v Barker, supra*. *Re Ricketts, Ricketts v Ricketts* (1910), 103 L T 278, *Re Hume, Public Trustee v Mabey*, [1912] 1 Ch 693.

(f) *Leake v Robinson* (1817), 2 Mer 363, where GRANT, M R, said, at p 385: "It is not the enjoyment which is postponed, for there is no antecedent gift of which the enjoyment could be postponed. The direction to pay is the gift". *Chance v Chance* (1853), 16 Beav 572. *Merlin v Blagrove* (1855) 25 Beav 125.

(g) *Farmer v Francis* (1824), 2 Bing 151 (vested estates after death of A for all her children, with a direction to postpone division until they attain twenty four), *Kevern v Williams* (1832), 5 Sim 171 (vested estates after death of A to the grandchildren of B living at the death of A, with a

SUB-SECT 4 — *Limitations to Classes and to Members of Classes.*

SECT. 4.

Application
of the Rule
in General.

Class gifts.

694 A limitation to a class is governed by the same principles as other limitations with respect to the rule, but the effect of the rule needs a separate statement. By a limitation to a class is meant (*h*) a limitation to a number of devisees or alienees, uncertain in number at the time of the gift, to be ascertained at a future time, all or some of whom (*i*) come within a certain category or description, defined by a general or collective formula (*k*), or within a number of such categories or descriptions (*l*), who, if they are to take at all, are to take one divisible subject in certain proportionate shares (*m*). In the case of such a limitation, all the interests of the members of the class must vest at the same time (*n*), but the total and ultimate amount to be taken by any one donee cannot be ascertained until all the persons who are to take, and the ultimate proportions in which they are to take, are ascertained (*o*).

In all cases it is the period of vesting, and not merely the description of the donees or the wide or indefinite character of the class, that produces the invalidity, if any, of the limitation (*p*). The ordinary rules of construction as to ascertainment of a class may prevent the limitation from being void (*q*). Period of vesting is determining factor

direction to postpone payment until the children attain twenty five, *Harrison v Grimwood* (1849), 12 Beav 192, *Hodson v Micklethwaite* (1854), 2 Drew 294, see *Leeming v Sherratt* (1842), 2 Hare, 14, 21).

(*h*) See, generally, as to class gifts, title WILLS. In *Kingsbury v Waller*, [1901] A C 187, Lord HALSBURY, L C, at p 188, pointed out the danger of indulging in abstract propositions when it is a question of construing a particular will. In that case the Court of Appeal and House of Lords came to the conclusion, looking at the situation of the family and condition of things which in fact existed at the time when testator composed his will, that he intended to make a class properly so called, although it was not so described in words.

(*i*) A gift to a class must be a gift to them as a class of persons having some common attribute, and not a gift to them as individuals (*Re Chaplin's Trust* (1863), 12 W R 147, per PAGE WOOD, V C, *Re Jackson, Shiers v Ashworth* (1883), 25 Ch D 162, per CHITTY, J, at p 165) "But it may be none the less a class because some of the individuals of the class are named, *e g*, to A and all other my nephews and nieces" (*Kingsbury v Waller, supra*, per Lord DAVEY, at p 192). A gift to A and all the children of B is *prima facie* not a class gift, but may be so if there is a context showing that testator intended it to be so (*ibid*, at p 193), and see *Kekewich v Barker* (1903), 88 L T 130, H L.

(*k*) See the definitions in *Pearks v Moseley* (1880), 5 App Cas 714, per Lord SELBORNE, L C, at p 723, in *Re Chaplin's Trust, supra*, per WOOD, V C, summarised in *Kingsbury v Waller, supra*, per Lord DAVEY, at p 193, as follows — "*Prima facie* a class gift is a gift to a class consisting of persons who are included and comprehended under some general description and bear a certain relation to the testator."

(*l*) As in the case of a class composed of children and grandchildren, or a composite class composed of the children of A and the children of B.

(*m*) *Pearks v Moseley* (1880), 5 App Cas 714, 723.

(*n*) *Kingsbury v Waller, supra*, per Lord DAVEY, at p 194.

(*o*) *Bentinch v Portland (Duke)* (1877), 7 Ch D 693, per FRY, J, at p 698.

(*p*) *Leake v Robinson* (1817), 2 Mer 363, per GRANT, M R, at p 388. "It is the period of the vesting, and not the description of the legatees, that produces the incapacity."

(*q*) *E g*, where upon the construction of the particular will the class is

SEC. 4.
Application
of the Rule
in General

Class living
at remote
event

Class
ascertained
by description
of members

695 A limitation to such members of a class as are living at a possibly remote event, where the class consists partly of possibly unborn persons, is void (a)

On the other hand, a limitation to such of a class entirely composed of living persons, who survive a certain event, must vest during the lifetime of one of them, if the limitation is to take effect at all, and is accordingly valid (b)

696 A limitation to a class of persons answering a given description, of which class any member may possibly have to be ascertained or be ascertainable for the first time at a period exceeding the perpetuity period, is wholly void, even as to those members of the class who are ascertainable within that period (c),

ascertained at the date of the will or at the death of the testator or of the tenant for life (*Harvey v Harvey* (1842), 5 Beav 134 ("grandchildren etc. of A not from time to time in receipt of rents" construed with the aid of a codicil to mean those living at the death of the tenant for life) *Leach v Leach* (1843), 2 Y & C Ch Cas 495 (E and the other children of J construed to mean the children living at the date of the will) *Re Payne* (1858), 25 Beav 556 (to children of A and then issue), *Wetherell v Wetherell* (1863), 1 De G J & Sm 134 (to the grandchildren and great grandchildren of A, held vested at the death of the testator), *Re Powell Grosland v Holliday*, [1898] 1 Ch 227 (children of A for life, and then to their children, confined to children of A born at testator's death)), and see title WILLS.

(a) *Jee v Audley* (1787), 1 Cox, Eq Cas 324 (to the daughters of A and B his wife living at the failure of C's issue), *Palmer v Holford* (1828), 4 Russ 403 (bequest upon trust to accumulate and transfer the fund and accumulations to the children of a living person who should be living at the expiration of twenty eight years from testator's death other than an eldest or only son) *Dodd v Wake* (1837), 8 Sim 615 (where SHADWELL, V C said, at p 616 "The testator appears clearly to have intended that only those children of his daughter should take who should be alive when the eldest child for the time being should attain the age of twenty four, and therefore the bequest is void for remoteness"), *Speakman v Speakman* (1850), 8 Hare, 180 (class to be ascertained fifty years after the testator's death, consisting of children of the testator, their children, and remote issue) *Lett v Randall*, *Lett v Dormer* (1875), 3 Sm & G 83 (to the children of A, a spinster, living at the death of the survivor of A and her future husband), *Stuart v Cockerell* (1870), 5 Ch App 713 (to the children of F, then a bachelor, living at the death of his eldest son, and the children *per stirpes* of such of the children of F as are then dead), *Le Harvey*, *Peck v Savory* (1888), 39 Ch D, 289, C A (a gift over on failure of a class to be ascertained at the death of the survivor of testatrix's daughters and their husbands, present or future), *Re Bence*, *Smith v Bence*, [1891] 3 Ch 242, C A (gift to a class which included such of the children of any child of testator's daughter M who might die under twenty one, as should attain twenty one or, being a daughter, be married), and see *Gooding v Read* (1853), 4 De G M & G 510, C A, *Goodier v Johnson* (1881), 18 Ch D 441 C A.

(b) *Lachlan v Reynolds* (1852), 9 Hare, 796 (gift to such of a number of persons *in esse* at the time of testator's death as should be living thirty years after his death), *Re Watkins*, *James v Cordey* (1889), 37 W R 609 C A (gift to testator's grandchildren, living at his decease, at twenty-one, with substitutionary gift over of the shares of grandchildren dying under twenty-one)

(c) *Jee v Audley*, *supra* (to the daughters of A and B his wife living at the failure of C's issue, referred to afterwards by PAGE WOOD, V C, as "a strong case of that class," because "all the children *in esse* might have taken and it was only the possibility that there

since the quantum of interest of each member is not so ascertainable (d)

Where the class is defined as a part of a super-class (as in the case where the class is those of the children of a named person who attain a certain age, or survive a certain event, or satisfy any other condition or description), it is of no avail that the super-class (the whole number of children) is wholly ascertainable within the perpetuity period, and the minimum interest of a member of the class ascertained in consequence (e)

A limitation, therefore, to a class consisting of or including the unborn children of a living person who attain an age greater than twenty-one is wholly void for remoteness, as to every member of the class (f), except in cases where the limitation is, and

SECT. 4.
Application
of the Rule
in General.

Class taking
at an age
greater than
twenty-one

must have been incapable children which excluded those who were capable"), *Leake v Robinson* (1817), 2 Mer 363, *Catlin v Brown* (1853), 11 Hare, 372 (the fourth rule, where PAGE WOOD, V C, at p 377 stated the reason of the rule as follows — 'You cannot give the whole property to those who are in fact ascertained within the period and might have taken if the gift had been to them *nominatim*, because they were intended to take in shares to be regulated in amount, augmented or diminished according to the number of the other members of the class, and not to take exclusively of those other members"), *Read v Gooding* (1856), 21 Beav 478 (to the children of A living when the youngest attains twenty-five and the issue of children of A then dead), *Hancock v Watson* [1902] A C 114 (an executory limitation in default of children of S, whether born before or after the testator's death, who should attain twenty-five if sons or twenty-one or be married, if daughters), and see the cases cited in note (f), *infra*

(d) See p 304, *ante*

(e) *Smith v Smith* (1870) 5 Ch App 342 *Hale v Hale* (1876), 3 Ch D 643, 646, approved in *Pearks v Moseley* (1880), 5 App Cas 714, overruling *Re Moseley's Trusts* (1871), L R 11 Eq 499, 502, where, as pointed out in *Hale v Hale*, *supra* the fact that the class might diminish was overlooked

(f) *Leake v Robinson*, *supra* (where GRANT, M R, said, at p 390, "The bequests in question are not made to individuals but to classes and what I have to determine is whether the class can take I must make a new will for the testator if I split into portions his general bequest to the class"), *Judd v Judd* (1830), 3 Sim 525, *sub nom Judd v Hobbs*, 8 L J (O S) (Ct) 119, reconsidered in *Hunter v Judd* (1833), 4 Sim 455, *Faudrey v Giddes* (1830) 1 Russ & M 203 *Porter v Fox* (1834) 6 Sim 485, *Cromek v Lumb* (1839), 3 Y & C (Ex) 565, *Newman v Newman* (1839), 10 Sim 51, *Ring v Hardwick* (1840), 2 Beav 352, *Comport v Austen* (1841), 12 Sim 218, *Griffith v Blunt* (1841), 4 Beav 248 *Massey v Barton* (1844), 7 L Eq R 95, *Pull v Pritchard* (1826), 1 Russ 213 (personal estate), and S C (1847), 5 Hare, 567 (real estate), *Bute (Marquis) v Harman* (1846), 9 Beav 320, corrected from registrar's book in *Southern v Wollaston* (1852), 16 Beav 166, 168, note (b), *Lassence v Tierney* (1849), 1 Mac & G 551, *Boreham v Bignall* (1850), 8 Hare, 131 *Chance v Chance* (1853), 16 Beav 572 *Re Morse's Settlement* (1855) 21 Beav 174, *Re Blakemore's Settlement* (1855), 20 Beav 214, *Cum v Salmon* (1856), 5 W R 31, *Pickford v Brown, Brown v Brown* (1856), 2 K & J 426, *Merlin v Blagrave* (1858), 25 Beav 125, *Rowland v Tawney* (1858), 26 Beav 67, *Re Thatcher's Trusts* (1859), 26 Beav 365, *Wilkinson v Duncan* (1861), 30 Beav 111, *Thomas v Wilberforce* (1862), 31 Beav 299 *Re Bulley's Estate* (1865), 11 Jur (NS) 847, C A, *Willson v Cobley*, [1870] W N 46, *Bowyer v West* (1871), 24 L 414, *Re Slark's Trusts* (1872), 21 W R 165 *Von Brockdorff v Malcolm* (1885), 30 Ch D 112, *Re Warden*, *Re Gribb's Settlement*, *Browett v Warden*, [1887] W N.

SECT 4
Application
of the Rule
in General.

takes effect as, a valid contingent remainder (g) But where, on the true construction of the gift, the class is entirely ascertained at or by reference to the death of the testator whose will contained the limitation (h) or at the period of distribution which is on an event not too remote (i), so that the attainment of the age is not a condition precedent to vesting, but a direction for divesting or for the postponement of enjoyment only (k), the limitation is valid

24, *Re Whitten, King v Whitten* (1890), 62 L T 391, *Willerton v Stocks*, [1892] W N 29, *Re Watson, Cox v Watson*, [1892] W N 192, *Re Wise, Jackson v Parrott*, [1896] 1 Ch 281, *Trustees, Executors and Agency Co, Ltd v Jenner* (1897), 22 Victorian Law Reports, 584, *Re O'Brien's Estate, Prytz v Trustees, Executors and Agency Co, Ltd* (1899), 24 Victorian Law Reports, 360, *Re Ricketts, Ricketts v Ricketts* (1910), 130 L T 278, *Re Hume, Public Trustee v Mabey*, [1912] 1 Ch 693 Similarly, where the class is of children only, males taking at twenty five, or other age greater than twenty one, and females at twenty one, or marriage (*Evers v Challis* (1859), 7 H L Cas 531 (where a gift over took effect as a valid contingent remainder), *Ker v Hamilton* (1880), 6 Victorian Law Reports, Equity Cases, 172, *Hancock v Watson*, [1902] A C 14, *White v Stamps Commissioner* (1908), 8 New South Wales State Reports, 287)

(g) *Evers v Challis, supra*, *Symes v Symes*, [1896] 1 Ch 272 *Re Wrightson, Bathe Wrightson v Thomas*, [1904] 2 Ch 95, C A, explained in *White v Summers*, [1908] 2 Ch 256, per PARKER, J., at pp 267, 268, see the remarks in *Re Finch, Abbots v Burney* (1881), 17 Ch D 211, C A, per MALINS, V C, at p 221, on *Bull v Prichard* (1847), 5 Har, 567, *Brackenbury v Gibbons* (1876), 2 Ch D 417 The latter case, however, does not appear to be correctly decided. see *Re Lechmere and Lloyd* (1881), 18 Ch D 524, *Miles v Jarvis* (1883), 24 Ch D 633, *Dean v Dean*, [1891] 3 Ch 150, in which cases the limitation could not be a contingent remainder

(h) *Elliott v Elliott* (1841), 12 Sim 276, followed in *Re Coppard's Estate, Howlett v Hodson* (1887), 35 Ch D 350 (where it seems the construction was adopted to prevent an intestacy) see observations on *Elliott v Elliott, supra*, in Gray Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 640, and Jarman on Wills 6th ed., p 1679, *Re Wenmoth's Estate, Wenmoth v Wenmoth* (1887), 37 Ch D 266 and see *Re Mervin, Mervin v Crossman*, [1891] 3 Ch 197, 204, and *Re Barker, Capon v Flick* (1905), 92 L T 831, for other explanations of these cases A gift by will to the children of the testator himself may vest at any age, his children being necessarily lives in being at his death (*Lachlan v Reynolds* (1852), 9 Har, 796)

(i) The rule in *Andrews v Partington* (1791), 3 Bro C C 401, may operate in favour of the validity of such gifts That rule is to the effect that when a gift to a class on reaching a certain age is accompanied by a valid gift over on failure of any member of the class to reach that age, all members of the class coming into existence before the eldest reaches the required age are allowed to share (*Picken v Matthews* (1878), 10 Ch D 264, see *Re Barker, Capon v Flick, supra*), but where no member of the class has attained the age, greater than twenty one, at the death of the testator, the gift is void, since all those then living might have died without attaining the required age, and in that case the class would have to be ascertained at a period too remote (*Re Mervin, Mervin v Crossman, supra*) So where the time of distribution is the death of a tenant for life, the gift may be valid (*Kevern v Williams* (1832), 5 Sim 171), see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., ss 638, 639 aa, compare *Barnet v Barnet* (1861), 29 Beav 239)

(k) *Dodson v Hay* (1791), 3 Bro C C 405, *Kevern v Williams, supra*, *Blease v Burgh* (1840), 2 Beav 221, *Hodson v Micklethwait* (1854), 2 Drew 294, *Grogan v Dopping* (1856), 6 I Ch R 265, *Bell v Cade* (1861), 2 John & H 122, *Hardcastle v Hardcastle* (1862), 1 Hem & M 405, *Dennis v Friend* (1863), 14 I Ch R 271, *Re Baxter's Trusts* (1864), 10 Jur (N S) 845, *Saumarez v Saumarez* (1865), 34 Beav

The court cannot remodel the gift and treat some of the class as entitled at any other age or time (*l*)

SMCT. 4
Application
of the Rule
in General.

Class
attaining
twenty one.

697 A limitation can be well made to such of the unborn children of a living person as attain twenty-one (*m*), and this limitation may be extended to include in the class the children of any child who should die under twenty-one leaving issue at death (*n*), so that their interests would arise at birth, and all the shares would necessarily be ascertained within due limits of time. But this further addition of grandchildren cannot be made when the grandchildren are only to take if they attain twenty-one, so that the condition of attaining that age is to apply to both children and grandchildren forming the composite class (*o*). In this case the gift to the children cannot be severed from that to the grandchildren. Nor can a limitation be made generally to children of children of a living person whenever born. The limitation is valid, however, in a will where the class of children is expressly or impliedly closed at the death of the testator (*p*).

698 Where there is a gift or devise of a given sum of money or amount of property to each member of a class, and the gift to each is wholly independent of the similar gift to every other member of the class, and can be neither augmented nor diminished, whatever the number of the other members may turn out to be, then the gift or devise may be good as to those members in fact ascertained within the limits of the perpetuity period (*u*). In cases of this kind

Individual
gift to each
member of a
class.

432, *England v England* (1869), 20 L T 648, *knox v Wells* (1864), 2 Hem & M 674, *Southern v Wollaston* (1852), 16 Beav 166, *Re Turney, Turney v Turney*, [1899] 2 Ch 739, C A (grandchildren held to take immediate vested interests subject to being divested in case they did not attain twenty five), see p 338 *ante*

(*l*) *Leake v Robinson* (1817), 2 Mer 363, 389, *Ker v Hamilton* (1880), 6 Victorian Law Reports, Equity Cases, 172, 175. The Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 41, suggested a legislative amendment in this respect.

(*m*) *Knapping v Tomlinson* (1864), 10 Jur (N S) 626. So where the gift is to children of a class of persons all ascertained at the death of the testator on attaining twenty-one, the gift is valid (*Re Chinnery's Estate* (1871), 1 L R Ir 296, C A, *Re Hobson's Will, etc*, *Hobson v Sharp*, [1907] Victorian Law Reports, 724). This is the limit in a settlement, or in a will where the living person is not the testator himself.

(*n*) *Pearks v Moseley* (1880), 5 App Cas 714, per Lord STURBORNE, LC, at p 719.

(*o*) *Seaman v Wood* (1856), 22 Beav 591, *Webster v Boddington* (1858), 26 Beav 128, *Re Moseley's Trusts* (1879), 11 Ch D 555, C A, affirmed *sub nom Pearks v Moseley* (1880), 5 App Cas 714, *Re Moseley's Trusts* (1871), 1 L R 11 Fq 499, being overruled. So, also, where the age to be attained in this case is any other than twenty one (*Smith v Smith* (1870), 5 Ch App 342, *Hale v Hale* (1876), 3 Ch D 64), approved in *Pearks v Moseley, supra*).

(*p*) *Re Watkins, James v Corley* (1889), 37 W R 609, *Re Powell, Crossland v. Holliday*, [1898] 1 Ch 227, and see note (*q*), p 341, *ante*. The context may show that the children of named persons only are intended (*Re Hobson's Will, etc*, *Hobson v Sharp, supra*, or that the class of descendants is ascertained at the death of a tenant for life (*Re Roberts Repington v Roberts-Gawen* (1881), 19 Ch D 520, C A).

(*u*) *Storrs v Benbow* (1853), 3 De G M & G 390; *Cuthin v Brown*

SECT 4
Application
of the Rule
in General

Gift of a fund
 in separate
 shares.

the gift is single to each party and is not a gift to a "class" in the proper legal sense of that term

699 Where there is a time fixed at which a fund is to be divided into separate shares, and that time is not obnoxious to the rule against perpetuities, then each share stands separate from the others, and the limitation of each share takes effect or not according as the dispositions of that share do or do not violate the rule, and the valid gift of one share is not made void by the invalidity of the gift of another share or portion of another share (*b*)

Clauses of
 substitution

700 Where the limitation is first of all to a class of children or other issue absolutely, who are themselves ascertainable within a proper time, and a substitutionary clause is added giving the share of each one dying before distribution to a class of his or her issue not necessarily ascertainable within the perpetuity period, then, provided that the substitutionary clause is separated from the first absolute gift, the latter stands good, and the substitutionary clause only is invalid (*c*), but, if there is no absolute gift in the first instance, the whole is void (*d*)

Settlement
 of shares

701 A direction for settlement of each share is severable among the shares, and takes effect as to those members of the class living at the time when the instrument comes into operation (*e*) though void as to other members. There must be an absolute gift of each share in the first place (*f*)

Forfeiture
 clause

702 A clause of forfeiture is similarly severable (*g*)

(1853), 11 Hare, 372 (the fifth rule there enunciated by PAGE WOOD, V C), *Wilkinson v Duncan* (1861), 30 Beav 111 *Blandford v Thackerell* (1793) 2 Ves 238, and *Liley v Hay* (1842), 1 Hare, 580, appear to be examples of the application of this rule

(*b*) The rule was enunciated as above in *Bentlnck v Portland* (Duke) (1877), 7 Ch D 693, *per* LEX, J, at p 698, see *Griffith v Pownall* (1843), 13 Sim 393, *Catlin v Brown* (1853), 11 Hare, 372 (the fifth rule there enunciated by PAGE WOOD, V C), *Wilson v Wilson* (1858), 4 Jur (N S) 1076, *Bell v Bell* (1862), 13 I Ch R 517, C A, *Knapping v Tomlinson* (1864), 10 Jur (N S) 626, *Re Coulman, Munty v Ross* (1885), 30 Ch D 186 *Re Russell, Dorrell v Dorrell*, [1895] 2 Ch 698, C A *Greenwood v Roberts* (1851), 15 Beav 92, has been the subject of discussion and criticism, see the explanation of the case in *Catlin v Brown, supra*, at p 379 and in *Webster v Boddington* (1858), 26 Beav 128, 136, 137, which places it upon a ground which is reconcilable with the other authorities, and see the criticism in *Knapping v Tomlinson, supra*, GRAY, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 391, and JARMAN on WILLS, 6th ed, pp 335—339 *Arnold v Congreve* (1830), 1 Russ & M 209, is overruled on this point, see *Knapping v Tomlinson, supra*, GRAY, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 391

(*c*) *Goodier v Johnson* (1881) 18 Ch D 441, C A The clause of substitution is, of course, valid if the issue are necessarily ascertainable within the proper period (*Pearks v Moseley* (1880), 5 App Cas 714, 719)

(*d*) *Whithead v Bennett* (1853), 22 L J (Ct) 1020, *Webster v Boddington, supra*

(*e*) *Wilson v Wilson, supra*, *Re Boyd, Nield v Boyd* (1890), 63 L T 92, *Re Russell, Dorrell v Dorrell*, [1895] 2 Ch 698, C A

(*f*) *Lassence v Turner* (1849), 1 Mac & G 551, *Hancock v Watson*, [1902] A C 14

(*g*) *Hodgson v Harford* (1879), 11 Ch D 959

SUB-SECT 5 — *Limitations to Series of Persons*

SAC1 4

**Application
of the Rule
in General.**Limitation
to a series.

703 If the limitation is to a series of individuals answering a given description, and the first member of the series intended to take may by possibility be a person excluded by the rule against perpetuities, then no person whatever can take under the limitation (*h*). But if the first members of the series are not excluded by the rule they may take, provided that their interests are severable (*i*).

704 In the case of a trust of chattels to be enjoyed as heirlooms with real estate, or to devolve in a course of descent applicable to real estate, the interests of successive takers are capable of being separated, and take effect, provided that the absolute interest is given to a person who must be ascertained within the perpetuity period (*h*).

Chattels
settled as
realty

(*h*) *Dunannon (Lord) v Smith* (1846) 12 Cl & Fin 546, H L. *Catlin v Brown* (1853), 11 Hare, 372 (the third rule there enounced by PAGE WOOD, V C, where it is stated as 'any' member being an excluded person)

(*i*) *Dunannon (Lord) v Smith supra*. The first taker satisfying the description when the instrument takes effect has been held in some cases, upon the intencion of the particular will, to take chattels absolutely (*Muckworth v Hurman* (1836), 2 Keen, 658 (criticised by SUGDEN, L C, in *Ker v Dunannon (Lord)* (1841), 1 D & War 509, 537, 538. Sugden, Law of Property, p 341, n, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 399, n), *Montagu v Inchiquin (Lord)* (1875), 23 W R 592 explained in *Re Johnston, Cockerell v Esser (Earl)* (1884), 26 Ch D 538, 547), or a fee simple in realty (*Charitable Donations Commissioners v De Clifford (Baroness)* (1841), 1 D & War 245, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, pp 472, 476). In *Tollemache (Lady) v Countly (Earl and Countess)* (1834), 2 Cl & Fin 611, H L, the reasons given were perhaps equally destructive of the estate of the first taker as of that of the second, who was immediately concerned: see *Dunannon (Lord) v Smith, supra*, *Ker v Dunannon (Lord), supra*, Sugden, Law of Property, p 330). Whether the actual decision was that the first of the series took absolutely was doubted by some of the judges in *Dunannon (Lord) v Smith supra* but in *Re Hill, Hill v Hill*, [1902] 1 Ch 807, 810, C A, VAUGHAN WILLIAMS, L J, expressed and gave reasons for the opinion that the decision of the House of Lords was to that effect. A life estate expressly limited to a first taker is valid, although the remainder on that estate or the absolute interest may be invalidly given (*Re Gage, Hill v Gage*, [1898] 1 Ch 498), and as to life estates to unborn persons, see pp 335 *et seq*, ante.

(*h*) *Eg*, where the chattels are to follow a dignity (*Baron v Proctor* (1822) Turn & R 31, *Sackville West v Holmesdale (Viscount)* (1870), L R 4 H L 543, *Re Johnston, Cockerell v Esser (Earl)* (1884), 26 Ch D 538, *Hill v Hill*, [1897] 1 Q B 483, C A, *Re Hill, Hill v Hill, supra*), and as to rules for settlement of chattels to go with a title, see Jarman on Wills, 6th ed., p 700), or are to devolve with real estate (*Foley v Burnell* (1785), 4 Bro Parl Cas 319, the rule in this case being thus stated in Jarman on Wills, 6th ed., p 697 "If chattels are bequeathed to or in trust for the persons for the time being entitled to the possession of settled real estate they do not vest absolutely in the tenant for life, but in the first tenant in tail on his birth, although he may be only tenant in tail in remainder, and a direction that they shall be treated as heirlooms and annexed to the real estate makes no difference", *Re Johnson's Trusts* (1866), L R 2 Eq 716, *Re Parker, Parker v Parkin*, [1910] 1 Ch 581, distinguishing *Re Chesham's (Lord) Settlement, Valentia (Viscount) v Chesham (Lady)*, [1909] 2 Ch 329, C A), and whether or not the interest of a tenant in tail by purchase is defeasible on failure to attain twenty one, or is not to vest absolutely unless he attains twenty one

SEC 1 4
Application
of the Rule
in General.

But, in case of a trust of chattels, where the absolute interest is expressly given only to a person whose description makes him excluded by the rule, for example, an unborn person who may not answer the required description within the proper period, and there is a trust in the meantime for persons successively entitled to real estate, or for persons successively satisfying a certain description, the interests of successive takers under the latter gift cannot take effect beyond life interests of persons who must necessarily be in actual existence at the time of the creation of the trust (l)

SUB-SEC 1 6 — *Alternative Independent Limitations*

Alternative
limitations

705 One of two limitations which are expressed to take effect independently and in the alternative may take effect notwithstanding that the other is void (m)

Limitations
with a double
aspect.

A single gift which is expressed to be limited contingently on two or more separate events, of which one is too remote under the rule, and the other not, may take effect on the latter contingency (n), although void so far as it depends upon the former

(*Christie v Gosling* (1866) L R 1 H L 279, *Harrington (Countess) v Harrington (Earl)* (1871), L R 5 H L 87, *Martelli v Holloway* (1872) L R 5 H L 532), or whether the chattels are given to persons entitled to actual possession of the real estate (*Scarsdale (Lord) v Curzon* (1860), 1 John & H 40 (the rule enunciated in this case being stated in *Re Angerstein, Angerslein v Angerstein*, [1895] 2 Ch 883, 889, 890 "If the gift of the chattels is to the person actually seised at the death of tenants for life, or to the person seised of the actual freehold which is defined as freehold in possession, or there are other clear words referring to actual possession, a tenant in tail who dies before coming into possession is excluded"), *Hogg v Jones* (1863), 32 Beav 45, *Re Fothergill's Estate, Price Fothergill v Price*, [1903] 1 Ch 149, *Re Chesham's (Lord) Settlement, Valentin (Viscount) v Chesham (Lady)*, [1902] 1 Ch 329, C A, see the observations on the latter case in Jarman on Wills, 6th ed., pp 698, 699, n) In all cases the absolute interests must be in persons who are not excluded by the rule Accordingly, any provision postponing the vesting of the heirlooms in the successive tenants in tail must be confined to tenants in tail by purchase Where, however, the chattels are settled to follow realty in strict settlement, a proviso preventing the absolute vesting in any tenant in tail unless such person attains twenty one is, on construction, confined to tenants in tail by purchase (*Christie v Gosling, supra*, *Martelli v Holloway, supra*, see, further, titles REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL, SETTLEMENTS

(l) *Ibbetson v Ibbetson* (1840), 5 My & Cr 26, followed in *Dungannon (Lord) v Smith* (1846) 12 Cl & Fin 546 H L, *Wainman v Field* (1854) 1 Kay, 507 In *Trafford v Trafford* (1746), 3 Atk 347, the objection of remoteness was not considered (see *Lincoln (Countess) v Newcastle (Duke)* (1806), 12 Ves 218, 231), and the case is no longer law (*Dungannon (Lord) v Smith, supra*, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 653) In *Mackworth v Hinrman* (1836), 2 Ken, 658, the gift of corpus, which was too remote, appears to have been ignored, see *Ker v Dungannon (Lord)* (1841), 1 Dr & War 509, 537, 538 In *Bacon v Proctor* (1822), Turn & R 31, no declaration was made as to the title beyond a life estate

(m) *Vachel v Vachel* (1669), 1 Cas in Ch 129, 130, *Crompe v Barrow* (1799), 4 Ves 681, and see the cases cited in note (n), *infra*

(n) *Longhead d Hopkins v Phelps* (1770), 2 Wm Bl 703, *Porter v Bradlev* (1789), 3 Term Rep 143, *Leake v Robinson* (1817), 2 Mer 363, 394, *Minter v Wraith* (1842), 13 Sim 52, *Goring v Howard* (1848), 16 Sim 395, *Monypenny v Dering* (1852), 2 De G M & G 145, 181,

Such a limitation is known as a limitation with a double aspect (o) It, in effect, comprises two or more alternative independent limitations (p)

SECT. 4
Application
of the Rule
in General

Limitations
contingent on
the exercise
of a power

706 There may be an alternative independent gift to a class, valid if a power has not been exercised in a certain way, but capable of being invalidated by the exercise of the power The explanation of such cases is referable to the distinctive legal qualities of a power and of the estate created by a power (q) For example, where there is a gift to children with power to appoint life estates to a husband or wife, and an ultimate gift to grandchildren living at the determination of the prior interests, the gift to the grandchildren is valid if the power has not been exercised, because the class of grandchildren would be ascertained within due course. On the other hand, the gift to the grandchildren is capable of being invalidated if the children's power is exercised in favour of a husband or wife not born in the lifetime of the original testator In the latter alternative event, the class of grandchildren would not be ascertained until a period too remote If, instead of a power to appoint life estates to a husband or wife, life estates had been given to husband or wife, the whole gift would be bad for perpetuity, and there would be no independent valid alternative gift (r)

Powers given to a series of persons may likewise be severable, so that an appointment exercised by one of the series may be valid, although it might be invalid if exercised by another (s)

707 But the double contingency in the above cases (t) must be so expressed in the instrument (u)

Expression
of double
contingency

A gift single in point of expression cannot be split, although it may include two or more events, one of which may or does happen within the limits of the perpetuity rule (v)

Cambridge v Rous (1858), 25 Beav 409 (in all which cases there was a gift on failure of issue at the death of an ancestor, as well as on failure of issue taking a vested interest). *Miles v Harford* (1879), 12 Ch D 691. *Re Bowles, Page v Page*, [1905] 1 Ch 371, *Bandon (Earl) v Moreland*, [1910] 11 R 220, *Re Davies and Kent's Contract*, [1910] 2 Ch 35, C A. As regards *Evers v Challis* (1859), 7 H L Cas 531, see note (b), p 350, *post*

(o) *Luddington v Kime* (1697), 1 Ld Raym 203, 208, and see *Porter v Bralley* (1789), 3 Term Rep 143, *per* Lord KENYON, C J, at p 147, *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity*, p 501

(p) *Monypenny v Dering* (1852), 2 De G, M & G 145 183, *Re Bowles, Page v Page*, *supra*, *Re Davies and Kent's Contract*, *supra*, at p 46

(q) *Re Davies and Kent's Contract*, *supra*, at p 47, approving *Re Bowles, Page v Page*, *supra*

(r) *Re Bowles, Page v Page*, *supra*, *per* FARWELL, J, at p 376

(s) As to powers in this respect, see p 354, *post*

(t) See the text, *supra*

(u) *Miles v. Harford*, *supra*, at p 702, *Re Bence, Smith v Bence*, [1891] 3 Ch 242, 249, C A., *Hancock v Watson*, [1902] A C 14

(v) *Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)* (1794), 2 Hy Bl 358, *Ring v Hardwick* (1840), 2 Beav 352, *Dungannon (Lord) v Smith* (1846), 12

(1) & Fin 546, H L., *Monypenny v Dering*, *supra*, at p 183, *Re Thutcher's Trusts* (1859), 26 Beav 365, *Re Harvey, Peck v Savory* (1868), 30 Ch D 289, C A., *Re Bence, Smith v Bence*, *supra*, *Hancock*

SECT 4

Application
of the Rule
in GeneralExemption of
a remainder

708 An exception to the last rule exists (a), founded on the principle of English real property law, that if a devise can take effect as a remainder it shall do so. Where a gift over, single in expression, can, in the event which has happened, take effect as a contingent remainder, it is allowed to take effect as such, although, if another event had happened, it would have been void for remoteness as an executory devise (b).

SECT 5 - Failure of a Limitation under the Rule.

SUB-SECT 1—Effect in General

Effect in
General

709 The general effect of a limitation being void under the rule is that the instrument takes effect as if the void limitation and all limitations dependent upon it were omitted (c).

On prior
limitations

If a gift over is void, the limitation prior to it and made defeasible by it becomes free from such gift over, and may become indefeasible (d). On the other hand, a prior limitation of an estate is as a general rule not affected by the failure of a limitation arising on the expiration of the prior estate (c). In a series of limitations

v. *Watson*, [1902] A C 14, 18. In *Watson v Young* (1885), 28 Ch D 436 the contingency was split, but it is doubtful whether the case is correct, see *Re Bence, Smith v Bence*, [1891] 3 Ch 242, 249, C A.

(a) A quasi exception, as pointed out by Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, pp 367, 509, and Gray, *Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed., s 356, also occurs in the case where personality is bequeathed to a series of unborn persons by words which would create successive estates tail if the subject of the limitation were real estate. In such cases, if the gift to the first of the series fails, e.g., by death without issue in the lifetime of the testator, the gift to the second of the series may take effect, although it would have been bad if the first taker had survived the testator. In *Marsh v Marsh* (1783), 1 Bro C C 293, *Wilkinson v South* (1798), 7 Term Rep 555, and *Williams v Lewis* (1859), 6 H L Cas 1013, 1024, a limitation of personality on a failure of issue was treated as a limitation with a double aspect, and see *Brown v Higgs* (1799), 4 Ves 708, *Pelham (Lady) v Gregory* (1760), 3 Bro Parl Cas 204, *Re Lowman, Deenish v Pester*, [1895] 2 Ch 348, C A.

(b) *Ivers v Challis* (1859) 7 H L Cas 531, where a gift over in default of A leaving a child who being a son should attain twenty three, or being a daughter should attain twenty one, took effect, on the death of A without ever having had a child, as a contingent remainder. In *Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)* (1794), 2 Hy Bl 358, the limitation could not take effect as a remainder in any case. *Watson v Young*, *supra* (where PEARSON, J, purported to follow *Ivers v Challis supra*), was doubted in *Re Bence, Smith v Bence, supra*. The exception has no relation to personal estate (*Re Thatcher's Trusts* (1859), 26 Beav 363, *Hancock v Watson, supra*).

(c) Lewis *Law of Perpetuity*, p 657.

(d) See the cases of gifts on general failure of issue cited in note (h), p 307, ante. *Doe d Blesard v Simpson* (1842), 3 Man & G 929, *Taylor v Probusier* (1852), 5 De G & Sm 191, *James v Wynford (Lord)* (1852), 1 Sm & G 40, 57, *Coutier v Oram* (1855), 21 Beav 91, *Webster v Parr* (1858) 26 Beav 236, 238, *Hodgson v Halford* (1879), 11 Ch D 959, *Goodier v Johnson* (1881), 18 Ch D 441, 446, *Re Barthe, Faithful v Sydney Industrial Blind Institution* (1907), 7 New South Wales State Reports 265, *Re Tyrrell's Estate*, [1907] 11 R 292, C A. *Re Donoughmore's (Earl) Estate*, [1911] 11 R 211, Lewis, *Law of Perpetuity*, pp 532, 657, Gray, *Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed., s 247.

(e) *Re Blunt's Trusts Wigan v Clinch*, [1904] 2 Ch 767, *Re Ashforth, Sibley v Ashforth*, [1905] 1 Ch 535, following *Garland v Brown* (1864), 10 L T. 292. As to the cy pres doctrine, see p 367, *post*.

every part which is valid in itself, and can be separated from those parts which are void, is upheld (*f*)

710 The estate or interest which is the subject of the void limitation devolves as on failure of the limitation for other causes, for example, in case of a settlement to the settlor or grantor (*g*), and in case of a will, as on a lapse, to the residuary legatee or devisee (*h*), or, if the limitation is itself of residue, or there is no residuary gift, to the persons entitled as on intestacy (*i*), and, in case of the exercise of a special power, to the persons entitled in default of appointment (*k*)

711 The property devolves subject to such directions as are validly imposed (*l*) Real estate held on a valid trust for sale, where the trusts of the proceeds of sale fail for remoteness becomes under the doctrine of reconversion subject to a trust for the lien or person entitled in default of disposition (*m*), and where a trust for sale of real estate is void for remoteness, but the trusts of the proceeds are valid, the beneficiaries take the property as realty (*n*)

712 Every limitation on the failure of, or expectant on the determination of, or in defeasance of, a limitation void under the rule, is void (*o*) This applies although the subsequent limitation is to a person *in esse*, who would otherwise take a vested interest (*p*),

SECT 5
Failure of a
Limitation
under the
Rule

On the
interest
invalidly
limited

Devolution
subject to
valid
directions

On sub-
sequent
limitations.

(*f*) *Gooding v Read* (1853), 4 De G M & G 510, C A, and as to limitations to a series of persons, some of whom are not ascertainable within the perpetuity period, see p 347 *ante*

(*g*) *Re Morise's Settlement* (1855), 21 Beav 174, *Re Stark's Trusts* (1872), 21 W R 165

(*h*) *Leake v Robinson* (1817), 2 Mer 363 392, *Bentuck v Portland (Duke)* (1877), 7 Ch D 693, 700

(*i*) *Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)* (1794), 2 Hy Bl 358, *Stuart v Cocherell* (1870) 5 Ch App 713, *Bentuck v Portland (Duke)*, *supra* Where a testator carves a chattel interest out of his real estate and makes it the subject of remote limitations, it results to his heir with the character of personal estate which the testator impressed upon it (*Barley v Evelyn* (1848), 16 Sim 290, 295)

(*k*) See, further, p 360, *post*

(*l*) *Tregonarell v Sydenham* (1815), 3 Dow, 194, II L R *Re O'Brien's Estate Pritz v Trustees, Executors and Agency Co, Ltd* (1899), 24 Victorian Law Reports, 360 (trust for maintenance)

(*m*) *Newman v Newman* (1839) 10 Sim 51, *Hitchhead v Bennett* (1853), 1 Eq Rep 560, *Hale v Paw* (1858), 25 Beav 335, and see title EQUITY, Vol XIII, p 109

(*n*) *Goodier v Edmunds*, [1893] 3 Ch 455, *Re Daveron, Bowen v Churchill*, [1893] 3 Ch 421, *Re Applby, Walker v Lever, Walker v Visbit*, [1903] 1 Ch 565, C A

(*o*) *Robinson v Hardcastle* (1788), 2 Term Rep 241, 380, 781, *Proctor v Bath and Wells (Bishop)* (1794), 2 Hy Bl 358 (where the point was said to have been expressly decided in *Chatham (Earl) v Tothill* (1771), 7 Bro Parl Cas 453), *Routledge v Dorrit* (1794), 2 Ves 357, 363, *Brudenell v Elwes* (1801), 1 East, 442, *Beard v Westcott* (1822), 5 B & Ald 801 (in King's Bench, although one of the subsequent limitations had been held valid in Common Pleas, see S C (1813), 5 Taunt 393, (1822), Tinn & R 25), Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 660

(*p*) *Monypenny v Dering* (1852), 2 De G M & G 145, 181, *Re Thatcher's Trusts* (1859), 26 Beav 365 The point was accordingly assumed without argument in *Re Mortimer, Gray v Gray*, [1905] 2 Ch 502, C A, a case under the old rule (see p 364, *post*), where the person would otherwise have taken a vested interest, see 27 Law Quarterly Review, pp 110, 112 The ground

SECT 5
Failure of a
Limitation
under the
Rule

and although such person only takes a life interest, which must otherwise take effect, if at all, during his life (q) In every case it is a question of construction whether the prior contingency is expressly or impliedly imported into the subsequent limitations (r), if it is, they are void, but if not, they take effect as independent or alternative limitations and may be valid (s) Limitations in default of appointment are thus unaffected by a void power of appointment (t)

SUB-SECT 2—Void Restrictions on Valid Limitations

Restraint on
anticipation

713 A restraint on anticipation imposed on the interest of an unborn person, which may possibly extend beyond the perpetuity period, is invalid (u), but, in a limitation by will to a class, such a restraint is severable among the shares, and may be good as to those members of the class who are born in the testator's lifetime (a), though void as to the shares of those who are born afterwards

given is that the limitation over was never intended to take effect if the persons intended to take under the prior limitations would, if they had been alive, have been capable of enjoying the estate, see *Monypenny v Dering* (1852), 2 De G M & G 145, 181

(q) *Beard v Westcott* (1822), 5 B & Ald 801, *Monypenny v Dering*, *supra*, *Re Thatcher's Trusts* (1859), 26 Beav 365, see, however, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, at 251 *et seq*, *Re Norton, Norton v Norton*, [1911] 2 Ch 27, per Joyce, J at p 40

(r) In *Brudenell v Elues* (1801), 1 East, 442, 454, the reason given was that the subsequent limitation was made to depend on the limitations to persons incapable of taking under the rule, and was not to take effect until they were extinct see also *Palmer v Holford* (1828), 4 Russ 403, *Re Abbott, Peacock v Frigout*, [1893] 1 Ch 54, per SARGENT, J, at p 57

(s) Thus a trust to take effect "on failure of" a trust made void by the rule may be valid as an alternative trust (*Willson v Cobley*, [1870] W N 46) In *Monypenny v Dering*, *supra*, Lord St LEONARDS, LC, at p 182, said, "where there are gifts over which are void for perpetuity, and there is a subsequent and independent clause which is within the line of perpetuities, effect cannot be given to such a clause unless it will dovetail in, and accord with, previous limitations which are valid"

(t) See p 360, *post*

(u) *Fry v Capper* (1853), Kay, 163, *Armitage v Coates* (1865), 35 Beav 1, *Re Teague's Settlement* (1870), L R 10 Eq 564, *Re Cunynghame's Settlement* (1871), L R 11 Eq 324, *Re Errington, Bawtree v Errington*, [1887] W N 23, *Shute v Hogge* (1888), 58 L T 546, *Whitby v Mitchell* (1889), 42 Ch D 494, not appealed from on this point (1890), 44 Ch D 85, C A In *Re Ridley, Buckton v Hay* (1879), 11 Ch D 645, JESSEL, MR, reluctantly followed the first-named cases, he considered that the restraint ought to have been held an exception In *Carver v Bowles* (1831), 2 Russ & M 301, *Thornton v Bright* (1836), 2 My & Cr 230, and *Dickinson v Mort* (1850), 8 Hare, 178, the decisions were to the contrary effect, but the point was not argued See, further, title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 371, 372

(a) *Wilson v Wilson* (1858), 4 Jur (N S) 1076, *Herbert v Webster* (1880), 15 Ch D 610, *Re Russell, Dorrell v Dorrell*, [1895] 2 Ch 698, C A *Re Ferneley's Trusts*, [1902] 1 Ch 543, *Re Millward, Steedman v Hobday* (1902), 87 L T 476, and *Re Game, Game v Tennant*, [1907] 1 Ch 276, are to this effect *Re Michael's Trusts* (1877), 46 L J (CH) 651 (afterwards not followed by the same judge in *Herbert v Webster*, *supra*), and *Re Ridley, Buckton v Hay* (1879), 11 Ch D 645 (where the restraints were held void without considering the question of severance), are no longer followed,

714 If there is a direction, not by way of executory trust, that property limited to any person shall be settled on him and his issue, on trusts which fail for remoteness, the direction for settlement on the issue is inoperative, and may be rejected, so long as there is a good absolute gift to the person in the first instance (b), but not in case there is no such absolute gift (c)

SECT. 5.
Failure of
Limitation
under the
Rule.

Directions for
settlement

SECT. 6.—Application of the Rule to Powers

SUB SECT. 1.—Powers in General

715 With regard to powers (d), objections on the ground of remoteness may be made either to the creation of the power or to the mode of exercise of the power

Objections to
powers

Objections to the validity of a power in its creation may be made on the grounds that the persons to exercise the power, or the time fixed by the terms of the power for its exercise or for its coming into effect, or the objects of the power or the subject-matter of the power, may possibly not be ascertained within the perpetuity period, such an objection, if well founded, prevents the power from ever being effectively exercised

Remoteness
in creation

To a disposition exercising a power validly created there may also be the objection that it has an effect not allowed by the rule, and such an objection is fatal to the particular disposition concerned

Remoteness
in exercise

716 The following are exceptions from the application of the rule — A power of appointment (e) or collateral power (f) limited after a failure of issue in tail, and bairable by the tenants in tail, powers created by way of security (g), and powers to raise money for payment of the debts of the creator of the power (h)

Exceptions

See also *Cooper v Laroche* (1881), 17 Ch D 368, 372 (where the grounds of the decision are no longer regarded as sufficient)

(b) *Arnold v Congreve* (1830), 1 Russ & M 209, *Carter v Bowles* (1831), 2 Russ & M 301 *Ring v Hardwick* (1840), 2 Beav 352 *Harvey v Stracey* (1852), 1 Drew 73, 140, *Stephens v Gadsden* (1855), 20 Beav 463, *Gerrard v Butler* (1855), 20 Beav 541, *Salmon v Salmon* (1860), 29 Beav 27, *Coole v Cooke* (1887), 38 Ch D 202 *Re Boyd, Nield v Boyd* (1890), 63 L T 92, *Hancock v Watson*, [1902] A C 14, 22 In *Kampf v Jones* (1837), 2 Keen, 756, where the first absolute gift was to an infant, the fund was carried to her account with liberty to apply, with a view to confirmation in case, on attaining twenty one, it was found to be for her benefit See also Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 534

(c) *Lassence v Tierney* (1849), 1 Mac & G 551, and as to gifts to a class, see p 346, ante

(d) As to powers generally, see title POWERS

(e) *Eno v Eno* (1847), 6 Hare, 171, *Bandon (Earl) v Moreland*, [1910] 11 R 220 As to limitations after estates tail, see p 323, ante

(f) *Lee v Vincent* (1584), Cro Eliz 26, and see p 325, ante As to collateral powers, see title POWERS

(g) As to the powers of mortgagees, see p 364, post

(h) *Silk v Prime* (1768), 1 Bro. C C 138, n *Holder d Sulyard v Preston* (1769), 2 Wils 400, and, as to trusts for payment of debts and the explanation of this exception, see p 327, ante For another explanation of the validity of these powers, see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, s 486

SECT 6

SUB-SECT 2—General Powers of Appointment

Application
of the Rule
to Powers.Remoteness
in donees

717 The donee of a general power of appointment must be a person who, if existing at all, cannot fail to be ascertained within the perpetuity period reckoned from the time of creation of the power (*i*)

Such a power conferred on persons living at the time of creation of the power (*j*), or on the survivor of any number of such persons (*k*), is valid. The donee may even be unborn at that time, so long as it is certain, as in the case of the child of a living person, that he will be in existence and ascertainable within the proper period, at all events where the power is equivalent to absolute ownership (*l*), but if the donee will not necessarily be in existence and ascertainable within the proper period, for example, if he is the survivor of a class of persons not then in existence, the power is void (*m*)

Severable
powers

718 A power given to a series of persons may be severable (*n*). For example, if it is given to a named person and others, filling with him a certain position, as that of trustee, it will be validly exercised by the named person (*o*), or, if given to a living person, his heirs or assigns, it can at all events be exercised by the living person (*p*)

Remoteness
in con-
tingency on
which power
is exercisable

719 The contingency on which the power is to become exercisable must also be within the perpetuity period (*q*)

A general power of appointment conferred on an unborn person, who must necessarily be in existence within the proper period, for example, the child of a living person, exercisable by deed or will

(*i*) *Re Hargreaves, Midgley v Talley* (1890), 43 Ch D 401, C A. As to general powers, see title POWERS

(*j*) Sugden, Powers, p 394, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 483

(*k*) *Robinson v Harcastle* (1786), 2 Bro CC 22, per Lord THURLOW, L C, at p 30 (a special power in that case), adopted in *Thellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112, H L, per Lord ELDON, L C, at p 145

(*l*) *Bray v Hammersley* (1830), 3 Sim 513, affirmed *sub nom Bray v Bree* (1834), 2 Cl & Fin 453, H L, see, further, note (*r*), p 355, post

(*m*) *Re Hargreaves, Midgley v Talley*, *supra* (where the donee was the longest liver of two living persons and all their children)

(*n*) *Re Abbott, Peacock v Frigout*, [1893] 1 Ch 54, 60, and, as to a non-exclusive power severable among the objects, see *Bell v Bell* (1862), 13 1 Ch R 517, C A

(*o*) *Attenborough v Attenborough* (1855), 1 K & J 296 (a discretionary power given by a testator to "my brother J and other my trustees")

(*p*) *Bandon (Earl) v Moreland*, [1910] 11 R 220 (a power of selection of land given by a settlement to a tenant for life, "his heirs or assigns"). In *Grange v Tving* (1665), O Bridg 107, a settlement contained a power of revocation reserved to the settlor and the heirs of his body, and it was held that his daughter could exercise the power after his death. The question of perpetuity was not discussed (the case was before *Norfolk v Duke* Case (1685), 3 Cas in Ch 1, H L), and it is the opinion of GRAY (Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 475, n) that the case is not law, see also Sugden, Powers, p 152, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 483, n. *Maraden*, Rule against Perpetuities, p 24, *Bandon (Earl) v Moreland*, *supra*, at p 229

(*q*) *Blight v Hartnoll* (1881), 19 Ch D 294 (power not exercisable until after a sale of the property, see, however, GRAY, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 476, note 2).

(but not when exercisable by will only) being equivalent to absolute ownership, is not invalid (r), except in cases where other restrictions, such as a necessary consent of trustees, introduce an element of uncertainty, which may not necessarily be resolved within the proper period (s).

SECT. 6.
Application
of the Rule
to Powers.

A power exercisable only by the will of a person unborn at the creation of the power is invalid, since it ties up the property until the death of such person, and, therefore, beyond the perpetuity period (t). If, however, the donee was alive at the creation of the power, there can be no objection on the ground of perpetuity (a).

720 The contingency on which the appointment is to take effect must also be confined within the perpetuity period, in so far as the contingency is prescribed by the creator of the power, the period is calculated from the time of creation of the power (b).

Remoteness
in con-
tingency on
which power
takes effect

Accordingly, the usual general power in a marriage settlement given to the wife, or in a will given to a lady unmarried at the death of the testator, to appoint generally, in default of her future issue taking vested interests under previous gifts, is valid (c), but the power is not valid where the children are to take vested interests at an age greater than twenty-one (d).

(r) *Bray v Hammersley* (1830), 3 Sim 513, affirmed, without reported argument on this point, *sub nom Bray v Bree* (1834), 2 Cl & Fin 453, H L, and followed in *Fry v Capper* (1853), Kay, 163. The matter was assumed without argument in *Re Teague's Settlement* (1870), L R 10 Eq 564, *Re Meredith's Trusts* (1876), 3 Ch D 767, and see *Jebb v Tuqwell* (1855), 7 De G M & G 663, C A. In *Re Hargreaves, Midgley v Talley* (1890), 43 Ch D 401, C A, the power was exercisable by deed or will, but the possibly unborn person, the donee of the power, might not be ascertained within the period. In *Re Abbott, Peacock v Frigout*, [1893] 1 Ch 54, it was argued that such a power (a special power in that case) was invalid, but it was only necessary to decide that the gift in default of appointment was valid.

(s) *Webb v Sadler* (1873), 8 Ch App 419.

(t) *Wollaston v King* (1869), L R 8 Eq 165, *Cooke v Cooke* (1887), 38 Ch D 202, *Whitby v Mitchell* (1889), 42 Ch D 494 (the point was not argued on appeal, S C (1890), 44 Ch D 85, C A), and see *Hutchinson v Tottenham* [1898] 1 I R 403, affirmed, [1899] 1 I R 344, C A, *Tredennick v Tredennick*, [1900] 1 I R 354.

(a) *Phipson v Turner* (1838), 9 Sim 227, *Morse v Martin* (1865), 34 Beav 500, *Slark v Dakyns* (1874), 10 Ch App 35. In all these cases a special power was executed by an appointment in favour of a child, alive at the creation of the power, for life, and after his death as he should by will appoint.

(b) *Re Norton, Norton v Norton*, [1911] 2 Ch 27. Thus, in *Bristow v Boothby* (1826), 2 Sim & St 465 (afterwards (1829) affirmed by Lord LYNDEHURST, L C, see 3 My & Cr 151, *per COTTENHAM*, L C), after limitations in tail which did not exhaust all the issue, a general power of appointment was given to a living person on general failure of issue, and it was held void because conditioned to take effect on an event too remote, see *Eno v Eno* (1847), 6 Hare, 171. It would appear, therefore, that a power may be invalid although given to a living person, and therefore exercisable only during his life, see, however, *Jarman on Wills*, 6th ed, p 310.

(c) It must be known within twenty-one years from the death of the donee of the power whether the children take under the gift to them at twenty-one.

(d) *Trustees, Executors, and Agency Co, Ltd. v Jenner* (1897), 22

SECT 6

**Application
of the Rule
to Powers**

A power for an unborn person to appoint so that the appointment takes effect on his death is invalid (e), and so is a power to appoint so that the appointment takes effect on his marriage, for in such a case marriage is as uncertain as death with regard to the time when it is to take place (f)

**Remoteness
in the
appointees****Time from
which period
runs**

721 As regards the validity in its creation of a general power, no question can arise whether the objects of the power can be ascertained within the perpetuity period or not (g). The freedom of disposition and choice of alienee possessed by the donee is the same as if he were absolute owner (h). In the case, therefore, of a general power, if the power is well created, the perpetuity period for the purpose of exercise of the power must be calculated not from the time of creation of the power, but from the time of its exercise (i). This holds good although the power is made exercisable by will only (j), or with any other formalities of execution (k).

SUB-SECT 3 - *Special Powers of Appointment***Special
powers
generally**

722 Special powers of appointment (l), as regards their creation, are subject to the propositions above stated as applicable to general powers of appointment with respect to the ascertainment during the perpetuity period of (1) the donees who are to exercise them (2) the time at which they are to be exercised, and (3) the time at which they are to take effect (m). But in the case of special powers the perpetuity period is always calculated from the time of the creation of the power (m).

Victorian Law Reports, 584. *Re O'Brien's Estate, Prytz v Trustees, Executors, and Agency Co., Ltd* (1899), 24 Victorian Law Reports, 360

(e) See note (t), p 355 *ante*

(f) *Morgan v Gionow* (1873), L. R. 16 Eq. 1, 10, compare *Re Finch and Chew's Contract*, [1903] 2 Ch. 486

(g) As to special powers, see p 357, *post*

(h) See title POWERS, Lewis Law of Perpetuity p 483, Sugden, Powers p 394, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 524. The view of Powell (note to Famine Executory Devices, p 5) that a general power was only equivalent to absolute ownership where the donee had the absolute interest in default of appointment is not now accepted, see *Rous v Jackson* (1885), 29 Ch. D. 521

(i) See the cases cited in note (i), p 332, *ante*, Butler, note to Co. Litt. 272 b, *Jee v Audley* (1787), 1 Cox, Eq. Cas. 324 (a case of a limitation in exercise of a general power, see 2 Ves. 365), *Taylor v Froisher* (1852) 5 De G. & Sm. 191, and title POWERS

(j) *Rous v Jackson*, *supra*, *Re Flower Edmonds v Edmonds* (1887) 55 L. J. (Ch.) 200, *Stuart v Babington* (1891), 27 L. R. Ir. 531, not following *Re Powell's Trusts* (1869), 39 L. J. (Ch.) 188 (which case is, however, considered by Gray (Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., ss 520 *et seq*) as the soundest authority), and see p 355, *ante*

(k) *Rous v Jackson*, *supra*. The formalities required must only relate to execution, otherwise they would amount to an independent restriction as in *Webb v Sadler* (1873), 8 Ch. App. 419 (consent of trustees required)

(l) As to special powers of appointment generally, see title POWERS

(m) See p 353 *ante* and see p 357, *post*. As to remoteness in the donee, see *Re Hargreaves, Midgley v Tailley* (1890), 43 Ch. D. 401, C.A., as to remoteness in the time of exercise, see *Wollaston v King* (1869) L. R. 5 Eq. 165, as to remoteness in the contingency on which appointments

723. Special powers are subject to further restrictions, due to the fact that the class of objects in favour of whom the power may be executed is limited by the creator of the power. If this class is to be ascertainable on a contingency, the contingency must be one which must necessarily occur within the perpetuity period, reckoning from the date of the creation of the power (*n*). The power is void if the contingency, upon which the class of objects is to be ascertained, may be beyond the perpetuity period, even although the class forms part of a larger class, every member of which must be so ascertained. The rule requires the ascertainment not only of the extreme limits of the class of persons who may take, but of the very persons who are to take (*o*).

NOTE 6.
Application of the Rule to Powers.

Remoteness in objects.

724 Where the class of objects is defined by such a description that, if any of the class exist at all, some, at all events, of the class must necessarily be ascertained within the proper period, although the whole class may not be, as in the case of a power to appoint to issue generally of a living person, then the power is valid, although within its terms an appointment may be made which is too remote. In such a case the only question that can arise will be as to how in fact the power has been exercised (*p*). In creating such a power as last mentioned, therefore, it is not necessary to insert words limiting the objects to persons born within a particular time, or otherwise taking vested interests within the proper period (*q*), the insertion of such a restriction has no influence in rendering valid an appointment, even so far as the appointees are within the restriction (*r*).

Class comprising valid and invalid objects

under the power are to take effect, see *Re Norton, Norton v Norton*, [1911] 2 Ch 27.

(*n*) *E.g.*, persons living at a certain time or surviving a certain person (*Blight v Hartnoll* (1881), 19 Ch D 294 (at time of sale), *Re Norton, Norton v Norton, supra*, and see *Re Bowles, Page v Page*, [1905] 1 Ch 371).

(*o*) *Blight v Hartnoll, supra*, per FRY, J., at p. 300. "This is because the rule is aimed at the practical object of telling who in deal with the property, and, if you cannot tell who are entitled to the property but only who may become entitled to the property, the property is practically tied up."

(*p*) *Griffith v Pownall* (1843), 13 Sim 393, 396, *Slark v Dalrymple* (1874), 10 Ch App 35, *Re Warren's Trusts* (1884), 26 Ch D 208, and see *Routledge v Dorrell* (1794), 2 Ves 357. Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p. 487. As to *Thomas v Thomas* (1844), 14 Sim 234, which is apparently to the contrary, see Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, Supplement, p. 166, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s. 512.

(*q*) Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p. 487, Sugden, Powers, 8th ed., p. 397, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s. 399, and compare Encyclopedia of Forms and Precedents, Vol. XIII, p. 356. It is, however, a desirable practice to refer to the rule by way of reminder to the parties (see *ibid.*, Vol. XIII, pp. 361, 426, 427, Vol. XV, p. 405, and, as to a portions clause, see *ibid.*, Vol. XIII, pp. 372, 395). The form given appears preferable to a restriction to the life of the donee and twenty one years after.

(*r*) *Kampf v Jones* (1837), 2 Keen, 756, *Whitby v Mitchell* (1889), 42 Ch D 494, *Hutchinson v Tottenham*, [1898] 1 I R 403, affirmed [1899] 1 I R 344, C.A., *Re Beales' Settlement Barrett v Beales*, [1905] 1 Ch 256, *Re Wright, Whitworth v Wright*, [1906] 2 Ch 288. A suggestion was

SECT 6

Application
of the Rule
to Powers.Remoteness
in appoint-
tees.Test for
appoint-
mentsCircum-
stances taken
into account

725 The exercise of a special power of appointment takes effect as a selection among the objects(s), and as a delegated disposition by the creator of the power (t) The donee, therefore, may not, by exercising the power, create estates or interests which the creator of the power could not himself in like circumstances have created by some other disposition instead of creating the power (a) In other words, while the circumstances in which the appointment is made are considered and taken into account, the perpetuity period is reckoned from the time of creation of the power, and not, as in the case of a general power, from the time of exercise (b)

An appointment is conveniently tested in this respect by placing the estates and interests created by the appointment in the instrument creating the power in the place of the power itself as if the instrument creating the power and the instrument executing the power had been incorporated in one instrument (c) In adopting this test the language of the appointment should neither be written literally into the instrument creating the power, for in that case contradictions of time would be introduced (d), nor be translated into the language which the creator of the power would have used at the time of creation to describe the appointees or to fix the times of vesting of their interests (e) The appointment should be read into the prior instrument with reference to all its attendant circumstances at the time when it took effect (f)

made in Jarman on Wills, 1st ed, p 250, and adopted in Lewis Law of Perpetuity, p 498, that an appointment among the whole class without the restriction would be good *pro tanto*, but Lewis (Law of Perpetuity, p 499) and Gray (Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 538) point out insuperable difficulties in adopting this suggestion, which has not been supported by subsequent editors of Jarman on Wills, nor by any decision of a court As to *Stroud v Norman* (1854), Kay, 313, see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 540

(s) Co Litt 272 b, Butler's note

(t) See, generally, title POWERS

(a) Lewis Law of Perpetuity, p 488, *Marlborough (Duke) v Godolphin (Lord)* (1759), 1 Eden 404, *per HENLY v Lord Keeper*, at p 417, affirmed, *Spencer (Lord) v Marlborough (Duke)* (1763), 3 Bro Parl Cas 232, *Whitting v Whitting* (1908) 53 Sol Jo 100

(b) *Robinson v Harcastle* (1786), 2 Bro C C 22, (1788), 2 Term Rep 241, 380, 781, *Routledge v Dorrit* (1794), 2 Ves 357, *Massey v Bailton* (1844), 71 Eq R 95, observed upon, however, as to the application of the rule to the facts of the case, in *Re Hallinan's Trusts*, [1904] 1 I R 452, C A, *per PORTER, MR*, at pp 456, 458, *Chance v Chance* (1853), 16 Beav 572, *Slark v Dakyns* (1874), 10 Ch App 35, *Re Coulman, Munby v Ross* (1885), 30 Ch D 186, *Cooke v Cooke* (1897), 38 Ch D 202, *Re Boyd, Nield v Boyd* (1890), 63 L T 92, *Tredennick v Tredennick*, [1900] 1 I R 354, *Whitby v Von Luoddecke*, [1906] 1 Ch 783, Sugden, Powers, p 396, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 515

(c) *Marlborough (Duke) v Godolphin (Lord)* (1750), 2 Ves Sen 61, 78, *Hurley v Stracey* (1852), 1 Drew 73, 134, *D'Abbadie v Bicorn* (1871), 5 I R Eq 205, *Re Brown and Sibly's Contract* (1876), 3 Ch D 156, *Re Thompson, Thompson v Thompson*, [1906] 2 Ch 199

(d) *Re Thompson, Thompson v Thompson*, *supra*, *per JOYCE, J*, at p. 205

(e) *Re Hallinan's Trusts*, [1904] 1 I R 452, C A., Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 517, criticising the contrary view in Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 491

(f) See note (v), p 333, *ante*.

It is as if the creator had left a blank in the limitations or succession of interests in the instrument creating the power and had himself, at the date and in the circumstances existing when the appointment took effect, filled up that blank

An appointment by will is ambulatory until the death of the testator, and the appointment may be valid at his death although it would have been invalid at the date of the will (g).

726 A special power may therefore be exercised in favour of an object of the power by giving him a life interest and a general power of appointment by will only, if he is alive at the creation of the power (h), but not if he is unborn at the creation of the power (i)

An appointment after the deaths of any objects of the power to their next of kin is valid in the case of an object alive at the creation of the power, subject to the question whether the next of kin are objects of the power, but is invalid under the rule against perpetuities in the case of an object unborn at the creation of the power (j)

727 Where an appointment is made which is invalid wholly or partially under the rule, and in the same instrument of appointment a person concurs, as a party to the deed or otherwise, who is an object of the power, and one to whom a perfectly valid appointment might have been made of the property appointed, then, if the facts warrant it, and if there is no question of a fraud on the power (k), the appointment may be treated as an appointment to that person absolutely, with a subsequent settlement or disposition by him in favour of the actual appointees (l). The acts of concurrence must be such as to make the disposition binding on the object concurring (m).

728 The principles as to rejecting separable invalid restrictions on validly created interests, and other rules as to direct limitations (n), apply to appointments under powers (o)

SECT. 5. Application of the Rule to Powers.

Appointment
for life with
special power
by will

Appoint-
ment to next
of kin

Invalid
appointment
with the
concurrence
of an object

Rejection of
restrictions

(g) *Re Thompson, Thompson v Thompson*, [1906] 2 Ch 199, 205

(h) *Phipson v Turner* (1838), 9 Sim 227, *Morse v Martin* (1865), 34 Beav 500, *Slark v Dakyns* (1874), 10 Ch App 35

(i) *Wollaston v King* (1869), L R 8 Eq 165, *Whitby v Mitchell* (1889), 42 Ch D 494, *Tredennick v Tredennick*, [1900] 1 L R 354, and see *Cooke v Cooke* (1887), 38 Ch D 202

(j) *Re Coulman, Munby v Ross* (1885), 30 Ch D 186. As to appointments to executors and administrators of an unborn person, see *Webb v Sadler* (1873), 8 Ch App 419, 427, 428

(k) *See Buley v Buley* (1858), 25 Beav 299, and title POWERS

(l) *Routledge v Doxall* (1794), 2 Ves 357, 362, *Whitting v Whitting* (1908), 53 Sol Jo 100, and see *Morgan v Gironow* (1875), L R 16 Eq 1, 10 (where the ground of invalidity of one daughter's appointment was said to be that she did not concur in the appointment, and therefore there was no settlement on her issue other than by the exercise of the power), see *Gray, Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed., ss 528, 529. As to the effect of such concurrence generally, see title POWERS

(m) *See Brudenell v Elwes* (1802), 7 Ves 382, 390

(n) See p 352, ante

(o) Thus, invalid directions for settlement were rejected in appointments in *Carver v Bowles* (1831), 2 Russ & M 301, 304, *Harvey v Shacey* (1852), 1 Drew 73, 140, *Stephens v Galsden* (1855), 20 Beav 463, *Gerrard v Buller* (1855), 20 Beav 541, *Cooke v Cooke* (1887), 38 Ch D 202, *Re Boyd, Nield v Boyd* (1890), 63 L T 92, and see *Griffith v Pownall*

SECT 6

Application of the Rule to Powers

Deduction of interest invalidly appointed

Effect on gift in default of appointment

Effect on gift subject to exercise of power

729 Subject to the rules permitting the separation of any part of an appointment capable of being separated, the rejection of invalid restrictions, a valid further appointment (*p*) or valid confirmation (*q*), the whole of any interest which is invalidly appointed under the rule against perpetuities goes to the persons entitled in default of appointment (*r*)

730 The fact that a power may be exercised in a manner contrary to the rule does not affect a gift in default of appointment, which takes effect unless it is itself obnoxious to the rule against perpetuities (*s*). This is so because, until the power is exercised, the property remains vested in those who take in default of appointment (*t*)

731 A gift to take effect on the determination of prior interests including interests to be appointed under a power, may take effect as an independent alternative gift. If the power is not exercised, or is exercised so as to render the subsequent gift unobjectionable under the rule, the gift takes effect, and, if it is exercised so as to make the subsequent gift objectionable under the rule, the gift will be void, so that until the exercise of the power it cannot be said whether the gift is good or bad (*u*)

(1843) 13 Sim 393, and restraints on anticipation in appointments to females were rejected in *Re Teague's Settlement* (1870), L R 10 Eq 564, *Re Cunynghame's Settlement* (1871), L R 11 Eq 324, *Shute v Hogge* (1888), 58 L T 546, *Whitby v Mitchell* (1889), 42 Ch D 494. The marriage of the appointee is not an adoption of the trusts of the appointed fund, so as to establish the validity of the restraint clause (*Re Teague's Settlement*, *supra*, at p 569)

(*p*) *Morgan v Gronow* (1873), L R 16 Eq 1, *Wollaston v King* (1868), L R 8 Eq 165 (where there was a residuary appointment)

(*q*) A void appointment may, if circumstances afterwards make it possible, be confirmed by reappointment, but not by any mere expression of desire to confirm the invalid appointment (*Morgan v Gronow*, *supra*, at p 11)

(*i*) *Roulledge v Dorvil* (1794), 2 Ves 357, *Chance v Chance* (1853), 16 Beav 572, *Ratcliffe v Hampson* (1855), 1 Jur (N S) 1104, *Wollaston v King* (1869), L R 8 Eq 165, *D'Abbadie v Bizin* (1871), 5 I R Eq 205, *Whitby v Mitchell* (1889), 42 Ch D 494 affirmed (1890), 44 Ch D 85 (C A), *Re Boyd*, *Nield v Boyd* (1890), 63 L T 92. In *Re Heathcote*, *Trench v Heathcote*, [1891] W N 10, and *Re Crichton's Settlement*, *Sweetman v Butty* (1912), 106 L T 588, the persons so entitled in default of appointment were ordered to bring certain validly appointed interests into hotchpot. With regard to appointments by will under general powers, an interest invalidly appointed may pass under a residuary devise or bequest, see the Wills Act, 1837 (7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c 26), ss 25, 27 and the text, *supra*. As to appointments under special powers, an interest invalidly appointed will not as a general rule pass under a residuary devise or bequest (*Freme v Clement* (1881), 18 Ch D 499, where the contrary was held, was disapproved in *Holyland v Lewin* (1884), 26 Ch D 266, C A.)

(*s*) *Wollaston v King* (1869), L R 8 Eq 165, *Webb v Sadler* (1873), 8 Ch App 419; *Re Coulman*, *Munby v Ross* (1885), 30 Ch D 186, *Re Abbott*, *Peacock v Frigout*, [1893] 1 Ch 54, *Re Hobson's Will*, etc., *Hobson v Sharp*, [1907] Victorian Law Reports, 724

(*t*) See *Lambert v Thwaites* (1866), L R 2 Eq 151, 155, and title POWERS.

(*u*) *Re Bowles*, *Page v Page*, [1905] 1 Ch 371, approved in *Re Davies and Ken's Contract* [1910] 2 Ch 35, C A, in both of which cases powers to

732 In the case where a testator has a special power of appointment and exercises it in favour of objects not capable of taking under the rule, but at the same time disposes of his own property in favour of objects entitled in default of appointment, the latter persons are not bound to elect whether they will confirm the invalid disposition or take the interest in the testator's property (b)

SECT. 3.
Application
of the Rule
to Powers.

Election

SUB SECT. 4 — Collateral Powers

733 If a power of sale or other collateral power is created to arise on a future event, that event must be such as must necessarily happen within the perpetuity period (c)

Powers
arising on
contingency

734 The duration of a power, whether created to arise immediately or on a future event, is a matter of construction of the instrument creating it (d). Where the power is made exercisable, expressly or impliedly, during the continuance of the beneficial trusts declared by the instrument, then, so long as these beneficial trusts are valid within the rule, the power is validly exercisable, until the effect of the settlement is spent, and the estates under it become vested in possession (e)

Duration of
powers

735 Express or implied trusts for sale of land are by statute deemed, in favour of a purchaser, to be subsisting until the land has been conveyed to or under the direction of the persons interested in the proceeds of sale, but without prejudice to the order of any court restraining a sale (f)

Presumption
as to valid
continuance
of trusts for
sale

736 Powers, although framed in general terms, are limited by the nature of the limitations contained in the instrument, so that

Powers
framed in
general
terms

appoint to husbands or wives, which might have been exercised invalidly, did not displace gifts to take effect on the determination of the trusts, including the trusts arising under the appointments, and see p 349, *ante*

(b) *Robinson v Harcasle* (1788), 2 Bro C C 344, *Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, [1910] 1 Ch 1, C A, a case under the old rule (see p 364, *post*), approving the decisions in *Wollaston v King* (1868), L R 8 Eq 165, *Re Warren's Trusts* (1884), 26 Ch D 208, *Re Oliver's Settlement, Evered v Lugh*, [1905] 1 Ch 191, *Re Beales' Settlement, Barrett v Beales*, [1905] 1 Ch 256, *Re Wright, Whitworth v Wright*, [1906] 2 Ch 288, *Re Handcock's Trusts* (1889), 23 L R Ir 34, C A, and disapproving *Re Bradshaw, Bradshaw v Bradshaw*, [1902] 1 Ch 436, and see title EQUITY, Vol XIII, p 116, and compare p 366, *post*. The question is therefore settled in England, but see Gray, *Rule against Perpetuities*, 2nd ed., pp 421—436

(c) *Hale v Pew* (1858), 25 Beav 335, see *Re Davies and Kent's Contract*, [1910] 1 Ch 35, C A (a trust for sale), *Blight v Hartnoll* (1881), 19 Ch D 294, and see p 318, *ante*

(d) *Re Cotton's Trustees and London School Board* (1882), 19 Ch D 624, per FRY, J, at p 626, *Re Jump, Galloway v Hope*, [1903] 1 Ch 129

(e) *Trower v Knightley* (1821), Madd & G 134, *Boyce v Hanning* (1832), 2 Cr & J 334, *Wood v White* (1838), 4 My & Cr 460, *Lanisbery v Collier* (1856), 2 K & J 709, *Doncaster v Doncaster* (1856), 3 K & J 26, *Tate v Swinstead* (1859), 26 Beav 525, *Re Horsnall, Womersley v Horsnall*, [1909] 1 Ch 631. Similarly, as to powers exercisable only with the consent of persons entitled under the beneficial limitations (Real Property Commissioners' 3rd Report, p 34, *Biddle v Perkins* (1829), 4 Sim 135; *Powis v Capron* (1830), 4 Sim 138, n)

(f) Conveyancing Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo. 5, c. 37), s. 10 (3), (4)

SECT 6
Application
of the Rule
to Powers.

when, by reason of the expiration or cesser of those limitations, the absolute interests come into existence, the power, in general, is considered to be at an end (*g*) This affords a guarantee against remoteness in such cases This principle, however, has no application where the power is to take effect on the coming into existence of the absolute interests (*h*), whether for the purposes of division (*i*) or other purposes connected with the instrument (*j*) In these cases the power may be exercised validly in a reasonable time afterwards (*k*)

Powers which
may be
barred

737 Powers which may be barred by a tenant in tail are not obnoxious to the rule during the continuance of the estate tail (*l*) but a power of management annexed to an unvariable estate during minorities, not confined to the minorities of tenants in tail by purchase, is invalid (*m*), as is a similar power to cut timber (*n*)

Powers to
change nature
of interests

738 No power can be given to change the nature of the interests limited by the instrument at a time exceeding the limit prescribed by the rule (*o*)

SECT 7—Application of the Rule to Securities.

Mortgages

739 Where an estate or interest is invalidated by the rule against perpetuities, a mortgage, charge, or other security (*p*) upon that estate or interest is nugatory as a security But where an estate or interest is validly created, the rule does not appear to have any application to the estates, interests, or rights of an ordinary mortgagee and mortgagee, charger and chargee, or persons deriving

(*g*) *Peters v Lewes and East Grinstead Rail Co* (1881), 18 Ch D 429, C A, *Velson v Callow* (1848), 15 Sim 353, compare *Meller v Stanley* (1864), 2 De G J & Sm 183, C A (trust to renew lease indefinitely) In *Re Brown's Settlement* (1870) L R 10 Eq 349, 353, JAMES, V-C, said that so long as there is a settled estate in any part of the property, so long must the power remain in existence, and see title POWERS

(*h*) *Peters v Lewes and East Grinstead Rail Co*, *supra*

(*i*) *Re Cotton's Trustees and London School Board* (1882) 19 Ch D 624, *Re Henzell Holgate v Humphris*, [1887] W N 240, *Re Sudeley (Lord) and Baines & Co*, [1894] 1 Ch 334

(*j*) *Re Dyson and Fouke*, [1896] 2 Ch 720

(*k*) See *Fonhes v Peacock* (1846), 1 Ph 717, *Re Tweedie and Miles* (1884), 27 Ch D 315 (a case of a trust at discretion to sell, where the delay was held not unreasonable), *Re Sudeley (Lord) and Baines & Co*, *supra* In *Peters v Lewes and East Grinstead Rail Co*, *supra*, JESSEL, M R, at p 434, said that, in a case where there is nothing but absolute limitations of interests given in the first instance, no one would say that twenty one years was a reasonable time

(*l*) *Biddle v Perkins* (1829), 4 Sim 135, *Haring v Coventry* (1837), 1 My & K 249, *Wallis v Freestone* (1839), 10 Sim 225, *Cole v Sewell* (1843), 4 Dr & War 1 32 In *Lantsbery v Collier* (1856), 2 K & J 709 the power was held exercisable during the continuance of the settlement and after possibility of issue was extinct

(*m*) See p 325, *ante*

(*n*) *Ferrand v Wilson* (1845), 4 Hare, 344, criticised in Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 502, see p 380, *post*

(*o*) *Ware v Polhill* (1805), 11 Ves 257; *Peters v Lewes and East Grinstead Rail. Co*, *supra*, per JESSEL, M R, at p 433, *Tyrrell v. Naylor* (1892), 11 New Zealand Law Reports, 118

(*p*) See, generally, title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, pp. 65 *et seq.*

title under them, or to the exercise of the powers conferred by the security (q)

740 At all events, as regards the right of redemption, it is useless to provide that it must be exercised, if at all, within any limited period. Any such restriction is inoperative against the mortgagor, who may redeem at any time, however remote, subject to the provisions of the Statutes of Limitation (i). If, again, it is provided that the right shall not be exercised for a period which the court considers unreasonable, the restriction is invalid, not on the ground of perpetuity, but as a clog on the equity of redemption (s). A proviso for redemption at any time is not invalid under the rule (t), and where a rentcharge is granted by way of Welsh mortgage, a proviso for redemption at any time is valid (a).

SECT. 7.
Application
of the
Rule to
Securities.

Rights of
mortgagor
to redeem.

(q) *E.g.*, a vendor's lien for money only payable on a remote contingent event (*Quart v Eager* (1908), 18 Ontario Law Reports, 18), and compare a devise of land to secure a contingent debt (*Wood v Drew* (1864), 31 Beav 610, 615). Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., ss 562 *et seq.*, discusses the question whether, if, under a mortgage, the mortgagor and mortgagee's rights may not arise until a period beyond the limits of the rule (*e.g.*, if the condition of the mortgage was to pay the debt in thirty years), they would be void for remoteness, and gives the opinion that they would be void. The fact that the date for payment is fixed at an indefinitely distant time, however, does not appear to be treated as material (see the cases cited *supra*), except that where repayment is not to be made at all, or at Doomsday, or only at the option of the covenantor, the provision is void as repugnant (*Shep Touch*, ed Preston, p 369, *Re Tewkesbury Gas Co*, *Tysoe v The Co*, [1911] 2 Ch 279 affirmed, [1912] 1 Ch 1, C A). It is possible to suppose several kinds of transactions which, though resembling mortgages, are really not so in substance, *e.g.*, sales with provisos for repurchase, which create future interests to which the rule would apply. It has been suggested that the exemption of mortgages from the rule may be explained by the view that they are contracts, that the securities and the rights and interests legal and equitable, which they create, *e.g.*, the mortgagor's equity of redemption and the mortgagee's legal estate, are, in substance and reality, not future but present rights and interests, and that it is only the remedies, *e.g.*, sale, foreclosure, suits for redemption, which are future or indefinite in point of time. Gray, however (Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 569), deprecates such suggestions as "verbal jugglery." As the law stands, whatever be the true foundation of their exemption, they are undoubtedly exempt from the rule. Rentcharges securing personal covenants to pay annuities, upon a possibly remote event, have been held not to be within the rule, see *Morgan v Davy* (1883), Cab & F 114, which case, it has been suggested, may be supported on the ground that such rentcharges give merely a remedy, not a right of property (Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s 273 a), and see title RENTCHARGES AND ANNUITIES.

(r) See title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, pp 142 *et seq.* Different considerations may apply where the right of redemption is given to a third party, see *Marks v Marks* (1718), 10 Mod Rep 419.

(s) See title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, p 143. The period allowed as reasonable appears at present to be less than the perpetuity period.

(t) See *Hasker v Summers* (1884), 10 Victorian Law Reports, Equity Cases, 204.

(a) See *Howel v Price* (1715), 1 P Wins 201, *Bulwer v Astley* (1844), 1 Ph 422, both cases being between persons claiming under the mortgagor only; *Orde v Heming* (1886), 1 Vern 418. As to Welsh mortgages see title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI pp 87-88. As to rentcharges granted beneficially, compare note (h), p 321, *ante*.

SECT 7
Application
of the
Rule to
Securities.

Rights of
mortgagee

Company
securities

741. The rule against perpetuities does not apply to any restrictions on the estate or interest of the mortgagee (*b*) or on his powers of sale or other powers (*c*), granted or conferred by the mortgage, incidental to the estate of the mortgagee, and relating to the maintenance or enforcing of his security.

Collateral advantages given to the mortgagee are protected from objection on account of remoteness by the rule against clogging the equity of redemption (*d*)

742 A floating charge on a company's assets is treated as valid although the events upon which it may crystallise may take place at any remote period (*e*)

By statute, debentures of a company under the Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908, may be made irredeemable, or redeemable only on the happening of a contingency, however remote, or on the expiration of a period, however long (*f*)

Part III.—The Rule Prohibiting Limitations to Successive Generations of Unborn Issue.

SECT 1 —Nature of the Rule

The second
rule

743 The second rule against remoteness of limitation is as follows —

In the case of realty, after a limitation for life to any person not in existence at the time that the instrument creating the limitation becomes operative, a limitation by remainder to any issue of such person as purchasers is void (*g*) It has been

(*b*) *Gilbertson v Richards* (1860), 5 H & N 453, Ex Ch, Sugden, Powers, 8th ed, p 16, as to which, see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, ss 273a, 570

(*c*) Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 560, 1 Powell on Devises by Jarman, pp 250, 251 As to mortgages by deed where the powers are implied under the Conveyancing and Law of Property Act, 1881 (44 & 45 Vict c 41), no doubt can arise, the powers being statutory

(*d*) See title MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, pp 143, 144

(*e*) As to floating charges, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 348

(*f*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 69), s 103 re enacting the Companies Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 50), s 14, see title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 348 The latter enactment was apparently intended to negative the decision in *Re Southern Brazilian Rio Grande do Sul Rail Co, Ltd*, [1905] 2 Ch 78, in which case, however, no question as to the rule against perpetuities was raised

(*g*) *Whitby v Mitchell* (1890), 44 Ch D 85, C A., *Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, [1910] 1 Ch 1, C A., Fearn, Contingent Remainders, p 502, Sugden, Powers (ed 1861), p 393 Chas. Real Property, 3rd ed., p 115 The rule is sometimes called the rule in *Whitby v Mitchell*, but the rule is older than that case, for it was a rule of the common law (see *Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, *supra*, *Marlborough (Duke) v Godolphin (Earl)* (1759), 1 Eden 404, *Hay v Coventry (Earl)* (1789), 3 Term Rep 83, 86) It was formerly known as the rule against a "possibility on a possibility,"

SECT. 1.
Nature of
the Rule.

suggested that the rule is of wider application (*h*), and that the purpose of the rule relates to the ascertainment of the person who is to take under the limitations (*i*)

Under this rule, the limitation to the issue of the unborn person is void, although it may have been restricted so as to satisfy the rule against perpetuities (*h*), since the two rules are independent of each other (*l*)

under a principle, forbidding remote possibilities, which was applied to particular instances of remote contingencies (*Chedington's (Rector) Case* (1598), 1 Co Rep 153 a, 156 b, *Stafford's (Lord) Case* (1609), 8 Co Rep 73 b, 75 a, *Lampet's Case* (1612), 10 Co Rep 46 b 50 b, *Blamford v Blamford* (1615), 3 Bulst 98, 108 *Sanders v Cornish* (1631), Cio Cai 230, *London Corporation v Alford* (1640), Cio Car 576, *Pearse v Reeve* (1661), Poll 29, *Child v Baylie* (1618), Cro Jac 459, 461 *Buigis v Buigis* (1674), 1 Mod Rep 114, *Chapman d Oliver v Brown* (1766), 3 Burr 1626, *Cole v Sewell* (1843), 4 D1 & Wm 1, per SUGDEN, L C, at p 28, *Re Frost, Frost v Frost* (1889), 43 Ch D 246, 2 Cases with Opinions of Counsel, 435), but, since there is no rule that in the general sense of the words there cannot be a possibility on a possibility (*Cotton v Heath* (1639), 1 Roll Abr 612, *Snowe v Cuttler* (1664), 1 Lev 115 *Love v Windham* (1670), 1 Sid 450, 451, *Norfolk & (Duke) Case* (1685) 3 Cas in Ch 1, H L, per Lord NOTTINGHAM, L C, at pp 29, 30, *Thellusson v Woodford* (1799), 4 Ves 227 per BULLER, J, at p 327 *Iqerton v Brownlow (Earl)* (1853), 4 H L Cas 1, 53, 54, 76, 95, 122, 205), this phrase should not be used (*Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, [1910] 1 Ch 1, 10 C A) The principle against remote possibilities also forbids a limitation of a remainder to a corporation not *in esse*, or to the right heirs as purchasers, of a person not *in esse* (Challis, Real Property, 3rd ed., p 116, see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAI) Objection has been made that there is no trace of the rule in old cases (Lewis Law of Perpetuity, Supplement, p 124, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., ss 125 *et seq*) Such limitations were not attempted before the introduction of the rule against perpetuities, see *Marlborough (Duke) v Godolphin (Earl)* (1759), 1 Eden, 404, 415, and compare Williams Juridical Society Papers, Vol I, p 45, on the origin of the present mode of settlement The first limitation, to the unborn person himself, is valid, see p 338, *ante*

(*h*) It has been suggested that the rule may not be confined to cases where the second unborn person is the issue of the first unborn person (see *Honywood v Honywood* (1905), 92 L T 814, H L per Lord DAVY, at pp 815, 816 (the question arose on the limitation in this case, but was not argued, and the point was expressly reserved by the judgment), see also *Seaward v Wilcock* (1801), 5 East, 198, per Lord EYENBOROUGH, C J, at p 205, *Doe d Garrod v Garrod* (1831), 2 B & Ad 87, per Lord TENTERDEN, C J, at p 96, and compare note (*g*), p 336, *ante* In *Re Frost, Frost v Frost*, *supra*, at p 253, the rule was said to apply to a remainder, after limitations to an unmarried woman and to any surviving husband she might marry, to her children (not necessarily the children of such surviving husband) living at the death of the survivor, but the case has been criticised, see Challis, Real Property, 3rd ed., p 117 As to whether the rule applies where the first unborn person takes an estate tail, see 2 Preston, Abstracts of Title, p 115, where it is so stated, and Williams, Real Property, 20th ed., p 402 (a), where it is submitted that such limitations should be valid For other suggestions, see notes (*o*), (*r*), p 366, *post*

(*i*) *A G v Cummins* (1895), [1906] 1 I R 406, per PALLES, C B, at p 408, 1 Preston, Abstracts of Title, pp. 128, 129

(*k*) *Whitby v Mitchell* (1889), 42 Ch D 494, per KAY, J, at p 500, *Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, *supra*, at p 7 The observations in *Catlin v Brown* (1853), 11 Harc 372, per PAGE WOOD, V C, at p 375,

SECT 1

Nature of the Rule.**Application of the rule.****Application of the rule to powers**

744 This second rule applies to legal (*m*) and equitable (*n*) contingent remainders (*o*) created by limitations in instruments whether operating at common law under the Statute of Uses (*p*), or otherwise (*q*), but it does not apply to any limitations of personal estate (*r*), and, as to limitations in wills, is subject to the *cy-pres* doctrine (*s*)

745. In the case of appointments under special powers, the rule is applied as from the date when the instrument creating the power became operative (*t*) It has, it appears, been so applied without regard to the fact that, though the persons to take under the limitations were unborn at the date of the creation of the power, they were alive and ascertained at the date of the appointment (*a*)

The persons taking in default of appointment, on whom the void estate devolves, are not impliedly put to their election to confirm the appointment (*b*)

which appear to be to the contrary, were explained in *Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, [1909] 2 Ch 450, *per* Fyfe, J., at pp 458, 461, 462, as having no direct reference to this rule as distinct from the rule against perpetuities

(*l*) See *Honywood v Honywood* (1905), 92 L T 814, H L, *per* Lord DAVEY, at p 815

(*m*) *Whitby v Mitchell* (1890), 44 Ch D 85, C A

(*n*) *Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, [1910] 1 Ch 1, C A, following *Mony penny v Dering* (1852), 2 De G M & G 145, see *Hopkins v Hopkins* (1734), Cas temp Talb 44, 53, n, *Humberston v Humberston* (1717), 1 P Wms 332

(*o*) For a suggestion that the rule applies possibly also to executory devises, see 27 Law Quarterly Review, pp 112, 171, see also *Nicholl v Nicholl* (1777), 2 Wm Bl 1159 (where the *cy pres* doctrine was applied to an executory devise, but the case is of doubtful authority, see note (*n*), p 368, *post*, note (*g*), p 369, *post*)

(*p*) 27 Hen 8, c 10

(*q*) In *Whitby v Mitchell* (1889), 42 Ch D 494, (1890), 44 Ch D 85, C A, it was argued unsuccessfully that the rule did not apply to limitations by way of use

(*i*) *Re Bowles, Amedroz v Bowles*, [1902] 2 Ch 650 Accordingly personality may be limited to an unborn child for life, and after his death to his issue, provided that the limitations are valid under the rule against perpetuities (*Routledge v Dorrit* (1794), 2 Ves 357, 362) It has been suggested that executory bequests of terms of years are subject to the rule, see 27 Law Quarterly Review, pp 112, 171, where *Somerville v Leithbridge* (1795), 6 Term Rep 213, and *Beard v Westcott* (1822), 5 B & Ald 801, in King's Bench, and *Beard v Westcott* (1822), Turn & R 25, in Chancery, are cited as instances On the other hand, it may be said that these cases were instances of the application of the rule against perpetuities and that *Cadell v Palmer* (1833), 1 Cl & Fin 372, H L, affirming *Benbough v Edridge* (1827), 1 Sim 173, where, at p 209, the point was raised by Sugden, *arguendo*, may be pointed to as supporting the contrary view that the only restriction on such bequests is the rule against perpetuities

(*s*) See p 367, *post*

(*t*) *Whitting v Whitting* (1908), 53 Sol Jo 100, *Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, [1910] 1 Ch 1, C A In *Whitby v Mitchell* (1890), 44 Ch D 85, C A, the rule was applied as from the date of marriage articles in pursuance of which the settlement creating the power was made

(*a*) *Whitby v Mitchell*, *supra* (where the issue were confined by the appointment to issue living at the date of the appointment), *Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, [1910] 1 Ch 1, C A (where both the unborn person and the remote issue were alive and specifically named in the appointment) compare the cases under the rule against perpetuities, cited in note (*o*), p 353, *ante*

(*b*) *Re Nash, Cook v Frederick*, [1910] 1 Ch 1, C A., following the cases

SECT. 2—*The Cy-près Doctrine.*

SECT. 2.

**The
Cy-près
Doctrine.**

746. The *cy-près* doctrine is a rule of construction of wills (c), and, as applied to limitations void under the above rule, is as follows—

Cy-près
doctrine.

Where, in a will, there is a limitation of real estate to a person unborn for life, with remainders in tail to his children, or with successive remainders for life to his issue indefinitely, and the testator's intention that they shall take as purchasers cannot be legally effected, but there is a clear general intention that the estate is to go in a course of descent, then the limitation is construed as such an estate tail in the person to whom the estate is given for life as will, if unbarred, carry the property to all the persons to whom the testator has invalidly limited it and to no others (d).

The doctrine, first applied to executory trusts (c), applies also to direct devises (f), and to appointments by will under a power to an object of the power for life with remainder in tail to his first and other sons who are not objects of the power (g), but it does not apply to deeds (h), or to gifts of personal estate (i).

Application
of doctrine

as to the rule against perpetuities, cited in note (b), p. 361, *ante*, and see *Re Nash*, *Cook v Frederick* [1909] 2 Ch. 450, *per* EVE J., at pp. 470, 471.

(c) *Parfitt v Hember* (1867), L. R. 4 Eq. 443, 446, *Hampton v Holman* (1877), 5 Ch. D. 183, 190. The rule is generally spoken of as an example of effectuating the general intention of the testator by sacrificing the particular intention so far as may be necessary to carry out the former according to law—see also *Monypenny v Dering* (1852), 2 De G. M. & G. 145, 172, where Lord ST. LEONARDS, L. C., points out that the general intent is not carried into effect at the expense of the particular intent, for nothing is sacrificed.

(d) *Roulledge v Dorrit* (1794), 2 Ves. 357, *per* ARDEN, M. R., at p. 364, approved in *Monypenny v Dering*, *supra*, at p. 174, *Re Richardson*, *Parry v Holmes*, [1904] 1 Ch. 312, 340, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed., s. 643 adopted in *Re Mortimer Gray v Gray*, [1905] 2 Ch. 502, *per* FARWELL, J., at p. 506, and see *ibid.*, *per* COZENS HARDY, L. J., at p. 514.

(e) *Humberston v Humberston* (1717), 1 P. Wms. 2, *Lyddon v Ellison* (1854), 19 Beav. 565.

(f) *Pitt v Jackson* (1786), 2 Bro. C. C. 51 (as to which case see note (a), p. 368, *post*), *Griffith v Harrison* (1791), 3 Bro. C. C. 410, *Vanderplank v King* (1843), 3 Hare, 1, 12, *Stackpoole v Stackpoole* (1843), 6 I. Eq. R. 18, *Parfitt v Hember* *supra*, *Hampton v Holman*, *supra*, *Mortimer v West* (1828), 2 Sim. 274, 282, to the contrary, is not followed.

(g) *Pitt v Jackson*, *supra*, *Spencer (Lord) v Marlborough (Duke)* (1763), 3 Bro. Parl. Cas. 232, *Stackpoole v Stackpoole*, *supra*, *Re Dennehy's Estate* (1865), 17 I. Ch. R. 97, C. A. (where the court refused to apply the doctrine to a will under which the appointees were put to their election, as to this case, see Jarman on Wills, 6th ed., p. 289, note (o)), *Line v Hall* (1873), 43 L. J. (Ch.) 107.

(h) *Brudenell v Elwes* (1802), 7 Ves. 382, and see S. C. (1801), 1 East. 442, *Bell v Bell* (1862), 13 I. Ch. R. 517, 526, *Re Dennehy's Estate*, *supra*, *per* BRADY, L. C., at p. 103, *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity*, p. 440, *Adams v Adams* (1777), 2 Cowp. 651, Sugden, Powers, 8th ed., p. 502. In *Hucks v Hucks* (1754), 2 Ves. Sen. 568, if that case is an example of the application of the rule, it was applied to articles for a marriage settlement; and see 2 Preston, Abstracts of Title, pp. 166, 167, *Lewis, Law of Perpetuity*, p. 440, n.

(i) *Roulledge v Dorrit*, *supra*, at p. 364, *Harvey v. Towell* (1847),

SECT 2
The
Cy-près
Doctrine

Implication

747. Where the court comes to the conclusion that, although the testator has used words indicating an intention that persons taking under the limitation shall take for life only, the limitation, upon its true construction, gives an estate of inheritance in fee (*k*) or in tail either expressly (*l*) or by implication (*m*), then the court rejects the words indicating an intention of giving a life interest only as being repugnant to, or as being merely descriptive of, the estate of inheritance

Restriction to
objects of
testator's
bounty.

748 Neither by implication nor by the doctrine of *cy-près* can an estate be carried to a class or portion of a class for whom the testator never intended to provide (*n*). The doctrine is inapplicable, therefore, where an estate tail conferred on the first unborn person would either include any class of his issue who are not intended to take (*o*), or omit any of his issue who are intended to take (*p*), or where, in passing from generation to generation, the children of the parent dying are to take their parent's share equally between them (*q*). So, too, where an estate tail would not describe the estate of the issue or the course of descent as where the issue of the unborn person are to take under a power of appointment by him (*r*), or are to take an estate in fee simple (*s*), or successive estates for years determinable on lives (*t*), no estate tail can be created under this doctrine

The doctrine applies, however, where the children of the unborn person are to take as tenants in common in tail (*a*)

7 Hare, 231, 234, *Raphael v Boehm*, *Cockburn v Raphael* (1852), 22 L J (CH) 299, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 435, Sugden, Powers, 8th ed, p 502. As to a mixed fund, see *Boughton v James* (1844) 1 Coll 2644, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 437, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities 2nd ed, s 647, n

(*k*) *Doe d Cotton v Stenlake* (1810), 12 East, 515

(*l*) *Reece v Steel* (1828), 2 Sim 233, *Hugo v Williams* (1872), L R 14 Eq 224

(*m*) *Wollen v Andrewes* (1824), 2 Bing 126, *Brooke v Turner* (1835), 2 Bing (N C) 422, *Trash v Wood* (1839), 4 My & Cr 324, *Forsbrook v Forsbrook* (1867), 3 Ch App 93, compare *Goodtitle d Cross v Wodhull* (1745), Willes, 592, observed upon in Prior on Issue, p 62, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 448, and Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 656, note 7, who express the opinion that this case was simply an instance of the rule in *Shelley's Case*

(*n*) *Monypenny v Dering* (1852), 2 De G M & G 145, 174, *Re Rising, Rising v Rising*, [1904] 1 Ch 533, *Re Mortimer, Gray v Gray*, [1905] 2 Ch 502, *Nicholl v Nicholl* (1777), 2 Wm Bl 1159, if and so far as it decided the contrary, is not now followed (see *Re Mortimer, Gray v Gray*, *supra*, at p 512), though the case is supported in *Monypenny v Dering*, *supra*, at p 175

(*o*) *Monypenny v Dering*, *supra*, *Re Mortimer, Gray v Gray*, *supra*

(*p*) *Re Rising, Rising v Rising*, *supra*

(*q*) *Re Richardson, Parry v Holmes*, [1904] 1 Ch 332, 341, compare *Bristow v Warde* (1794), 2 Ves 336, 349. As to *Mogg v Mogg* (1815), 1 Mer 654, see Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 431, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, ss 635, 636

(*r*) *Bristow v Warde*, *supra*

(*s*) *Hale v Few* (1858) 25 Beav 335

(*t*) See *Somerville v Lethbridge* (1795), 6 Term Rep 213, *Beard v Westcott* (1822), 5 B & Ald 801, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 441

(*a*) *Pitt v Jackson* (1786), 2 Bro C C 51 (not reversed on this point on a

749 In a case where estates for life are given to a class of children of a living person, and estates tail in the share of each member of the class are given to the children of that member, the doctrine has been applied to the shares of such members of the class as are unborn in the testator's lifetime, the limitations being valid as they stand in the case of those members born in his lifetime (*b*)

SNODGRASS
The
Cy-près
Doctrine.

Application
to shares dis-
tributively

Similarly, where the limitations are to a number of persons and their eldest sons in succession, if the construction necessitates giving estates for life only to those persons who are in being, the *cy-près* doctrine may be applied to the limitations to those persons who are unborn (*c*)

750 The doctrine has been held to have no application where a number of successive estates for life were given to a definite number of generations of issue (*d*), or where an indefinite number of successive estates for life were given in favour of a larger class than would take under an estate tail (*e*)

Succession
not in course
of descent

751 The doctrine is not to be extended (*f*), and no contingent limitation can be introduced in order to enable an ultimate limitation, which would otherwise be remote, to take effect (*g*)

Doctrine not
extended

bill of review in *Smith v Camelford* (Lord) (1795), 2 Ves 698 (see *ibid* at p 711), no decision on the question of *cy-près* being given by the Lord Chancellor (see *Routledge v Dorrit* (1794), 2 Ves 357, *per* ARDEN, M R, at p 364), see also *Mogg v Mogg* (1815), 1 Mer 654 (where estates tail were implied), *Vanderplank v King* (1843), 3 Hare, 1, *Pitt v Jackson* (1786), 2 Bro C C 51, though described as going to the verge of the law, is regarded as correct (*Brudenell v Elwes* (1801), 1 East, 442, 451, *Starbuck v Starbuck* (1843), 6 I L R 18, 30, *Monypenny v Dering* (1847), 16 M & W 418, 431—436 (1852), 2 De G M & G 145, 175, *Re Mortimer, Gray v Gray*, [1905] 2 Ch 502 515, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity p 429) *Re Wilson's Will, Dehes v Wilson* (1899), 25 Victorian Law Reports, 193 (where the issue took at twenty one), appears to be a step further than *Pitt v Jackson*, *supra*

(*b*) *Vanderplank v King*, *supra*, applied in *Peyton v Lambert* (1858), 8 I C L R 485, see *East v Twyford* (1853), 4 H L Cas 517, *per* Lord ST LEONARDS, at p 556, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity Supplement, p 146, Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 650, and note thereto Jarman on Wills, 6th ed, p 293

(*c*) *East v Twyford* (1851), 9 Hare, 713, *per* TURNER, V C, at p 729, affirmed (1853), 4 H L Cas 517

(*d*) *Seaward v Willock* (1804), 5 East 198

(*e*) *Re Richardson, Parry v Holmes*, [1904] 1 Ch 332, 341—343, explaining *Seaward v Willock*, *supra*, distinguishing *Mortimer v West* (1828), 2 Sim 274, and approving Jarman on Wills, 5th ed, p 270, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 433

(*f*) *Brudenell v Elwes* (1802), 7 Ves 382, 390, *Boughton v James* (1844), 1 Coll 26, 44, *Re Mortimer, Gray v Gray*, [1905] 2 Ch 502, 512, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 453

(*g*) *Re Mortimer, Gray v Gray*, *supra*, *Nicholl v Nicholl* (1777) 2 Wm Bl 1159 (where the estate tail was made determinable), is not followed

Part IV.—Restriction of Accumulation.

SECT. 1

Limits of Period of Accumula- tion

Duration of
accumulation
generally

(1) Rule
against
perpetuities

SECT. 1—Limits of Period of Accumulation.

752 Trusts for accumulation and dispositions directly or indirectly causing accumulation, wholly or partially, of the rents, profits, or income of any real or personal property are subject to the following restrictions —

753 First, whatever the date of the instrument, or the purpose of the accumulation, not being for the payment of debts or incumbrances (*a*), such trusts and provisions are subject to the rule against perpetuities, and must therefore be so limited that the accumulation must necessarily come to an end, or be determinable on the beneficiaries attaining vested interests, within the perpetuity period (*b*). This is the only restriction in cases not coming within the second or third rules following (*c*)

(2) Accumu-
lations Act,
1800

754 Secondly (*d*), in all instruments dated after the 28th July, 1800 (*e*), and in wills dated before that date of testators who were living and of sound mind after the 28th July, 1801 (*f*) whatever the purpose of accumulation (with certain specified exceptions (*g*)), property cannot be settled or disposed of so that the rents, profits, or income are to be wholly or partially (*h*) accumulated for any longer term than such one of the following periods (*i*) as either is

(*a*) As to the exception of accumulations to pay off debts or incumbrances, see p 327, *ante*, and see p 376, *post*

(*b*) As to this period, see p 300, *ante*

(*c*) *Harrison v Harrison* (1787), cited *Thellusson v Woodford* (1799), 4 Ves 227 286, 338, *Thellusson v Woodford* (1805), 11 Ves 112 H L *Shaw v Rhodes* (1836), 1 My & Cr 135, 154, affirmed *sub nom Evans v Hellier* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 114, H L, *Curtis v Lukin* (1842), 5 Beav 147 *Wilson v Wilson* (1851), 1 Sim (N S) 288, 298, and for cases of accumulations void under this rule, see note (*n*), p 371, *post*

(*d*) Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), s 1 The Act originated in the discussion produced by the will of Mr Thellusson, which came before the court in *Thellusson v Woodford* (1799), 4 Ves 227 (affirmed after the Act was passed (1805), 11 Ves 112, H L), and is commonly called the Thellusson Act (see Hargrave, *Thellusson Act*, pp 1 *et seq*. 2 Jurisconsult Exercitationes, p 307) As to the proper mode of construction of the statute, see *Varlo v Faden* (1859), 1 De G F & J 211, *per* Lord CAMPBELL, L C, at pp 222, 223

(*e*) The date of commencement of the Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98) (*ibid*, s 1) The Act applies to deeds as well as wills (*Re Rosslyn's (Lady) Trust* (1848), 16 Sim 391)

(*f*) Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), s 4

(*g*) See note (*m*), p 371, *post*, and p 376, *post*

(*h*) *Eg*, a specific aliquot part of the rents (*Shaw v Rhodes* (1836), 1 My & Cr 135, 155 (two thirds)), or the excess of income over a certain sum (*Trickey v Trickey* (1832), 3 My & K 560), or over what is applied to other purposes (*Mathews v Keble* (1868), 3 Ch App 691)

(*i*) Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), s 1, and see *Re Collins, Collins v Collins* (1886), 32 Ch D 229, *Re Smead, Archer v Prall* (1886), 54 L T 929 As to these periods, see, further, p. 375, *post*, and as to the considerations of public policy embodied in them, see 2 Preston, *Abstracts of Title*, p 180.

expressly chosen by the instrument or is appropriate to the disposition thereby made, namely —

(i) the life or lives of the grantor or grantors, settlor or settlors,
(ii) the term of twenty-one years from the death of any such grantor or settlor, or of the testator,

(iii) the minority or respective minorities of any person or persons living or *en ventre sa mere* at the time of the death of such grantor, settlor, or testator,

(iv) the minority (k) or respective minorities of any person or persons who, under the uses or trusts of the instrument, would for the time being, if of full age, be entitled to the rents, profits, or income directed to be accumulated

These periods are alternative, and only one may be chosen, two or more of them cannot be made consecutive periods for accumulation (l) Any shorter period may be chosen

755 Thirdly, in instruments dated after the 28th June, 1892, and in wills dated before that date of testators who died after that date, where the purpose of accumulation is the purchase of land only, the only period for accumulation allowed is the minority or respective minorities of any person or persons who, under the uses or trusts of the instrument, would for the time being, if of full age, be entitled to receive the rents, profits, or income directed to be accumulated (m) The two latter rules are hereafter called "the statutory rules," and the periods so prescribed "the statutory periods"

756 In every case where an accumulation is directed for any period longer than these statutory periods, then, if the period fixed by the instrument may exceed the perpetuity period, the direction is entirely void (n), but, if it does not exceed the perpetuity period, or is necessarily determinable by beneficiaries within that period,

(k) An accumulation directed during a conventional minority (e.g., until some person attains the age of twenty five) takes effect subject to the Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), see *Fulford v Hardy*, [1909] A C 570, 575, P C

(l) *Re Rosslyn's (Lady) Trust* (1848), 16 Sim 391, *Wilson v Wilson* (1851), 1 Sim (N S) 288, *Jagger v Jagger* (1883), 25 Ch D 729, *Re Errington, Errington Turbutt v Errington* (1897), 76 L T 616

(m) Accumulations Act, 1892 (55 & 56 Vict c 58), s 1, *Re Hanover (Baroness)*, *Herbert v Freshfield* (2), [1903] 2 Ch 330 The Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), applies to wills and instruments within that Act not falling within the scope of the Accumulations Act, 1892 (55 & 56 Vict c 58), see, for example, *Re Allan*, *Havelock v Havelock* (1881), 17 Ch D 807, 811, *Re Strangways*, *Huckle v Strangways* (1886) 34 Ch D 423, C A, and *Re Alford*, *Hunt v Parry* (1886), 32 Ch D 383, 386 (twenty years), *Re De Hoghton*, *De Hoghton v. De Hoghton*, [1896] 1 Ch 855, 866, C A (twenty-one years)

(n) *Southampton (Lord) v Hertford (Marquis)* (1813), 2 Ves & B 54, *Marshall v Holloway* (1820), 2 Swan 432 *Palmer v Holford* (1828), 4 Russ 403; *Vawdry v Geddes* (1830), 1 Russ & M 203, *Porter v Fox* (1834), 6 Sim 485, *Griffith v Blunt* (1841), 4 Beav 248, *Curtis v Lukin* (1842), 5 Beav 147, *Browne v Stoughton* (1846), 14 Sim 369, *Scarsbrick v Skelmersdale* (1850), 17 Sim 187, *Turvin v Newcome* (1856), 3 K & J 16, *Smith v Cunningham* (1884), 13 L R Ir 480, and see *Baker v Stuart* (1897), 28 Ontario Reports, 439, *Guard Trust Co v Russell* (1910), 179 Federal Reporter, 446, Lewis, Law of Perpetuity, p 592.

SECT. 1.
Limits of
Period of
Accumulation.

(l) Accumulations Act, Act, 1892.

Effect of excessive accumulation.

SECT. I
Limits of
Period of
Accumula-
tion

Property
 subject to
 the rules

the direction is not entirely void, but is valid to the extent of such one of the four statutory periods as is appropriate, and is invalid for the excess over such statutory period (o). Where the purposes of accumulation include a purpose affected by either of the statutory rules, the effect is to strike out the purpose in question from the direction to accumulate so far as the statutory rule is infringed (p).

757. The property subject to the statutory rules includes English land devised by the will of a testator domiciled abroad (q), but not property the rights in which are governed by the law of any other country where these rules are not adopted (r), and the second rule does not apply to property the rights in which are governed by Irish law (s).

A direction in the will of a testator domiciled in England that the income of his residuary personal estate is to be invested in landed property abroad, as to which these rules have not been adopted, does not render the rules inapplicable (t).

What
 directions are
 within the
 rules.

758 Accumulation within the meaning of the statutory rules is directed by any expression denoting that the whole or part of the income of property is to be separated from the ownership of that property, so as either to form, or to be an accretion to, the capital of any fund (a), or so as to be a postponement of, and restriction on, the beneficial enjoyment of the property (b).

(o) *Griffiths v Vere* (1803), 9 Ves 127, *Longdon v Simson* (1806), 12 Ves 295, *Shaw v Rhodes* (1836), 1 My & Cr 135, 154, affirmed in *Evans v Hellier* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 114, 11 L., *Blease v Burgh* (1840), 2 Beav 221, *Re Rosslyn's (Lady) Trust* (1848), 16 Sim 391, *Re Errington, Errington Turbutt v Errington* (1897) 76 L T 616.

(p) *Re Llanover (Baroness), Herbert v Friesfield* (2), [1903] 2 Ch 330, 335, compare *Vine v Raleigh*, [1891] 2 Ch 13, 16, C A, *Re Mason Mason v Mason*, [1891] 3 Ch 467. A direction for accumulation, including accumulation for payment of debts, is good if unlimited in time, so far as that purpose is concerned (*Southampton (Lord) v Herford (Marquis)* (1813), 2 Ves & B 54, *Re Stamford and Warrington (Earl), Payne v Grey*, [1912] 1 Ch 343, C A).

(q) *Fieke v Carbery (Lord)* (1873), L R 16 Eq 461, see title CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI, p 209, and compare note (q), p 311, ante.

(r) *Haldane v Eckford* (1871), 24 L T 934 (testator domiciled in Jersey). As to Scotland, the exception of heritable property in that country in the Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), s 3, was repealed by the Entail Amendment Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 38), s 41, as to instruments coming into effect after the passing of the latter Act, see *Keith's Trustees v Keith* (1857), 19 Durl (Ct of Sess) 1040. The Act is in force in Ontario and New Zealand, and similar enactments have been passed by the Australian States.

(s) Including Irish land (*Ellis v Maxwell* (1849), 12 Beav 104, where, however, it was held to affect the accumulation of income of the accumulated rents), or funds settled by an Irish settlement, though they are to be invested in England (*Heywood v Heywood* (1860), 29 Beav 9). The Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), does not apply to Ireland, having been passed before the Act of Union, but the Accumulations Act, 1892 (55 & 56 Vict c 58), applies to Ireland, see *Shullington v Portlown Urban District Council*, [1911] 1 I R 247, 261.

(t) *Macpherson v Stewart* (1858), 28 L J (Ch) 177.

(a) E.g. directions to add dividends to capital (*Webb v Webb* (1840), 2 Beav 493, *Martin v Margham* (1844), 14 Sim 230), to invest income to form a subsequent gift (*Mathews v Keble* (1868), 3 Ch App 691, *Smith v Cunningham* (1884), 13 L R Ir 480, *Re Walker*,

(b) For note (b) see next page.

759. The accumulation may be either at simple or compound interest—that is, the income derived from capitalised income may be itself capital or not (c)

SECT. 1.
**Limits of
Period of
Accumula-
tion**

Capitalisa-
tion

760 Such accumulation may be implied from the form or nature of a gift, where the substantial meaning of the limitation requires that accumulation shall take place, or where accumulation would be the inevitable result of the limitation either generally or upon certain contingencies (d), this is a question of construction, determined as if no such rules existed (e).

Accumula-
tions implied
in the gift

A trust for accumulation implied in the gift arises where residuary personal estate is bequeathed on a future contingency, and the gift carries intermediate income, pending the contingency there is an implied accumulation, which is valid for one only of the statutory periods (f)

The fact that rents, which do not fall due until after the expiration of the statutory period, and are to be apportioned to that period, will not be received until after the end of that period does not make an invalid accumulation (g)

761 In general, accumulation required by law does not cause any suspension of the enjoyment of the property and is not affected

Accumulation
required by
law

Walker v Walker (1886), 54 L T 792, *Re Mason Mason v Mason*, [1891] 3 Ch 467, to place the income in certain investments (*Macpherson v Stewart* (1858), 28 L J (Ch) 177), to "retain and set apart" income (*Re Cor Cox v Edwards*, [1900] W N 89, see *Bateman v Hotchkiss* (1847) 10 Beav 426), to form a reserve fund (*Re Swain Monckton v Hands*, [1905] 1 Ch 669, C A, *Re Hurlbutt, Hurlbutt v Hurlbutt*, [1910] 2 Ch 553), or a sinking fund (*Bateman v Hotchkiss*, *supra*, *Varlo v Foden* (1859), 1 De G F & J 211). The mere fact of the word "accumulations" being used does not constitute such a direction if the accumulation is not the result of any direction by the testator, see *Bridgnorth Corporation v Collins* (1847), 15 Sim 538, 540, note (d), *infra*.

(b) Preamble to the Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98); *Vine v Raleigh*, [1891] 2 Ch 13, C A

(c) *Colquhoun v Colquhoun's Trustees* (1892), 19 R (Ct of Sess) 946 *Mackay's Trustees v Mackay* [1909] S C 139, 143, *Wentworth v Wentworth*, [1900] A C 163, 170, P C

(d) *Evans v Heller* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 114, H L, and see S C, *sub nom. Shaw v Rhodes* (1836), 1 My & Cr 135 *Morgan v Morgan* (1851), 4 De G & Sm 164, *Tench v Cheese* (1855) 6 De G M & G 453, C A, per Lord CRANWORTH, L C, at p 462 followed in *Muthus v Kehle* (1868), 3 Ch App 691, 696, *Lord v Colvin* (1860), 23 Dunt (Ct of Sess) 111, *Smyth's Trustees v Kinloch etc* (1880) 7 R (Ct of Sess) 1176. If *Elborne v Good* (1844), 14 Sim 165, 175, 176, and *Bridgnorth Corporation v Collins*, *supra*, amount to dicta or decisions of SHADWELL, V C, that where there is no express direction to accumulate the statute does not apply, these cases are not followed.

(e) *Shaw v Rhodes*, *supra*, at pp. 153, 155, *Tench v Cheese*, *supra*, at p 466, C A, *Campbell's Trustees v Campbell* (1891), 18 R (Ct of Sess) 992

(f) *Green v Ekins* (1742), 2 Atk 473, *McDonald v Bryce* (1838), 2 Keen, 276; *Bective (Countess) v Hodgson* (1864), 10 H L Cas 656, *Pursell v Elder* (1865), 4 Macq 992, H L, *Wade Gery v Handley* (1876), 1 Ch D 663, *Ralph v Carrick* (1877), 5 Ch D 984, 997: affirmed (1879), 11 Ch D 873, C A, *Re Hiscoe, Hiscoe v Waite* (1883), 48 L T 510, *Logan's Trustees v Logan* (1896), 23 R (Ct of Sess) 848, *Re Taylor, Smart v Taylor*, [1901] 2 Ch 134

(g) *St Aubyn v St Aubyn* (1861), 1 Drew & Sm 611

SECT 1.
Limits of
Period of
Accumula-
tion.

by the statutory rules (*h*). Where property is immediately given on trusts for any purpose, to which no immediate application of the property is possible, there is a duty in the trustees, implied by law, to accumulate the income in the interval, and accordingly an express direction for such accumulation is valid, but is mere surplusage (*i*). Similarly, where at the end of a valid period of accumulation the person entitled is an infant, there may be a further period of accumulation during his infancy imposed by law (*j*).

Purposes of
accumulation

762 A direction to invest in stocks, to produce a fund to be invested in the purchase of real estate on a contingency, is a direction for the purchase of land under the third rule (*h*), and "land" has the meaning given to it by the Interpretation Act, 1889 (*l*).

Since under the Settled Land Acts (*m*) capital moneys may be applied to other purposes than the purchase of land, a direction in an instrument that accumulations are to be deemed capital money under the Settled Land Acts (*m*) is not within the third rule (*n*).

The accumulation involved in a direction by will to invest a fund and its accumulations in the purchase of land, or to invest the proceeds of sale of land and the accumulated rents in personal estate, may be confined to a valid period by the doctrines as to the time allowed for conversion and payment of legacies (*o*).

Determina-
tion of the
appropriate
statutory
period

763 The question which is the appropriate period for which accumulation is validly directed is a question of construction of each instrument (*p*), that period is not necessarily the longest, nor the one which may best effectuate the intention to accumulate, but it is the one that actually fits the intention as declared by the instrument (*q*). In selecting the period, not merely events which

(*h*) *Bryan v Collins* (1852), 16 Beav 14, *per* ROMILLY, M R, at p 17

(*i*) *Lombe v Stoughton* (1841), 12 Sim 304

(*j*) *Griffiths v Vere* (1803), 9 Ves 127 *per* Lord ELDON, L C, at p 136 explained in *Tench v Cheese* (1855) 6 De G M & G 453, 463, C A, and *Mathews v Keble* (1868), 3 Ch App 691, 696, as a matter merely of the management of the infant's property by the court, and see *Bryan v Collins* (1852) 16 Beav 14, 17, 18, where it is pointed out that in this case the accumulations may, if necessary, be applied for the maintenance and advancement of the infant

(*k*) *Re Clutterbuck, Fellowes v Fellowes*, [1901] 2 Ch 285, not following an observation of CHITTY, J, in *Re Danson, Bell v Danson* (1895), 13 R 633. As to the third rule, see p 371, *ante*

(*l*) 52 & 53 Vict c 63, *Re Clutterbuck, Fellowes v Fellowes*, *supra*, at p 288, *Re Danson, Bell v Danson*, *supra*, see titles SETTLEMENTS, STATUTES

(*m*) See title SETTLEMENTS

(*n*) *Re Danson, Bell v Danson*, *supra*

(*o*) *Sitwell v Bernard* (1801), 6 Ves 520, see Jarman on Wills, 6th ed, p 1232, Hargrave, Thellusson Act, p 159. See, generally, title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, pp 242, 262

(*p*) The construction and effect of the instrument is unaffected by the Act in other respects (*Green v Gascoyne* (1865), 11 Jur (N S) 145, 146 and see *Eyre v Marsden* (1838), 2 Keen, 564, *per* Lord LANGDALE, M R, at p 574).

(*q*) *Re Errington Errington Turbutt v Errington* (1897), 76 L T 616, *per* KERLEWICH, J, at p 617, and see *Jagger v Jagger* (1883), 25 Ch D.

have actually happened, but those which might have happened, to affect the limitations of the instrument are to be considered (r). The appropriate period is none the less adhered to because accumulation is only directed to begin at some time after the commencement of the period, and therefore the trust either cannot continue for the full length of that period or is entirely ineffectual (s).

SECT. 1.
Limits of
Period of
Accumula-
tion.

764. In non-testamentary instruments, to which alone the first period of the second rule (t) is applicable, where accumulation is directed during the lives of strangers without a reference to any minority, it is valid for the period common to their lives and the settlor's life (u).

Calculation of
the periods.

The period of twenty-one years from the death of the settlor or testator is reckoned so as to go up to and include the twenty-first anniversary of his death and to follow immediately on his death (a).

The term of a minority of any person living or *en ventre sa mère* at the time of the grantor's or testator's death is also reckoned to begin immediately on that death (b).

The fourth period of the second rule (c), where the minority is that of a person who would be entitled if of full age to the rents and profits to be accumulated, need not begin from the death of the testator, and is not confined to persons born in the testator's or settlor's lifetime (d).

729, 733 In a will, unless the accumulation is directed by reference to a minority, or some personal event connected with a person who for the time being would be entitled, as under the fourth period, the twenty-one years period is adopted (*Griffiths v Vere* (1803), 9 Ves 127, *Crawley v Crawley* (1835), 7 Sim 427, *Miles v Dyer* (1837), 8 Sim 330, *Tench v Cheese* (1855), 6 De G M & G 453, C A).

(r) *Jagger v Jagger* (1883), 25 Ch D 729, per KAY, J., at p 734. As to the extent to which the court will take into account the fact that a woman is past the age of child bearing, see *Edwards v Tuck* (1853), 3 De G M & G 40, 64, 72, C A, *Re Travis, Frost v Greatorex*, [1900] 2 Ch 541, C A.

(s) *Webb v Webb* (1840), 2 Beav 493, *A G v Poulden* (1844), 3 Hare, 555, *Lord v Colvin* (1860) 23 Dowl (Ct of Sess) 111, *Smith v Lomas* (1864), 33 L J (Ch) 578, *Campbell's Trustees v Campbell* (1891), 18 R (Ct of Sess) 992, *Re Errington, Errington Turbutt v Errington* (1897), 76 L T 616, *Re Travis, Frost v Greatorex*, [1900] 2 Ch 541, C A.

(t) See p 370, ante.

(u) *Re Rosslyn's (Lady) Trust* (1848), 16 Sim 391, *Jagger v Jagger*, *supra*, see *Re Errington, Errington-Turbutt v Errington*, *supra*.

(a) *Webb v Webb*, *supra*, *Gorst v Lowndes* (1841), 11 Sim 434 (where dividends due on the twenty-first anniversary of the testator's death were held to be subject to the direction for accumulation), *A G v Poulden* (1844), 3 Hare, 555, *Campbell's Trustees v Campbell*, *supra*.

(b) *Jagger v Jagger*, *supra*, per KAY, J., at p 733. In *Blasson v Blasson* (1864), 2 De G J & Sm 665, where accumulation was directed until the children of A, B, and C, born and living at the death of the testatrix, attained twenty-one, it was held that a child *en ventre sa mère* was not included.

(c) See p 370, ante.

(d) *Re Cattell, Cattell v Cattell*, [1907] 1 Ch 567, not following the suggestion in *Haley v Bannister* (1819), 4 Madd 275 (which, however, was accepted as accurate in *Ellis v Maxwell* (1841), 3 Beav. 587, 597, and *Bryan*

SECT 2
Exceptions
from the
Statutory
Rules

Debts.

SECT 2—*Exceptions from the Statutory Rules*

SUB-SECT 1—*Provisions for Payment of Debts or Incumbrances*

765 The first exception is any provision for payment of debts of any grantor, settlor, or deviser, or other person or persons (*e*). The provision must be *bonâ fide* for the payment of debts (*f*), but the provision is none the less *bonâ fide* because it provides for other matters in addition to the payment of debts (*g*)

The debts may be either existing debts, or contingent liabilities to arise in the future (*h*), and may be debts of a stranger (*i*) The debts must not be, however, mere charges on the interest of a person under a trust for accumulation (*j*) The exception has been applied to mortgages, either existing at the testator's death or made pursuant to his will, of an amount ascertained or to be ascertained in the execution of valid trusts (*k*)

Recoup-
ment of
beneficiaries

766 Where creditors are paid otherwise than from the proceeds of the fund directed to be accumulated to pay debts, the trust for

v. Collins (1852), 16 Beav 14, 17), and the dictum in *Jagger v Jagger* (1883), 25 Ch D 729, *per* KAY, J, at p 733, that the statute prevented accumulation of income during the minority of a child unborn at the death of the testator, or date of the settlement see also 2 Preston, Abstracts of Title, p 181. Hargrave, *Theillusson Act*, pp 119—136 In *Longdon v Simson* (1806), 12 Ves 295, the period of twenty one years was taken by the court as the limit If the duration is during all such times as any person beneficially interested in real estate settled in strict settlement should be under twenty-one, it is entirely void under the rule against perpetuities (*Marshall v Holloway* (1820) 2 Swan 432, and see *Martelli v Holloway* (1872), L R 5 H L 532, and p 370, *ante*), except where the trust is statutory (Conveyancing and Law of Property Act, 1881 (44 & 45 Vict c 41), s 42)

(*e*) Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), s 2, *Bacon v Proctor* (1822), Turn & R 31, *Bateman v Hotchkiss* (1847), 10 Beav 426

(*f*) *Mathews v Keble* (1868) 3 Ch App 691, 697, following *Varlo v Faden* (1859), 27 Beav 255, affirmed 1 De G F & J 211

(*g*) *Re Hurlbatt*, *Hurlbatt v Hurlbatt*, [1910] 2 Ch 553, 559, but see *St Aubyn v St Aubyn* (1861), 30 L J (Ch) 917, *per* KINDERSLEY, V C, at p 922 After the debts are paid, the accumulation is confined to the statutory period (*Colquhoun v Colquhoun's Trustees* (1892) 19 R (Ct of Sess) 946)

(*h*) *Varlo v Faden* (1859), 1 De G F & J 211, 224, explaining the dicta of Lord ST LEONARDS, L C, in *Barrington (Viscount) v Liddell* (1852), 2 De G M & G 480, 498, *Re Mason, Mason v Mason*, [1891] 3 Ch 467. *Re Hurlbatt*, *Hurlbatt v Hurlbatt*, *supra* In *Re Cox, Cox v Edwards*, [1900] W N 89. BYRNE, J, held a provision for a reserve fund against future losses in the testator's business void beyond the twenty one years, "there being no direction in the will for payment of debts"

(*i*) *Barrington (Viscount) v Liddell*, *supra*, at pp 497, 498, dictum of Lord ST LEONARDS, L C, in opposition to that of TURNER, V C, in *S C* (1852), 10 Hare, 429, 434, as to the exception under the rule against perpetuities, see p 327, *ante*

(*j*) *Mathews v Keble* (1868), 3 Ch App 691

(*k*) *Bateman v Hotchkiss* (1847), 10 Beav 426, 433, *Bacon v Proctor* (1822), Turn & R 31, but see *Smyth's Trustees v Kinloch etc* (1880), 7 R (Ct of Sess) 1176, *per* Lord ORMDALE, at p 1185 In *Re Llanover (Baroness)*, *Herbert v Ram*, [1907] 1 Ch. 635, a mortgage by the trustees of a will for the purpose of raising estate duty was held to be an incumbrance within an accumulation clause, but no question arose under the Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), .

accumulation comes to an end, and any right expressly or impliedly given to the persons who, claiming under the instrument, are thus disappointed by the mode of payment to have the accumulation continued to recoup them is not within the exception, and is valid only for one of the statutory periods (l)

SECT 2
Exceptions
from the
Statutory
Rules.

SUB SECT 2 — Provisions for Raising Portions

767 The second exception is any provision for raising portions for any child or children of any grantor, settlor or devisee, or any child or children of any person taking any interest under the instrument (m).

Portions.

768 A portion, as allowed to be thus provided for, includes a sum of money secured to a child or class of children out of property springing from or settled on their parent (n), and, in general, must take effect as a part or share of the whole property of the family (o)

Meaning of the term

The portion need not, however, be created by the instrument directing accumulation (p), thus, the portions may be portions charged for younger children in a strict settlement, contained either in the instrument directing the accumulation (q) or in any other instrument (r)

Instruments which may create portions.

769 A pecuniary legacy or annuity directed to accumulate may be such a portion, according to the circumstances of the case (s)

Funds which may or may not be portions

(l) *Re Heathcote, Heathcote v Trench* [1904] 1 Ch 820, and see note (a), p 329, *ante*

(m) Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), s 2. The statutory expression in the last few words is "taking any interest under such conveyance, settlement or devise" but the last word is now interpreted to mean "will" (*Barrington (Viscount) v Liddell* (1852), 2 De G M & G 480, 500, *per* Lord St Leonards, LC, reversing SC (1852), 10 Hare, 420, where TURNER, VC, held that the interest must be taken in the devised property the income of which was to be accumulated), see also *Bourne v Buckton* (1851), 2 Sim (NS) 91, 101, *Morgan v Morgan* (1851), 4 De G & Sm 164, 171, 172, 174, *Re Stephens, Kilby v Betts*, [1904] 1 Ch 322, 327. Where the purposes include other objects, then after the portions are raised the accumulation is confined to the statutory period (*Re Phillips, Phillips v Levy* (1880), 49 LJ (Ch) 198)

(n) *Beech v St Vincent (Lord)* (1850), 3 De G & Sm 678, *Jones v Maggs* (1852), 9 Hare, 605, 607, *per* TURNER, VC, *Re Stephens, Kilby v Betts*, *supra*, *per* BUCKLEY, J, at p 327, *Colquhoun's Trustees v Colquhoun*, [1907] SC 346, *per* Lord STORMONIE DAINING, at p 352

(o) *Edwards v Tuck* (1853), 3 De G M & G 40, CA, *per* Lord CRAWFORD, LC, at p 58

(p) *Halford v Stairs* (1849), 16 Sim 488, *Bourne v Buckton* (1851), 2 Sim (NS) 91, 96, *Barrington (Viscount) v Liddell*, *supra*, at p 498

(q) *Beech v St Vincent (Lord)* *supra*

(r) *Barrington (Viscount) v Liddell*, *supra*, *Middleton v Losh* (1852), 1 Sm & G 61 (additions to portions created by another instrument)

(s) In *Beech v St Vincent (Lord)*, *supra*, *Barrington (Viscount) v Liddell*, *supra* (explained in *Watt v Wood* (1862), 2 Drew & Sm 56, 61), *St Paul v Heath* (1865), 11 Jur (NS) 903, *Middleton v Losh* (1852), 1 Sm & G 61, *Re Stephens, Kilby v Betts*, *supra*, and *Colquhoun's Trustees v Colquhoun*, *supra*, such an accumulated legacy was held to be a "portion", and see *Burt v Sturt* (1853), 10 Hare, 415, as reported at 22 LJ (Ch) 1071, *per* PAGE WOOD, VC, at p 1074, see note (c), p 378, *post*. In *Jones v Maggs*, *supra* (purporting to follow *Eyre v Marsden* (1838), 2 Keen, 504, and *Bourne v Buckton* (1851), 2 Sim (NS) 91, which were cases of residuary

SECT 2
Exceptions
from the
Statutory
Rules.

But a provision for a portion is not constituted by a provision directing additions of income to capital merely for the purpose of making one gift of an aggregate fund (*a*). In such a case, in which the accumulation is simply to increase the amount of the fund, no provision for a portion is made where the fund is the whole estate of the settlor or testator (*b*), or is a residuary estate or share of a residuary estate of a testator (*c*), or is a specific or general legacy to named persons (*d*). No provision for a portion is made where the accumulated fund is held on trust for the parent for life and after his death for his children, even though an eldest son is excluded, as is usual in provisions for portions under family settlements (*e*), nor where the fund is set apart to provide annuities for the parents, and after their deaths is given to their children (*f*), nor where the child has only a power of appointment over the fund (*g*), or only takes the interest of the fund (*h*).

estates), *Morgan v Morgan* (1851), 4 De G & Sm 164, 174, *Drewett v Pollard* (1859), 27 Beav 196, *Watt v Wood* (1862), 2 Drew & Sm 56, 61 (where the legacy was held on trust for the parent during her life, and after her death for her younger children), legacies were held not to be portions. In *Shaw v Rhodes* (1836), 1 My & Cr 135 (affirmed in *Evans v Hellier* (1837) 5 Cl & Fin 114, H L), BOSANQUET, J at p 159, said that where (as in that case) the whole rents and profits are given in the first place to persons during the lives of their parents, with the exception of small annuities only to be paid thereout to the parents themselves for their own lives, and a gift (of a specific sum) to the same persons after the death of their parents is superadded which is to be paid out of the subsequent rents and profits, the superadded gift could not be a "portion", and see *Barrington (Viscount) v Liddell* (1852), 2 De G M & G 480, per Lord ST LEONARDS, L C, at p 504, on *Shaw v Rhodes*, *supra*.

(*a*) *Eyre v Marsden* (1838), 2 Keen, 564, per Lord LANGDALE, M R, at p 573, applied in *Bourne v Buckton* (1851), 2 Sim (N S) 91, 98, 99, *Re Clulow's Trust* (1859), 1 John & H 639, 647.

(*b*) *Wildes v Davies* (1853), 1 Sm & G 475, *Edwards v Tuck* (1853), 3 De G M & G 40, C A, per Lord CRANWORTH, L C, at pp 57, 58.

(*c*) *Eyre v Marsden*, *supra* (observed upon in *Barrington (Viscount) v Liddell*, *supra*, per Lord ST LEONARDS, L C, at p 503, but see *Burt v Sturt* (1853), 22 L J (Ch) 1071, 1073, *Pride v Fooks* (1840), 2 Beav 430, *Bourne v Buckton*, *supra*, *Edwards v Tuck*, *supra*, *Mathews v Keble* (1868), 3 Ch App 691, *Moon's Trustees v Moon* (1899), 2 F (Ct of Sess) 201, *Mackay's Trustees v Mackay*, [1909] S C 139, and see *Cain v Watson*, [1910] Victorian Law Reports, 256. But if specific sums by way of portion are given out of such accumulated residue, it may be a valid accumulation for that purpose (*Burt v Sturt*, *supra*, per PAGE WOOD, V C, at p 1074, in that case the judge did not rely on the fact that the fund was a residuary estate, and therefore indefinite, which he thought was a shadowy distinction). Where, accordingly, real and personal estate are given as a mixed fund, and the realty after accumulation is given to a class of nephews and nieces, and the personality to their parents and other persons, the rents of the realty cannot be separated so as to make them an independent fund for portions (*Re Walker, Walker v Walker* (1886), 54 L T 792).

(*d*) *Morgan v Morgan* (1851), 4 De G & Sm 161.

(*e*) *Watt v Wood*, *supra*.

(*f*) *Webb v Webb* (1840), 2 Beav 493, *Drewett v Pollard*, *supra*; and see *Mathews v Keble*, *supra*, *Re Walker, Walker v Walker*, *supra*, note (*e*), *supra*.

(*g*) *Re Clulow's Trust*, *supra*, at pp 646, 647.

(*h*) *Mackay's Trustees v Mackay*, *supra*, at p 143.

The use of the word "portion" in describing the children's interests is immaterial (i).

SECT. 2.

Exceptions from the Statutory Rules.

Children's interests.

770 The children for whom this provision by means of accumulation may be made include children born after the date of the instrument or death of the testator, and are not restricted merely to those then living (h), they do not include any illegitimate children (i), and the exception is not complied with if the provision is for those children only who survive their parents (m) or other class of persons (n).

The benefit is, however, none the less a portion because it is given to all the children including the eldest child, and not to younger children only (o). On the other hand, the fact that younger children only are provided for does not make the benefit a portion unless it is a portion in other respects (p).

A provision for grandchildren of a testator, where some only of their parents take interests under his will, does not come within the exception (q), nor is it sufficient that the testator stands *in loco parentis* to the class of children (r).

Grandchildren and others

771 The interest which must be taken by a parent, in order to make a provision for his children a portion under this exception, may be any interest, however small, taken under the instrument (s) in any property, not necessarily in that the income of which is to be accumulated (t).

Parent's interest

(i) *Halford v Stains* (1849), 16 Sim 488, *Bourne v Buckton* (1851), 2 Sim (N S) 91 see, however, *Middleton v Losh* (1852), 1 Sm & G 61.

(h) *Beech v St Vincent (Lord)* (1850), 3 De G & Sm 678. If in the events which happen there is a failure of the children for whom provision is made, the accumulation is void after the appropriate statutory period (*Edwards v Turk* (1853), 3 De G M & G 40, 72, C A, *Re Clulow's Trust* (1859), 1 John & H 639).

(l) *Shaw v Rhodes* (1836), 1 My & Cr 135 per BOSANQUET, J., at p 159, who, assuming that two of the class were illegitimate, held that the provision, if for portions, would be void as to all, the observation, however, was *obiter dictum*, as the alleged illegitimacy in the case appears not to have existed, see *Evans v Hellier* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 114, 125, H L.

(m) *Drewett v Pollard* (1859), 27 Beav 196.

(n) *Burt v Sturt* (1853), 10 Haro, 415, and see *Moon's Trustees v Moon* (1899), 2 F (Ct of Sess) 201, per Lord MONCRIEFF, at p 214, as to a gift over on death without issue before division.

(o) *Re Stephens, Kilby v Betts*, [1904] 1 Ch 322, per BUCKLEY J., at p 327.

(p) *Watt v Wood* (1862), 2 Drew & Sm 56 (where the accumulated fund was settled on the parent and younger children in succession). In *Beech v St Vincent (Lord)*, *supra*, an annuity charged upon the income given to the parent for his younger children was held to be a portion.

(q) *Eyre v Marsden* (1838), 2 Keen, 564, 573.

(r) See *Webb v Webb* (1840), 2 Beav 493, and see *Shaw v Rhodes*, *supra*, affirmed, *sub nom Evans v Hellier*, *supra*, where the point was raised, but compare *Colquhoun's Trustees v Colquhoun*, [1907] S C 346, per Lord Low, at p 353.

(s) See note (m), p 377, ante.

(t) *Barrington (Viscount) v Liddell* (1852), 2 De G M & G 480, *Re Stephens, Kilby v Betts*, *supra* (where the parent was tenant for life of the residuary estate), compare *Evans v Hellier*, *supra*, at pp 126, 127. In *Morgan v Morgan* (1851), 4 De G & Sm 164, 174, the parent

SECT 2

Exceptions
from the
Statutory
Rules

Timber
Repairs
and other
purposes

SUB-SECT 3—Directions as to Timber

772 The third exception is any direction touching the produce of timber or wood upon any lands or tenements (*u*)

SUB-SECT 4—Repairs and Replacement of Wasting Capital

773 Any trust or direction which simply keeps the property up to its present value is valid, and not subject to the second or third rule (*a*). Trusts (*b*), therefore, out of income to effect improvements coming generally under the heading of maintaining in good habitable repair houses and tenements (*c*), or to keep up a policy for the replacement, at the end of the term for which leaseholds are held, of the capital lost by not selling them (*d*), or, it appears, to accumulate part of the rents as a sinking fund for the same purpose and as an indemnity fund (*e*), are not restricted within the statutory periods (*f*), though a trust for the purpose of building houses on building land would be within the second rule (*g*).

Other
purposes
included.

774 A trust which includes the keeping up of the property to its present value besides other purposes not within the exceptions mentioned is valid, though unrestricted in time, in so far as it is a *bonâ fide* provision for that object, and when that is fulfilled it will be subject to the statutory restrictions (*h*).

In such a case where, in a due course of execution of the trusts, accumulation will not be sanctioned by the court, the rights which arise under the statutory rules will have effect given to them (*i*). It appears that the court, while upholding such a trust, will not

was a specific legatee, and the provision was held not to be a provision for portions. In *Jones v Maggs* (1852), 9 Hare, 605, 607, TURNER, V C, said that although there might be cases in which provisions for children out of property in which the parents took no interest might be called portions, such provisions would only receive that designation where the nature or context of the instrument gave them that character.

(*u*) Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), s 2. Such a direction may, however, be void under the rule against perpetuities (*Fernand v Wilson* (1845), 4 Hare, 344 see p 362, *ante*). As to the grounds of this exception, see Hargrave, Thellusson Act, p 206.

(*a*) *Re Gardiner*, *Gardiner v Smith*, [1901] 1 Ch 697, 699, 701.

(*b*) In *Bassil v Lister* (1851) 9 Hare, 177, TURNER, V C, at p 184, suggested the following additional examples—a partnership agreement for a long term where part of the profits is to accumulate, policies of insurance on the lives of debtors, a settlement of policies, with stock transferred in trust to pay premiums out of the dividends.

(*c*) *Vine v Raleigh*, [1891] 2 Ch 13 C A, per LINDLEY, L J, at p 26. In *Curtis v Lakin* (1842), 5 Beav 147, such a trust was invalid under the rule against perpetuities.

(*d*) *Re Gardiner*, *Gardiner v Smith*, *supra*.

(*e*) *Re Hurlbatt*, *Hurlbatt v Hurlbatt*, [1910] 2 Ch 553, where, however, the trust, being primarily a trust for indemnity against liabilities, was supported on the principle of *Varlo v Faden* (1859), 1 De G F & J 211, see note (*h*), p 376, *ante*.

(*f*) See p 370 *ante*.

(*g*) Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), see p 370, *ante*. *Vine v Raleigh*, [1891] 3 Ch 13, C A, per LINDLEY, L J, at p 26.

(*h*) *Re Mason*, *Mason v Mason*, [1891] 3 Ch 467, where inquiries were ordered to ascertain the necessary expenditure.

(*i*) *Re Mason*, *Mason v Mason*, *supra*, per STIRLING, J, at pp 472, 473.

authorise the application of income to purposes, the expenses of which ought to be defrayed out of capital (k)

SECT 2
Exceptions
from the
Statutory
Rules.

SUB-SECT 5 — Savings out of Income and Insurance

775 The statutory rules do not prevent trustees or anyone else from making savings out of income, in the case of trustees, the check is provided by the duty of conforming to the trust (l)

Savings

776 An insurance takes effect as a contract only, and a direction to effect or keep up a policy effected by the testator or the trustees is not affected by these rules (m)

Contracts

SECT 3 — Application of Surplus Accumulations

777 If there is a primary gift of an absolute interest, cut down or charged only by the trust for accumulation, the latter is rejected for the excess, and the primary gift takes effect free from it (n) (Otherwise the effect of the invalidity of a direction to accumulate is not to accelerate the interests of persons who take subject thereto (o), but during the excess of the directed period of accumulation over the appropriate statutory period the rents, profits, and income go to such person or persons as would have been entitled thereto if such excessive accumulation had not been directed (p), that is to say, as if a gap had been left between the end of the valid period of accumulation and the commencement of the next interest (q))

Effect in
general of
invalidity.

(l) *Vine v Raleigh*, [1891] 2 Ch 13, 26, C A

(l) *Lindsay's Trustees*, [1911] S C 584, and see *Tench v Cheese* (1855), 6 De G M & G 453, C A, per Lord CRANWORTH, L C, at p 403

(m) *Bassil v Lister* (1851), 9 Hare, 177, 184, *Re Vaughan, Halford v Lose*, [1883] W N 89, *Cathcart's Trustees v Heeneage's Trustees* (1883), 10 R (Ct of Sess) 1205

(n) *Trickey v Trickey* (1832), 3 My & K 560 565, *Evans v Hellier* (1837), 5 Cl & Fin 114, 127, H L, explained in *Re Clulow's Trust* (1859), 1 John & H 639 648, *Combe v Hughes* (1865), 11 Jur (N S) 194, 380, and see *Ogilby's Trustees v Dundee Kirk Session* (1846), 8 Dunl (Ct of Sess) 1229, *Mackenzie v Mackenzie's Trustees* (1877), 4 R (Ct of Sess) 962, *Marsdell's Trustees v Maxwell* (1877), 5 R (Ct of Sess) 238, 250. Similarly, if the income be disposed of subject to a trust for accumulation for an excessive period "so long as the same can lawfully operate" (*Westcar v Westcar* (1856), 21 Beav 328)

(o) *Eyre v Marsden* (1838), 2 Keen, 564, *Boughton v James* (1844), 1 Coll 26, affirmed *sub nom Boughton v Boughton*, *Boughton v James* (1848), 1 H L Cas 406, *Nettleton v Stephenson* (1849), 13 Jur 618, *Green v Gascoyne* (1865), 11 Jur (N S) 145, *Re Parry, Powell v Parry* (1889), 60 L T 489, and see *Muirhead v Muirhead and Crellin* (1890), 15 App Cas 289, 290. As to acceleration of the interests in the accumulated fund, where distribution is dependent upon accumulation, see *Colquhoun v Colquhoun's Trustees* (1892), 19 R (Ct of Sess) 946

(p) Accumulations Act, 1800 (39 & 40 Geo 3, c 98), s 3

(q) *Green v Gascoyne* (1865), 4 De G J & Sm 565, 572, *Weatherall v Thornburgh* (1878), 8 Ch D 261, 269, 271, 272, C A, compare *Re Travis, Frost v Greatorex*, [1900] 2 Ch 541, 546, C A

SECT 3
Application
of Surplus
Accumula-
tions

Settlements.
Wills.

778. If the invalid direction is contained in a settlement, the rents and income result to the settlor for the excess, but, if he is dead, the rents of realty during the excess period belong to the heir of the settlor, and the income of personalty to his executors (r)

779. If the direction is contained in a will, the income for the excess period devolves as on a lapse of an interest held for the void excess (s), and therefore, if not itself the income of a residuary estate, falls into residue, if any (t), and forms part (as it has recently been held) of the capital of that residue (u). If the direction is for accumulation of the residuary estate itself, or there is no residuary gift, the income for the excess period, subject to the rights of the personal representative of the testator, devolves, in the case of income derived from real estate, to the heir (x), or, in default of heirs, to the Crown (a), and in the case of income derived from personal estate to the next of kin of the testator at his decease (b), or if none to the Crown (c), and a mixed fund is apportionable accordingly (d)

(r) *Re Rosslyn's (Lady) Trust* (1848), 16 Sim 391

(s) As to lapse, see title WILLS

(t) *Haley v Bannister* (1819), 4 Madd 275, *Crawley v Crawley* (1835), 7 Sim 427, *O'Neill v Lucas* (1838), 2 Keen, 313, *Webb v Webb* (1840), 2 Beav 493, *Ellis v Marwell* (1841), 3 Beav 587, *A G v Poulden* (1844), 3 Hare, 555, *Morgan v Morgan* (1851), 4 De G & Sm 164, *Bryan v Collins* (1852), 16 Beav 14, 17, *Re Phillips, Phillips v Levy* (1880), 49 L J (Ch) 198, *Re Parry Pouell v Parry* (1889), 60 L T 489, *Re Pope, Sharp v Marshall* [1901] 1 Ch 64

(u) The authorities, however, conflict on this point. The accumulations were held to be capital in *Re Pope, Sharp v Marshall, supra*, following *Crawley v Crawley, supra*, and *O'Neill v Lucas, supra*, where, however, the question does not appear to have been argued as between tenant for life and remainderman, but they were held to be income in *Re Phillips, Phillips v Levy, supra*, *Morgan v Morgan, supra* (and see S C, 20 L J (Ch) 109, 441, explained in this sense and followed in *Otterson v Gould* (1892) 11 New Zealand Law Reports, 577, C A, another explanation being given in *Bryan v Collins* (1852), 16 Beav 14, 21, 22), and compare *Trickey v Trickey* (1832), 3 My & K 560, *Re Clulow's Trust* (1859), 1 John & H 639

(x) *Sewell v Denny* (1847), 10 Beav 315, *Nettleton v Stephenson* (1849), 3 De G & Sm 366, *Burt v Sturt* (1853), 10 Hare, 415, 428, see title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 1 *et seq* and, as to wills made before the Wills Act, 1837 (7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c 26), see *Smith v Lomas* (1864), 10 Jur (N S) 742, *Green v Gascoyne* (1865), 11 Jur (N S) 145

(a) *Weatherall v Thornburgh* (1878), 8 Ch D 261, C A, see title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 26 *et seq*

(b) *McDonald v Bryce* (1838), 2 Keen, 276, *Eyre v Marsden* (1838), 2 Keen, 564, *Pride v Fooks* (1840), 2 Beav 430, *Elborne v Goode* (1844), 14 Sim 165, *Wilson v Wilson* (1851), 1 Sim (N S) 288, *Mathews v Kibble* (1868), 3 Ch App 691, *Elder's Trustees v Free Church of Scotland (Treasurer)* (1892), 20 R (Ct of Sess) 2 (where the residuary legatee was not ascertainable), see title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 26 *et seq*

(c) *Weatherall v Thornburgh, supra*, see title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, p 28

(d) *Eyre v Marsden, supra*, *Burt v Sturt, supra*, *Ralph v. Carrick*

780. The heir is entitled to the income of real estate under the doctrine of reconversion, although conversion has taken place (e); but he does not become protector of the settlement for purposes of disentail as claiming under a resulting use or trust for the settlor (f). The heir or other person claiming by virtue of the period of accumulation exceeding the statutory period may, however, be a tenant for life under the Settled Land Acts (g).

SECT. 3.
Application
of Statute
of Accumu-
lations.

Position of
the heir

The interest of the heir, where accumulation is directed for the life of any person, is a chattel interest which devolves on his personal representative (h).

A trust to invest accumulations of personal estate in land does not give the invalid accumulations to the heir, they go to the next of kin (i).

781 Where accumulations are directed of a fund arising under the exercise of a power to charge, the invalid accumulations do not sink for the benefit of the estate charged in a case where the fund has been made part of the estate of the person exercising the power (k).

Charge under
a power

782 The claims of persons apparently entitled under these rules may be ousted where the trust for accumulation is entirely ineffective owing to the rights of some other person who has a vested interest to determine the trust (l).

Ineffective
accumula-
tions

783 The costs of proceedings to determine the invalidity of a provision for accumulation in a will are subject to the discretion of the court, and generally are ordered to come out of the general

Costs

(1877), 5 Ch D 984 998, *Re Walker*, *Walker v Walker* (1880), 54 L T 792, *Harrison v Harrison* (1904), 7 Ontario Law Reports, 297, compare *Talbot v Jevors* (1875), L R 20 Eq 255.

(e) *Eyre v Marsden* (1838), 2 Keen, 504, *Re Perkins*, *Brown v Perkins* (1909), 101 L T 345, compare *Moon's Trustees v Moon* (1899), 2 P (Ct of Sess.) 201, and see title EQUIT, Vol XII, pp 108, 109.

(f) *Re Hughes*, [1906] 2 Ch 642, Fines and Recoveries Act, 1833 (3 & 4 Will c 74), s 22), and see, generally, title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTIES REAL.

(g) See title SETTLEMENTS, *Vine v Raleigh*, [1896] 1 Ch 37, *Re Atherton*, [1891] W N 85.

(h) *Sewell v Denny* (1847), 10 Beav 315, *Barrett v Buck* (1848), 12 Jur 771, in the latter case the proposition was admitted. In *Halford v Staines* (1849), 16 Sim 488, the interest undisposed of was held to go to the heir of the heir as 'part of the inheritance', see Gray, Rule against Perpetuities, 2nd ed, s 702.

(i) *Bourne v Buckton* (1851), 2 Sim (N S) 91, 101, see *Vine v Raleigh*, *supra*, at pp 38, 39.

(k) *Simmons v Pitt* (1873), 8 Ch App 978.

(l) *Wharton v Masterman*, [1895] A C 186, *Re Swain*, *Monckton v Hands*, [1905] 1 Ch 669, C A, and see *Oddie v Brown* (1859), 4 De G & J 179, C A, *MacVean v MacVean* (1899), 24 Victorian Law Reports, 835. As to the determination of such trusts by the beneficiaries having all attained a vested interest, see title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES. There is no interference with the statutory rights unless the trust for accumulation is thus determinable (*Talbot v Jevors*, *supra*, at p 260, *Weatherall v Thornburgh* (1878), 8 Ch D 261, C A, *Re Parry*, *Powell v Parry* (1889), 60 L T 489, *Re Trams*, *Frost v Greatorex*, [1900] 2 Ch 541, C A).

SEC 3
Application
of Surplus
Accumula-
tions

estate, including the accumulations validly made, but not out of the accumulations invalidly made (*m*)

(*m*) *Eyre v Marsden* (1839), 4 My & Cr 231, *Barrett v Buck* (1848), 12 Jur 771, *Burt v Sturt* (1853), 10 Hare, 415, *Re Olulow's Trust* (1859), 1 John & H 639, *Talbot v Jevens* (1875), L R 20 Eq 255, *Ralph v Carrick* (1877), 5 Ch D 984, 998. In *Elborne v Goode* (1844), 14 Sim 165, and *Green v Gascoyne* (1865), 4 De G J & Sm 565, 572, the costs were divided *pro rata* between a fund, part of the general residue, including the lawful accumulations, and a fund, the remainder of the general residue, representing the accumulations made void by statute, and in *Nettleton v Stephenson* (1849), 18 L J (CH) 191, the costs were made payable out of the valid accumulations, and any deficiency was directed to be borne by the excess accumulations, compare *Smith v Lomas* (1864), 33 L J (CH) 578. In *Bourne v Buckton* (1851), 2 Sim (N S) 91, and *Bryan v Collins* (1852), 16 Beav 14, the costs were paid out of the excess accumulations. As to costs generally, see titles PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE, SOLICITORS

PERSONAL PROPERTY.

	PAGE
PART I DEFINITIONS - - - - -	387
SECT 1 PERSONAL PROPERTY IN GENERAL - - - - -	387
SECT 2 CHATTELS REAL - - - - -	388
SECT 3 CHATTELS PERSONAL - - - - -	388
PART II POSSESSION - - - - -	391
SECT 1 MEANING OF THE TERM - - - - -	391
SECT 2 DIFFERENT KINDS OF POSSESSION - - - - -	392
Sub-sect 1 Absolute or Qualified - - - - -	392
Sub-sect 2 Possession of Owner - - - - -	393
Sub-sect 3 Possession of Bailee - - - - -	394
Sub-sect 4 Possession of Trespasser - - - - -	394
Sub-sect 5 Possession of Finder - - - - -	394
SECT 3 RIGHTS ANNEXED TO POSSESSION - - - - -	395
SECT 4 ACQUISITION OF POSSESSION - - - - -	395
SECT 5 LOSS OF POSSESSION - - - - -	396
PART III OWNERSHIP - - - - -	397
SECT 1 NATURE OF OWNERSHIP - - - - -	397
SECT 2 PERSONAL CAPACITY - - - - -	398
SECT 3 ACQUISITION OF OWNERSHIP - - - - -	399
Sub-sect 1 By Succession to Title of Previous Owner - - - - -	399
Sub-sect 2 By Change of Possession - - - - -	399
Sub-sect 3 By Taking Original Possession - - - - -	400
Sub-sect 4 By Accession - - - - -	401
Sub-sect 5 By Confusion - - - - -	401
Sub-sect 6 Under Paramount Authority - - - - -	402
SECT 4 CO-OWNERSHIP - - - - -	403
Sub-sect 1 Joint Ownership - - - - -	403
Sub-sect 2 Ownership in Common - - - - -	403
PART IV ALIENATION - - - - -	404
SECT 1 IN GENERAL - - - - -	404
SECT 2 VOLUNTARY ALIENATION - - - - -	404
Sub-sect 1 By Delivery - - - - -	404
Sub-sect 2 By Deed - - - - -	406
Sub-sect 3 By Contract of Sale - - - - -	406
Sub-sect 4 By Exchange - - - - -	406
SECT 3 INVOLUNTARY ALIENATION - - - - -	407
SECT 4 ALIENATION AT DEATH - - - - -	408
SECT 5 FUTURE ACQUIRED PROPERTY - - - - -	409
SECT 6 RESTRAINTS ON ALIENATION - - - - -	410
PART V CREATION OF SUCCESSIVE INTERESTS - - - - -	413

For Accumulation, Trusts for - See title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, FERTUITIES, SETTLEMENTS;
TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES

Action - - - - - ACTION

<i>For Annuities</i> - -	See title	RENTCHARGES AND ANNUITIES
<i>Bailment</i> - -	"	BAILMENT
<i>Bankruptcy</i> - -	"	BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY
<i>Bills of Exchange</i> - -	"	BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS
<i>Bills of Sale</i> - - -	"	BILLS OF SALE
<i>Bonds</i> - - -	"	BONDS
<i>Carriage of Goods</i> - -	"	CARRIERS, SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION
<i>Charities</i> - - -	"	CHARITIES
<i>Choses in Action</i> - - -	"	CHOSSES IN ACTION
<i>Conflict of Laws</i> - - -	"	CONFLICT OF LAWS
<i>Constitutional Law</i> - - -	"	CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Contracts</i> - - -	"	BUILDING CONTRACTS, ENGINEERS, AND ARCHITECTS, CONTRACT
<i>Copyright</i> - - -	"	COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY
<i>Criminal Law</i> - - -	"	CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE
<i>Damages</i> - - -	"	DAMAGES
<i>Descent and Distribution</i> - -	"	DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION
<i>Distress</i> - - -	"	DISTRESS
<i>Equity</i> - - -	"	EQUITY
<i>Estoppel</i> - - -	"	ESTOPPEL
<i>Executors and Administrators</i> -	"	EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS
<i>Exoneration</i> - - -	"	EXONERATION
<i>Gifts</i> - - -	"	GIFTS
<i>Guarantee</i> - - -	"	GUARANTEE
<i>Husband and Wife</i> - - -	"	HUSBAND AND WIFE
<i>Intestacy</i> - - -	"	DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS
<i>Jointure</i> - - -	"	REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, SETTLEMENTS
<i>Landlord and Tenant</i> - -	"	LANDLORD AND TENANT
<i>Licensees</i> - - -	"	FISHERIES, GAME, LANDLORD AND TENANT, MINES, MINERALS, AND QUARRIES, NEGLIGENCE, REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, TRESPASS
<i>Lien</i> - - -	"	LIEN
<i>Money</i> - - -	"	MONEY AND MONEY-LENDING
<i>Mortgage</i> - - -	"	MORTGAGE
<i>Negotiable Instruments</i> -	"	BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS
<i>Next of Kin</i> - -	"	DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION
<i>Nuisance</i> - - -	"	NUISANCE
<i>Partnership</i> - - -	"	PARTNERSHIP
<i>Patent Rights</i> - - -	"	PATENTS AND INVENTIONS
<i>Pawns</i> - - -	"	PAWNS AND PLEDGES
<i>Pledges</i> - - -	"	PAWNS AND PLEDGES
<i>Promissory Notes</i> - -	"	BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS
<i>Real Property</i> - -	"	REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL
<i>Sale of Goods</i> - -	"	SALE OF GOODS
<i>Separate Estate</i> - -	"	HUSBAND AND WIFE
<i>Settlements</i> - - -	"	SETTLEMENTS
<i>Tenants for Years</i> - -	"	LANDLORD AND TENANT
<i>Trespass</i> - - -	"	TRESPASS
<i>Trover</i> - - -	"	TROVER AND DETINUE
<i>Trusts</i> - - -	"	TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES
<i>Wills</i> - - -	"	WILLS

Part I.—Definitions.

SECT 1—*Personal Property in General*

784 Personal property or personality may be roughly described as comprising all forms of property, movable or immovable, corporeal or incorporeal, other than freehold or copyhold estates of inheritance in land and its appurtenances (a), or estates in such land or appurtenances, for the life or lives, or (with some exceptions) chattels affixed to such lands. Originally the only remedy for the recovery of personal property was an action for damages (b), but specific delivery can now be ordered, and other remedies have in some cases been provided by statute (c). Real property was always specifically

Definition
of personal
property

(a) There are certain interests which partake of the nature of real estate, e.g., peerages and dignities (see title *PEERAGES AND DIGNITIES*, p. 269, *ante*), shares in certain public undertakings (*Drybutter v Bartholomew* (1723), 2 P. Wms 127, *Buckeridge v Ingram* (1795), 2 Ves 652), and title deeds of real estate, which are the "sinews of the land" (Co Litt 6 a), and pass by a conveyance of land without express mention (*Harrington v Price* (1832), 3 B & Ad 170), which may not be completely covered by the above definition, but for all practical purposes such definition is believed to be sufficient. The usual definition of personal estate is property which on the owner's death passes at common law to his legal personal representative, but as by statute a deceased owner's real estate now passes to his legal personal representative (see title *DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION*, Vol. XI, p. 4), the latter definition is confusing. As to the descent of an annuity given with words of inheritance, see title *RENTCHARGES AND ANNUITIES*.

(b) As to the right to recover particular chattels, see pp. 307, 400, *post*.

(c) As to ejectment in respect of leaseholds, see titles *LANDLORD AND TENANT*, Vol. XVIII, pp. 558 *et seq.*, *REAL PROPERTY AND CHANCERY*. As to the description of personal estate, see, further, title *DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION*, Vol. XI, p. 3. No attempt can be made here to describe in detail the origin of the distinction now drawn between real and personal property. The following brief summary will, however, suffice to render intelligible the definition of personal property attempted in the text. The feudal system established in England after the Norman Conquest was concerned only with property in land, then the chief, but by no means the only, form of wealth (2 Pollock and Maitland, *History of English Law*, p. 149), and with a few other objects related to land, and not with goods and chattels, which from their movable and destructible nature were not fit objects of feudal tenure (*ibid.*, p. 180, Williams on *Real Property*, 19th ed., p. 12). The law of personal property is said to be derived mainly from the Roman civil law and the custom of merchants (Butler's note to Co Litt 191 a, II, 2). The terms "real" and "personal" were originally used to describe particular forms of actions at law and the nature of relief thereby afforded. Thus an *actio in rem*, or real action, was a suit brought for the specific restitution of the *res*, or thing, claimed, and at first lay only for the wrongful taking of freehold land (Glanv. i 7—31, ii 3—20, iii 3—9, xiii 32—39, Bract fol. 101 b, 169 b), whereas personal actions were brought to recover damages for the wrongful taking of chattels. In course of time the expression "real property," or "realty," was applied to the subject-matter of a "real" action (Co Litt 118 b, 2 Bl Com pp. 16, 384), and "personal property," or "personalty," to denote all property not recoverable by a "real" action (*ibid.*). As to the forms of real actions and personal actions, see title *ACTION*, Vol. I, pp. 31 *et seq.* The distinction between real and personal property may also be traced in the different modes of succession to the two classes of property after death:

SECT 1
Personal
Property in
General

recoverable by process of law (*d*) It also differs from real property in the methods by which it is alienable (*e*) Chattels real and personal are included in the expression "personal estate"

SECT 2—*Chattels Real*

Chattels real

785 Interests concerning or savouring of realty, such as a term for years in land (*f*), an option by the lessee to purchase the fee (*g*), or the next presentation to a church (*h*), having the quality of immobility which makes them akin to realty (*i*), but lacking indeterminate duration, are called chattels real (*k*) In some respects they are subject, like other chattels, to the law of personal property, in others to the law of real property (*l*)

SECT 3—*Chattels Personal*

Chattels
personal

786 Chattels personal are, strictly speaking, things movable, but in modern times the expression is used to denote any kind of property other than real property and chattels real (*m*)

see titles DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 4 *et seq*, LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 347, 413

(*d*) See title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL. The remedy differed owing to the physical distinction between lands and chattels Land, being indestructible and irremovable, is by nature specifically recoverable Goods on the other hand, may be destroyed by the wrongful taker, or may be removed out of the jurisdiction of the court An action by a dispossessed owner for the specific restitution of goods cannot, therefore, be invariably successful, and so it came about that such actions were regarded as personal, because it was uncertain whether the goods would be forthcoming, or whether the defendant would absolve himself by payment of pecuniary compensation (Glanv x, 2, 13, Bract fol 102 b, *Anon* (1340), Y B 14 Edw 3, 30 (Rolls Series), 3 Bl Com, pp 146, 413) In more recent times the dispossessed owner of personality acquired certain rights of specific restitution, see p 400, *post*

(*e*) See p 404, *post*

(*f*) *Fieke v Canbery* (Lord) (1873), L R 16 Eq 461, 466, *Re Watson, Oulton v Carlton* (1887), 35 W R 711, *Tomkins v Jones* (1889), 22 Q B D 599, 602, C A, *Re Grassi, Stubbs v Grassi*, [1905] 1 Ch 554, see title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 392 *et seq*

(*g*) *Re Adams and Kensington Vestry* (1884), 27 Ch D 394, C A, see title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 392 *et seq*

(*h*) Fitz Nat Brev 33, P (G), 34, B, *R v Canterbury (Archbishop)* (1588) 4 Leon 109, Co Litt 388 a and see title ECCLESIASTICAL LAW Vol XI, p 585

(*i*) See title CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI, p 196

(*k*) Co Litt 42 a, 43 b, 118 b, 2 Bl Com p 386, and see *Re Fraser, Louth v Fraser*, [1904] 1 Ch 111, 116, affirmed, [1904] 1 Ch 726, C A, see, further, title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(*l*) Co Litt 42 a, 118 b, *Whitaker v Ambler* (1758), 1 Eden, 151, 152, *Prescott v Barker* (1874), 9 Ch App 174, 190

(*m*) The word "chattel" is derived from the Latin "*catalla*," which primarily signified beasts of husbandry or cattle In its secondary sense it was applied to all kinds of movables (2 Bl Com, p 385, 2 Pollock and Matland, History of English Law, p 149) As to whether a prehistoric boat embedded in the soil below the surface is a chattel, see *Elwes v Brigg Gas Co* (1886), 33 Ch D 562 As to what things are regarded as "movable," see *Chamberlayne v Collins* (1894), 70 L T 217, C A (machinery erected on land and removable without injury to the soil—a chattel), and titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 173, 174, CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI, p 196, DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION,

SECT. 3
Chattels
Personal.

The term "personalty" or "personal property" now includes many kinds of property unknown to the common law, such as bills of exchange, bank-notes and cheques (*n*), land improvement charges (*o*), copyrights (*p*), patents (*q*), shares in joint-stock companies (*r*), debentures (*s*), Government annuities and stock in the public funds (*t*), goodwill (*u*), and the exclusive right of burial in any particular place (*v*), but the term does not include title deeds relating to real estate (*a*), heirlooms in the strict sense (*b*), fixtures (*c*), growing crops and trees (*d*), or wild animals (*e*).

Some kinds of property are declared to be personalty by statute (*f*).

787 Property in chattels personal may be in possession or in action. It is in possession where the possessor has not only the right to enjoy, but the actual enjoyment of, the chattels, the chattels being in such case sometimes called corporeal chattels. Where only a bare right to enjoy exists, the property is said to be in action, and the chattels are called incorporeal. Personal property

Corporeal and
incorporeal
chattels

Vol XI, p 3 note (*f*), DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 136, LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 416 *et seq*, MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, p 70.

(*n*) See title BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS, Vol II, pp 457 *et seq*.

(*o*) See title LAND IMPROVEMENT, Vol XVIII, p 297.

(*p*) Copyright Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5 c 46), s 5 (2), see title COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY, Vol VIII, p 140.

(*q*) See title PATENTS AND INVENTIONS, p 127, *ante*.

(*r*) Companies (Consolidation) Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7 c 69) s 22, and see titles CHOSSES IN ACTION, Vol IV, p 362, COMPANIES, Vol V, p 650.

(*s*) *Attlee v Howe* (1878), 9 Ch D 337, 351, C A.

(*t*) National Debt Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 71), s 9 (Government annuities), Bank of England Act, 1696 (8 & 9 Will 3 c 20), s 33 (repealed) (Bank of England stock), stat (1697) 9 Will 3, c 44, s 71 (shares in East India Company), see *Dundas v Dutens* (1790) 1 Ves 196, 198 *Wildman v Wildman* (1803), 9 Ves 174, 177, *R v Copper* (1817), 5 Bine, 217, 263, 264. As to annuities, see title RENTCHARGES AND ANNUITIES.

(*u*) See titles PARTNERSHIP, p 104, *ante*, TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS.

(*v*) See title BURIAL AND CREMATION, Vol III, pp 50, 521.

(*a*) As to title deeds, see title RIGHT PROPERTY AND CHATTELS RIGHT.

(*b*) These are heirlooms which by virtue of a special custom descend with the inheritance of the land. see *ibid*, and see title SUCCESSION.

(*c*) See title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 416 *et seq*.

(*d*) See titles AGRICULTURE, Vol I, p 282, LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 565, 566, REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL.

(*e*) See title ANIMALS, Vol I, pp 365 *et seq*.

(*f*) In the Wills Act, 1837 (7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c 26), s 1, "personal estate" includes "monies, shares of Government and other funds, securities for money (not being real estate), debts, choses in action, rights, credits and goods", see title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, p 3. Personal chattels or personal property are also defined for the purposes of succession duty (see Succession Duty Act, 1853 (16 & 17 Vict c 51), s 1, title ESTATE AND OTHER DEATH DUTIES, Vol XIII, p 263) and bills of sale (see title BILLS OF SALE, Vol III, pp 20 *et seq*). In the case of charitable gifts various kinds of property indirectly connected with land have been held to be personalty, see title CHARITIES, Vol IV, p 125, note (*q*). "Personal property" is also defined in the Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 75), s 24 (see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 348) and in the Conveyancing Acts, 1881 (44 & 45 Vict c 41), s 2 (1), and 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 39), s 1 (4) (1), see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL. For revenue purposes "personal property" includes land of which there

SECT 3
Chattels
Personal

may also be partly in possession and partly in action, as, for example, bills of exchange and promissory notes. The debt thereby secured is a chose in action (*g*), but the actual document is a chose in possession (*h*)

Choses in
possession

788 Choses or things in possession include all things which are at once tangible, movable, and visible, and of which possession can be taken, as, for example, animals, household stuff, money, jewels, corn, garments, and everything else that can properly be put in motion and transferred from place to place (*i*)

Choses in
action.

789. Things or choses in action are things recoverable by suit or action at law as contrasted with things or choses in actual physical possession (*k*)

has been an equitable conversion (*A -G v Dodd*, [1894] 2 Q B 150, Customs and Inland Revenue Acts, 1881 (44 & 45 Vict c 12), s 38 (2), and 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 7), s 11), and a mortgagee's interest in realty (*A -G v Worrall*, [1895] 1 Q B 99, C A), and see titles ESTATE AND OTHER DEATH DUTIES, Vol XIII, pp 239, 306, 307, INCOME TAX, Vol XVI, pp 618, 619, REVENUE

(*g*) *Hertford (Marquis) v Lowther (Lord)* (1843), 7 Beav 1, see title CHOSSES IN ACTION, Vol IV, p 360

(*h*) *Re Prater, Desmge v Beare* (1888), 37 Ch D 481, C A, *Re Robson Robson v Hamilton*, [1891] 2 Ch 559. Such documents may be the object of larceny, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 641, 642

(*i*) 2 Bl Com, p 387

(*k*) *Ibid*, p 396, see title CHOSSES IN ACTION, Vol IV, pp 359 *et seq* where choses in action are dealt with in detail

Rights of indemnity, which are choses in action, have been recently considered in *Re Richardson, Ex parte St Thomas's Hospital (Governors)*, [1911] 2 K B 705, C A. Indemnity requires that the party to be indemnified shall never be called upon to pay (*ibid*, per BUCKLEY, L J, at p 716). Thus a person entitled to be indemnified is entitled either to a declaration that the person who is liable to indemnify him is bound to procure his release from the liability to the creditor (*ibid*, at pp 709, 716, *Cruse v Paine* (1869), 4 Ch App 441), or to have a fund set aside to protect him from the liability when it arises (*Re Richardson, Ex parte St Thomas's Hospital (Governors)*, *supra*, at pp 709, 713, *Lacey v Hall Crowley's Claim* (1874), L R 18 Eq 182, 191). Under the old common law rules no action could be maintained on a contract of indemnity unless actual loss had been incurred (*Re Richardson, Ex parte St Thomas's Hospital (Governors)*, *supra*, at pp 709, 712, *Collinge v Heywood* (1839), 4 Ad & El 633), although a covenant to protect against liability (*Carr v Roberts* (1833), 5 B & Ad 78), or to pay the debt (*Ashdown v Ingamells* (1880), 5 Ex D 280, C A), could be enforced, notwithstanding that the person claiming the indemnity had not paid the whole debt. The fact that the person to be indemnified is insolvent does not affect the liability of the person who has covenanted to indemnify him (*Hill v Smith* (1844), 12 M. & W 618, 632, *Ashdown v Ingamells*, *supra*, disapproving *Porter v Vorley* (1832), 9 Bing 93, *Re Richardson, Ex parte St Thomas's Hospital (Governors)*, *supra*), but any sums recovered under the indemnity must be applied in satisfaction of the particular debt, and are not divisible among the general creditors in the bankruptcy of the person indemnified (*Re Richardson, Ex parte St Thomas's Hospital (Governors)*, *supra*), and see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 137, 138. No order, however, for actual payment to the person claiming indemnity can apparently be made in the absence of the principal creditor unless the claimant has already paid the debt (*Re Richardson, Ex parte St Thomas's Hospital (Governors)*, *supra*, at p 713, but see *Carr v Roberts*, *supra*). As to the nature of a contract of indemnity, see, further, title GLARANTFE, Vol XV, pp 444 *et seq*

Part II.—Possession.

SECT. 1—Meaning of the Term

SECT. 1.

Meaning of the Term

790. "Possession" is a word of ambiguous meaning (*l*), and its legal senses do not coincide with the popular sense (*m*). In English law it is treated not merely as a physical condition protected by ownership, but as a right in itself (*n*).

Physical and legal possession distinguished.

De facto possession

791 The word "possession" (*o*) may mean effective, physical, or manual control, or occupation, evidenced by some outward act, sometimes called *de facto* possession or detention (*p*). This is a question of fact rather than of law (*q*).

792 The word "possession" may mean legal possession, which may exist with or without *de facto* possession, and with or without a rightful origin (*r*).

Legal possession

(*l*) *Bourne v Forbrooke* (1865), 18 C B (N S) 526, *Lyell v Kennedy* (1887), 18 Q B D 796, C A, *per* FRY, L J, at p 813. As to the meaning of "possession" or "vacant possession" in a contract for the sale of land, see *Lake v Dean* (1860), 28 Beav 607, and see title SALE OF LAND.

(*m*) Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law, p 1.

(*n*) *Ibid*, p 19, Markby, Elements of Law, s 349. "Possession" originally expresses the simple notion of a physical capacity to deal with a thing as the possessor likes, to the exclusion of everyone else (*ibid*, s 348). It sometimes means physical control simply, the proper word for which is "detention" (*ibid*, s 398).

(*o*) As to the meaning of "apparent possession" for the purposes of the Bills of Sale Acts, see title BILLS OF SALE, Vol III, p 56. The expression "man in possession" used in the Distress (Costs) Act, 1817 (57 Geo 3, c 93), means a man in possession of the goods seized but not necessarily in possession of them on the premises when they were seized (*Scott v Denton*, [1907] 1 K B 456).

(*p*) A shopkeeper is in *de facto* possession of bank notes which are dropped by a stranger in a part of the shop frequented by customers and picked up by a customer (*Bridges v Hawkesworth* (1851), 15 Ju 1079). Again, a man may be said to be in *de facto* possession of bulky or immovable objects in his own house or garden, though absolute physical control is impracticable (Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law, pp 11 *et seq*, 38).

(*q*) Such use and enjoyment as the nature of the subject matter admits of is good evidence of possession (*Harper v Charlesworth* (1825), 4 B & C 174).

De facto possession of goods may be obvious where physical control is demonstrable. It is a question of fact. But in the capture of wild animals it may not always be clear when complete possession is taken. Thus, so long as a seine net is open, complete possession has not been taken of the fish (*Young v Hitchens* (1844), 6 Q B 606, 2 Kent, Commentaries on American Law, p 349, and see title FISHERIES, Vol XIV, p 589). As to the custom relating to the capture of whales, see title CUSTOM AND USAGES, Vol X, p 283. As to the property in wild animals, see title ANIMALS, Vol I, pp 365 *et seq*, GAME, Vol XV, pp 211 *et seq*.

(*r*) Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law, p 26. Legal possession must be conceived as a definite right or interest, to which legal incidents are attached, and which exist independently of the true owner's title (*ibid*, pp 17, 19). "Possession in a legal sense is the determination to exercise physical control over a thing on one's own behalf coupled with the capacity for doing so, and is therefore of necessity exclusive" (Markby, Elements of Law, s 397, see *ibid*, s 354, and Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law, p 16).

SECT 1

Meaning of the Term

Nature of legal possession

Lost property

Possession of servants or guests

Stolen property

Right to possession

The normal case of legal possession is where the true owner has *de facto* possession and intends to exclude unauthorised interference. In this instance *de facto* and legal possession are associated in the same person (s). A bailee also has *de facto* and legal possession during the bailment (t).

Legal possession of an article remains in the owner though he has lost or abandoned physical possession of it or otherwise ceased to exercise effective control over it, for example, where he has lost a jewel in his house, left his implements of husbandry in a field with the intention of returning, or even abandoned the article altogether, provided that no one else has taken *de facto* possession (a).

The owner has legal possession of an article temporarily in the custody of his servant (b), except where the servant receives an article from a third party to hold for his master, in which case the servant holds as bailee and has legal possession (c). In the same way the owner retains the legal possession where the article is in the custody of a guest or licensee (d).

A thief, however, may have legal possession of stolen goods, the true owner having merely the right to possession, on the principle that possession in fact with the manifest intention to exercise sole dominion imports possession in law (e).

793 The third meaning of the word "possession" is the right to possession which may be equivalent to ownership, or merely of a temporary or special character (f).

SECT 2—Different Kinds of Possession.

SUB-SECT 1—Absolute or Qualified

Absolute possession

794 Possession is absolute where a man has solely and exclusively the right to and also the occupation of any movable chattel, so that it cannot be transferred from him or cease to be his without his own act or default. Thus a man may have absolute possession of all manumate things and vegetable productions when severed from the plant or ground (g), and of tame animals (h).

Qualified possession

795 Animals *jura naturæ* may be the subject of qualified or limited property, either on account of their inability to escape from the land of the possessor or because the possessor has been granted an exclusive privilege of capture (i). Fire, light, air and water are

(s) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, pp 17, 41

(t) See title BAILMENT, Vol I, pp 525, 541

(a) See title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 641, Pollock and Wright *Possession in the Common Law*, p 19

(b) See title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 632

(c) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, p 60, see title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, p 67

(d) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, pp 18, 58, 138, 140, Markby, *Elements of Law*, ss 371—381, see title SALE OF GOODS

(e) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, p 20, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 678

(f) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, pp 25, 27, 146

(g) 2 Bl Com, p 389, and see title AGRICULTURE, Vol I, p 293

(h) 2 Bl Com, p 390, see title ANIMALS, Vol I, p 365

(i) 2 Bl Com, pp 391—394, Savigny, *Possession* (ed 1865), s 31, p 342

also the subjects of qualified property, the property in them ceasing the instant they are out of possession (k)

**SECT. 2.
Different
Kinds of
Possession.**

SUB-SECT. 2 — Possession of Owner

796 An owner of goods enjoys the full rights of ownership when he also has *de facto* possession, or use and enjoyment (l)

Possession
annexed to
ownership

The right to have legal and *de facto* possession is a normal but not necessary incident of ownership (m). Such right may exist with, or apart from, *de facto* or legal possession, and in different persons at the same time in virtue of different proprietary rights (n). When separated from possession, right to possession is sometimes called "constructive possession" (o). Thus, when an owner has been wrongfully dispossessed of his goods by theft, or has lost them, he retains the right to possess them (p), but where he has bailed them his right is temporarily suspended (q). So, also, an executor immediately on the death of the testator, and before probate, has "constructive possession" of the testator's goods (r).

Where *de facto* possession is undetermined, for example, where it is equally consistent with the facts that possession may be in one person or another, legal possession attaches to the right to possess (s).

797 Where there are two co-owners, each is in possession of the whole and of the half (t), which means that while each co-owner has control or *de facto* possession of the whole, he exercises such control partly on behalf of himself and partly on behalf of his co-owner (u). In the case of a joint tenancy, the joint tenants have

Possession
of co-owners

Markby, *Elements of Law*, s. 361, see also title *ANIMALS*, Vol. I, pp. 365, 366.

(k) 2 Bl Com, p. 395 and see title *EASEMENTS AND PROFITS À PRENDRE*, Vol. XI, pp. 297, 310, 326.

(l) See Williams on Real Property, 19th ed., p. 2, *Fouldes v. Willoughby* (1841), 8 M & W 540, 548, *Burroughs v. Bayne* (1860) 3 H & N 296. As to rights of ownership without possession, see p. 398, *post*.

(m) 2 Saund 476, n., *Blackburn, Contract of Sale*, 1st ed., pp. 339, 340, *Bloram v. Sanders* (1825), 4 B & C 941.

(n) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, pp. 27, 146.

(o) *Ibid.*, pp. 25, 27. *E.g.*, where a seller or carrier agrees to hold as agent for the buyer, the buyer has constructive possession, see *Stovell v. Hughes* (1811), 14 East, 308, *Jackson v. Nichol* (1839), 5 Bing (N.C.) 508, and title *CARRIERS*, Vol. IV, p. 97, *SALE OF GOODS, SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION*.

(p) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, p. 27. As to whether a person with a mere right to possession can maintain trespass, see title *TRESPASS*.

(q) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, p. 145.

(r) *Tharpe v. Stallwood* (1843), 5 Man & G 760. The same rule applies in the case of an administrator (*Morgan v. Thomas* (1853), 8 Exch 302), and see title *EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS*, Vol. XIV, p. 146.

(s) *Ramsay v. Margrett*, [1894] 2 Q B 18, C.A., *Antoniadis v. Smith*, [1901] 2 K B 589, C.A.

(t) Littleton's Tenures, s. 288. As to larceny by husband or wife, or partner, or joint owner, see title *CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE*, Vol. IX, pp. 634, 635. As to trespass by one of several co-owners, see title *TRESPASS*.

(u) Markby, *Elements of Law*, s. 399.

SECT 2
Different
Kinds of
Possession.

both single possession and a single joint right to possess Tenants in common have single possession, but several rights to possess (a)

SUB-SECT 3 — Possession of Bailee.

Bailee.

798 A bailee has either actual or constructive possession of the goods bailed as well as the right to possess them, but his possession is conditional on redelivery to the owner or his nominee upon fulfilment of the purposes of the bailment (b)

SUB-SECT 4 — Possession of Trespasser

Trespasser

799 The foundation of the action of trespass is the wrongful interference with the possession of another (c) The trespasser does not acquire possession of chattels unless there is an asportation or carrying away (d) Where a person takes the goods of another without his previous consent, possession in fact is acquired by trespass, which, according to circumstances, may or may not be justifiable (e)

SUB-SECT 5 — Possession of Finder

**Finder of lost
chattels**

800 The innocent (f) finder of a lost chattel who takes it into his custody obtains possession both in fact and in law, and has a limited right to possession good against all but the rightful owner (g)

The rule that a finder who takes possession of property absolutely abandoned or irremediably lost by its former owner thereby acquires ownership (h) is not applicable as against the Crown or against

(a) *Littlton's Tenures*, ss 311, 314, 315

(b) See title *BAILMENT*, Vol I, pp 524 *et seq* The temporary custody of his master's property by a servant in charge must be distinguished from ordinary bailment, see title *MASTER AND SERVANT* Vol XX, p 67 The custody of the servant apparently amounts merely to a licence to deal with the property in a certain way (*Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law*, pp 58—60, 130, 138, *Kerr v Phyn* (1893), 30 SC L R 607) As to the right of an owner who has delivered goods to a bailee to maintain trover for conversion by a stranger, see *Quinn v Pratt*, [1908] 2 I R 69, 82, titles *BAILMENT*, Vol I, p 563, *TROVER AND DETINUE* As to possession of an auctioneer, see *Davis v Artingstall* (1880), 49 L J (CH) 609, title *AUCTION AND AUCTIONEERS*, Vol I, p 520

(c) *Johnson v Diprose*, [1893] 1 Q B 512, C A, see, further, title *TRESPASS* The term "trespass" is also used with reference to injury to chattels where the trespasser does not take possession

(d) See title *CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE*, Vol IX, p 630

(e) *Pollock and Wright Possession in the Common Law*, pp 118 *et seq* see also p 397, *post*, titles *CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE*, Vol IX, p 629, *TRESPASS*

(f) *Buckley v Gross* (1803), 3 B & S 566, 573

(g) *Armory v Delamirie* (1722), 1 Stra 505 1 Smith, L C, 11th ed p 356, *Cartwright v Green* (1803), 8 Ves 504, 509, *Elwes v Brigg Gas Co* (1886), 33 Ch D 562, 570 As to when a finder of a chattel is regarded as a bailee, owner, or thief, as to finding by a bailee or by a purchaser, as to rights of a finder against third parties, and as to chattels found on private property, see titles *BAILMENT*, Vol I, pp 528 *et seq*, *CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE*, Vol IX, p 630; *TROVER AND DETINUE*, *Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law*, pp 171—187

(h) *Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law*, p 124

persons who have acquired franchises by grant or prescription in respect of chattels of which possession has been lost or abandoned in special circumstances, such as treasure trove (t).

SECT. 2.
Different
Kinds of
Possession.

SECT. 3.—Rights Annexed to Possession

801 The *prima facie* presumption of law is that the person who has *de facto* possession has the property (k), and accordingly such possession is protected, whatever its origin, against all who cannot prove a superior title (l). This rule applies equally in criminal (m) and civil (n) matters. Thus a person in actual or apparent possession, but without the right to possession, has, as against a stranger or a wrongdoer, all the rights and remedies of a person entitled to and able to prove a present right to possession (o).

Possession
prima facie
title.

Title to property, created merely by the act of reducing a thing into possession, necessarily implies a reduction into possession effected by a lawful act. Such an act, if it constitutes a trespass, cannot create a title to property as against the rightful owner (p).

No title
against owner

Until a superior title is shown, *de facto* possession is conclusive evidence of the right to possess (q). The result is that a stranger or wrongdoer cannot defend himself by proving the right of a third party (r), unless he can show that he is acting on behalf of such third party (s).

Stranger
cannot set up
owner's title

SECT. 4.—Acquisition of Possession

802 Possession of chattels can be taken by physical contact (t), but contact is not essential where the intention of the parties is that possession shall be acquired (u). In each case possession depends

Acquisition of
possession

(t) As to treasure trove, see titles BAILMENT, Vol I, p 531, note (j); CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 372, 489, CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 521. As to estrays, wreck, jetsam, flotsam and ligan, see Co Litt 114 b, 1 Bl Com, pp 291—299, *Constable's* (Sir Henry) Case (1601), 5 Co Rep 106, *A G v Moore*, [1893] 1 Ch 676, titles ADMIRALTY, Vol I, p 76, BAILMENT, Vol I, pp 530, note (e), 531, CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 479, Vol VII, pp 209 *et seq*.
(k) *Walbraham v Snow* (1670) 2 Wms Saund 47, *Tones v Walliams* (1837), 2 M & W 326, 331, *Jeffries v Great Western Rail Co* (1856), 5 E & B 802, 806, *Elwes v Brigg Gas Co* (1886), 33 Ch D 562, 569, *The Winkfield*, [1902] P 42, C A, *Glenwood Lumber Co v Phillips*, [1904] A C 405, 410, P C.

(l) *Rogers v Spence* (1844), 13 M & W 581.

(m) See 2 Pollock and Maitland, History of English Law, pp 40 *et seq*.

(n) See *ibid*, and titles TORT, TRESPASS.

(o) *Armory v Delamirie* (1722), 1 Stra 505, 1 Smith, L C, 11th ed, p 356, *Bridges v Hawkesworth* (1851), 15 Jur 1070, *Bourne v Foshrooke* (1865), 18 C B (N S) 515, see *Jeffries v Great Western Rail Co* (1856), 5 E & B 802, *per* Lord CAMPBELL, C J, at p 805.

(p) *Blades v Higgs* (1865), 11 H. L. Cas. 621, *Elwes v. Brigg Gas Co*, *supra*, at p 568, *Glenwood Lumber Co v Phillips*, *supra*, Holmes, The Common Law, title "Possession," p 223.

(q) *Asher v Whitlock* (1865), L R 1 Q B 1, *Doe d Smith and Payne v Webber* (1834)), 1 Ad & El 119.

(r) *Bristow v Cormican* (1878), 3 App Cas 641, 651.

(s) *Leake v Loveday* (1842), 4 Man & G 972, *Newnham v Stevenson* (1851), 10 C B 713, 724, see, further, title TORT.

(t) *E.g.*, a man can take possession of a coin by putting it in his pocket (*Markby*, Elements of Law, s 358).

(u) *E.g.*, possession is acquired by the purchaser of goods stored in a warehouse when the keys are handed over to him by the vendor with the intention of transferring possession (*Markby*, Elements of Law, s 358, see

SECT 4
Acquisition
of
Possession

on the physical possibility of the possessor dealing with the thing exclusively (a)

Where *de facto* possession is undetermined, the lawful owner may acquire it by entry or occupation (b) Where two persons claim *de facto* possession, the title of the one who can prove the right to possess prevails (c)

SECT 5—*Loss of Possession.*

LOSS OF
POSSESSION

803 Physical or *de facto* possession may be lost by discontinuance of physical control in various ways (d), but the loss of physical control does not necessarily involve loss of legal possession (e), and a person entitled to immediate possession, who has temporarily parted with *de facto* possession, has the rights and remedies of a *de facto* possessor (f)

What is
abandonment

804 Abandonment of goods takes place when possession of them is quitte*d* voluntarily without any intention of transferring them to another (g) A buried coffin is not regarded as abandoned, but remains in the possession of the deceased person's representatives or in that of the person who buried the deceased (h) Similarly, the interment of animals does not imply abandonment (i)

The possession of a person who has wilfully abandoned a thing

Guest v Homfray (1801), 5 Ves 818, 823, and title **RIGHTS OF SALE**, Vol III, p 7, note (j)), and a mortgagee of personal chattels entitled to possession may acquire possession without physical interference with their use and enjoyment (Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, p 79) In point of law possession of goods may be changed by agreement without any physical change in their position or in the position of the person who actually guards them (*Wills v Charlesworth* (1890), 25 Q B D 421, C A, *per LINDLEY, L J*, at p 425, reversed on other grounds, [1892] A C 231)

(a) Markby, *Elements of Law*, s 359

(b) *Jones v Chapman* (1849) 2 Exch 802, 821, Ex Ch, *Bristol v Cormican* (1878), 3 App Cas 641

(c) *Intleton's Tenures*, s 701, see *Ramsay v Margrett*, [1894] 2 Q B 18 (C A)

(d) See Markby, *Elements of Law*, s 362, Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, p 15, and see p 404 *post*

(e) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, p 16

(f) *I. q.*, a bailor where the bailment is revocable at will, or a trustee of chattels left under the control of the beneficiary (*Barker v Furlong*, [1891] 2 Ch 172) As to the right of stoppage of goods *in transitu*, which must be exercised after they have left the actual or constructive possession of the seller and before they are in the possession of the buyer, see titles **CARRIERS**, Vol IV, p 97, **SALE OF GOODS** As to common law lien upon goods depending upon possession and ceasing when possession or right to possession is parted with, see *Great Eastern Railway v Lord's Trustee*, [1909] A C 109, *Forth v Simpson* (1849), 13 Q B 680, titles **LIEN**, Vol XIX, p 2, **SALE OF GOODS**

(g) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, p 44 As to the possibility of a person divesting himself of a right to possession by wilful abandonment, see *ibid*, pp 124, 145, 22 Vin Abr 409, tit *WILL* and see *Haynes's Case* (1613), 12 Co Rep 113, where it was said "a man cannot relinquish the property he hath to his goods unless they vested in another"

(h) *Haynes's Case*, *supra*, 1 Hale, C L 515, and see title **BURIAL AND CREMATION**, Vol III, pp 406 553

(i) *R v Edwards and Stacey* (1877), 13 Cox, C C 384, C C R As to larceny of things found and believed to have been abandoned, see title **CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE**, Vol IX, p 630

does not necessarily render him liable for any damage subsequently caused by the thing abandoned (*j*)

805 Voluntary loss of possession may also be effected by transfer or delivery to another (*k*)

806 Deprivation or the dispossessing of the goods of another without his consent may be legally justifiable or wrongful according to circumstances (*l*) It is rightful or justifiable, for example, when the true owner retakes them from a trespasser (*m*), or when the taking is authorised by law, for example, in a case of public necessity or as being for the true owner's benefit (*n*), or in case of bankruptcy, execution or distress (*o*) It is wrongful when the taking amounts to a trespass for which there is no justification (*p*)

807 The loss of possession may also be occasioned by destruction or extinction of the chattel in fact or in law (*q*)

808 Where physical possession unaccompanied by a right to possession is legally divested, the former possessor has not the right of recovery which belongs to a person in actual possession (*r*)

SECT. 5 Loss of Possession.

Transfer of possession
Dispossession

Destruction of chattel

Right to recover possession

Part III.—Ownership.

SECT. 1—Nature of Ownership

809 Ownership consists of innumerable rights over property, for example, the rights of exclusive enjoyment, of destruction, alteration and alienation, and of maintaining and recovering possession of the property from all other persons. Such rights are conceived not as separately existing, but as merged in one general right of ownership (*s*)

Meaning of ownership

(*q*) *White v. Crisp* (1854), 10 Exch. 312 (abandonment of sunken vessel in navigable river)

(*k*) See p. 404, *post*

(*l*) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, pp. 77, 78

(*m*) See titles TORT, TRESPASS

(*n*) *Isaack v. Clark* (1615), 2 Bulst. 306, 312

(*o*) See *Six Carpenters' Case* (1610), 8 Co. Rep. 146 b., 1 Smith, L. C., 11th ed., p. 132, *Charlesworth v. Mills*, [1892] A. C. 231 (sheriff's possession), *R. v. Lushington, Ex parte Otto* [1894] 1 Q. B. 420 (detention, by court, of alleged stolen property, produced by purchaser under *subpoena duces tecum*), and see titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol. II, p. 4, DISTRESS, Vol. XI, p. 117, EXECUTION, Vol. XIV, pp. 3, 4, SHERIFFS AND BAILIFFS

(*p*) See *R. v. Riley* (1853), Deak. C. C. 149, C. C. R., titles CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, pp. 627 *et seq.*, TORT

(*q*) *E.g.*, the escape and return to a wild state of a reclaimed wild animal, or the escape of gas, or the placing in the soil of a plant

(*r*) *Buckley v. Gross* (1863), 3 B. & S. 568

(*s*) 2 Austin's *Jurisprudence*, 4th ed., p. 817, Markby, *Elements of Law*, ss. 309, 314, 321, 323. For suggested definitions of ownership, see *ibid.*, s. 318, n., compare the meaning of "ownership" as applied to land, explained in *Metropolitan Rail Co. v. Fowler* (1891), 60 L. J. (Q. B.) 518, *per* CAVE, J., at p. 525, affirmed, [1892] 1 Q. B. 165, C. A., and see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL. As to chattels being the subject of absolute ownership, see *Glanv. vii. 5, x. 6*, Bract fol. 60 b., 129 a., 131 a., 407 b., 2 Pollock and Maitland, *History of English Law*, pp. 4—10, 176—183

SECT 1

Nature of Ownership.

Ownership of chattels.

How far rights of owner divisible

The ownership of goods (*i*) differs from the ownership of land in several respects (*a*), partly because the common law does not recognise the possibility of the ownership of goods being split up into lesser successive interests or estates, nor does it contemplate remainders or reversions in chattels (*b*).

810 Ownership is nevertheless divisible to some extent. For example, one or more of the *fasciculus* of rights constituting ownership may be detached (*c*) Thus an owner is *primâ facie* entitled to possession (*d*) or to recover possession of his goods against all the world (*e*), a right which a dispossessed owner may exercise by peaceable retaking (*f*) But he may voluntarily or involuntarily part with possession, for example, by the pledging (*g*), lending, hiring out (*h*), bailment (*i*), theft (*k*) or loss of his goods, in any of which cases he is left with a right of ownership without possession, accompanied or not accompanied, as the case may be, with the right to possess Ownership is also divorced from possession where the goods are in possession of a person who has a lien on them (*l*), or when they are seized under a distress and until a sale is made under the statute (*m*)

Legal and beneficial ownership

811 In the case of trusts, the legal ownership is said to be in the trustee and the beneficial enjoyment or equitable ownership in the *cestui que trust* (*n*)

SECT 2—Personal Capacity.

Ownership of corporations,

812 The owner may be a single individual or a legal entity, namely, a corporation, or several individuals may together constitute the owner (*o*) In the case of corporate ownership, the rights and obligations attach to the corporate body, and the existence of such

(*i*) Our ancient law books, which are founded upon the feudal provisions, do not often condescend to regulate ownership of personal property (2 Bl Com, p 385) The law of personal property is said to be founded on the civil law (*ibid*)

(*a*) See title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(*b*) See p 413, *post*

(*c*) Markby, Elements of Law, s 314 As to who may be described as owner in an indictment for larceny, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 645, note (*d*)

(*d*) As to the possession of owner, see p 393, *ante*

(*e*) Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law, p 25

(*f*) Littleton's Tenures, s 497; 3 Bl Com, pp 4, 5, see *Blades v Higgs* (1861), 10 C B (N s) 713; *Re Ware, Ex parte Drake* (1877), 5 Ch D 866, 871, C A, and title TRESPASS It is a misdemeanour for an owner to make a bargain with a thief, who has stolen his goods, not to prosecute if the goods are restored (4 Bl Com, pp 133, 356, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 503)

(*g*) See title PAWNS AND PLEDGES, pp 235, 238, *ante*

(*h*) See title BAILMENT, Vol I, pp 550 *et seq*

(*i*) See *ibid*, p 524, title CARRIERS, Vol IV, p 92

(*k*) As to the present practice in actions for the recovery of goods or their value, and as to the right of an owner to bring a civil action for goods or their value against a thief before prosecuting him criminally, see titles ACTION, Vol I, pp 27, 44, TROVER AND DETINUE

(*l*) See titles LIEN, Vol XIX, pp. 2, 16, 18, SALE OF GOODS

(*m*) Stat (1089) 2 Will & Mar c 5, s. 2; see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 168.

(*n*) See title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES

(*o*) Markby, Elements of Law, s 324

rights and obligations is not affected by the death of individual members of the body (*p*).

There is no restriction placed on the acquisition of personality by corporations aggregate (*q*) or charities (*r*).

Aliens are capable of acquiring and holding personal property other than a British ship (*s*)

SECT. 3.

Personal
Capacity.and charities
Ownership of
aliens

SECT. 3 — Acquisition of Ownership

SUB-SECT. 1 — By Succession to Title of Previous Owner

813 The acquisition of ownership by succession strictly speaking applies only to corporations aggregate, because in the eye of the law a corporation never dies, and the members by succession acquire the ownership of the corporate property (*t*)

Corporation
aggregate and
sole

The general rule with regard to corporations sole is that no chattel can be acquired by right of succession (*a*), except in the case of the Crown, or where the corporation sole represents a number of persons, or where by custom it has acquired the right of taking particular chattel interests in succession (*b*)

An individual may, however, be said to acquire ownership by succession (*c*) when he succeeds to the title of a previous owner, for example, in cases of gifts (*d*), sales (*e*), under a will (*f*), or on an intestacy (*g*), or to the possession of another under circumstances depriving the former owner of his ownership, for example, in case of a purchase in market overt (*h*)

Individual
Succession

SUB-SECT. 2 — By Change of Possession

814 Loss of possession of chattels frequently involves loss of ownership, owing to the practical difficulty of following up the ownership of movables. But a judgment for the recovery of any property other than land or money may be enforced either by writ for delivery of the property, or by writ of attachment, or by writ of sequestration (*i*)

Specific
Goods

When such a judgment is being enforced by writ of delivery, the court may on the plaintiff's application order that execution shall

(*p*) Markby, Elements of Law, ss 326, 774, see title CORPORATIONS, Vol VIII, p 365

(*q*) See *ibid*, p 377

(*r*) See title CHARITIES, Vol IV, p 124

(*s*) Co Litt 129 b, 1 Bl Com, p 360, *Watford v Marsham* (1596), Moore (K B), 431, see titles ALIENS, Vol I, pp 306 *et seq*, SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION

(*t*) 2 Bl Com, p 430, see also title CORPORATIONS, Vol VIII, p 365.

(*a*) 2 Bl Com, pp 432, 433

(*b*) *Ibid*, p 433

(*c*) See Markby, Elements of Law, pp 371 *et seq*

(*d*) See title GIFTS, Vol XV, pp 404 *et seq*

(*e*) See titles SALE OF GOODS, SALE OF LAND

(*f*) See title WILLS

(*g*) See titles DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 16 *et seq*; EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 136

(*h*) Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law, p. 123, see title MARKETS AND FAIRS, Vol XX, pp 53 *et seq*

(*i*) R. S. C., Ord 42, r 6. As to writs of delivery, see title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp. 37, 74, 75, as to writs of attachment, see *ibid*, p 75, and as to writs of sequestration, see *ibid*, pp 79 *et seq*. See, generally, as to the recovery of goods in specie, titles DISTRESS, Vol XI, pp 199 *et seq*, SALE OF GOODS, TROVER AND DETINUE

SECT 3
Acquisition
of
Ownership

Coin
Stolen goods

issue for the delivery of the property without giving the defendant the option of retaining this property upon payment of the assessed value (*k*). Such an order may be made without the value of the property being first assessed (*l*).

Ownership also follows possession in the case of coin and negotiable instruments (*m*), but, in the case of stolen goods, unless sold in market overt, the ownership remains in the true owner (*n*), and where they have been sold in market overt to a *bonâ fide* purchaser, the property reverts in the true owner upon his prosecuting the thief to conviction, at the date of such conviction (*o*).

Lost goods.

815 Ownership may be acquired by change of possession (1) as against all the world, by occupancy, where a man takes possession of an ownerless thing (*p*), (2) as against all the world except the true owner, by a finder or trespasser taking possession of the goods of another (*q*).

Lapse of time

816 *De facto* possession, unaccompanied by a right to possession, may be converted into full ownership by lapse of time (*r*).

SUB SECT 3 — By Taking Original Possession

Capture.

817 Ownership may be acquired by occupancy of a thing without an owner (*s*), for example, the capture of wild animals (*t*), the appropriation of free natural elements, such as light, air, and

(*k*) R S C, Ord 48, r 1. Where a writ of delivery is issued giving the defendant the option of retaining the property upon payment of its value, the ownership remains in the plaintiff until the sheriff has levied the value from the defendant's goods (*Re Ware, Ex parte Drake* (1877), 5 Ch D 866, *Re Searth* (1874), 10 Ch App 234).

(*l*) *Hymas v Ogden*, [1905] 1 K B 246, C A.

(*m*) See title BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS, Vol II, pp 459, 461-513. As to what are negotiable instruments, see *ibid*, pp 459 *et seq*, 564 *et seq*.

(*n*) *Filmont v Bentley* (1886), 18 Q B D 322, *per* Lord Esher, M R, at pp 326, 327, affirmed (1887), 12 App Cas 471, and see title SALE OF GOODS.

(*o*) See titles CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 686, MARKETS AND FAIRS, Vol XX, p 55, SALE OF GOODS.

(*p*) See the text, *infra*.

(*q*) See p 394, *ante*.

(*r*) See title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, p 50.

(*s*) 2 Bl Com, p 402, Vaugh, pp 188, 190. 2 Stephen's Commentaries, p 43. Markby, Elements of Law, ss 483, 484, Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law, p 124. As to the relation of occupancy to ownership, see Maine, Ancient Law, c viii.

(*t*) *Young v Hichens* (1844) 6 Q B 606, *Aberdeen Arctic Co v Suttie* (1862), 4 Macq 356, H L, *Blades v Higgs* (1865), 11 H L Cas 621, 632. Wild animals are not in the possession of the owner of the soil, he having at most a qualified property in them or a right to reduce them into possession (see title ANIMALS, Vol I, pp 366, 370, Markby, Elements of Law, s 361, Savigny, Possession, s 31, p 342), but, in the United Kingdom, the ownership of wild animals, except fish in the sea (see *Fennings v Granville (Lord)* (1808), 1 Taunt 241, *Hogarth v Jackson* (1827), 2 C & P 595, title FISHERIES, Vol XIV, p 676) other than royal fish (see p 402, *post*), cannot as a rule be acquired by mere occupancy, sporting rights being enjoyed either by virtue of a franchise (*Williams, Rights of Common*, pp 228 *et seq*), or as incidental to the ownership of land (*ibid*, p 240, *Case of Monopolies* (1602) 11 Co Rep 84 b, 87 b; 2 Bl Com p 417; and see title GAME, Vol XV, pp 211, 212).

water (a); the collection of matter, such as seaweed, from the sea or shore (a), the severance of a thing, for example, corn or other emblements, from the soil (b), and, perhaps, the finding of a thing absolutely abandoned or irretrievably lost (c)

§ 803
Acquisition
of
Ownership

818 Ownership may also be acquired by invention, as, for example, the right which an author has in his own literary compositions (d)

Invention

SUB SECT 4 — By Accession

819 If any corporeal substance receives an accession (e) by natural or artificial means, as by the growth of vegetables, the pregnancy of animals, the embroidery of cloth, or the conversion of wood or metal into vessels or utensils, the original owner is entitled by his right of possession to the property in its improved state. But this principle does not apply where the species of the thing is changed, as by making wine, oil, or bread out of another grapes, olives, or wheat (f). The maxim *partus sequitur ventrem* applies in the case of all animals except swans (g).

Accession

Similarly, when the goods of one man are attached to the land or chattel, for example, a ship, of another, the ownership in such goods is transferred to the owner of the land or chattel (h).

Fixtures

SUB SECT 5 — By Confusion

820 Ownership of goods may be acquired by confusion or intermixture, different principles being applicable where the intermixture takes place by agreement, fraud, or accident (i).

Intermixture.
By Agreement &

(a) 2 Bl Com, p 402, see title WATERS AND WATERCOURSES.

(b) 2 Bl Com, p 403, see title AGRICULTURE, Vol I, p 282.

(c) 2 Bl Com, pp 9, 14, Bract lib 1, c 12, fol 7 b, lib 2, c 1, fol 9 a, lib 3, c 3, fol 120 a, see p 394, ante, Markby, Elements of Law, s 485, and title TROVER AND DETINUE.

(d) 2 Bl Com, pp 400—405. This kind of ownership has been regulated and protected by numerous statutes, see title COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY, Vol VIII, pp 136 *et seq*, Copyright Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 46), title PATENTS AND INVENTIONS, pp 125 *et seq*, ante.

(e) The acquisition of ownership by "accession" is grounded on the right of occupancy and founded on a doctrine of the Roman law.

(f) Bract fol 9, 10, Anon (1559), Moore (K B), 19, 20, Anon (1594), Popa 38 Anon (1490), Y B 5 Hen 7, 15, pl 6, C v M (1529), Y B 12 Hen 8, 9, 10, 2 Bl Com, pp 403, 404, 405, Markby, Elements of Law, s 489, see title BUILDING CONTRACTS, ENGINEERS, AND ARCHITECTS, Vol III, p 165.

(g) Bro Abr, tit Propertie and proprietate probanda, 29, Case of Swans (1592), 7 Co Rep 15 b, 17 a, 2 Bl Com, pp 390, 391, and see title ANIMALS, Vol I, pp 365, 366, note (t).

(h) Markby, Elements of Law, s 496, title BUILDING CONTRACTS, ENGINEERS, AND ARCHITECTS, Vol III, p 260, Wheeler v Stratton (1912), 105 L T 786, Forman & Co, Proprietary v Ship 'Liddesdale,' [1900] A C 190, P C. But, as to the rights of a lessee to be compensated for his improvements, see title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 479, 566, 567. The rule in the text is based on the legal maxim *quidquid plantatur solo, solo cedit*.

(i) See title BAILMENT, Vol I, pp 542, 543.

§ 820 d.

SUB SECT 6—*Under Paramount Authority***Acquisition
of
Ownership**Acquisition
under Royal
Prerogative.**Taxes.**Crown
copyright

Royal fish

Treasure
troveTransfer of
ownership by
sovereign
authority

821. Another method of acquiring property in personal chattels is by the exercise of the Royal Prerogative, whereby a right may accrue either to the Crown itself or to persons claiming under the title of the Crown, or by prescription which supposes an ancient grant (*h*)

In this class are included taxes and customs, whether constitutionally inherent in the Crown or created by authority of Parliament (*h*)

The Crown acquires title by a kind of prerogative copyright in certain books or publications, for example, Acts of Parliament, Proclamations, Orders in Council, liturgies and books of divine service of the Church of England, and the Authorised Version of the Bible (*l*)

Royal fish, namely, whale and sturgeon, thrown ashore or caught near the coasts are the property of the Crown by prerogative (*m*)

Certain things which have been lost or abandoned belong to the Crown by prerogative, namely, treasure trove, waifs, estrays, wreck, jetsam, flotsam, and ligan (*n*)

822 Ownership of goods is capable of being acquired, regardless of the title of the previous owner, by force of a statute. Examples of this transfer of ownership occur (1) where the goods of a bankrupt are transferred to the trustee in bankruptcy (*o*), (2) where goods are sold under the Rules of the Supreme Court, pending litigation (*p*), (3) where execution is levied (*q*), (4) where smuggled goods are forfeited (*r*), or (5) where a forfeiture occurs by reason of a breach of the excise laws (*s*) or Merchandise Marks Act, 1887 (*t*),

(*h*) 2 Bl Com, p 408, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 371 *et seq*

(*l*) See titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 496 *et seq*, COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY, Vol VIII, p 172 *et seq*

(*m*) 2 Bl Com, pp 216, 280, Markby, Elements of Law, s 236, where it is stated that the right is still sometimes claimed in respect of whales by the grantees of the Crown, see, further, titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, p 215, FISHERIES Vol XIV, p 580

(*n*) Co Litt 114 b, 1 Bl Com, pp 291—299, and see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, pp 479 *et seq*, Vol VII, pp 210 *et seq*

(*o*) See 2 Bl Com, p 471, and see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 143 *et seq*

(*p*) R S C, Ord 50, r 2, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(*q*) See title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp 4, 14. Where goods are taken in execution to satisfy a judgment, the sheriff has a special property in them between the seizure and the sale (*Wilbraham v Snow* (1870), 2 Saund 47, see *Re Gourlay, Ex parte Abbott* (1880), 15 Ch D 447, C A, and title SHERIFFS AND BAILIFFS), but where goods are distrained for rent the goods are *in custodia legis* and the property in them, until sale or other lawful disposal, remains in the original owner, and does not pass to the distrainer (2 Wms Saund, 5th ed, 47, note (c)), see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 168

(*r*) Customs Consolidation Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 36), s 177, see title REVENUE

(*s*) Excise Management Act, 1827 (7 & 8 Geo 4, c 53), s 32, see title REVENUE

(*t*) 50 & 51 Vict c 28, s 12, see title TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES, AND DESIGNS

or (6) where a ship is sold under proceedings against her in rem in the Admiralty Division (a).

SECT. 4 —Co-ownership (b).

SUB SECT 1 —Joint Ownership

823 A joint ownership or joint tenancy is distinguished by the four unities—of possession, interest, title, and time of commencement (c)

Personalty, although it cannot be vested in co-parceners (d), may, like real estate, belong to several persons either as joint tenants or as tenants in common (e), and expressions contained in any instrument which create a joint tenancy or tenancy in common in realty have the same effect when applied to personalty (f)

The right of survivorship (g) attaches to a joint tenancy of personalty (h), including choses in possession and in action (i), as well as of realty (k), until severance (l)

It has been held that the doctrine of survivorship does not apply to chattels belonging to a trade partnership so as to enable the surviving partners to dispose of such chattels without the concurrence of the legal personal representatives of a deceased partner (m), but this exception does not apply in law to choses in action belonging to a partnership (n); and, although in equity the share of the deceased partner in the partnership choses in action devolves on his executors or administrator (o), the remedy survives to the copartner (p)

SUB-SECT 2 —Ownership in Common.

824 Owners in common have a unity of possession, but a

(a) *Castrique v Imrie* (1870), L R 4 H L 414, 428, 429, 442. see titles ACTION, Vol I, pp 47, 48, ADMIRALTY, Vol I, p 123

(b) Co ownership probably came into use as a modified form of family ownership—the oldest form of ownership (Markby, Elements of Law, s 326)

(c) 2 Bl Com, p 180, see, further, title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(d) See title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(e) 2 Bl Com, p 399

(f) *Ibid*, see 1 Eq Cas Abr 292 As to what words create, and as to the severance of, a joint tenancy, see 6 Ciu Dig, 4th ed, pp 329—343, tit xxxviii, Devise, c xv, titles REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, WILLS

(g) As to the right of survivorship, see titles REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, WILLS

(h) 2 Bl Com, p 399, Littleton's Tenures, s 282

(i) See the text, *infra*

(k) See title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(l) Co Litt 182 a

(m) *Buckley v Barber* (1851), 6 Exch 164, following Y B 38 Edw 3, fol 7, Co Litt 182a, and *E v Collector of Customs* (1813), 2 M & S 223, and distinguishing *Lake v Gibson* (1729), 1 Eq Cas Abr 291, *Jeffereys v Small* (1684), 1 Vern 217, and *Crawshaw v Collins* (1808), 15 Ves 218. *Buckley v Barber*, *supra*, however, is said to have been disapproved by JAMES, L J, in *Taylor v Taylor* (1873), 7th March (unreported), and the Partnership Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 39), s 38, would seem now to authorise the surviving partners to dispose of such chattels for the purpose of winding up the partnership

(n) *Martin v Orompe* (1698), 1 Ld Raym 340

(o) *Jeffereys v. Small*, *supra*, *Lake v Craddock* (1732), 3 P Wins 158; see title CHOSSES IN ACTION, Vol IV., p 399

(p) See title PARTNERSHIP, p 55, *ante*

SECT. 4.
Acquisition
of
Ownership

Joint
ownership in
personalty

Survivorship.

Partners.

Ownership in
common

SECT 4
Co owner
ship.

distinct and several title to their shares, which need not necessarily be equal (*q*), and there is no right of survivorship between owners in common (*i*). Ownership in common arises (1) from the severance of a joint tenancy (*s*), or (2) from a gift to two or more persons in common (*t*).

Part IV.—Alienation.

SECT 1—*In General*

Method of
alienation of
chattels

825 The alienation of chattels differs essentially from the alienation of land. Chattels were never subject to the rules of feudal tenure which in early days restrained the transfer of land (*a*). At the present time, while a deed, or, in the case of registered land, a statutory transfer (*b*), is required to convey land (*c*), chattels in possession may be transferred without deed or writing if possession is delivered (*d*). Chattels are also transferable by deed and by way of sale or gift (*e*).

SECT 2—*Voluntary Alienation.*

SUB-SECT 1—*By Delivery*

Delivery

826 Delivery (*f*) is the voluntary transfer of the possession of goods to another (*g*). Where a movable object is handed over to a person with intent to transfer ownership, for example, in the case of gifts (*h*), or sales (*i*), the property in the goods is transferred.

Delivery
for special
purpose

But mere change of custody does not of itself involve a change of ownership, as the article may be transferred for a limited purpose only, as in the case of bailments (*k*). Similarly, delivery of a chattel by a master into the custody of his servant does not give the servant

(*q*) Littleton's Tenures, s 292, 2 Bl Com, p 191, see, further, title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(*r*) Littleton's Tenures, s 321

(*s*) See title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(*t*) Littleton's Tenures, s 321. As to what words create a tenancy in common, see titles REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, WILLS

(*a*) See Co Litt 145 b, 351 b, title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(*b*) See titles REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTEL—REAL, SALE OF LAND

(*c*) See title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(*d*) 2 Bl Com, p 441, 1 Shep Touch (Preston's ed), p 227, Com Dig, tit Biens (D 2). According to the old law, no gift or grant of a chattel was effectual to pass it, whether by parol or by deed, and whether with or without consideration, unless accompanied by delivery (*Cochrane v Moore* (1890), 25 Q B D 57, 72, 73, C A, and see the text, *infra*)

(*e*) See p 406, *post*, title GIFTS, Vol XV, p 410. As to the alienation of choses in action, see title CHOSSES IN ACTION, Vol IV, pp 365 *et seq*

(*f*) See title GIFTS, Vol XV, p 412, and, as to gifts *mortis causa*, see *ibid*, p 432

(*g*) Pollock and Wright, Possession in the Common Law, pp 43, 57, 71

(*h*) See title GIFTS, Vol XV, p 412

(*i*) See title SALE OF GOODS

(*k*) See titles BAILMENT, Vol I, p 524, PAWNS AND PLEDGES, p 238 *ante*. As to the effect of delivery to a common carrier, see title CARRIERS, Vol IV., p 95

possession, unless the master makes the servant a bailee (*l*), but, where delivery is made by a third party to a servant on behalf of his master, the possession acquired by the servant is that of bailee (*m*)

SECT. 2.
Voluntary
Alienation.

827 Possession of ponderous goods and chattels in large quantities, which cannot readily be transferred from hand to hand, may be transferred by any transaction which effectually passes the control to the new possessor (*n*), for example, by handing over the key of a warehouse (*o*), or of a plate chest (*p*), in which the goods are stored, or other *indicia* of property (*q*), with the intention of transferring possession, so possession of goods at sea can be transferred by indorsement and delivery of the bill of lading (*r*)

The delivery of a part may be a delivery of the whole if it is so intended, but not otherwise (*s*)

Constructive delivery of possession is also effected by a change in the character of the possession without a corresponding change of custody, for example, where a seller ceases to retain possession as owner and becomes a bailee for (*t*), or borrower from (*u*), the buyer, or where chattels are transferred by way of gift *inter vivos* (*b*), or sale (*c*), to a bailee who already has them in his custody, or to a finder or wrongful taker (*d*) already in possession of them, or when goods are in the custody of a bailee, and the bailee, purchaser, and vendor agree that the goods shall be held on behalf of the purchaser (*v*)

(*l*) Pollock and Wright Possession in the Common Law, p. 60, see note (*b*), p. 394, *ante*, and see title MASTER AND SERVANT Vol. XX, p. 67

(*m*) Pollock and Wright Possession in the Common Law, p. 60, see note (*b*), p. 394, *ante*, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 650

(*n*) *Kilpin v. Ratley*, [1892] 1 Q. B. 582, and as to constructive delivery, see, further, title GIFTS, Vol. XV, p. 413, SALE OF GOODS

(*o*) *Ellis v. Hunt* (1789), 3 Term Rep. 464, 468. *Meyerstein v. Barber* (1866), L. R. 2 C. P. 38, 52. *Ancona v. Rogers* (1875), 1 Ex. D. 285, 290, C. A., *Hilton v. Tucker* (1888), 39 Ch. D. 669, 670. In some cases the delivery of a key is said to be not merely a symbol of possession, but actually to confer manual control, see *Gough v. Everard* (1863), 2 H. & C. 1

(*p*) *Bowker v. Williamson* (1889), 5 T. L. R. 382

(*q*) *Chaplin v. Rogers* (1800), 1 East, 192, 195, *Elmore v. Stone* (1809), 1 Taunt. 458

(*r*) *Scwll v. Burdill* (1884) 10 App. Cas. 74, *per* Lord BLACKBURN, at p. 96, and see title SALE OF GOODS. As to the effect of dock warrants and other mercantile documents in transferring possession, see title SALE OF GOODS, SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION

(*s*) *Dixon v. Yates* (1833), 5 B. & Ad. 313, 339, *Kemp v. Falk* (1882), 7 App. Cas. 573, *per* Lord BLACKBURN, at p. 586, and see title SALE OF GOODS

(*t*) *Elmore v. Stone*, *supra*, *Castle v. Swonder* (1861) 6 H. & N. 828, Ex. Ch., and see title SALE OF GOODS

(*u*) *Martin v. Wallis* (1856), 6 E. & B. 726

(*b*) *Winter v. Winter* (1861), 9 W. R. 747, *Kilpin v. Ratley*, *supra*, and see title GIFTS, Vol. XV, p. 412

(*c*) See *Edan v. Dudfield* (1841), 1 Q. B. 302, 307, *Lillywhite v. Divercus* (1846), 15 M. & W. 285, 291, and see title SALE OF GOODS

(*d*) 2 Shep. Touch. (Preston's ed.), pp. 240, 241

(*e*) See title SALE OF GOODS

SECT 2
Voluntary
Alienation
Gifts

In the case of a gift, delivery of possession is necessary to vest a chattel in the donee (*f*), unless the donor expressly or impliedly constitutes himself a trustee for the donee (*g*), or unless the gift is by deed (*h*).

SUB-SECT 2 —By Deed

Alienation
by deed

828 Chattels, whether capable or incapable of delivery, may be alienated by deed without delivery, and with or without valuable consideration (*i*), but an assignment by way of mortgage or absolute transfer of chattels by deed or writing, if unaccompanied by delivery of possession, must, in certain cases, be registered and attested in accordance with statutory requirements (*h*).

SUB-SECT 3 —By Contract of Sale

Contract of
sale

829 The most usual way of transferring goods is by means of sale, namely, a transfer in return for a money consideration called the price (*l*). By a contract of sale of goods the seller transfers or agrees to transfer to the buyer the property in the goods for the price (*m*). The contract may be absolute or conditional. Where the property is transferred to the buyer, the contract is called a sale, but, where the transfer is to take place in the future, or subject to a condition precedent, the contract is called an agreement to sell (*n*).

The general rule is that transfer will be effected according to the intention of the parties as appearing from the agreement (*o*). No delivery is necessary to transfer the property in specific or ascertained goods if it is the intention of the parties that the property shall pass before delivery (*p*).

SUB SECT 4 —By Exchange

Exchange

830 The property in chattels may be transferred by a contract of exchange or barter, namely, where the consideration to be given

(*f*) 2 Bl Com, p 441, *Irons v Smallpiece* (1819), 2 B & Ald 551, *Cochrane v Moore* (1890), 25 Q B D 57, C A, and see title GIFTS, Vol XV, pp 412, 413

(*g*) *Jones v Lock* (1865), 1 Ch App 25, see titles GIFTS, Vol XV, pp 409, 413

(*h*) See the text, *infra*, and title GIFTS, Vol XV, p 410

(*i*) 1 Shep Touch (Preston's ed), p 224, *Anon* (1467), Y B 7 Edw 4, fol 20, pl 21, Bract fol 100 b, *Cochrane v Moore*, *supra*, at pp 72, 73, and see title GIFTS, Vol XV, p 410. For forms of deeds of gift of chattels, see Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents, Vol VI, pp 129 *et seq*. As to transfer in equity of property in chattels, see titles GIFTS, Vol XV, p 413, TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES. As to alienation by way of contract of sale without delivery, see the text, *infra*.

(*k*) As to the cases referred to, and as to such requirements and the effect of non-compliance, see title BILLS OF SALE, Vol III, pp 30 *et seq*. As to instruments which are not within the expression "bill of sale," see title BILLS OF SALE, Vol III, pp 16 *et seq*. Assignments by way of mortgage must be in accordance with the statutory form, see *ibid*, pp 34 *et seq*.

(*l*) 2 Bl Com, p 446, see title SALE OF GOODS

(*m*) For the numerous cases in which the transfer of property in goods has been considered, see title SALE OF GOODS

(*n*) Sale of Goods Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 71), s 1

(*o*) *Badische Anilin und Soda Fabrik v Hickson*, [1906] A C 419, 424, and see title SALE OF GOODS

(*p*) *Cochrane v Moore*, *supra*, at pp 73, 75, see Sale of Goods Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 71), ss 16, 17

for the goods is other goods in lieu of money (q) The same principles govern the law relating to sales and exchanges (r)

SECT. 2.

Vo

SECT. 3.—*Involuntary Alienation*

831 The principal cases in which involuntary alienation of personal property occurs are distress, execution, and bankruptcy (s), a rarer case is that of forfeiture (t)

Involuntary alienation.

An owner may also be involuntarily deprived of his ownership of goods by sale thereof in market overt (a), or by destruction (b), or by the transfer of the goods to a foreign country where by the laws of that country another person gains a valid title to the goods (c), or by a complete change in the nature of the goods, for example, where they are converted into real property (d), or by dealings under the Factors Act, 1889 (e), or under the Sale of Goods Act, 1893 (f), or by the operation of the doctrine of estoppel (g), or under the Statute of Limitations (h)

832 As a rule, the remedy of a creditor is to sue the debtor for the amount owing Without legal process he cannot obtain redress by seizing the debtor's goods, except where he is entitled to avail himself of the summary remedy of distress (i)

Distress.

Chattels may be distrained for rent in arrear, for rates and taxes, for sums payable by virtue of orders of courts of summary jurisdiction (k), and for debts due to the Crown (l)

(q) *Cochrane v Moore* (1890), 25 Q B D 57, 74, C A, *South Australian Insurance Co v Randell* (1869), L R 3 P C 101, see, further, title BAILMENT, Vol I, pp 540, 541, SALE OF GOODS, and, for the law of exchange of land, see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL

(r) 2 Bl Com, p 446

(s) See the text, *infra*, and p 408, *post*

(t) As to forfeiture of the goods of an outlaw, see titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VI, p 354, CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 431, 432

(a) See *Hargreave v Spink*, [1892] 1 Q B 25, and see title SALE OF GOODS As to how far theft affects the owner's title, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 684 *et seq*

(b) See p 397, *ante*

(c) *Cammell v Sewell* (1860), 5 H & N 728, Ex Ch, *Castrique v Imrie* (1870), L R 4 H L 414, *Alcock v Smith*, [1892] 1 Ch 238, C A

(d) Bac Abr, tit Trespass (E) 2, 2 Bl Com, pp 404, 405, *eg*, "If I employ a builder to build me a house and he does so with bricks that are not his, I apprehend that they become mine and that their former owner cannot recover them or their value from me" (*Gough v Wood & Co* (1894), 10 T L R 318, C A, *per LINDLEY, LJ* at p 319), and see *ibid*, at p 320

(e) 52 & 53 Vict c 45, s 2, see titles BAILMENT, Vol I, p 564, note (b), PAWNS AND PLDGES, p 239, *ante*, SALE OF GOODS

(f) 56 & 57 Vict c 71, s 25, see title SALE OF GOODS

(g) See title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, pp 379, 393

(h) Limitation Act, 1623 (21 Jac. I, c 16), s 3, *Wilkinson v Verity* (1871), L R 6 C P 206, see titles BAILMENT, Vol I, p 565, LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, pp 39, 50

(i) 3 Bl Com, pp 4 *et seq* As to the nature of this remedy, see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 117

(k) See *ibid*, pp 117, 210, 221

(l) Crown Suits, etc Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 104), s 47, and see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 175

SECT 3
Involuntary
Alienation
Execution

833 A debtor's goods are also subject to involuntary alienation when taken in execution of a judgment or order of the court (*m*) As a rule, execution against chattels is made under a writ of *fiere facias* (*n*)

The executor or administrator of a deceased debtor may be sued by a creditor, and execution levied against the debtor's goods (*o*), or administration of the debtor's estate may be granted by the court (*p*)

Bankruptcy

834 Property, with certain exceptions (*q*), beneficially vested in a bankrupt at the date of his bankruptcy, or acquired by him prior to his discharge, including, *inter alia*, goods in his possession, order or disposition, as reputed owner, and goods mortgaged by him and remaining in his possession in his trade or business, vest in the official receiver, until a trustee is appointed by the creditors, and then in such trustee for their benefit (*r*) Proceedings may also be taken by a creditor for the administration in bankruptcy of the estate of a debtor who has died insolvent (*s*)

SECT 4—Alienation at Death

Death

835 The alienation of personal property may occur on the occasion of death (*t*), either by way of testamentary disposition (*u*), or, in the case of an intestacy, according to the rules regulating the distribution of the personality of an intestate (*a*)

Every person of full age (*b*) has power to dispose by will of all the real and personal estate (*c*) to which he is entitled at his death and which, if not so disposed of, would devolve upon the heir-at-law

(*m*) See, further, titles EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp 37 *et seq*, 125, JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, p 221 As to execution in inferior courts, see titles COUNTY COURTS, Vol VIII, pp 550 *et seq*, EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp 128, 129, and, as to the effect of the death of the debtor after judgment, see title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, p 41

(*n*) See title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp 37 *et seq* As to the date from which a writ of execution binds the property in the goods of the execution debtor, see *ibid*, p 42

(*o*) See title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, pp 330 *et seq*

(*p*) *Ibid*, pp 336 *et seq*

(*q*) See title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 143

(*r*) Bankruptcy Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict c 52), ss 20, 21, 44, 154, and, as to what is included in the word "property" under the Bankruptcy Acts, see, further, title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 14, 140 *et seq*, see also *Re Hart, Green v Hart* (1912), 28 T L R 482, C A

(*s*) See title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 93 *et seq*, 213, 214

(*t*) See, generally, titles DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 6, 16 *et seq*, WILLS

(*u*) See titles EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, pp 144, 218 *et seq*, WILLS

(*a*) See title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 16 *et seq* As to the alienation of personal property owing to the cesser of the life interest of the deceased, see title SETTLEMENTS

(*b*) Wills Act 1837 (7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c 26), s 7 As to earlier law, see 2 Bl Com, pp 492, 497, Co Litt 89 b, note (6), and see title WILLS

(*c*) As to the meaning of personal estate, see p 387, *ante*, and title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, p 4, note (*h*)

or customary heir of him, or, if he became entitled by descent, of his ancestor, or upon his executor or administrator (*d*) This power of disposition extends to all contingent, executory, or other future interests in any personal estate, whether the testator may or may not be ascertained as the person or one of the persons in whom the same respectively may have become vested, and notwithstanding that he may become entitled to the property or interests after the date of execution of his will (*e*)

SECT. 4.
Alienation
at Death.

Upon the death of an owner of personal property such property devolves immediately upon his personal representative If he has appointed an executor, the property accordingly vests in such executor, to be applied after payment of debts according to the directions of the will (*f*) If he dies wholly intestate it vests in the administrator as soon as letters of administration are taken out (*g*)

SECT 5—Future Acquired Property (*h*)

836 Personal chattels which, at the date of the assignment, are either not in existence, or not the property of the grantor, are not assignable at law (*i*), unless the grantor has a potential property in them (*h*)

Assignment
of future
acquired
property

An assignment purporting to convey all chattels which are or shall thereafter be in the grantor's house operates to pass the legal ownership only of such articles as are in the house at the date of the assignment (*l*) Such an assignment is void as an assign-

(*d*) Wills Act, 1837 (7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c 26) s 3, and see titles EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, pp 217 *et seq*, WILLS

(*e*) Wills Act, 1837 (7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c 26), s 2, 3, see title WILLS

(*f*) *Smith v Miles* (1786), 1 Term Rep 475, 480, *Woolley v Clark* (1822), 5 B & Ald 744, and see title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, pp 136, 240 *et seq*

(*g*) See title EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 146 As to when the appointment of an administrator is required, see *ibid*, p 136 As to the person in whom the property vests prior to the grant of letters of administration, see *ibid*, p 146, title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION Vol XI, p 6 As to the rules regulating the distribution of personal estate, see title DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION, Vol XI, pp 16 *et seq*

(*h*) As to covenants in marriage settlements for settlement of future acquired property by husband or wife, see titles HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 366, SETTLEMENTS

(*i*) *Robinson v Macdonnell* (1816), 5 M & S 228, 14 Vin Abn 50, tit Grants (H 6), *Shop Touch* (ed Preston), p 241, Com Dig, tit Grant (D), Perkins, Profitable Booke, ss 65, 90

(*k*) Bacon's MAXIMS of the Law Regula, 14 "The law doth not allow of grants except there be a foundation of interest in the grantor" *Eg*, a tenant of land may assign all his interest in the future crops of that land, or a parson may grant all the tithe wool that he shall have in such a year, but a man cannot grant all the wool that shall grow on the sheep he may buy hereafter (*Grantham v Hawley* (1615), Hob 132, *Petch v Tutin* (1846), 15 M & W 110, and see title AGRICULTURE, Vol I, p 295) As to the assignment of debts to fall due *in futuro* and of debts due at the date of assignment but payable *in futuro*, see titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 64, 155, note (*e*), CHANCES IN ACTION, Vol IV, p 368

(*l*) See *Tapfield v Hallman* (1843), 6 Man & G 245 (where, however, on a question of construction of the instrument, it was held that future chattels were not included), and see titles BILLS OF SALE, Vol III, p 68; SALE OF GOODS

SECT 5
Future
Acquired
Property

Operates as
contract

ment (*m*) as regards future acquired goods, unless ratified by some act done by the grantor with that view after he has acquired the property, but the mere bringing of goods on to the premises of the grantor is not necessarily such an act (*n*)

An assignment of after acquired property operates in equity as a contract to assign, and, when made for valuable consideration (*o*), is enforced specifically if the assignor acquires property answering the description in the contract (*p*). As soon as the assignor acquires the legal interest, the equitable interest passes to the assignee, equity treating as done that which ought to be done (*q*), and the assignor thereupon becomes trustee of the chattels for the assignee (*r*). If possession is actually taken of the property when it comes into existence, then a legal interest is acquired (*s*)

Bill of sale
of future
property

A bill of sale of after-acquired chattels given by way of security is void except as against the grantor (*t*)

SECT 6 — Restraints on Alienation

Repugnant
conditions

837 Conditions repugnant to the estate previously given are void (*a*), and for this reason the courts have always leaned against a restraint on alienation (*b*)

Restrictions
on alienation

An absolute interest in personality no less than in realty, once given, cannot be fettered by a gift over on alienation (*c*), for, except

(*m*) See p 406 *ante*. If, however, it is made for valuable consideration, such an assignment operates as a contract to assign and, subject to the Bills of Sale Acts, binds the chattels when they come into the assignor's possession, see the text, *infra*

(*n*) *Lunn v Thornton* (1845), 1 C B 379

(*o*) A voluntary assignment, even though under seal, of an expectancy does not create an enforceable contract (*Meek v Kittling* (1843), 1 Ph 342, *Re Ellenborough, Towry Law v Burne*, [1903] 1 Ch 697)

(*p*) *Joseph v Lyons* (1884), 15 Q B D 280, 286, C A, *Hallas v Robinson* (1885), 15 Q B D 288, C A, *Tailby v Official Receiver* (1888), 13 App Cas 523, *Holroyd v Marshall* (1862), 10 H L Cas 191, *Re Dallas*, [1904] 2 Ch 385, C A, *per* BUCKLEY, J, at p 393, *Re Ellenborough, Towry Law v Burne*, *supra*, at p 699, *Re Reis, Ex parte Olough*, [1904] 2 K B 769, affirmed, *sub nom Clough v Samuel*, [1905] A C 442, see, further, titles BILLS OF SALE, Vol III, p 72, CHOSES IN ACTION, Vol IV, pp 375, 376, DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS, Vol X, p 497, EQUITY, Vol XIII, pp 74, 104

(*q*) *Collyer v Isaacs* (1881), 19 Ch D 342, 351, C A, and see title EQUITY, Vol XIII, pp 74, 104

(*r*) *Holroyd v Marshall*, *supra*

(*s*) *Hope v Hayley* (1856), 5 E & B 830, *Morris v Delobel Flipo*, [1892] 2 Ch 352, 360

(*t*) See title BILLS OF SALE, Vol III, pp 28 *et seq*

(*a*) *Re Dugdale, Dugdale v Dugdale* (1888), 38 Ch D 176, see title WILLS

(*b*) *Stogdon v Lee*, [1891] 1 Q B 661, C A, *per* FRY, L J, at p 670. As to the validity of partial restraints on alienation, see *Re Rosher, Rosher v Rosher* (1884), 26 Ch D 801, *Re Elliot, Kelly v Elliot*, [1896] 2 Ch 353, and see titles GIFTS, Vol XV, pp 422, 423, SETTLEMENTS, WILLS. As to protected life interests, see titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 275 *et seq*, SETTLEMENTS. As to the recognition paid by the courts to restraints on alienation valid according to the law of Scotland, see *Re Fitzgerald, Surman v Fitzgerald*, [1904] 1 Ch 573, C A; title CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI, pp 209 *et seq*

(*c*) *Bradley v Peizoto* (1797), 3 Ves 324; *Re Jones' Will* (1870), 23 L T. 211, *Metcalf v Metcalfe* (1889), 43 Ch D 633, *Re Bourke's Trusts* (1891), 27 L R Ir 573, and see title GIFTS, Vol XV, p 422

as regards married women (*d*), the right of alienation is incidental to the beneficial ownership of property (*e*). But a condition that the donee shall not alienate a reversionary interest (*f*), or shall not alienate to a particular person or class of persons (*g*), is valid

A gift over on alienation after a life interest with a power of disposition by will or deed is invalid (*h*). So, too, if an annuity is to be bought in the name of an annuitant, a direction that it is to cease on alienation is inconsistent with the absolute ownership previously conferred, and the annuitant is entitled to demand payment of the sum required to purchase such annuity (*i*)

The rule preventing the fettering of absolute interests applies equally to equitable and to legal interests (*k*). Trusts, therefore, cannot be created with a proviso preventing the *cestui que trust* from alienating his interest (*l*), or with a proviso that such interest shall not be made subject to the claims of creditors (*m*)

838 The rule which renders restraints on alienation generally invalid is, however, relaxed in favour of married women (*n*), and it is now customary in settlements and wills to provide that a married woman's separate estate shall not be alienated by way of anticipation (*o*). The result is that the utmost a woman so restrained can do is to assign arrears of interest which have actually accrued due (*p*)

SECT. 8
Restraints
on
Alienation

Gifts over on
alienation.

Equitable
interests.

Married
women.

(*d*) See title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 350, 359 *et seq*, and see the text, *infra*

(*e*) *Corbett v Corbett* (1888), 14 P D 7, C A, *Re Hollis' Hospital (Trustees) and Hague's Contract*, [1899] 2 Ch 540, see, further, title GIFTS, Vol XV, p 422, REAL PROPERTY AND CHATELS REAL, SAIT OF LAND

(*f*) *Churchill v Marks* (1844), 1 Coll 441, *Re Payne* (1858), 25 Bea 556, *Re Porter, Coulson v Capper*, [1892] 3 Ch 481, and see title PERPETUITIES, pp 203 *et seq*, *ante*

(*g*) Co Litt 223 a, *Re Mauley* (1875), L R 20 Eq 186, *Re Rosher, Rosher v Rosher* (1884), 26 Ch D 801

(*h*) *Re Wolstenholme, Marshall v Aislewood* (1881), 43 L T 752, see, further, *Corbett v Corbett*, *supra*, *Bird v Johnson* (1854), 18 Jur 978, *Rockford v Hackman* (1852), 9 Haic, 475, and see titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 147, WILLS

(*i*) *Hunt Foulston v Furber* (1876), 3 Ch D 285, *Re Mabbett, Pitman v Holbourn*, [1891] 1 Ch 707, see title RENDEZVOUS AND ANNUITIES

(*k*) *Corbett v Corbett*, *supra*, *Snoudon v Dales* (1834), 6 Sim 524, *Graves v Dolphin* (1826), 1 Sim 66, *Brandon v Robinson* (1811), 18 Ves 429, *Re Fitzgerald, Surman v Fitzgerald*, [1904] 1 Ch 573, 593, C A

(*l*) *Re Dugdale, Dugdale v Dugdale* (1888), 38 Ch D 176, *Re Mabbett, Pitman v Holbourn*, *supra*, *Re Ross, Ashton v Ross*, [1900] 1 Ch 162, and see title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES

(*m*) *Re Fitzgerald, Surman v Fitzgerald*, *supra*, but see title CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI, pp 209, 223. As to forfeiture on alienation see, further, title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, pp 146 *et seq*

(*n*) *Brandon v Robinson* (1811), 18 Ves 429, 434, *Corbett v Corbett*, *supra*, see, further, title GIFTS, Vol XV, p 424, HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 359 *et seq*, SETTLEMENTS

(*o*) See *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol XIII, pp 416, 426 *et passim*, Vol XV, pp 405 *et passim*, *Hood Barrs v Cathcart*, [1894] 2 Q B 559, C A. A restraint on anticipation and a restraint on alienation have the same effect (*Re Bankes, Reynolds v Ellis*, [1902] 2 Ch 313, *per BUCKLEY, L J*, at p 340)

(*p*) *Re Brettell, Jollands v Burdett* (1864), 2 De G J & Sm 79, C A; *Hood Barrs v Hervot*, [1896] A C 174

- SECT 6**
Restraints on Alienation The restraint can only be imposed in respect of separate estate (*q*), whether held for life or for an absolute interest (*r*), and applies only during coverture (*s*). It ceases on widowhood (*t*), but comes again into operation on remarriage (*u*), unless the restraint is limited to the period of the first marriage (*a*).
- Extent of restraint** A married woman cannot deprive herself of the protection afforded by a restraint upon anticipation (*b*), but the court, if satisfied that it is for the benefit of the married woman, may, with her consent, remove the restraint (*c*).
- Limitations till alienation** **839** Though provisions in restraint of alienation, or excluding the rights of creditors, are generally invalid, there is nothing to prevent property being settled for life estates determinable on alienation, bankruptcy, or insolvency, with a limitation over upon the happening of any of those events (*d*). But the owner of property cannot qualify his own interest in it by a condition determining that interest on his bankruptcy (*e*).
- Alienation by particular parties** **840** The capacity of persons under disability, for example, infants and lunatics, to alienate property, and other particular instances of limited powers of alienation, are dealt with elsewhere (*f*).

(*q*) *Stogdon v Lee*, [1891] 1 Q. B. 661, C. A., *Tullett v Armstrong* (1848), 1 Beav. 1, 23, and as to the meaning of "separate estate," see, further, titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol. II, p. 158, note (*f*), HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol. XVI, pp. 341 *et seq.*, 359 *et seq.*

(*r*) *Baggett v Meux* (1844), 1 Coll. 138, *Moore v Morris* (1857), 4 Drow. 33. As to the cases in which a restraint has been held to attach to an absolute interest, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol. XVI, p. 362, and see *Re Game, Gamet v Tennant*, [1907] 1 Ch. 276.

(*s*) *Woodmeston v Walker* (1831), 2 Russ. & M. 197, *Tullett v Armstrong, supra*.

(*t*) *Barlon v Biscoe* (1822), Jac. 603. As to the effect of dissolution of marriage on the restraint, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol. XVI, p. 363. As to the power of a *feme sole* to free herself from the restraint, see *ibid.*, p. 375.

(*u*) *Tullett v Armstrong, supra*, *Re Wheeler's Settlement Trusts, Briggs v Ryan*, [1899] 2 Ch. 717.

(*a*) *Moore v Morris* (1857), 4 Drow. 33, *Hamilton v Hamilton*, [1892] 1 Ch. 396.

(*b*) See title HUSBAND AND WIFE Vol. XVI, p. 366.

(*c*) See *ibid.*, p. 372, title SETTLEMENTS, and see note (*t*), *supra*.

(*d*) *Oldham v Oldham* (1867), L. R. 3 Eq. 404, *Montefiore v Behrens* (1865) 35 Beav. 95, *Hutton v May* (1876), 3 Ch. D. 148, *Metcalf v Metcalf*, [1891] 3 Ch. 1, C. A., see, further, titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol. II, pp. 146, 275 *et seq.*, GIFTS, Vol. XV, p. 424, SETTLEMENTS.

(*e*) *Re Brewer's Settlement, Morton v Blackmore*, [1896] 2 Ch. 503, *Mackintosh v Pogose*, [1895] 1 Ch. 505, 511—514, and see title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol. II, p. 146.

(*f*) As to alienation by infants, see titles GIFTS, Vol. XV, p. 402, INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol. XVII, pp. 78 *et seq.*, as to alienation by lunatics see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol. XIX, pp. 396 *et seq.*, and as to alienation by convicts, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 429, and for other examples see titles AGENCY, Vol. I, pp. 204 *et seq.*, COMPANIES, Vol. V, pp. 334 *et seq.*, CORPORATIONS, Vol. VIII, pp. 365 *et seq.*, PARTNERSHIP, p. 102, *ante*, SETTLEMENTS.

Part V.—Creation of Successive Interests (g).

841. Personal property is the subject of absolute ownership, not of tenure (*h*) Strictly, therefore, in personal property, under which both chattels real and personal are included (*i*), there cannot be a remainder (*h*), though there may be a future property in personal goods (*l*).

842 Successive interests in chattels real may be made to take effect, by will or deed, not by way of particular estate and remainder, but by way of executory limitation (*m*), or through the medium of trusts (*n*) A reversionary interest in leasehold property subject to a life estate, though, perhaps, not strictly a vested interest, is not a mere possibility or chose in action (*o*)

A bequest of a term of years to several successively for life, with no bequest over, confers life interests only, and on the death of the survivor the remainder of the term falls into residue (*p*)

843 Successive interests in personal chattels may be created by will without the interposition of trustees (*q*) In such case, however, the ulterior donee, during the life of the first holder, does not take a present or vested interest, and, if he predeceases the first holder, the executory limitation does not take effect (*r*)

PART V.
Creation of
Successive
Interests.Personal
property not
subject of a
remainderTrusts of
leaseholdsSuccessive
interests in
chattels

(g) See, generally, titles SETTLEMENTS, WILLS

(h) See note (s), p 397, *ante*

(i) See p 388, *ante*

(k) 2 Bl Com, p 398, 1 Fearn, Contingent Remainders, 10th ed, p 401, note (e), and ss 168 168 a, 168 b, Jarman on Wills, 1st ed, p 793, *Re Tritton, Ex parte Singleton* (1889), 61 L T 301, and see titles GIFTS, Vol XV, p 408, REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, REAL CHARGES AND ANNUITIES, SLUTTIMENTS, WILLS

(l) 2 Bl Com, p 398

(m) 1 Fearn, Contingent Remainders, 10th ed, s 168 a, *Manning's Case* (1609), 8 Co Rep 94 b, *Lampet's Case* (1612), 10 Co Rep 46 b, *Wright & Plowden v Cartwright* (1757), 1 Burr 282, 24, 285, *Stevenson v Liverpool Corporation* (1874), L R 10 Q B 81, *Johns v Pink*, [1900] 1 Ch 296, *per* STIRLING, J, at p 305, and, as to successive interests in chattels real, see, further, titles REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, SETTLEMENTS, WILLS

(n) See p 414, *post*

(o) *Re Bellamy, Elder v Pearson* (1883), 25 Ch D 620, 624, see, further, titles REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, WILLS

(p) *Lyres v Faulkland* (1698), 1 Salk 231, *Re v Dunganon* (Lord) (1841), 1 Dr & War 509, 528

(q) 1 Fearn, Contingent Remainders, 10th ed, s 168 b, *Hoare v Parker* (1788), 2 Term Rep 376 (plate), *Re Tritton, Ex parte Singleton* (1889), 61 L T 301 (pictures), followed *Re Thynne, Thynne v Grey* [1911] 1 Ch 282 (in this case there were trustees), and see titles EQUITY, Vol XIII, p 96 note (g), WILLS The court will protect the interests of an ulterior legatee in specific chattels, the loss of which cannot be compensated in damages by compelling the legatee for life to give an inventory, see *Foley v Burnell* (1783), 1 Bro C C 274, 279, *Conduit v Soane* (1844), 1 Coll 285, *Temple v Thring* (1867), 58 L J (Ch) 767, and see titles INJUNCTION, Vol XVII, pp 266 *et seq*, WILLS

(r) *Re Tritton, Ex parte Singleton, supra* See, as to chattels real, see *Re Bellamy, Elder v Pearson, supra*, title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

PART V.
Creation of
Successive
Interests.

Consumable
stores

Effect of
rule against
perpetuities

Trusts of
chattels

Heirlooms.

Powers of
appointment.

Life interest
followed by
gift to
personal re-
presentatives

A specific bequest for life of the use and enjoyment of consumables is a gift of the absolute interest in the property, and a gift over after such life estate is void(s), but this rule does not apply to farming stock (t)

An executory bequest of chattels must not infringe the rule against perpetuities (a) The rules regulating contingent remainders in freehold land do not apply to similar dispositions of personal property (b), but future dispositions of personal property must observe the statutory restraints on accumulations of income (c)

844 A trust is the usual mode of creating successive interests in personality (d), the trustees being the legal custodians of the property, and is the essential mode in assignments *inter vivos* of chattels other than chattels real (e)

845 Where leasehold estates or personal chattels in the nature of heirlooms are required to be settled to descend as far as possible with lands devised in strict settlement, or with a peerage or other title of honour, various expedients are adopted by conveyancers (f) The usual practice is to assign the chattels to trustees upon trusts corresponding as far as possible with the uses declared of the land (g) But as an estate tail in personality is legally impossible, the chattels must vest absolutely in the first tenant in tail of the land (h) To prevent the chattels being separated from the land on the death of an infant tenant in tail it is customary to provide that the chattels are not to vest absolutely in any tenant in tail by purchase until he attains twenty-one, but at his death under that age are to devolve in the same manner as the settled freeholds (i)

846 Future interests in personal property, as in land, may be created by means of powers of appointment (k)

847 A rule of construction analogous to the rule in *Shelley's Case* (l) applies where a life interest in personality is followed

(s) See *Andrew v Andrew* (1815), 1 Coll 686, 690, *Randall v Russell* (1817), 3 Mer 190, *Dixon v Mockett* (1878), 9 Ch D 95, and see titles GILTS, Vol XV, p 408, WILLS

(t) *Myers v Washbrook*, [1901] 1 Q B 360, and see title WILLS

(a) *Re Hull, Hull v Hull*, [1902] 1 Ch 807, C A, and see title PERPETUITIES, p 347, ante

(b) See title SETTLEMENTS

(c) See title PERPETUITIES, p 370, ante

(d) See *Fearne, Contingent Remainders*, 10th ed, p 407, titles EQUITY, Vol XIII, p 96, note (q), GILTS, Vol XV, p 408, see, e g, *Re Bellamy, Elder v Pearson* (1883), 25 Ch D 620 (successive interests in a term of years), and cases there cited

(e) See titles SETTLEMENTS, TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES, WILLS

(f) See *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol XIII, pp 306, 583

(g) See titles REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, SETTLEMENTS

(h) *Leventhorpe v Ashbie* (1635), 1 Roll Abr 831, Tudor, L C Real Prop, 4th ed, p 382

(i) *Re Thynne, Thynne v Grey*, [1911] 1 Ch 282, *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol XIII, pp 324, 325, see, further, titles REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL, SETTLEMENTS, WILLS

(k) See title POWERS

(l) 1 Co Rep 93 b, and see title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL The rule itself does not appear to apply to limitations of personal

by a gift to the personal representatives of the life tenant, the result being that the life tenant is considered to be absolutely entitled (*m*), even though the life interest is liable to forfeiture on bankruptcy (*n*), or a power of appointment by will is inserted between the life interest and the gift to the personal representatives (*o*)

PART V.
Creation of
Successive
Interests

estate (*Herrich v Franklin* (1868), L R 6 Eq 593, *per* GIFFORD, V-C, at p 596 *Re Jeaffreson's Trusts* (1866), L R 2 Eq 276, 281, *Sands v Dixwell* (1738), and *Hodsel v Bussy* (1740), cited 2 Ves Sen 652, *contra*, *Comfort v Brown* (1878), 10 Ch D 146, *per* BACON, V-C, at p 151)
 (*m*) Co Litt 54 b, *Holloway v Clarkson* (1843), 2 Hare, 521, *Alger v Parrott* (1866), L R 3 Eq 328, *Avern v Lloyd* (1868), L R 5 Eq 383, *Wing v Wing* (1876), 24 W R 878, and see titles SETTLEMENTS, WILLS
 (*n*) *Webb v Sadler* (1873), 8 Ch App 419
 (*o*) *Deval v Duvals* (1845), 9 Jur 550, *Saberton v Skeels* (1830), 1 Russ & M 587, *A G v Malkin* (1846), 2 Ph 64, *Page v Soper* (1853), 11 Hare, 321

PERSONAL REPRESENTATIVES.

See EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS

PERSONATION.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE.

PETITION OF RIGHT.

See CROWN PRACICE

PHYSICIANS.

See MEDICINE AND PHARMACY.

PICTURES AND PHOTOGRAPHS.

See COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY

PIER.

See WATERS AND WATERCOURSES.

PILOT AND PILOTAGE.

See SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION

PIN-MONEY.

See HUSBAND AND WIFE

PIRACY.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE.

PISTOLS.

See REVENUE, SALE OF GOODS, TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS.

PLAINT.

See COUNTY COURT

PLATE.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES
AND DESIGNS, WILLS

PLAY GROUNDS.

See EDUCATION, OPEN SPACES AND RECREATION GROUNDS.

PLAYS.

See THEATRES AND OTHER PLACES OF ENTERTAINMENT.

PLEADING.

	PAGE
PART I IN GENERAL - - - - -	418
SECT 1 NATURE AND PURPOSE OF PLEADINGS - - -	418
SECT 2 FORM OF PLEADINGS - - - - -	420
Sub-sect 1 Arrangement of Contents - - -	420
Sub-sect 2 Mode of Setting out a Party's Own Case - - -	422
Sub-sect 3 Mode of Answering an Opponent's Case - - -	429
SECT 3 DELIVERY OF PLEADINGS - - - - -	433
SECT 4 OBJECTIONS TO PLEADINGS - - - - -	434
SECT 5 AMENDMENT OF PLEADINGS - - - - -	437
PART II PLEADINGS AND PARTICULARS - - - - -	440
SECT 1 STATEMENT OF CLAIM - - - - -	440
SECT 2 DEFENCE - - - - -	446
SECT 3 PARTICULARS - - - - -	451
SECT 4 REPLY AND SUBSEQUENT PLEADINGS - - -	458
 <i>For Action</i> - - - - - See title ACTION	
<i>Admiralty Practice</i> - - - - - , ADMIRALTY	
<i>Barristers</i> - - - - - , BARRISTERS	
<i>Costs</i> - - - - - , PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE,	
SOLICITORS	
<i>County Courts</i> - - - - - COUNTY COURTS	
<i>Crown Practice</i> - - - - - CROWN PRACTICE	
<i>Damages</i> - - - - - DAMAGES	
<i>Default of Pleadings, Judgment</i>	
<i>on</i> - - - - - , JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS	
<i>Discovery</i> - - - - - , DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND IN-	
TERROGATORIES	
<i>Divorce Practice</i> - - - - - , HUSBAND AND WIFE	
<i>Injunction</i> - - - - - INJUNCTION	
<i>Inspection</i> - - - - - , DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND IN-	
TERROGATORIES	
<i>Interpleader</i> - - - - - , INTERPLEADER	
<i>Interrogatories</i> - - - - - , DISCOVERY, INSPECTION, AND IN-	
TERROGATORIES	
<i>Judgments</i> - - - - - , JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS	
<i>Orders</i> - - - - - , JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS	
<i>Payment into Court</i> - - - - - , PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE	
<i>Practice in General</i> - - - - - PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE	
<i>Set-off and Counterclaim</i> - - - - - , SET-OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM	
<i>Solicitors</i> - - - - - , SOLICITORS.	

Part I.—In General.

SECT. 1.

SECT. 1—*Nature and Purpose of Pleadings.*

Nature and Purpose of Pleadings

Meaning of "pleading" as used in law

Function of pleadings

848 The word "pleading" is used in English law in two senses, namely, to denote (1) a document (*a*) in which a party to a proceeding in a court of first instance is required by law to formulate in writing his case or part of his case in preparation for the hearing, (2) the act of drafting or settling any such document or part of such document

The function of pleadings is to define the issues on which the

(*a*) In early times pleadings were oral and not written, and were conducted as follows.—Upon appearance, each side made in open court a verbal statement of the facts on which it relied, from which the court was informed of the nature of the controversy. Oral pleading prevailed in the English courts as late as the reign of Henry III (Bract fo 374 b), and is supposed to have been retained until the reign of Edward III. It was the duty of the judges to moderate this oral controversy in such a way that the cause at length arrived at a point where specific matter was affirmed on one side and denied on the other. When this point was reached the parties were said to be "at issue" (*ad exitum, &c.*, at the end of their pleading). If an issue thus arrived at was a question of law, it was decided by the judge, if it was a question of fact, it was tried according to one of the modes of trial then in vogue. During the oral contention by which the issues were ascertained, entries were made on a parchment roll by an officer of the court of the allegations made by each party in turn. On this roll was also entered a short notice of the nature of the action and of the acts of the court itself. This parchment roll, called the Record (see title COURTS, Vol IX, p 10, note (*o*)), was the official register of the pleadings. It was preserved as a perpetual, intrinsic, and exclusively admissible testimony of all the proceedings to which it referred. These oral pleadings were delivered either by the party himself, or by his pleader (called *narrator* or *advocatus*). In very early times it was established that none but a regular advocate (or barrister) could be a pleader in a case not his own. Gradually it became the practice for the pleader to enter his statement in the first instance on the parchment roll, to which his opponent was allowed to have access in preparing his answer. Then, to lessen inconvenience, a practice arose about the reign of Edward IV by which the pleader delivered his pleading already written, and its entry on the roll was deferred till a later period in the action. But the abandonment of oral pleading did not change the form of the allegation to be made. The same principles continued to govern the practice of pleaders, and the parties were made to come to an issue in their written pleadings as in former times they had been made to do when they disputed orally at the bar of the court.

At common law there was no distinction between pleading in civil and pleading in criminal cases so far as the rules of pleading were concerned, see remarks of BLACKBURN, J, in *Heymann v R* (1873), L R 8 Q B 102, at p 105, *Castro v R* (1881), 6 App Cas 229, 243, and of Lord RUSSELL OF KILLOWEN, C J, in *R v Mytlow*, [1895] 1 Q B 758, C C R, at p 763. In criminal procedure, the case for the prosecutor is stated in writing in the indictment, but the pleading of the defendant is still stated orally, except in the case of a plea of justification of a libel and special pleas, which must be in writing. Where the indictment is defective the defendant may enter a demurrer, which must be in writing. This is seldom done in modern practice, the more usual course being to take orally any such objection, as would be good ground for a demurrer, by moving before plea to quash the indictment, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 354, 355. As to the Revenue side and Crown side of the King's Bench Division, see p 419, *post*.

court, in order to determine the matters in dispute between the parties, will have to adjudicate

SMO. 1.

Nature and Purpose of Pleadings.

Rules determining practice of pleading

849 The rules of procedure of a court determine what pleadings are required in that court and in what form they shall be framed (*b*) The rules of procedure in the High Court are peculiar to that court, and, excepting in regard to proceedings for divorce or other matrimonial causes (*c*), proceedings on the Revenue side or on the Crown side of the King's Bench Division, and criminal proceedings (*d*), are wholly contained in the Rules of the Supreme Court, of which the High Court is a branch

County courts have a procedure of their own, which is determined by the County Court Rules (*e*) in force for the time being. The only pleadings required in a county court are particulars of claim from a plaintiff (*f*), and from a defendant notice of set-off or counterclaim (*g*) or of special or statutory defence (*h*) The rules as to the form of such particulars, set-off, and counterclaim are the same as those of the High Court (*i*)

County courts.

Every inferior court (*j*), including the Mayor's Court, London (*k*), has its own rules of procedure and therefore its own system of pleading

Other inferior courts

The rules hereinafter set out are the rules relating to pleading in the High Court, other than in matters assigned to the Probate, Divorce, and Admiralty Division (*l*)

The term "pleading" includes any petition or summons (*m*), any statement of claim (*n*), defence, counterclaim, or reply (*o*)

Definition of the term

(*b*) As to pleadings in ecclesiastical courts, see title ECCLESIASTICAL LAW Vol XI, p 517

(*c*) For procedure and practice in divorce and matrimonial causes, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 468 *et seq*

(*d*) R S C, Ord 68 r 1 As to pleadings on the Revenue side and the Crown side, see title CROWN PRACTICE, Vol X, pp 11, 23, 32, 120, 139 154, 205 As to proceedings in criminal matters, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 266

(*e*) See title COUNTY COURTS, Vol VIII, pp 460 *et seq*

(*f*) See *ibid*, p 466

(*g*) See *ibid*, p 485, and title SET OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM

(*h*) See title COUNTY COURTS, Vol VIII, p 485

(*i*) The County Court Rules do not prescribe any particular forms of pleading, but by the County Courts Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 43), s 164, it is provided that in such a case the general principles of practice in the High Court may be applied

(*j*) See title COURTS, Vol IX, p 132

(*k*) See title MAYOR'S COURT, LONDON, Vol XX, pp 290 *et seq*

(*l*) See titles ADMIRALTY, Vol I, pp 93, 106, EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS, Vol XIV, p 175, HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 462 *et seq*

(*m*) It does not include a writ of summons by which an action is commenced (*Murray v Stephenson* (1887), 19 Q B D 60, *Wallis v Jackson* (1883), 23 Ch D 204) A special indorsement on a writ of summons under R S C, Ord 3, r 6, is deemed to be a pleading so far as the rules relating to statement of claim are concerned (*Anlaby v Praetorius* (1888), 20 Q B D 764, C A, *Robertson v Howard* (1878), 3 C P D 280), but for purposes of service such a writ is a writ within the meaning of R S C, Ord 64, r 11 (*Murray v Stephenson*, *supra*)

(*n*) Including a special indorsement on a writ of summons; see note (*m*), *supra*.

(*o*) The definition of a pleading given in the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), s. 100, is—"Pleading" shall include any petition or

SECT 2

Form of
Pleadings

Marking

SECT 2—Form of Pleadings.

SUB-SECT 1—Arrangement of Contents.

850 Every pleading must be marked (*p*) on the face, with the date of the day on which it is delivered, with a reference to the letter and number of the action (*q*), the name of the Division of the High Court to which it is assigned (*r*), the name of the judge, if any, to whom it is assigned (*s*), the title of the action (*t*), and the description of the pleading (*u*)

Marking of
amendments

Whenever any indorsement or pleading is amended, the same, when amended, must be marked with the date of the order, if any, under which the same is so amended, and of the day on which

summons, and also shall include the statements in writing of the claim or demand of any plaintiff, and of the defence of any defendant thereto, and of the reply of the plaintiff to any counterclaim of a defendant " It is provided by R S C, Ord 71, r 1, that this definition shall apply to the Rules of the Supreme Court Particulars of a statement in a pleading delivered pursuant to order are part of a pleading for the purposes of the rule as to "striking out" (*Davey v Bentinck* [1893] 1 Q B 185, C A), and also in other respects, see note (*l*), p 428, *post*

Under the system of pleading in vogue before the passing of the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), the defendant might in answer to the plaintiff's reply deliver a rejoinder and the plaintiff in answer to this might deliver a surrejoinder, and the pleadings might be continued by means of a rebutter delivered by the defendant in answer to which the plaintiff might deliver a surrebutter Under the rules of procedure now in force the pleadings seldom go beyond reply, but where the reply contains the defence to a counterclaim delivered by the defendant, the latter is, when further pleading is necessary, permitted to deliver a rejoinder A person not a plaintiff served with a counterclaim under R S C, Ord 21, r 12, delivers a "defence to counterclaim"

(*p*) *Ibid*, Ord 19, r 11

(*q*) That is to say, with the date of the year and letter and number entered in the cause book at the Central Office of the High Court, and marked on the writ by which the action is commenced, by the officer who files the copy of the writ left with him by the plaintiff or his solicitor when he applies for the writ to be sealed, see *ibid*, Ord 5, r 13, and title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE The letter is always the initial of the surname of the plaintiff, or of the first plaintiff mentioned on the writ

(*r*) That is to say, the division marked on the writ by the plaintiff or his solicitor when it is issued, see R S C, Ord 5, r 5, and title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(*s*) When an action is commenced by a writ issued out of the Chancery Division, the action is at once assigned to a particular judge whose name is marked on the writ, see R S C, Ord 5, r 9 The same judge's name must be marked on the pleadings in the action In an action in any other division of the High Court no judge's name is marked on the writ or pleadings

(*t*) The title of the action means the names of the parties Thus the heading to a pleading is in the same form as the heading of the writ of summons by which the action is commenced, except that on a statement of claim there should appear immediately before the names of the parties a statement of the day on which the writ was issued

(*u*) That is to say "statement of claim," "defence," "reply" etc., as the case may be In cases before the judge dealing with the Commercial List the terms "points of claim" and "points of defence" are used for "statement of claim" and "defence" respectively Forms of statement of claim and defence are given in R S C, Appendices C and D respectively A statement of claim in an action in the King's Bench Division commenced on the 1st January, 1911, by a plaintiff named William Jones against a defendant named Thomas Robinson, and marked in the cause

such amendment is made, in manner following, namely, "Amended the day of pursuant to order of dated the of " (b).

If an action is commenced by a writ issued out of a district registry (c), the name of the district registry must be marked on the writ (d) and if the action continues in the district registry on the subsequent pleadings

851 Every pleading must be indorsed with the name and place of business of the solicitor and agent, if any, delivering the same, or the name and address of the party delivering the same if he does not act by a solicitor (e)

852 Every pleading must be divided into paragraphs numbered consecutively. Dates, sums, and numbers must be expressed in figures and not in words (f)

853 It is not necessary that pleadings be signed by counsel (g), but, where a pleading has been settled by counsel, it must be signed by him (h). If a pleading has not been settled by counsel, it must be signed by the solicitor of the party by whom it is delivered (i), or by the party himself if he appears in person (k)

Sect. 2. Form of Pleadings.

Marking
name of dis-
trict registry.

Indorsement
of name and
address of
solicitor.

Paragraphs.

Signature.

book with the number 30, would have the following heading in accordance with the law as to marking —

1911 J No 30.

In the High Court of Justice

King's Bench Division,

Writ issued 1st January, 1911

Between William Jones

and

Plaintiff

Thomas Robinson

Defendant.

STATEMENT OF CLAIM

(b) R S C, Ord 28, r 9 The amended pleading should have the word "amended" inserted before the name of the pleading, e.g., "amended statement of claim" The signature (see the text, *infra*) should be repeated with the word "amended" in brackets placed in front of the repetition The usual practice is to make the amendment in red ink, see Yearly Practice of Supreme Court, 1912, p 348, and see, further, p 438, *post*, title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE As to amendment generally, see p 437, *post*

(c) See title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(d) R S C, Ord 5, r 13

(e) *Ibid*, Ord 19, r 11

(f) *Ibid*, r 4 Where a defendant sets up a set off or counterclaim, the set off or counterclaim is set out in the same document as the defence, and the paragraphs of the set off or counterclaim should be numbered in continuation of the number of the paragraphs of the defence

(g) A petition under the Law of Property Amendment Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 38), must be signed by counsel (*Re Boulton's Trusts* (1882), 30 W R 596)

(h) R S C, Ord 19, r 4 If a pleading is signed by counsel, the court will pay to it the greatest possible respect on the ground that such signature implies that the pleading is not a mere fiction (*Great Australian Gold Mining Co v Martin* (1877), 5 Ch D 1, 10, C A) If counsel signs the draft pleading, that is a sufficient compliance with the rule, and his name may be printed or otherwise reproduced in the pleading actually delivered

(i) The signature of a solicitor to a plaint delivered under the County Court Rules must, if the solicitor wishes to recover his costs in respect thereof, be signed and not lithographed (*R v Cowper* (1890), 24 Q B D 533, C A) In such a case, however, signature by the solicitor's clerk is sufficient (*France v Dutton*, [1891] 2 Q B 208)

(k) R S C, Ord 19, r 4, and see title BARRISTERS, Vol II, pp. 376, 379.

SEC 2

Form of Pleadings

Written or printed pleadings

Statement in summary form of material facts

Requisites of a good pleading

854. Every pleading (*l*) which contains less than ten folios (*m*) may be either written or printed, or partly printed and partly written (*n*), and every other pleading, not being a petition or summons (*o*), must be printed

SUB-DIV 2 — Mode of Setting out a Party's Own Case

855 Every pleading must contain, and contain only, a statement in a summary form of the material facts on which the party pleading relies for his claim or defence, as the case may be, but not the evidence by which they are to be proved (*p*)

No technical objection may be raised to any pleading on the ground of any alleged want of form (*q*)

856 The requisites of a good pleading are that it should contain a statement of —

(1) Facts not law (*r*)

(*l*) A letter sent by the defendant to the plaintiff's solicitor stating what the defendant believes to be his defence, but not in the form required by R S C, Ord 19, r 11, is not a pleading (*Marshall v Jones* (1888), 52 J P 423)

(*m*) A folio is seventy two words. If numbers occur, each numeral is counted as a word (R S C, Ord 19, r 9). It was held by JILF, J, in chambers that ten folios mean 720 words exclusive of the indorsement (*Bagot v Gardner* (1902), 13th February, unreported)

(*n*) "Written" includes typewritten

(*o*) An originating summons, therefore, is not a pleading within the meaning of this rule. As to originating summonses, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(*p*) R S C, Ord 19, r 4. The rules as to what a pleading should or should not contain are not absolute, but lay down the guiding principles according to which pleadings should be framed. If they are not observed the court or a judge may order the pleading to be amended or struck out, see p 434, *post*. As to the meaning of the expression "the court or a judge," see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE. The limits to be observed by the pleader depend in some degree on the view taken by the particular tribunal which has to decide whether the pleading is good or bad. The broad general principles have been sufficiently ascertained by judicial decision, but as regards minor points the rules are variously interpreted according to the individual view of the judicial authority before whom a particular point comes for decision, in cases in the Commercial List the rules of pleading are less strictly interpreted as regards minor points than in the other courts of the King's Bench Division. Forms of pleadings are given in R S C, Appendices C, D, and E, but these are mere outlines of the pleadings that become necessary in practice when the facts in dispute assume any complexity, see title ADMIRALTY, Vol I, pp 94, 95, and see p 424, *post*.

(*q*) R S C, Ord 19, r 26. The pleader must state sufficient facts to support one of the old forms of action (see title ACTION, Vol I, p 32), or some cause of action created since the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), or facts that would have been ground for relief in equity before the Act, but he need not name or identify his cause of action.

(*r*) As a general rule inferences of law should not be pleaded, but only the facts from which such inferences are sought to be drawn (*Hanmer (Lord) v Flight* (1876) 24 W R 346, *per* BRETT, J, at p 347, see p 424, *post*), but it may be useful on occasion to state the legal conclusion sought to be drawn from the facts, or the nature of the legal provision on which the party pleading intends to rely, either by way of emphasis, or to prevent any doubt in the mind of the other party as to the nature of the case which is alleged against him. It is, and indeed always was, bad pleading to state an inference or conclusion of law without setting out the facts by which the conclusion or inference is to be supported, and such a pleading will be

- (2) Material facts only (s)
 (8) Facts not evidence (t)
 (4) Facts stated in a summary form (u).

SECT. 2.
 Form of
 Pleading

struck out as bad (*Gautret v Egerton* (1867), L R 2 C P 371) A party need not plead to any matter of law set out in his opponent's pleading, but may treat the same as surplusage.

(s) All facts which must be proved in order to establish the ground of claim or defence are material (*Philpotts v Philpotts* (1878), 4 Q B D 127, 133, 134, C A) So also are facts which, if not alleged, could reasonably be said to take the other party by surprise when proved at the trial, even if not necessary to the mere statement of the ground of claim or defence, see p 446, *post*. As to pleading matters in aggravation or mitigation of damage, see p 425, *post*. A fact which was not material in the initial stages of a case may become material at a later stage. For example, a plaintiff need not plead facts merely in anticipation that a certain contention will be raised in the defence which he will seek to rebut. Until the contention has actually been raised such facts are not material, if the contention is raised in the defence, they then become material and should be pleaded in the reply. If the plaintiff's own statement of claim shows on the face of it that there is an absolute defence available to the defendant, the statement of claim may be struck out (*Hubbuck & Sons Ltd v Wilkinson Heywood and Clark* [1899] 1 Q B 86, C A, *Law v Llewellyn*, [1906] 1 K B 487, C A, *Vacher & Sons v London Society of Compositors and Others* (1912), 28 T L R 366). If the plaintiff seeks to escape from the Statute of Limitations on the ground of fraudulent concealment, he should set out his claim with the greatest particularity in order to prevent it being struck out as embarrassing (*Riddell v Sluithmore (Earl)* (1887), 3 T L R 329, C A). The Rules of the Supreme Court themselves lay down in some cases what facts are material to be alleged (see R S C, Ord 19, rr 14—25), and the decisions on *ibid*, r 6, as to what particulars must be given when an allegation is placed on the record, further define what facts are material, see p 453, *post*.

(t) Facts which are merely evidence of material facts though necessary to be proved at the trial, should not be pleaded. The dividing line between these two classes of facts is often very difficult to draw, but a fact as to which there is a doubt whether it should be placed in the one class or the other should be pleaded. A pleading might be struck out if such a fact were material and had been omitted, but if a fact were pleaded as to which there was a doubt whether the fact was material or not, no such order would be made, see note (t), p 434, *post*, and *Millington v Loring* (1880), 6 Q B D 190, C A.

Where a fact is such that, unless that fact is proved, the party relying on it will fail in his claim or defence, it is a material fact and is called a *factum probandum*. But where a fact is such that, even though the party relying on it should fail to prove it, he may nevertheless succeed in his claim or defence on proof of some other fact, then it is not a material fact, but only evidence of a material fact. Facts of this kind are called *facta probantia* and should not be pleaded. Thus where a verbal agreement is relied upon, it should be alleged as a fact that such an agreement was entered into. The interviews which will be proved in support of such an allegation should not be described in the pleadings, though what took place at them must be proved at the trial. So, generally, when a state of facts is relied upon, it is enough to allege it without setting out the subordinate facts which are the means of proving it, or the evidence sustaining the allegation (*Williams v Wilcox* (1838), 8 Ad & El 314 331). Where a conversation is material it is sufficient to state its substance (*Eade v Jacobs* (1877), 3 Fx D 335, C A). The fact that an admission has been made by a party, if it is no more than evidence, should not be pleaded (*Davy v Garrett* (1878) 7 Ch D 473, C A, *Lumb v Beaumont* (1884), 49 L T 772), though it may be a most important fact to be proved at the trial (*Stewart v Gladstone* (1879), 10 Ch D 626, 644, C A).

(u) This means that the facts should be stated concisely and briefly.

SECT 2

Form of
Pleadings.

Brevity

857. Pleadings must be as brief as the nature of the case will admit, and the taxing officer in adjusting the costs of the action must at the instance of any party, or may without any request, inquire into any unnecessary prolixity and order the costs occasioned thereby to be borne by the party chargeable with the same (a).

Applicability
of prescribed
forms

858 The forms of pleadings given in the Rules of the Supreme Court (b) are to be used when applicable, and where they are not applicable, forms of the like character, as near as may be, are to be used for all pleadings, and, where such forms are applicable and sufficient, any longer forms are deemed to be prolix, and the costs occasioned by such prolixity shall be disallowed to or borne by the party so using the same as the case may be (c)

Statement of
legal relation
ship or
inference of
law

859 Where any legal relation is alleged to exist, or any conclusion or inference of law is alleged to arise, the facts which show the existence of such legal relation, or from which it is sought to draw such conclusion or inference, must be set out in the pleadings (d)

In good pleading it is also advisable that the facts should be stated in chronological order. Undue prolixity involves penalties as to costs under R S C, Ord 19, r 2, 5, moreover the court has an inherent jurisdiction to deal with documents which are so prolix as to be an abuse of the process of the court (*Hill v Hart Dams* (1884), 26 Ch D 470, C A). When a pleading is prolix it may be struck out, or, if it be a statement of claim, the action may be stayed, see R S C, Ord 19, r 27, Ord 25, r 4.

(a) *Ibid*, Ord 19, r 2. This rule has to be read subject to *ibid*, Ord 30, which provides that the court or a judge may give such directions as it thinks proper as to the pleadings to be delivered. No pleading is prolix simply by reason of being lengthy or containing a statement of numerous facts. Prolixity is undue length and verbosity not reasonably necessary in view of the nature of the facts material to be stated. The penalties prescribed for prolixity are seldom enforced.

(b) See R S C, Appendices C, D, and E.

(c) *Ibid*, Ord 19, r 5. In practice the forms in the Appendices to the Rules are found to be insufficient where the case involves any complex statement of facts, and pleadings are as a rule much longer than those given in these forms. In any case, the forms must not be slavishly adhered to, but the pleader must use his own discretion as to what is necessary to the due presentment of his client's case. In *The Isis* (1883), 8 P D 227, the plaintiff delivered a statement of claim exactly in accordance with R S C, Appendix C, s III, Form No 6, but HANNEN, P, ordered a further and better statement of claim to be delivered on the ground that the form was insufficient, and see title ADMIRALTY, Vol I, p 94. Similarly, in *Wethered v Cox*, [1888] W N 165, KAY, J, held R S C, Appendix C, s II, Form No 5, insufficient.

(d) Thus, where breach of duty is alleged, the facts upon which the alleged duty is founded must be pleaded. Where negligence is alleged, the facts must be set out which show a duty to take reasonable care and in what respects such duty has been disregarded (*Gautier v Egerton* (1867), L R 2 C P 371, 374, *West Rand Central Gold Mining Co v. R*, [1905] 2 K B 391, 399). In an action for the recovery of land of which the plaintiff has never been in possession, the statement of claim must set out the facts which show the plaintiff's title (*Philippa v Philippa* (1878), 4 Q B D 127, C A). Where a plaintiff, as assignee of the reversion to a lease, sues for breach of covenants contained in the lease, he must set out the facts showing how the reversion

860 In all cases in which the party pleading relies on any misrepresentation, fraud (e), breach of trust, wilful default, or undue influence, and in all other cases in which particulars may be necessary beyond such as are exemplified in the prescribed forms (f), particulars, with dates and items if necessary, must be stated in the pleading, provided that, if the particulars be of debt, expenses, or damages, and exceed three folios, the fact must be so stated, with a reference to full particulars already delivered or to be delivered with the pleading (g)

NOT. 2
Form of Pleadings.

Statement of particulars of misrepresentation, fraud etc.

861 Neither party need in any pleading allege any matter of fact which the law presumes in his favour, or as to which the burden of proof lies upon the other side (h), unless the same has first been specifically denied (i). For example, where a plaintiff sues on a bill of exchange, and does not rely on the consideration for which the bill was given as a substantive ground of claim, he need not allege in his statement of claim that the bill was given for good consideration (h)

Presumptions.

862 A plaintiff need not plead facts on which he will rely only in aggravation of damage (l), but if he does plead such facts the

Pleading in aggravation or mitigation of damage

has become vested in him (*Davis v James* (1884), 26 Ch D 778). It was never, and still is not, sufficient to allege that A is the heir at law of B, but the facts which show how this relation arose must be pleaded (*Dumsday v Hughes* (1803), 3 Bos & P 453, *Palmer v Palmer*, [1892] 1 Q B 319, *Darbyshire v Leigh*, [1896] 1 Q B 554, C A). So if it is alleged that A is trustee for B, the facts or documents relied upon as constituting A trustee must be pleaded (*Salaman v Secretary of State for India*, [1906] 1 K B 613, C A). Similarly, in showing title to a chattel it is not sufficient to allege that a deceased person "two days before his death made a good and valid *donatio mortis causa*," but the facts must be set out which show that such a *donatio* was made (*Re Parton* (1882), 30 W R 287). Similarly, it is not sufficient to allege that an agreement is illegal, or not binding, or discharged, but the facts must be pleaded on which the court may hold that this is so, see R S C, Ord 19, r 15). As to defences which must be specially pleaded, see pp 446 *et seq*, *post*.

(e) See title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, p 732

(f) *I.e.*, the forms in R S C, Appendices C, D and E, see note (c), p 424, *ante*.

(g) R S C, Ord 19, r 6, and see pp 453 *et seq*, *post*.

(h) Thus a plaintiff suing on a contract for the sale of land (*Culling v King* (1877), 5 Ch D 660, C A), or on an agreement not to be performed within a year (*Fraser v Pape* (1904), 20 T L R 798), need not allege that the Statute of Frauds has been complied with. In an action against a husband and wife for an ante-nuptial debt of the wife the plaintiff need not allege that the husband has received assets of the wife (*Mathews v Whittle* (1880), 13 Ch D 811).

(i) R S C, Ord 19, r 25. When a defence denies the existence of a fact it is not necessary to deliver a reply asserting the contrary, see *ibid*, Ord 27, r 13.

(k) *Ibid*, Ord 19, r 25, Bills of Exchange Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 61), s 20, and see title BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS, Vol II, pp 461, 496.

(l) For example, in actions for defamation the plaintiff may prove that the defendant has published other libels or slanders (*Pearson v Lemaitre* (1843), 5 Man. & G. 700, 719, *Anderson v Calvert* (1908), 24 T L R 399, C A.), or has otherwise been guilty of conduct showing malice (*Præd v*

NOT 2
Form of
Pleadings.

court will not strike them out as embarrassing or tending to prejudice the fair trial of the action, for such facts are material facts (*m*) A defendant need not plead facts on which he relies only in mitigation of damage, evidence of such facts being admissible in support of a traverse of the plaintiff's allegation of damage, which traverse is always implied even though there is no express traverse in the defence (*n*) A defendant may not plead only in mitigation of damage any fact that would tend to justify the acts complained of in the plaintiff's statement of claim, or otherwise support a defence to the action which has not been pleaded (*o*) A defendant in an action for defamation (*p*), who does not, by his defence, justify the words complained of, may not, without the leave of the judge at the trial, give evidence with a view to mitigation of damages as to the circumstances under which the libel or slander was published, or as to the character of the plaintiff, unless, seven days at least before trial, he furnishes to the plaintiff particulars of the matters as to which he intends to give evidence (*q*)

Performance
of condition
precedent

863 The performance or occurrence of every condition precedent is presumed in favour of the party against whom such condition would operate, unless the other party specially pleads that such condition has not been fulfilled (*a*)

Graham (1889), 24 Q B D 53, C A) The dicta in *Scott v Sampson* (1882), 8 Q B D 491, which imply that facts in aggravation cannot be proved unless pleaded, cannot be supported, though the decision in that case remains good so far as it decides what evidence is admissible where it is sought to mitigate the damage, see *Mungana v Wright*, [1909] 2 K B 958, and see title DAMAGES, Vol X, p 325, LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, pp 720, 724

(*m*) That is, material in the secondary sense that they have an important bearing on the issue, see *Millington v Loving* (1880), 6 Q B D 190, 194, C A, *Whitney v Mounord* (1890), 24 Q B D 630

(*n*) *Wood v Durham (Earl)* (1888), 21 Q B D 501, R S C, Ord 21, r 4, and see title DAMAGES, Vol X, p 346

(*o*) *Watson v Christie* (1800), 2 Bos & P 224, *Speck v Phillips* (1839), 5 M & W 279, *Wood v Cox* (1888), 4 T L R 550, *Watt v Watt*, [1905] A C 115, 118

(*p*) As to aggravation and mitigation of damages in actions for defamation, see title LIBEL AND SLANDER Vol XVIII, pp 720 *et seq* If the defendant relies on an apology as mitigating damages he may either plead it in his defence or make it the subject of a notice under R S C, Ord 36, r 37

(*q*) R S C, Ord 36, r 37 This provision must be read subject to the preceding provision, as a defendant in an action for defamation is not allowed to prove in mitigation facts tending to justify the defamatory words, nor may he cross examine as to facts of that nature (*Watt v Watt*, *supra*) R S C, Ord 36, r 37, does not make admissible any fact which is not otherwise admissible The notice may form part of the defence or be delivered separately, and see, further, title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, pp 728, 729

(*a*) This is the effect of R S C, Ord 19, r 14, which is somewhat clumsily worded as follows — "Any condition precedent, the performance or occurrence of which is intended to be contested, shall be distinctly specified in his pleading by the plaintiff or defendant (as the case may be), and, subject thereto, an averment of the performance or occurrence of all conditions precedent necessary for the case of the plaintiff or defendant shall be implied in his pleading" Where a plaintiff sues by specially indorsed writ for payment of money agreed to be paid on the happening of a certain event

864 Wherever the contents of any document are material it is sufficient in any pleading to state the effect thereof as briefly as possible, without setting out the whole or any part thereof, unless the precise words of the document are material (b)

SECT. 2.
Form of
Pleadings.

865 Whenever any contract or any relation between any parties is to be implied from a series of letters or conversations, or otherwise from a number of circumstances, it is sufficient to allege such a contract or relation as a fact, and to refer generally to such letters, conversations, or circumstances without setting them out in detail. If in such circumstances the person so pleading desires to rely in the alternative upon more contracts or relations than one as being implied from such circumstances, he may state them in the alternative (c)

Contents of
documents.

866 Wherever it is material to allege malice, fraudulent intention, knowledge, or other condition of the mind of any person, it is sufficient to allege the same as a fact without setting out the circumstances from which the same is to be inferred (d), but a charge of fraud must be made specifically (e) and the respects in which the party is accused of being fraudulent must be set out (f)

Allegation as
to condition
of mind.

867 Wherever it is material to allege notice to any person of any fact, matter, or thing, it is sufficient to allege such notice as a fact, unless the form or the precise terms of such notice, or the circumstances from which such notice is to be inferred, are material (g)

Allegation of
notice

868 In every case in which the cause of action is a stated or settled account, the same must be alleged with particulars, but in every case in which a statement of account is relied on by way of

leading a
statement of
account

he need not allege that such event has happened (*Bradley v Chamberlyn*, [1893] 1 Q B 439). An assignee of a debt suing in the same way to recover the debt need not allege that notice of the assignment was given (*Satchwell v Burke* (1892), 66 L T 641, C A), but in an action on a dishonoured bill of exchange the plaintiff must allege notice of dishonour (*Kraus v Grosvenor & Co* (1892), 61 L J (Q B) 717, *May v Chadley*, [1894] 1 Q B 451, *Roberts v Plant*, [1895] 1 Q B 597, C A)

(b) R S C, Ord 19, r 21. If a party asserts that a document has a particular effect he must set out so much of the document as is necessary to show that the document has the effect alleged (*Philippa v Philippa* (1878), 4 Q B D 127, C A, *Riddell v Strathmore (Earl)* (1887), 11 T L R 329, C A, *Davis v James* (1884), 28 Ch D 778). In an action for libel or slander the precise words are material and must be set out (*Harris v Warre* (1879), 4 C P D 125, 128, see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 643)

(c) R S C, Ord 19, r 24. For an example of a contract to be inferred from a series of letters, see *Brogden v Metropolitan Rail Co* (1877), 2 App Cas 666. As to the effect of an alternative allegation in such a case, see title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, pp 357, 358, note (i). In alleging a conversation only the substance need be set out (*Eade v Jacobs* (1877), 3 Ex D 375, C A)

(d) R S C, Ord 19, r 22

(e) *Dary v Garrell* (1878), 7 Ch D 473, 480, C A, see pp 423, 424, ante

(f) *Re Rica Gold Washing Co* (1879), 11 Ch D 36, C A, *Wallingford v Mutual Society* (1880), 5 App Cas 685, *Smith v Chadwick* (1882), 20 Ch D 27, C A, *Redgrave v Hurd* (1881), 20 Ch D 1, C A, and see title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, p 724

(g) R S C, Ord 19, r 23

NOTE 2
Form of
Pleadings

Distinct
 claims.

evidence or admission of any cause of action which is pleaded, the same is not to be alleged in the pleadings (*h*)

869 Where the plaintiff seeks relief in respect of several distinct claims or causes of complaint founded upon separate and distinct grounds, they must be stated, as far as may be, separately and distinctly, and the same rule applies where the defendant relies upon several distinct grounds of defence, set-off, or counterclaim founded upon separate and distinct facts (*i*) But where a person pleading relies upon the same facts as giving rise to one or the other of two or more causes of action or grounds of defence, he must state in the alternative the different causes of action or grounds of defence which he intends to assert arise from those facts (*l*)

Further and
 better
 particulars

870 A further and better statement of the nature of the claim or defence, or further and better particulars of any matter stated in any pleading, notice, or written proceeding, may in all cases be ordered upon such terms as to costs and otherwise as may be just (*l*)

(*h*) R S C, Ord 20, r 8 A mere admission is not a material fact, but only evidence of such a fact and so need not be pleaded (*Davy v Garrett* (1878), 7 Ch D 473, C A *Lumb v Beaumont* (1884), 49 L T 772) But where one person admits liability to another for a balance found to be due on the stating of accounts between them, a cause of action is created on which that other can sue for such balance, see *Williams v Moor* (1843), 11 M & W 256, 265, *Lemere v Elliott* (1861), 6 H & N 656, and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 382

(*i*) R S C, Ord 20, r 7 A pleading is not necessarily embarrassing because the different averments are inconsistent (*Re Morgan, Owen v Morgan* (1887) 35 Ch D 492 C A)

(*k*) This is the effect of the latter part of R S C, Ord 19, r 24 The different causes of action or grounds of defence must be clearly expressed in such a manner as not to embarrass the other party or leave him in doubt as to which facts are relied on in support of each separate contention For this reason it is advisable to allege each separate cause of action in a separate paragraph and each ground of defence in a separate paragraph As to pleading in the alternative the three ways in which a claim for prescription may arise, see title EASEMENTS AND PROFITS A PRENDRE, Vol XI, p 257

(*l*) R S C, Ord 19, r 7, and, as to particulars see further, p 453, *post* The function of particulars is to give the other party notice of the exact nature of the case he will have to meet at the trial (*Spedding v Fitzpatrick* (1889), 38 Ch D 410, C A) Hence the court frequently orders a party to give particulars beyond the mere facts that must be alleged in order to show a cause of action In some cases particulars are required by a statute to be given before a ground of action or a defence under the statute can be shown, see, for example, Fatal Accidents Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict c 93), s 4, and see title NEGLIGENCE Vol XXI, p 457 As to particulars in an action for infringement of a patent, see title PATENTS AND INVENTIONS, pp 216 *et seq*, *ante* In all other cases the court has a discretion in saying what particulars shall be given beyond the facts necessary to show a cause of action or ground of defence, and will order particulars whenever it thinks that the party pleading should put the other party in possession of further information as to the nature of the case he will have to meet If a party does not plead with sufficient particularity, he exposes himself to attack in the form of an application for further and better particulars If an order for such particulars is made against him he

SUB-SECT 3—*Mode of Answering an Opponent's Case*

SECT. 2.

Form of Pleadings.

871 Every allegation of fact in any pleading, not being a petition or summons, if not denied specifically or by necessary implication, or stated in the pleading of the opposite party not to be admitted (*m*), is taken to be admitted (*n*), except as against an infant, lunatic, or person of unsound mind not so found by inquisition (*o*)

When allegations presumed to be admitted

872 It is not sufficient for a defendant in his defence to deny (*p*) generally (*q*) the grounds alleged by the statement of

General denial insufficient

may have to pay the costs of the application, and may be subjected to an order that unless such particulars are delivered within a given time the allegation be struck out, or that he be precluded from giving any evidence thereof at the trial, or, if he be a plaintiff, that the action be stayed. The numerous decisions on what particulars should be given are dealt with at p 453. *post*

A party is bound by his pleadings unless allowed by the judge to amend at the trial (see title **ESTOPPER**, Vol XIII, p 357), and is therefore bound by his particulars, which are in effect part of the pleading under which they are delivered (*Arnold and Butler v Bottomley*, [1908] 2 K B 151, 155, C A, *Milbank v Milbank*, [1900] 1 Ch 376, 385, C A, *Davey v Bentinck*, [1893] 1 Q B 185, C A, *United Telephone Co v Smith, Same v Mitchell* (1890), 61 L T 617, *Cass v Fitzgerald*, [1884] W N 18)

(*m*) R S C, Ord 19, r 13. Whether a pleading states that an allegation is "denied," or states that it is "not admitted," the effect is the same (*Hall v London and North Western Rail Co* (1877), 35 L T 848, *per* GROVE, J, at p 849). The distinction usually observed is that a party "does not admit" matters as to which he intends to put the other party to the proof, and "denies" those things which he not only requires to be proved but contends never happened at all. In either case the allegation is said to be traversed. An allegation which is not expressly traversed is regarded as admitted and requires no proof (*Byrd v Nunn* (1877), 5 Ch D 781, affirmed 7 Ch D 284, C A, *Green v Sevan* (1879), 13 Ch D 580, *Symonds v Jenkins* (1876), 34 L T 277). Where a defendant alleges specifically that an allegation is untrue in certain respects although at the same time he denies the allegation generally, he may incur a risk of being precluded from proving the untruth of the allegation except in the respects covered by the specific denial (*Collette v Goode* (1878), 7 Ch D 842).

(*n*) General damages are never taken as admitted unless expressly admitted in the defence (R S C, Ord 21, r 4). If sufficient admissions are made in the defence the plaintiff may forthwith move for judgment under *ibid*, Ord 32, r 6. A party may in some cases be allowed to withdraw an admission made by mistake (*Hollis v Burton*, [1892] 3 Ch 226, C A).

(*o*) Where an infant or person of unsound mind does not traverse an allegation the plaintiff cannot move for judgment under *ibid*, on the ground that his claim has been admitted (*Byrne v Byrne* (1880), 5 L R Ir 174, *National and Provincial Bank v Evans* (1881), 30 W R 177, see title **INFANTS AND CHILDREN**, Vol XVII, p 142). The plaintiff must prove his case by evidence on affidavit (*Re Fitzwater, Fitzwater v Waterhouse* (1882), 52 L J (Ch) 83, *Gardner v Tapling* (1885), 33 W R 473, *Cheek v Cheek*, [1910] W N 87). In some cases the affidavit may be dispensed with where the interests of the party under disability are otherwise safeguarded (*Ripley v Sawyer* (1886), 31 Ch D 494).

(*p*) This rule applies equally strictly whether by his traverse a party "denies" or "does not admit". In either case the traverse must be so worded that the other party knows exactly how much is admitted and how much is put in issue (*Thorp v Holdsworth* (1876), 3 Ch D 637, 640, *Hall v London and North Western Rail Co* (1877), 35 L T 848).

(*q*) The object in prohibiting general denials was to do away with the old pleas of "never indebted," "*non assumpti*," "not guilty," and other

SECT 2
Form of
Pleadings.

Rule as to
damages

Denial of
allegation
of fact

claim, or for a plaintiff in his reply to deny generally (r) the grounds alleged in a defence by way of counterclaim, but each party must deal specifically (a) with each allegation of fact of which he does not admit the truth, except damages (b)

No denial or defence is necessary as to damages claimed or their amount, but they are deemed to be put in issue in all cases unless expressly admitted (c)

873. When a party in any pleading denies an allegation of fact in the previous pleading of the opposite party he must not do so evasively, but must answer the point of substance (d) Thus, if it

"general issues" used under the old forms of pleading, which left the plaintiff completely in the dark as to the nature of the case to be made against him at the trial, see pp 445 *et seq*, *post*

(r) A plaintiff in pleading to a counterclaim is bound by the same rules as govern a defendant pleading to a statement of claim

(a) It has been held that a traverse in the form "the defendant puts the plaintiffs to the proof of the several allegations in their statement of claim" is a contravention of this rule, and that the plaintiffs are entitled to judgment on the ground that the allegations in the statement of claim must be taken to have been admitted (*Harris v Gamble* (1878), 7 Ch D 877) So where a defendant pleaded that he did "not admit the correctness of the statements set forth in paragraphs 1, 2, 3 and 6 of the plaintiff's statement of claim and required further proof thereof," the court held that the allegations in those paragraphs had not been traversed (*Rutten v Tregent* (1879), 12 Ch D 758), and, where a defendant pleaded "Save as herein appears the defendant denies all the allegations contained in the statement of claim," he was ordered to amend his pleading as being embarrassing (*British and Colonial Land Association v Foster and Robins* (1891), 4 T L R 574) It has, however, become a common practice to use a traverse in the form "The defendant denies each and every allegation in paragraph 5 of the statement of claim as though the same were set out and traversed specifically", and, though there is some doubt whether such a traverse is within the rules, it has been held that if a defendant pleads to an allegation of negligence in the form "The defendant denies each and all the several allegations set out in paragraph 2 of the statement of claim," the pleading is good (*Adkins v North Metropolitan Tramways Co* (1893), 63 L J (Q B) 361)

(b) R S C, Ord 19, r. 17

(c) *Ibid*, Ord 21, r. 4 The rule is wide enough to cover all kinds of damage, but in practice special damage is usually traversed if it is not intended to be admitted If it is intended to contest special damage on the ground that it is too remote in law, this objection should be specially pleaded, see *ibid*, Appendix E, s III, Form No 2, and see p 446 *post*

(d) *Ibid*, Ord 19, r. 19 A denial must show clearly how much of the allegation pleaded to is denied and how much admitted Where it is alleged that an agreement or terms of arrangement have been arrived at, the denial must deny that any agreement or any terms of arrangement were come to, if that is what is meant, if it is intended to admit that some of the terms of arrangement were come to, the pleader should deny that any terms were come to "except the following," and then set out the ones admitted It is not sufficient to deny that the terms of the arrangement were definitely agreed as alleged (*Thorp v Holdsworth* (1876), 3 Ch D 637) Where a plaintiff alleged an agreement entered into by a duly authorised agent of A and the defendant denied that A agreed by his lawfully authorised agent and further averred that at the date of the alleged agreement A was of unsound mind and incapable of giving a lawful authority, it was held that the defendant could not rely on any ground for saying that the alleged agent was not lawfully authorised except unsoundness of mind (*Byrd v Nunn* (1877), 5 Ch D, 781; affirmed (1878), 7 Ch. D. 284, C. A.) Where a denial is

he alleged that he received a certain sum of money, it is not sufficient to deny that he received that particular amount, but he must deny that he received that sum or any part thereof, or else set out how much he received. If an allegation is made with divers circumstances it is not sufficient to deny it along with those circumstances (e)

SECT. 2.
Form of
Pleading

874 The plaintiff by his reply may join issue (f) upon the defence, and each party in his pleading, if any, subsequent to reply, may join issue upon the previous pleading. Such joinder of issue operates as a denial of every material allegation of fact in the pleading upon which issue is joined, but it may except any facts which the party may be willing to admit, and then operates as a denial of the facts not so admitted (g)

Joinder of
issue
operating
as denial

875 Where a contract, promise, or agreement is alleged in any pleading, a bare denial of the same by the opposite party is construed only as a denial in fact of the express contract, promise, or agreement alleged, or of the matters of fact from which the same may be implied by law (h), and not as a denial of the legality or sufficiency

Denial of
contract,
promise, or
agreement.

a denial of a whole chain of circumstances, which might be sustained by proof that any one of the circumstances was not true, the denial is evasive and is treated as an admission of the circumstantial allegation to which it is pleaded. In such case the allegation of each circumstance should be traversed specifically (*Tildesley v Harper* (1878), 7 Ch D 403, 10 Ch D 393, (C A)). Where in an action for defamation it is alleged that words were published "falsely and maliciously" it is embarrassing to deny that the words were published "falsely or maliciously." If it is intended to put in issue the falsity of the words, a plea of justification, with particulars of the facts relied on as showing justification, must be placed on the record. Malice in such an action is presumed and should not be traversed unless a defence of privilege or fair comment is pleaded when it should be alleged as part of the defence that the words were published "bona fide and without malice" (*Bell v Lister* (1882), 51 L J (Q B) 359, *Penrhyn v Licensed Victuallers' Mirror* (1890), 7 T L R 1, see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol. XVIII, p. 608). Where a libel or slander contains two specific charges and is divisible, that is to say the words making one charge are clearly separable from those making the other, a defendant may justify one charge and admit liability as to the other, but such a plea must clearly state how much is justified and as to how much liability is admitted (*Fleming v Dollar* (1889), 23 Q B D 388, *Clarke v Taylor* (1836), 2 Bing (N C) 634, *Churchill (Lord) v Hunt* (1819), 2 B & Ald 685, *Davis v Billing* (1891), 8 T L R 58, (C A)). So where a defendant pleaded a set-off, and further paid a sum of money into court with a denial of liability, and alleged that such sum, together with the amount of the set off, was sufficient to satisfy the plaintiff's claim, if any, in the action, the Court of Appeal struck out as embarrassing so much of the plea of payment into court as sought to take the benefit of the set-off, on the ground that the plea of set off could only avail if the denial of liability should turn out to be unavailing (*Stokwasser v Mullar* (1910), March (unreported))

(e) R. S. C., Ord 19, r 19

(f) The form of joinder of issue in a reply given in *ibid*, Appendix E, is "The plaintiff as to the defence says that he joins issue." Unless by his reply or a subsequent pleading a party wishes to plead otherwise than by mere traverse, no pleading is necessary, and leave to deliver such a pleading will be refused, as non-delivery is deemed to amount to a traverse

(g) *Ibid*, Ord 19, r 18

(h) *Ibid*, r. 20. This must be read with R. S. C., Ord 19, rr 17, 19, as to which see note (d), p. 430, *ante*, and R. S. C., Ord. 21, as to which see

NOTE 2
Form of
Pleadings

in law of such contract, promise, or agreement, whether with reference to the Statute of Frauds (4) or otherwise

pp 445 *et seq*, *post* If it is desired further to contend that, assuming the facts alleged to be proved, the agreement which *prima facie* arises does not bind the party pleading, such further contention must be expressly and clearly raised, see pp 447, 448, *post*, and notes thereto. A plea of this kind is called a confession and avoidance. In effect it confesses or admits that the allegations of the other party are true, but seeks to avoid the legal inference that would otherwise be drawn from such admission by setting out fresh facts to show that in the circumstances such inference should not be drawn. A party should observe great caution in pleading a confession and avoidance, except as an alternative to a traverse of the allegations of the other party, for if the sole plea in reference to such allegations is a confession and avoidance, the party raising such plea is concluded by his confession, even though it should appear in evidence that the facts were not correctly alleged by the other party (*Hewitt v Macquire* (1851), 7 Exch 80, and see title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, p 358). The facts relied upon as constituting an avoidance must be specially pleaded, and the burden of proof is on the party relying on such plea. It is not sufficient merely to traverse allegations made by the other party in anticipation of such a plea being raised (*Clarke v Callow* (1876), 46 L J (Q B) 53). Thus a plea that a document alleged to have been made by the party pleading is not his deed and does not bind him because its purport and effect was misrepresented to him before he made it, must be specially pleaded, and the facts in avoidance must be specially set out. As to the cases in which such a plea may be raised, see *Lewis v Olaf* (1897), 67 L J (Q B) 224, *Foster v Mackinnon* (1869), L R 4 C P 704, *Howatson v Webb*, [1907] 1 Ch 537, affirmed, [1908] 1 Ch 1, C A. Under the old system of pleading, the execution of a deed alleged was put in issue by a plea of *non est factum*, see title DEEDS AND OTHER INSTRUMENTS, Vol X, p 404. Under this plea the party pleading had the benefit of any variance in the deed as alleged and the deed produced in evidence (*Trott v Smith* (1844), 12 M & W 688, Ex Ch, *North v Wakefield* (1849), 13 Q B 536), and this was the proper plea by which to dispute the alleged effect of the deed (*Smith v Scott* (1859), 6 C B (N. S.) 771). All other defences had to be specially pleaded, including matters which made the deed absolutely void as well as those which made it voidable (Regulae Generales as to Pleading, Hilary Term, 1853, No 10). Where a party desires to avoid a contract on the ground that he was induced to enter into it by fraud, such fraud must be specially pleaded. If he seeks to be released from it on the ground that he was induced to enter into it by untrue representations not made fraudulently (see title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol. XX, pp 737 *et seq*), he must counterclaim for rescission and obtain a decree of the court rescinding the contract, as it is only in case of fraudulent misrepresentation that the contract is voidable at the option of the party without the intervention of the court (*Kennedy v Panama eto Mail Co* (1867), L R 2 Q B 580, 587, *Besse River Silver Mining Co v Smith*, (1869), L R 4 H L 64, 73, 74, *Redgrave v Hurd* (1881), 20 Ch D 1, C A, *Adam v Newbigging* (1888), 13 App Cas 308). The decree of rescission dates back to the commencement of the proceedings for rescission (*ibid*). When a defendant succeeds on a claim for rescission, the agreement is destroyed and the plaintiff is thereby deprived of any cause of action arising out of the agreement, and the defendant thus succeeds in his defence to such cause of action (see *Mostyn v West Mostyn Coal and Iron Co* (1876), 1 C P D 145). If a party who seeks to enforce an agreement proves facts which show to the court that the agreement sought to be enforced is illegal, *e.g.*, as being contrary to the Gaming Acts, the court will not enforce such agreement even though the defence of illegality has not been raised on the pleadings (*Begbie v. Phosphate Sewage Co.* (1875), L R. 10 Q B 491; and see *Illegality*, note (d), p. 448, *post*).

(4) The Statute of Frauds (29 Car. 2, c. 3) must be specially pleaded by

876. Any party is entitled to raise by his pleading any point of law (*k*), and any point so raised must be disposed of by the judge who tries the cause at or after the trial, but, by consent of the parties, or by order of a court or a judge on the application of either party, it may be set down for hearing and disposed of at any time before the trial. No demurrer is allowed (*l*)

NOT. 2.
Form of Pleadings.
Point of law
Special hearing

SECT. 3—*Delivery of Pleadings*

877 Every pleading must be delivered (*m*) between the parties (*n*). Delivery

a party who relies on the fact that its provisions have not been complied with (R S C, Ord 10, s 15), see note (*d*) pp 447, 448, *post*. No particular section need be named, but where a defendant pleaded that he relied on the Statute of Frauds (29 Car 2, c 3), s 4, he was not allowed to amend by substituting *ibid*, s 7 (*James v Smith*, [1891] 1 Ch 384). The statute must also be pleaded in such a way as to show clearly to the other party exactly the point raised and in what respect it will be contended that the statute applies (*Pullen v Snellus* (1879), 40 L T 363). If a plaintiff alleges a written agreement he is not entitled to prove an oral one unless the judge allows an amendment of the statement of claim, and if such amendment is allowed, the defendant should be allowed to amend by pleading the statute, if it affords a ground of defence (*Brunning v Odhams Brothers, Ltd* (1896), 75 L T 602, H L).

(*k*) A point of law taken on the pleadings, in answer to the allegations in the other party's pleading, is called an objection in point of law. An objection in point of law assumes as true the facts alleged by the opposite party and declares that those facts are not sufficient to raise the legal inference or to afford the ground of relief for which the other party contends. It differs from a confession and avoidance in that it does not seek to place upon the facts alleged, or to prove additional facts in support of, some fresh inference other than that on which the party whose pleading is objected to relies, but merely declares that that party's own allegations are insufficient to support the contention which he puts forward. The usual form of pleading an objection in point of law is "The defendant will object that the statement of claim is bad in law and discloses no cause of action on the ground that . . .", or "The defendant will object that . . .", the latter form being given in R S C, Appendix E, s III. Subject to the preceding rules as to matters that must be specially pleaded (see pp 446, 448, *post*), a party may raise at the trial any point of law, even though it has not been pleaded, but, if he wishes to prove facts in support of his legal contention, he will not be allowed to do so unless he has pleaded them. An objection in point of law should be taken clearly and in a separate paragraph of the pleading, and should not be mixed up with reverses of facts (*Stokes v Grant* (1879), 4 C P D 25).

(*l*) R S C, Ord 25, rr 1, 2. A demurrer was a form of pleading under the old system, by which a party objected that his opponent's pleading disclosed no cause of action, or ground of defence, as the case might be. When a demurrer was pleaded the question raised was forthwith set down for argument and decision. Although this procedure has been abolished, the court may, on the application of a party who has taken on his pleading an objection in point of law, set down the point so raised for special argument and determination. The case is then put into what is called the Special Paper, and is heard by a single judge in open court. All the allegations of fact in the pleading are assumed on the argument of the point of law to be true. Unless the objection taken is such that, if upheld, it will dispose of the whole action or some substantial issue therein, the court will not order it to be set down for special hearing (*London, Chatham and Dover Rail Co v South Eastern Rail Co* (1885), 53 L T 109, 111).

(*m*) R. S. C., Ord 19, r 11. A pleading is said to be "delivered" when

(*n*) For note (*m*) see next page

SECT 3
Delivery of
Pleadings.

Every pleading or other document(o) required to be delivered to a party, or between parties, must be delivered to the solicitor of every party who appears by a solicitor, or to the party if he does not appear by a solicitor, but, if no appearance(p) has been entered for any party, then such pleading or document must be delivered by being filed with the proper officer(q)

SECT 4—(Objections to Pleadings)

Striking out
unnecessary
or scandalous
matter

878 The court or a judge may at any stage of the proceedings(r) order(s) to be struck out or amended any matter in any indorsement or pleading which may be unnecessary(t), or

it is handed by one party, or the solicitor acting for him, to an opposite party or his solicitor. Where a plaintiff, who was represented by a solicitor on the record, delivered a statement of claim himself, it was struck out (*Yeatman v Snow* (1880), 28 W R 574). Delivery is distinguished from "service", see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE. This distinction is not always very clearly or carefully observed in the Rules of the Supreme Court. Writs, notices of motion, summonses, citations and petitions all require to be "served," but pleadings, notices and documents not of the nature of process require to be "delivered." Process can be commenced only by a document requiring "service," and "delivery" can only take place of appropriate documents in the course of process which has been thus initiated. A counterclaim is "delivered" as between the original parties to an action, but if it is desired to make a stranger a co defendant to a counterclaim (see title SET OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM), the counterclaim must be served on him (see R S C, Ord 21, rr 11 12, title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE). The date of delivery of a pleading should be stated at the end.

(n) In early times pleadings were delivered to an officer of the court, by whom they were entered on the record, see p 418, *ante*. Now they are delivered direct to the party. Where an indorsement on a writ is amended but not so as to make it a new writ, it need not be served personally on a defendant who has made default in entering an appearance unless an order to that effect be made, but may be filed at the Central Office (*Jamaica Rail Co v Colonial Bank*, [1905] 1 Ch 677, C A).

(o) *F q*, interrogatories, see R S C, Ord 31, r 1.

(p) See title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE.

(q) R S C, Ord 19, r 10. Pleadings so filed must have the date of filing and the name of the defendant against whom they were filed written on them, and be entered in the cause books under the head of pleadings, and such entry must show the date of filing, the nature of the documents, and the name of the party against whom they are filed.

(r) R S C, Ord 19, r 27. A party desiring to have a pleading or part of a pleading struck out under this rule should apply by notice under the summons for directions, stating the ground of the application. The application should be made promptly (*Gent v Harrison* (1893), 69 L T 307). Where such an application was not made till after the close of the pleadings, the court thought there had been undue delay and refused to entertain it (*Cross v Howe* (Earl) (1892), 62 L J (CH) 342). A co defendant may apply to have part of another defendant's defence struck out as scandalous (*Bright v Marner*, [1878] W N 211), and possibly a stranger could apply (*Cracknell v Janson* (1879), 11 Ch D 1, 13, C A), and see note (u), p 435, *post*.

(s) The power to make the order is discretionary (*Golding v Wharton Saltworks Co* (1876), 1 Q B D 374, C A), but it is the duty of the judge to apply the rule in a fit case (*Knowles v Roberts* (1888), 38 Ch D 263, C A), a party being entitled *ex debito justitiæ* to have the case against him presented in an intelligible manner (*Davy v Garrett* (1878), 7 Ch D 473, C A), and if the objectionable parts cannot be severed from the rest the whole pleading may be struck out (*Williamson v London and North Western Rail Co* (1879), 12 Ch D 787).

(t) As a general rule matter in a pleading will not be struck out as

scandalous (a), or which may tend to prejudice (b), embarrass (c), or delay the fair trial of the action, and may in any such case, if they or he think fit, order the costs of the application to be paid between solicitor and client (d)

Sect. 4
Objections to Pleadings.

879 The court or a judge may order any pleading to be struck out on the ground that it discloses no reasonable cause of action or answer (e), and in any such case, or in case of the action or defence

striking out pleading showing no cause of action.

unnecessary unless it is also scandalous or embarrassing (*Rock v Purcell* (1887), 84 L T Jo 45, *Tomlinson v South Eastern Rail Co* (No 2) (1887), 57 L T 358, *Knowles v Roberts* (1888), 38 Ch D 267, C A)

(a) *E.g.* indecent or offensive matters or allegations made for the purpose of abusing or prejudicing the opposite party (*Coyle v Cuming* (1879), 40 L T 455, *Cashin v Craddock* (1876), 3 Ch D 376, C A) But if the allegation is relevant it cannot be struck out because in other ways it is scandalous (*Crucknall v Janson* (1879), 11 Ch D 1, C A , *Christie v Christie* (1873), 8 Ch App 499, *Millington v Loring* (1880), 6 Q B D 190, C A , *Appleby v Franklin* (1885) 17 Q B D 93, *Ex parte Simpson* (1809), 15 Ves 476, *St John (Lord) v St John (Lady)* (1805), 11 Ves 526)

(b) If a pleading tends to prejudice a party at any stage it may be struck out (*Berdan v Greenwood* (1878), 3 Ex D 251 256)

(c) A statement of claim is embarrassing if it raises a claim which the plaintiff is not entitled to make (*Knowles v Roberts, supra*), or shows that parties have been improperly joined (*Smith v Richardson* (1878), 4 C P D 112), or seeks to treat the action as supplemental to another action (*Nithate Securities Trust, Ltd v Williams* (1912), 106 L T 730) So also is a defence which raises in defence matters that obviously afford no defence, or raises them in a manner not allowed under the rules (*Preston v Lamont* (1876), 1 Ex D 361, *Smith & Co v British Marine Insurance Association*, [1883] W N 232, *Inardet v Hammond Electric Light and Power Supply Co*, [1883] W N 96) If the defendant wishes to admit liability as to part of the claim and dispute the rest, his pleading must show exactly what is admitted and what is not (*Heming v Dollar* (1889), 23 Q B D 388, *Davis v Billing* (1891), 8 T L R 58, C A), and see note (d), p 430, *ante* A defendant in an action for defamation may not plead that the words are true in some other sense than that alleged by the plaintiff (*Kassam v Budge*, [1893] 1 Q B 571) •

(d) R S C, Ord 19 r 27

(e) *Ibid*, Ord 25, r 4 Under this part of the rule the court may strike out any pleading which in itself shows that the facts alleged are insufficient in point of law to sustain a reasonable cause of action or a defence to the plaintiff's claim, as the case may be In judging of the sufficiency of a pleading under this rule the court will assume all the allegations therein to be true and that they are admitted by the opposite party If the statement of claim shows on the face of it that the action is not maintainable, or that there is an absolute defence to the action, the court will deal with it under this rule see pp 423, 428 *et seq.*, *ante* A pleading will, however, not be struck out if it is merely demurrable, it must be so bad that no legitimate amendment can cure the defect (*Peru Republic v Peruvian Guano Co* (1887), 36 Ch D 489, *per* CHITTY, J, at p 496, *Dudswell v Jacobs* (1887), 34 Ch D 278, C A , *Worthington & Co v Bellon* (1902), 18 T L R 438, C A , *Robinson v Fennell* (1912) 106 L T 722, C A) The mere fact that the case is weak and not likely to succeed is no ground for striking it out (*Boulter v Holder* (1886), 54 L T 298, *Cowper v Stoneham* (1893), 68 L T 18, *Anderson v Gorrie* (1892), 36 Sol Jo 256, *Goodson v Grierson*, [1908] 1 K B 761, C A), nor that the Statute of Frauds (29 Car 2, c 3), will, if pleaded, afford a defence (*Fraser v Pape* (1904), 91 L T 340, C A) Where a statement of claim is defective by reason of an essential averment being omitted the court does not dismiss the action but gives leave to amend (*Griffiths v London and St Katharine Docks Co* (1884), 13 Q B D 259, 261, n, C A ; *New Chile Mining Co v Lee* (1888), 4 T L R 444, *Reid v Hooley* (1897),

SEC 14
Objections
to
Pleadings

Prevention
of abuse of
process

being shown by the pleadings (f) to be frivolous or vexatious (g), the court or a judge may order the action to be stayed or dismissed, or judgment to be entered accordingly, as may be just (h)

880 The court or a judge may in virtue of the inherent jurisdiction of the court strike out any pleading or stay any action which is shown to be an abuse of the process of the court (i)

13 T L R 398, *Edwards v Pneumatic Tyre Co* (1900), 16 T L R 308, C A) But if the pleading cannot be cured by amendment the court will strike it out (*Hubbuck & Sons v Wilkinson, Heywood and Clark*, [1899] 1 Q B 86, 94, C A , *Woods v Lyttelton* (1909), 25 T L R 665, C A)

(f) Under this rule no evidence can be given either by affidavit or otherwise in support of the application. In this respect, such an application is different from one made to the court to strike out or stay in virtue of its inherent jurisdiction see the text, *infra*. In *Kershaw v Suvier* (1905), 21 T L R 40, an affidavit was allowed to be read apparently on the ground that the application could be regarded as made under the inherent jurisdiction of the court. See note (a), *infra*. Where the applicant desires to rely on the inherent jurisdiction, he need not say so in his summons even though he seeks to sustain it under the rules as well (*Vanson v Prior Fibres Consolidated, Ltd*, [1906] W N 209, *Willis v Howe* (*Earl*), [1893] 2 Ch 545, C A)

(g) The pleading, to come within these words, must be obviously vexatious or frivolous or unsustainable (*A-G of the Duchy of Lancaster v London and North Western Rail Co*, [1892] 3 Ch 274, C A , per LINDLEY, L J, at p 277. *Kellaway v Bury* (1892), 66 L T 599, 602, C A , *Bray v Flower* (1895), 73 L T 371, C A) The pleading must be so clearly frivolous that to put it forward would be an abuse of the process of the court (*Young v Holloway*, [1895] P 87, 90)

(h) R S C, Ord 25, r 4. The rule was not intended to apply to pleadings which raise a question of general importance or serious question of law (*Dyson v A-G*, [1911] 1 K B 410, C A), and the court will not proceed under it where the point to be decided is an important or difficult one, unless it is clear and obvious that the action will not lie (see *Hubbuck & Sons v Wilkinson Heywood and Clark*, *supra*, per LINDLEY, L J, at p 91, *Roberts v Charing Cross, Fenton, and Hampstead Rail Co* (1903), 87 L T 732, per FAIRFELL J) In the latter case the summons was amended and the application treated as being under R S C, Ord 25, r 2, which is the appropriate procedure where important or difficult points have to be decided (see note (l), p 433 *ante*). Nevertheless, some very important points have been decided on applications to strike out (see *Law v Llewellyn*, [1906] 1 K B 487, C A , *Burr v Smith*, [1909] 2 K B 306 C A , *Woods v Lyttelton*, *supra*). An action may be regarded by the court as frivolous and vexatious, and therefore proper to be stayed under this rule, on the ground that the court is not a *forum conveniens*, and that the plaintiff, having a perfectly good remedy in some other court cannot be allowed to continue his action without injustice to the defendant (*Logan v Bank of Scotland* (No 2), [1906] 1 K B 141, C A , *Egbert v Short*, [1907] 2 Ch 205, *Lery v Lery and De Romance* (1908), 24 T L R 466, *Re Norton's Settlement, Norton v Norton*, [1908] 1 Ch 471, C A) but when the plaintiff's proceedings in this country are taken *bond fide* they will not be stayed on the mere ground that there is a balance of convenience in favour of proceedings elsewhere (*Re Norton's Settlement, Norton v Norton*, *supra*, at p 481) and see title CONFLICT OF LAWS, Vol VI, pp 298 *et seq*

(i) This jurisdiction exists apart from the powers conferred by the Rules of the Supreme Court. It is not confined to cases where the abuse is manifest from the pleadings, but may be exercised where facts are proved by affidavit which show that the action is brought *malâ fide* and in an attempt to use the process of the court for wrong ends. This jurisdiction is only exercised in plain cases and with the greatest care. For cases where it has been exercised, see *Castro v Murray* (1875), L R 10 Exch 213.

SECT. 5.—*Amendment of Pleadings (k).*

881 No pleading not being a petition or summons may, except by way of amendment raise any new ground of claim or contain any allegation of fact inconsistent with the previous pleadings of the party pleading the same (*l*)

882 The plaintiff may, without any leave, amend his statement of claim, whether indorsed on the writ (*m*) or not, once at any time before the time limited for reply and before replying, or, where no defence is delivered, at any time before the expiration of four weeks from the appearance of the defendant who shall have last appeared, or, where defence is delivered, but no order for reply is made, within ten days from delivery of the defence, or the last of the defences where there are more than one (*n*)

Whenever a statement of claim is delivered the plaintiff may therein alter, modify, or extend his claim without any amendment of the indorsement on the writ (*o*), but, if the action is one for libel, and the plaintiff wishes to rely in his statement of claim on publications not particularised in the indorsement on the writ, he should apply for leave to amend the writ (*p*)

SECT. 6.

Amendment
of
Pleadings.

New ground
of claim
raised by
amendment
Amendment
without leave
of statement
of claim

Dawkins v Saxe Weimar (Prince Edward) (1876), 1 Q B D 499, *Willis v Beauchamp (Earl)* (1886) 11 P D 59, C A, *Stephenson v Garnett*, [1898] 1 Q B 677, C A, *Macdougall v Knight* (1890), 25 Q B D 1, C A, *Reuchel v Magath* (1889) 14 App Cas 665, *Re Chaffers* (1897), 13 T L R 363, C A, *Metropolitan Bank v Pooley* (1885), 10 App Cas 210, *Haggard v Pélucier Frères*, [1892] A C 61, P C, *Chaffers v Goldsmid*, [1894] 1 Q B 186, *Huntly (Marchioness) v Gaskell*, [1905] 2 Ch 656, C A, *Salaman v Secretary of State for India*, [1906] 1 K B 613, C A, *Re Norton's Settlement, Norton v Norton*, [1908] 1 Ch 471, *Remington v Scoles*, [1897] 2 Ch 1, C A, *Critchell v London and South Western Railway*, [1907] 1 K B 860, C A

(*k*) See also title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(*l*) R S C, Ord 19, r 16

(*m*) A statement of claim specially indorsed on the writ may be amended under this rule even after the plaintiff has taken out a summons for judgment under *ibid*, Ord 14, and whilst such summons is pending (*Roberts v Plant*, [1895] 1 Q B 597, C A)

(*n*) R S C, Ord 28, r 2

(*o*) *Ibid*, Ord 20, r 4, *Lewis and Lewis v Dunsford* (1907), 24 T L R 64. Where a plaintiff claimed on his writ damages for fraud against a company and its directors, and the company went into liquidation after the issue of the writ and before delivery of statement of claim, and the plaintiff claimed on his writ rescission of a contract entered into with the company and did not claim relief in that form in the statement of claim, the court, holding that the circumstances showed an intention in the plaintiff to claim rescission in the winding up of the company refused to allow him to amend his statement of claim by including a claim for rescission of the contract (*Cargill v Bower* (1878), 10 Ch D 502, 508). If an action in which a statement of claim has been delivered is remitted to the county court, the plaintiff may rely on any cause of action therein alleged even if it is not named on the writ (*Johnson v Palmer* (1879) 4 C P D 258)

(*p*) R S C, Ord 3, r 9. When the defendant makes default in appearance and the statement of claim is filed under *ibid*, Ord 13, r 12, or Ord 19, r 10 (see p 434, *ante*), the plaintiff cannot get judgment in default except in accordance with the indorsement on the writ, and if he desires to amend his statement of claim he should get leave to amend the writ and amend both so that they are in harmony (*Law v Philby* (No 2) (1887), 56 L T 522, *Gee v Bell* (1887), 35 Ch D 160, *Kington v Kirk* (1887), 37 Ch D 141, *Jamaica Railway v Colonial Bank*, [1906] 1 Ch.

SECT 5.

Amendment
of
PleadingsAmendment
without leave
of counter-
claim or
set off.Disallowance
of amendment
and costsPleading to
amendments.General rules
as to leave
to amend

A defendant who has set up any counterclaim or set-off may without any leave, amend such counterclaim or set-off (q) at any time before the expiration of the time allowed him for answering the reply (r) and before such answer, or in case there is no reply then at any time before the expiration of twenty-eight days from defence (s)

883 When any party has amended his pleading under the preceding rules, the opposite party may, within eight days after the delivery to him of the amended pleading, apply to the court or judge to disallow the amendment, or any part thereof, and the court or judge may, if satisfied that the justice of the case requires it, disallow the amendment, or allow it subject to such terms as to costs or otherwise as may be just (t). The costs of and occasioned by any amendment made as aforesaid are to be borne by the party making the same, unless the court or a judge otherwise orders (a).

884 Where any party has amended his pleading under the preceding rules (b), the opposite party must plead to the amended pleading, or amend his pleading within the time he then has to plead or within eight days from the delivery of the amendment whichever shall last expire, and, in case the opposite party has pleaded before the delivery of the amendment, and does not plead again or amend within the time above mentioned, he is deemed to rely on his original pleading in answer to such amendment (c).

885 The court or a judge may, at any stage of the proceedings, allow either party to alter or amend his indorsement or pleadings (d) in such manner and on such terms as may be just (e), and all such

677, 688, 690, C A, *Southall Development Syndicate, Ltd v Dunsdon* (1907), 96 L T 109

(q) No part of the defence other than a plea of set off can be amended without the leave of the court or a judge, and as to such leave, see the text, *infra*

(r) The time is the time limited by the order giving leave to answer the reply, or if no time is so limited, then four days from delivery of reply

(s) R S C, Ord 28, r 3

(t) *Ibid*, r 4. These rules do not permit a plaintiff to amend by adding a cause of action that has arisen since the issue of the writ (*Tottenham Local Board of Health v Lea Conservancy Board* (1886), 2 T L R 410 C A), or a fresh cause of action which since the issue of the writ has become barred by the Statute of Limitations (*Weldon v Neal* (1887), 19 Q B D 394, C A). A plaintiff who amends by setting up a new cause of action may be ordered to pay all the costs down to the date of amendment (*Cave v Crew* (1893), 62 L J (CH) 530). Where a plaintiff by amendment abandons one cause of action and substitutes another, the defendant should proceed under R S C, Ord 28, r 4 (*Bourne v Coutts* (1884), 53 L J (CH) 699).

(a) R S C, Ord 28, r 13

(b) See the text *supra*

(c) R S C, Ord 28, r 5

(d) This includes particulars delivered separately from a pleading (*Clunipede & Co v Commercial Union Association* (1883) 32 W R 262, *Woolley v Broad* [1892] 2 Q B 317, C A). If leave to amend the statement of claim is obtained, there is no need to amend the writ (*Large v Large* [1877] W N 198).

(e) Any amendment is allowed, subject to payment of costs that enables the court the more effectually to determine the matter in controversy between the parties unless it can be shown that the party applying

amendments are to be made as may be necessary for the purpose of determining the real questions in controversy between the parties (f)

SECT. 5.
Amendment
of
Pleadings.

If the amendment for which leave is asked seeks to repair an omission due to negligence or carelessness, leave to amend is granted if the amendment can be made without injustice to the other side (g). There is no injustice if the other side can be compensated by an order as to costs (h), but if, owing to the way in which the pleading has been framed, the other party has been put into such a position that an injury would be done to him by an amendment, the court will not give the necessary leave (i).

As a general rule, a party is not allowed to amend by pleading fraud where fraud was not charged in the first instance, unless the application is made at an early stage in the proceedings and the circumstances are such as to justify it (k).

In all cases not provided for by the preceding rules (l), application (m) for leave to amend may be made by either party to the court or a judge, or to the judge at the trial of the action, and such amendment may be allowed upon such terms as to costs or otherwise as may be just (n). If an adjournment is necessary to enable the other party to meet the case against him as amended, such adjournment is granted, but, as a general rule, no amendment is allowed at the trial which will enable a party to set up an entirely new case or to change completely the nature of his case (o).

886 If a party who has obtained an order for leave to amend does not amend accordingly within the time limited for that purpose by the order, or if no time is thereby limited, then within fourteen days from the date of the order, such order to amend, on the expiration of such limited time as aforesaid, or of such fourteen days, as the case may be, becomes *ipso facto* void, unless the time is extended by the court or a judge (p).

When order
for leave
to amend
becomes void.

for leave to amend is acting *malâ fide*, or that his opponent will be injured in a manner that cannot be compensated in costs (*Tildesley v Harper* (1878), 10 Ch D 393, C A, *Steward v North Metropolitan Tramways Co* (1886), 16 Q B D 556, C A, *Re Truport, Trufford, Blane* (1885), 53 L T 498, *Cropper v Smith* (1884), 26 Ch D 700, C A, 10 App Cas 259, H L, *Shoe Machinery Co v Cutlan*, [1896] 1 Ch 108, C A, *Roe v Davies* (1876), 2 Ch D 729). If an amendment is made, the opposite party is allowed to amend in order to raise any defence that would be available to the new matter introduced by the amendment (*Morris v Carnarvon County Council*, [1910] 1 K B 159).

(f) R S C, Ord 28, r 1.

(g) *Clrapede & Co v Commercial Union Association* (1883), 32 W R 262, *per* BRETT, M R, at p 263.

(h) See cases cited in note (t), p 438, *ante* and note (e), p 438, *ante*.

(i) *The Alert* (1894), 72 L T 124, *Raleigh v Goshen*, [1898] 1 Ch 73.

(k) *Lever & Co v Goodwin Brothers*, [1887] W N 107, C A, *Hendriks v Montagu* (1881), 50 L J (CH) 257, C A, *Symonds v City Bank* (1886), 31 W R 364, *Beniley & Co v Black* (1893), 9 T L R 580, C A.

(l) See p 437, *ante*.

(m) The application is made under the summons for directions, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE.

(n) R S C, Ord 28, r 6, and see *ibid*, rr 11, 12.

(o) *King v Cooke* (1875), 1 Ch D 57, *Newby v Sharpe* (1878), 8 Ch D 39, C A; *Halse v Brotherhood* (1880), 15 Ch D 514, *Ellis v Manchester Carriage Co* (1876), 2 C P D. 13; *Budding v Murdoch* (1875), 1 Ch. D. 42.

(p) R S C., Ord. 28, r. 7.

SECT 5
Amendment
of
Pleadings

Written or
printed
amendments

887. A pleading may be amended by written alterations in the copy which has been delivered, and by additions on paper to be interleaved therewith if necessary, unless the amendments require the insertion of more than 144 words in any one place, or are so numerous or of such a nature that the making them in writing would render the document difficult or inconvenient to read in either of which cases the amendment must be made by delivering a print of the document as amended (*q*)

General
jurisdiction
to amend
defects or
errors.

888 The court or a judge may at any time, and on such terms as to costs or otherwise as the court or a judge may think just, amend any defect or error in any proceedings, and all necessary amendments are to be made for the purpose of determining the real question or issue raised by or depending on the proceedings (*a*)

Part II.—Pleadings and Particulars.

SECT 1—Statement of Claim

Definition

889 A statement of claim is the pleading in which the plaintiff sets out the facts on which he relies as showing that he is entitled to the intervention of the court in his favour or against the defendant. It must set out the material facts (*b*) on which he bases his claim to relief, and must state and show ground for the particular kind of relief claimed (*c*). If the claim is for a liquidated demand or otherwise such as entitles the plaintiff to apply for summary judgment (*d*), it may be indorsed on the writ. In all other cases it must be delivered in a separate document and in accordance with the provisions set out below (*e*)

Not required
in case of
specially
indorsed writ

890 Where a writ is specially indorsed (*f*), no further statement of claim (*g*) need be delivered unless the court or a judge otherwise order (*h*), or unless the plaintiff desires to amend his

(*q*) R S C, Ord 28, r 8. The new matter inserted on amendment made by leave is usually written or printed in a different colour from the original pleading, and the practice is to print it in red, see note (*b*), p 421, *ante*.

(*a*) R S C, Ord 28, r 12. This rule gives power to amend any defect or error in the pleadings or proceedings if such amendment will enable the court to do substantial justice (*Armitage v Parsons*, [1908] 2 K B 410, C A). Any amendment of a pleading made at the trial under this rule should be formulated in writing and formally made by the judge (*Hyams v Stuart King*, [1908] 2 K B 696, C A).

(*b*) As to what are material facts see pp 422, 428, *ante*, and pp 442 *et seq.*, *post*, and notes thereto.

(*c*) See pp 444, 445, *post*, and notes thereto.

(*d*) See titles JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 190 *et seq.*, PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE, R S C, Ord 3, r 6.

(*e*) See the text, *infra*.

(*f*) Under R S C, Ord 3, r 6, see title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 190 *et seq.*

(*g*) The special indorsement is for all purposes of pleading a statement of claim which is delivered when the writ is served (*Anlaby v. Praetorius* (1888), 20 Q. B D 764, C A).

(*h*) As a rule, when a writ is specially indorsed, the plaintiff takes out a summons, under R S C, Ord. 14 (see title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS,

claim (z) as indorsed on the writ, but the indorsement on the writ is deemed to be the statement of claim (y)

891 Where a writ is indorsed with a claim for an account (h) or with a claim that involves the taking of an account, if the defendant fails to appear, or does not after appearance, by affidavit or otherwise, satisfy the court or a judge that there is some preliminary question to be tried, an order for proper accounts, with all necessary inquiries and directions now usual in the Chancery Division (l) in similar cases, is forthwith made, and no statement of claim is necessary (m)

892 Where a plaintiff has indorsed his writ for trial without pleadings (n), and the defendant has appeared (o), the action may be tried without pleadings, but a defendant who has appeared to such a writ may within ten days after appearance apply by summons for an order for delivery of a statement of claim, and on the hearing of such summons the court or a judge may order the plaintiff to deliver a statement of claim, or to deliver particulars (p) of his claim, or that the action shall be tried without pleadings (q)

893 If in an action the defendant does not, on service of the writ, appear within the time limited by the Rules of the Supreme Court for appearance (r), the plaintiff, unless the writ is indorsed with a special indorsement (s), or with a claim involving the taking of an account (t), or is such that interlocutory judgment may be

SECT. 1. Statement of Claim.

Not required
in case of
writ indorsed
with claim
for account

Application
for statement
of claim when
writ indorsed
for trial with-
out pleadings

Filing state-
ment of claim
on non-
appearance of
defendant

Vol XVIII, p 190), for leave to sign summary judgment. If leave to defend the action is given, the master on the hearing of such summons may, under R S C, Ord 30, r 1 (c), treat it as a summons for directions (see titles JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, p 191, note (p), PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE) and, if a better or more detailed statement of claim is necessary, order the plaintiff, notwithstanding that his writ is specially indorsed, to deliver an amended statement of claim. Sometimes the summons for judgment is dismissed, particularly when the plaintiff is attempting to make improper use of the procedure (R S C, Ord 14, r 9(b)), without any order for directions being made. Either party may in such a case, thereupon take out a summons for directions, under R S C, Ord 30, r 1 (d), in the usual way, on the hearing of which the court or a judge may order a further statement of claim, if it is considered necessary. If the writ is specially indorsed and no such summons is taken out, the defendant must deliver his defence within ten days of the time limited for appearance (R S C, Ord 21 r 6). But if a summons for judgment is taken out he should wait till the summons is heard and then ask for directions (*Hobson v Monks*, [1884] W N 8).

(z) As to amendment by a party of his own pleading, see p 438, *ante*

(y) R S C, Ord 20, r 1 (a)

(h) See *ibid*, Ord 3, r 8, and see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(l) See R S C, Ord 15, *ibid*, Ord 33, r 2

(m) *Ibid*, Ord 15, r 1, the application is by summons, supported if necessary by affidavit (*ibid*, r 2)

(n) *Ibid*, Ord 18A see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(o) If the defendant has not appeared, the plaintiff must file a statement of claim and affidavit of service (R S C, Ord 13, r 12), see p 442, *post*

(p) As to particulars, see pp 425, 428, *ante*, and pp 453, 458, *post*

(q) R S C, Ord 18A, r 3. The summons may, under *ibid*, Ord 30, r 1 (c), be treated as a summons for directions

(r) See title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(s) Under R S C, Ord 3, r 6, see title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 190 *et seq*

(t) *I.e.*, which may be dealt with under R S C, Ord 15, see the text, *supra*

§ 807 1
Statement
of Claim

Order for
pleadings on
summons for
directions.

Parties.

Contents as
to plaintiff's
cause of
action

Statement of
material
facts

entered (u), should file a statement of claim together with an affidavit of service of the writ (a), and the action may then proceed as if the defendant had appeared (b)

894 If interlocutory judgment is signed in an action where no defendant has appeared and the writ is indorsed with a claim in damages or a claim for detention of goods, with or without damages (c), or a claim for recovery of land with mesne profits or damages (d), the court or a judge may order that a statement of claim be filed before such damages or mesne profits are assessed (e)

895 In cases where, after entry of appearance by the defendant within the time limited by the Rules of the Supreme Court, the plaintiff must (f) take out a summons for directions (g), the court or a judge, on the hearing of such summons, makes such order as may be just as to the pleadings or particulars that shall be delivered (h)

896 The persons named on the writ as plaintiffs and defendants respectively are the only persons who may be named as plaintiffs or defendants, as the case may be, in the statement of claim. If it is sought to name as a plaintiff or as a defendant in the statement of claim a person not so named on the writ, leave to amend the writ must be obtained, and the writ must be amended by adding such person as a party. The capacity in which a party sues, or is sued, must be stated on the statement of claim as on the writ, and should be stated in the claim itself (i)

897. A statement of claim must contain in a summary form a statement of the material facts (h) on which the plaintiff relies as

(u) See title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 186 *et seq*

(a) See title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(b) R S C, Ord 13, r 12. The plaintiff must follow this procedure even though the writ is indorsed for trial without pleadings (*Greene v St John's Mansions, Ltd*, [1900] W N 9)

(c) See title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 186 *et seq*

(d) See *ibid*, p 187

(e) See *ibid*, p 185

(f) As to the steps which a plaintiff may take before the summons for directions, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(g) See title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(h) See R S C, Ord 15, and Ord 30, r 1, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE. No summons for directions need be taken out where the writ is specially indorsed under R S C, Ord 3, r 6 (see titles JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, p 190, PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE), or is indorsed for trial without pleadings (see p 441, *ante*), or where an order for an account is made under R S C, Ord 15 (see p 441, *ante*). When the summons for directions is heard, the order made as to pleadings on such summons almost invariably prescribes that both statement of claim and defence shall be delivered at the respective times named in the order.

(i) See as to parties, title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(l) As to what are material facts, and as to the manner in which they are to be pleaded, see p 423, *ante*. It is usual to state when material the business or profession of the plaintiff and the nature of any office held by him and to set out such facts as show how the cause of action arose, if they tend to elucidate the matter, as matter of inducement leading up to the facts which show the cause of action itself. The pleader has to use his

showing that he has a cause of action (*l*) against the defendant and that he is entitled to relief at the hands of the court.

898 Where there are several plaintiffs the statement of claim must show either (1) that they have a joint cause of action (*m*); or (2) that their several causes of action arise out of the same transaction, or series of transactions, and are such that if the plaintiffs had each brought separate actions some common question of law or of fact would have arisen in all those actions (*n*). Subject as aforesaid, plaintiffs having different causes of action against the same defendant may join in one action whether they allege that as regards any one or more of the causes of action they sue jointly, severally, or in the alternative (*o*).

899 Where there are several defendants the statement of claim must show that each of the causes of action alleged is a joint cause of action, that is, such that all the defendants are jointly liable thereon, or that any cause of action which is not joint is alleged only in the alternative (*p*), but a plaintiff may at his option join as parties to the same action all or any of the persons severally, or jointly and severally, liable on any one contract (*q*), including parties to bills of exchange and promissory notes (*r*)

SECT. I.
Statement
of Claim.

Where there
are several
plaintiffs

Where there
are several
defendants.

own discretion as to how far he alleges matter of inducement. In some cases such matter may be very material to the cause of action, e.g., in actions of defamation, where the averment that the plaintiff carries on a particular trade or profession may give him an additional cause of action, or his only cause of action (see *Gallway v Marshall* (1853), 9 Easch 204, 300, *Ayre v Church* (1834), 2 Ad & El 2, *James v Brook* (1846), 9 Q B 7, *Hatchard v Mège* (1887) 18 Q B D 771, *Chattell v "Daily Mail" Publishing Co* (1901), 18 T L R 167, C A). As to the material allegations in a statement of claim in an action for defamation, see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, pp 608, 645, 652, 656.

(*l*) A plaintiff is said to have a cause of action when he can show that the defendant has done some act which is an invasion of a right in the plaintiff conferred or sanctioned by substantive law, or has failed to do some act, or to discharge some duty or obligation, to the performance or fulfilment of which the plaintiff is entitled under the substantive law. As to cause of action in a claim in respect of nuisance, see *Ayers v Hannon* (1912), 133 L T Jo 253.

(*m*) This was so even before the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), see *Booth v Briscoe* (1877), 2 Q B D 496, C A.

(*n*) This is the practice introduced since the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), by the amendment in 1896 of R S C, Ord 16, r 1.

(*o*) *Ibid*, Ord 18, r 6, and see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE.

(*p*) The authorities on the law of joinder are in an unsatisfactory condition. In *Gower v Couldridge*, [1898] 1 Q B 348 C A, the Court of Appeal decided that if the plaintiff alleges a joint tort X against A and B he cannot join in the same statement of claim a separate tort Y against B only. But this case has since been distinguished, and it is submitted that, since the decisions in *Bullock v London General Omnibus Co*, [1907] 1 K B 264 C A, and in *Compania Sansinena de Carnes Congeladas v Houlder Brothers & Co, Ltd*, [1910] 2 K B 354, C A, the law must be taken to be as laid down above. There are *dicta* in those cases which show a tendency to relax the restrictions placed by the decision of the House of Lords in *Sadler v Great Western Rail Co*, [1896] A C 450, on joinder of defendants, and to declare the law in the wide terms laid down in R S C, Ord 16, r 4. See, further, title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE.

(*q*) This is not so in tort. A plaintiff may not, in his statement of claim, allege separate torts against separate defendants (*Sadler v Great Western Rail Co*, *supra*, *Pope v Hawtrey* (1901), 85 L T 263, C A).

(*r*) R. S. C., Ord 16, r. 6.

SECT 1

Statement
of Claim

Claims by
or against
husband and
wife or
personal
representatives

Power of
court with
regard to
improper
joinder of
parties or
causes

Joinder of
causes in
action for
recovery of
land

Statement
of specific
relief
necessary,

900 Claims by or against a husband and wife may be joined with claims by or against either of them separately (*s*). Claims by or against an executor or administrator as such may be joined with claims by or against him personally, provided the last-mentioned claims are alleged to arise with reference to the estate in respect of which the plaintiff or defendant sues or is sued as executor or administrator (*t*)

901 The court or a judge may, on the application of any defendant (1) where several plaintiffs have been joined, and such joinder might embarrass or delay the trial of the action, order separate trials, or make such other order as may be expedient (*u*), (2) where separate causes of action have been joined which cannot all be conveniently tried together, exclude any of such causes of action and order consequential amendments to be made (*a*), (3) where any parties have been improperly joined, whether as plaintiffs or defendants, order the name of such parties to be struck out (*b*)

902 No cause of action may, unless by leave of the court or a judge (*c*), be joined with an action for the recovery of land (*d*), except claims in respect of mesne profits or arrears of rent, or double value in respect of premises claimed, or any part thereof, and damages for breach of any contract under which the same or any part thereof are held, or for any wrong or injury to the premises claimed. This provision, however, does not prevent any plaintiff in an action for foreclosure or redemption from asking for or obtaining an order against the defendant for delivery of the possession of the mortgaged property to the plaintiff on or after the order absolute for foreclosure or redemption, as the case may be, and such an action for foreclosure or redemption, and for such delivery of possession is not to be deemed an action for the recovery of land within the meaning of the above rule (*e*)

903 Every statement of claim must state specifically the relief (*f*) which the plaintiff claims, either simply or in the

(*s*) R S C, Ord 18, r 4.

(*t*) *Ibid*, r 5

(*u*) *Ibid*, Ord 16, r 1

(*a*) *Ibid*, Ord 18, r 9

(*b*) *Ibid*, Ord 16, r 11. As to striking out the name of a trade union as defendants on the ground that the action would clearly not lie against them on account of the Trade Disputes Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 47), see *Vacher & Sons, Ltd v London Society of Compositors and Others* (1912), 28 T L R 366

(*c*) Leave is usually obtained before writ

(*d*) An action for recovery of land is any action in which possession of land is claimed (*Gledhill v Hunter* (1880), 14 Ch D 492). An action merely to restrain trespass to, or entry on, premises is not such an action (*Spear & Glass Works, Ltd v Spear* (1902), 37 L J 578), and see, further, titles LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 558, 559, REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(*e*) R S C, Ord 18, r 2, and see, further, titles MORTGAGE, Vol XXI, pp 151, 283, PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(*f*) R S C, Ord 20, r 6. "Relief" must be distinguished from "cause of action". It may be that a plaintiff or plaintiffs is or are entitled to different

alternative, and it is not necessary to ask for general or other relief (g), which may always be given as the court or a judge may think just, to the same extent as if it had been asked for (h).

SECT 1
Statement of Claim.

904 It is not necessary that every defendant should be interested as to all the relief prayed for, or as to every cause of action included in any proceeding against him, but the court or a judge may make such order as may appear just to prevent any defendant from being embarrassed or put to expense by being required to attend any proceedings in which he may have no interest (i).

Statement of general relief unnecessary.
separate grounds of relief

Where a plaintiff seeks relief in respect of several distinct claims or causes of complaint (k) founded upon separate and distinct grounds, they must be stated, as far as may be, separately and distinctly (l).

(1) as regards defendants,
(2) as regards claims

905 Where the plaintiff, being bound to deliver a statement of claim, does not do so within the time limited for that purpose or where an order has been made by the court or a judge for the delivery of a statement of claim, and the plaintiff has not complied with such order within the time allowed for that purpose (m), the defendant may apply to the court or a judge to dismiss the action for want of prosecution, and on the hearing of such application the court or judge may, if no statement of claim has been delivered, order the action to be dismissed accordingly, or may make such other order and do so on such terms as the court or judge thinks just (n).

Default.

SECT 2.—Defence.

906 The defendant must plead to the allegations contained in the statement of claim in accordance with the rules hereinbefore

Defence
General

forms of relief as against different defendants in respect of the same cause of action, and in such a case the different defendants are properly joined (*Frankenburg v Great Horseless Carriage Co*, 1900] 1 Q B 504, C A), see, further, title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(g) For example, costs

(h) The same rule applies to any counterclaim made, or relief claimed, by the defendant in his defence (R S C, Ord 20, r 6), and see p 451, *post*, and title SET OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM.

(i) R S C, Ord 16, r 5

(k) These may be inconsistent, but in such a case should be alleged in the alternative (*Bugot v Faston* (1878), 7 Ch D 1, C A, *Philpotts v Philpotts* (1878), 4 Q B D 127, 134, C A)

(l) The facts belonging to the respective claims or causes of complaint should not be mixed up, but should be stated separately, so as to show on which facts each cause of action is based, and in respect of which facts each form of relief is claimed (*Davy v Garrett* (1878), 7 Ch D 473, 489, C A, *Watson v Hawkins* (1876), 24 W R 884). The same rule as is stated in the text, *supra*, applies where the defendant relies upon several distinct grounds of defence, set off, or counterclaim founded upon separate and distinct facts (R S C, Ord 20, r 7)

(m) If no time is named in the order the time is twenty-one days under R S C, Ord 20, r 1 (c)

(n) *Ibid*, Ord 27, r 1, and see title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, VOL XVIII, p 188.

SECT 2**Defence**

**Actions for
debt or
liquidated
demands**

set out, and if he denies any such allegation must do so specifically and not evasively (o)

In actions for debt or liquidated demand in money comprised in R S C, Ord 3, r 6, a mere denial of the debt is inadmissible (p)

In actions upon bills of exchange, promissory notes, or cheques, a defence in denial must deny some matter of fact, for example, the drawing, making, indorsing, accepting, presenting, or notice of dishonour of the bill or note (q)

In actions comprised in R S C, Ord 3, r 6, clauses (A) and (B), a defence in denial must deny such matters of fact, from which the liability of the defendant is alleged to arise, as are disputed, for example, in actions for goods bargained and sold, or sold and delivered, the defence must deny the order or contract, the delivery, or the amount claimed (r), in an action for money had and received, it must deny the receipt of the money, or the existence of those facts which are alleged to make such receipt by the defendant a receipt to the use of the plaintiff (s).

Damages.

907 No denial or defence is necessary as to damages (t) claimed or their amount, but they are deemed to be put in issue in all cases unless expressly admitted (u)

**Representa-
tive or other
capacity of
plaintiff**

908 If a defendant wishes to deny the right of a plaintiff to claim as executor, or as trustee, whether in bankruptcy or otherwise, or in any representative or other alleged capacity, or the alleged constitution of a partnership firm, he must deny the same specifically (a)

**Improper
denial or
admission**

909 Where of opinion that any allegations of fact denied or not admitted by the defence ought to have been admitted, the court or judge may make such order as shall be just with respect to any extra costs occasioned by their having been denied or not admitted (b)

**Matters
which must
be specially
pleaded**

910 The defendant must raise by his defence all matters which show the action not to be maintainable, or that the transaction on which the plaintiff relies is either void or voidable in point of law, and all such grounds of defence as, if not raised, would be likely to take the plaintiff by surprise, or would raise issues of fact not arising out of the statement of claim, as, for instance, fraud, Statute

(o) See pp 429 *et seq*, *ante*

(p) R S C, Ord 21, r 1

(q) *Ibid*, r 2

(r) See title SALE OF GOODS

(s) R. S C, Ord 21, r 3, and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 473 *et seq*

(t) Where special damage is alleged in the statement of claim the defence should deal with such damage, so that at the trial the plaintiff may not contend that he has been taken by surprise as to that part of defendant's case. As to damages generally, see title DAMAGES, Vol X, pp 301 *et seq*, and see p 430, *ante*

(u) R S C, Ord 21, r 4.

(a) *Ibid*, r 5

(b) *Ibid*, r 9.

of Limitations, release, payment, performance, facts showing illegality either by statute or common law (c), or Statute of Frauds (d), or any ground of objection to the jurisdiction of the court (e).

(c) If the words of a statute are pleaded and are such that they are consistent with each of two meanings, e.g., fraud or illegality, the pleader must state on which meaning he relies (*Bullivant v A G for Victoria*, [1901] A C 196, 204 P C)

(d) R S C, Ord 19, r 15, and see pp 429, 432, *ante*, and see title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, p 732. The rule does not give an exhaustive list of the matters that must be specially pleaded in the defence. In addition to those enumerated in the rule, or mentioned at pp 422, 423, *ante*, the following grounds of defence must be specially pleaded—

Accord and satisfaction. This is a good plea in all cases "where nothing but amends is to be recovered in damages" (*Peyton's Case* (1611), 9 Co Rep 77 b, 79 b). In order to sustain such a plea the defendant must show that the satisfaction could be reasonably accepted, and that the plaintiff knowingly agreed to accept it (*Cumber v Wane* (1721), 1 Stia 425, 1 Smith, L C, 11th ed, p 338, *Sibree v Thipp* (1846), 15 M & W 23, *Day v McLea* (1889), 22 Q B D 610 C A, *Hutchand Punamchand v Temple*, [1911] 2 K B 330 C A, doubting *Goddard v O'Brien* (1882), 9 Q B D 37). An agreement based on good consideration must be shown (*Ridol v Great Western Rail Co* (1860) 1 F & F 706, *Lea v Lancashire and Yorkshire Rail Co* (1871), 6 Ch App 527, *Roberts v Eastern Counties Rail Co* (1859), 1 F & F 460, *Foakes v Beer* (1884), 9 App Cas 605). Accord and satisfaction may be a good defence to an action on a bond (*Steeds v Steeds* (1889), 22 Q B D 537). As to accord and satisfaction generally, see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 441 *et seq*.

Acknowledgment. See *Statutes of Limitation, infra*.

Aggravation of damage. See p 425, *ante*.

Authority. Want of authority, if relied upon, should be specially pleaded (*Byrd v Nunn* (1877), 7 Ch D 284, C A), but see *Johnson v Kearley*, [1908] 2 K B 52, 514, and see title AGENCY, Vol I, pp 207, 233—236.

Concealed fraud. If this is relied upon as taking a case out of the Statutes of Limitation it should be specially pleaded, see titles EQUITY, Vol XIII, p 13, LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, pp 143, 187, MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, pp 681, 732.

Conditions precedent. See pp 426, 427, *ante*.

Conveyancing and Law of Property Act 1881 (44 & 45 Vict c 41), s 14. See title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, p 539, 540.

Contributory negligence. See *Walsden v London and South Western Rail Co* (1886), 12 App Cas 41, S S "Pleades" (Owners) and *Page (Master) v Page (Master) and S S "June" (Owners) and Lessee*, [1891] A C 259, P C, and see title NEGLIGENCE, Vol XXI, pp 415 *et seq*.

Equitable defences. The defendant may set up any ground which formerly would have entitled him to file a bill in Chancery to restrain plaintiff from proceeding with his action (*Bonhues v Jarvis* [1903] 1 K B 549, 552). As to particulars, see p 455, *post*.

Exoppel. See title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, pp 321 *et seq*.

Fair comment, in an action for defamation, must be specially pleaded, As to particulars to be given, see p 455, *post*, and see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, pp 669 *et seq*.

Fraud. This must always be specially pleaded with full particulars, see p 427, *ante*, and p 456, *post*.

Gaming Acts. These should be specially pleaded, but the court will refuse to assist a plaintiff who cannot maintain his action without showing that his claim is based on a gaming transaction (*Scott v Brown, Doering, McNab & Co, Slaughter and May v Brown, Doering, McNab & Co* [1892] 2 Q B 724, C A) and will strike out the statement of claim if admitted to be based on gaming and wagering transactions (*Kershaw v Scurr* (1904),

SECT 2
Defence.

Pleading the
general issue
by statute.

911. In every case in which a defendant pleads the general issue (f), intending to give the special matter in evidence by virtue

21 T L R 40, C A) See note on *Illegality, infra*, and see *Luskett v Wood* (1908), 24 T L R 617, *Pooley v O'Connor* (1912), 28 T L R 460, C A. *Illegality* This should be specially pleaded by the express terms of R S C, Ord 19, r 15, and see *Clarke v Callow* (1877), 46 L J (Q B) 53, C A, *Bullivant v A-G for Victoria*, [1901] A C 196, 204, P C, but, if it comes to the knowledge of the court that an agreement relied on is tainted with illegality, the court will take notice of the illegality even though not pleaded (*Scott v Brown, Doering, McNab & Co., Slaughter and May v Brown, Doering, McNab & Co.*, [1892] 2 Q B 724, C A, *Gedge v Royal Exchange Assurance Corporation*, [1900] 2 Q B 214, *Royal Exchange Assurance Corporation v Sjöforskrings Vega*, [1902] 2 K B 384, C A, *Connolly v Consumers' Cordage Co* (1903), 89 L T 347, P C, *Kershaw v Sierrer, supra*, *Thomas v Dey* (1908), 24 T L R 272, *Re Robinson's Settlement, Gant v Hobbs*, [1912] 1 Ch 717, C A).

Inevitable accident need not be specially pleaded (*Rumbold v London County Council* (1909), 25 T L R 541, C A), and see title NEGLIGENCE, Vol XXI, p 468.

Judgment against one of two or more persons jointly liable, if relied upon as a merger, should be pleaded (*McLeod v Power*, [1898] 2 Ch 295, *Edman v Cohen* (1889), 43 Ch D 187, C A, *Houston v Sligo (Marquis)* (1885), 29 Ch D 448, C A).

Justification, in an action for defamation, must be specially pleaded (*Belt v Laves* (1882), 51 L J (Q B) 359, see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 669).

Statute of Frauds Amendment Act 1828 (9 Geo 4, c 14), should be specially pleaded, see *Worthington & Co v Bolton* (1902) 18 T L R 438, C A, and see titles CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 491, GUARANTEE, Vol XV, pp 451 *et seq*.

Money lenders Act, 1900 (63 & 64 Vict c 51). The court will take cognisance of this as invalidating the plaintiff's claim even though it is not specially pleaded unless it can be shown that the plaintiff is taken by surprise (*Re Robinson's Settlement, Gant v Hobbs, supra*).

Non est factum should be specially pleaded (*Foster v Mackinnon* (1869), L R 4 C P 704, *Howatson v Webb*, [1908] 1 Ch 1, C A), and see note (h), p 432, ante. title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, p 739.

Non joinder of parties. This should not be pleaded, see note (k), p 449, post.

Part performance, if relied on to take a case out of the Statute of Frauds, should be specially pleaded (*Maddison v Alderson* (1883), 8 App Cas 467), and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 379.

Plaintiff's title to sue, if intended to be put in issue, must be denied in the defence.

Representative capacity of plaintiff, if intended to be contested, should be denied in the defence (R S C, Ord 21, r 5).

Res judicata must be specially pleaded, see *supra*, and see title ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, p 331.

Sale of Goods Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 71). See *Statute of Frauds, infra*. *Statute of Frauds* (29 Car 2, c 3), or *Sale of Goods Act*, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 71), must be specially pleaded if any reliance is placed on non-compliance with its provisions (*Clarke v Callow* (1876), 46 L J (Q B) 53, C A, *James v Smith*, [1891] 1 Ch 384, and see note (i), p 432, ante).

Statutes of Limitation. These should be specially pleaded (*Re Burg, Gillard v Lawrenson* (1887), 57 L T 364), as should also facts to take the case out of the operation of the statutes, *eq*, acknowledgment (*Steel v Landsey* (1877), 2 Ex D 314, *Gibbs v Guild* (1882), 9 Q B D 59, C A, *Beitemann v Beitemann*, [1895] 2 Ch 474, C A, *Bull Coal Mining Co v Osborne*, [1899] A C 351, P C), see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, pp 182 *et seq*.

(e) *Crosfield & Sons, Ltd v Manchester Ship Canal Co* (1904), 90 L T 557, 567, C A and see title COURTS, Vol IX, pp 12, 14.

(f) That is to say, a plea of 'Not guilty,' which was the ordinary plea by which, before the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), a defendant denied that he had committed an alleged tortious act or breach of contract.

of an Act of Parliament, he must insert in the margin of his pleading the words "by statute" (*g*), together with the year of the reign in which the Act of Parliament on which he relies was passed, and also the chapter and section of such Act, and must specify whether such Act is public or not, otherwise such defence is taken not to have been pleaded by virtue of any Act of Parliament (*h*). If a defendant pleads "Not guilty by statute" as aforesaid, he may not plead any other defence to the same cause of action without the leave of the court or a judge (*i*).

SECT. 2.
Defence.

912 No plea or defence in abatement may be pleaded (*h*)

Plea in
abatement.
Plea of
possession

913 No defendant in an action for the recovery of land who is in possession by himself or his tenant need plead his title, unless his defence depends on an equitable estate or right, or he claims relief upon any equitable ground against any right or title asserted by the plaintiff, but, except in the cases above mentioned, it is sufficient to state by way of defence that he is so in possession, and it is taken to be implied in such statement that he denies, or does not admit, the allegations of fact contained in the plaintiff's statement of claim. He may nevertheless rely upon any ground of defence which he can prove, except as hereinbefore mentioned (*l*).

914 Where a defendant has appeared to a specially indorsed writ of summons (*m*), he must deliver his defence within ten days

Time for
delivery

(*g*) The plea of "Not guilty by statute" can be pleaded only by certain public bodies and persons on whom the right so to plead has been conferred by statute. It enables a defendant to prove any fact or raise any construction that would support a defence. This privilege has in most cases been abolished by the Public Authorities Protection Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 61), but as that Act has been held to apply only to public authorities (*A G v Margate Pier and Harbour (Company of Proprietors)*, [1900] 1 Ch 749, see title PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS, *Lyles v Southend-on-Sea Corporation*, [1905] 2 K B 1, 13, C A) it would seem that there are still cases where the privilege exists. It is wiser to plead specially in these cases:

(*h*) R S C, Ord 21, r 19

(*i*) *Ibid*, Ord 19, r 12

(*l*) *Ibid*, Ord 21, r 20. A plea in abatement was a plea by which, before the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), the defendant, while not denying the cause of action alleged by the plaintiff, pleaded that on some ground not going to the cause of action the plaintiff ought not to be allowed to proceed. For example, one of several joint debtors might have pleaded that his co debtors had not been joined, and this would have been a good ground for the abatement of the action. All such points are now dealt with by means of applications in chambers. If judgment has been signed against one of several joint defendants, that can be pleaded as a defence by the rest (*Kendall v Hamilton* (1879), 4 App Cas 504, *Brinsmead v Harrison* (1872), L R 7 C P 547, Ex Ch), except in cases where judgment has been obtained under R S C, Ord 14, r 5, or Ord 13, r 4, or Ord 27, r 3, and see titles ESTOPPEL, Vol XIII, p 335, LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 616, note (*a*).

(*l*) R S C, Ord 21, r 21. Under this plea the defendant can prove any facts which establish a defence, *e.g.*, insufficient notice to quit, possessory title, or that the plaintiff has not the legal estate (*Danford v McNulty* (1883), 8 App Cas 456, *Allen v Woods* (1893), 68 L T 143, C A). If he relies on an equitable interest in himself, he must specially plead it and give particulars (*Sutchffe v James* (1879), 40 L T 875).

(*m*) *I.e.*, under R S C, Ord 3, r 6, see titles JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 190 *et seq*. PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

SECT. 2.

Defence.

(1) Defence to claim on specially indorsed writ

from the time limited for appearance, unless such time is extended by the court or a judge, or unless in the meantime the plaintiff serves a summons for judgment (*n*) or a summons for directions (*o*)

Where the writ has been specially indorsed and leave has been given to a defendant to defend (*p*), he must deliver his defence, if any, within such time as is limited by the order giving him leave to defend, or, if no time is thereby limited, within eight days after the order (*q*)

(2) defence pursuant to order or in default of appearance

915 When a statement of claim is delivered pursuant to an order, or in default of appearance (*r*), the defendant, unless otherwise ordered, must deliver his defence within such time if, any, as is specified in such order, or, if no time is so specified, within ten days from the delivery, or filing in default, of the statement of claim (*i*), unless in either case the time is extended by the court or a judge (*s*)

Ground of defence arising after action brought

916 Any ground of defence (*t*) which has arisen after action brought (*u*), but before the defendant has delivered his defence, and before the time limited for his doing so has expired, may be raised by the defendant in his defence, either alone or together with other grounds of defence (*a*)

Further defence by leave.

917 Where any ground of defence arises after the defendant has delivered a defence, or after the time limited for his doing so has expired, the defendant may within eight days after such ground of defence has arisen, or at any subsequent time by leave of the court or a judge, deliver a further defence (*b*)

Confession of further defence.

918 Whenever any defendant, in his defence, or in any further defence, as in the last paragraph mentioned, alleges any ground of

(*n*) *I e*, under R S C, Ord 14, see titles JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 190 *et seq*, PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(*o*) R S C, Ord 21, r 6

(*p*) *I e*, under *ibid*, Ord 14, see title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 190 *et seq*

(*q*) R S C, Ord 21, r 7

(*r*) *I e*, under *ibid*, Ord 13, r 12, see p 442, *ante*

(*s*) R S C, Ord 21, r 8

(*t*) This applies only to defences proper, not to matters of counterclaim (*Beddall v Maudland* (1881), 17 Ch D 174, 181), and see note (*d*), p 447, *ante*.

(*u*) Bankruptcy either of plaintiff or of defendant after action brought is such a ground of defence (*Foster v Gamgee* (1876), 1 Q B D 666, *Herbert v Sayer* (1844), 5 Q B 965, *Barker v Johnson* (1889), 60 L T 64), but a receiving order against the plaintiff without adjudication is not such a ground of defence (*Rhodes v Dawson* (1886), 16 Q B D 548, C A. *Re Berry, Duffield v Williams*, [1896] 1 Ch 939). If after action brought the plaintiff becomes bankrupt and the trustee declines to proceed with the action, it may be stayed by an order in chambers (*Warder v Saunders* (1882), 10 Q B D 114). Performance after action on a contract a breach of which is alleged in the statement of claim is not such a ground of defence (*Callander v Hawkins* (1877), 2 C P D 592)

(*a*) R S C, Ord 24, r 1

(*b*) *Ibid*, r 2. Such a plea, before the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict. c. 66), was called a plea *purs darrem continuance*, and was a waiver of all previous pleas, it is said to still have this effect (*Foster v Gamgee* *supra*)

defence which has arisen after the commencement of the action, the plaintiff may deliver a confession of such defence (c), and may thereupon sign judgment for his costs (d) up to the time of the pleading of such defence, unless the court or a judge, either before or after the delivery of such confession, otherwise orders (e)

SECT. 2.
Defence.

919 A defendant in an action may set off or set up by way of counterclaim against the claim alleged by the plaintiff any right or claim, whether such set-off or counterclaim (f) sounds in damages or not, and such set-off or counterclaim has the same effect as a cross-action, so as to enable the court to pronounce a final judgment in the same action, both on the original and on the cross-claim, but the court or a judge may, on the application of the plaintiff before trial, refuse permission to the defendant to avail himself of such set-off or counterclaim if in the opinion of the court or a judge it cannot be conveniently disposed of in the pending action, or ought not to be allowed (g).

Set off and counter-claim

920 If the plaintiff's claim (h) is only for a debt or liquidated demand and the defendant does not, within the time allowed for that purpose, deliver a defence, the plaintiff may, at the expiration of such time, enter final judgment for the amount claimed, with costs (i). If one of several defendants in such an action makes such

Default in delivery of defence

(1) In action of debt or liquidated demand,

(c) Which confession may be in Form No 5 of R S C, Appendix B, with such variations as circumstances may require. The form given is "The plaintiff confesses the defence stated in the paragraph of the defendant's defence" [or "further defence"]. On the delivery of such a confession the defendant cannot insist on the other defences being tried out (*Wood v Goodwin*, [1884] W N 17). When the plaintiff confesses the new defence, the court can look at the old defence for the purpose of seeing whether the plaintiff should be deprived of costs (*Harrison v Abergavenny Marquis*) (1887), 57 L T 360).

(d) The right to sign judgment for costs is not absolute (*Houghton v Tottenham and Forest Gate Rail Co*, [1892] W N 88; *Bridgetown Waterworks Co v Barbados Water Supply Co* (1888), 38 Ch D 378; *Harrison v Abergavenny Marquis*) (1887), 57 L T 360; *Hopkins v Vickers* (1887), 1 T L R 610, C A). There is no appeal from a refusal of a judge to allow a plaintiff to sign judgment for his costs under this rule (*Ierkins v Beresford* (1882), 47 L T 515), and see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE.

Where judgment is signed under this rule, an end is put to the litigation as it stands at the time of the confession, and the plaintiff cannot afterwards bring a fresh action on a claim which he might have set up in the action in which he has confessed the defence (*Newington v Levy* (1870), L R 5 C P 607; *Bennett v Gamgee* (1876), 2 Ex D 11, 14). If the plaintiff becomes bankrupt and, on the defendant pleading the bankruptcy proceedings in bar, confesses the defence of bankruptcy, such a confession does not, however, bar a fresh action by the trustee (*Bennett v Gamgee*, *supra*). If a plaintiff under this rule confesses the defence and signs judgment for his costs against one of two co-defendants, he cannot afterwards proceed against the other (*Pascall v Horsley* (1828), 3 C & P 372).

(e) R S C, Ord 24, r 3.

(f) For the law as to set-off and counterclaim, see title SET-OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM, and see title GUARANTEE, Vol XV, p 508.

(g) R S C, Ord 19, r 3.

(h) This does not include a counterclaim, see *Jones v Macaulay*, [1891] 1 Q B 221, C A; *Roberts v Booth*, [1893] 1 Ch 52.

(i) R S C, Ord 27, r 2; and, as to default generally, see title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 184 *et seq*.

SECT 2
Defence

default, the plaintiff may enter judgment against him and issue execution without prejudice to his right to proceed with his action against the other defendants (*k*)

(2) in claims
for pecuniary
damages or
for detention
of goods,

921 If the plaintiff's claim is for pecuniary damages only, or for detention of goods with or without a claim for pecuniary damages, and the defendant, or all the defendants if more than one, make default as aforesaid in delivering defence, the plaintiff may enter an interlocutory judgment against the defendant or defendants, as the case may be, and a writ of inquiry will issue to assess the value of the goods and the damages, or the damages only (*l*), as the case may be, unless the court or a judge orders the value and amount of the damages, or either of them, to be ascertained in any other way which the court may direct (*m*) But if there are several defendants in such an action, and one or more, but not all, of the defendants make default as aforesaid, the plaintiff may enter an interlocutory judgment against such defendant or defendants, and proceed with his action against the others, and the value and amount of damages against the defendant or defendants so making default will be assessed at the trial of the action or issues against the other defendant or defendants, unless the court or a judge otherwise orders (*n*)

(3) in claims
for debt or
liquidated
demand, and
for pecuniary
damages or
detention of
goods,

922 If the plaintiff's claim is for a debt or liquidated demand, and also for pecuniary damages, or for detention of goods with or without a claim for pecuniary damages, and any defendant makes default as aforesaid in delivering defence, the plaintiff may enter final judgment for the debt or liquidated demand, and also enter interlocutory judgment for the damages and, where there is a claim for detention of goods, for the value of the goods, and the case then proceeds as above mentioned (*o*)

(4) in actions
for recovery
of land with
claim for
mesne profits
etc.

923 In an action for recovery of land, if the defendant makes default as aforesaid in delivering defence, the plaintiff may enter a judgment that the person whose title is asserted in the writ of summons shall recover possession of the land, with his costs (*p*) If in such an action the plaintiff has also indorsed on his writ a claim for mesne profits, or arrears of rent, or double value in respect of the premises claimed, or any part of them, or damages for breach of contract, or wrong or injury to the premises claimed, and the defendant, or any of the defendants, if there are more than one, makes such default, the plaintiff may enter interlocutory judgment

(*k*) R S C, Ord 27, r 3 As to enforcing judgment by execution, see, generally, title EXECUTION, Vol XIV, pp 1 *et seq*

(*l*) If a sum is specified in the statement of claim as damages, and the jury award a larger sum, the plaintiff cannot enter judgment for such larger sum without obtaining leave to amend the statement of claim (*Chattel v "Daily Mail" Publishing Co* (1901), 18 T L R 165 C A)

(*m*) R S C, Ord 27, r 4

(*n*) *Ibid*, r 5 As to interlocutory judgments generally, see title JUDGMENTS AND ORDERS, Vol XVIII, pp 178 *et seq*

(*o*) R S C, Ord 27, r 6, and see the text, *supra*.

(*p*) R S C, Ord 27, r, 7.

against such defendant or defendants and proceed as above mentioned (g)

SECT. 2. Defence.

924 If the plaintiff's claim be for a debt or liquidated demand, for pecuniary damages only, or for the detention of goods, with or without a claim for pecuniary damages, or for any of such matters, or for the recovery of land, and the defendant delivers a defence which purports to offer an answer to part only of the plaintiff's alleged cause of action, the plaintiff may, by leave of the court or a judge, enter judgment, final or interlocutory, as the case may be, as above mentioned (r), for the part unanswered, provided that the unanswered part consists of a separate cause of action, or is severable from the rest, as in the case of part of a debt or liquidated demand, but where there is a counterclaim, execution on any such judgment as above mentioned in respect of the plaintiff's claim cannot issue without the leave of the court or a judge (s)

Defence in answer to part only of claim

925 In all other actions than those above mentioned, if the defendant makes default in delivering a defence (t), the plaintiff may set down the action on motion for judgment, and obtain such judgment as upon the statement of claim the court or a judge considers the plaintiff to be entitled to (u)

Default in other cases

SECT. 3 — Particulars

926 A further and better statement of the claim or defence, or further and better particulars of any matter stated in any pleading, notice, or written proceeding requiring particulars, may in all cases be ordered (a) upon such terms as to costs and otherwise as may be just (b)

When ordered

927 The function of particulars is to limit the generality of the allegations in the pleadings (c), and thus to define the issues which have to be tried and as to which discovery must be given (d)

Function of particulars

(g) R S C, Ord 27, r 8 and see p 452, *ante* and generally, as to actions for recovery of land, see titles LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 558 *et seq*, REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(r) See p 452, *ante*

(s) R S C, Ord 27, r 9

(t) This rule applies where the defendant has delivered a defence and lets leave to withdraw it (*Cooper-Dean v Radham*, [1908] W N 100)

(u) R S C, Ord 27, r 11

(a) The order is only made where a special application has been made to the court or a judge. Such application is made under the summons for directions, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(b) R S C, Ord 19, r 7. Particulars are a pleading within the meaning of *ibid*, Ord 25, r 4, which deals with striking out pleadings (*Davey v Bentinck*, [1893] 1 Q B 185, C A), and a party is bound by them as by a pleading (*United Telephone Co v Smith, Same v Mitchell* (1890), 61 L J 617, *Arnold and Butler v Bottomley*, [1908] 2 K B 151, 155, C A)

(c) *Saunders v Jones* (1877), 7 Ch D 435, C A, *per* THESIGER, J. J., at p 451, *Hewson v Cleve*, [1904] 2 I R 536, 558, C A, *Temperon v Russell* (1893), 9 T L R 319, C A

(d) *Yorkshire Provident Life Assurance Co v Gilbert and Rivington*, [1895] 2 Q B 148, C A, *Arnold and Butler v Bottomley*, [1908] 2 K B 151, C A

SECT 8. Each party is entitled to know the case that is intended to be made
Particulars. against him at the trial, and to have such particulars of his
 — opponent's case as will prevent him from being taken by
 surprise (e)

Degree of particularity required. **928** No precise rule can be laid down as to the degree of particularity required in any given case, but as much certainty and particularity is insisted on as is reasonable having regard to the circumstances and the nature of the acts alleged (f).

(e) *Young & Co v Scottish Union and National Insurance Co* (1907), 24 T L R 73, C A , *Spedding v Fitzpatrick* (1889), 38 Ch D 410, C A . *Newport (Mon) Slipway Dry Dock and Engineering Co v Paynter* (1886), 34 Ch D 88, C A , *Hennessy v Wright* (1888), 57 L J (Q B) 594, C A . *The Rory* (1882), 7 P D 117, C A , *Duke & Sons v Wisden & Co* (1897), 77 L T 67, 68, C A , *Philipps v Philipps* (1878), 4 Q B D 127, 139, C A

(f) "To insist upon less would be to relax old and intelligible principles. To insist on more would be the vainest pedantry" (*Ratcliffe v Evans*, [1892] 2 Q B 524, C A , per BOWEN, L J , at p 533) Whenever either party imputes fraud, negligence or misconduct to his opponent the facts must be stated with especial particularity. So when a defendant in an action for defamation justifies the charge, he must set out all the facts which he intends to prove as showing that the charge is true. See p 456, *post*

There are many decided cases which illustrate the general principles underlying the law as to particulars, and show how these principles have been applied in individual cases. These decisions may for convenience of reference be arranged under headings as follows —

Account—Where only an account is asked for, particulars will not be ordered, but where a specific sum is claimed particulars must be given showing how such sum is made up (*Blackie v Osmaston* (1884), 28 Ch D 119, 123, C A . *Augustinus v Nerinckx* (1880), 16 Ch D 13, 17, C A . *Carr v Anderson* (1901), 18 T L R 206, C A) If, however, it is unnecessary to take an account the court may order particulars to be given (*Kemp v Goldberg* (1887), 36 Ch D 505), and see p 427 *ante*

Admiralty—See title ADMIRALTY, Vol I, pp 93 (preliminary act), 106, 109, 133

Adultery—See title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 512

Agreement—See *Contract*, p 455, *post*

Assignment—If a plaintiff sues in his own name under the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 66), s 25 (6), he must in his statement of claim set out the facts sufficient to bring him within such provision (*Seear v Lawson* (1880), 16 Ch D 121, C A , *Read v Brown* (1888), 22 Q B D 128, C A), and see title CHANCES IN ACTION, Vol IV, pp 367, 373) But a special indorsement of a writ may be sufficient for the purposes of R S C, Ord 14, although there be no averment that notice of assignment was given (*Satchwell v Clarke* (1892), 66 L T 641, C A , *Bradley v Chamberlyn* [1893] 1 Q B 439, 441, 442) As to assignee of a reversion, see *Recovery of Land*, p 458, *post*

Belief—If a person alleges that he had reasonable grounds for belief of a certain state of things, he may be ordered to give particulars (*Alman v Oppert*, [1901] 2 K B 576, C A , and see *Fitzgerald v Campbell* (1866), 15 L T 74)

Condition of Mind—This may be alleged as a fact without setting out the circumstances from which it is to be inferred (R S C, Ord 19, r 22), and see p 427, *ante*

Condition Precedent—See p 426, *ante* Particulars must be given (*Abbs v Matheson & Co* (1898), 104 L T Jo 268, compare *Hopley v Tarrin Parish Council* (1910), 74 J P. 209)

Conspiracy—In an action for conspiring to induce persons by threats to

SECT. 2. Particulars.

break their contracts, the defendants are entitled to particulars stating the name of each such person, the kind of threat used in each case, when and by whom each such threat was made and whether verbally or in writing, and, if in writing, identifying the document (*Temperton v Russell* (1893), 9 T L R 319, and see title TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS)

Contract—See p 427, *ante* Where a contract is relied on, the pleader must state whether it is express or implied. If express he must state whether verbal or in writing, and identify the document if it is in writing. The date and names of parties must be given (*Turquand v Fearon* (1879), 48 L J (Q B) 703, *Abbs v Matheson & Co* (1898), 104 L T Jo 268, *Smith v West*, [1876] W N 55), and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 327 *et seq*

Contributory Negligence—The defendant should give particulars of the facts relied upon as supporting such a plea. The court will order them, if some good reason for such an order is shown (*Toppin v Belfast Corporation*, [1909] 2 I R 181, C A, *Martin v McTaggart*, [1906] 2 I R 120); and see title NEGLIGENCE, Vol XXI, p 445 *et seq*, p 447, *ante*

Credit—Where a plaintiff wishes to give credit in his statement of claim he should not do so for a lump sum, but should set out the items which make up such sum (*Godden v Corsten* (1879), 5 C P D 17; *Kemp v Goldberg* (1887), 36 Ch D 505)

Cruelty—See title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 512

Damages—No particulars need be given of general damages (*London and Northern Bank v George Newnes, Ltd* (1900), 16 T L R 433, C A), and see title DAMAGES, Vol X, p 346. As to special damage, see *Special Damage*, p 458, *post*

Defamation—Particulars must be given of the persons to whom, and the dates when, the words complained of were published (*Davey v Bentinck*, [1893] 1 Q B 185, C A, *Roselle v Buchanan* (1886), 16 Q B D 656, *Bradbury v Cooper* (1883), 12 Q B D 94). An application for such particulars must be made promptly (*Gouaud v Fitzgerald* (1888), 37 W R 265). If the words have been published in a newspaper, or otherwise to the public at large, names of persons need not be given, but the mode of publication must be alleged (*Wingard v Cox*, [1876] W N 106). If the words were spoken in a public room, the plaintiff must give the best particulars he can of the names of those present (*Williams v Ramsdale* (1887), 36 W R 125). If they are contained in a telegram, publication will be presumed until the contrary is proved (*Sadgrove v Hole*, [1901] 2 K B 1, C A). But if all the names of the persons to whom publication has been made are not known to the plaintiff, he may plead that he is unable to give better particulars until after discovery, (*Russell v Stubbs, Ltd* (1908), 52 Sol Jo 580, H L, and see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 657, note (s)). As to *Fair Comment, Justification*, and *Privilege*, see *infra*, and p 457, *post*. As to *Mitigation of Damages*, see p 426, *ante*, and notes thereto. No particulars will be ordered in support of an innuendo (*Heaton v Goldney*, [1910] 1 K B 754, 757, C A)

Delusions—See R S C, Ord 19, r 25A

Equitable Interest—This must be specially pleaded, and full particulars given to show how the equitable interest arises (*Sutcliffe v James* (1879), 40 L T 875)

Extraordinary Traffic—Where the plaintiff alleged that a sum claimed is extraordinary expenses of repairing a highway was arrived at by deducting from the actual expense of repair the average expense of repairing similar highways in the neighbourhood he was ordered to give particulars of the names of the similar highways and the average cost of repairing each of them (*Colchester Corporation v Gepp*, [1912] 1 K B 477)

Fair Comment—Particulars must be given showing the basis of comment (*Walker (Peter) & Son, Ltd v Hodgson*, [1909] 1 K B 239, 243). If a defendant pleads that the statements of fact he has made are true and his expressions of opinion fair comment, the usual order is for particulars of the facts relied on as showing that the statements of fact are true (*Fleming v Dollar* (1889), 23 Q B D 388, *Yorkshire Provident Life Assurance Co v Gilbert and Rivington*, [1895] 2 Q B 148, C A). If, however, the statements of fact are merely the reproduction of the plaintiff's own

SECT. 3
Particulars

words, the defendant will not be ordered to give particulars showing that they are true (*Drigby v Financial News, Ltd.*, [1907] 1 K B 502, C A , *Lyons v Financial News, Ltd.* (1909), 53 Sol Jo 671, C A), and see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 699

False Entries—A party alleging that entries in his opponent's books or documents are false must give particulars stating which entries are objected to and the nature of the objection to each of them (*Newport (Mon) Shipway Dry Dock and Engineering Co v Paynter* (1886), 34 Ch D 88, C A , *Harbord v Monk* (1878), 38 L T 411)

Fatal Accidents Act—A plaintiff suing under the Fatal Accidents Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict c 93), must deliver with the statement of claim "a full particular of the person or persons for whom and on whose behalf such action shall be brought, and of the nature of the claim in respect of which damages shall be sought to be recovered" (*ibid.*, s 4), and see title NEGLIGENCE, Vol XXI, p 455

Fraud—General allegations of fraud are not permitted (*Wallingford v Mutual Society* (1880), 5 App Cas 685, 697) Where the assignee of a chose in action sues, the defendant cannot set up in defence that the assignment was obtained by the fraud of a third person (*Staffordshire Financial Co v Hall* (1909), 53 Sol Jo 446, H L) The party who alleges fraud must do so clearly and specifically, and with full particulars, see p 425, *ante* Thus a party alleging misrepresentation must give the date of each misrepresentation and state by whom it was made, and whether verbally or in writing, and, if in writing, identify the document (*Selgmann v Young*, [1884] W N 93, *Symonds v City Bank* (1886), 34 W R 364, *Briton Medical and General Life Association v Britannia Fire Association and Whinnery* (1888), 59 L T 888) In certain cases, where the plaintiff cannot know the details of the fraud, the court will allow particulars to be postponed until after discovery (*W hyle v Ahrens* (1884), 26 Ch D 717, C A , *Leitch v Abbott* (1886), 31 Ch D 374, C A , *Waynes Merthyr Co. v Radford (D) & Co.*, [1896] 1 Ch 29), and see title MISREPRESENTATION AND FRAUD, Vol XX, pp 724, 740, 742

Goods Sold and Delivered—The date and amount of each delivery should be set out (*Parpaite Frères v Dickinson* (1878), 38 L T 178) If a plaintiff alleges that the prices are fair and reasonable, a defendant who merely traverses such allegation cannot be ordered to give particulars in support of his traverse (*James v Radnor County Council* (1890), 6 T L R 240), and see title SALE OF GOODS

Hereditary Pedigree—The claimant must show in his pleading how he is heir (*Palmer v Palmer*, [1892] 1 Q B 319) He must give the best pedigree he can from the materials in his possession (*Blackledge v Anderton*, [1893] W N 112) As to pedigrees as evidence, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 469

Highway—If in an action of trespass to land the defendant justifies on the ground that there is a right of way over the land, and that he was lawfully using the same, he need not give particulars showing the course of the path If it is a public highway he need not state the termini, but, if it is a private way, he must give the *terminus a quo* and the *terminus ad quem* (*Rouse v Bardin* (1790), 1 Hy Bl 351, and see title HIGHWAYS, STREETS AND BRIDGES, Vol XVI, p 140) Formerly it was the rule that the mode of dedication need not be alleged (*Williams v Wilcox* (1838), 8 Ad & El 314, 331), but now particulars must be given of the facts, other than user by the public, relied on as showing dedication, and, where the defendant alleges that the plaintiff, or his predecessors, had dedicated a highway, he may be ordered to give the names and dates of the acts of dedication or declarations of intention to dedicate, and the names of the persons to whom such dedications were made (*Spedding v Fitzpatrick* (1889), 38 Ch D 410, C A)

Immaterial Allegations—No particulars of such allegations will be ordered (*Cave v Torre* (1886), 54 L T 515, C A , *General Stock Exchange v Bethell* (1886), 2 T L R 683)

Inevitable Accident—No particulars are necessary The defence can be raised at trial without being pleaded at all (*Rumbold v London County Council* (1909), 25 T L R 541, C A , and see title NEGLIGENCE, Vol XXI, p 467)

Sect. 3. Particulars.

Insurance—In an action on a fire policy, particulars showing the cause and place of origin of fire will not be ordered (*Young v Scottish Union and National Insurance Co* (1907), 24 T L R 73, C A), and, as to such claims, see title INSURANCE, Vol XVII p 530)

Intention—Where fraudulent intention is alleged no particulars need be given of the circumstances from which it is to be inferred (R S C, Ord 19, r 22, and see *Condition of Mind*, p 454, ante)

Justification—A defendant must give full particulars of the facts he relies on as showing that a defamatory statement is true, if required, to prevent the plaintiff from being taken by surprise (see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 673, *Emden v Burns* (1894), 10 T L R 400, *Arnold and Butler v Bottomley*, [1908] 2 K B 151, C A)

Libel—Where the libel complained of is of great length a plaintiff may be ordered to give particulars of the portions which he contends are untrue (*Oakey Hall v Bryce* (1890), 6 T L R 284)

Lump Sums—Whenever a lump sum is claimed or credited, particulars showing how the lump sum is made up must be given (*Philippa v Philippa* (1878), 4 Q B D 127, 131, C A, *Goddard v Corsten* (1879), 5 C P D 17, *Hall v Symons* (1892), 92 L T Jo 337, C A) If the claim is for money paid, the particulars must show when and to whom each item was paid (*Gunn v Tucker* (1891), 7 T L R 280, and see title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 444 *et seq*) If the claim is based on different grounds, *e.g.* carriage and warehousing of goods, and work and labour done, the particulars must show how much is claimed on each ground, and when and how each such claim arose (*ibid*), and see *Sedgwick v Leeds Mining Co* (1887), 4 T L R 17, *Mansion House Association on Railway and Canal Traffic for the United Kingdom v Great Western Rail Co*, [1895] 2 Q B 141, C A)

Malice—No particulars need be given of the circumstances from which malice is to be inferred (R S C, Ord 19, r 22, and see *Intention*, *supra*)

Misconduct—In an action for wrongful dismissal, particulars must be given of the misconduct relied upon as entitling the defendant to dismiss the plaintiff (*Saunders v Jones* (1877) 7 Ch D 435, C A, *Benbow v Low* (1880), 16 Ch D 93, C A, *Marshall v Inter Oceanic Steam Yachting Co* (1885), 1 T L R 394), and as to such grounds, see title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, pp 98, 105

Misrepresentation—See *Fraud*, p 456 ante

Money Claims—See *Credit*, p 455, ante, *Lump Sums*, *supra*

Negligence—A person alleging negligence must set out the respects in which he alleges his opponent was negligent, as well as the facts which show a duty to take care (*Gautret v Egerton* (1867), L R 2 C P 371, *West Rand Central Gold Mining Co v R*, [1905] 2 K B 391, 40), and see p 424, ante, and title NEGLIGENCE, Vol XXI, p 357

Notice—Where it is material to allege notice to a person of any matter or fact, this may be alleged without setting out the facts from which such notice is to be inferred, unless the precise facts are material (R S C, Ord 19, r 23), and see p 427, ante

Passing off—Where a plaintiff alleges that a defendant has induced persons to purchase the defendant's goods as and for those of the plaintiff, he must give the names and addresses of such persons (*Humphries & Co v Taylor Drug Co* (1888), 39 Ch D 693), and see title TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES, AND DESIGNS

Patents—As to particulars in actions for revocation, and as to particulars of breaches and objections in actions for infringement, see title PATENTS AND INVENTIONS, pp 206, 216 *et seq*, ante

Payment into Court—Where the plaintiff claims in respect of several causes of action, and the defendant makes a payment into court, he must give particulars showing in respect of which cause of action the payment is made (*James Tucker Steamship Co v Lamport and Holt* (1906), 23 T L R 10, C A), and see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE Similarly, where there are several heads of claim (*Orient Steam Navigation Co v Ocean Marine Insurance Co* (1886), 34 W R 442, *Rowe v Kelly* (1888), 59 L T 139, *Boulton v Houlder Brothers & Co* (1903), 19 T L R 635

SECT 3.
Particulars.

Where the names of persons present are essential to a complete statement of the case to be met, it is no ground for refusing to order particulars of such names that the party against whom such order is made will be compelled to disclose the names of his witnesses (g)

SECT 4—Reply and Subsequent Pleadings

**When
delivered**

929 No reply may be delivered unless by order or by leave (h)

No pleading subsequent to reply other than a joinder of issue may be pleaded without the leave of the court or a judge, and then only upon such terms as the court or a judge thinks fit (i)

(C A) Where there are several plaintiffs, a defendant who pays into court may be ordered to apportion the sum among them (*Benning v Ilford Gas Co.*, [1907] 2 K B 290)

Privilege—Particulars must be given showing how and why the occasion is privileged (*Elkington v London Association for the Protection of Trade* (1911), 27 T L R 329, C A., *Simmonds v Dunne* (1871), 5 I R C L 358, 362), and see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, pp 677 *et seq*

Recovery of Land—The plaintiff, if he has not been in possession, must set out the facts which show his title (*Philpotts v Philpotts* (1878), 4 Q B D 127, C A., *Darbyshire v Leigh*, [1896] 1 Q B 554, C A.), and see title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, p 558 If he claims as assignee of the reversion he must give particulars of the devolution of the estate to himself (*Davis v James* (1884), 26 Ch D. 778)

Right of Way—As to a public right of way, see *Highway*, p 456, *ante* If a party alleges a private right of way he must set out the *terminus a quo* and the *terminus ad quem* of such way (*Rouse v Bardin* (1790), 1 Hy Bl 351), and the title under which he claims the right (*Harris v Jenkins* (1882), 22 Ch D 481, see also *Pledge & Sons v Pomfret* (1905), 74 L J (CH) 357), and see title EASEMENTS AND PROFITS A L'PRENDRE, Vol XI, p 257

Seduction—As a rule the court does not order the plaintiff to give particulars of immoral intercourse with the defendant, unless the latter states on oath that no such intercourse has taken place, see title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, p 274, but see *Kelly v Briggs* (1888), 85 L T Jo 78

Special Damage—No evidence can be given of special damage unless such damage has been alleged in the statement of claim, see title DAMAGES, Vol X, p 346 Where such damage is alleged the plaintiff will be ordered to give full particulars (*Bluch v Lovering* (1885), 1 T L R 497, *Dimsdale v Goodlake* (1876), 40 J P 792, *Watson v North Metropolitan Tramways Co* (1886), 3 T L R 273) If the loss of specific customers is alleged the names must be given, but if only a general diminution of business is alleged names need not be given (*Evans v Harries* (1856), 1 H & N 251, *Ratcliffe v Evans*, [1892] 2 Q B 524, C A.), and see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 718

Breach of Trust—Full particulars of the actual breaches complained of must be given, and the plaintiff will not be allowed at the trial to complain of breaches outside the particulars given in the statement of claim (*Re Anstice*, *Anstice v Hubbell* (1885), 33 W R 557, *Re Wrightson*, *Wrightson v Cooke*, [1908] 1 Ch. 789, 799, and compare *Re Symons*, *Luke v Tonkin* (1882) 21 Ch D 757, *Smith v Amritage* (1883), 24 Ch D 727), and see title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES

Work and Labour done—Full particulars must be given, see *Lump Sums*, p 457, *ante*, and see title WORK AND LABOUR

Wrongful Dismissal—As to justifying a dismissal, see *Justification*, and *Misconduct*, p 457, *ante*

(g) *Zierenberg v Labouchere*, [1893] 2 Q B 183, 187, C A., *Bishop v Bishop*, [1901] P 325

(h) R S C. Ord 23, r 1.

(i) *Ibid*, r. 3

930. A plaintiff must deliver his reply, if any, within the time specified in the order giving leave to deliver a reply, or, if no time is specified, within ten days after the defence, or the last of the defences, has been delivered, unless the time is extended by the court or a judge (*k*).

Section 4.
Reply and
Subsequent
Pleadings.

Time for
delivery.

Every pleading subsequent to reply must be delivered within the time specified in the order giving leave to deliver the same, or if no time is specified, then within four days after the delivery of the previous pleading, unless the time is extended by the court or a judge (*l*).

931 If the plaintiff does not deliver a reply, or any party does not deliver any subsequent pleading within the period allowed for that purpose, the pleadings are deemed to be closed, and all material statements of fact in the pleading last delivered are deemed to have been denied and put in issue (*m*).

Effect of
default

932 A plaintiff by his reply must raise all matters on which he intends to rely in rebuttal of the allegations contained in the defence (*n*) and which under the rules hereinbefore set out should be specially pleaded (*o*), and also his defence to any counterclaim (*p*) raised by the defendant with his defence (*q*).

Contents of
reply.

933 If, after a defence has been delivered, any ground of defence arises to any set off or counterclaim alleged therein by the defendant, it may be raised by the plaintiff in his reply, either alone or together with any other ground of reply (*r*).

Defence to
set off or
counter
claim arising
after defence
or after reply

Where any defence to any set-off or counterclaim arises after reply, or after the time limited for delivering a reply has expired, the plaintiff may, within eight days after such ground of reply has arisen, or at any subsequent time by leave of the court or a judge, deliver a further reply (*s*).

(*k*) R S C, Ord 23, r 2

(*l*) *Ibid*, r 3 The names of the pleadings subsequent to reply under the old system of pleading were rejoinder (by defendant), surrejoinder (by plaintiff), rebutter (by defendant), surrebutter (by plaintiff), and these names would still be used were such pleadings required (R S C, Ord 72, r 2). Leave to deliver a special rejoinder is not given unless such pleading is really required (*Harry v Davey* (1876), 34 L T 842, *Norris v Beazley* (1877), 35 L T 845).

(*m*) R S C, Ord 27, r 13

(*n*) *Ibid*, Ord 19, r 2

(*o*) See pp 425 *et seq*, and 447 *et seq*, *ante*

(*p*) See title SET OFF AND COUNTERCLAIM The plaintiff may include in his reply any counterclaim by way of defence to the defendant's counterclaim, although the matter was not included in his statement of claim, provided he does not put it forward by way of an independent claim (*Renton, Gibbs & Co, Ltd v Neville & Co*, [1900] 2 Q B 181, C A.)

(*q*) R S C, Ord 19, r 2

(*r*) *Ibid*, Ord 24, r 1

(*s*) *Ibid*, r 2

PLEDGE.

See AGENCY, PAWNS AND PLEDGES.

PLENE ADMINISTRATIVIT.

See EXECUTORS AND ADMINISTRATORS

PLENIPOTENTIARIES.

See CONFLICT OF LAWS, CONSTITUTIONAL LAW.

POACHING.

See ANIMALS, GAME.

POISONS.

See AGRICULTURE, CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, MEDICINE
AND PHARMACY.

POLICE.

	PAGE
PART I ORIGIN OF POLICE FORCES- - - - -	462
SECT 1 INTRODUCTORY - - - - -	462
SECT 2 PARISH CONSTABLES - - - - -	463
SECT 3 TRANSITION TO MODERN POLICE FORCES - - - - -	466
PART II METROPOLITAN POLICE - - - - -	466
SECT 1 AREA - - - - -	466
SECT 2 GOVERNMENT - - - - -	467
SECT 3 THE RECEIVER - - - - -	468
SECT 4 THE COMMISSIONERS - - - - -	469
SECT 5 CONSTABLES - - - - -	473
SECT 6 METROPOLITAN POLICE FUND - - - - -	474
SECT 7 PENSION FUND - - - - -	477
PART III CITY OF LONDON POLICE - - - - -	478
SECT 1 AREA - - - - -	478
SECT 2 GOVERNMENT - - - - -	478
SECT 3 SPECIAL POWERS - - - - -	479
SECT 4 FINANCE - - - - -	480
PART IV COUNTY POLICE - - - - -	481
PART V BOROUGH POLICE - - - - -	485
PART VI CONSOLIDATION AND MUTUAL ASSISTANCE OF POLICE FORCES - - - - -	490
SECT 1 CONSOLIDATION OF COUNTY AND BOROUGH FORCES - - - - -	490
SECT 2 ASSISTANCE OF ONE POLICE FORCE BY ANOTHER - - - - -	491
PART VII SPECIAL CONSTABLES ADDITIONAL POLICE - - - - -	491
SECT 1 SPECIAL CONSTABLES - - - - -	491
SECT 2 CONSTABLES OF RAILWAY AND OTHER COMPANIES - - - - -	494
PART VIII GENERAL POWERS AND DUTIES OF CONSTABLES - - - - -	497
PART IX DAMAGE BY RIOT - - - - -	507
PART X. SUPERANNUATION AND OTHER ALLOWANCES - - - - -	509
PART XI POWERS OF SECRETARY OF STATE - - - - -	516

<i>For Arrest</i>	-	<i>See title</i>	CRIMINAL LAW AND PRO- CEDURE
<i>Bail</i>			CRIMINAL LAW AND PRO- CEDURE
<i>Battling Troops</i> - - -			ROYAL FORCES
<i>Constables, Protection of</i> -			LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS.
<i>County and Borough Councils</i> - -			LOCAL GOVERNMENT
<i>Criminal Law in General</i> - - -			CRIMINAL LAW AND PRO- CEDURE
<i>Distress</i> - - - - -			DISTRESS
<i>False Imprisonment</i> - - - -			MALICIOUS PROSECUTION AND PROCEDURE
<i>Home Secretary</i> - - - -			CONSTITUTIONAL LAW
<i>Justices of the Peace</i> - - - -			MAGISTRATES
<i>Malicious Prosecution</i> - - -			MALICIOUS PROSECUTION AND PROCEDURE.
<i>Metropolitan Police Magistrates</i> -			MAGISTRATES
<i>Motor Cars</i> - - - - -			STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC
<i>Police Courts</i> - - - - -			MAGISTRATES
<i>Police Rate</i> - - - - -			RATES AND RATING
<i>Restitution of Property in Hands of Police</i> - - - - -			MAGISTRATES, PAWNS AND PLEDGES
<i>Search Warrant</i> - - - - -			CRIMINAL LAW AND PRO- CEDURE
<i>Standing Joint Committee</i> - - -			LOCAL GOVERNMENT
<i>Street Offences</i> - - - - -			STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC
<i>Summary Jurisdiction, Courts of</i> -			MAGISTRATES
<i>Watch Committee</i> - - - - -			LOCAL GOVERNMENT
<i>Watch Rate</i> - - - - -			RATES AND RATING.

Part I.—Origin of Police Forces.

SECT 1 — Introductory

Earliest
forms of
police
organisation

934 The modern system of police forces has been slowly evolved from the succession of peace officers, who at different times and under varying titles have safeguarded the internal peace of the kingdom

Head-
boroughs etc

The earliest form of police organisation appears to have been local associations of persons who, as subjects of the king, became surety for one another's keeping of the peace (a) These associations elected principal men called headboroughs, borsholders or tithingmen, to whom they committed the responsibility for order in their association Although these offices have never been formally abolished, they fell into abeyance with the introduction of a new system of safeguarding the peace through justices appointed for that purpose (b)

(a) Lambard, *Duties of Constables*, p 6, 2 Hawk P C, c 10, s 33; 1 Bl. Com., p 356

(b) They are referred to as still existing in the Indictable Offences Act 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 42), s 10, and the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 43), s 3

935. Officers called constables were created for each hundred or franchise with the duty of reporting to the justices default in the keeping of arms (c); and their duties were gradually increased as the appointment of justices became vested solely in the Crown and the jurisdiction of the justices was defined, until the guarding of the peace was practically left in their hands (d).

SECT. 1.

Intro-
ductory.Constables of
hundreds

936 The term "constable" was given to several kinds of officers, whose duties, though similar in kind, varied very largely in importance

High and
petty
constables

Thus high constables were appointed for hundreds and petty constables for townships, boroughs, and parishes (e)

The duties assigned to them included, besides the general maintenance of the peace, the making of reports of default in the upkeep of highways, the levying of distress for forfeiture under the Highway Acts, the making of returns of popish recusants, and the levying of rates for the relief of plague (f). In addition to these duties high constables had to attend at quarter sessions, to issue notices to justices relating to special sessions and to issue precepts for the collection and transmission of local rates (g). They were appointed originally by the court of the hundred (h), later, usually by quarter sessions, and finally by the justices at special sessions (i). Their duties were from time to time transferred or abolished, and finally they themselves ceased to exist (k).

Duties.

SECT. 2 — *Parish Constables*

937 Petty constables date from the early years of King Edward III (l), and, under the name of parish constables, may exist in non-urban parishes at the present day, but are not now appointed in any parish except after a resolution of the justices at quarter sessions (m). Where the appointment is authorised by

Appointment

(c) Lambard, *Duties of Constables*, p. 5

(d) Compare title *MAGISTRATES*, Vol. XIX, p. 535

(e) See Lambard, *Duties of Constables*, pp. 5, 10

(f) *Ibid.*, pp. 11, 32, 33, 36, 37, 39

(g) See County Rates Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict. c. 33), High Constables Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict. c. 47)

(h) Statute of Winchester, 1285 (13 Edw. 1, c. 4) (now repealed)

(i) County Rates Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict. c. 33), s. 8, and see title *MAGISTRATES*, Vol. XIX, pp. 568, 569

(k) County Rates Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict. c. 33), s. 8, High Constables Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict. c. 47). An exception was made in favour of the continuance of a high constable who was by law or custom a returning officer at an election, or charged with the supervision of the register of electors, or in whom real property was vested by virtue of his office (*ibid.*, s. 2)

(l) See Lambard, *Duties of Constables*, p. 6

(m) Parish Constables Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict. c. 92), ss. 1, 2. The right of direct appointment is specially reserved to the justices of the respective petty sessional divisions where application is made by a parish council, or two or more such councils united, for the appointment of a paid constable (*ibid.*, ss. 4, 5), see Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 73), s. 6, title *LOCAL GOVERNMENT*, Vol. XIX, p. 247, note (d), *MAGISTRATES*, Vol. XIX, pp. 570, 571, 636. Parish constables are not appointed in the City of London or Metropolitan Police District (see p. 467, *post*) or in boroughs regulated by the Municipal Corporations Act, 1892 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 50) (see title *LOCAL GOVERNMENT*, Vol. XIX, p. 293), or in parishes which have adopted the Lighting and Watching Act, 1833 (3 & 4 Will. 4,

SECT 2
Parish
Constables

Qualifications
and dis-
qualifications

such a resolution, it is made by the justices of the petty sessional area in which the parish is situated, in special sessions (*n*), notice of the holding of which must be given to the justices by their clerk (*o*)

938 The persons appointed are selected from a list of qualified persons prepared by the overseers of parishes (*p*) by the order of the justices (*q*) In order to be qualified a person must be an able-bodied man between twenty-five and fifty-five years of age, resident in the parish and rated for poor relief or to the county rate on a tenement of the annual value of £4 (*r*)

Certain classes of persons are disqualified (*s*) and others are exempt from serving (*t*) Persons selected to serve must do so or find a qualified substitute (*a*) In the case of a vacancy occurring,

(*c* 90) (see title GAS, Vol XV, p 308), or in the county of Chester (Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 21, Parish Constables Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 20), ss 7, 8)

(*n*) Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 1 A list of the constables appointed is to be sent to the clerk of the peace and also to be published (*ibid*, s 14) The warrant of appointment is to be served personally upon the persons selected to serve (Parish Constables Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 92), s 3), see, further, title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 570, 571

(*o*) Parish Constables Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 20), s 4

(*p*) Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 3 Small parishes and extra parochial places may for this purpose be annexed to adjoining parishes (*ibid*, s 4) The list is to be fixed on church doors the first three Sundays in March and a list kept open for inspection for the first three weeks in March without payment of any fee (*ibid*, s 8)

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 2 The overseers, acting on a precept of the justices, call a meeting of the parish council, at which the list is prepared (*ibid*, s 3) The council has no discretion to do otherwise than obey the precept (*R v North Buxley Overseers* (1858), E B & F 519), and the overseers may be compelled by mandamus to prepare the required list (*R v Thornton Overseers and West Riding of Yorkshire Justices* (1858), 6 W R 632)

(*r*) Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 5 Actual residence is a necessary condition of being compellable to serve The carrying on of a trade or business is insufficient (*R v Adlard* (1825), 4 B & C 772) Persons who are not qualified but are willing to serve may be recommended by the council and appointed (Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 3)

(*s*) *Ibid*, s 7 The classes named are licensed victuallers and persons licensed to deal in any excisable liquors or to sell beer by retail, game keepers, and persons who have been attainted of treason or felony, or convicted of any infamous crime, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 430, note (1)

(*t*) The classes named include peers and members of Parliament, judges, justices of the peace, deputy lieutenants, clergy of any denomination, schoolmasters, members of the legal or medical professions, persons serving in any of the naval or military services, apothecaries, pilots, officers of the Royal Household, customs or excise officers, sheriffs and their officers, high constables or county police, registrars of births, churchwardens and other parish or poor law officials, employees of the Post Office (Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), Parish Constables Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 20), s 5) Formerly a naturalised foreigner was exempt (*R v de Muerre* (1771), 5 Burr 2787)

(*a*) Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 16, see *R v Clarke* (1787), 1 Term Rep 679 The qualified substitute need not, however, be upon the overseers' list (*R v Booth* (1848), 12 Q B 884) If a man is selected as a constable in two different parishes the same year, acceptance of office in one parish frees him from liability to serve in the other (*R v Mosley* (1836), 6 Nev & M (κ 2) 261) But a person who

the person who last served, or the person finding a substitute when the vacancy is due to the death or disqualification of such substitute, must serve until a fresh appointment is made, after due notice, at the next court of petty sessions (*b*)

SMOT. 2.
Parish
Constables.

After having once served in person or by substitute, a person is not liable to be called on to serve the office again until every other person eligible has served in person or by substitute (*c*)

939 Parish constables have power to act throughout the whole of the county in which their parish is situated, including detached parts of other counties and in every adjoining county, but they are not bound, except with the special warrant of a justice of the peace, to act outside their own parish (*d*) Their privileges and immunities have a like extent (*e*)

Powers.

940 They are entitled to the fees and allowances, settled by the justices at quarter sessions with the approval of the Home Secretary (*f*), for the service of summonses, execution of warrants or written orders of a justice, or such occasional duties as in the opinion of the justices they may be required to perform (*g*) These fees and allowances are to be applied in aid of the poor rate (*h*)

Fees.

941 Parish constables are subject to the authority of the chief constable of the county in which their parish is situated (*i*), and may be punished for neglect of duty upon summary conviction before two justices (*k*)

Control.

holds the office of constable in a manor and is exempt from holding other civic offices within the manor is not exempt from the duty to serve as parish constable (*R v Darbyshire* (1761), 2 Burr 1182)

(*b*) Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 16

(*c*) *Ibid*, s 11

(*d*) *Ibid* s 15, Parish Constables Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 92), s 10

(*e*) Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 15

(*f*) The police powers of a Secretary of State are in fact exercised by the Home Secretary, and accordingly the term "Home Secretary" is used throughout the remainder of this title in place of that of "Secretary of State", but it must be remembered that these powers could, in his absence, be exercised by any other Secretary of State, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, pp 83, 85

(*g*) Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 17 Parish Constables Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 20), s 2, Parish Constables Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 92), s 11 The payments are made out of the county rate or, where this is not applicable, out of the poor rate, under regulations made by the justices at quarter sessions subject to the approval of the Home Secretary (Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 17) Fees for services rendered to overseers, surveyors of highways, or other parish officers may be claimed without an order of justices, and if they are not paid may be recovered in a court of summary jurisdiction (Parish Constables Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 92), s 12) Paid constables appointed on the application of a parish council cannot, however, claim fees for services rendered to the parish or parish officers (*ibid*, s 8)

(*h*) *Ibid*, s 7 Where costs are awarded by the justices in any proceedings instituted before them by a paid constable, these must be similarly applied (*ibid*, s 9)

(*i*) *Ibid*, s 7 As to chief constables, see p 484, *post*

(*k*) Parish Officers Act, 1793 (33 Geo 3, c 55), s 1.

SECT 3.

**Transition
to Modern
Police
Forces**Watchmen
and beablesSpecial
constablesModern
police forcesTransition as
regards areasMetropolitan
police**SECT 3—*Transition to Modern Police Forces.***

942 Parish constables had their counterpart in urban districts in the watchmen and beables appointed by the borough corporations and their watch committees, but while the parish constable in rural districts is merely superseded in practice^(l), the watchmen and beables of the town have ceased to exist in law as well as in fact

The inadequacy of the old order to meet the requirements of more modern times led to the practice of appointing special constables to cope with particular emergencies^(m). This practice was regulated by statute, and the powers given for the creation of special constables survive at the present day, though the occasions which call for their employment are comparatively rare

With the exception of such occasions the duties of police are now performed exclusively by the police forces, which were first established at the instance of Sir Robert Peel

943 The local nature of the police organisation has been modified but not abolished. The county took the place of the parish as the unit⁽ⁿ⁾, and arrangements were made for the elimination of the smaller borough police forces^(o)

944 The Capital itself, except the City of London, and the surrounding districts were committed to the care of a force known as the Metropolitan Police Force, the control of which is under the immediate supervision of the Government, and which is thus able to perform national as well as local services^(p)

Part II.—Metropolitan Police.**SECT 1—*Area***The police
force of the
Capital

945 The Metropolitan Police Force is the most important body of its kind, not only because it is the police force of the Capital and of the surrounding area, but because of its intimate connection with the government of the country^(a)

The Force was formed in 1829 as a result of the recommendation of a committee of the House of Commons appointed on the motion of the Home Secretary^(b)

(l) See p 463, *ante*

(m) See p 491, *post*

(n) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93)

(o) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 39

(p) Metropolitan Police Acts, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), and 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), Police Act, 1909 (9 Edw 7, c 40), see p 476, *post*

(a) The area actually served by the Metropolitan Police Force is now about 700 square miles, with a total rateable value of nearly £60,000,000

(b) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 4. The then Home Secretary was Mr (afterwards Sir Robert) Peel.

946. The area for which the Force was to act was determined by statute and called the Metropolitan Police District (c).

SECT. 1.

Area.

The area included the city and liberties of Westminster and such of the parishes, townships, precincts, and places in the counties of Middlesex, Surrey, and Kent as were specified in a schedule (d), but provision was made for the subsequent inclusion in it by Order in Council of any parish or place within twelve miles of Charing Cross (e).

This limit was extended to any part of the Central Criminal Court district (f) or of a parish or place within fifteen miles of Charing Cross which might be specified by Order in Council (g) and to every part of the river Thames within or adjoining the counties of Middlesex, Surrey, Berkshire, Essex, and Kent (h).

Trafalgar Square, which is the freehold of the Crown, was included in the district in 1844 (i) and provision made for the guarding of Royal Palaces by selected members of the Metropolitan Police (k). Metropolitan police may be employed by the Commissioner at the discretion of the Home Secretary within the dockyards, victualling yards, and steam factory yards of the Crown and the central arsenal and principal stations of the War Department and within fifteen miles of any of them (l).

The City of London is not included in the Metropolitan Police District (m).

SECT. 2 —Government.

947 The Metropolitan Police Force is under the control of the Home Secretary, who is the police authority for the district (n), the Force is governed by a Commissioner of Police and four Assistant Commissioners, all of whom are appointed by the Crown on the nomination of the Home Secretary (o). The treasurer of the Force

Control and
officials

(c) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44) As to the establishment of Metropolitan Police Courts, see title **MAGISTRATES**, Vol **XI**, pp 548, 549

(d) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44: Sched

(e) *Ibid*, s 34

(f) See Central Criminal Court Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 36), ss 2, 3; and title **COURTS**, Vol **IX**, p 88

(g) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 2

(h) *Ibid*, s 5 Creeks, inlets, and water docks, quays and landing places adjacent thereto are included (*ibid*)

(i) Trafalgar Square Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 60)

(k) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 7

(l) Metropolitan Police Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 135), ss 1, 2, 6 When not actually in the precincts of a naval or military station, or on one of His Majesty's ships, their authority is confined to the property of the Crown or persons subject to naval or marine or military discipline (*ibid*, s 2, see *Turner v Ford* (1877), 37 L T 352)

(m) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 2, but as to co-operation with the City police, see p 481, *post*

(n) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 33, Sched III, see note (f), p 465, *ante*

(o) The persons originally appointed Commissioners were the police magistrates (Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 4 see Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 1, and the Metropolitan Police Act, 1836 (6 & 7 Will 4, c 50), now repealed) By the Metropolitan Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 2), ss 1, 2, one Commissioner and two

SECT 2.
Govern-
ment.

is the Receiver of Metropolitan Police, who is appointed in the same manner as the Commissioner (*p*) These officials all hold office during the pleasure of the Crown (*q*)

They are disqualified from election to the House of Commons (*r*), and may not canvass at any parliamentary or municipal elections in any place policed by the Metropolitan Police Force (*s*), but they are not disentitled to vote at any parliamentary or municipal election (*t*)

SECT 3—The Receiver.

Duties as to
payments

948 The Receiver receives all moneys applicable to the Metropolitan Police Fund (*a*), and out of them pays, subject to the discretion of the Home Secretary, the salaries, wages, and allowances due to members of the Metropolitan Police Force (*b*), and the expenses of the metropolitan police courts (*c*) and of the court of the stipendiary magistrate for Chatham and Sheerness (*d*), and such extraordinary expenses incurred by the members of the Metropolitan Police Force in the execution of their duty as are approved by the Commissioner of Police, and such other charges as the Home Secretary may direct (*e*)

Accounts.

949 The accounts of the Receiver are drawn up and submitted to the Home Secretary half-yearly, or oftener if required They are audited by the Commissioners for auditing the public accounts or

Assistant Commissioners were provided for A third Assistant Commissioner was provided for by the Metropolitan Police Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict c 17), s 2, and a fourth by the Metropolitan Police Act, 1909 (4 Edw 7, c 40), s 3 As to their powers and duties, see p 469, *post* The salaries of the Commissioner and Assistant Commissioners are regulated by the Home Secretary with the approval of the Treasury That of the Commissioner is paid out of parliamentary funds, those of the Assistant Commissioners out of parliamentary funds or the Metropolitan Police Fund, as the Home Secretary, with the approval of the Treasury, may appoint but the amount which may be paid out of parliamentary funds is limited to £1,200 a year (Metropolitan Police Act, 1899 (62 & 63 Vict c 26), ss 1, 2)

(*p*) The post of Receiver was created, and the conditions of his appointment regulated, by the Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 10 He is paid a salary appointed by the Home Secretary, with the approval of the Treasury, out of parliamentary funds (Metropolitan Police Act, 1899 (62 & 63 Vict c 76), s 1), and has a staff of clerks under him in an office which is under the departmental control of the Home Secretary As to his duties, see the text, *infra*

(*q*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), ss 1, 10

(*r*) *Ibid*, s 18, Metropolitan Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 2), s 9

(*s*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 18, Metropolitan Police Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 135), s 5, see title ELECTIONS, Vol XII p 539 p 474, *post*

(*t*) Police Disabilities Removal Acts, 1887 (50 & 51 Vict c 9), and 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 8)

(*a*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 10, Police Act 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 41), ss 33, 34

(*b*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 12

(*c*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 71), s 7 Except the salaries of the metropolitan police magistrates, which are payable out of the Consolidated Fund (Metropolitan Police Magistrates Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 3), s 1)

(*d*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 26), s 6

(*e*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 12

such other person as the Home Secretary may direct (*f*), and are laid annually before Parliament (*g*). The account of the Receiver is kept by the Bank of England, which pays the drafts and orders drawn by the Receiver and countersigned by the Commissioner of Police (*h*).

SECT. 3.
The
Receiver.

950 Provision is made for vesting all the police property in the Receiver (*i*), and for securing the transfer of it to his successor upon his removal (*k*). He is empowered to take or lease property of any tenure required for the use of the Metropolitan Police Force, and to transfer, demise, enfranchise, mortgage, or dispose of any property vested in him with the approval of the Home Secretary (*l*). He may provide, by building or otherwise, the accommodation required for the police and police courts, and may borrow money for these purposes (*m*). He is the police authority to whom claims for damage under the Riot (Damages) Act (*n*) must be made.

Powers of
Receiver with
regard to
property

951 During the temporary absence of the Receiver a person appointed by warrant under the hand of the Home Secretary may act temporarily in his place (*o*).

Temporary
Receiver

SECT. 4 — *The Commissioners*

952 The Commissioner and Assistant Commissioners of Police are *ex officio* justices of the counties of Middlesex, Surrey, Hertford, Kent, Essex, Berkshire, and Buckinghamshire (*p*), and for the

Power as
justice *ex
officio*

(*f*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 44), s. 11.

(*g*) This must be done within thirty days after the 31st March in each year (*ibid.*, s. 29). Metropolitan Police (Receiver) Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 39), s. 1.

(*h*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 44), s. 10. Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 47), s. 4. The account is kept in the name of the Receiver, who is a corporation sole and not in the personal name of the holder of the office (Metropolitan Police (Receiver) Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 124), ss. 1, 4).

(*i*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 44), s. 16. The metropolitan police courts were vested in the Commissioner of Works by the Metropolitan Police Court (Buildings) Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict. c. 35), s. 3, but were retransferred to the Receiver by the Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict. c. 26), s. 3.

(*k*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 44), ss. 14, 15. Metropolitan Police (Receiver) Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 124), ss. 2, 3.

(*l*) *Ibid.*, s. 5.

(*m*) Metropolitan Police Acts, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict. c. 22), and 1887 (50 & 51 Vict. c. 45). Under these Acts the amount to be borrowed was limited to £200,000. It was extended for the purposes of the police courts to £700,000 by the Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict. c. 26), s. 4. The buildings vested in the Receiver are exempt from the provisions of the London Building Act, 1894 (57 & 58 Vict. c. cxxiii), relating to buildings and structures (*ibid.*, s. 3 (2)), and see title METROPOLIS, Vol. XX, p. 474. The money required for loans may be obtained from the London County Council (Metropolitan Police Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict. c. 22), s. 3 (4)). The raising of a loan is subject to the approval both of the Home Secretary and of the Treasury (*ibid.*, s. 6), see also title COMPULSORY PURCHASE OF LAND AND COMPENSATION, Vol. VI, p. 174.

(*n*) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict. c. 38), Sched., Home Office Regulations, 30th June, 1894, and see p. 507, *post*.

(*o*) Metropolitan Police (Receiver) Act, 1895 (58 & 59 Vict. c. 12).

(*p*) Metropolitan Police Acts, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 44), s. 1, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 47), s. 4, and 1856 (19 & 20 Vict. c. 2), s. 2.

SECT 4
The Com-
missioners.

county of London (*g*), but they may not act as such at any court of general or quarter sessions or in any matter out of sessions, except for the preservation of the peace, the prevention of crimes, the detection and committal of offenders, and in carrying into execution the Metropolitan Police Acts (*r*). The Commissioner must take a special oath (*s*), besides the ordinary oaths required to be taken by justices (*t*)

Powers
as to the
efficiency of
the Force

953 The Commissioner is empowered, with the sanction of the Home Secretary, to make regulations relative to the good government of the members of the Metropolitan Police Force, the places of their residence, the classification, rank and particular service of the several members, their distribution and inspection, the description of arms, accoutrements, and other necessities to be furnished to them, the provision of horses and the members of the Force to be provided with them, and all such other orders and regulations which he may deem expedient for preventing neglect or abuse and for rendering the Force efficient in the discharge of all its duties (*a*). He may swear in particular members of the Force for duty at the naval and military stations of the Crown (*b*)

Powers
as to
street traffic

954 The Commissioner (*c*) is the authority charged with the framing of the regulations regarding traffic in the streets (*d*), and

(*g*) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 95

(*r*) For these Acts, see note (*p*), p 466, *ante*

(*s*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 2 The oath is in the following form — "I, A B, do swear that I will faithfully and honestly according to the best of my skill and knowledge execute all the powers and duties of a justice of the peace under and by virtue of an Act" etc (Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44) As to the taking of the oath, see Promissory Oaths Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 72), and title *MAGISTRATES*, Vol XIX, p 543

(*t*) As to these, see title *MAGISTRATES*, Vol XIX, pp 539, 543

(*a*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 5

(*b*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 135), s 2

(*c*) Or an Assistant Commissioner at the direction of the Commissioner and with the approval of the Home Secretary, see p 473, *post*

(*d*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), ss 51, 52 Under these provisions he may regulate the route to be taken by traffic during church hours on Sunday, Christmas Day and Good Friday on the application of a minister or churchwarden of any place of worship, or at all times of public processions or rejoicings or illuminations, and may give directions to prevent obstructions in the immediate neighbourhood of the Royal Palaces, public offices, Houses of Parliament, law courts or other places. The drivers of public vehicles are not liable to any penalty for deviation from their usual route in pursuance of his regulations (*ibid*, s 53). Under the Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 134), ss 4, 10, he has power to declare special limits for the ordering of traffic within which he may, with the approval of the Home Secretary, make regulations, but he may not limit the number of metropolitan stage carriages passing down any street in pursuance of their ordinary trade (*ibid*, s 11). The regulations so made by him are to be publicly exhibited in such places as he thinks fit, but failure in this duty does not excuse non-compliance with the regulations (*ibid*, s 13). He has the power to permit the passing of bulky traffic within special limits between the hours of 10 a.m. and 7 p.m. which is otherwise prohibited (*ibid*, s 16). The special limits include such streets etc as are named by the Commissioner in an order made by him with the Home Secretary's approval and advertised in the *London Gazette* (*ibid*, s. 10). The general limits of the Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (2 & 3

the control of public vehicles, of which he is the registrar and licensor (e).

He may make regulations for traffic on the Thames within the Metropolitan Police District (f), and may make an agreement with the Thames Conservators for the policing of piers etc by the Metropolitan Police Force (g).

Within certain limits he may make regulations regarding the driving of cattle through the streets (h).

He may grant licences to shoeblacks, commissionaires, and messengers and make regulations respecting the exercise by them of their calling (i), and may grant certificates to pedlars (k) and chimney-sweepers (l).

SECT. 4.
The Commissioner.

Traffic on the Thames.

Driving of cattle

Licences to shoeblacks, and messengers

Vict c 47), are an area within a six mile radius of Charing Cross (*ibid* s 4, Metropolitan Streets Act, 1885 (48 & 49 Vict c 18), s 2) He may cause notices to be affixed to any lamp post (Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 134), s 22, Metropolitan Public Carriage Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 115), s 14), or to posts of the electric tramways of the London County Council by the London County Council (Tramways and Improvements) Act, 1909 (9 Edw 7, c lxxv) s 60 His powers in regard to street traffic and street offences are not altered by the Metropolitan Management Act, 1855 (18 & 19 Vict c 120), s 245, see, generally, title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(e) London Hackney Carriages Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 7), ss 1, 2, see London Hackney Carriage Act 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 22), London Hackney Carriages Act, 1843 (6 & 7 Vict c 86), London Hackney Carriage Act, 1853 (16 & 17 Vict c 33), Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 134), Metropolitan Public Carriage Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 115) The licences for drivers of such carriages are granted by the Commissioner (London Hackney Carriages Act 1843 (6 & 7 Vict c 86), s 8), and, for the carriages themselves, by the Commissioner or such other person as the Home Secretary may direct (Metropolitan Carriage Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 115), ss 6, 11) It is the Commissioner's duty to inspect hackney and stage carriages and to give notice to the proprietor if he regards any carriage as unfit, and thereafter suspend the licence in regard to it (London Hackney Carriage Act, 1853 (16 & 17 Vict c 33), s 2) Proprietors withdrawing a licensed carriage from hire for more than two consecutive days or for more than two days in the week must give him ten days' notice of their intention to do so (London Hackney Carriage (No 2) Act, 1853 (16 & 17 Vict c 12), s 16) He may make regulations with regard to standing for them (London Hackney Carriages Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 7), s 4), and the regulations must be advertised in the *London Gazette*, and copies exhibited at the Central Police Office, and at each of the metropolitan police courts It is also the Commissioner's duty to keep order at cab stands, and he may pay wages with the consent of the Treasury to persons employed at cab stands for that purpose, and he must direct the payment of water rate for such places (London Hackney Carriage Act, 1853 (16 & 17 Vict c 33), ss 12, 13) A table of distances within the Metropolitan Police District signed by the Commissioner is conclusive evidence in disputes in regard to fares calculated by distance (*ibid* s 6), see also title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(f) Thames Conservancy Act, 1894 (57 & 58 Vict c cxxxvii) 209

(g) *Ibid*, s 208, the terms may include payment of the constables employed, and see title WATERS AND WATERCOURSES

(h) Metropolitan Market Act, 1857 (20 & 21 Vict c cxxxv), s 18

(i) Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 134), ss 19, 20, and see title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(k) Pedlars Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 96), s 5, and see title MARKETS AND FAIRS, Vol XX, p 598

(l) Chimney Sweepers Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 70), ss 5, 6, 14, and see title PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION.

SECT 4

The Commissioners.

Licensing
authority
Regulations
as to costers,
scavenging,
and dogs

Advertise-
ments

Unlawful
fairs, and
gaming

Arrest of
persons under
police
supervision

Lord's Day
observance

Explosive

He is the local authority empowered to grant orders exempting licensed victuallers from the duty of closing (*m*) and to grant occasional licences to the keepers of refreshment houses (*n*)

He may also make regulations with the approval of the Home Secretary for the exercise of them calling by costermongers, street hawkers, and itinerant traders (*o*), he may prohibit scavenging in any streets he may deem proper except between certain hours (*p*), and he may make regulations with regard to the muzzling of dogs (*q*)

Advertisements may not be carried in the streets either by a person or a vehicle without his consent (*r*)

He may intervene to summon the owner or occupier of ground on which an unlawful fair is held (*s*), and he may authorise a superintendent to enter unlicensed theatres (*t*), or places used for bear baiting or other unlawful sports (*a*) or gaming houses (*b*), and to take into custody the persons found there.

He is the authority empowered to order the arrest of persons under police supervision, to prescribe the place at which such persons are to report themselves, and to order the search of premises occupied or recently occupied by convicted persons (*c*)

His authority is required for the institution of proceedings under the Lord's Day Observance Act (*d*)

He or an Assistant Commissioner or a district superintendent has power to search for and inspect explosives and to seize and detain such as are liable to forfeiture (*e*)

(*m*) Licensing (Consolidation) Act 1910 (10 Edw 7 & 1 Geo 4, c 21) s 55, and see title INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, p 95

(*n*) Public House Closing Act 1864 (27 & 28 Vict c 64), s 7, and see title INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, p 97

(*o*) Metropolitan Streets Act Amendment Act, 1867 (31 & 32 Vict c 5), s 1, see *Summers v Holborn District Board of Works* [1893] 1 Q B 612, *Keep v St Mary's, Newington, Vestry, Austin v St Mary's Newington, Vestry*, [1891] 2 Q B 524, C A, and see title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(*p*) Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 134) s 5

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 18, and see title ANIMALS Vol 1 p 400

(*r*) Metropolitan Streets Act 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 134), s 9, see *London Hackney Carriage Act, 1853* (16 & 17 Vict c 33) s 16, *Fullon v Kelly* (1889), 5 T L R 325, and see title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(*s*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 39, see title MARKETS AND FAIRS Vol X, pp 16, 51

(*t*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 46, and see title THEATRES AND OTHER PLACES OF ENTERTAINMENT

(*a*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47) s 47

(*b*) *Ibid*, s 48, see the Gaming Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 109), s 6 Gaming Houses Act 1854 (17 & 18 Vict c 38), and see title GAMING AND WAGERING Vol XV, p 291

(*c*) Prevention of Crimes Act 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 112), ss 3, 8, 10, 20, see Prevention of Crime Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 55), s 2, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 303, 414, 415

(*d*) Sunday Observance Prosecution Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 87) and see title TIME

(*e*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 35, Explosives Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 17), ss 73—75, 107, and see title EXPLOSIVES, Vol XIV, pp 391, 392

955 The duties to be performed by the Assistant Commissioners are such as may from time to time be directed by the orders and regulations of the Commissioner, made with the approval of the Home Secretary, and they are performed under the Commissioner's superintendence and control (*f*). In the event of a vacancy in the office of Commissioner, or of the Commissioner's illness or absence, one of the Assistant Commissioners may be authorised by writing under the hand and seal of the Home Secretary to act in the place of the Commissioner (*g*).

SECT. 4.
The Commissioners.

Duties of
Assistant
Commissioners.

956 The following duties may be performed either by the Commissioner or by an Assistant Commissioner, namely, the appointment and swearing in of constables (*h*), the appointment of additional police (at the cost of the applicant) (*i*), the swearing in of members of the Force for duty at the Royal Palaces (*k*), and the suspension or dismissal of any man whom he thinks remiss or negligent in the discharge of, or who is otherwise unfit for, his duty (*l*).

Duties which
Commissioner or
Assistant
Commissioner may
perform

SECT. 5 —Constables

957 It is the duty of the Commissioner to appoint and swear in a sufficient number of constables (*m*), who, when appointed, are subject to the regulations and to the Commissioner's power of suspension or dismissal (*n*). They have all the powers of constables at common law in addition to those given them by statute (*o*).

Appointment.

958 These powers may be exercised by them throughout the Metropolitan Police District and also in the counties of Middlesex, Surrey, Hertford, Essex and Kent (*p*), in Berkshire and Buckinghamshire, and upon the river Thames at any place adjoining the counties of Middlesex, Surrey, Berkshire, Essex and Kent or the City of London (*q*).

Area of
exercise of
powers

(*f*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict. c. 2), s. 6.

(*g*) *Ibid.*, s. 8.

(*h*) *Ibid.*, s. 7, Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 41), s. 4.

(*i*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 47), s. 8. The written requisition of an applicant for the appointment of additional constables need not show urgent necessity therefor (*Allen v. Price* (1854), 10 Exch. 443).

(*k*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 47), s. 7. A constable so sworn may act within the Royal Palaces and in any place within a radius of ten miles from them (*ibid.*).

(*l*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 41), s. 5, and see p. 501, *post*.

(*m*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 41), s. 4. The number at present serving is approximately 20,000.

(*n*) See the text, *supra*. As to delivery of uniform and accoutrements on resignation or dismissal, see p. 501, *post*.

(*o*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 41), s. 4, and see p. 497, *post*. As to exemption from service on juries and from tolls, see p. 500, *post*.

(*p*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 41), s. 4. As to the employment of metropolitan police in dockyards and military stations outside the Metropolis, see p. 467, *ante*.

(*q*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 47), s. 5, see note (*k*), p. 467, *ante*.

SECT 5

Constables
Attendance at
courts
Duties

959 A sufficient number are required to attend the police courts and other criminal courts (*r*), and also the courts of revising barristers, within the Metropolitan Police District (*s*).

960 It is their exclusive duty to execute all summonses and warrants issued in any criminal proceeding or by any magistrate within the Metropolitan Police District (*a*). The constable to whom a summons or warrant is directed or delivered must, except in urgent cases, hand it to his superintendent (*b*), who by indorsement thereon appoints one or more constables to execute it (*b*).

Warrants to compel the appearance of any person charged with an offence before a metropolitan police magistrate may be executed outside the Metropolitan Police District without being locally indorsed (*c*).

Disqualification
for
canvassing

961 Members of the Metropolitan Police Force are not allowed to canvass at any parliamentary or municipal election for any county or borough in any part of which they are authorised to act (*d*).

Special
constables

962 Parish constables cannot be appointed in the Metropolitan Police District (*e*), but special constables may be appointed and may act at any place within the District and in the City of London (*f*).

SECT 6—*Metropolitan Police Fund*

Sources of
revenue

963 The Metropolitan Police Fund is recruited from three sources: (1) a police rate (*g*), (2) an Exchequer contribution (*h*), (3) fines and fees made payable to the police fund (*i*), but by far the greater part of the money is supplied by the first two (*k*).

Police rate

964 The police rate is limited by statute to 11*d* in the £ (*l*), and is levied on the full and full annual value of all property in the

(*r*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 11

(*s*) County Voters Registration Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 36), s 16, and see title ELECTIONS, Vol XII, p 222

(*a*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 12. This does not apply exclusively in the case of a summons issued under the Customs Acts (see title REVENUE), which may be served by a customs officer (Customs Consolidation Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 36), s 227). As to the penalty for neglect of duty, see p 501, *post*.

(*b*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 13

(*c*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 71), s 17, and see title MAGISTRATES Vol XIX, pp 575, 576

(*d*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 18. Metropolitan Police Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 135), s 5, see title ELECTIONS, Vol XII, p 539 and see p 468, *ante*.

(*e*) Parish Constables Act, 1812 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 21.

(*f*) *Ibid*, Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 28

(*g*) See the text, *infra*

(*h*) See p 475, *post*

(*i*) See p 476, *post*

(*k*) The amount actually raised by rate now amounts to about 58 per cent of the total annual income of the fund

(*l*) Under the Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 23, the limit was 8*d* in the pound, but it was raised to 9*d* by the Police Rate Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 67), s 2, and to 11*d* by the Metropolitan Police Act, 1912 (2 Geo 5, c 4). As to the procedure to be followed when the rate first exceeds 10*d* in the £, see *ibid*, s 1 (*b*)

Metropolitan Police District (*m*) In the county of London, the assessment on which it is based is that provided under the Metropolis Valuation Act, 1869 (*n*). Elsewhere, it is that on which the county rate, if any, is based (*o*), and, where there is no county rate, the assessment is one determined by agreement between the Receiver and the overseers of the place, subject to arbitration by the Local Government Board (*p*)

Sect. 6.
Metropolitan
Police Fund.
Assessment.

Property not subject to poor rate is not exempt (*q*), and the rates accruing therefrom are collected by persons appointed for the purpose on the nomination of the Commissioner of Police (*r*)

Collection

Where the property is subject to poor rate the police rate is collected by the overseers of the poor (*a*). The rates when collected are paid into the account of the Bank of England (*b*)

Although the amount of this rate is limited, a special extra rate may be imposed either to pay expenses consequent on a riot (*c*) or to make up a deficiency in the Pension Fund (*d*)

Special extra
rate

965 The Exchequer contribution is paid annually through the medium of the county councils whose area is either wholly or partly within the Metropolitan Police District (*e*). The amount to be paid

Exchequer
contribution

(*m*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 23

(*n*) 32 & 33 Vict c 67, see title RATES AND RATING

(*o*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 23. To the valuation is to be added the amount of the annual value, on which the poor rate has been computed, of all new buildings which have become rateable for the relief of the poor since the last valuation acted upon in assessing the county rate (Metropolitan Police Act, 1857 (20 & 21 Vict c 64), s 11). This does not apply inside the Metropolis itself (Valuation (Metropolis) Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 67), s 77, Sched V). The Commissioner or any person with an order from him is entitled to inspect the county rate of the county part of which is within the Metropolitan Police District (Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 28, Metropolitan Police Act, 1857 (20 & 21 Vict c 64), s 13).

(*p*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 27

(*q*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), ss 30, 32, and Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 2. An assessment so made must be publicly exhibited (Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 31). An appeal against it may be made by an aggrieved party within twenty one days to the next court of quarter sessions, and in such case ten days' notice to the Receiver is required. At quarter sessions the assessment may, if the court thinks fit, be altered so as to relieve the appellant without altering any other part of it (*ibid*, s 34), and see title RATES AND RATING.

(*r*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 32. The appointment is by warrant under the hand of the Commissioner.

(*a*) *Ibid*, s 25. The overseers within the Metropolis are the borough councils (London Government Act, 1899 (62 & 63 Vict c 14), s 11). As to these councils, see title METROPOLIS, Vol XX, pp 402 *et seq*. The overseers are obliged to permit the Receiver to inspect the rates and to make such return as he requires at two days' notice, and, in default, are liable to a penalty of £10 (Metropolitan Police Act, 1857 (20 & 21 Vict c 64), s 14).

(*b*) Metropolitan Police (Receiver) Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 124), s 7

(*c*) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38), s 5, and see p 507, *post*.

(*d*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 19

(*e*) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 24 (2) see also *ibid*, s 93, and as to the manner of payment, see p 483, *post*. As to the area of the Metropolitan Police District, see p. 460, *ante*

SECT 6
Metro-
politan
Police Fund

in each case is a sum annually certified by the Home Secretary to bear the same proportion to the sum raised by rates as the amount of the Exchequer contribution bore to the sum raised by rate in the financial year 1887-1888 (*f*)

In addition, further sums, determined by the Home Secretary with the approval of the Treasury, may be paid into the Metropolitan Police Fund in respect of services rendered by the Metropolitan Police for imperial and national purposes (*g*)

Fees and
finer

966 All fees received and fines imposed in the metropolitan police courts (*h*) or those of Chatham and Sheerness (*i*) are payable to the Metropolitan Police Fund, except such as are payable to the Pension Fund (*j*) and those which are specifically appropriated to some other purpose by the Act under which they are received or imposed (*k*). Other sums payable to the Fund are fines for offences, other than those above excepted, against the Metropolitan Police Acts (*l*), imposed by any metropolitan police court (*m*), fines for

(*f*) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 24 (2) (*k*) Originally the State paid out of the Consolidated Fund the cost of the Thames Police and of the mounted police in the Metropolitan Police District (Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 6), but in 1854 the charge was transferred to the sums annually voted by Parliament (Public Revenue and Consolidated Fund Charges Act, 1854 (17 & 18 Vict c 94), s 1). In 1868 the contribution of the State was fixed at one quarter of the annual sum raised by rates (Police Rate Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 67) s 2), but in 1875 the limit was abolished and the proportion left undetermined (Police Expenses) Act 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 48), s 2, now repealed). As to the calculation of the amount when the police rate exceeds 8d in the £, see Metropolitan Police Act, 1912 (2 Geo 5, c 4), s 1 (1).

(*g*) Police Act, 1909 (9 Edw 7, c 40), s 1.

(*h*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 71), ss 46, 47. Metropolitan Police Courts Act 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 26), s 1. A return is to be made at the times required by the Home Secretary (*ibid*, s 7 (2)). The provisions of the Gaming Act, 1854 (17 & 18 Vict c 38) for the payment of penalties to other purposes do not affect penalties recovered under the Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 71) (*Wray v Ellis* (1858), 1 E & E 276), see title GAMING AND WAGERING, Vol XV, p 289, note (*f*).

(*i*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 26), s 7 (1), as amended by the Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict c 31). After payment out of the Police Fund of the salary of the Clerk of the Police Court the surplus of the fines etc is payable to the Exchequer. As to the Pension Fund, see p 477, *post*.

(*j*) This includes the fines imposed upon drunken persons or upon constables for misconduct, or upon persons for assaults on constables (Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 71), and fees for the execution of summonses and warrants (*ibid*, Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), ss 16, 23 (2)).

(*k*) The exception includes fines payable to a party aggrieved or to an informer (Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 71), s 47), fines recovered under any Act relating to the customs or trade or navigation and sued for by customs officers (*ibid*, s 47), and fines recovered in any proceedings under any Act relating to the customs, excise, stamps, taxes, or post office (*ibid*, s 56).

(*l*) For these Acts, see note (*p*), p 469, *ante*.

(*m*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 71), s 47. This does not apply to penalties recovered before a court of summary jurisdiction other than a metropolitan police court (*Police (Receiver) v Bell* (1872), L R 7 Q B 433, but see Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 37).

offences relating to dog licences, when the proceedings are instituted by a member of the Metropolitan Police Force (*n*), all such fees for the execution of summonses and warrants as are directed by the Home Secretary to be paid to the Fund instead of the Pension Fund (*o*), and all sums for licences issued in respect of hackney and stage carriages within the Metropolitan Police District or the City of London (*p*)

SECT 6
Metropolitan
Police Fund.

SECT 7 — Pension Fund

967 The Pension Fund for the Metropolitan Police Force does not differ from that established for other police forces (*q*), except that the amount of the Exchequer contribution applicable to it is fixed at the annual sum of £150,000 (*r*) and certain fines and fees are made payable to it (*s*)

The Pension
Fund

An appeal against a refusal or withdrawal of a pension lies only to the quarter sessions for the county of London (*t*)

Appeal
against
refusal of
pension

968 The Commissioner and Assistant Commissioners of Police are subject to the general provisions in regard to approved service (*u*), and, except in so far as they are in receipt of salaries from a parliamentary source, to the general provisions in regard to pensions (*a*), but they are entitled to reckon for pension purposes any emoluments to which they may be entitled (*b*) under the Metropolitan Police Staff Superannuation Act, 1875 (*c*)

Relation of
Commissioner
and Assistant
Commissioners to
Pension Fund

969 The Home Secretary has power to make a superannuation allowance to persons other than constables employed under the Commissioner or Receiver, whose salary has been paid as part of the expenses of the Metropolitan Police (*d*) and to the staff of the metropolitan police courts (*e*). The allowance is to be made in accordance with the principles applicable to the Civil Service, and for this purpose the Home Secretary has power to make regulations and from time to time to vary or revoke them (*f*)

Super
annuation
allowance
to persons
other than
constables

(*n*) Dog Licences Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 5), Customs and Inland Revenue Act, 1878 (41 & 42 Vict c 15), s 23, see title ANIMALS, Vol I, pp 403, 404

(*o*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 71), s 46, Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), ss 16, 23 (2)

(*p*) Metropolitan Public Carriage Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 115), ss 2, 6 (1), and see title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(*q*) See p 509, *post*

(*r*) Local Taxation (Customs and Excise), Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 60),

R 4

(*s*) See note (*j*), p 476, *ante*

(*t*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 32 (3)

(*u*) *Ibid*, s 12 The certificate of approved service of an Assistant Commissioner may be given by the Commissioner (*ibid*)

(*a*) *Ibid* In the case of the Commissioner and such of the Assistant Commissioners whose salary is payable from a parliamentary source (see note (*o*), p 467, *ante*), the rateable deductions from pay are payable to the Exchequer (Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45) s 32 (6))

(*b*) *Ibid*, s 32 (5)

(*c*) Metropolitan Police Staff (Superannuation) Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 28)

(*d*) *Ibid*, s 1, Sched

(*e*) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 26), s 5

(*f*) Police Act, 1909 (9 Edw 7, c 40), s 4.

Part III.—City of London Police.

SECT 1.

Area.

Area

SECT 1—Area

970 The City of London has always been treated as a separate entity, and the right of maintaining civil order within its precincts is the exclusive privilege of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons in Common Council assembled (*g*) It was expressly excluded from the area comprised in the Metropolitan Police District (*h*), and a separate police force was established for it in 1839 (*i*). Its distinct existence for police purposes has been secured by statute on repeated occasions in more recent times (*k*).

SECT 2—Government.

Control of
Common-
Council

971 The force is under the management and control of a Commissioner appointed by the Common Council, with the approval of the Home Secretary (*l*), and consists of such sufficient number of fit and able men as the Common Council may from time to time direct (*m*) It is maintained entirely by the City (*n*) and is not subject to inspection by the Home Office inspector (*o*) A police committee of the Common Council exists for the purpose of exercising such powers in connection with the police as may be delegated to it by the Common Council (*p*)

The Com-
missioner

972. The Commissioner may be appointed a justice of the peace on the petition of the Court of Aldermen and the Common Council (*q*), but his jurisdiction as such is subject to the same restrictions as that of the Commissioner of Metropolitan Police (*r*)

His position
as justice,

He is sworn in before a judge of the High Court (*s*), and takes a special oath (*a*) in addition to those taken by a justice of the peace (*b*)

(*g*) See stats (1736) 10 Geo 2, c 22, and (1768) 8 Geo 3, c 21 As to the Common Council, see title METROPOLIS, Vol XX, pp 426 *et seq*

(*h*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 2

(*i*) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv),

(*k*) See City of London Traffic Regulation Act, 1863 (26 & 27 Vict c cxxv), Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 134), Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 93, Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 39

(*l*) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 3

(*m*) *Ibid.*, s 9

(*n*) *Ibid.*

(*o*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 32

(*p*) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 56

(*q*) *Ibid.*, s 6

(*r*) As to these, see p 470, *ante*

(*s*) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 5

(*a*) *Ibid.* The special oath is in the following terms—"I, A B, do swear that I will faithfully and honestly according to the best of my skill and knowledge execute all the powers and duties of Commissioner of the City Police under and by virtue of" (the above Act)

(*b*) *Ibid.*, s 6 As to these oaths, see Promissory Oaths Act, 1863 (31 & 32 Vict c 72), and title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 539, 543,

973 He appoints the number of men directed by the Common Council (c) and makes regulations for their management (d) He may suspend or dismiss any man whom he thinks remiss or negligent in the discharge of or otherwise unfit for his duty, but must report such action from time to time to the Lord Mayor (d).

SECT. 3
Govern-
ment.

Appointment
of officers.

974 He has power to make regulations for the ordering of street traffic during hours of public worship and on the occasion of processions, rejoicings, and illuminations (e), and generally to enforce the regulations in regard to traffic made by the Court of Aldermen (f) He has also similar powers to those possessed by the Commissioner of Metropolitan Police for authorising constables to enter unlicensed theatres and gaming houses (g)

Commis-
sioner's
powers.

975 In the absence or illness of the Commissioner, the officer of the Force next in authority may act in his place for such time as may be appointed by the Lord Mayor and sanctioned by the Home Secretary (h)

Temporary
Commissioner

SECT. 3—*Special Powers*

976 The constables have all the powers of a constable at common law or by statute (i), and are sworn to act for all places within the City and Liberties of the City of London (k)

General
power within
the City

They may arrest idle persons who are disturbing the peace, or whom they suspect of having committed or intending to commit a breach of the peace, or whom they find between sunset and 8 A.M. lying or loitering in any highway, yard, or place and not giving a satisfactory account of themselves (l), also persons committing certain specified street offences (m) or throwing mud into the river Thames (n), and they have power to search and detain any vessel, boat, cart or carriage on which they suspect the presence of stolen property (o), and to kill dogs that are mad or have been bitten by mad dogs (p)

Special
powers of
arrest and
search

(c) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. xiv), s. 9

(d) *Ibid.*, s. 14

(e) *Ibid.*, ss. 20—22, and see title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(f) Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 134), s. 3, and see p. 470, *ante*; see, however, the City of London (Street Traffic) Act, 1909 (9 Edw. 7, c. lxxvii), which gives to the Court of Aldermen the right to make regulations under the above Act, alters the hours during which cattle may not be driven through the streets (8 a.m. to 8 p.m.), and supersedes the regulations in regard to itinerant traders, and see title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(g) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. xciv), ss. 20—22, see p. 472, *ante*, and see titles GAMING AND WAGERING, Vol. XV, p. 291, THEATRES AND OTHER PLACES OF ENTERTAINMENT

(h) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. xciv), s. 25

(i) As to these, see p. 497, *post*. As to penalties for neglect of duty and unauthorised possession of uniform and accoutrements, see p. 501, *post*

(k) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. xciv), s. 9.

(l) *Ibid.*, s. 18

(m) *Ibid.*, s. 35

(n) *Ibid.*, s. 45

(o) *Ibid.*, s. 44

(p) *Ibid.*, s. 42

**SECT 3.
Special
Powers.**

Special
constables
Electoral
rights

977. There is no ^{*}power to appoint parish constables in the City of London (q), but special constables appointed either in the City or the Metropolitan Police District have authority to act as such throughout either area (r)

978 The Commissioner and all the members of the Force are forbidden to canvass at any parliamentary or municipal election (s), but they are not disentitled to vote (a)

SECT 4 — Finance

Treasurer

979 The treasurer of the City of London Police is the City Chamberlain (b), whose accounts in relation to the police are laid annually before Parliament (c) and before the Common Council (d)

Police Fund

980 The Police Fund is supplied, as to a quarter of the sum required, by payment out of the revenues of the City of London (e), and as to the remaining three quarters by a police rate not exceeding 8d in the £ and assessed in the several wards by the alderman, or his deputy, and the majority of the common councilmen of each ward (f) The police committee of the Common Council may rectify or amend the rate (g), but must report the fact to the ward authorities, who may appeal against the alteration to the Court of Aldermen (h) The decision of the latter is conclusive (i)

Pension Fund

981 The Pension Fund of the City of London Police is not governed by the statutes relating to the pension funds of other police forces (k) It is maintained out of regular deductions from the pay of the constables, rateable deductions from their pay during sickness, fines imposed on constables, or for assaults on constables, or on drunken persons in a court of summary jurisdiction in the City, and from the proceeds of the sale of police clothing (l) The City Chamberlain is the treasurer (l)

(q) Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 21

(r) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 28, and see p 474, *ante*

(s) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 8

(a) Police Disabilities Removal Acts, 1887 (50 & 51 Vict c 9) and 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 6), see title ELECTIONS, Vol XII, p 311, and see pp 468, 474, *ante*

(b) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 91

(c) *Ibid*, s 92

(d) *Ibid*, s 93

(e) *Ibid*, s 57

(f) *Ibid* s 58 The manner in which the rate is to be made and recovered is set out in *ibid*, ss 58—84, see title RATES AND RATING The expenses of the ward officials are payable out of the police rate (City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), ss 82, 85) The Common Council and police committee have power to inspect the rate (*ibid*, s 81)

(g) *Ibid*, s 68 The police committee or the Common Council may remit rates on the ground of poverty or for any other sufficient cause (*ibid*, s 77)

(h) *Ibid*, s 69

(i) *Ibid*

(k) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 39; see p 509, *post*

(l) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 11

982 The Common Council or the police committee may order the superannuation of any constable on the recommendation of the Commissioner, and may fix within prescribed limits the amount of his superannuation allowance (*m*)

SECT. 4.
FINANCE.
Super-
annuation.

If a constable is retired from the force owing to disablement consequent on the execution of his duties, the Common Council or police committee may award him a superannuation allowance not exceeding the amount of his pay (*n*)

983 Constables who have received wounds or injuries, or shown extraordinary diligence, or incurred unusual expenses in executing the orders of the Commissioner in the arrest of offenders and in the preservation of the peace, may be awarded a special allowance by the Court of Aldermen, but it must not exceed the amount recommended by the Commissioner (*o*)

Special
allowances.

984 The police authority in the case of damage by riot is the Common Council (*p*), and application for compensation is to be made to the town clerk of London (*q*) Payments made as compensation are made from the police rate (*r*)

Authority
in case of
damage by
riot

985 Apart from the general provisions for mutual assistance between police forces (*s*), special provision is made for co-operation between the City of London and the Metropolitan Police in case of emergency (*t*)

Co-operation
with Metro-
politan
Police

Part IV.—County Police.

986 A police organisation for the counties came into being in 1839, when the powers of county justices to appoint special constables were transformed and extended (*u*)

Development
of county
police force.

The new organisation, which was originally permissive, was made

(*m*) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 12 The amount awarded is graduated according to the length of service, but if the constable is under sixty years of age it is unlawful to make any allowance except upon the certificate of the Commissioner that he is incapacitated from further performance of his duty In no case is a constable entitled as of right to any superannuation allowance (*ibid*)

(*n*) *Ibid*

(*o*) *Ibid*, s 13

(*p*) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38), Sched I, and see pp 507, 508, *post*

(*q*) Home Office Regulation, 30th June, 1894

(*r*) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38), Sched I

(*s*) See p 491, *post*

(*t*) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 21 The Home Secretary, at the request of the Lord Mayor, may authorise the employment of Metropolitan Police in the City, and the Lord Mayor, at the request of the Home Secretary, may authorise the employment of City police in the Metropolitan Police District In either case the constables whose services are lent have the powers of the constables of the area in which they are called upon to serve

(*u*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 93), ss 1, 2, and see p 492, *post*

PART IV
County
Police.

Area.

compulsory in all the counties in 1856 (*b*), and there are now sixty county police forces in England and Wales (*c*).

987 The area for which the county police force acts is that which is under the authority of the county council (*d*), but outlying parts of counties, which are not conveniently situated for supervision by the police of their own county, may, by agreement between the respective standing joint committees, be supervised by the police of an adjoining county (*e*), and boroughs which have no police force of their own may, by agreement between the county and borough councils, be placed under the supervision of the county police (*f*)

Control.

988 When formed, the organisation was put under the control of the county justices at quarter sessions (*g*) and remained so until 1889, when this part of the justices' jurisdiction was transferred to the standing joint committee of the county council and of the justices at quarter sessions (*h*)

Powers of
standing
joint com-
mittee

The standing joint committee now appoints the chief constable (*i*) and, with the approval of the Home Secretary, fixes the strength of the police force, the number of subordinate officers with the gradations of rank, and the duties and pay attached to each rank (*k*)

The standing joint committee is the authority which provides police stations and lock-up houses (*l*), and the standing joint

(*b*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 1 The provisions of the Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), supersede those of all local Acts where the latter are contradictory to it (*ibid*, s 31)

(*c*) Police forces have been established for all of the fifty three counties of England and Wales except those of London and Middlesex, which are wholly within the Metropolitan Police District, see p 467, *ante* The counties of York and Lincoln have separate forces for each of their respective ridings or divisions, and the Isle of Ely (see the County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 34), the soke of Peterborough (see the County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 30), and the Isle of Wight each maintain a separate force

(*d*) This does not apply to the counties of London and Middlesex, nor to such parts of the counties of Hertfordshire, Essex, Kent, and Surrey as are within the Metropolitan Police District, see p 467, *ante* Detached parts of counties were formerly placed under the supervision of the police of the county in which they were physically situated (County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 27, County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 2) but this provision has been rendered superfluous in practice owing to the rearrangement of county boundaries made in pursuance of the Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), see *ibid*, ss 50—54

(*e*) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 2

(*f*) See p 490 *post*

(*g*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 2

(*h*) Local Government Act 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), ss 9, 30, and see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, pp 348 *et seq*, 370, MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 631

(*i*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 4 More than one may be appointed, and one may be appointed to serve in more than one county (*ibid* County Police Act, 1857 (20 Vict c 2), s 2) Thus, Cumberland and Westmoreland have the same chief constable, as also have the three parts of Lincolnshire, and the police of the soke of Peterborough are under the chief constable of Northamptonshire

(*k*) County Police Act 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 26

(*l*) Petty Sessions and Lock up House Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 22).

committees of adjoining counties, or the standing joint committee of a county and the council of an adjoining borough having a separate commission of the peace, may combine to provide such buildings on their borders for their mutual convenience (*m*)

PART IV
County
Police.

989 The rules for the government, pay, clothing, accoutrements, and necessities of the county police forces are laid down by the Home Secretary with a view to uniformity, but they may be modified by him, on the application of the standing joint committee of any county, to meet the needs of that county (*n*)

Rules for
government.

990. At the discretion of the standing joint committee the county may be divided into police districts, with a greater or smaller number of constables in each as they think fit (*o*) Where this division is in force, the whole county is charged with the general expenses of the police, and the police themselves are available for general county work, but the particular districts must pay for the salaries and clothing of the police actually serving within them (*p*)

Division of
county into
police
districts

991 The cost of the county police force is defrayed out of the police account of the county fund (*q*) There is paid into that account annually by the county council a sum equal to half the cost of the pay and clothing of the police (*r*), and the sum is repayable to the county council out of Exchequer contributions to the local authorities (*s*), subject to the certificate of the Home Secretary as to the efficiency of the force (*t*) The remainder of the sum required is raised by a police rate, which is levied by the county council on the same basis as that for the county rate, and collected by the county treasurer from the guardians of the poor (*u*)

Cost of police
force

Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 3, County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 12

(*m*) Petty Sessions and Lock up House Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 22), Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 3, County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 12, Lock up Houses Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 101), County and Borough Police Act 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), ss 22, 23, and see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX p 349

(*n*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 3, *see the Police Act, 1890* (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 31

(*o*) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), ss 27, 28, Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 9, *Re Local Government Act, 1888, Ex parte Leicestershire County Council and Standing Joint Committee of County of Leicester*, [1891] 1 Q B 53 Police districts may have their boundaries altered or united, as the standing joint committee may from time to time think fit (County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 4, County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 1) A single parish may be constituted a police district (*Ex parte Knowling* (1860), 6 B & S 195)

(*p*) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 28

(*q*) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), ss 24, 68, and see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 353 The county treasurer must maintain a separate police account (County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 83), and carry to it all fees and fines which are payable to the police As to the fees and other sums payable to the pension fund, see p 514, *post*

(*r*) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 24 (2) (*i*)

(*s*) *Ibid*, s 24 (2)

(*t*) *Ibid*, s 25 As to this certificate and the consequences if it is withheld, see p 517, *post*

(*u*) County Rates Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict. c 33) The rate is a uniform

PART IV
County
Police.

Chief
constable.
Powers

Duties.

Disqualifica-
tions and
privileges

Deputy chief
constable.

992. The chief constable is in command of the force and is responsible for its general dispositions and government (*b*), subject to the rules made by the Home Secretary (*c*) and the approval of the standing joint committee (*d*)

He appoints the subordinate officers and the rank and file with the approval of justices at petty sessions (*e*), but he may dismiss all or any of them at his pleasure (*f*)

It is his duty to make a monthly return to the clerk of the peace, based upon similar returns made to him by his superintendents, of the number and disposition of the men in his command (*g*), and to make a quarterly report to the standing joint committee on such matters concerning the police as the standing joint committee may require (*h*)

He must attend every court of general or quarter sessions (*h*) and comply with the directions given him in regard to the police to be present at assizes (*i*), and must obey all lawful directions given to him, whether by the standing joint committee, or by the justices at quarter sessions, or the county council (*l*)

He may not have any other profession or employment (*l*) or canvass at parliamentary elections (*m*), and is exempt from serving on a coroner's or other jury (*n*) The statutory provisions relating to the superannuation and pension of constables apply to chief constables (*o*)

993 With the approval of the standing joint committee, the chief constable may appoint one of his superintendents to act as his deputy in the event of his incapacity, illness, or necessary absence from the county (*p*) A deputy so appointed may act in

rate subject to the existence of separate police districts, see County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88) s 28 and p 483, *ante* But the rate is not levied in the Metropolitan Police District, or in detached parts of counties contributing to the police rate of another county, or in any municipal borough (*ibid*, s 3) As to the county rate generally, see titles LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 359, RATES AND RATING

(*b*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 6

(*c*) *Ibid*, see p 517, *post*

(*d*) *Ibid*, see Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 30

(*e*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 6

(*f*) *Ibid* He has also power to suspend a constable whom he thinks negligent or remiss, and to impose a fine up to the amount of a week's pay, or to degrade an offender to a lower rank (County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 26)

(*g*) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), ss 31, 32

(*h*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 17

(*i*) Sheriffs Act, 1887 (50 & 51 Vict c 55), s 9

(*l*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 17, County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 7, Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 9 (2)

(*l*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 10

(*m*) *Ibid*, s 9, and see title ELECTIONS, Vol XII, p 311 The penalty for disobedience to this provision is £20

(*n*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 10

(*o*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 12 As to these, see pp 519 *et seq*, *post*.

(*p*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 93), s 7.

the event of a vacancy in the office of chief constable owing to death or otherwise, but not for a longer period than three months (*g*)

**PART IV.
County
Police.**

Subordinate
officials

994. Subordinate members of a county police force are sworn in before a county justice (*r*), and are required to make a declaration as to previous public employment (*s*). While serving as constable they may not exercise any other profession or employment (*a*), and are exempt from service on a coroner's or other jury or in the military forces of the Crown (*b*)

They have power to act throughout the area of the county in which they serve, and in any adjoining county (*c*). They have also power to act in boroughs situated wholly or partly within the county where they serve, and must obey the lawful commands of justices exercising jurisdiction within any such borough (*d*), but they must not be required to act in any borough having its own police force except in execution of the warrants of the county justices or by the order of their chief constable or superintendent (*e*).

Lower.

Part V.—Borough Police.

995 The system of police in boroughs was formerly dependent upon the common law right of the justices to appoint constables, and upon the terms of the charter of each borough. In 1835 the

Development
of borough
police force

(*g*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 7

(*r*) *Ibid*, s 8. Instead of taking an oath they may now make a declaration (Promissory Oaths Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 72), s 12), and see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 543

(*s*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 26, sched II. As to penalties for neglect of duty and unlawful possession of arms and accoutrements, see p 501, *post*

(*a*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 10. This provision does not prevent their acting as inspectors of weights and measures, if appointed by the proper county authorities (*R v Jarvis* (1854), 11 & B 40)

(*b*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 10

(*c*) *Ibid*, s 8. The police of any of the border counties—Northumberland, Cumberland, Berwick, Roxburgh, and Dumfries—have power in any of those counties to execute warrants of arrest for an offence committed in the county which they serve (Police (Scotland) Act, 1857 (20 & 21 Vict c 72), s 11)

(*d*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 6

(*e*) County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 2. The chief constable or superintendent is given power to order his constables to act in such a borough in cases of special emergency when required to do so by the watch committee (*ibid*). The county police cannot, except in the case of fresh pursuit (see Indictable Offences Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 42),

10), execute a warrant in a borough which maintains a separate police force unless the warrant is indorsed by a borough justice (*R v Crompton* 1890, 5 Q B D 341, C C R), and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 308, MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 564

PART V
Borough
Police

organisation of the system was placed in the hands of the watch committee of the borough council of every municipal borough (*f*)

This arrangement, which was specially preserved when the county police system was established (*g*), is still maintained in the case of those boroughs which have a separate police force. There are, however, many boroughs which do not maintain one. Thus, boroughs with a population of less than 10,000 in the year 1881 which formerly maintained a separate police force were, in 1889, transferred for police purposes to the county (*h*), and boroughs incorporated since 1882 have not the right to maintain a separate police force unless they contained a population of more than 20,000 at the date of the last census taken before incorporation (*i*). Power has also been given by statute for the consolidation of county and borough police forces (*k*), and this power has been taken advantage of in very many cases.

Boroughs
with separate
police force

There remain, however, 128 cases of boroughs which maintain a separate police force (*l*)

(*f*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1835 (5 & 6 Will 4, c 76), s 76, now repealed and replaced by the Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50) s 190

(*g*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 24

(*h*) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 39 (1)

(*i*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 215

(*k*) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 14, County and Borough Police Act 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 5. But a separate police force in a borough with a population of more than 15,000 persons at the last census is not to be superseded without the authority of the Home Secretary (*ibid* s 19), and see, further, p 518, *post*

(*l*) The following are the boroughs maintaining a separate police force —

Ashton under Lyne	Chesterfield	Kendal
Barnsley	Chipping Wycombe	Kidderminster
Barnstaple	Ciltheroc	King's Lynn
Barnrow	Colchester	*Kingston upon Hull
*Bath	Congleton	Lancaster
Bedford	*Coventry	Leamington
Berwick upon Tweed	*Derby	*Leeds
Beverley	*Devonport	*Leicester
*Birkenhead	Dewsbury	*Lincoln
*Birmingham	Doncaster	*Liverpool
*Blackburn	Dover	Louth
*Blackpool	Durham	Luton
*Bolton	*Eastbourne	Macclesfield
Bootle	*Easter	Maldstone
Boston	Folkestone	*Manchester
*Bournemouth	*Gateshead	Margate
*Bradford	Glossop	*Merthyr Tydfil
Bridgewater	Grantham	*Middlesbrough
*Brighton	Gravesend	Neath
*Bristol	*Grimsby (Great)	Newark
*Burnley	Guildford	Newcastle under-
*Burton upon Trent	*Halifax	Lyme
Cambridge	Hartlepool	*Newcastle upon-Tyne
*Canterbury	*Hastings	*Newport (Mon)
*Cardiff	Hereford	New Windsor
Carlisle	Hove	*Northampton
Carmarthen.	*Huddersfield	*Norwich
*Chester	*Ipswich	*Nottingham

PART V.
Borough
Police.

996. The area for which a borough police force acts is that covered by the borough itself, but borough constables are entitled, and may be called upon, to act in any place in a county area within seven miles of the borough (*m*)

Area

997 The authority which controls the force is the watch committee of the borough council (*n*), which has the power of appointment (*o*) and dismissal (*p*) of borough constables. It may impose fines on, or reduce the rank of (*q*), or suspend (*r*) a constable for negligent performance of his duties, and may, on the recommendation of the borough superintendent of police and with the approval of the borough council, grant rewards for meritorious conduct (*s*)

Controlling
authority

998 The force is maintained out of the borough fund (*t*) to which the borough rate (*a*) and watch rate, if any (*b*), are payable,

Finance.

*Oldham	Saint Albans	Tiverton
*Oxford	*Saint Helens	Tunbridge Wells
Penzance	*Salford	*Tynemouth
Peterborough	Salisbury	Wakefield
*Plymouth	Scarbrough	*Walsall
Poole	*Sheffield	*Warrington
*Portsmouth	Shrewsbury	*West Hartlepool
*Preston	*Southampton	Weymouth
Ramsgate	*Southport	*Wigan
*Reading	*South Shields	Winchester
Reigate	Stalybridge	*Wolverhampton
*Rochdale	*Stockport	*Worcester
Rochester	*Stoke upon Trent	*Warrmouth (Great)
*Rotherham	*Sunderland	*York
Ryde	*Swansea	

The boroughs marked * are county boroughs. There are seventy-five of such boroughs, but seven are not included in this list, namely, Croydon and West Ham, which are in the Metropolitan Police District (see p 467, *ante*), and Bury, Dudley, Gloucester, Smethwick, and West Bromwich, the police forces of which are consolidated with county police forces as to consolidation, see p 490, *post*.

(*m*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 191 (2)

(*n*) *Ibid*, ss 190–192, County and Borough Police Acts, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), and 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32). The watch committee consists of the mayor and not more than one third of the members of the borough council (Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 190 (1)). It acts by a majority of those present, three constituting a quorum (*ibid*, s 190 (2)), and see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, pp 311, 321)

(*o*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 191 (1)

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 191 (4)

(*q*) County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 26. The amount of the fine must not exceed one week's pay. The punishments are in addition to any others to which the offending constable may be liable (*ibid*).

(*r*) *Ibid*. This power may be exercised by any two justices having jurisdiction in the borough (Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 191 (4)).

(*s*) County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 24.

(*t*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 140, Sched V, Part II, and, as to the borough fund, see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 319.

(*a*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 144.

(*b*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), ss 197–200,

PART V
Borough
Police.

Treasurer.

but a sum equal to half the cost of the pay and clothing of the force is repayable annually to the borough council out of the Exchequer contribution to the local authority, subject to the certificate of the Home Secretary of the efficiency of the force (c)

The treasurer is the borough treasurer, by whom payments may be made on account of expenses of the police subject to an order of the borough council (d). The power to provide police stations and lock-up houses is vested in the council of any borough having a separate commission of the peace (e)

Powers by
virtue of
special Act
and incorpor-
ation of Town
Police Clauses
Act, 1847

999 The regulations affecting the control and discipline of borough police forces are commonly contained in special local Acts passed with that object, but an adoptive public Act (f) (hereafter referred to as "the adoptive Act"), passed for the purpose of securing uniformity in such regulations, has been adopted by many boroughs and incorporated in their special Acts

Powers of
local
authorities

Under provisions of the adoptive Act the persons to whom authority is given by the special Act have power to appoint and dismiss constables and a superintendent constable (g), to pay the expenses of prosecutions, and to make such allowances and grant such wages or salaries to the constables as they may think fit (h). They may also, if they think it necessary, apply for the appointment of additional constables by the chief constable of the county in which the borough is situated, and pay for the cost of them (i)

Powers of
constables

The powers of constables appointed under the adoptive Act, or a special local Act incorporating it, may be exercised in the area limited by the special Act and in any place not more than five miles outside it (l)

The adoptive Act contains numerous provisions relating to street offences, fires, places of public resort, hackney carriages and public bathing which, irrespective of any local Act, are operative in every urban district (l)

General duties
of constables

1000 In addition to the duties placed upon the police by the adoptive Act or any special local Act, there is a general duty placed

and see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 319. The amount of it is limited to 8d in the £1 per annum (Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 197 (3), and see title RATES AND RATING)

(c) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 24 (2) (i), and see p 517, *post*

(d) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 149 Sched V and see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 313

(e) Petty Sessions and Lock up House Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 22), s 3. As to joint lock up houses, see pp 482, 483, *ante*

(f) Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89)

(g) *Ibid*, s 6

(h) *Ibid*, s 9

(i) *Ibid*, s 7, see County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 19, and see p 491, *post*

(k) Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 8

(l) *Ibid*, ss 21—69, Public Health Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 5), s 171, and see titles HIGHWAYS, STREETS, AND BRIDGES, Vol XVI, pp 166, 197, PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION, STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC, and see p 502, *post*.

PART V.
Borough
Police.

upon borough constables to perform all such duties connected with the police in their respective boroughs as the watch committee may from time to time prescribe (*m*)

In particular, the watch committee may employ constables who consent to perform such service wholly or partially as firemen (*n*)

1001 The watch committee or borough police authority are required to make quarterly returns to the Home Secretary of the police regulations made by them (*o*) Returns as to regulations

1002 Borough constables are sworn in on appointment before a justice having jurisdiction in the borough (*p*), and may be required to make and sign a declaration as to their previous service in a police force or public employment (*q*) Swearing in of constables

1003 Borough constables are disqualified from canvassing (*r*), but not from voting, at a parliamentary or municipal election in the constituency or borough in which they serve (*s*) Electoral rights

(*m*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 7, compare *Andrews v Nott Bower*, [1895] 1 Q B 888, C A, and see pp 497 *et seq*, *post* As to penalty for neglect of duty, and for unlawful possession of uniform and accoutrements, see p 501, *post*

(*n*) Police Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 10), s 2 As to the regulations in regard to the pensions of constables so employed, see p 514, *post* Fire police may be employed in places where the Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), is in force, outside the area of the borough and in such case the expenses incurred may be claimed and recovered from the owner of the premises in which the fire has happened In the event of disagreement as to the amount due, or to the propriety of sending the fire police to the premises, the decision of the justices of the peace is final (Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 33)

(*o*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 192 The dates on which these are to be made are the 1st January, the 1st April, the 1st July, and the 1st October in each year

(*p*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 191 (2) see Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 8 The swearing in now takes the form of a declaration to be made in accordance with the Promissory Oaths Act 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c. 72), s 12, and see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 543

(*q*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 26, Sched II

(*r*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 9

(*s*) Police Disabilities Removal Acts, 1887 (50 & 51 Vict c 9), and 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 6) Under the first of these Acts provision is made for enabling constables on duty to vote, see title ELECTIONS, Vol XII, p 311.

Part VI.—Consolidation and Mutual Assistance of Police Forces.

SECT 1

SECT 1—*Consolidation of County and Borough Forces.*

Consolidation of County and Borough Forces

By agreement

1004 The police forces of any incorporated borough may be consolidated with that of the county in which it is situated or which it adjoins, by mutual agreement (c) between the borough council on the one hand and the standing joint committee of the county council and county justices at quarter sessions on the other (d). The resolution for consolidation does not require more than a bare majority in either case, and is effective upon the exchange of a duly executed memorandum of agreement (e).

By Order in Council

A borough council which has sought to obtain such a consolidation agreement without success may apply to the Home Secretary who has power to inquire into the terms of the proposed agreement and report thereon to the Sovereign in Council (f). The Sovereign in Council may thereupon fix the terms and conditions under which consolidation shall take place and the date as from which it shall take effect (f).

Control of consolidated force

1005 Where the police of a county and borough have been consolidated, the entire force is under the control of the chief constable of the county (g), and while the watch committee of the borough retains the right of appointing borough constables, in the absence of a provision in the agreement giving it to the chief constable, the chief constable has the sole right of dismissal (g). Whenever he dismisses a borough constable it is his duty to report the fact, with his reasons for it, to the mayor of the borough, and any constable so dismissed is disqualified from reappointment by the watch committee without the chief constable's assent (g).

Determination of agreement

1006 A consolidation agreement which has been voluntarily concluded may be determined by six months' notice in writing on either side (h), but the notice of discontinuance must have been carried by a three-fourths majority of the side giving the notice (i).

(c) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 14.

(d) *Ibid*, see Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 30.

(e) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 14. The memorandum must be signed on behalf of the county by two or more members of the standing joint committee and countersigned by the clerk of the peace, and must be under the common seal of the borough (*ibid*).

(f) County and Borough Police Act 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 5.

(g) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 15.

(h) *Ibid*, s 14. The notice, if given by the county, must be under the hand of one or more members of the standing joint committee and countersigned by the clerk of the peace, if given by the borough, it must be under the common seal of the borough (*ibid*).

(i) *Ibid*.

and the determination of the agreement must receive the sanction of the Home Secretary (*h*)

1007. Where the consolidation is in consequence of an Order in Council, its terms may be varied from time to time, or it may be determined by a subsequent Order in Council (*l*)

SECT 2—*Assistance of One Police Force by Another*

1008 Power is given by statute to police authorities to enable them, by agreement, to give assistance to one another in emergencies (*m*)

Arrangements may be made for the addition, to the force requiring aid, of such number of constables as may be agreed on between the authorities (*n*) The agreement may be in view of a particular emergency or it may be a standing agreement, and it may be made with reference to recurring or unforeseen events or otherwise as may be thought expedient (*o*) It may contain such terms as are thought expedient in regard to the command, expenses and pensions of the additional constables (*p*)

During the time the agreement is in force, the additional constables have all the powers, duties and privileges of the constables of the force to which they are added (*q*)

The police authority receiving the assistance is entitled to receive an Exchequer contribution equal to half the cost of the pay and clothing of the men whose services it enjoys (*r*)

SECT. 1. Consolidation of County and Borough Forces

Determina-
tion or
variation of
Order in
Council²

Assistance in
emergencies
Nature of
agreement for
additional
constables

Powers of
additional
constables

Exchequer
contribution

Part VII. —Special Constables: Additional Police.

SECT 1—*Special Constables*

1009 The authorities charged with the maintenance of the peace have always had the power of appointing special constables to supplement the regular peace officers in an emergency (*a*).

Grounds for
exercise of
appointment
in emergency

(*h*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 20

(*l*) *Ibid*, s 5

(*m*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 25 (1), (5) The agreement may be made by one police authority with several other police authorities at once (*ibid*, s 25 (5)) The power to conclude such an agreement may be delegated by a police authority to its chief officer of police by general or special order, and with or without any exception, restriction or conditions (*ibid*, s 25 (3)) For the mutual co-operation of the Metropolitan Police Force and the City of London Police, see p 481, *ante* As to agreements between county police authorities and borough police authorities, see p 490, *ante*

(*n*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 25 (1)

(*o*) *Ibid*, s 25 (2)

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 25 (4)

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 25 (1)

(*r*) *R on the Prosecution of Rotherham Corporation v West Riding of Yorkshire County Council*, [1895] 1 Q B 805, C A, and see p 483, *ante*

(*a*) Compare Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 22,

SECT. 1.
Special Constables. At the present day the power may be exercised by any two or more borough or county justices, upon the oath of any credible witness that any tumult, riot, or felony has occurred or may reasonably be apprehended in any place within their jurisdiction, if they are of opinion that the regular peace officers are insufficient for the preservation of the peace and the protection of life and property (*b*)

Mode of appointment **1010** The appointment is made by precept in writing under the hands of the justices, who may appoint as many special constables as they think fit (*c*) Notice of the appointment and the reasons for it must be sent to the Home Secretary and the lord lieutenant of the county (*c*)

Number appointed. **1011** All persons resident in the place or neighbourhood of the place, who are liable to be nominated as parish constables, are eligible (*d*) and compelled to serve (*e*), and persons who are non-resident but willing to serve may be appointed (*f*)

Qualification Where appointment has already been made of the resident persons who are eligible, those who are by law exempt may be appointed on the authority of the Home Secretary (*g*)

Annual appointment of special constables in boroughs **1012** In boroughs, two of the borough justices in October of every year are to appoint as many as they think fit of the inhabitants who are not legally exempt to act as special constables (*h*), but such persons are only to act upon a warrant of one of the

Special Constables Act, 1820 (1 Geo 4, c 37) (repealed), Constables Expenses Act, 1801 (41 Geo 3, c 78)

(*b*) Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 1, and see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 571

(*c*) Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 1

(*d*) *Ibid*, see p 464, *ante*

(*e*) Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4 c 41), s 8, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 487, note (*i*) On conviction before two justices they are liable to a fine of £5 for refusing to serve (Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 8), but the proceedings must be begun within two months (*ibid*, s 15) The opinion was expressed in *R v Vincent* (1839), 9 C & P 91, *per* ALDERSON, B, that the justices ought to cause them to be indicted Voters at a parliamentary election in any place are exempt from all liability to serve as special constables for that place during the period of the election unless they consent so to serve (Corrupt Practices Prevention Act, 1854 (17 & 18 Vict c 102), s 8)

(*f*) Special Constables Act, 1835 (5 & 6 Will 4 c 43)

(*g*) Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), ss 2, 3 The Home Secretary may act on the representation of two justices and order the appointment of persons ordinarily exempted in the places named by the justices Such persons are liable to serve for two months only The Home Secretary has the further power of directing the lord lieutenant to have special constables sworn throughout a whole county or any part of it, irrespective of whether any persons are ordinarily exempt or not In such case the persons appointed are liable to serve for three months

(*h*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 196 (1) and see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 571 This does not supersede the power of borough justices to create special constables in an emergency under the Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41) (*R v Hulton* (1849), 13 Q B 592), see p 491, *ante*.

borough justices, in which such justice must recite that in his opinion the strength of the borough police force is at the time insufficient (s)

SECT. 1
Special
Constables.

1013 A declaration is required to be made by special constables on their appointment (k), default in making which renders the offender liable to a penalty not exceeding £5 (l)

Declaration
on appoint-
ment

1014 Except in the case of special constables appointed under the authority of the Home Secretary (m), the appointment subsists until it is discontinued or suspended at a special sessions of justices held for that purpose (n) Notice of the discontinuance or suspension must be sent to the Home Secretary and the lord lieutenant of the county (o)

Duration of
appointment.

1015 Special constables have all the powers which, at common law or by statute, an ordinary constable has in a county (p), and may act with the like powers in an adjoining county by the order of the justices of the adjoining county (q)

Area as
regards
powers

When appointed by a justice or justices exercising jurisdiction within the Metropolitan Police District or the City of London they may act for the whole of that district and the City of London as if it were a single county (r)

1016 The justices having jurisdiction in the place for which special constables have been appointed may at a special sessions to be held for the purpose (s) order payment to be made to the special constables from time to time of such reasonable allowances for their trouble, loss of time, and expenses as they may think fit (t) The

Allowances.

(i) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 196 (3), (4)

(k) Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 1, Promissory Oaths Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 72), s 8, Municipal Corporations Act 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 196 (2) The declaration of a special constable is as follows—"I A B do swear, that I will well and truly serve our Sovereign lord the King in the office of special constable for the parish [or township] of — without favour or affection, love or ill will, and that I will to the best of my power cause the peace to be kept and preserved, and prevent all offences against the persons and properties of his Majesty's subjects, and that while I continue to hold the said office I will to the best of my skill and knowledge discharge all the duties thereof faithfully according to law" (Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 1)

(l) *Ibid*, s 7 But proceedings to enforce this penalty must be begun within two months (*ibid*, s 15)

(m) See p 492, *ante*

(n) Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 9 On such discontinuance or other termination of their appointment special constables must deliver up every staff, weapon, and other article provided for their use to the person and at the time which any justice, having jurisdiction in the place for which they were appointed to act, may direct (*ibid*, s 10)

(o) *Ibid*, s 9

(p) *Ibid*, s 5, see *R v Porter* (1841), 9 C & P 778

(q) Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 6, see London County Council (General Powers) Act, 1910 (10 Edw 7 & 1 Geo 5, c cxxx.), s 44

(r) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 28

(s) Or at an adjourned meeting of special sessions (Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 14)

(t) *Ibid*, s 13, see *R v Hamilton* (1868), L R 3 Q B 718.

SECT 1
Special
Constables

Assault on
special
constables

cost of this payment is chargeable to the county rate fund, or, in boroughs not contributing to the county rate, to the borough fund (a)

Provision is made for the punishment of assaults on special constables in the execution of the duties of their office (b)

SECT 2—Constables of Railway and Other Companies

Special
constables at
public under-
takings
Payment of
expenses

1017 Special constables may be appointed in order to keep the peace at or near railroads, canals, and other public works (c)

1018 Where it appears on the evidence of three or more credible witnesses that the appointment of special constables is occasioned by the behaviour, whether actual or apprehended, of the persons employed on such works, the justices having jurisdiction in the area where such persons are employed may make an order on the treasurer of the railway, canal, or other company for the payment of the special constables' expenses (d), but the order must be made within one month of the appointment (d), and, after notice to and hearing the person on whom it is made (e), a copy of it must be sent to the Home Secretary for confirmation before it is binding on the company (f)

The payment to be allowed must not exceed 5s a day for each constable employed (f) When such an order is made and confirmed, payment must be made within three weeks, or in default the property of the company may be distrained on (g)

Purpose and
regulation of
appointment
and dismissal
of railway
police.

1019 Special constables are commonly appointed for and at the request of the railway companies for the purposes of restraining the commission of crimes upon their premises, whether by their own employees or by other persons (h) It is a necessary part of railway companies' business to protect the property entrusted to them as common carriers or otherwise, and as such the employment

(a) Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 13 In boroughs the authorised payment is 3s 6d a day and such other allowances as are made by order of the borough council (Municipal Corporations Act 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 196 (6), Schedules IV, V (ii)) As to the expenses of special constables whose appointment is occasioned by the conduct of people employed upon railway or other public works, see the text, *infra*

(b) Conviction of such an assault before two justices of the peace renders the offender liable to a fine not exceeding £20, or the offender may be prosecuted in the same manner as one who commits an assault upon any other constable in the execution of the duties of his office (Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 11) Summary proceedings for such an offence must be begun within two months (*ibid*, s 15), and see p 490, *post*

(c) Special Constables Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 80), s 1

(d) *Ibid*

(e) *R v Cheshire Lanes Committee* (1873), L R 8 Q B 344

(f) Special Constables Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 80), s 1 The Home Secretary has power to disallow or reduce the amount of the payment allowed and the order thereupon only has force as modified (*ibid*, s 2)

(g) *Ibid*, s 3

(h) *Lambert v Great Eastern Railway*, [1909] 2 K B 776, C A, *per COLENS HARDY*, M R, at p 781

of special constables is within the scope of their incorporation (z). In practice, however, the appointment and dismissal of special constables is commonly regulated by the special Acts passed for the several companies (l).

The special constables are, during the time of their service, the companies' servants, and the companies are responsible for the acts done by them within the scope of their authority (l).

Apart from the provisions of any special Act, they may be clothed in uniform or not at the companies' discretion (m).

1020 Special constables are also appointed for keeping the peace on canals and navigable rivers (n).

The appointment is made by two justices of the peace in the county, and by the watch committee in boroughs, from the persons recommended to them for that purpose by or on behalf of the proprietor of the canal or river (o). The same authorities have the power of dismissal (p).

1021 The special constables so appointed for canals and rivers have all the ordinary powers of a constable (q). They may not act within the Metropolitan Police District (r) or, except within the actual limits of their employer's premises, in any borough, but elsewhere they have power to act up to a distance of a quarter of a mile from their employer's premises (s). They have power to arrest offenders against the Canals (Offences) Act, 1840 (t), without

SECT. 2.
Constables
of Railway
and Other
Companies.

Position of
constables

Canals and
river police

Appointment
and dismissal

Powers of
constables.

(i) *Edwards v Midland Rail Co* (1880), 6 Q B D 287, per FRY, J., at p 289, and see title RAILWAYS AND CANALS.

(k) Thus, for instance, the employment of special constables on the Great Eastern Railway is regulated by the Great Eastern Railway (General Powers) Act, 1900 (63 & 64 Vict c cx), s 50.

(l) *Lambert v Great Eastern Railway*, [1900] 2 K B 776, C A, see *Goff v Great Northern Rail Co* (1861), 3 E & F 672, *Edwards v Midland Rail Co* (1880), 6 Q B D 287, compare *Eastern Counties Rail Co v Broom* (1851), 6 Exch 314, *Walker v South Eastern Rail Co, Smith v Same* (1870), 1 R 5 C P 640 *Mahoney v Beley* (1865), 4 F & F 544. But companies are not liable for the acts of such servants outside the scope of their authority, compare *Stevens v Midland Rail Co* (1864), 10 Exch 352, and see, generally, title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, pp 248 *et seq*, 261.

(m) *Lambert v Great Eastern Railway*, *supra*, per COLENS HARDY, M R., at p 782, compare Great Eastern Railway (General Powers) Act, 1900 (63 & 64 Vict c cx), s 50 (5).

(n) Canals (Offences) Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 50), s 1. They are required to render a declaration, in the form set out in *ibid*, s 1, similar to that made by other special constables, see p 493, *ante*. For neglect of duty they are liable on summary conviction before a magistrate to a fine of not more than £10, which may be deducted from their wages, or to one month's imprisonment with or without hard labour (Canals (Offences) Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 50), s 4). As to summary convictions, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 589 *et seq*.

(o) Canals (Offences) Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 50), s 1. As to canal proprietors, see, generally, title RAILWAYS AND CANALS.

(p) Canals (Offences) Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 50), s 2, on dismissal such constables are required to deliver up their accoutrements (*ibid*, s 5); and see p 501, *post*.

(q) Canals (Offences) Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 50), ss 1, 10.

(r) See p 467, *ante*.

(s) Canals (Offences) Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 50), s 1.

(t) 3 & 4 Vict c 50.

SECT 2
Constables
of Railway
and Other
Companies.

Harbour,
dock, or pier
police.

Water
bailiffs.

Special
constables for
Oxford and
Cambridge
Universities

Additional
police

a warrant and to detain carriers of stolen goods (a), and are protected against assaults and resistance to their authority (b). They are paid such amount and at such time as their employers may think fit (c)

1022 Special constables may also be appointed by two justices on the nomination of the authority (d) controlling a harbour, dock, or pier, and may be dismissed by them (e). The persons appointed have all the authority of constables within the limits of the harbour, dock, or pier, and for a distance of one mile from it (f)

1023 Water bailiffs having the authority of constables may be appointed by boards of conservators of fishery districts (g)

1024 The Chancellor or Vice-Chancellor of the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge have power to appoint special constables for their respective universities (h)

1025 Additional constables may be appointed by the chief constable of any county, with the approval of the standing joint committee of the county council and of the justices of the county at quarter sessions, on the application and at the expense of any person or persons who can show the necessity for them (i). These additional constables, though appointed to serve in a particular area, have all the powers of other county constables, and are under the authority of the chief constable, who, upon the application for that purpose of the persons who asked for their appointment, must discontinue their employment (k)

(a) Canals (Offences) Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 50), s 11

(b) *Ibid*, s 6. The penalty, on summary conviction before a magistrate, is a fine not exceeding £10, or imprisonment for two months with or without hard labour. As to summary convictions, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 589 *et seq*. The special constables are also protected by the provisions of the Public Authorities Protection Act, 1893 (56 & 57 c 61), see title PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS

(c) Canals (Offences) Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 50), s 3

(d) See, generally, title WATERS AND WATERCOURSES

(e) Harbours, Docks, and Piers Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 27), ss 79, 80

(f) *Ibid*, s 79

(g) Salmon Fishery Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 121), s 27. This is without prejudice to the appointment of additional constables (*ibid*), and see the text, *infra*. See also title FISHERIES, Vol XIV, pp 607, 609

(h) Universities Act, 1825 (6 Geo 4, c 97). The Chancellors or Vice-Chancellors may appoint as many men as they think fit. The men so appointed are sworn in and receive a certificate of authority entitling them to act for a specified time or while they retain their certificate. Their authority is confined to the university and an area with a radius of four miles from it. As to the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, see title EDUCATION, Vol XI, pp 94, 95

(i) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 19. As to chief constables, see p 484, *ante*, and the powers of county constables, p 485, *ante*. As to the appointment of additional constables in the Metropolitan Police District, see p 473, *ante*

(k) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88). Such additional constables are now appointed in lieu of watchmen in parishes which adopted and have continued to avail themselves of the Lighting and Watching Act, 1833 (3 & 4 Will 4, c 90) (County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 20)

Part VIII.—General Powers and Duties of Constables.

PART VIII.
General
Powers and
Duties of
Constables.

1026. The Police Acts give to the members of every police force all the powers, privileges, and duties which any constable duly appointed has within his constablewick at common law or by statute (*l*)

General
powers and
duties.

The general duties of constables are to preserve the King's peace, and with that object to keep watch and ward in their several districts, and to bring criminals to justice (*m*)

1027 For the efficient execution of these purposes they are given powers of arresting offenders under the warrant of a justice of the peace (*n*), and in some cases without warrant (*o*) They may not, however, execute the warrant of a justice outside the limit of the area for which they act, except in the case of fresh pursuit, when

Power of
arrest

(*l*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 41), s 4, County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 8, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 9, Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 191 (2) A constablewick is the area for which a constable is empowered to act

(*m*) 1 Bl Com, p 356 Statute of Winchester, 1285 (13 Ldw 1, c 6); Com Dig, tit Justices of Peace (B 79)

(*n*) For the provisions regulating the issue of such warrants, see Indictable Offences Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 42), Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 43), titles CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 307 *et seq*, MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 564, 596 As to warrants of arrest in various matters, see also titles CORONERS, Vol VIII, pp 266, 267 (arrest of coroner's witnesses), EXTRADITION AND FUGITIVE OFFENDERS, Vol XIV, p 422 (fugitive offenders), GAMING AND WAGERING, Vol XV, p 291 (common gaming house) As to the powers of customs officers, see title REVENUE

(*o*) As to the right to arrest without warrant at common law, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 296-300, and, under a variety of statutes, *ibid*, pp 300, 301 Members of the Metropolitan, City, and borough police forces have power so to arrest idle and disorderly persons (Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 64, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 18, Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 193) The same applies in the case of street offences in the Metropolitan Police District or the City of London, and in boroughs where the Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), has been adopted (Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 54, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 35, Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 28) As to constables' power to arrest in certain circumstances without a warrant, see also titles COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY, Vol VIII, p 171 (pirated music), ECCLESIASTICAL LAW, Vol XI, p 664 (brawling in church), INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 168 (offences under the Children Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 67), METROPOLIS, Vol XX, p 465 (offences against Metropolis Management Acts), OPEN SPACES AND RECREATION GROUNDS, Vol XXI, p 596 (throwing rubbish into public garden, and compare *ibid*, p 583) As to a constable's power of recapture of an escaped prisoner, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 509

PART VIII
General
Powers and
Duties of
Constables.

they may execute it at any place within seven miles of the boundary (*p*)

Upon arrest constables may, if necessary, handcuff a person whose demeanour is violent or raises an apprehension of violence (*a*), and may search him and take away from him articles that are dangerous or available as evidence of the offence with which he is charged (*b*)

Execution
of search
warrants

1028 It is their duty to execute search warrants issued by a justice of the peace and directed to them (*c*), and in some cases they have a right of search without warrant (*d*)

(*p*) Indictable Offences Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 42), s 10, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 308 As to fresh pursuit, see also *ibid*, p 300 As to the powers of police in border counties, see note (*c*), p 485, *ante*

(*a*) *Wright v Court* (1825), 4 B & C 596, see *Leigh v Cole* (1853), 6 Cox, C C 329 A prisoner who is handcuffed without a reasonable necessity for such a course has a right of action for damages (*R v Taylor* (1895), 59 J P 393)

(*b*) *Leigh v Cole*, *supra*, *Bessell v Wilson* (1853), 20 L T (o s) 233, per Lord CAMPBELL, C J, see *Dillon v O'Brien and Davis* (1887), 20 L R Ir 300, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 607, note (*u*), *Bice v Jarvis* (1885) 49 J P 264 As to information given to the police by persons whom they have arrested, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 394 *et seq*, *R v Winkel* (1911), 76 J P 191 As to restitution of property in the hands of the police, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 577, 606, PAWNS AND FIELDS, pp 247, 254, 255 *ante*

(*c*) The common law right to issue a search warrant is confined to cases of stolen property, but the right is extended to a variety of other matters by statute A list of these is set out in title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE Vol IX, p 310, to which reference generally should be made for the conditions under which search warrants are to be issued and executed As to search warrants in various matters, see also titles ANIMALS, Vol I, p 418 (unlawful vivisection), CLUBS, Vol IV, 434, 436, 437 (offences in clubs), COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY, Vol VIII, p 171 (pirated music), EXPLOSIVES Vol XIV, p 391 (offences with regard to explosives), EXTRADITION AND FUGITIVE OFFENDERS, Vol XIV, p 422 (fugitive offenders), FISHERIES, Vol XIV, p 639 (offences with regard to salmon), GAMING AND WAGERING, Vol XV, p 291 (common gaming house) INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 168 (offences under the Children Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 67), INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVII, p 120 (offences with regard to licensed premises), as to protection of a constable in executing search warrant, see title MALICIOUS PROSECUTION AND PROCEDURE, Vol XIX, p 688, note (*d*)

(*d*) Constables have power to search without a warrant persons coming from land and suspected of having been unlawfully in search of game (Poaching Prevention Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict c 114, see title GAME Vol XV, pp 237, 238) A written order from a chief officer of police is sufficient authority to a constable to search for stolen property on premises occupied by persons convicted of fraud or dishonesty punishable by penal servitude or imprisonment, or occupied actually or within the previous twelve months by persons convicted of receiving stolen property or harbouring thieves (Prevention of Crimes Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 112), s 16) In cases of emergency they have power to search for explosives with only a written order from a superintendent of police (Explosives Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 17), s 73, see title EXPLOSIVES, Vol XIV, pp 391 *et seq*) The Metropolitan and City of London police have power to stop and search boats or carriages for stolen goods (Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 66, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv),

1029 When money is paid to a constable in discharge of a penalty imposed by a court of summary jurisdiction, it is his duty to pay the money over to the clerk of the court of summary jurisdiction (*e*), and, when it is paid to a constable in discharge of a sum in respect of which a distress warrant has been issued, the constable is dispensed from the duty of further execution of the warrant (*f*)

1030 A warrant must be strictly executed, otherwise the constable to whom it is directed is liable to an action (*g*) A constable acting in pursuance of a justice's warrant is protected against action brought without a precedent demand to produce the warrant for perusal and copy, and a refusal on his part to produce it, or brought without due notice, or brought in consequence of any want of jurisdiction in the justice who signed the warrant (*h*)

Any action brought against a constable acting in execution of his duty must be brought within six calendar months of the act complained of (*i*)

1031 A constable in the execution of his duty is entitled to receive aid from private persons on occasions where there is reasonable necessity for it (*k*) Persons refusing or neglecting to give aid are liable to indictment at common law (*l*)

1032 To assault, resist, or obstruct a constable in the execution

**PART VIII
General
Powers and
Duties of
Constables.**

Duty of
constable
with regard
to sums paid
to him
Action against
constable

Right to aid
from private
persons

Assault on, or
obstruction
of constable.

§ 49), when actually in transit (*Hadley v Perks* (1866), L R 1 Q B 444) and they have power, with a written order from the Commissioner, to enter, unlicensed theatres gambling houses etc (Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), ss 46—48, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), ss 30—32) see pp 472, 479, *ante*

(*e*) Summary Jurisdiction Act 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 43), § 31

(*f*) *Ibid*, ss 28, 31, and see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 226

(*g*) *Parton v Williams* (1830), 3 B & Ald 330 *Crosier v Cundey* (1827), 6 B & C 232, *Hoye v Bush* (1840), 1 Man G 775, and see title PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS

(*h*) Constables Protection Act, 1750 (24 Geo 2, c 44), § 6 The action must not be brought for a space of six days after the demand and compliance with the demand for production of the warrant This provision, though originally applicable to parish constables only, is applicable now to every member of a police force It applies when a constable executes a distress warrant which has been duly issued but the execution of which is suspended without authority by the justices (*Barrons v Luscombe* (1835), 5 Nev & M (K B) 330), see also title ACTION, Vol I, p 26 As to the effect of acting under a warrant upon an otherwise criminal act, *e.g.*, murder, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 574

(*i*) Public Authorities Protection Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 61), § 2, see titles LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, p 176, PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS

(*k*) *R v Brown* (1841), Car & M 314 It is no defence that the single aid of the person called upon would have been of no avail (*ibid*), and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 506, 507

(*l*) *R v Brown*, *supra*, *R v Sherlock* (1846), L R 1 C C R 20, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 506, 507 Persons going to the aid of the police when called upon are protected *rundo, morando, et redeundo* (*R v Phelps* (1841) Car & M 180, per COLTMAN, J)

PART VIII

General
Powers and
Duties of
ConstablesPrivileges and
exemptions

of his duty is an offence for which the offender may either be indicted (*m*) or tried summarily (*n*)

1033 Metropolitan and county constables are exempt from service in the militia or on juries (*o*), and from payment of tolls (*p*).

The publication by a chief officer of police of any matter issued by him for the information of the public is, in the absence of express malice, privileged (*q*)

The duty of a constable to bring criminals to justice does not prevent him from receiving rewards offered by private persons for their apprehension (*r*)

Provision has been made by statute for a weekly rest day for members of every police force (*s*)

(*m*) Offences against the Person Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 100), s 38, conviction under which renders the offender liable to imprisonment with or without hard labour for a period not exceeding two years. Under the Prevention of Crimes Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 112), s 12, the court may in its discretion impose in the alternative a fine not exceeding £20, and, in default of payment, imprisonment, with or without hard labour, for a period not exceeding six months, for an assault on a constable, and by the Prevention of Crimes Amendment Act, 1885 (48 & 49 Vict c 75), s 2, a fine not exceeding £5, and, in default of payment, two months' imprisonment, for resisting or obstructing a constable in the execution of his duty, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 506, 507

(*n*) Under the Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 18, persons assaulting or resisting or inciting others to assault or resist a constable are liable on conviction before a magistrate to a fine not exceeding £5, or imprisonment for not more than one month. The City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 18, provides for a similar punishment on conviction before a justice of the City. A similar offence in relation to a borough constable renders the offender liable to a fine not exceeding £5 (Municipal Corporations Act, 1883 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 195), or, where the Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), is in force, to a fine not exceeding £5, or imprisonment with or without hard labour for not more than one month. In the latter case the conviction may be before one justice (*ibid*), s 20. A similar offence, in regard to a county constable or a special constable either in a county or borough, renders the offender liable on conviction before the justices to a fine not exceeding £20 (Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 11, County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 8). As to the scale of punishment then applicable, see the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 49), s 20, title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 568 *et seq*, 572—574

(*o*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 10, Juries Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 77), s 9, Sched., and see title JURIES, Vol XVIII, pp 230, 231

(*p*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 10, County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 1, see title HIGHWAYS, STREETS, AND BRIDGES, Vol XVI, p 65

(*q*) Law of Libel Amendment Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 64), s 4, see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, pp 697, 699

(*r*) *England v Davidson* (1840), 11 Ad & El 856, *Smith v Moor* (1845), 1 C B 438, *Neville v Kelly* (1862), 12 C B (N S) 740, but it has been said that such rewards are contrary to public policy (*Burt v Wakefield Bank* (1878), 4 C P D 1, *per* GROVE, J., at p 6). As to whether the police themselves or the person giving them information are entitled to the reward see *Lancaster v Walsh* (1838), 4 M & W 16; *Thatcher v. England* (1846), 3 C B 254, *Burt v Wakefield Bank*, *supra*.

(*s*) Police (Weekly Rest Day) Act, 1910 (10 Edw. 7 & 1 Geo 5, c 13)

1034 It is an offence for a constable in any police force in violation of his duty to do or fail to do any act (t), or to resign or absent himself from duty without either the written consent of the chief officer of the police force or of the superintendent under whom he is placed, or without having given to such superior officer one calendar month's notice of his intention to resign (u)

1035 It is the duty of every constable on resignation or dismissal to deliver up his clothing, accoutrements, and the other appointments supplied to him as constable, to the person and at the time and place directed by the chief officer or superintendent (t). Omission to do so is an offence

1036 The unauthorised possession of police clothing and accoutrements by any person not able to account satisfactorily for it, or the false pretence of being a constable, or the unauthorised use of police clothing or accoutrements for the purpose of obtaining admission to a house or other place, or for any other unlawful purpose, is an offence (w)

**PART VIII.
General
Powers and
Duties of
Constables.**

Neglect of
duty or
unlawful
absence from
duty

Omission to
deliver up
police
property

Unauthorised
possession
of police
property.

This Act requires adoption by each police authority but if not adopted within four years from 26th July, 1910, comes automatically into operation at the expiration of that period (*ibid*)

(t) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 12, Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 14, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 15. Under these statutes the penalty is a fine not exceeding £10, which may be deducted from the constable's pay, or, in the discretion of the court, imprisonment for a period of not more than one month, with or without hard labour. In the case of borough constables the penalty is a fine not exceeding 40s, or, in the discretion of the court, imprisonment for not more than ten days or dismissal from the force (Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 194). The offence is in all cases punishable summarily, and is irrespective of the penalty of suspension or dismissal. As to larceny or embezzlement by police officers, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, pp. 654, 654.

(u) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 13, County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 4, Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47) s 15, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 17. The offender is liable on conviction to forfeit all arrears of pay due to him or to a penalty not exceeding £5. In the case of county or borough police both forfeiture and penalty may be imposed (County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 4) but see Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 19, whereby in places where that Act applies the offender is liable to forfeit all arrears of pay or to a penalty not exceeding £5, or, in the discretion of the justices, to imprisonment for not more than fourteen days (*ibid*, s 19).

(v) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 14 (a search warrant for the discovery of such accoutrements as are not delivered up may be issued by a justice (*ibid*)). Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 11. Metropolitan Police Act 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 16. This provision does not apply in the City of London, or in the case of boroughs where the Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), has not been adopted or where there is no similar provision in the local Act. The penalty in all cases where the provision applies is imprisonment with or without hard labour for a period not exceeding one month, and a search warrant may be issued (*ibid*, s 11). As to pawning police clothing, see title PAWNS AND PLEDGES, p 237, *ante*.

(w) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 15, Metropolitan

PART VIII.

General
Powers and
Duties of
ConstablesBribing or
harbouring
constableSpecial
powers of
police

1037. It is an offence for a licensed victualler to bribe or attempt to bribe a constable, or to supply him with liquor or refreshment when on duty, except by an order of a superior officer, or knowingly to harbour or entertain any constable or to permit him to remain on his premises except in the execution of his duty during any part of the time during which the constable is on duty (r)

1038 Special powers and duties are given to the police under a variety of statutes, such as those relating to aliens (y), animals (z), the army (a), bail (b), betting and gaming (c), billiard licences (d), brawling (e), bread (f), brothels (g), canals (h), cattle (i), children (j),

Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 17, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 16, Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89). The provision does not apply in boroughs where the Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), has not been adopted or where there is no similar provision in the local Act. The offender is liable in every case where it does apply to a penalty not exceeding £10, in addition to any other punishment to which he may be liable (*ibid*, s 12).

(r) Licensing (Consolidation) Act, 1910 (10 Edw 7 & 1 Geo 5, c 24), s 78. Under this statute the penalty for a first offence is a sum not exceeding £10, for a subsequent offence a sum not exceeding £20. See also Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 6, County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 16. Under these statutes, which include the holder of an "off licence," the offender is liable to a penalty not exceeding £5. Under the Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 34, the penalty is a sum not exceeding 20s, and see title INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, pp 134, 135. As to bribery of and extortion by the police generally, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 481, 483, 484.

(y) Aliens Act, 1905 (5 Edw 7, c 13), see title ALIENS, Vol I, p 325.

(z) See title ANIMALS, Vol I, pp 398, 399, 400 *et seq*, 414, 415, 418, 419, 422, 431.

(a) Army Act (44 & 45 Vict c 58), see title ROYAL FORCES.

(b) Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 49), s 42, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 608, see also p 505, *post*.

(c) Stat (1541-2) 33 Hen 8, c 9, Gaming Act, 1802 (42 Geo 3, c 119), Gaming Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 109), Betting Act, 1853 (16 & 17 Vict c 119), Gaming Houses Act, 1854 (17 & 18 Vict c 38), Street Betting Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 43), see title GAMING AND WAGLING, Vol XV, pp 281, 285, 291, 294 *et seq*, 303.

(d) Gaming Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 109), see title THEATRES AND OTHER PLACES OF ENTERTAINMENT.

(e) Ecclesiastical Courts Jurisdiction Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 32), see titles BURIAL AND CREMATION, Vol III, p 422, ECCLESIASTICAL LAW, Vol XI, p 664.

(f) Bread (London) Act, 1822 (3 Geo 4 c cvi). Bread Act, 1836 (6 & 7 Will 4 c 37), see title FOOD AND DRUGS, Vol XV, p 48.

(g) Disorderly Houses Act, 1751 (25 Geo 2, c 36), Criminal Law Amendment Act, 1885 (48 & 49 Vict c 69), see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 542, 543.

(h) Special Constables Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 80), see p 494, *ante*, and title RAILWAYS AND CANALS.

(i) Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), Metropolitan Market Act, 1857 (20 & 21 Vict c cxxxv), Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 134), see title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC.

(j) Children Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 67), see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, pp 161 *et seq*, 168 *et seq*, 173 *et seq*.

chimney sweepers (*k*), clubs (*l*), coal(*m*), criminals (*n*), customs and excise (*o*), disorderly persons (*p*), distress (*q*), dogs (*r*), drunkards (*s*), elections (*t*), explosives (*u*), factories and shops (*a*), fire (*b*), food and drugs (*c*), game (*d*), hawkers (*e*), highways (*f*), house duty (*g*), illegal sports (*h*), innkeepers (*i*), intoxicating liquors (*j*),

(*k*) Chimney Sweepers Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 70), see title PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION

(*l*) Licensing (Consolidation) Act, 1910 (10 Edw 7, & 1 Geo 5, c 24), see title CLUBS, Vol IV, pp 434, 436

(*m*) Coal Duties (London) Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c lxxvi), see titles TRADE AND TRADE UNIONS, WEIGHTS AND MEASURES

(*n*) Penal Servitude Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 69), s 2, Prevention of Crimes Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 112), ss 3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 16 Prevention of Crime Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 55), s 2, Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1979 (42 & 43 Vict c 49), s 10, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 303, note (*f*) (power of arrest), 307 (breaking open doors to arrest), 414 (police supervision), 415 (reporting by convict), *R v Mitchell* (1912), 28 T L R 484, title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 510

(*o*) Stamp Duties Management Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 38), see title REVENUE

(*p*) See title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(*q*) Distress for Rent Act, 1737 (11 Geo 2, c 19), s 6, see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 192

(*r*) Dog Licences Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 5), Customs and Inland Revenue Acts 1878 (41 & 42 Vict c 15), and 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 21) Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 134) Dogs Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 32), Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 61, see titles ANIMALS, Vol I, pp 398 *et seq*, GAML, Vol XV, pp 253, 254

(*s*) Licensing Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 94) Licensing (Consolidation) Act, 1910 (10 Edw 7 & 1 Geo 5, c 24), see title INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, pp 142, 143, 167

(*t*) See title LICENSATIONS, Vol XII pp 311, 480, 520, 527, 535, 537 note (*d*)

(*u*) Explosives Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 17), see title EXPLOSIVES, Vol XIV, pp 374, 379 *et seq*, 391, 392, notes (*c*), (*e*), 393, note (*f*)

(*a*) Factory and Workshop Act, 1901 (1 Edw 7, c 22), s 119, Shops Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 54), s 7, see title FACTORIES AND SHOPS, Vol XIV, p 529

(*b*) Metropolitan Fire Brigade Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 90), ss 12, 22, Public Health Acts Amendment Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7 c 53), ss 87, 88, see titles METROPOLIS, Vol XX, p 418 PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION

(*c*) Sale of Food and Drugs Acts, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 63), 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 30), and 1899 (62 & 63 Vict c 51), see title FOOD AND DRUGS, Vol XV, pp 12, 13, 33, 34, 58

(*d*) See title GAML, Vol XV, pp 236, 237, 238, 256, 260

(*e*) Hawkers Act 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 33), ss 4, 6, see title MARKETS AND FAIRS, Vol XX, pp 56, 57

(*f*) Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), ss 24, 28, Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 54 Public Health Acts Amendment Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 53), s 79 see titles HIGHWAYS, STREETS, AND BRIDGES, Vol XVI, pp 65, 123, PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION, STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(*g*) House Tax Act, 1803 (43 Geo 3, c 161), s 60, see title INHABITED HOUSE DUTY, Vol XVII, p 187

(*h*) Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 30, Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 54

(*i*) Refreshment Houses Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 27), s 18, see titles INNS AND INNKEEPERS, Vol XVII, p 312, INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, p 133

(*j*) Spirits Act 1880 (43 & 44 Vict c 24), s 153, Licensing (Consolidation) Act, 1910 (10 Edw 7 & 1 Geo 5, c 24), ss 10, 15, 22, 25, 27, 53,

PART VIII
General
Powers and
Duties of
Constables.

licences (*k*), lunatics (*l*), markets and fairs (*m*), merchandise marks (*n*), motor cars (*o*), pawnbrokers (*p*), pedlars (*q*), petroleum (*r*), poaching (*s*), post office (*t*), prostitutes (*u*), public health (*v*), railways (*w*), refreshment houses (*x*), ships (*y*), small tenements (*z*), street offences (*a*), street traffic (*b*), Sunday observance (*c*), tenants absconding (*d*), theatres and music halls (*e*)

62, 64, 80, 81, 82, Revenue (No 1) Act, 1864 (27 & 28 Vict c 18), s 5, see title INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, pp 22, 39, 42, 98, 99, 104, 120, 132, 142, 143, 146, 156

(*k*) Gun Licence Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 57), s 9, Game Licences Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 90) Under the Finance Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 16), and Order in Council of 19th October, 1908, the county council may employ the police to exercise such powers and duties as were formerly exercised under the Game Licences Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 90), by officers of the Inland Revenue, see title GAME, Vol XV, pp 247, 253

(*l*) Lunacy Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 5), ss 13, 20, Lunacy Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 65), s 2, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 505, 505, 506

(*m*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), ss 38, 39, see title MARKETS AND FAIRS, Vol XX, pp 16, 19, note (*g*)

(*n*) Merchandise Marks Act, 1887 (50 & 51 Vict c 28), s 12, see title TRADE MARKS, TRADE NAMES, AND DESIGNS

(*o*) Motor Car Act, 1903 (3 Edw 7, c 36), ss 1, 3, see title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(*p*) Pawnbrokers Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 93), ss 34, 36, 42, see title PAWNS AND PLIDGES, pp 247, 248, 256, *ante*

(*q*) Pedlar's Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 96), ss 5, 8, 9, 15, 17, 19, see title MARKETS AND FAIRS, Vol XX, pp 58, 59

(*r*) Petroleum (Hawkers) Act, 1881 (44 & 45 Vict c 67), s 4, see title PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION

(*s*) Night Poaching Act, 1828 (9 Geo 4, c 69), s 1, Poaching Prevention Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict c 114), s 2, see title GAME, Vol XV, pp 236, 237, 238

(*t*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48) s 67(2), see title POST OFFICE, p 667, *post*

(*u*) Town Police Clauses Act 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 28 Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 54, see titles POOR LAW, STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(*v*) Public Health Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 55), s 106, see title PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION

(*w*) Cheap Trains Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict c 34), s 6, Railway Regulation Act 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 55), s 17, see title RAILWAYS AND CANALS

(*x*) Refreshment Houses Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 27), ss 18, 41, see title INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, pp 133, 142

(*y*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), ss 33—35, see titles SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION, WAIFERS AND WATERCOURSES

(*z*) Small Tenements Recovery Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 74), see title LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, p 560

(*a*) Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 28, Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), ss 54, 62, see titles HIGHWAYS, TREETS, AND BRIDGES, Vol XVI, pp 65, 123, PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION, STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(*b*) Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89) s 62, see title STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC

(*c*) Sunday Observance Prosecution Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 87), s 1, see titles THEATRES AND OTHER PLACES OF ENTERTAINMENT, TIME

(*d*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 67; see titles DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 192, LANDLORD AND TENANT, Vol XVIII, pp 560, 561

(*e*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 46, see title THEATRES AND OTHER PLACES OF ENTERTAINMENT.

1039 Much of the work of the prosecution of crime is performed by the police at the expense of the local authority (*f*)

This is done, in some instances, in pursuance of a statutory obligation (*g*), but it is principally done in the exercise by them, on behalf of the public, of the right of any private person to prosecute (*h*), and there are therefore certain classes of offences in which it is not open to them to proceed (*i*)

1040. No uniform hierarchy of rank is established by statute for the police forces of the country, but superintendents, inspectors, and sergeants of police are commonly appointed

The gradations of rank and the number in each rank is fixed, in the case of boroughs by the watch committee (*k*), in the case of counties by the standing joint committee with the approval of the Home Secretary (*l*), in the case of the Metropolitan Police by the Commissioners with the approval of the Home Secretary (*m*), in the case of the City Police by the Commissioner of City Police with the approval of the Home Secretary and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen (*n*).

1041 Superintendents and inspectors of police may admit to bail persons arrested without warrant who cannot be brought before a court of summary jurisdiction within twenty-four hours of the arrest (*o*). In places where the adoptive Act (*p*) is in force,

(*f*) In undertaking this responsibility the action of each police force is controlled by its police authority, and the extent to which the responsibility is assumed consequently varies in different police areas with the view of its duties taken by the particular authority. The practice is the result of the balance of public convenience which is felt increasingly to require the application of consistent principles in the prosecution of offenders. In the Metropolis and some of the larger boroughs (*e.g.*, Birmingham), the police authority employs a solicitor for the exclusive purpose of advising the police and conducting prosecutions. As to the authority for incurring such expenses, see Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 50), s. 140, Sched. V, County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 93), s. 18.

(*g*) See, for instance, Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict. c. 80), ss. 9, 15, Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 47), s. 69.

(*h*) Where, however, proceedings have already been taken by a private prosecutor the court will grant audience to him in preference to the police (*R v Bushell* (1838), 16 Cox, C. C. 367). As to the powers of private persons to prosecute, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 293.

(*i*) Thus, in a few cases, the power of instituting proceedings is limited to certain persons or to persons who have obtained the consent of the Attorney General or others, see titles CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 293, EDUCATION, Vol. XII, pp. 65 *et seq.*, REVENUE.

(*k*) Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 50), s. 191. In some cases the chief officer of police in a borough has the title of superintendent, see p. 487, *ante*.

(*l*) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict. c. 88), s. 26, see p. 482, *ante*.

(*m*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1829 (10 Geo. 4, c. 44), s. 5, see p. 490, *ante*.

(*n*) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. xciv), s. 14, see p. 479, *ante*.

(*o*) Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict. c. 49), s. 38, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, pp. 306, 307.

(*p*) *I.e.*, Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict. c. 89), see p. 488, *ante*.

PART VIII.
General
Powers and
Duties of
Constables.

Police
prosecutions

Gradations
of rank.

Powers of
superior
officers
Bail.

PART VIII
General
Powers and
Duties of
Constables

superintendents or other superior officers may admit to bail persons, arrested without warrant, who are charged with an offence, other than a felony, which may be tried summarily under that Act or a local Act, if they cannot conveniently be brought before a justice (q)

Similarly, such officers in any police area may, and except in certain circumstances must, admit to bail persons apparently under sixteen, and charged with any offence, if they cannot be brought before a court of summary jurisdiction forthwith, upon sufficient recognisances being entered into by the parent or guardian (r)

Constables in the Metropolitan Police District in charge of a station at night, or, in the City of London or any municipal borough, at any time when a justice is not sitting, have similar powers in the case of persons arrested without warrant and charged with offences which may be tried summarily (r)

Powers of
entry and
search

Superintendents of police have certain special powers of entry and search in the Metropolitan Police District and City of London (r), and also in the country generally, under a few public statutes (u) and local Acts. But apart from these, and from the fact that constables must give notice of their intention to resign to the superintendents, if any, under whom they are placed (r), the distinctive powers given to the superior ranks of a police force are the creation not of statute but of the regulations made for the particular force.

Disposition
and manage-
ment

1042 Arrangements for the disposition and management of the rank and file of each police force are made by its chief officer with the approval of the local police authority (u). The requisite number of men is in this way determined and assigned to the several branches of police work. The distribution of such work to organised departments varies in different police forces, but a

(q) Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 89), s 17

(r) Children Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 67), s 94. As to the excepted cases, and generally, see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 176

(s) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (10 Geo 4, c 44), s 9. City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 51. Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 227, see Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict c 43), s 9

(t) Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), ss 34, 35, 39, 46-48, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), ss 30-32, see pp 472, 479, *ante*. They are justified in detaining a prisoner brought in by a constable even though in fact the original arrest was illegal (*Bowditch v Fosbery* (1850), 19 L J (ex) 339), and see *Bowditch v Balchin* (1850), 5 Exch 378 (an action against the constable who made the arrest in the same case)

(u) See Explosives Act, 1875 (39 & 39 Vict c 17), s 73

(x) Metropolitan Police Act 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), s 15, City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), s 17, County Police Act, 1831 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 13, County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 4

(y) The police authorities are, in the case of the Metropolitan Police, the Home Secretary, of the City of London Police, the Common Council, of county police, the standing joint committee, of borough police, the watch committee (Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 33, Sched III, The watch committee of boroughs is directly responsible for the regulations for the management of its police force (Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 191 (3)).

separate department is maintained by most forces for the special purposes of detection of crime and supervision of convicted persons

1043 Owing to the greater variety and complexity of the services required from the Metropolitan Police Force, the separate organisation of its departments is more elaborately carried out under the control of the Commissioner and Assistant Commissioners at the central police office at New Scotland Yard. The officers and constables trained in the work of special departments of that office may be, and frequently are, placed at the disposal of the local police authorities under the statutory powers for the mutual assistance of one police force by another (z)

**PART VIII.
General
Powers and
Duties of
Constables.**

—
Detective
departments,
Criminal
Investigation
Department

Part IX. - Damage by Riot.

1044 It follows from the ancient theory of the responsibility of each recognised area for the preservation of the peace within its borders (a) that, in the event of damage to property ensuing from the riotous assemblage of persons within the area, such damage shall be made good at the expense of the inhabitants of the area (b)

General
compensatory
principle

An aggrieved party may recover compensation for a house, shop, or building which has been injured or destroyed, or for property injured, stolen, or destroyed by riot (c)

For this purpose it is immaterial whether the riot has occurred in a public place or within private grounds (d), or whether it is accompanied by a felonious act (e), but it is essential that the disturbance should have amounted to a riot (f)

(z) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 25, see p 491, *ante*

(a) See p 462, *ante*

(b) Preamble to the Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38). The claim for compensation used formerly to be against the hundred — see stats (1827) 7 & 8 Geo 4, c 31, and (1832) 2 & 3 Will 4, c 72 both of which are now repealed, and *Drake v Footitt*, *Dingle v Hankin* (1891), 7 Q B D 201

(c) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38), s 2. Damage done to a wreck, or to machinery or engines used in agriculture, manufacture, mining or quarrying, is included (*ibid*, s 6). In the case of a church or chapel, the claim may be made by the churchwardens or persons having the management of, or the legal estate in, it, and, in the case of a school, hospital, public institution or building, by the person having the management of, or the legal estate in, it (*ibid*, s 7). As to riot generally, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 471 *et seq*

(d) *Gunter v Metropolitan Police District (Receiver)* (1888), 53 J P 249

(e) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38). Formerly this was an essential condition, see *Reid v Clarke* (1798), 7 Term Rep 496, *Drake v Footitt*, *Drake v Hankin*, *supra*

(f) *Field v Metropolitan Police (Receiver)*, [1907] 2 K B 853. A riot

PART IX
Damage by
Riot.

Conduct of
claimant

Insurance
money
received by
claimant

The claim.

1045 The conduct of the party alleging injury is to be taken into account in fixing the amount of compensation, and, in particular, the precautions taken by him in view of the riot and his attitude in regard to it, whether as accessory to it or as having given provocation to the riotous persons, are material (g)

Any amount received by him by way of insurance or otherwise to recoup him in whole or in part for the loss sustained must be deducted from the amount payable to him under this provision, and such deduction, if any, becomes payable to the person who has paid such insurance (h)

1046 The claim for compensation must be made to the police authority for the area in which the damage was sustained (i), and must be made in accordance with the Home Office Regulations (k). No costs are allowed to the claimant on making the claim (l)

is itself a misdemeanour at common law, and the persons taking part in it are liable to punishment, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 471 For the purpose of supporting a civil claim to compensation there are five essential conditions of a riot —(1) it must consist of at least three persons, (2) they must have a common purpose, (3) there must be execution or inception of the common purpose, (4) there must be an intent to help one another by force if necessary against any person who may oppose such execution, (5) there must be force or violence, not merely used in demolishing property, but displayed in such a manner as to alarm at least one person of reasonable firmness and courage, see *Fild v Metropolitan Police (Receiver)*, [1907] 2 K B 853, and compare *R v Furse* (1833), 6 C & P 81 (a riot may exist whether the Riot Act is read or not), *R v Hughes* (1830), 4 C & P 373, *R v Cunninghame Graham and Burns* (1888), 16 Cox, C C 420 (there must be evidence of combined intention to use force), *R v Langford* (1812), Car & M 602 (at least one person must be terrified) Although it takes three persons to constitute a riot, two persons may be convicted of riot with persons unknown (*R v Beach and Morris* (1909), 2 Cr App Rep 189)

(g) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38), s 2 (1) Where the claimant had advertised a race meeting which did not after all take place, and the crowd had paid gate money, it was held that provocation had been offered (*Gunter v Metropolitan Police District (Receiver)* (1888), 53 J P 249)

(h) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38), s 2 (2), and see title INSURANCE, Vol XVII, p 518

(i) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38), s 3 (1) In the case of county areas the police authority is the standing joint committee, of boroughs, the borough council of the Metropolitan Police District, the Receiver, of the City of London, the Common Council The Tyne Improvement Commissioners are the authority for the area prescribed in their special Acts (*ibid*, Sched)

(k) *ibid*, s 3 (2) The existing Home Office Regulations, which there is power to vary from time to time, were made on the 30th June, 1894 They include provisions for the claim to be made within a period of fourteen days of the damage being sustained, which claim, however, may be made in a prescribed form showing specified heads of damage, for a full description of the damage and the evidence which the claimant proposes to offer, together with a statutory declaration by such witnesses as the police authority may specify, for separation of property owned by the claimant from that of other persons in his possession, for the separate payment to the owners of property not belonging to the claimant, and for an undertaking by the claimant, if required, to return the money paid in respect of stolen property if it is recovered

(l) Home Office Regulations, 30th June, 1894, No 11.

1047. If the claim is duly made and the claimant is aggrieved by a refusal on the part of the police authority to admit the claim in whole or in part, he may appeal to the Home Secretary (*m*). If the claim is disallowed by the Home Secretary, the claimant has a right of action against the police authority for the subject-matter of his original claim and the amount named in it, but, if he fails to recover at all or recovers an amount less than that admitted by the police authority, he must pay the costs of the action as between solicitor and client (*n*).

**PART IX
Damage by
Riot.**

**Appeal to
Home
Secretary
from refusal
to admit
claim.**

1048 Actions in respect of a claim for no more than £100 must be brought in the county court (*o*) Tribunal

1049 Claims admitted or recovered by action are payable out of the police fund of the district (*p*) Source of
payment.

Part X. — Superannuation and Other Allowances.

1050 Statutory provision exists for establishing upon a more or less uniform basis the regulations affecting the superannuation and pensions of police officers (*q*) General
provision

Under this provision police officers are permitted to retire in certain prescribed circumstances and under certain prescribed conditions (*a*), but the length of notice required (*b*) and the rate of

(*m*) Home Office Regulations, 30th June, 1894, No 2

(*n*) Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38) s 4 (1)

(*o*) *Ibid*, s 4 (2) A county court in any part of the police area may be selected (*ibid*)

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 5 (1) Where a county and borough police force are consolidated (see p 490, *ante*), the expense is apportioned by the Home Secretary in the absence of a provision in the agreement between the county and borough authorities dealing with the matter (Riot (Damages) Act, 1886 (49 & 50 Vict c 38), s 5 (3))

(*q*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 7) These provisions apply to every member of a police force other than the City of London Police Force, as to which see p 480, *ante* (Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), ss 1, 39) Before the passing of the former of these Acts superannuation funds existed, the amount of which was raised by deductions from pay, and out of which the police authority was empowered, but not obliged, to grant pensions, see Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 47), ss 22, 23, County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), ss 10, 11 Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), Sched V, Part II, compare *R v Metropolitan Police District (Receiver)* (1863), 4 B & S 593 Members of any police force, including that of the City of London, are excluded from the provisions of the Workmen's Compensation Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 58) (*ibid*, s 13), see title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, p 156

(*a*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 1

(*b*) This must not exceed four months, but the notice must be in writing (*ibid*)

PART V
Super-
annuation
and Other
Allowances

Retirement
on pension
without
medical
certificate.

pension allowed (c) varies within certain limits in the case of different police forces (d)

1051 A constable who has completed not less than twenty-five years' approved service, and has reached the age, if any, prescribed by the local police authority by which he is employed, is entitled, after giving the prescribed notice, to retire without a medical certificate and to receive a pension for life (c)

(c) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 3 The maximum and minimum limits are laid down in *ibid*, Sched I, Part I (as regards ordinary pensions), and Part II (as regards special pensions etc) The amount of the pension is based upon the rate of pay received by the constable before retirement (*ibid*, s 3, Sched I), but for this purpose free board and lodging are not to be reckoned as part of his pay (*Goodwin v Sheffield Corporation*, [1902] 1 K B 629), nor is a separate allowance for special duties (*Upperton v Ridley*, [1903] A C 281), and where he has been promoted in rank within three years of his death or retirement, the pension is calculated on the average of his pay for these three years (*ibid* Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 6) The pension of a constable who has been reduced in rank is calculated on the basis of his reduced pay (*ibid*, see *Ruff v Home Secretary* (1896), 60 J P 343)

(d) The amounts and conditions may be fixed within the above limits by the local police authority according to its own fixed scale Where a police authority did not fix a scale before the 1st January, 1891, the scale might be prescribed for it by the Home Secretary (Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 3 (3)) The local police authority, in the case of the metropolitan police, is the Home Secretary, in the case of a county, the standing joint committee of the county council and justices at quarter sessions, in the case of a borough, the watch committee, and in the case of the 'lyne police, the 'lyne Improvement Commissioners (*ibid*, Sched III)

(e) *Ibid*, s 1 (a) "Approved service" means service which, after possible deductions are made, is certified by the police authority to be diligent and faithful service (*ibid*, s 4 (1)), and see note (u), p 477, *ante* The possible deductions are on the ground of sickness, misconduct, or neglect of duty (Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 4 (1)), but absence on the ground of military service is not a reason for deduction (*ibid*, s 4 (3)) If a deduction is to be made, notice of it must be given as soon as may be to the constable, who may appeal to the chief officer against any act of another officer giving rise to any ground for deduction and the decision of the chief officer is final except in the case of a borough, when it requires the approval of the watch committee (*ibid* s 4 (3)) Approved service for not less than two years in another police force, from which a constable was removed with the sanction of the chief officer of that force, may be reckoned (*ibid*, s 4 (4), see Police Superannuation Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 5), ss 1, 2), but service in any force before the age of twenty one is not reckoned unless permitted by the regulations of the force from which the constable claims his pension (Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 4 (1)) Service of the State as a civil servant within the meaning of the Superannuation Act, 1887 (50 & 51 Vict c 67), or as a member of a police force with a salary paid out of money provided by Parliament, may be reckoned, three years of service in the police being regarded as equivalent to four years of service as a civil servant, and, where the pension is payable partly from the police pension fund and partly from funds provided by Parliament, the proportion to be allocated to each fund respectively is decided by the Treasury, having regard to the length of service and salary in each capacity (Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 14 (3)) A mandamus will issue, if necessary, to the Treasury to compel them to determine the proportion (*R v H M Treasury (Lords Commissioners)*, [1909] 2 K B 183) Actual service in the Army or Navy reserve forces may be reckoned for approved service (Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 7), s 4) As to the effect upon the right to a pension of temporary rank conferred upon a member of a police force while performing

1052. A constable who has completed 'fifteen years' approved service, and is incapacitated for the performance of his duty by infirmity of mind or body, is entitled on a medical certificate to retire and receive a pension for life (*f*) If he is so incapacitated before completion of fifteen years' approved service, he is entitled on a medical certificate to retire and receive such gratuity, if any, as the local police authority may think him entitled to (*g*)

If his incapacity, whenever it occurs, is due to an injury received in the execution of his duty without his own default, he is entitled on a medical certificate to retire and receive a pension for life (*h*)

1053 The widow of a constable who dies while in a police force from the effect of an injury received in the execution of his duty without his own default is entitled to a pension, and his children to allowances (*i*) If he dies from the effects of such an injury within

**PART X
Super-
annuation
and Other
Allowances.**

Retirement of
incapacitated
constable on
pension or
gratuity

Pension or
gratuities and
allowances to
widow and
children of
constable.

other services, see *Storey v Nottinghamshire Standing Joint Committee* (1908), 72 J P 31 The certificate of approved service must be given by the police authority The chief officer can certify as to the period of service, but not as to character (*Garbutt v Durham Joint Committee*, [1906] A C 291) As to chief officers, see p 516, *post* Such a pension is an ordinary pension, see Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 7), s 8, and see the text, *infra*

(*f*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 1 (b) Such a pension is an ordinary pension, and the medical certificate required as evidence of incapacity is that of some one or more legally qualified medical practitioner or practitioners selected by the police authority (*ibid*, s 5 (1)) The police authority may yearly or otherwise, until he reaches the age at which he would obtain his pension for life as of right (see p 510, *ante*), satisfy itself that the constable's incapacity for service continues, and if it does not, may require him to serve again (Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 5 (4)), or, if the incapacity becomes only partial, may reduce his pension proportionately (*ibid*, s 5 (6)) A constable so required to serve again is entitled to do so in a rank as high and at a salary as large as he formerly enjoyed (*ibid*, s 5 (5)) A constable who refuses to be examined by the doctor selected by the police authority is disentitled from claiming the full or partial pension to which he might otherwise have been entitled (*ibid*, s 5 (7)) In the decision of matters relating to pensions for incapacity, there is no appeal from the decision of the police authority except in the case of a borough constable, who may appeal to the borough council (*ibid*, s 5 (8)) A police authority may not order a constable to be re-examined by a doctor for any purpose other than information as to his capacity (*R v Kinchant, R v Leigh (Lord)*, [1897] 1 Q B 112, C A)

(*g*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 1 (c), and see note (d), p 510, *ante*

(*h*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 1 (d) The police authority must satisfy itself by the evidence of its selected doctor (1) that the injury was received by the constable in the execution of his duty, (2) that it was not due to his default, (3) that the infirmity is attributable to the injury, also whether (1) the injury was accidental or not, and (2) whether the disablement is total or partial (*ibid*, s 5 (2), and see note (f), *supra*) If a pension has been granted on the ground of partial disablement, it may be increased at any time within three years if it appears from medical evidence that the disablement will be total (Police Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 10), s 3)

(*i*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 2 (1) As to evidence of the injury, see note (h), *supra*, and as to the scale of the pension, see note (d), p 510, *ante*, Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c 45), Sched I The widow's pension depends on her not remarrying and on her being of good character An allowance to a child ceases when the child attains the age of fifteen (*ibid*, Sched I, Part III)

PART X
Superannuation and Other Allowances

twelve months of being granted a pension because of the injury, the police authority may, if it thinks fit, grant a pension to the widow for a term of years or otherwise (*h*) If whilst serving in a police force he dies from any other cause (*l*), or within twelve months after the grant of a pension (*m*), the police authority may, if it thinks fit, grant gratuities to the widow and children or any of them

Reduction of pension.

1054 A pension granted to a constable on the ground of infirmity of mind or body may be reduced by an amount not exceeding one-half of the sum to which he would be otherwise entitled, if the police authority is satisfied that the infirmity is due wholly or partially to the constable's own default or vicious habits (*n*)

Forfeiture of pension.

1055 A pension may be forfeited wholly or in part, and temporarily or otherwise, as the police authority may determine, on the following grounds (*o*) —

(1) Conviction of any offence for which the constable is sentenced to penal servitude, or to imprisonment for more than three months with hard labour, or for more than twelve months with or without hard labour,

(2) Conscious association with thieves or reputed thieves,

(3) Refusal to assist the police with information or otherwise,

(4) Carrying on an illegal business or making discreditable or improper use (*p*) of his previous employment as a policeman,

(5) Making discreditable or improper use of confidential information obtained whilst serving in a police force (*q*),

(6) Soliciting or receiving, without the leave of the police authority, a pecuniary testimonial on retirement (*r*),

(7) Acting as a private detective after being forbidden to do so by the police authority on any reasonable grounds (*s*)

Payment and receipt of pensions

1056 A police pension may not be assigned or charged for the benefit of anyone except the pensioner's family, and, in the case of the pensioner's bankruptcy, does not pass to the trustee or the creditors (*t*) The police authority has power, however, to pay the whole or part of the pension in certain cases to poor law (*u*) or

(*h*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 2 (3)

(*l*) *Ibid*, s 2 (2)

(*m*) *Ibid*, s 2 (4)

(*n*) *Ibid*, s 6 Actions must be based on medical evidence as to this, see note (*h*), p 511, *ante*

(*o*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 8

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 8 (d) The police authority is the judge of whether the use made is discreditable or improper

(*q*) Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 7), s 5 (1), and see note (*p*), *supra* In this and the following cases the forfeiture requires the confirmation of the Home Secretary

(*r*) Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 7), s 5 Compare *Chisholm v Holland* (1886), 50 J P 197

(*s*) Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 7)

(*t*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 7 (1), but sums already accrued may be attached (*Booth v Trail* (1883), 12 Q B D 8, and see titles BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol II, p 191, CHANCES IN ACTION, Vol IV, pp 400 *et seq*)

(*u*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 7 (2), (3) The cases to which the provision is applicable are when the pensioner or someone whom he is liable to maintain is in receipt of poor relief, or where the pensioner neglects to maintain a person whom he is liable to maintain.

hospital or asylum authorities (*b*) or to a person whom the pensioner is liable, but neglects, to maintain (*c*), and, if a sum not exceeding £100 is due to a pensioner at his death, the police authority may direct that probate be dispensed with, and deliver the money to the person beneficially entitled to it (*d*)

PART A
Super-
annuation
and Other
Allowances.

Payments due to a minor may be made to the minor or to someone on his behalf at the discretion of the police authority (*e*)

Regulations may be made by the police authority, with the sanction of the Home Secretary, for declarations to be made by persons in receipt of grants (*f*), and the receipts of such persons are good discharges to the police authority for the amount paid (*g*)

1057 Fraudulently obtaining or attempting to obtain a pension or other grant is an offence rendering the offender liable to forfeit the grant (*h*). If summarily convicted, he may be imprisoned with or without hard labour for four months, or be fined a sum not exceeding £25; if convicted by a jury, he may be imprisoned with or without hard labour for a term not exceeding two years (*i*)

Fraudulently
obtaining a
pension

1058 A constable who would otherwise be entitled to a pension may be dismissed or reduced in rank or be refused a pension for misconduct, or negligence in the discharge of his duties, or for any offence rendering a police pensioner liable to forfeit his pension (*j*)

Reduction in
rank and
refusal of
pension

1059 If a pension is refused or forfeited the constable claiming the pension has a right of appeal to quarter sessions (*l*), and, if the police authority exceeds its jurisdiction in cancelling or delaying payment of the pension, the constable is entitled to a mandamus to the police authority (*m*)

Appeal from
refusal or
forfeiture

(*b*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 7 (4), and see title **INSANITIES AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND** Vol. XIX, p. 410

(*c*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 7 (3)

(*d*) *Ibid.*, s. 7 (5). If there is more than one person entitled, the police authority may distribute the money in accordance with law. If the deceased pensioner is illegitimate the police authority may distribute the money among such persons as it thinks fit

(*e*) *Ibid.*, s. 7 (6)

(*f*) *Ibid.*, s. 7 (8)

(*g*) *Ibid.*, s. 7 (7)

(*h*) *Ibid.*, s. 9, and see title **MAGISTRATES**, Vol. XIX, p. 586. This includes the use of a false declaration, certificate, representation or evidence, personation, malingering, feigning illness, wilful injury or any other fraudulent conduct. The provision supersedes any provisions of a local Act or charter.

(*i*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 9

(*j*) *Ibid.*, s. 10

(*l*) *Ibid.*, s. 11. The appeal is to the next practicable court of quarter sessions. The decision of quarter sessions being final, there is an appeal by special case to the High Court (*Kydd v. Liverpool Watch Committee*, [1908] A.C. 327, overruling *Goodwin v. Sheffield Corporation*, [1902] 1 K.B. 629. In *Upperton v. Ridley*, [1903] A.C. 281, and *Gambutt v. Durham Joint Committee*, [1906] A.C. 291, the question of the jurisdiction of the High Court to hear an appeal under this provision was not raised)

(*m*) *Re Kinchant, R. v. Leigh (Lord)*, [1897] 1 Q.B. 132, C.A. In this case the police authority had used its power of calling upon a constable to undergo a medical re-examination for the purpose of assisting the bankruptcy court, see note (*f*), p. 511, ante

PART X
Superannuation and Other Allowances

Suspension of pension during service

Reduction *pro tanto*

Sources of revenue of pension fund

Trustees of pension fund

1060 If a constable in receipt of a pension from the fund of one police force takes service in that or another police force, his pension may be suspended during the period of his service (*n*), and if he receives an appointment with a remuneration paid out of parliamentary or local (other than police) funds, his pension is reduced so that he receives altogether a sum equal to one and a half times the salary of the office in respect of which his pension was awarded (*o*).

1061 The police pension fund, to be maintained by every police authority (*p*), is supplied by the deductions made from the pay of the constables themselves, fines imposed on the police themselves, or for assaults on the police, or awarded to the police as informers in any court of summary jurisdiction, fines or fees directed by any Act to be payable to the fund, net proceeds of the sale of police clothing, payments or contributions made under any local Act, a proportion of the sum paid by another police authority for the loan of constables' services (*q*), and dividends on invested funds.

Other sources of supply are the net sums received as fees for pedlars' and chimney-sweepers' certificates, fees payable to constables for the execution of their duties, and fines summarily imposed for offences under the Licensing Acts committed in the police area (*r*) also sums in the hands of the police authority or of members of the force as such (*s*).

The fund also receives contributions from the Exchequer, subject to the Home Secretary's certificate of efficiency (*t*).

1062 The treasurer of the police funds is the treasurer of the

(*n*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 13 (1).

(*o*) *Ibid.* s. 13 (2). Police Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 10), s. 4, see *Vol. Bower v Liverpool Corporation* (1904), 68 J. P. 213.

(*p*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 16 (1). As to the pension funds of the Metropolitan Police Force and City of London Police, see pp. 477, 480, *ante*. There is only one superannuation fund for the police of the three parts of Lincolnshire (County and Borough Police Act, 1884 (22 & 23 Vict. c. 32) s. 22. See also Lincolnshire Police Superannuation Act 1881 (51 & 52 Vict. c. 19)).

(*q*) See p. 491, *ante*.

(*r*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 16 (2). These sums are payable to the police pension fund unless the local authority to whom they are immediately payable resolves otherwise.

(*s*) *Ibid.* s. 16 (3). These sums are not to be carried to the pension fund if held upon any private trust, or without the express direction of the police authority (*ibid.*). Where police are appointed to carry out the provisions of the Weights and Measures Acts, fees paid to them for their services are not payable to the pension fund (*R v Kesteren Justices* (1889), 53 L. J. (M. C.) 157).

(*t*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 17. As to the certificate of efficiency, see p. 516 *post*. The sources of the contributions are customs and excise duties, which are not, however, payable to the pension fund of the Metropolitan Police Force. The distribution is made in two parts—first, an amount equal to that of the deductions made by each police authority is payable to each pension fund, and then the remainder is divided proportionately according to the amounts paid in pension grants out of each fund in the previous year, but the Home Secretary is entitled to modify the terms of distribution to avoid inequalities of treatment (Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45)).

pension fund, and the rules as to audit of the police funds are applicable (*u*)

1063. Surplus income is to be invested in accordance with the Trustee Acts (*a*), or in debentures or mortgages of a county council issued under the Local Loans Act (*b*) and in a manner to be selected by the police authority (*c*)

The capital of the pension fund cannot be used for making payments out of the fund (*d*). Any deficiency is guaranteed by the police fund itself (*e*), which is reimbursed by means of a special police rate (*f*)

Where the pension fund exceeds the requirements of the force, the police authority may apply to the Home Secretary for a provisional order authorising payments out of it and suspension of investing (*f*)

1064 A constable who retires from a police force without a pension or gratuity, but who is not dismissed, and who does not remove to another police force on the terms of his previous approved service being reckoned for approved service with that other force (*g*), may have returned to him, at the discretion of the police authority, the deductions which have been made from his pay (*h*)

1065 A constable who retires from and rejoins the same police force is entitled to reckon the years of approved service of his first term, but he must repay to the police fund any pension or gratuity received by him on retiring and any deductions of pay which have been returned to him (*i*)

1066 A constable who has completed twenty five years' approved service and has reached the prescribed age for a pension may continue to serve unless superannuated, and, in such case, the police authority may in its discretion fix his prospective pension on the basis of his previous service if they have a medical certificate that he is physically fit for service (*j*). Such medical certificate must be renewed each year (*k*) and any extra pay given for the constable's

**PART X.
Super-
annuation
and Other
Allowances.**

Investment of
income and
application of
capital

Return of
deductions
from pay

Effect of
rejoining
force

Effect of
service after
pension
period

(*u*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 18

(*a*) See title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES

(*b*) See title MONEY AND MONEY LENDING, Vol. XXI, pp. 61 *et seq.*

(*c*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 18 (3), Police Act 1893 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 10), s. 5, see Local Government Act 1888 (51 & 52 Vict. c. 41), s. 69

(*d*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 18 (4)

(*e*) *Ibid*, s. 19

(*f*) *Ibid*, s. 22. As to confirmation of such a provisional order see note (t), p. 518, *post*

(*g*) See note (c), p. 510, *ante*

(*h*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 45), s. 21

(*i*) Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw. 7, c. 7), s. 2. The repayment may be effected by deductions from pay or otherwise as the police authority may determine. The sum repaid is payable to the police pension fund (*ibid*.)

(*j*) *Ibid*, s. 1. The police authority may direct that he shall be entitled on retiring at any time thereafter to receive a pension not less in amount than he would be entitled to had he retired at once. This right to a pension will only be forfeited for the reasons for which a pension actually received may be forfeited, see p. 512, *ante*. As to medical certificates, see note (f), p. 511, *ante*

(*k*) Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw. 7, c. 7), s. 1 (2)

PART X
Superannuation and Other Allowances

Application of provisions to superior officers

Compulsory retirement of officers above inspectors

continued service is not reckoned for the purpose of his pension, and rateable deductions are not made from it (*l*)

1067 The provisions for the pensions and allowances to constables also apply to superior officers (*m*), but certificates of approved service and sanction of removal to another force may in the case of the chief constable be given by resolution of the police authority (*n*)

1068 An officer above the rank of inspector must retire at the age of sixty-five except in a special case (*o*), but, even if not entitled to receive a pension under the usual rules, he is given one on the same terms as if he had then retired with a medical certificate (*p*)

Part XI. — Powers of Secretary of State.

The central authority
 Appointment of inspectors

1069 The Home Secretary (*q*) is the central police authority (*r*)

1070 Inspectors are appointed by the Crown acting through the Home Secretary (*s*) to visit and inquire into the state and efficiency of every county and borough police force, the observance or otherwise of the statutory provisions under which such police forces are appointed, and the state of police stations, charge rooms, cells and lock-ups or other premises occupied for the use of such police force (*a*)

Reports of inspectors

The reports of the inspectors are made to the Home Secretary and laid by him before Parliament (*a*)

Certificates of efficiency

1071 Certificates of efficiency based on the reports of the inspectors are issued annually by the Home Secretary to all such county and borough police forces as have been maintained in a state of efficiency in point of numbers and discipline during the

(*l*) Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 7), s 1 (3)

(*m*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 12 But pensions payable by Parliament are not to be payable out of the Police Pension Fund (*ibid*)

(*n*) *Ibid*

(*o*) Police (Superannuation) Act, 1906 (6 Edw 7, c 7), s 6 (1) A special case can only arise where the police authority is of opinion that the officer's retirement would be detrimental to the interests of the force, and in any case retirement can only be deferred for five years (*ibid*)

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 6 (2)

(*q*) The powers are in fact always exercised by the Home Secretary, but in his absence could be exercised alternatively by any other Secretary of State, see note (*f*), p 465, *ante*, title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW Vol VII, pp 83—85

(*r*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 1 see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, p 85

(*s*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 1 The number of inspectors to be appointed is three, and their salaries as determined by the Treasury Commissioners and paid out of money provided by Parliament for that purpose (*ibid*)

(*a*) *Ibid*

preceding year (*b*) Receipt of this certificate is a condition precedent to the payment to the local authorities maintaining such police forces of the Treasury grant of one half the cost of maintenance (*c*), as well as of the sums contributed annually by the Treasury to the local police superannuation grants (*d*) The certificate is not to be withheld finally until the inspector's report has been communicated to the local police authority and that authority has had an opportunity of making a statement in respect of it to the Home Secretary (*e*) In the event of its being finally withheld, this statement, if any, together with the reasons of the Home Secretary for withholding it, are to be laid before Parliament (*f*), and a sum to be certified by the Home Secretary as equal to one half the cost of the pay and clothing of such police during the year is forfeited by the local authority (*g*)

1072 Appointments to the office of chief constable in counties are subject to the approval of the Home Secretary (*g*) He makes the rules for the government, pay, clothing, accoutrements and necessities of every county police force (*h*), and receives quarterly reports of the rules made from time to time by watch committees or borough councils for the regulation and guidance of borough police forces (*i*) The table of fees payable to the constables of any police force for acts done in execution of their duty is subject to his approval (*h*)

Powers as to
appointments
and regula-
tion of forces

1073 The Home Secretary receives an annual return in a form prescribed by him of the number of offences reported to the police within each county or borough the number of persons apprehended by the police, the nature of the charges against them, the result of the proceedings taken thereon and any other particulars relating to the state of crime in the district which the local police authority may think it material to furnish (*l*)

Annual police
return

- (*b*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 16
 (*c*) *Ibid*, Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 24 (2) (i) The payment is made through the county councils In the case of county police forces, it is made to the borough council As to places within the Metropolitan Police District, see p 475, *ante*
 (*d*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 17 see p 514 *ante*
 (*e*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 16
 (*f*) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 25 In the case of a county police force being inefficient, the sum which would normally be appropriated to the police fund from the local taxation account of the county fund becomes payable to the Exchequer account In the case of a borough police force being inefficient the forfeited sum is not paid over by the county council to the borough council, and remains available for general county purposes
 (*g*) County Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 93), s 3
 (*h*) *Ibid* A copy of such rules is to be laid before both Houses of Parliament (*ibid*, and see p 483, *ante*)
 (*i*) Municipal Corporations Act 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 192
 (*k*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 23, County and Borough Police Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 32), s 24 In a borough such fees are paid over to the superannuation fund (*ibid*, s 11)
 (*l*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 14.

- PART XI**
Powers of Secretary of State.
- Consolidation orders and agreements** **1074** The return is made for each calendar year, and must be forwarded to the Home Secretary as soon as may be after the termination of the year (*m*). A classified abstract of the returns is prepared annually and laid before Parliament (*n*).
- Formation of separate districts etc.** The making of orders consolidating the police forces of a borough and county is subject to an inquiry and report by the Home Secretary when the parties fail to agree to them (*o*), and, in any event, such a consolidation agreement cannot be terminated without his consent (*p*), nor can the separate police force maintained by a borough having more than 15,000 inhabitants be superseded without his authority (*q*).
- Adjustments as regards pension fund** The formation of separate police districts in counties (*r*) and places for the provision of lock-ups are subject to his approval (*s*). He may make provisional orders for dealing with any surplus belonging to the pension fund of any police force, or for the adjustment of relations between the pension fund of a police force and any other special force maintained by the same local authority (*t*).
- Powers in relation to the Metropolitan Police Force** **1075** In relation to the Metropolitan Police Force, the Home Secretary is the police authority and has control of the organisation and disposition of the force (*a*). The Chief Commissioner and Assistant Commissioners of Police are appointed by the Crown on nomination by him (*b*), and the police office at New Scotland Yard is subordinate to his department (*c*).
- Forces not under Home Secretary's control** **1076** The City of London police (*d*) and the police force maintained by the Tyne Improvement Commissioners (*e*) are not controlled by the Home Secretary, and are not in receipt of any contribution from the Exchequer.

(*m*) Police Returns Act 1892 (55 & 56 Vict c 38), s 1.
 (*n*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 14.
 (*o*) *Ibid*, s 5, see p 490, *ante*.
 (*p*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), ss 5-20, see p 491, *ante*.
 (*q*) County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 14, see p 486, *ante*.
 (*r*) County Police Act, 1840 (3 & 4 Vict c 88), s 27, County and Borough Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 69), s 1, see p 483, *ante*.
 (*s*) Parish Constables Act 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109), s 22, Lock up Houses Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 101), s 1, Petty Sessions and Lock up Houses Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 22), s 10, see pp 482, 488, *ante*.
 (*t*) Police Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 45), s 22. Such provisional orders require confirmation with or without modification by Parliament (*ibid*). The other special forces alluded to are a fire brigade, fire police or other local force (*ibid*).
 (*a*) *Ibid*, s 32, see p 467, *ante*.
 (*b*) Metropolitan Police Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict c 2), s 2, see p 467, *ante*.
 (*c*) See p 467, *ante*.
 (*d*) City of London Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c xciv), see, however, as to the Commissioner, p 478, *ante*.
 (*e*) Tyne Improvement Act, 1852 (15 & 16 Vict c cx), ss 27-29, and see note (*i*), p 508, note (*ii*), p 510, *ante*.

1077 The Home Secretary receives notice of the nomination and appointment of special constables, with a statement of the circumstances rendering such appointment expedient (*f*), and also of the suspension or determination of the service of any or all of the special constables appointed (*g*)

PART XI.
Powers of
Secretary
of State.

Special
constables.

He has power on the representation of the justices of the peace to order the appointment of persons as special constables who would otherwise be exempt (*h*), and to reduce the amount of orders, made by local authorities, for the payment of special constables by persons undertaking public works, when such orders appear to him excessive (*i*)

1078 The regulations for the payment of fees and allowances to parish constables require his approval (*h*)

Parish
constables

(*f*) Special Constables Act 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 1, see p 492, *ante*

(*g*) Special Constables Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 41), s 9

(*h*) *Ibid*, ss 2, 3 Under *ibid*, s 3, he may direct the lord lieutenant of a county to cause special constables to be sworn in throughout a whole district without regard to exemptions, see p 492, *ante*

(*i*) Special Constables Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 80), s 2, see p 494, *ante*

(*h*) Parish Constables Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 109) s 17, Parish Constables Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 92), s 11, see p 465, *ante*

POLICY.

See INSURANCE

POLL.

See ELECTIONS

POLLUTION.

See CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, NUISANCE, WATERS AND
WATERCOURSES

POOR LAW.

	PAGE
PART I INTRODUCTORY - - - - -	523
PART II POOR LAW AUTHORITIES - - - - -	524
SECT 1 THE LOCAL GOVERNMENT BOARD - - - - -	524
Sub-sect 1 In General - - - - -	524
Sub-sect 2 Poor Law Orders - - - - -	525
Sub-sect 3 Inspectors - - - - -	527
SECT 2 COUNTY COUNCILS - - - - -	528
SECT 3 JUSTICES OF THE PEACE - - - - -	529
SECT 4 OVERSEERS - - - - -	529
SECT 5 BOARDS OF GUARDIANS - - - - -	530
Sub-sect 1 Constitution and Proceedings - - - - -	530
Sub-sect 2 Duties Powers and Liabilities - - - - -	531
Sub-sect 3 Legal Proceedings - - - - -	539
Sub-sect 4 Officers - - - - -	541
(i) Appointment and Duties - - - - -	541
(ii) Superannuation - - - - -	546
Sub-sect 5 Poor Law Conferences - - - - -	548
Sub-sect 6 The Common Fund - - - - -	549
Sub-sect 7 Accounts and Audit - - - - -	550
SECT 6 THE METROPOLITAN ASYLUMS BOARD - - - - -	552
PART III UNIONS - - - - -	553
PART IV WORKHOUSES - - - - -	555
SECT 1 ESTABLISHMENT - - - - -	555
SECT 2 MANAGEMENT OF WORKHOUSE AND CONTROL OF INMATES - - - - -	558
PART V RELIEF OF THE POOR - - - - -	563
SECT 1 KINDS OF RELIEF - - - - -	563
SECT 2 RECOVERY OF THE COST OF RELIEF - - - - -	570
SECT 3 LIABILITY TO MAINTAIN - - - - -	573
PART VI SETTLEMENT - - - - -	574
SECT 1 IN GENERAL - - - - -	574
SECT 2 SETTLEMENT BY BIRTH - - - - -	577
SECT 3 SETTLEMENT BY RESIDENCE - - - - -	579
SECT 4 SETTLEMENT BY APPRENTICESHIP - - - - -	581
SECT 5 SETTLEMENT BY ESTATE - - - - -	582
SECT 6 SETTLEMENT BY RENTING AND RATING - - - - -	584
SECT 7 SETTLEMENT BY MARRIAGE - - - - -	587
SECT 8 SETTLEMENT BY PARENAGE - - - - -	588
SECT 9 SETTLEMENT BY ESTOPPEL - - - - -	589

	PAGE
PART VII REMOVAL - - -	- 590
SECT 1 IN GENERAL - - -	- 590
SECT 2 IRREMOVABILITY - - -	- 591
SECT 3 REMOVAL ORDERS - - -	- 596
Sub-sect 1 <i>The Order</i> - - -	- 596
Sub-sect 2 <i>The Removal</i> - - -	- 600
(i) <i>In England</i> - - -	- 600
(ii) <i>Out of England</i> - - -	- 601
Sub-sect 3 <i>Appeals</i> - - -	- 602
<i>To Quarter Sessions</i> - - -	- 602
<i>By Special Case</i> - - -	- 605
(iii) <i>Arbitration</i> - - -	- 606
PART VIII VAGRANCY - - - -	- 606
SECT 1 IN GENERAL - - - -	- 606
SECT 2 IDLE AND DISORDERLY PERSONS - - -	- 607
SECT 3 ROGUES AND VAGABONDS - - -	- 610
SECT 4 INCONTINENT ROGUES - - -	- 614
SECT 5 PRACTICE - - - -	- 615
PART IX OLD AGE PENSIONS - - -	- 616
SECT 1 THE PENSION - - - -	- 616
SECT 2 THE PENSION AUTHORITIES - - -	- 621

<i>For Assessment</i> - - -	<i>See title</i>	RATES AND RATING
<i>Assistant Overseers</i> - - -	"	LOCAL GOVERNMENT, RATES AND RATING
<i>Burial of Paupers</i> - - -	"	BURIAL AND CREMATION
<i>District Schools</i> - - -	"	EDUCATION
<i>Election of Guardians</i> - - -	"	ELECTIONS
<i>Industrial Schools</i> - - -	"	EDUCATION
<i>National Insurance</i> - - -	"	WORK AND LABOUR
<i>Overseers, Duties of</i> - - -	"	ELECTIONS, JURIES, RATES AND RATING
<i>Parishes</i> - - - -	"	ECCLIESIASTICAL LAW, LOCAL GOVERNMENT
<i>Pauper Lunatics</i> - - -	"	LUNACY AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND
<i>Poor Allotments</i> - - -	"	ALLOTMENTS
<i>Poor Rate</i> - - - -	"	RATES AND RATING
<i>Reformatories</i> - - - -	"	EDUCATION
<i>Registrars</i> - - - -	"	REGISTRATION OF BIRTHS, MARRIAGES, AND DEATHS
<i>Registration of Voters</i> - - -	"	ELECTIONS
<i>Schools and School Districts</i> - - -	"	EDUCATION
<i>Union Assessment Committee</i> - - -	"	RATES AND RATING
<i>Vaccination</i> - - - -	"	PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION
<i>Valuation</i> - - - -	"	RATES AND RATING.

Part I.—Introductory.

PART I.
Intro-
ductory.

1079 The law as to the relief of the poor is entirely the creation of statute. It originated in 1601 with the enactment which is still the key-note of the system (a), but the comparatively simple origin is almost lost in a maze of statutes, departmental orders, and directions, which have in practice the force of statutory enactments, and judicial decisions and *obiter dicta*, many of them absolutely irreconcilable the one with the other, while, to add to the confusion, innumerable duties and powers have been imposed or conferred upon poor law authorities, and their cost directed to be discharged out of the moneys raised for the relief of the poor, which have little or no connection with the primary object of relieving the urgent necessities of the destitute (b).

complexity
of the poor
laws.

No branch of the laws of England stands in greater need of codification or would more amply repay the labour of the codifier than does the law relating to the relief of the poor.

1080 Originally the relief of the poor within its bounds was the charge of each parish, and parish officers, named "overseers of the poor," were appointed, whose duty it was to set to work all paupers and their families, and to tax all occupiers in order to raise a parochial fund for the necessary relief of the parish poor (c). This identification with the parish led to the complicated law of settlement and removal (d) the object of which was to compel all persons likely to resort to the parish fund for relief to return to the parish to which they originally belonged, and so relieve parishes from the burden of maintaining strangers.

The parochial
system

1081 Very early in the history of poor relief we find that parishes were combining or uniting for the purposes of better and

The union

(a) Poor Relief Act, 1601 (43 Eliz. c. 2). From an early period the law endeavoured to repress mendicancy, and to provide for the restriction of beggars to their place of origin and to some small extent for their maintenance. The earliest statute on the subject (1388), 12 Rich. 2, c. 7, provided that impotent beggars and poor people were to go back to the parish of birth, and the various Vagabonds Acts, e.g. (1495) 11 Hen. 7, c. 2, (1503-4) 19 Hen. 7, c. 12, (1535-6) 27 Hen. 8, c. 25, (1597) 39 Eliz. c. 4, (1603) 1 Jac. 1, c. 7 (all now repealed), carried the system still further.

(b) This title deals only with the primary object of the poor law, and is restricted to an attempt to outline the means by which that object, "the necessary relief of the poor," is sought to be attained. For the extraneous duties of boards of guardians, reference should be made to the titles noted in the table of cross references given on p. 522, *ante*. One matter, however, that has no legal relation to poor relief is included in this title, namely, the quite modern subject of old age pensions, partly because the subject stands by itself, and, though no part of the poor law system, is yet perhaps more nearly akin to poor relief than to any other title, and partly because it may be contended that the relief so given to the aged is truly poor relief, though artificially kept distinct therefrom. The provisions of the National Insurance Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo. 5, c. 55), will be dealt with in the title WORK AND LABOUR.

(c) See title RATES AND RATING.

(d) See pp. 574 *et seq.*, 580 *et seq.*, *post*.

PART I
Intro-
ductory
—

more economical administration of poor relief (*e*), and this combination was carried out all over the country by successive Acts of Parliament (*f*), which proceeded to take the administration out of the hands of the overseers, to systematically group parishes into unions, and to place each union under the control, a very limited control, of elected boards of guardians, whose freedom of action is limited in nearly every direction by the supervising and directing powers of a Government department, formerly the Poor Law Commissioners and the Poor Law Board, and now the Local Government Board (*g*)

Part II.—Poor Law Authorities.

SECT. 1.—*The Local Government Board*

SUB SECT. 1. *In General*

Supremacy of
the Local
Government
Board

1082 The administration of relief to the poor is subject to the management, direction, and control of the Local Government Board (*h*), in which body is now vested the powers of the former Poor Law Commissioners and the Poor Law Board. The Local Government Board cannot interfere with the law of settlement and removal and cannot dictate to the guardians as to the relief to be granted in any individual case (*i*), but in practically every other matter connected with the administration of the poor laws and the relief of the poor the Board is supreme, subject only to the control of Parliament, and, in some cases, to the power reserved to the Crown to disallow by Order in Council certain proceedings of the Board (*k*)

Proof of
sanction

1083 In any case where the Poor Law Commissioners, or the Poor Law Board, or the Local Government Board, have given or refused their consent, sanction, or approval, in any matter where their order under seal is not expressly required, the production of any written document signed, or purporting to be signed, by a secretary or assistant secretary of the Commissioners or of the particular Board is *prima facie* evidence of the decision of the Commissioners or Board upon such matter (*l*)

(*e*) See the Poor Relief Act, 1662 (14 Car. 2, c. 12)

(*f*) See, for example, Gilbert's Act, stat. (1782) 22 Geo. 3, c. 83, now repealed, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76)

(*g*) See the text, *infra*

(*h*) For the constitution of the Local Government Board, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW Vol VII, pp. 103, 104

(*i*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 15

(*k*) See generally, the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), the Poor Law Board Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict. c. 109), and the Local Government Board Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict. c. 70)

(*l*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict. c. 117), s. 4

1084 The Local Government Board is empowered to hold inquiries and to require returns upon any matter connected with the execution of any of its powers, such inquiries are generally held by the Board's inspectors (*m*), or by specially appointed persons (*n*)

SECT 1
The Local Government Board.

1085 Any question affecting the settlement, removal, or chargeability of a poor person may, by agreement between the guardians concerned made under seal, be submitted to the Local Government Board, whose decision will be final and conclusive between the submitting parties (*o*)

Inquiries
Settlement of
differences

1086 Any adjustment of property and liabilities required in connection with matters arising under the Local Government Act 1894 (*p*), must, so far as it relates to the joint use of property in which a board of guardians is interested be approved by the Local Government Board (*q*)

Adjustments.

SUB-SECT 2 *Poor Law Orders*

1087 The Local Government Board may from time to time make and issue rules, orders, and regulations (for the sake of brevity hereinafter referred to as "orders") for the management of the poor, the government of workhouses and the education of the children therein, for apprenticing the children of poor persons, for the guidance and control of all guardians, vestries, and parish officers, so far as relates to the management and relief of the poor, and the keeping, examining, auditing, and allowing of accounts, and making and entering into contracts in all matters relating to such management or relief, or to any expenditure for the relief of the poor and generally for the due execution of the poor laws. The Board may from time to time suspend, alter, or rescind any order (*r*)

Power to
make orders

1088 A King's Printer's copy of any order of the Local Government Board is *prima facie* evidence, after the lapse of fourteen days from the date thereof, that such order was duly made and is in force (*s*)

Proof of
orders

1089 Orders are either general or particular. Any order of the Local Government Board, which when issued is directed to and affects more than one union, other than an order by which a district

General
orders

-- (*m*) See p 527, *post*

(*n*) See Poor Law Board Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 109), ss 11, 22, 20

(*o*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict c 105), s 12

(*p*) 56 & 57 Vict c 73

(*q*) *Ibid* s 68 (2), see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 289

(*r*) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 15. Numerous and voluminous orders have been issued under this authorisation, which deal in detail with almost every phase of poor law relief. The principal orders are referred to in connection with particular subjects but for the text readers are referred to such a collection as Macmorran and Lushington's Poor Law General Orders, 2nd ed, or to the annual volumes of Statutory Rules and Orders.

(*s*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 71. As to the proof of any order etc., see the Documentary Evidence Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 37), s 2, Local Government Board Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 70), s 5, Documentary Evidence Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 9), s. 2, and title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 525, 526.

SECT 1
The Local
Government
Board

of unions or parishes and unions is formed (*f*), is deemed to be a general order, as is also every order made to vary or rescind a general order, whether it be directed to or affects one or more than one union (*a*). Any general order, or any part thereof, may be disallowed by Order in Council, and thereupon, so far as it has been disallowed, it ceases to be of any force or validity, except as to anything lawfully done thereunder before the disallowance (*b*).

Particular
orders

A particular order is one that is applicable to individual cases in some one parish or union.

Publication

1090 A written or printed copy of every order must, before it comes into operation in any parish or union, be sent by the Local Government Board to the overseers of the parish, and to the guardians of the union or their clerk. The overseers and guardians must give publicity to the order in such manner as the Board directs, and must allow it to be inspected, and copies thereof to be taken on payment of the prescribed charge, by any owner of property in the place or his agent, or any ratepayer. These requirements also apply to the disallowance or revocation of an order (*c*). Copies of an order do not require to be sealed (*d*).

Every general order must be published in the *London Gazette*, and when so published takes effect without further publication (*e*).

A copy of any general order must be laid before both Houses of Parliament as soon as possible after its publication (*f*), and if it relates to the relief of the poor, the government and management of workhouses and their inmates, or the guidance and regulation of guardians and their officers, copies must be sent to the clerks to the justices of the petty sessional divisions within the union (*g*).

Testing
validity of
orders

1091 An order may be removed into the High Court of Justice by *certiorari*, but unless and until it is declared illegal by that court it remains effective and must be obeyed (*h*). This is, practically, the only way in which the validity of an order can be raised and tested (*i*). The writ must be moved for within twelve months of the publication in the *London Gazette* of a general order (*h*), and within twelve months of the sending of a copy, as required by statute, of any other order (*i*).

(*f*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 1

(*a*) Poor Law Board Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 109), s 15

(*b*) *Ibid*, s 17

(*c*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 18

(*d*) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 58), s 14

(*e*) Public Health Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 55), Sched V, Part III

(*f*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 1

(*g*) *Ibid*, s 2. Copies are not required to be sealed (Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 58), s 14)

(*h*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4 c 76), s 105. As to the procedure, see *ibid*, ss 106—108, and title CROWN PRACTICE, Vol X pp 174, 192, note (*l*). A divisible order may be quashed as to part only (*R. v Robinson* (1851), 17 Q B 468)

(*i*) See *R v Bristol (Governors of the Poor)* (1849) 13 Q B 405, *L v Oldham Union Overseers* (1847), 10 Q B 700, *R v Bangor Overseers* (1847), 13 Q B 91

(*k*) Public Health Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 55), Sched V, Part III

(*l*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 103), s 13

1092 If any person wilfully neglects or disobeys an order of the Local Government Board, or of its predecessors, he may, on summary conviction before two justices, be fined for the first offence any sum not exceeding £5, for the second offence, any sum not exceeding £20 not less than £5. A third or subsequent offence is deemed to be a misdemeanour, and is punishable on conviction on indictment by a fine of not less than £20 and such imprisonment, with or without hard labour, as the court may award (*m*)

SECT 1
The Local
Government
Board.
Disobedience
to orders.

1093 The Local Government Board may, on the application of the guardians concerned, by provisional order (*n*) repeal or alter any local Act contrivelling or regulating the relief of the poor, or the making and levying of the poor rate, in any union or parish (*o*)

Provisional
orders.

1094 The Local Government Board has also extensive powers as to the division of parishes and the alteration of parish boundaries for the purposes of the better administration of relief to the poor (*p*)

Alteration of
parishes

SUB SECT. 3. *Inspectors*

1095 The Local Government Board must from time to time appoint so many fit persons as may be allowed by the Treasury, to be inspectors, to assist in the execution of the law relating to the relief of the poor, and may from time to time assign duties to the inspectors or to any of them, and may remove an inspector. The salaries of the inspectors are regulated by the Treasury (*q*)

Appointment

1096 The inspectors are entitled to visit and inspect every work-house or place wherein any poor person in receipt of relief is lodged, and to attend every board of guardians and every parochial and other local meeting held for the relief of the poor, and to take part in the proceedings, but not to vote at such board or meeting (*r*). The power to inspect a work-house extends to the doing of anything necessary to procure such information as may be required by the Local Government Board as to the condition and government of the

Powers and
duties

(*m*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 98

(*n*) As to provisional orders and their confirmation generally, see title PARLIAMENT, Vol. XXI, p. 740

(*o*) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 106), s. 2, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict. c. 122), s. 3, Poor Law Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict. c. 54), s. 9

(*p*) See, generally, the Poor Law Amendment Act 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 106), the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), the Poor Law Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict. c. 54), the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 58), the Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 73), and, as to metropolitan parishes, the Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict. c. 63). See also title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol. XIX, p. 238. As to the powers of the Local Government Board in relation to the formation, alteration, and dissolution of unions, see pp. 553 *et seq.*, *post*

(*q*) Poor Law Board Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict. c. 109), s. 19. See also Local Government Board Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict. c. 70), s. 3, for a general power of appointing inspectors and other officers

(*r*) Poor Law Board Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict. c. 109), s. 20. The right to attend and take part in meetings may be enforced by mandamus. See *E v St Pancras (Directors of the Poor)* (1858), 22 J. P. 341, *R v St Marylebone Guardians* (1856), 3 Jur. (N. S.) 1094, n.

SECT 1
The Local
Government
Board.

workhouse and the inmates. An inspector may be authorised to hold inquiries upon any matter concerning the administration of the poor law, and may summon and examine witnesses (s).

SECT 2—County Councils

Position of
county
councils

1097 Strictly speaking, a county council is not a poor law authority, for, save as regards the provision of asylums for pauper lunatics (t), it has practically no administrative duties in connection with the relief of the poor. Councils, however, have certain powers to alter poor law areas (a) and to regulate the election of guardians (b), and they must make certain payments to guardians.

Grants to
guardians

1098 The county council, including the council of a county borough, must pay to the guardians out of the county fund, and charge to the Exchequer Contribution Account (c), (1) such sums as the Local Government Board certify to be due from the council in respect of the remuneration of teachers in poor law schools (d), and for payments to public vaccinators (e), (2) the school fees paid for pauper children sent from a workhouse to a public elementary school outside the workhouse (f), (3) certain sums towards the remuneration of the registrars of births and deaths (g), and (4) a sum equal to 4s a week for each pauper lunatic chargeable to the union, and maintained in an asylum, registered hospital, or licensed house, for whom the net charge upon the guardians, after deducting amounts received otherwise than from local rates, is equal to or exceeds 1s a week (h). If the union is in more than one county the amount to be paid will be apportioned (i).

The guardians are also entitled to receive from the county council other than the London County Council, or the council of the county borough, as the case may be, an annual sum for the costs of the officers of the union and of district schools to which the union contributes (k).

(s) See Poor Law Board Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 109), ss 21, 22, 26.

(t) For its powers and duties in this respect, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, p 479.

(a) See Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 57. Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 36, and title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 377.

(b) See pp 531 *et seq.*, *post*.

(c) See title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 351.

(d) See title EDUCATION, Vol XII, p 88.

(e) See title PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION.

(f) See title EDUCATION, Vol XII, pp 82, 88.

(g) See title REGISTRATION OF BIRTHS, MARRIAGES, AND DEATHS.

(h) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), ss 24, 34. The guardians must claim payment in the prescribed manner, see *ibid*, s 24 (6), (7). As to the method of calculating the amount of contributions, see *Culne Union v Wills County Council*, [1911] 1 K B 717, and Circular of the Local Government Board, dated 7th July, 1911.

(i) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 24 (5).

(k) *Ibid*, s 26. As to the basis of calculation and apportionment, see *ibid*.

SECT 2
County
Councils.

Grants in
London

1099 In the administrative county of London (*l*) the county council must (1) pay to the guardians for every poor law union wholly in the county such sums as the Local Government Board from time to time certifies to be due from the said council in substitution for the local grants towards the remuneration of poor law medical officers, and towards the cost of drugs and medical appliances, (2) grant to the guardians of every poor law union wholly in the county an amount equal to 4*d* a day per head for every indoor pauper maintained in that union, such grant to be reckoned in a prescribed manner (*m*), unless Parliament otherwise determines, and (3) pay to the guardians of every poor law union, a portion of which only is situate in its county, such proportion of the annual sum which is, under the provisions of the Local Government Act, 1888 (*n*), payable by the county council of a county to the guardians of that union, as the rateable value of the portion within the administrative county of London bears to the rest of the union (*o*)

SECT 3 — Justices of the Peace

1100 Justices of the peace may order overseers to give relief in cases of sudden and urgent necessity, and may order medical relief in a case where sudden and dangerous illness may require it (*p*) and in any union formed under the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1831 (*q*), any two justices usually acting for the district in which such union is situated may at their discretion direct, by order under their hands and seals, that relief be given to any adult person, who from old age or infirmity of body is wholly unable to work, without requiring such person to reside in the workhouse. Such person, however, must be entitled to relief in such union, and be desirous of receiving it out of the workhouse, and one of the justices must certify in the order, of his own knowledge, that the person is wholly unable to work as aforesaid (*r*)

Poor law
power of
justices

SECT 4 — Overseers

1101 Apart from their duties with respect to the making and levying of the poor rate (*s*), practically the only matter in which overseers have powers in connection with the relief of the poor is

To relieve an
urgent case

(*l*) See title METROPOLIS, Vol. XX, p. 391.

(*n*) The expression "indoor pauper" is defined by the Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict. c. 41), s. 43 (2), which also enacts (*ibid*, s. 43 (3)), that the average number of paupers shall be estimated in such manner as the Local Government Board directs. The grant made by the London County Council in respect of indoor paupers is in addition to any payment made out of the Metropolitan Common Poor Fund (*ibid*, s. 94), as to which see p. 550, *post*.

(*m*) 51 & 52 Vict. c. 41

(*o*) *Ibid*, s. 43 (1)

(*p*) See p. 530, *post*

(*q*) 4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76

(*r*) *Ibid*, s. 27. As to the authority of justices to visit workhouses see p. 550, *post*, for their powers in connection with removal orders, see pp. 590 *et seq*, *post*, where those orders are dealt with, and for their duties as regards the poor rate, see title RATES AND RATING

(*s*) As to which, see title RATES AND RATING

SECT 1
Overseers.

that in cases of sudden and urgent necessity the overseer of a parish is required to give such temporary relief as each case may require, in articles of absolute necessity, but not in money, and whether the applicant for relief is settled in the parish or not. If an overseer refuses or neglects to give relief in any such case of a non-settled or non-resident applicant, he may be ordered in writing to do so by a justice of the peace, and, if he disobeys such an order, he may, on summary conviction, be fined a sum not exceeding £5. A justice may also order medical relief to any parishioner or out-parishioner, when required by sudden and dangerous illness, and the overseer must obey such an order on pain of a similar penalty for default (*t*)

An overseer may also, in a case of sudden and urgent necessity, give a written order for admission to the workhouse (*a*). The overseer must enter in a register the name of every poor person in receipt of out-relief in the parish, with such particulars respecting the family and settlement of every such poor person, and his and then relief and employment, as the Local Government Board requires (*b*)

Parish debts

1102 If overseers lawfully contract any debt on account of the parish within three months of the termination of their year of office, their immediate successors must pay it (*c*)

Appointment
by guardians

1103 When the power of appointing overseers is vested in the parish council or parish meeting of a rural parish, if the guardians of the union do not receive from the council or meeting the prescribed notice of appointment within the prescribed time, the guardians must make the appointment, and the person appointed by them will supersede any overseer whose appointment has not been duly notified (*d*)

SECT 5 — *Boards of Guardians*

SUB SECT 1 — *Constitution and Proceedings*

Constitution

1104 The local administration of poor relief is entrusted to boards of guardians, which expression means a board of guardians elected under the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (*e*), and the Acts amending the same, and includes a board of guardians or other body of persons performing under any local Act the functions of a board of guardians under the said Act of 1834 (*f*). This Act

(*t*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 54. See also General Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 22nd April, 1842, arts 1—3 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, pp 180 *et seq*)

(*a*) General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 88—90 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, pp 74 *et seq*)

(*b*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 55. For the duties of overseers with respect to burials, see title BURIAL AND CREMATION, Vol III, pp 475, 547, for their duties as to registration of voters and elections, see title ELECTIONS, Vol XII, pp 194, 196, 201, 210, 217, 221, 231, 239, 382, 481

(*c*) Poor Law Audit Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 91), s. 1

(*d*) See Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 50

(*e*) 4 & 5 Will 4, c 76

(*f*) See Interpretation Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 63), s 16 (1). In Birmingham, Brighton, Bristol, Bury St Edmunds, Chichester, East and West

provided that when parishes were united for the administration of the laws for the relief of the poor, a board of guardians for such union should be constituted and chosen and that the workhouse or workhouses of such union should be governed, and the relief of the poor in such union should be administered, by the board of guardians (*g*), also that where the administration of the laws for the relief of the poor of any single parish had been or is directed to be governed and administered by a board of guardians, such board should be elected and constituted, and authorised and entitled to act for such single parish in like manner in all respects as a board of guardians for united parishes (*h*)

SECT 5
Boards of
Guardians.

1105 Guardians are elected parochially, the number to be elected for each parish being fixed by the constituting order. Such number may be altered by either the Local Government Board (*i*) or the county council (*k*), or, if the union is in more than one county, by a joint committee of the councils of the respective counties (*l*) Elections

The Local Government Board may by order unite small parishes for the purpose of the election of guardians (*m*), and may divide a parish into wards for such elections of guardians, and determine the number of guardians to be elected for each ward (*n*), and may alter any wards and the number of guardians to be elected for such wards (*o*). The county council have somewhat similar powers (*p*), and, in addition, have power to remove, by order, difficulties which may arise in connection with an election, or with the first meeting after any ordinary election, of guardians, and if from an election not being held, or being defective, or otherwise, the board has not been properly constituted may do what appears necessary to put matters right (*q*)

In a rural district the district councillors are the guardians for the particular parish or area for which they have been elected, and no special election of guardians can be held (*r*)

Flegg, Exeter, Forchae, Kingston upon Hull, Liverpool, Mutford and Louthgland, Oswestry, Oxford, Plymouth, Southampton, and Stoke Damerel, the guardians and in Liverpool, the select vestry, have powers and duties under local Acts. Such guardians must have the qualifications and be elected in the way required by the Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 60, but in other respects they continue to exercise the powers and duties conferred by the local Acts.

(*g*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 38

(*h*) *Ibid*, s 39

(*i*) Poor Law Amendment Act 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101) s 18

(*k*) Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 60 (1)

(*l*) *Ibid*, s 60 (3), and see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX,

pp 331-349

(*m*) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 6

(*n*) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 12

(*o*) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 58), s 8

(*p*) See Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 60, and title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 378

(*q*) Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 48 (*o*), Local Government (Elections) Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 1)

(*r*) Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 24 (3)

SECT. 5
Boards of
Guardians

The property and personal qualifications of electors are the same as in other local government franchises (*s*), with the single distinction that the receipt of medical relief disqualifies (*t*). The elections are held and conducted according to the rules framed by the Local Government Board (*a*), under the Local Government Act, 1894 (*b*).

Qualifica-
tions

1106 The qualification for a guardian is either being a parochial elector (*c*) of some parish in the union, or having resided in the union during the whole of the twelve months preceding the election (*d*), or, in the case of a guardian for a parish wholly or partly situate within the area of a borough, whether a county borough or not, being qualified to be elected a councillor for that borough (*e*). No person is disqualified by sex or marriage (*f*).

Disqualifi-
cations

1107 The disqualifications are the same as those for a district councillor (*g*), with the additions that no assistant overseer and no paid officer of a board can be a guardian, and no person receiving any fixed salary or emolument from the poor rates in any parish or union is capable of serving as a guardian in such parish or union (*h*).

A guardian who is an officer or soldier of the auxiliary or reserve forces does not become disqualified by reason only of his absence on active service, or on service beyond the seas (*i*).

(*g*) See title ELECTIONS Vol. XII, pp. 182 *et seq*.

(*t*) See Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61) s. 14. Medical Relief Disqualification Removal Act, 1885 (48 & 49 Vict. c. 46), s. 2. But not so in respect of vaccination: see Vaccination Act of 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 84) s. 26. See also title ELECTIONS, Vol. XII, p. 192.

(*a*) *Ibid.*, ss. 20 (5), 48 (4). For the procedure, see title ELECTIONS Vol. XII, pp. 389 *et seq*. The orders at present in force are the Guardians (Outside London) Election Order, 1898, and the Guardians (London) Election Order, 1898 (Stat. R. & O. Rev., Vol. X, Poor, England, pp. 2, 41). By virtue of the Municipal Elections (Corrupt and Illegal Practices) Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo. 5 c. 7), it is an illegal practice to make a false statement in relation to the personal character or conduct of a candidate at a municipal election, which includes the election of guardians (see Municipal Elections (Corrupt and Illegal Practices) Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict. c. 70)) such elections being thus put in this respect on much the same footing as parliamentary elections, as to which see title ELECTIONS, Vol. XII, pp. 298 *et seq*.

(*b*) 56 & 57 Vict. c. 73.

(*c*) Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 73), s. 20 (1), (3), and see title ELECTIONS Vol. XII, pp. 191, 192, 202, note (*s*), 245, for parochial electors.

(*d*) Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 73), s. 20 (2).

(*e*) *Ibid.* see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol. XIX, p. 303.

(*f*) Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 73) s. 20 (2).

(*g*) See title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol. XIX, p. 263. As to the disqualification imposed by a conviction for treason or felony see Forfeiture Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict. c. 23), s. 2, and title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 128.

(*h*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict. c. 57), s. 14. Payment to a medical practitioner for notification of disease does not disqualify for being a guardian (Infectious Disease (Notification) Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict. c. 72), s. 11, Public Health (London) Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict. c. 76) s. 57).

(*i*) Members of Local Authorities Relief Act, 1900 (63 & 64 Vict. c. 46), s. 2.

1108 If no person is elected in any parish at the annual election, the existing guardians may continue in office (*k*), and in case of any vacancy the remaining guardians are competent to act (*l*). No defect in the qualification or election of any person acting as a guardian at a board of guardians will vitiate the proceedings of the board (*m*). SECT. 7
Boards of Guardians
Failure to elect

1109 A person duly elected can only resign with the consent of the Local Government Board (*n*). Resignation

1110 The term of office is three years, one-third as nearly as may be, of the board going out of office on the 15th April in each year, but the county council, or a joint committee, may on the application of the board give directions for the simultaneous retirement of the whole board on the said date in every third year, and may on a like application rescind such direction (*o*). The county council directs in which year or years of each triennial period the guardians for each parish, or ward or district shall retire (*p*). Term of office

1111 There are no *ex officio* or nominated guardians (*q*), but the board may elect a chairman or vice chairman, or both and not more than two other persons, from outside their own body, but from persons qualified to be guardians of the union, and any person so elected will be an additional guardian and member of the board (*r*). Additional guardians

A vice-chairman holds office during the term of office of the chairman, in the absence or during the inability of the chairman he has the powers and authority of the chairman (*s*).

1112 The meetings and proceedings of boards of guardians, save that the chairman may be elected from outside (*t*), are regulated by the same rules as are applicable to urban district councils (*a*). The Meetings

(*k*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 57), s 10

(*l*) *Ibid*, s 12

(*m*) *Ibid*, s 13

(*n*) *Ibid*, s 11

(*o*) See Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 20 (6), District Councillors and Guardians (Term of Office) Act, 1900 (63 & 64 Vict c 16), s 1, and title ELECTIONS, Vol XII p 390

(*p*) Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 60 (2) (4). The first appointed day for retirement in rotation was 15th April, 1896 (*ibid*, s 79 (3)), and for simultaneous retirement, 15th April, 1898 (*ibid*, s 79 (5)).

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 20 (1). An exception exists in the case of Oxford, which is under a local Act see *ibid*, s 60 (6).

(*r*) *Ibid*, s 20 (8). See also title ELECTIONS, Vol XII pp 375, 393. It would seem that where the chairman is elected from among the guardians he ceases to be chairman on the 15th April in any year when he goes out of office as a guardian, but that, subject to this, he is entitled to act as chairman until his successor is appointed at the annual meeting, see opinion of the Local Government Board, 20th March, 1912 (76 J P 165), and *R v Rowlands, Ex parte Berkeley*, [1910] 2 K B 930.

(*s*) Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 59 (2).

(*t*) See the text, *supra*.

(*a*) See Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73) s 59, Public Health Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 55), s 199, Sched I, and title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 278. As to keeping order at meetings, see

SECT 5
Boards of
Guardians

meetings are not necessarily public (*b*), and the guardians may decline to admit any person, save the Local Government Board inspector (*c*). The fact that a member who has a personal interest in a matter before the meeting takes part in the proceedings does not vitiate the proceedings (*d*).

Meetings must not be held in premises licensed for the sale of intoxicating liquor, except where no other room is available either free of charge or at a reasonable cost (*e*). If guardians have provided themselves with a board-room and offices, they must permit the rural district council to have the use thereof, for the purpose of their meetings and proceedings, at all reasonable hours, any question as to such hours may be determined by the Local Government Board (*f*).

Notice of
meetings

1113 At least one month's notice in writing must be given to every guardian (*g*) of a meeting at which proposals in the nature of superannuation or gratuities to officers or servants are to be considered (*h*), and at least seven days' notice of resolutions to authorise the attendance of delegates at meetings of the Poor Law Unions Association (*i*).

Where an Act requires the consent in writing of a majority of the guardians of a union, it will suffice if a resolution giving consent is passed at a meeting of the guardians of which meeting, and of the business to be transacted thereat, not less than fourteen days' notice has been given to each guardian (*k*).

District
committees

1114 If the whole of any parish or parishes is situated more than four miles from the place of meeting of the board of guardians of the union of which it or they form part, the Local Government Board, on the application of the guardians, may form it or them

Dobson v Fussy (1831), 7 Bing 305, *Doyle v Falconer* (1866), L R 1 P C 328. The powers of the Local Government Board with respect to the proceedings of guardians are not affected by the Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73) s 59 (*ibid* s 59 (4)). The guardians of every parish or union acting under any local Act for the relief of the poor must meet once a fortnight or oftener and, if there is no designated chairman, must appoint a chairman and vice chairman annually and as vacancies occur (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 64).

(*b*) As to the privilege of members in respect of speeches, see title LIBEL AND STANDER, Vol XVIII, pp 677 *et seq*, and of newspaper reports, *ibid*, pp 698, 746.

(*c*) See p 527 *ante*.

(*d*) *Murray v Epsom Local Board* [1897] 1 Ch 35.

(*e*) Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 61.

(*f*) *Ibid*, s 59 (3).

(*g*) In any case where a meeting is required to be summoned by notice, it is necessary that the notice should be served on every member of the board. A default may render the meeting invalid (*Dobson v Fussy*, *supra*).

(*h*) Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 50), s 9. See p 546, *post*.

(*i*) Poor Law Unions Association (Expenses) Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict c 19), s 1. See p 549, *post*.

(*k*) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 58), s 12.

into a district, and direct the guardians to appoint a committee of their members to receive applications from poor persons requiring relief in such district, to examine into the cases, and to report to the guardians thereon (*l*)

§ 501 5
**Boards of
Guardians.**

Sub-Section 2 — *Duties, Powers, and Qualities*

1115. Guardians cannot act except at a meeting of the board of guardians (*m*). They govern the workhouse of the union (*n*), and administer the relief of the poor (*o*). Their duties in these respects are prescribed by the Local Government Board by a general order (*p*), declaring that, subject thereto, the guidance, government, and control of every workhouse, and of the officers, servants, assistants, and paupers therein, are to be exercised by the guardians (*q*).

Duties of
guardians

1116. The guardians are a corporation by the name of "The Guardians of the Poor of the Union (or of the Parish of) in the county of , with perpetual succession, and a common seal, and as such they may accept, take, and hold, for the benefit of such union or parish, any buildings, lands, or hereditaments, goods, effects, or other property (*r*).

Constitution

A board of guardians is a local authority within the meaning of the Local Loans Acts (*s*), and of the Local Government (Stock Transfer) Act, 1895 (*t*), and a spending authority within the meaning of the Agricultural Rates Act, 1896 (*u*). The Public Bodies Corrupt Practices Act, 1889 (*b*), applies to a board of guardians, its members, officers, and servants.

1117 Any contract by guardians in connection with the maintenance, clothing, lodging, employment, or relief of the poor, or

Contracts

(*l*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 57) s 7

(*m*) Poor Law Amendment Act 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4 c 76) s 38

(*n*) See p 558, *post*

(*o*) See p 563 *post*

(*p*) General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor England, pp 74 *et seq*)

(*q*) *Ibid*, art 152

(*r*) Union and Parish Property Act, 1835 (5 & 6 Will 4, c 69), s 7. Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 57), s 16. An injunction lies to prevent the improper application of the poor rate, see, however, *A-G v McElrath Tydfil Union*, [1900] 1 Ch 516. C A. Guardians are empowered to acquire land for the employment of the poor thereon, see Poor Relief Act, 1819 (59 Geo 3, c 12), s 12. Poor Relief Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 42), s 1. Crown Lands Allotments Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 59), s 1. Union and Parish Property Act, 1835 (5 & 6 Will 4, c 69), s 4. and Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 6. A board of guardians may provide buildings, appliances, and attendants for the purpose of carrying out the provisions of the Cleansing of Persons Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 31), ss 1, 2. Permitting a verminous person to have the use of apparatus for cleansing the person and his clothing is not parochial relief (*ibid*, s 1).

(*s*) Local Loans Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 83), s 34, see title MONEY AND MONEY-LENDING, Vol XXI, pp 61 *et seq*

(*t*) 58 & 59 Vict c 32, s 1 (2)

(*u*) 59 & 60 Vict c 16, s 9, Schedule. See also title RATES AND RATING

(*b*) 52 & 53 Vict c 69, s 7, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 484

- Sec 5**
Boards of Guardians for any other purposes relating to or connected with the general management of the poor, must conform to the orders in force of the Local Government Board or its predecessors, or be otherwise sanctioned by the Board, or it will be voidable or void at the option of the Board (c)
- Exemption from stamp duty** **1118** Mortgages, bonds, instruments, or any assignment thereof, property given by way of security, contracts, agreements, and appointments of officers, and other documents given by guardians, are exempt from stamp duty (d)
- Payments** **1119** Payment of debts, claims, or demands can only be made by guardians within the half-year in which the same were incurred or become due, or within three months after the expiration of such half-year, unless the Local Government Board extends the time for payment, which may be done for a period not exceeding twelve months after the date of the debt, claim, or demand (e)
- Must not make profit** **1120** Guardians and their officers are prohibited, under a penalty of forfeiting £100 to the informer, from being concerned, either directly or indirectly, in the supply for profit (f) of goods to the workhouse, or otherwise for the support and maintenance of the poor, during their term of office, with an exception where two justices certify that the necessary articles cannot otherwise be obtained (g)

(c) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 49 The orders regulating contracts are the General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 44—51, and the General Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 1st December, 1877 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, pp 135 *et seq*). As to the necessity for the contracts of guardians to be under seal, see title CORPORATIONS, Vol VIII, pp 380 *et seq*.

(d) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 86 As to stamp duties generally, see title REVENUE.

(e) Poor Law (Payment of Debts) Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 49), ss 1, 4 This imposes a prohibition against payment after the fixed date (*Midland Rail Co v Edmonton Union*, [1895] A C 485). As to when the time begins to run, see *ibid*, and *West Ham Union Guardians v St Matthew, Bethnal Green (Churchwardens) etc*, [1896] A C 477, *Manchester, Sheffield and Lancashire Rail Co v Doncaster Union Guardians*, [1897] 1 Q B 117, C A. As to extension of time, and the application of the statute generally, see *Rhodes v Pateley Bridge Union Guardians* (1884), 51 L T 235, *Baker v Billerica Union Guardians* (1863), 2 H & C 642, *R v Stepney Union* (1874), L R 9 Q B 383, *Castle v Fulham Union Guardians* (1872), 37 J P 56, *Dearle v Petersfield Union Guardians* (1888), 21 Q B D 447, C A. See also title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX, p 180. As to the method of payment, see General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 84, 85, and General Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 7th April, 1857 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 129).

(f) See *Skinner v Buckee* (1824), 3 B & C 6.

(g) See Poor Relief Act, 1815 (55 Geo 3, c 137), s 6, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), ss 51, 77, *Robinson v Emerson* (1866), 4 H & C 352, *Henderson v Sherborne* (1837), 2 M & W 236, *West v Andrews* (1822) 5 B & Ald 328, *Pope v Backhouse* (1818), 8 Taunt 239, *Stanley v Dodd* (1822), 1 Dow & Ry (K B) 307, *Greenhow v Parker* (1861), 26 J P 24, *Davies v Hurvey* (1874), L R 9 Q B 433, and other cases collected in Lumley's Public Health Acts, 7th ed, pp 1088, 1089—1091. The restriction does not apply to materials supplied for the repair of the workhouse (*Barber v Waite* (1834), 1 Ad & El 514).

1121 Guardians may incur reasonable expenses in collecting necessary information on matters connected with their duties (*h*)

SECT 5
Boards of
Guardians

1122 With the consent of the Local Government Board, guardians may subscribe towards the support and maintenance of any public hospital or infirmary for the reception of sick, diseased, disabled, or wounded persons, or of persons suffering from any permanent or natural infirmity (*i*), and to any asylum or institution for the blind, or the deaf and dumb, or for persons suffering from any permanent or natural infirmity, and towards any association or society for aiding such persons, or for providing nurses, or for aiding girls or boys in service, or towards any other asylum or institution which appears to the guardians to be calculated to render useful aid in the administration of the relief of the poor (*k*), and to any society or body corporate for the prevention of cruelty to children (*l*)

collecting
information
subscriptions
to hospitals
etc

1123 Guardians must provide for the reception in the workhouse of children and young persons taken there in pursuance of the Children Act, 1908 (*m*), and may pay any expenses so incurred out of the common fund (*n*). They may institute proceedings under Part II of that Act, which relates to the prevention of cruelty to children and young persons, and may pay the reasonable costs and expenses thereof (*o*) and they are the local authority, elsewhere than in London, for the purposes of Part I of the Act, which deals with infant life protection (*p*)

Children and
young
persons

1124 With the sanction of the Local Government Board, guardians, including metropolitan guardians, may borrow for the purpose of raising the expenses incurred or proposed to be incurred for any permanent work or object, or any other thing the cost of which ought in the opinion of the Local Government Board to be spread over a term of years, but the total debts of the guardians under the Acts relating to the relief of the poor must not exceed one-fourth of the total annual rateable value of the union, unless the Local Government Board has by provision order extended such maximum, which it may do up to one-half (*q*). The unapplied

Borrowing
powers

(*h*) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), ss 15, 16

(*i*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict c 105), s 4

(*k*) Poor Law Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 54), s 10. No subscription can be given to any asylum or institution that is not open to be of assistance to the paupers under the guardians (*ibid*). In London the guardians may arrange with hospitals for the treatment of paupers on terms: see Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 63), s 16

(*l*) Children Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 67), s 36

(*m*) 8 Edw 7, c 67

(*n*) *Ibid* s 126. The Local Government Board has advised that under this section guardians have no discretion as to receiving such cases, but must do so

(*o*) *Ibid* s 34 (1), see p 541 *post*

(*p*) Children Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 67), s 10. See generally, title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, pp 178 *et seq*. For the powers and duties of guardians in relation to the education of children see title EDUCATION, Vol XII, pp 81 *et seq*

(*q*) Under certain circumstances persons who have made advances to unions and parishes beyond the authorised borrowing powers may be

SEC 5
Boards of
Guardians

balance of any loan may, with the consent of the Local Government Board, be applied for any purpose for which guardians may borrow (r) The loan must be repaid within such period not exceeding sixty years as the guardians, with the sanction of the Local Government Board, may determine, either by yearly or half-yearly instalments of principal or principal and interest, or by means of a sinking fund (s)

(Guardians may borrow without any consent for the purpose of repaying outstanding loans which they have power to repay, but any money so borrowed must be repaid within the same period as that originally sanctioned, unless the Local Government Board consents to the term being extended (t))

Moneys borrowed by guardians are a charge on and are payable out of the common fund of the union (a) They must keep a register of the securities in respect of all sums borrowed by them, in the form prescribed by the Local Government Board (b) They must not invest in their own securities (c)

The Managers of the Metropolitan Asylum District (d) may borrow from the London County Council in the manner prescribed for borrowing from the defunct Metropolitan Board of Works (e)

Returns.

1125 Boards of guardians must make annual returns to the Local Government Board of their receipts and expenditure and of any rates levied by them The clerk is responsible, under a penalty of not exceeding £20, for the due making of such returns in the prescribed form (f)

reimbursed with the consent of the Local Government Board, see the Poor Law Loans Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 2), s 4

(r) Poor Law Act, 1880 (52 & 53 Vict c 56) s 2

(s) Poor Law Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 29), s 1 (1) The sinking fund must be created and applied in accordance with the Local Loans Acts, the prescribed rate not exceeding 3 per cent per annum (*ibid*, s. 1 (2)) In addition to the general power of borrowing, guardians in the Metropolis may be specially empowered to borrow from the London County Council by the annual money bills of that council, as to which see title METROPOLIS, Vol XX p 444

(t) Poor Law Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 29), s 1 (4) —(6) Guardians cannot pay off a loan sooner or in a different manner than is provided for in the contract, unless the lender consents (*West Derby Union v Metropolitan Life Assurance Society*, [1897] A C 647)

(a) Union Loans Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 45) s 4 The form of security is prescribed by *ibid*, s 6 As to the common fund, see p 549, *post* The Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 24, provided that loans for the purpose of building, hiring, altering or enlarging work houses might be charged on the poor rate and, by *ibid*, s 63, that the Public Works Loans Commissioners might make loans on such security As to borrowing for the redemption of loans, see Poor Law Loans Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 11), s 2

(b) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 58), s 14 The form of register is prescribed by General Order, 7th December, 1882 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 174)

(c) Poor Law Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 29), s 1 (2)

(d) See title METROPOLIS, Vol XX, p 411

(e) See Metropolitan Board of Works (Loans) Act, 1860 (32 & 33 Vict c 102), s 37

(f) See Local Taxation Returns Acts, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 51) and 1877 (40 & 41 Vict c 66)

PART II — POOR LAW AUTHORITIES.

1126. Guardians have many powers and duties relating to matters which are dealt with elsewhere in this work (*q*).

SECT. 6
Boards of
Guardians

SUB-SECT. 3 — Local Proceedings

Other powers

1127 Guardians may bring actions, prefer indictments, and sue and be sued in their corporate name (*h*), and in such name take or resist all other proceedings for or in relation to any property held by them in virtue of their office. In any action or indictment relating to such property it is sufficient to state or lay the property to be that of the guardians of the union or parish (*i*)

Use of
corporate
name.

1128 In any civil or criminal proceeding it is not necessary to prove the original order constituting any board of guardians in any case in which any persons professing to form a board in obedience to such order have taken upon themselves to act, and have continued for three years to act, in the execution of the laws for the relief of the poor, and in no proceedings is it lawful to question the qualification or validity of the election of any person as a guardian after the end of twelve months next following the election, or the time when the alleged disqualification or want of qualification of the person against whom such proceedings shall be directed has arisen (*h*)

Proof of
constitution

1129 In all cases in which guardians may make an application or complaint, or take proceedings, before justices at petty, special, general, or quarter sessions, they may empower any of their officers to do so, by order in writing under the hand of the presiding chairman and sealed with the common seal of the board (*i*)

Proceedings
before
justices

The clerk or other officer of a board of guardians or district board may, if duly empowered by the board, make or resist any

(*q*) For the powers and duties of guardians with regard to lunatics, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol. VII, pp 488 *et seq.*, 499 *et seq.*, 527. As to the burial of poor persons, see title BURIAL AND CREMATION, Vol. III, pp 539 *et seq.*, as to the education of children, see title EDUCATION, Vol. XII, pp 81 *et seq.*, as to the appointment of the assessment committee, see the Union Assessment Committee Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict. c. 103), and, generally, for the powers and duties of guardians as a rating authority, see title RATES AND RATING. For the protection of children and young persons, see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol. XVII, p 171. As to inclosing common land for poor law purposes, see title COMMONS AND RIGHTS OF COMMON, Vol. IV, pp 510, 511, and the Commons Act, 1899 (62 & 63 Vict. c. 30), s. 22, Sched. I, as to poor allotments, see title ALLOTMENTS, Vol. I, pp 332, 333. For the powers of guardians as regards apprentices and servants, see pp 565, 566, *post* and title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol. XX, p 80.

(*h*) See p 535, *ante*.

(*i*) Union and Parish Property Act, 1835 (5 & 6 Will. 4, c. 69), s. 7, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict. c. 57), s. 16. As to laying the property in indictments, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, pp 336, 645, note (*d*), 647. Guardians are within the protection afforded by the Public Authorities Protection Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 61), see title PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS.

(*k*) Poor Law Board Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict. c. 109), s. 25, and see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict. c. 101), s. 72.

(*l*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict. c. 57), s. 17.

SECT 5
Boards of
Guardians

Prosecutions
 for poor law
 offences.

application, claim, or complaint, or take and conduct any proceedings on behalf of the board, before justices at petty or special sessions or out of sessions (*m*)

1130 A board of guardians or a district board may pay the reasonable costs of the apprehension, and prosecution of any person charged with refusing or neglecting to maintain himself or his family, or with running away and leaving his family chargeable, or whereby such family has become chargeable, or with wilfully neglecting or disobeying the rules, orders, and regulations of the Local Government Board, or with any offence or misbehaviour in any workhouse, or with deserting or running away from any workhouse, and carrying away clothes, linen, or other goods or things belonging to any workhouse, or given or procured or provided as or for relief, or with neglect of or disobedience to the reasonable and lawful orders of justices or guardians, or of any district board, in the administration of the laws relating to the relief of the poor, or with obstructing or assaulting any officer engaged in the administration of such laws, or with fraudulently obtaining, stealing, purloining, embezzling, wasting, or injuring, or wilfully misapplying any property applicable to or connected with the relief of the poor, or with any offence directly affecting the administration of the laws for the relief of the poor, and the reasonable costs of apprehending and prosecuting any officer who may have been employed in the administration of such laws for any neglect or breach of any duty of his office, or for any maltreatment or abuse of any poor person, and, subject to the approval of the Local Government Board, every board of guardians or district board must pay the costs of all legal proceedings taken by any auditor, or under his direction, for the protection of the poor rates or property of any parish, union, or district, or taken by any other person whom the board of guardians or district board have authorised or directed to institute such prosecution or legal proceedings, and to the extent to which any such costs may not be repaid by the offending or other party, or from the county, liberty, or borough rates, the guardians of any union may, in any of the cases aforesaid, having due regard to the circumstances of the case, and subject to the approval of the Local Government Board, charge such expenses to the common fund of the union, and the district board of any district may, having like regard to the circumstances of the case, and subject to the like approval, charge such expenses, either to the funds of the whole of such district, or on any one or more of the unions and parishes comprised therein (*n*) Costs and expenses lawfully incurred in and about the prosecution of any person for which the guardians are liable, or which they undertake to

Proceedings
 for the
 protection of
 property

(*m*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 68, Solicitors Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 127), s 33

(*n*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 59 The costs of vaccination prosecutions by guardians or their officer or any registrar are within this section (Vaccination Act of 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 84), s 33) For vaccination generally, see title PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION

pay under this provision, must in all cases be charged to the common fund (o)

SECT. 5.
Boards of
Guardians.

1131 Guardians may also out of their common fund pay the reasonable costs and expenses of any proceedings instituted by them under the Children Act, 1908 (p)

Proceedings
under the
Children
Act, 1908
Offences
against
servants

1132 In cases where justices certify that a prosecution against a master or mistress for neglecting to provide necessary food, clothing or lodging to an apprentice or servant (q), or for inflicting bodily injury upon a person under the age of sixteen years, should in the interests of public justice, be conducted by the guardians or overseers, the guardians or overseers must prosecute and pay the costs reasonably incurred in that behalf (r)

1133 Guardians who have engaged in litigation or any proceedings in court cannot be required to pay their solicitor his costs until the final determination of the action or proceedings, or until he has ceased to be retained by or for them. The bill of costs must be taxed and be paid within one year after such final determination, unless the Local Government Board authorises an extension of time for not exceeding six months (s)

Payment of
solicitor's
costs.

1134 Where a union extends into several distinct jurisdictions, every matter, act, charge or complaint by which the guardians thereof are affected, or in which they have any interest, is for the purpose of jurisdiction deemed to arise or exist equally throughout the union (t)

Jurisdiction

SUB SECT. 4. — *Officers*

(1) *Appointment and Duties*

1135 The Local Government Board may by order direct the overseers or guardians of any parish or union, or of united parishes or unions, to appoint such paid officers with such qualifications as the Board prescribes, for superintending or assisting in the administration of the relief and employment of the poor, and may define

Appointment
of officers

(o) Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict. c. 79), s. 9. As to the common fund, see p. 549, *post*.

(p) 8 Edw. 7, c. 67, ss. 10, 34, see p. 537 *ante*, and title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol. XVII, pp. 158, note (q), 171.

(q) See Offences against the Person Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 100), s. 26, and title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 623.

(r) Offences against the Person Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 100), s. 73.

(s) Poor Law (Payment of Debts) Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict. c. 43), s. 5. This provision does not prevent guardians making payment on account of costs (*ibid.*). See also p. 540, *ante*. For the limitation of actions against guardians, see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol. XIX, p. 180, PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS.

(t) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 100), s. 27. The appellate jurisdiction of quarter sessions depends upon the jurisdiction of the justices making the order appealed from. If a union extends into a borough, and an order is made by the borough justices, the appeal therefrom lies to the borough quarter sessions, not to the quarter sessions for the county (*R v Staffordshire Justices* (1872) L. R. 7 Q. B. 288). See, generally, as to appeals to quarter sessions, title MAGISTRATES, Vol. XIX, p. 642.

SEC. 5
Boards of
Guardians

the duties of such officers, the mode of appointment and dismissal, the security, if any, to be given by them, and their remuneration (a). The officers covered by this authorisation include any clergyman (b), schoolmaster, medical man, vestry clerk, treasurer, collector, assistant overseer, governor, master or mistress of a workhouse, or any other person who is employed in any parish or union in connection with the administration of the poor law (c). The appointment of any paid officer rests with the guardians (d), but if guardians make default in appointing an officer whom it is their duty to appoint, an appointment may be made by the Local Government Board (e).

In pursuance of the aforesaid authorisation the Local Government Board has by order (f) provided that guardians must,

(a) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 46. The power applies to parishes under Local Acts (*Re St Giles and St George, Bloomsbury, R v Poor Law Commissioners* (1851), 17 Q. B. 445, *R v St Pancras (Directors of the Poor)* (1858), 1 E. B. & E. 583, *R v St James, Westminster (Governors etc. of the Poor)* (1859), 1 E. & E. 861).

(b) This includes a Roman Catholic clergyman (*R v Haslehurst* (1884), 13 Q. B. D. 253). A chaplain of a workhouse is an officer within the meaning of the section (*Ex parte Molyneux* (1863) 27 J. P. 56).

(c) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 109. As to the appointment of rate collectors, see Poor Rate Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict. c. 84), s. 2, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict. c. 101), s. 62 and title RATES AND RATING.

(d) *R v Hunt* (1840), 12 Ad. & El. 130.

(e) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict. c. 122), s. 7, Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 Vict. c. 6), s. 80.

(f) General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, art. 153. Art. 154 provides that the officers must conform to the orders of the Local Government Board, see arts. 155, 156 for the mode of appointment. Arts. 162—167 deal with the qualification of officers. No person who has been convicted of felony, fraud, or perjury can be an officer (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 48). General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners. Arts. 172—176 deal with their remuneration (see also General Accounts and Audit Order, 14th January, 1867 (Stat. R. & O. Rev., Vol. X, Poor, England, pp. 301 *et seq.*), art. 36). General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, arts. 87, 184—186, General Order, 5th May, 1877 and General Order, 12th February, 1872, art. 1, provide for the security to be given by officers. The employment of assistant officers is regulated by General Order, 19th August, 1867. The tenure of office and dismissal of officers is the subject of the General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts. 188, 190, 192—198, and the General Order, 12th February, 1879 (Stat. R. & O. Rev., Vol. X, Poor, England, p. 161), art. 1. The clerk, treasurer, chaplain, and medical officer can only be removed by the Local Government Board, though the guardians may suspend such an officer. Other officers may be dismissed by the guardians with the consent of the Local Government Board. Porters, nurses, and domestic servants may be dismissed by the guardians, who must report the reason therefor to the Local Government Board. Under the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 48, the Local Government Board may remove an officer without notice, and at its sole discretion, and mandamus does not lie to reinstate him (*R v Poor Law Commissioners* (1850), 14 J. P. 36). As to the power of guardians to appoint the superintendent registrar, see *R v Aclison* (1862), 2 B. & S. 795 and title REGISTRATION OF BIRTHS, MARRIAGES, AND DEATHS.

Sect. 8
Board of
Guardians

whenever requisite, or whenever a vacancy occurs, appoint (g) fit persons to hold the offices, and perform the assigned duties, of clerk to the guardians (h), treasurer of the union (i), chaplain (k), medical officer for the workhouse (l), district medical officer (m), master of the workhouse (n), matron of the workhouse (o), school-

(g) If the salary or remuneration exceeds £50, an appointment must be under seal (*Dyle v St Pancras Guardians* (1872), 36 J P 375 *Austin v Bethnal Green Guardians* (1874), L R 9 C P 91, and see *Smart v West Ham Union Guardians* (1855), 10 Exch 867)

(h) The duties of the clerk are prescribed by the General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 202, 219, 220, General Order, 14th January, 1878, and the books he must keep by General Accounts and Audit Order 14th January, 1867, arts 15, 16 For the duties of the clerk to a visiting committee of an asylum under the Lunacy Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 5), and the rules made thereunder, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND Vol XIX, p 434 An information in the nature of a *quo warranto* will lie in respect of the office see title CROWN PRACTICE, Vol X, p 129, note (l)

(i) For the duties, liabilities, and remuneration of the treasurer, see General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts, 174, 184—186, 203, 204, General Accounts and Audit Order, 14th January, 1867, art 18 A treasurer who is a bank manager is entitled to the protection afforded to bankers by the Bills of Exchange Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 61) s 60 (*Hatfield Union v Wheelwright* (1875), L R 10 Exch 183) A treasurer is not liable for a loss incurred through the necessary employment of an agent and without any negligence on his part (*Colchester Union Guardians v Moy* (1894), 68 L T 564)

(k) As to the appointment of chaplain, see *R v Baintree Union Guardians* (1841), 1 Q B 130 and as to removal, *Ex parte Mollineux* (1863), 7 L T 599 The duties of the chaplain are prescribed by the General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, art 211 A Roman Catholic priest or Nonconformist minister may also be appointed, see General Order, 19th August, 1867, and *R v Haskins* (1884) 13 Q B D 253 As to the power of the bishop to license a clergyman to officiate in the chapel of a public or charitable institution, see the Private Chapels Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 66), and title ECCLESIASTICAL LAW, Vol XI p 64

(l) As to the appointment of medical officers see General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847 arts 153, 157, qualifications, *ibid*, art 169, General Order, 10th December, 1880 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor England, p 143) tenure of office, General Order, 25th May, 1857 (Stat R & O Rev Vol X, Poor England, p 157), General Order (Metropolis), 14th July, 1880, and as to the right of the Local Government Board to dismiss, see *Donahoe v Local Government Board* (1882), 46 L T 390, remuneration General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 75, 76, 177, 179, 183, Regulation, 10th June 1875, General Order, 12th February, 1879, art 4 (Stat R & O Rev Vol X, Poor, England, p 161), duties, General Consolidated Order, 24th July, 1847, arts 199, 200, 205, 207, General Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 4th April, 1868, General Order, 12th February, 1879, art 3 General Boarding Out Order, 28th May, 1889, arts 4, 9 As to physicians and surgeons generally, see title MEDICINE AND PHARMACY, Vol XX, pp 305 *et seq*

(m) As to the division of unions into medical districts, see General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 158—161

(n) The duties of the master are set out in the General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 208, 209, General Accounts and Audit Order, 14th January, 1867, arts 19, 21;

SECT 5
Boards of
Guardians

master, schoolmistress (*p*), porter (*q*), nurse (*r*), relieving officer (*s*), superintendent of outdoor labour (*t*), and also such assistants as the guardians, with the consent of the Board, may deem necessary for the efficient performance of the duties of any of the said offices. The Board have also directed the guardians of certain unions and parishes to appoint fit and proper persons to collect the moneys due and payable to such guardians, who are called collectors of the guardians (*a*)

Removal of
officers

1136 The Local Government Board may by order remove any paid officer for disobedience or neglect, and require another to be appointed in his place. No person so removed can afterwards be appointed to any paid office without the consent of the Board (*b*)

Visitors of
children

1137 Guardians may appoint and pay any officer or other competent person to visit and report upon the condition, treatment,

General Order, 16th February, 1869. A master cannot, while holding office as such, hold any other parochial or township office (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 101), s 6). If a master and matron be husband and wife, and one of them is dismissed, or vacates office, or dies, the other ceases to hold his or her office at the end of the current quarter (General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, art 189).

(*o*) See *ibid*, art 210, and General Accounts and Audit Order, 14th January, 1867, for the duties of the matron.

(*p*) The duties of the schoolmaster and schoolmistress are prescribed by the General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, art 212.

(*q*) See *ibid*, art 211, for the duties.

(*r*) See *ibid*, art 213, for the duties. A porter and nurse may be dismissed by the guardians without the consent of the Local Government Board, but the dismissal and the grounds thereof must be reported to the Board (*ibid*, art 188). Guardians may appoint district nurses for the sick poor out of the workhouse, see General Order, 17th January, 1892.

(*s*) Except with the consent of the Local Government Board, a relieving officer cannot hold any other parochial office (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 101), s 6). His appointment, tenure of office, and duties are regulated by the General Consolidated Order, 24th July, 1847, arts 153, 192, 215, 216, General Accounts and Audit Order, 14th January, 1867, arts 23, 24, General Order, 12th February, 1879, art 2, and see Circular Letters of the Local Government Board dated 18th March, 1910, and 25th March, 1912. He also has duties with regard to lunatics, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, p 505, burial, see Infectious Disease Prevention Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict c 34), s 10. Public Health (London) Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 76), ss 72, 80, and title BURIAL AND CREMATION, Vol III, p 551, and as to the registration of electors see title ELECTIONS, Vol XII, p 198. In connection with the obligation upon a relieving officer to give relief in urgent cases, reference may be made to *Clarl v Joslin* (1873), 27 L T 762.

(*t*) See General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, art 217.

(*a*) See General Orders of 7th October, 1865, 27th November, 1866 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, pp 145, 150), 4th January, 1871, 9th April, 1875, and General Accounts and Audit Order, 14th January, 1867, art 17. As to the collection of the poor rate, see title RATES AND RATING.

(*b*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 48.

and conduct of any poor child under the age of sixteen, who has gone into service from the workhouse (c)

Sect. 8.
Boards of
Guardians.

Disobedient
officers.

1138 Any master of a workhouse or other officer of any parish or union who wilfully disobeys the legal and reasonable orders of justices and guardians in carrying the orders of the Local Government Board, or the provisions of the Poor Law Acts, into execution, is liable on summary conviction to a penalty of not more than £5 (d).

1139. If any overseer, assistant overseer, master of a workhouse, or other paid officer, or any other person employed by or under the authority of the guardians, purloins, embezzles, or wilfully wastes or misapplies any of the moneys, goods, or chattels belonging to any parish or union, every such offender shall, in addition to such other pains and penalties as he may be liable to, upon conviction before any two justices, forfeit and pay for every such offence any sum not exceeding £20, and also treble the amount or value of such money, goods, or chattels so purloined, embezzled, wasted, or misapplied, and every person so convicted is for ever thereafter incapable of serving any office in relation to the relief of the poor (e).

Disobedient
officers.

A person serving under a board of guardians is an agent within the meaning of the Prevention of Corruption Act, 1906 (f)

1140 An assault upon an officer acting in the due execution of his duty, or upon a person aiding such officer, is punishable with imprisonment for not more than two years, with or without hard labour. The court may also order the offender to pay the costs of the prosecution (g)

Assaults on
officers

Guardians may pay to or reimburse an officer the expenses of repairing property belonging to him which has been damaged or destroyed by an applicant for poor relief, and also certain costs incurred by him in connection with the prosecution of the offender (h)

(c) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), s. 33. A like power is given to the managers of a district school (*ibid.*, and see p. 566, *post*)

(d) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 98. Poor law officers must not interfere as such in any matter connected with a bastardy order (see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict. c. 101), s. 7). If any officer of a union, parish, or place endeavours to induce any person to contract a marriage by any threat or promise respecting any affiliation proceedings, he is guilty of a misdemeanour, penalty, 40s. on conviction before any two justices (*ibid.*, s. 8).

(e) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 97. An information for misapplication must allege that it was wilful (*Carpenter v. Mason* (1840), 12 Ad. & El. 629).

(f) 6 Edw. 7, c. 34, s. 1 (3), see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 710. For the restriction against officers making an illicit profit out of their office, see p. 536, *ante*, and General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, art. 218.

(g) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict. c. 101), s. 9. Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict. c. 105), s. 18; Offences against the Person Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 100), s. 38, and see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 605.

(h) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict. c. 105), s. 5.

SECT 5

Boards of
Guardians

Responsibility
of guardians
for torts of
officers

Contributions
by officers

1141 Guardians are not liable for the neglect or default of their officers and servants in carrying out ministerial acts (i), but if they choose to adopt and ratify the independent tort of an officer or servant, not committed ministerially, but intended to be done for the benefit of the guardians, they are liable (k).

(u.) *Superannuation*

1142 Every officer and servant (l) in the service or employment of guardians (m) must contribute annually for the purposes of superannuation, in the case of those having less than five years' service on the 11th August, 1896 (n), or appointed after that date, 2 per cent of the salary or wages and emoluments (o) for each year, in the case of those with more than five and less than fifteen years' service at that date, 2½ per cent, and in the case of those with more than fifteen years' service at that date, 3 per cent. All contributions are deducted from the remuneration and carried to the common fund of the union (p).

Officers and servants appointed before the 29th September, 1896 (q), and female nurses, assistant nurses, and attendants on the sick or insane, have an option, which must be exercised in the prescribed manner, to remain outside the provisions as to superannuation (r).

(i) *Tozelund v West Ham Union*, [1907] 1 K B 920, C A, see also cases cited in note (n), p 561, *post*

(k) *Burns v St Mary, Islington, Guardians* (1911), 76 J P 11, *per* BUCKNILL, J

(l) For the meaning of these expressions, see Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 50), s 19. A public vaccinator (see title PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION) is not an officer in the employment of guardians within the meaning of this Act (*Lawson v Marlborough Union Guardians*, [1912] 2 Ch 154).

(m) Including incorporated trustees or overseers of a parish, managers of district schools and sick asylums, Managers of the Metropolitan Asylums District, and any authority charged with the administration of the relief of the poor (Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 50) ss 14, 19).

(n) The date of the passing of the Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 50).

(o) "Emoluments" includes all fees, poundage, and other payments made to any officer or servant as such for his own use, also the money value of any apartments, rations, or other allowances in kind appertaining to his office or employment (*ibid*, s 19).

(p) See *ibid*, ss 12, 13. It has been held in *Beaumont v Bowers*, [1900] 2 Q B 204, that the superannuation contributions may be deducted from the salary for the purpose of assessment to income tax under Sched E, but this decision was severely criticised by the Court of Appeal in *Hudson v Grubbe*, *Bell v Grubbe*, [1903] 1 K B 517, C A and it may be doubted whether it is good law. As to paid rate collectors or assistant overseers, see Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 50), s 16, and as to superintendent registrars, see *ibid*, s 17.

(q) The date of commencement of the Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 50).

(r) *Ibid*, s 15, Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act Amendment Act 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 28), s 1. If this option has been exercised by such an officer or servant, he will remain subject to the provisions of the repealed Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1864 (27 & 28 Vict c 42), and the Acts amending the same (Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 50), s 15).

1143 Every contributing officer and servant who becomes incapable of discharging the duties of his office with efficiency, by reason of permanent infirmity of mind or body, or of old age, or who has attained the age of sixty years and completed an aggregate service of forty years, or who has attained the full age of sixty-five years, is entitled, on resigning or otherwise ceasing to hold his office or employment, to receive during life out of the common fund of the union a superannuation allowance on the prescribed scale. An officer or servant is not entitled to an allowance on the ground of old age unless he has completed the full age of sixty years. Guardians may require an officer or servant who has attained the age of sixty-five to retire upon superannuation (s).

SECT. 5.
Boards of
Guardians.

Right to
benefit.

If a person in receipt of superannuation allowance is subsequently appointed to an office or employment by guardians or similar authorities, the allowance is suspended or reduced to the extent to which the salary or wages and emoluments of that office or employment are equal to or in excess of the allowance (t).

1144 The claim to superannuation will be forfeited if the person ceases to hold office in consequence of any offence of a fraudulent character or of grave misconduct, though in such a case the amount of his contributions may be returned to him (a).

Forfeiture.

1145 An officer or servant who has served for ten years but less than eleven years is entitled to an annual allowance equal to ten-sixtieths of the average amount of his salary or wages and emoluments during the five years ending on the quarter day before he ceases to hold his office or employment, with an addition of one-sixtieth of such average amount for every additional completed year of service until a maximum allowance of forty-sixtieths is reached (b).

Scale of
allowance

All service is reckoned, whether continuous or not, and whether whole time or not (c). In consideration of peculiar professional qualifications, or of special circumstances, and with the consent of the Local Government Board, the guardians in computing the allowance may add a number of years, not exceeding ten, to the actual service of the officer or servant (d).

A superannuation allowance is not assignable, and cannot be charged with the debts or liabilities of the recipient (e).

1146 An officer or servant who has not become entitled to a superannuation allowance, and who loses his office or employment by reason of a reduction of staff, alteration of areas or boundaries, or otherwise ceases to hold office or employment by reason of bodily injury not occasioned by his own default, or of any other cause whatever other than his own misconduct or voluntary resignation,

Repayment
of contribu-
tions

(s) Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 50),

s 2

(t) *Ibid*, s 6

(a) *Ibid*, s 7

(b) *Ibid*, s 3

(c) *Ibid*, s 4

(d) *Ibid*, s 5

As to the notice of meeting to be given in this case, see *ibid*, s. 9, and p 534, *ante*

(e) Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict c 50),

s 10

SECT 5
Boards of
Guardians.

is entitled to be repaid his contributions to the superannuation fund, but if after claiming repayment he obtains a fresh office or employment he cannot reckon his former service for superannuation unless he pays the amount so received to the common fund of the authority so employing him. In any such case of loss of office or employment the guardians may also, with the consent of the Local Government Board, grant to the officer or servant a gratuity not exceeding two years' salary or wages and emoluments (*f*).

Annual
return

1147 The guardians must make an annual return to the Local Government Board of all superannuation allowances and gratuities paid by them (*g*).

Loss of office

1148 If an officer suffers loss by the dissolution of a union (*h*) or by the addition of a parish to or its separation from a union (*i*), and if any person is deprived of any office or employment, or if his profits in respect thereof are diminished under or by reason of any provision of the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (*k*), the Local Government Board may by its order award compensation to him, of such amount, and payable in such manner, as it deems equitable (*l*).

Alteration of
union

1149 Every superannuation allowance properly granted by a board of guardians, and every compensation ordered to be paid to any officer by or on account of any parish, whether part of a dissolved union or not, must, if such parish is added to or formed with another into a union, be paid by the guardians of such union to the person entitled thereto, and be charged by them to the account of such parish (*m*).

SUB-SECT 5—Poor Law Conferences

Conferences

1150 When empowered by the Local Government Board, the guardians of a union may pay the reasonable expenses of any guardian or guardians, or the clerk, in attending a conference of guardians on any matter connected with their duties, and may purchase reports of such conference, and may charge the amount to their common fund or to the fund under their control (*n*).

Poor Law
Unions
Association

1151 Subject to regulations made by the Local Government

(*f*) Poor Law Officers' Superannuation Act, 1896 (59 & 60 Vict. c. 50), s. 8, as to joint appointments, see *ibid*.

(*g*) *Ibid*, s. 11.

(*h*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 106), s. 20.

(*i*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict. c. 122), s. 15.

(*k*) 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61.

(*l*) *Ibid*, s. 7. See *R v Poor Law Board* (1871), L. R. 6 Q. B. 785, *R v Local Government Board* (1874), L. R. 9 Q. B. 148, as to matters to be taken into consideration in assessing the compensation. For compensation for loss of office generally, see title **PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS**.

(*m*) Dissolved Boards of Management and Guardians Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict. c. 2), s. 9.

(*n*) Poor Law Conferences Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict. c. 11), s. 2; see Poor Law Conferences Order, 26th February, 1903 (Stat. R. & O. Rev., Vol. X, Poor, England, p. 133).

Board (o), a board of guardians may subscribe not more than £5 per annum to the Poor Law Unions Association, and may pay the expenses of two representatives at the meetings thereof (p).

Sect. 5
Boards of
G

1152 The powers of guardians to send deputations to confer with the Local Government Board or with other bodies or authorities are regulated by a General Order (q).

Deputations.

SUB-SECT 6—*The Common Fund.*

1153 The parishes comprised in a union must contribute and are assessed to a common fund, out of which are taken the moneys required for purchasing, building, hiring, or providing, altering, or enlarging any workhouse or other place for the reception and relief of the poor of such parishes, for the purchase or renting of land or tenements for such union, for the upholding and maintaining of such workhouses and places, for the payment or allowance of officers, for providing utensils and materials for setting the poor to work therein, for any other expense incurred for the common use or benefit or on the common account of such parishes, all the cost of the relief of the poor, the expenses of the burial of the dead body of any poor person, all charges incurred by the guardians in respect of vaccination and registration fees and expenses (r), and for all other purposes the cost of which is by statute specifically charged upon the common fund

Payments out
of the common
fund

1154 The several parishes contribute in proportion to their annual rateable value (s), which is ascertained from the last approved valuation lists for the parishes (a), the proportions payable by divided or added parishes being determined by the Local Government Board (b). The guardians make half-yearly orders on the overseers to pay over the amount to be contributed by each parish (c), and the overseers must thereupon collect a sufficient poor rate, and pay the amount ordered to the guardians (d).

Contribu-
tions

A contribution order may be enforced by proceedings before justices at a special sessions summoned for the purpose (e), and an

(o) See General Order, 17th February, 1890 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 131)

(p) Poor Law Unions Association (Expenses) Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict c 19), s 1

(q) General Order, 27th June, 1870 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 376)

(r) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 28, Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 79), s 1

(s) Poor Removal Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 55), s 9

(a) Union Assessment Committee Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict c 103), s 30

(b) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 106), s 15

(c) As to service of the contribution order, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 103), s 7

(d) See, generally, General Order, 22nd April, 1842 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 180), Consolidated Orders Amendment Order, 26th February, 1866, see Macmorran and Lushington, Poor Law General Orders, Vol I, p 380)

(e) Poor Rate Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 84), s 1, which provides that in every case in which any contribution by overseers or other officers of any

SECT 5
Boards of
Guardians.

Metropolitan
 common
 poor fund

overseer wilfully neglecting to comply with the order, whereby any relief directed by the guardians to be given to any poor person is delayed or withheld during a period of seven days, may on summary conviction be fined not exceeding £20 (*f*)

1155 Among the purposes for which the metropolitan common poor fund (*g*) is raised is the maintenance of patients in fever and small-pox hospitals, the Metropolitan Asylum Managers are entitled to be repaid the expenses incurred in respect of such patients by the board of guardians of the union from which the patient is received, and the guardians are reimbursed out of the fund (*h*)

The cost of the maintenance and instruction of orphan and deserted children placed out by guardians with the consent of the Local Government Board, is charged to the metropolitan common poor fund (*i*)

In the Metropolis the maintenance of indoor paupers is a charge upon the metropolitan common poor fund, and the expenses incurred in respect thereof must be repaid, at the rate of 5*d* per day for each pauper, by the receiver to the guardians of the particular union, subject to certain conditions (*k*)

SUB-SECT 7—Accounts and Audit

Accounts

1156 The accounts of guardians and their officers must be kept in the manner prescribed by the Local Government Board (*l*)

parish of moneys required by the board of guardians, or persons acting as guardians for such parish, or for any union which shall include such parish for the performance of their duties, is in arrear, any two justices acting within the district wherein such parish is situated, on application under the hand of the chairman or acting chairman of such board, may summon the said overseer or other officer to show cause, at a special sessions to be summoned for the purpose, why such contribution has not been paid, and after hearing the complaint preferred under the authority of such chairman or acting chairman, and on behalf of such board, if the justices at such sessions shall think fit, by warrant under their hands and seals, may cause the amount of the contribution so in arrear, together with the costs occasioned by such arrear, to be levied and recovered from the said overseers or other officers, or any of them, in like manner as moneys assessed for the relief of the poor may be levied and recovered, and the amount of such arrear, together with the costs as aforesaid, when levied and recovered, shall be paid to the said board: no distress made under any such warrant of justices is replevisible, see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, pp 199, 210. As to the discretion of justices, see *Tynemouth Union Guardians v Backworth Overseer*, (1838), 57 L J (M C) 53, as to enforcing orders in respect of dissolved unions or added parishes, see Dissolved Boards of Management and Guardians Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 2), s 1, and as to orders made for the purpose of paying past debts, see Poor Law (Payment of Debts) Act, 1859 (22 & 23 Vict c 49). For retrospective rates, see title RATES AND RATING

(*f*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 63. The receiver of the metropolitan common poor fund (see title METROPOLIS, Vol XX, p 415) has similar powers to recover contributions, see Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 6), s 68

(*g*) See title METROPOLIS, Vol XX, p 415

(*h*) Public Health (London) Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 76), ss 80, 81

(*i*) Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 63), s 21

(*k*) See Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c. 18) s 1

(*l*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 15, see

Accounts must be closed and made up half-yearly, on the 25th March and the 29th September, and from them the clerk must prepare in duplicate a statistical table showing the number of paupers of all classes actually relieved in the course of the half-year, and a financial statement showing the amount of the receipts and expenditure of the union during the half-year. The statements are submitted to the auditor at the audit, and, if he signs them as correct, one copy of each must forthwith be sent by the clerk to the Local Government Board (*m*)

Sect. 5
Boards of
Guardians.

1157 The accounts are audited by district auditors appointed by the Local Government Board, and subject to the same conditions as apply to the audit of the accounts of local authorities other than municipal boroughs (*n*) Audit.

Expenses which have been sanctioned by the Local Government Board must not be disallowed by the auditor (*o*)

Within one month of each audit, guardians in the Metropolis must send a copy of their financial statement for the half year to the borough council (*p*)

1158 Besides the usual half-yearly audit, the Local Government Board may require the auditor to hold an extraordinary audit at other times, either of the whole or any portion of the accounts of the union or any parish therein, or of any guardians or overseers, or of any officer, whether still continuing or upon his resignation or removal from office. Such an audit may be held after three days' notice thereof, and is conducted in the same way and governed by the same rules as apply to an ordinary audit (*q*) Extraordinary audit

1159 The payment of any sum certified by a district auditor to be due in accordance with the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1811 (*r*), and the Acts amending the same, or with any other Act, may, together with the costs of the proceedings for the recovery thereof, be enforced in like manner as if it were a sum due in respect of poor rate (*s*) Accounts

General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, General Order, 7th April, 1857 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 129), General Accounts and Audit Order, 14th January, 1867, General Order (Financial Statement), 25th April, 1879, General Order, 28th November, 1903 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 171), Poor Law Unions (Dates for Closing Accounts &c) Order, 1910 (Stat R & O, 1910, p 595), Poor Law Joint Committees and Boards of Management (Dates for Closing Accounts &c) Order, 1911, and the orders mentioned in the notes to the portions of this work dealing with the duties of officers

(*m*) District Auditors Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 6), s 3

(*n*) See title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XVIII, pp 283 *et seq*. For the purposes of the audit of accounts the Local Government Board may by order combine parishes and unions into districts (District Auditors Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 6), s 4) As to the powers and duties of the auditors, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 32

(*o*) Local Authorities (Expenses) Act, 1887 (50 & 51 Vict c 72), s 3

(*p*) Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 18), s 3

(*q*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 113), s 6, General Accounts and Audit Order, 14th January, 1867, art 38

(*r*) 7 & 8 Vict c 101

(*s*) Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict c 43), s 11. As to

SECT 6

The Metropolitan Asylums Board.**Constitution and management****SECT 6 —The Metropolitan Asylums Board.**

1160. The unions and parishes in the administrative county of London (t) are comprised within the Metropolitan Asylums District, which was formed for the better provision and management of accommodation for the relief and medical treatment of the sick or infirm poor in the metropolitan area, and is managed, under the control of the Local Government Board, by a Board of Managers, who are either elected by the guardians of the contributory places or nominated by the Local Government Board (u)

Powers and duties.

1161. The Metropolitan Asylums Board is a corporation, with a common seal, and has power to take and hold land for the purposes for which it is constituted, while the Managers may exercise the general powers of guardians of the poor with respect to the borrowing of money for their various duties and as regards other matters as if the asylums were workhouses (v), and are subject to the like general control of the Local Government Board. The functions of the Managers, which lie rather with the treatment of disease and the prevention of infection than with ordinary poor law relief, are referred to in the various sections of this article and in other appropriate titles (w).

Casual wards

1162 By a recent order of the Local Government Board (x), which came into operation on the 1st April, 1912, a district co-terminous with the Asylums District has been formed for the relief of the casual poor of the Metropolis, and placed under the Managers of the Asylums District. The casual wards are in future to be for the common use of the District (a)

poor rate, see title **RATES AND RATING**, and for the recovery of poor rate by distress see title **DISTRESS**, Vol XI, pp 210 *et seq.*

(t) See title **METROPOLIS**, Vol XX, p 393

(u) See Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 6), Metropolitan Asylums District Order, 15th May, 1867, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 9, Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 108), s 10, Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 40, see title **METROPOLIS**, pp 411, 412, for the constitution etc of the Metropolitan Asylums Board

(v) See Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 6), ss 21—25, Poor Law Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 54), s 104, Poor Law Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict c 29), s 2

(w) For example, the Managers may, subject to the control of the Local Government Board, admit into their asylums non pauper sick persons, may allow the asylums to be used for purposes of medical instruction and for training nurses, and may allow their ambulances to be used for the conveyance of persons suffering from dangerous infectious disorders, and charge for such use, see Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 42; Poor Law Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 56), ss 3, 4, 6, Public Health (London) Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 76), and title **PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION**

(x) Made in pursuance of powers conferred by the Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c. 6), s 6, and the Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 108), s. 10

(a) See Metropolitan Casual Paupers Order, 1911; and p 568, *post*.

Part III.—Unions.

PART III.
UNIONS.

1163. For poor law and various other administrative purposes the country is divided into unions, each of which may comprise one or more parishes, though, as the name indicates, usually a union extends over the areas of two or more parishes. To each union is attached a board of guardians, which has an almost exclusive authority as to the ordering, giving, and directing the relief to the poor in the parish or parishes under its control (b). Constitution of unions.

The Local Government Board may by order declare parishes to be united for the administration of the laws for the relief of the poor, whereupon such parishes will be deemed a union and the workhouse or workhouses of such parishes will be for their common use (c). But when the relief of the poor is administered in a parish by guardians appointed under a local Act, and such parish has a population exceeding twenty thousand, it cannot be united with any other parish unless at least two-thirds of such guardians consent in writing (d).

The Local Government Board may by order change the name of a union (e).

1164 Where on any representation it appears to the Local Government Board that the combination of two or more unions (not in the Metropolis) for any purpose connected with poor relief would be advantageous, the Board may, with the consent of the guardians of the unions to be combined, make an order for combining such unions for the purposes named therein, and for constituting, for the execution of such purposes, a joint committee of the guardians of each of the combined unions. Save as otherwise provided in the order, the guardians will cease to act in any matter vested in the joint committee. All property acquired by the joint committee will be vested in the boards of guardians of the combined unions as tenants in common. Such an order may be altered or revoked (f). Combined unions

1165. A union may be dissolved, or any parish or parishes may be separated from or added to a union, by order of the Local Government Board (g), and without the concurrence of the Dissolution or alteration of union

(b) See pp 529, 530, *ante*, for cases in which justices and overseers may give relief

(c) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 26

(d) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 64. This provision does not apply in the metropolis (Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 6), s 78), nor to a parish forming part of a union (*Local Government Board v South Stoneham Union*, [1909] A C 57)

(e) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s. 13

(f) Poor Law Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 54), s. 8

(g) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c. 76), s 32, and see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 4. This power does not extend to parishes united for the purposes of settlement or

PART III.
Unions.

guardians being necessary (h). A separate board of guardians may be ordered to be elected for a single parish separated from a union, notwithstanding the provisions of any local Act (h)

If the Local Government Board considers it expedient for rectifying or simplifying the areas of management, or otherwise for the better administration of the relief of the poor, that any union should be dissolved, the Board may, after inquiry held in some one of the unions to be affected, after public notice, so that all persons interested may attend and be heard, issue its order for the dissolution of any such union, and such dissolution will have the same effect and be attended with the same consequences as in the case of a union dissolved under the provisions of the Act of 1834 (i)

The Local Government Board, where it appears expedient so to do with reference to any poor law union which is situate in more than one county, instead of dissolving the union, may by order provide that the same shall continue to be one union for the purposes of indoor paupers or any of those purposes, and shall be divided into two or more poor law unions for the purpose of outdoor relief, and may by the order make such provisions as seem expedient for determining all other matters in relation to which such union is to be one union or two or more unions (k)

Effect of
dissolution

1166 On the dissolution or absorption of a union, school district, or asylum district, the board of guardians or board of management ceases to exist, and its property and liabilities vest in its successors without any deed or order being necessary (l)

All deeds, bonds, covenants, indentures, orders of justices, or other matters affecting any poor persons, apprentices, or officers entered into by or made upon or in favour of any board of guardians of a parish which is added to a union will vest in and enure to the benefit of or will be a charge upon the guardians of the union to which such parish has been added, without any assignment, transfer, or other act, and all securities, deeds, orders, books of account, and other documents relating thereto, must, when required by the said guardians, be delivered to them by the persons having the custody thereof, and all such deeds (other than the title deeds to property), bonds, indentures, orders of justices, or other documents and matters as aforesaid belonging to any dissolved district or union, must be preserved in such custody

rating, (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76) s 32) As to the apportionment of property on the separation of a parish from a union, see *R v Local Government Board*, [1901] 1 K B 210, C A

(h) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 66

(i) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 11

(k) Local Government Act, 1888 (51 & 52 Vict c 41), s 58 As to the somewhat similar powers of county councils, see Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 36 (6), and title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol. XIX, pp 238, 377, 378

(l) Poor Law Authorities (Transfer of Property) Act, 1904 (4 Edw 7, c. 20), ss 1, 2 As to transfers of stock, see *ibid*

and be open to inspection in such manner as the Local Government Board by its order from time to time directs (m)

PART III
Unions.

1167. Upon the dissolution of any district or union, or the addition of any parish in which the relief to the poor has been or is administered by a board of guardians, to a union or to another parish, the real and personal estate vested in the managers or guardians of such district, union, or parish respectively must be transferred to and vested in the persons who were acting as managers or guardians respectively at the time of such dissolution or addition, to be held by them as joint tenants, according to the nature of such property, in trust for the parishes comprised in such district or union, or for the parish, as the case may be, until the same shall be sold, let, or otherwise disposed of under lawful authority (n)

Transfer of
property

1168 On the dissolution of a union or an addition thereto, the existing guardians will continue in office for the purpose of winding up the affairs of the union, for a period not exceeding twelve months, unless the period be specially extended by the Local Government Board (o), and may retain the services of the officers (p). Necessary adjustments of rights and liabilities may be made by the Local Government Board (q)

Existing
guardians.

Part IV.—Workhouses.

SECT 1 — *Establishment*

1169 With the consent in writing of the majority of the guardians of any union (i), or with the consent of the ratepayers and owners

Power to
provide
workhouse

(m) Dissolved Boards of Management and Guardians Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 2), s 8

(n) *Ibid*, s 12 This provision does not apply to a parish provided for by the Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 63), s 5, or by a local Act

(o) Dissolved Boards of Management and Guardians Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 2), ss 1, 5

(p) *Ibid*, s 2 For compensation to officers, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 106), s 20, *E v Poor Law Board* (1871), L R 6 Q B 785, *E v Local Government Board* (1874), L R 9 Q B 148, p 547, ante, and title PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS

(q) Dissolved Boards of Management and Guardians Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 2), s 4, Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 58), s 11 For the repayment of loans made to the dissolved union, see Dissolved Boards of Management and Guardians Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c 2), s 7, and as to the valuation of property, see *ibid*, s 11 For the dissolution or amalgamation of asylum districts and unions in the metropolis, see the Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 63), ss 1—9 Compensation payable to an officer by reason of the dissolution etc is repaid to the paying guardians out of the metropolitan common poor fund (*ibid*, s 18) For the power of the Local Government Board to vary orders of dissolution or alteration, see Poor Law Authorities (Transfer of Property) Act, 1904 (4 Edw 7, c 20), s 3

(r) See *Re St Mary Abbots, Kensington, E v Poor Law Commissioners* (1846), 9 Q B 291

SECT. 1.
Establishment.

of property in any parish (s), the Local Government Board may (t) (1) order the guardians of any parish or union not having a workhouse or workhouses to build a workhouse or workhouses, and to purchase or hire land for the purpose of building thereon, or to purchase or hire a workhouse or workhouses, or a building or buildings to be used as or converted into a workhouse or workhouses, (2) order the guardians of any parish or union having a workhouse, or buildings capable of being converted, to enlarge or alter the same, or to build, hire or purchase additional buildings, and to purchase and hire land for such purpose (a), (8) order the guardians to provide a workhouse with proper drainage, sewers, ventilation, fixtures, furniture, surgical and medical appliances, and other conveniences (b). Guardians may expend not more than £500 on enlargement, alteration, improvement, or equipment of the workhouse, by obtaining the consent of the Local Government Board, without an order being necessary (c)

Borrowing powers

1170 The guardians may borrow for the above purposes (d), but the sum raised therefor must not exceed one-tenth of the average annual amount of the rates raised for the relief of the poor in the union or parish for the three years ending at the Easter next preceding the raising of such money (e)

(s) The method of ascertaining consent is prescribed by the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 70), s 40, as amended by subsequent enactments. As to consents in parishes under a select vestry or guardians appointed under a local Act, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 103), s 18, and as to consents to dealing with parish property, see Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 52 (1). For earlier enactments regulating the establishment of workhouses, see Poor Relief Act, 1601 (43 Eliz c 2), s 4. Poor Relief Act, 1662 (14 Car 2, c 12), ss 4—14 (now repealed), Poor Relief Act, 1722 (9 Geo 1, c 7), s 4 (now repealed), Poor Relief Act, 1810 (59 Geo 3, c 12), s 12, Poor Relief Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 42), s 1.

(t) The court will not interfere with the direction of the Board (*Re Newport Union, R v Poor Law Commissioners* (1837), 6 Ad & El 54, *Cantrell v Windsor Union* (1838), 4 Bing (N C) 348).

(a) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 23. The consent of the guardians or ratepayers and owners is not required to the enlargement or alteration of an existing workhouse (*ibid*, s 25).

(b) *Ibid*, s 25, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 113), s 8. Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 8. The consent of the guardians or ratepayers is not required. For regulations as to the cleansing and repair of workhouses, see General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 150, 151.

(c) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 113), s 8. With the consent of the Local Government Board, guardians may hire or take on lease, temporarily or for a term not exceeding five years, any land or buildings for the purpose of the relief or employment of the poor and the use of the guardians or their officers (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 106), s 13).

(d) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 23.

(e) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 113), s 8. In addition to the borrowing authorised by these provisions, the guardians of any parish or union any part of which is situated within the Metropolitan Police District, or the City of London, or the select vestry of the parish of Liverpool, may, with the consent of the Local Government Board, also raise or borrow, and charge the future poor rates of such parish or union with such further or other sum or sums of money as may be or may have

Guardians may also borrow for the purpose of fitting up and furnishing any workhouse under their control (*f*).

1171. The Managers of the Metropolitan Asylums District may be ordered by the Local Government Board to purchase, hire, or build, and fit up the necessary buildings, ships (*g*), or temporary erections for the reception of paupers (*h*), and may provide land and buildings required for any purpose of the Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (*i*).

With the consent of the Local Government Board, guardians in London may let the workhouse or other premises to the Metropolitan Asylums Managers (*k*) for the reception and treatment of epidemic patients (*l*).

1172. If guardians in London provide a dispensary (*m*), they need not necessarily appoint a dispensary committee, unless required by the Local Government Board to do so (*n*), and that Board may also require them to provide at the dispensary a proper room in which the medical officer may see patients, and such doctor must personally, or by his authorised substitute, attend there at fixed times for that purpose (*o*). If the guardians do not provide a dispensary when required by the Board to do so, they will not be entitled to receive from the metropolitan common poor fund any allowance for medicine, or medical or surgical appliances, or the salaries of the medical officers (*p*).

1173. Corporations, including ecclesiastical corporations (*q*) and persons under disability, may sell or exchange lands or buildings to be used for workhouse or poor law purposes, and may make conveyance thereof to the guardians (*r*). The powers formerly vested in the churchwardens and overseers with regard to the acquisition of parish, or waste, or common, or Crown land for poor law purposes, are now exercised by the guardians, subject to the control of the Local Government Board, and are extended to workhouse purposes (*s*).

been necessary for the purchase of any land, or interest in land, required as the site of such workhouse, or of any additions to any such workhouse (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict. c. 101), s. 30)

(*f*) Poor Law Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict. c. 54), s. 11 For the general borrowing powers of guardians, see p. 537, *ante*

(*g*) Including ships for the training of boys for the sea service (Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict. c. 63), s. 11)

(*h*) Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 6), s. 15, as extended by the Metropolitan Poor Act, 1871 (34 Vict. c. 15), s. 1

(*i*) 30 & 31 Vict. c. 6, Poor Law Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict. c. 29), s. 2

(*k*) See title METROPOLIS, Vol. XX, p. 412

(*l*) Public Health (London) Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict. c. 76), s. 86

(*m*) See title PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION

(*n*) Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict. c. 63),

s. 12

(*o*) *Ibid.*, s. 13

(*p*) *Ibid.*, s. 14, and see p. 550, *ante*

(*q*) Workhouse Sites Act, 1857 (20 & 21 Vict. c. 13)

(*r*) Union and Parish Property Act, 1835 (5 & 6 Will. 4, c. 69), s. 1

(*s*) *Ibid.*, s. 4. The powers referred to were conferred by the Poor Relief Act, 1819 (59 Geo. 3, c. 12); the Poor Relief Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will. 4, c. 42), and the Crown Lands Allotments Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will. 4, c. 59).

SMO. 1.
Establish-
ment.

Special
provisions
applicable to
London.

Poor law
dispensaries

Acquiring
lands etc.

SECT 1
Establishment.

Copyholds may be acquired and enfranchised (*t*). Any land, workhouse, buildings or property may be sold, exchanged, or let by the guardians with the consent of the Local Government Board (*a*) Conveyances, exchanges, assignments, and transfers are made in such form as the Local Government Board may order (*b*) Conveyances to guardians of land or hereditaments for the accommodation of the poor do not require enrolment under the Mortmain Acts (*c*)

On the acquisition of land for the site of a poor law institution, any tithe rentcharge thereon must be redeemed (*d*)

Rates and taxes

1174 House tax is not payable in respect of a workhouse (*e*), but such a building is rateable to the poor rate (*f*) For the purposes of water supply a workhouse is deemed to be a house occupied by one family, and the guardians are the owners (*g*), but a workhouse is not a private dwelling-house within the meaning of a provision enabling such a house to be supplied with water at special rates (*h*)

Situation of workhouse

1175 For the purposes of relief, settlement, removal, and the burial of the poor, the workhouse of any union or parish is considered to be situate in the parish to which the poor person in question is or has been chargeable (*i*) But for the purpose of the burial of a poor person dying in a workhouse, the workhouse is considered to be situate in the parish in the union where such person last resided before removal to the workhouse (*k*)

SECT 2 — Management of Workhouse and Control of Inmates

Duty of guardians

1176 The management of the workhouse and the government of the officers, servants, assistants, and paupers therein are imposed upon the guardians, who must observe and enforce such rules, orders, and regulations as the Local Government Board may make

(*t*) Union and Parish Property Act, 1837 (7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c 50), ss 1—3

(*a*) Union and Parish Property Act, 1835 (5 & 6 Will 4, c 69), s 3, Parish Property and Parish Debts Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 18), Poor Law Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 56), ss 5, 8 The powers of guardians as to the sale, exchange, or letting of parish property are now vested in the parish council (Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 73), s 6 (1) (d))

(*b*) Union and Parish Property Act, 1837 (7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c 50), s 4

(*c*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 73, see title CHARITIES, Vol IV, pp 127 *et seq*

(*d*) See Tithe Act, 1878 (41 & 42 Vict c 42), and title ECCLESIASTICAL LAW, Vol XI, p 750

(*e*) House Tax Act, 1808 (48 Geo 3, c 55), Sched B, see titles CHARITIES, Vol IV, pp 213, 214, INHABITED HOUSE DUTY, Vol XVII, p 191

(*f*) See title RATES AND RATING

(*g*) *Liskeard Union v Liskeard Waterworks Co* (1881), 7 Q B D 505, see title WATER SUPPLY

(*h*) *Bristol Guardians v Bristol Waterworks Co*, [1912] 1 Ch 846, C. A

(*i*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 56.

(*k*) Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 79), s 10. As to the registration of births and deaths occurring in a workhouse, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 56, Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 21, and title REGISTRATION OF BIRTHS, MARRIAGES, AND DEATHS

with respect to the relief of the poor, for the government thereof, and the nature and amount of the relief to be given to, and the labour to be exacted from, the persons relieved, and the preservation therein of good order (l)

SECT. 3
Management of
Workhouse
and Control
of Inmates.
—
Visitation.

1177 To secure due observance of the rules, the workhouse may at any time be visited by an inspector (m), and any justice of the peace, and any medical man, or the officiating clergyman of the parish, if authorised by a warrant of a justice, may visit a workhouse and examine the state and condition thereof, and of the inmates, and of their food, clothing and bedding, and report the result to the next quarter sessions, who may order any cause of complaint to be remedied (n). A justice acting for the place in which the workhouse is situate (o) may at any time visit it for the purpose of seeing whether the regulations are being duly obeyed, and may summon an offender to appear before a court of summary jurisdiction (p).

1178 Guardians must appoint a visiting committee from their own body, who must examine the workhouse at least once a week (q), and if a board of guardians does not appoint a visiting committee or if the committee neglects to visit for over three months, the Local Government Board may appoint a salaried visitor, not being one of the guardians, who will be paid out of the general fund of the union (r).

Visiting
committee

1179 The admission of paupers into the workhouse is in the main regulated by order of the Local Government Board (s), but the following statutory requirements may be referred to. Any poor person professing to be a destitute wanderer or wayfarer, who applies for admission, may be searched, and any money found upon

Admission to
workhouse

(l) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), ss 15, 21, 22, 38, 39, 42. General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, art 152.

(m) See p 527, *ante*.

(n) Workhouses Act, 1790 (30 Geo 3, c 49), s 1. In the case of the justice finding that a more speedy remedy is necessary in certain events, he may report to two other justices, who may make an order forthwith (*ibid*, s 2).

(o) See p 558, *ante*.

(p) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 43. Penalty, fine not exceeding £5 for a first offence, and not less than £5 and not exceeding £20 for a second offence. A third offence is a misdemeanour, see p 527, *ante*. Justices may also visit other houses in which poor persons are lodged and maintained under contract with the guardians (Poor Relief Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 13), s 8).

(q) General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 148, 149.

(r) See Poor Law Board Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 109), s 24. Under the Poor Relief Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 13), s 7, the Local Government Board may appoint an inspector, who is paid by the guardians, to visit houses, not being workhouses, in which poor persons are lodged and maintained under contract with the guardians.

(s) See General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 42, 88—96. As to the admission under contract of paupers from other workhouses etc, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849

SECT 2
**Manage-
 ment of
 Workhouse
 and Control
 of Inmates.**
 —
 Classification

him taken and applied in aid of the common fund of the union (t).
 Spirituous or fermented liquor must not be introduced (a).

1180 The classification of the inmates is also provided for by the order of the Local Government Board (b), while, as regards metropolitan workhouses, it is expressly provided that guardians may, with the approval of the Local Government Board, provide in their workhouse for the reception of particular classes and descriptions of poor persons, and receive therein, upon such terms as may be agreed, poor persons of the same class or description from other unions and parishes. So far as such last-mentioned poor persons are concerned, the workhouse will be deemed to be situated within the union or parish from which they were sent there (c)

Married
 couples.

1181 If husband and wife are admitted to the workhouse, and either of them is infirm, sick, or disabled by any injury, or above the age of sixty years, the guardians may permit them to live together. Every such case must be reported forthwith to the Local Government Board (d)

Married couples, both of whom are over sixty years of age, cannot be compelled to live separate and apart from each other in a workhouse (e)

Discipline
 and diet

1182 The preservation of order, the conduct of the inmates, and their diet are the subjects of many orders of the Local Government Board (f). Corporal punishment must not be inflicted upon adults, nor must they be confined for any offence or misbehaviour for longer

(12 & 13 Vict c 103), s 14, Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 22, of children under sixteen, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict c 105), s 6, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 113), s 16, and as to the reception of strayed children or insane persons into metropolitan workhouses, see General Order, 3rd December, 1841, arts 1, 2 (Macmorrian and Lushington, Poor Law General Orders, Vol I, p 1). As to lunatics and idiots in workhouses, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 512 *et seq*. For the relief of casual paupers, see p 567, *post*

(t) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 110), s 10. As to obtaining admission by false statement or omission to disclose the possession of money or property, see p 608, *post*

(a) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), ss 92, 93, 94, General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, art 146. For other prohibited articles, see *ibid*, arts 107, 119—121

(b) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 26, General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 98—101, Workhouse Regulation (Dietaries and Accounts) Order, 10th October, 1900 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 269)

(c) Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 63), s 17

(d) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 10

(e) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 109), s 23. See also title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 319

(f) See General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 162—147, General Order, 26th January, 1893, Workhouse Regulation Order, 8th March, 1894, Workhouse Regulation (Dietaries and Accounts) Order, 10th October, 1900, and other orders published in Macmorrian and Lushington, Poor Law General Orders

than twenty-four hours, or such further time as may be necessary in order to have them brought before a justice (g). Sane persons must not be manacled (h), and the hair of an adult pauper should not be cut against his or her will (i). Clothing supplied to a pauper must not bear a stamp or mark on the outside, so as to be publicly visible (k).

SECT. 2.
Management of
Workhouses
and Control
of Inmates.

1183. In return for the relief afforded in the workhouse, the recipient may be set a prescribed task of work, but he cannot be detained against his will for the performance of such work for longer than four hours from the breakfast hour in the morning succeeding his admission (l).

Labour.

A person maintained in a workhouse who refuses to work at any work, occupation, or employment suited to his or her age, strength, and capacity, or who is guilty of drunkenness or other misbehaviour, may, on summary conviction, be imprisoned for any period not exceeding twenty-one days, or, if previously convicted of a like offence, for not exceeding forty-two days (m).

Refusal to
work and
misbehaviour

1184 In employing a pauper upon work suited to his capacity, guardians are discharging a ministerial duty imposed upon them by the Poor Law Acts and regulations, and are not responsible in damages for personal injuries sustained by the pauper in the course of such work owing to the negligence of their officers or servants (n).

Accidents to
paupers.

1185 A pauper inmate, other than a casual pauper, who has given notice of intention to quit the workhouse may notwithstanding be detained by direction of the guardians for a period varying from twenty-four hours to seven days, but a direction requiring a longer notice than seventy-two hours to be given must be entered in the minutes, and must specify the name or names of the pauper or paupers to whom it applies (o).

Detention

1186 Upon the admission of an inmate the master must make due inquiry into the religious creed of such inmate, and enter

Religious
services and
instruction.

(g) Poor Relief Act, 1814 (54 Geo 3, c 170), s 7

(h) Workhouse Act, 1816 (56 Geo 3, c 129), s 2

(i) See *Forde v Skinner* (1830), 4 C & P 239.

(k) Poor Relief Act, 1815 (55 Geo 3, c 137), s 2

(l) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 57), s 5, and see the text, *infra*

(m) Poor Relief Act, 1815 (55 Geo 3, c 137), s 5, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 58. Wilful disobedience to orders is not necessarily misbehaviour (*Mile End Guardians v Sims*, [1905] 2 K B 200), but an act of immorality committed by a pauper in a workhouse is evidence of misbehaviour by the pauper within the meaning of the Poor Relief Act, 1815 (55 Geo 3, c 137), s 5 (*Holland v Peacock*, [1912] 1 K B 154).

(n) *Toseland v West Ham Union*, [1907] 1 K B 920, C A., following *Manan v Limerick Union Guardians* (1878), 2 L R 1r 42, and *Dunbar v See Union Guardians*, [1897] 2 I R 76, C A. See also p 546, *ante*.

(o) See the Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict. c. 108), s 4, as amended by the Poor Law Act, 1899 (62 & 63 Vict c 37), s 4. As to the detention of paupers suffering from disease, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 106), s 22.

SECT 2
Manage-
ment of
Workhouse
and Control
of Inmates

it in the creed register which he is required to keep (*p*) As regards children under twelve, the religious creed of the father, or, if that cannot be ascertained, of the mother, must be entered (*q*) The register is to be open to inspection (*r*), and an inmate must be permitted to be visited by a minister of his creed (*s*)

An inmate cannot be compelled to attend any religious service contrary to his religious principles, and a clergyman or minister of religion must be permitted, on the request of an inmate, to visit the workhouse for the purpose of affording religious assistance to such inmate, and for the purpose of instructing his child or children in the principles of their religion (*t*)

Every inmate for whom a religious service according to his own creed is not provided in the workhouse must be permitted, subject to regulations to be approved of or ordered by the Local Government Board, to attend, at such times as the Board shall allow, some place of worship of his own denomination within a convenient distance of the workhouse, if there be such in the opinion of the Board But the guardians may, for abuse of such permission previously granted, or on some other special ground, refuse permission to any particular inmate, and must in such case cause an entry of such refusal and the grounds thereof to be made in their minutes (*a*)

Running
away etc.

1187 It is an offence to desert or run away from a workhouse and carry away any clothes, linen, or other goods. Penalty, imprisonment for not less than seven days nor more than three months (*b*), with or without hard labour (*c*)

A person convicted of an offence committed in a workhouse while maintained therein, or of absconding from a workhouse and carrying away clothes or other property therefrom, may be committed to the prison of the county or place in which the parish is situated to which such person, at the time of the commission of the offence, was chargeable (*d*)

(*p*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 16, General Order, 26th November, 1868 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 259)

(*q*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 17 As to amendment of entries, see *ibid*, s 18 Mandamus lies to compel an alteration (*Re M'Conway, R v Belfast Guardians*, [1908] 2 I R 343)

(*r*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 19 For the religious instruction of pauper children, see title EDUCATION, Vol XII, p 89

(*s*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 20

(*t*) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 19, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 74, Poor Law Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 56), s 1 (*6*) For the appointment of chaplains, see note (*h*), p 543, *ante*

(*a*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 21

(*b*) Poor Relief Act, 1815 (55 Geo 3, c 137), s 2, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 58

(*c*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict. c 101), s 8 See also, as to offences under the Vagrancy Acts, pp 606 *et seq*, *post*

(*d*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 57, and see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 110), s 9.

Part V.—Relief of the Poor.

SECT 1—*Kinds of Relief*SECT 1.
Kinds of
Relief.The duty to
relieve.

1188 The duty imposed upon guardians in respect of the administration of relief is, primarily, to set to work or apprentice the children of parents who are not able to keep and maintain their children, to set to work "all such persons, married or unmarried, having no means to maintain them, use no ordinary and daily trade of life to get their living by", and to give necessary relief to the lame, impotent, old, blind, and other poor persons not able to work (*e*). This duty is discharged in various ways—relief in the workhouse has already been considered (*f*), the other methods, and some further statutory duties, are referred to in the following pages.

It should be premised, however, that although guardians are bound to relieve a poor person in need who applies for relief, they have a very wide discretion as to the kind of relief they will afford, and, if the recipient has any property, or has a relative who is in law obliged to maintain him or her the cost of any relief given may be reimbursed from the sale of such property or be recovered from such relative (*g*).

1189 As an alternative to giving relief in the workhouse or in other institutions in which they are entitled to afford relief (*h*), guardians may, if they think fit, grant relief at their own houses to persons who are sick (*i*), or incapable of work, or out of employment, and may in other ways assist poor persons and their families. Out-relief to able-bodied persons or to their families, whether by payments in money, or in food and clothing, or partly in kind and partly in money, can only be given in accordance with regulations made by the Local Government Board. These provide, *inter alia*, that out-relief must not take the form of paying rent (other than for temporary lodging), setting up in trade, redeeming pawned tools, or purchasing tools, other than such articles as are included in the expression "relief in kind" (*l*).

Out-relief

(*e*) Poor Relief Act, 1801 (43 Eliz c 2), s 1. As to the class of persons guardians are entitled to relieve, see *A v Menthys Tylfil Union*, [1900] 1 Ch 516, C A, where it was held that the grant of relief to able-bodied "strikers" was unlawful.

(*f*) See p 559, *ante*.

(*g*) See p 570, *post*.

(*h*) For relief in such institutions, see p 564, *post*. Relief in a workhouse or an institution is called "institutional relief" in contradistinction to "out-relief."

(*i*) See also p 530, *ante*, and General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 75, 76, General Order as to Out-door Relief, 21st December, 1844 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 184), and see note (*h*), *infra*.

(*l*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 52. For the cases and manner in which out-relief may be given, see the Relief Regulation Order, 1911, which came into operation on the 1st April, 1912. For the orders governing out-relief before that date, see the General Order as to Out-door Relief, 21st December, 1844, General Out-door Relief Regulation Order, 14th December, 1852 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England,

SECT 1

Kinds of Relief.

Members of friendly societies
Insured persons

1190 In granting outdoor relief to a member of a friendly society the guardians must not take into consideration any sum received from such friendly society as sick pay, except in so far as such sum exceeds 5s a week (*l*)

1191 In granting outdoor relief to a person in receipt of or entitled to receive any benefit under the National Insurance Act, 1911 (*m*), a board of guardians must not take into consideration any such benefit, except so far as such benefits exceed 5s. a week (*n*)

Refusal to perform task

1192 Where guardians prescribe, under the regulations (*o*), a task of work to be performed by any poor person to whom, or to whose wife, if he be liable to maintain such wife (*p*), or child, whether legitimate or illegitimate, under the age of sixteen, relief has been lawfully granted by such guardians out of the workhouse (*q*), such task being suited to the age, sex, strength, and capacity of such person, and being of a nature and description of which the Local Government Board have previously approved, and such person refuses or wilfully neglects to perform such task, or wilfully destroys or damages any of the tools, materials, or other property belonging to the said guardians, he shall be deemed to be and be punishable as an idle and disorderly person (*a*)

Maintenance in homes and institutions

1193 Guardians may arrange for the lodging and maintenance of poor persons in houses or establishments other than the workhouse, and may make contracts in that behalf with the proprietors or managers of such places. Such arrangements, and the supervision and control of such places, must be in accordance with the rules and regulations of the Local Government Board (*b*) Guardians

p 189), General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, art 43. See also Circulars on the Administration of Outdoor Relief, issued by the Local Government Board on 18th March, 1910, and 29th December, 1911. As to out relief to a parent being conditional upon his child attending school, see Elementary Education Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 79), s 40, Elementary Education Act, 1880 (43 & 44 Vict c 23), s 5, and see title EDUCATION, Vol XII, pp 82 *et seq*, for the powers and duties of guardians as to giving relief in connection with the education and maintenance of children. As to industrial and reformatory schools, see *ibid*, pp 70 *et seq*, 83. As to the relief of underfed school children, see Relief (School Children) Order, 27th April, 1905 (Stat R & O, 1905, p 273). "Relief in kind" means relief afforded by the grant of food, medicine, or other articles of absolute necessity, or by the provision of temporary lodging (Relief Regulation Order, 1911, art 1).

(*l*) Out door Relief (Friendly Societies) Act, 1904 (4 Edw 7, c 32), s 1

(*m*) 1 & 2 Geo 5, c 55, see title WORK AND LABOUR

(*n*) National Insurance Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 55), s 109

(*o*) See General Out-door Relief Regulation Order, 14th December, 1852, arts. 6, 7

(*p*) See p 573, *post*, and title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 316.

(*q*) See p 573, *post*

(*u*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 113), s 15, and see p. 607, *post*

(*b*) See Poor Relief Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict. c 13), and the orders made thereunder

are also empowered to provide for the reception, maintenance, and instruction of adult blind, or deaf and dumb, poor persons in proper institutions (c).

Sec. 1.
Kind of
Relief.

1194 Instead of retaining in the workhouse children chargeable to the union or parish, guardians may board out such children in homes within or without the limits of the union or parish, by arrangement with boarding-out committees established for the purpose of finding and superintending homes for pauper children. Any such arrangements, committees, and homes are subject to regulations made by the Local Government Board (d)

Boarding out.

1195. If the inhabitants of any parish or parishes within a union have raised or borrowed money (e) to assist in the emigration of poor persons, the administration of such money is entrusted to the guardians (f), who, with the consent of the Local Government Board, may also procure or assist in procuring the emigration of any irremovable poor person (g) who is or may be chargeable, or of orphans and deserted children (h)

Emigration.

1196 Guardians may bind a poor child as apprentice (i), in which case the indenture of apprenticeship will be executed by them. A register must be kept by the clerk of all children so bound. The Local Government Board may by order prescribe the duties of the masters, and the terms and conditions of the apprenticeship (k)

Apprentice-
ship.

In apprenticing boys to the sea-fishing service, the guardians must conform to the requirements of Part IV of the Merchant Shipping Act, 1894 (a)

(c) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 106), s 21. As to blind and deaf and dumb children, see title EDUCATION, Vol XII, p 83.

(d) See General Boarding out Order, 1911, Relief Regulation Order, 1911, art xiv and Circular Letter of the Local Government Board, dated 16th October, 1911.

(e) Under the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), ss 62, 63, see also Public Works Loans Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 89), and, for the powers of the county council to aid emigration, title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 374.

(f) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 29.

(g) As to when persons are irremovable, see p 591, *post*.

(h) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 110), s 5; Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 103), ss 14, 20, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 101), s 4, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 113), s 9, Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 22, Minute of Local Government Board, April, 1888.

(i) As to apprentices, see also titles INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, pp 70 *et seq*, MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, pp 71, 79 *et seq*.

(k) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 12, General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 52—63, General Order (Apprenticeship of Pauper Children), 15th February, 1898 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 233), Relief Regulation Order, 1911, art xiv. Powers and duties as to apprenticeship are also contained in the Poor Relief Act, 1601 (43 Eliz c 2), s 3, Parish Apprentices Acts, 1792 (32 Geo 3, c 57), 1802 (42 Geo 3, c 46), and 1816 (56 Geo 3, c 139), Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 15, and see title EDUCATION, Vol XII, p 82.

(a) 57 & 58 Vict c 60, s 393 (3), see also *ibid*, ss 166, 107, and titles MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, p 80, SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION

SECT 1

Kinds of Relief

Young persons in service.

1197 In addition to the register of apprentices, guardians must keep a register showing the name, age, date of hiring, and name, trade and address of the master or mistress, of every young person under the age of sixteen who is hired or taken as a servant from the workhouse, and must cause such young persons and apprentices, if serving within five miles of the union, to be visited by the relieving officer or some other authorised officer at least twice in every year. If the young person or apprentice is serving at a place more than five miles from the union, notice must be sent to the guardians of the place of service, who must then cause the visitation to be made (b). If it is found that the master or mistress is ill-treating the apprentice or young person, the guardians may prosecute (c).

Assisting boys to join the Navy

1198 If any boy not already an apprentice in the merchant service who, or whose parent or parents, is or are receiving relief in any union or parish, is desirous of serving in the naval service of His Majesty, and is forwarded for approval by competent authority for such service, the guardians may enable any such boy to be so forwarded, and may pay out of their funds such sum, if any, as may be required by the regulations of such service for providing outfit or otherwise, and also such expenses as may be necessary to be incurred for the conveyance of such boy in charge of a proper person to and from the port or place in the United Kingdom at which he may be required to attend for examination, and if accepted, for entry into such service (d).

Relief by loan

1199 Relief given to or on account of any poor person above the age of twenty-one, or to his wife, or any part of his family under the age of sixteen, may, if the guardians think fit, be given by way of loan (e), which may be recovered either before justices or in the county court (f). But no relief by loan can be given which may contravene the regulations as to out-relief (g).

When relief has been given by way of loan, a justice may, upon the application of the guardians, require the pauper and his master to appear before him, and may order the master to pay to the guardians the whole or part of the wages due or to become due to the pauper, in liquidation of such loan, and may enforce payment thereof (h).

Casual relief

1200 Where a poor person who is neither settled nor resident in

(b) Poor Law (Apprentices, etc.) Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict. c. 11)

(c) Offences Against the Person Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 100), s. 73, see p. 541, *ante*, and title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 294, note (r)

(d) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), s. 28

(e) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 58

(f) *Ibid.*, s. 59, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 110), s. 8

(g) Relief Regulation Order, 1911, art. xiii, and see note (k), p. 563, *ante*

(h) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 59

SECT. 1.
Kinds of
Relief.

a parish, but who happens to be there when some accident occurs to him or some sudden illness overtakes him, is compelled thereby to apply for relief, the guardians for the parish or union must relieve him (*i*), and may be reimbursed the cost of such relief by the guardians of the union containing the place to which such person belongs (*k*)

1201 In the case of any person, being a widow, having a legitimate child dependent on her for support, and no illegitimate child born after the commencement of her widowhood, and who at the time of her husband's death was resident with him in some place other than the parish of her legal settlement, and not situated in any union in which such parish is comprised, the guardians of such parish or union, if they see fit, may grant relief to such widow although not residing in such parish or union. But the guardians of any union or parish, and the overseers of any parish, in which such widow may be resident or may require relief, remain liable to relieve such widow in the same manner as any other person requiring relief in such union or parish (*l*) Widows.

1202 A casual pauper is a destitute wayfarer or wanderer who applies for or receives relief. A casual ward means any ward or wards, building or premises, set apart or provided for the reception and relief of destitute wayfarers and wanderers (*m*) Casual paupers.

The guardians of every union must provide within the union such casual wards with such fittings and furniture as the Local Government Board considers necessary in view of the number of casual paupers likely to require relief therein (*n*)

1203 In the Metropolitan, where no adequate accommodation exists otherwise, the guardians must provide such wards or other places for destitute wayfarers and foundlings as the Local Government Board directs (*o*), such wards or places must be open for the admission of destitute persons and foundlings who apply to be admitted between 6 p m and 8 a m from October to March inclusive, and between 8 p m. and 8 a m from April to September inclusive (*p*). Any constable of the Metropolitan or City of London Police may personally Metropolitan casual wards.

(*i*) See *Atkins v Banwell* (1802), 2 East, 505, *Tomlinson v Bentall* (1826) 5 B & C 738, *Gent v Tompkins* (1822), 5 B & C 746, n, *Lamb v Bunce* (1815), 4 M & S 275

(*k*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 110), s 2, General Consolidated Order of the Poor Law Commissioners, 24th July, 1847, arts 77—80, see *Wycombe Union v Eton Union* (1857), 1 H & N 687

(*l*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 26

(*m*) Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 108), s 3, Relief Regulation Order, 1911, art 1

(*n*) Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 108), s 9. As to the Metropolitan, see also *ibid*, s 10

(*o*) Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, 1864 (27 & 28 Vict c 116), s 5. Wards so provided must be inspected by the Local Government Board, see Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 34), s 2, which Act extended and made perpetual the Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, 1864 (27 & 28 Vict c 116)

(*p*) Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 34), s 5

SECT 1
Kinds of
Relief.

conduct any destitute, wayfarer, wanderer, or foundling, or other destitute person, not having committed or being charged with an offence, to any such ward or place of reception, and every such wayfarer, wanderer, or foundling must, if there be room, be temporarily relieved therein (g)

The whole area of the Metropolis has been formed into one district for the relief of the casual poor, and the Managers of the Metropolitan Asylum District (r) have been constituted the managers of such district, and the casual wards in the Metropolis are now under their control (s)

Admission
etc of casual
paupers

1204 Every casual pauper must be admitted, dieted, and set to work and discharged in the prescribed manner (a)

A casual pauper is not entitled to discharge himself from a casual ward before 9 o'clock in the morning of the second day following his admission, nor before he has performed the prescribed task, if he has been admitted more than once in the month into any casual ward of the same union (b) he may not discharge himself before the fourth day, and may be removed to the workhouse of the union (c) and be required to remain there for the remainder of his period of detention Sunday is not to be included in computing the detention days (d)

Adoption of
children

1205 Where a child is maintained (e) by guardians and (1) has been deserted by its parent, or (2) the guardians are of opinion that by reason of mental deficiency, or of vicious habits or mode of life, a parent of the child is unfit to have control of it, or (3) a parent is unable to perform his or her parental duties by reason of being under sentence of penal servitude or of being detained under the

(g) Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 34), s 4 The expenses so incurred by guardians are a charge on the metropolitan common poor fund (Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 6), s 69), see p 550, *ante*

(r) See p 552, *ante*, and title METROPOLIS, Vol XX, p 411

(s) Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 6), s 6, Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 108), s 10, Metropolitan Casual Paupers Order, 1911

(a) Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 108), s 6 See General Order, 18th December, 1882 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Poor, England, p 193), General Order (Metropolis), 3rd November, 1887 (Macmorran and Lushington, Poor Law General Orders, Vol II, p 687) As to the punishment of absconding paupers etc, see pp 607, 610, *post*

(b) In the Metropolis every casual ward is deemed to be a casual ward of the same union for this purpose (Casual Poor Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 36), s 4)

(c) In the Metropolis the removal may be to any workhouse or asylum provided under the Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 6), for the reception and setting to work of the casual poor, to which the casual poor of the union can be sent (Casual Poor Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 36), s 4)

(d) Casual Poor Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 36), s 4. This provision is not affected by the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 57), s 5

(e) For the meaning of "maintained," see Poor Law Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 36), s 1 (3)

SECT. 1
Kinds of
Relief.

Inebriates Act, 1898 (*f*), or (4) a parent has been sentenced to imprisonment in respect of an offence against any of his or her children, or (5) is permanently bedridden or disabled, and is the inmate of a workhouse and consents, or (6) both the parents, or in the case of an illegitimate child the mother, are or is dead, the guardians may at any time resolve that, until the child reaches the age of eighteen years, all the rights and powers of such parent, or if both parents are dead, of the parents, shall vest in the guardians, whereupon those rights and powers will so vest, and will continue so vested whether the child does or does not continue to be maintained by the guardians. Such a resolution may be rescinded if the guardians think that to do so will be for the benefit of the child, or the guardians may permit the child to be, either permanently or temporarily, under the control of the parent, or of any other relative, or of any friend, or of any society or institution for the care of children. A resolution may also be determined or varied by a court of summary jurisdiction (*g*). The passing of the resolution does not relieve any person from any liability to contribute to the maintenance of the child, but the fact of such contribution being made does not lessen the powers and rights conferred on the guardians (*h*).

Anyone who assists and induces a child so placed under the control of the guardians to escape therefrom is liable on summary conviction to a fine not exceeding £20 (*i*).

1206 If a child maintained by guardians (*k*) is with their consent adopted by any person, the guardians must, during three years from the date of such adoption, cause the child to be visited at least twice a year by some competent person, and may during such period revoke their consent to the adoption, whereupon the child must be forthwith returned to the guardians by the person having the custody thereof (*l*).

Visitation of
 adopted
 child on

1207 If it appears that a person about to be released from prison, or from an industrial or reformatory school, or from an inebriate reformatory, will on his release require immediate poor law relief by reason of infirmity of mind or body, he may be removed on release, on an order made in the prescribed method, to the workhouse of the poor law union consisting of or comprising the parish in which he is settled, or if that cannot be ascertained, or he has no place of settlement or residence in England or

Relief to
 released
 prisoners

(*f*) 61 & 62 Vict c 60, see title INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, p 168

(*g*) Poor Law Act, 1899 (62 & 63 Vict c 37), s 1. The section does not affect the removability (see p 590, *post*) of a pauper child (*Wantage Union v Bristol Union*, [1907] 1 K. B. 68).

(*h*) Poor Law Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 56), s 1 (5), and see *Hackney Union v Tombs*, *Tombs v Hackney Union* (1909), 73 J P 271. The passing of a resolution does not affect the religious instruction of the child, see Poor Law Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 56), *ibid.*, s 1 (6), and title EDUCATION, Vol XII, p 89.

(*i*) Poor Law Act, 1899 (62 & 63 Vict c 37), s 2

(*k*) See note (*e*), p 568, *ante*

(*l*) Poor Law Act, 1899 (62 & 63 Vict c 37), s 3

SECT 1
Kinds of
Relief.

Wales, to the workhouse of the union in which he resided when the offence for which he was detained was alleged to have been committed, or, if that cannot be ascertained, to that of the union in which the offence was alleged to have been committed, or if the offence was committed out of the United Kingdom, to that of the union in which the court of summary jurisdiction by which he was convicted or committed for trial, or ordered to be detained, sat. The operation of such an order may be suspended if the person is too ill to be removed to the workhouse named, in which case he will on release be conveyed to the workhouse of the union in which the prison is situate, and the expenses of his maintenance there will be repaid by the guardians of the poor law union named in the order.

Such an order will not prevent the guardians subsequently obtaining a removal order to the place of actual settlement (m)

SECT 2—*Recovery of the Cost of Relief*

Guardians
may take
property of
pauper

1208 Expenses incurred in the maintenance of a pauper constitute a debt due from the pauper to the guardians who have relieved him (n). Where relief has been given to or on account of any person who is in possession of or owns any money or valuable security for money (o), the guardians may take and appropriate so much of such money or the produce of such security, or recover the same as a debt before any local court, as will reimburse them the amount expended in such relief during the period of twelve months prior to such taking, appropriation, or proceeding, and, in the event of the death of a pauper possessing money or property, the guardians may reimburse themselves the expenses of burial, as well as of maintenance during the preceding twelve months (p).

Description

1209. Where a person runs away leaving a wife, or child, or children chargeable, the guardians may apply to two justices for a warrant or order to take and seize so much of the goods and chattels, and

(m) Released Persons (Poor Law Relief) Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 14)

(n) *Birkenhead Union Guardians v Brookes* (1906), 95 L T 359, *Re Watson, Stamford Union v Battlett*, [1899] 1 Ch 72

(o) A judgment for damages for personal injuries is "a valuable security for money" (*West Ham Guardians v Owens* (1872), L R 8 Exch 37)

(p) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 103), s 16. Burial expenses are recoverable as relief (*ibid*, s 17). *Ibid*, s 16 does not cut down the common law right of guardians to recover six years' maintenance (*Re Clabbon (an Infant)*, [1904] 2 Ch 465, see also *Wandsworth Union v Worthington*, [1906] 1 K B 420). Guardians may, as creditors, obtain administration of the estate of a pauper who died chargeable (*Cleaver v McKenna's Next of Kin* (1864) 35 L J (P & M) 91, *In the Goods of Sharland* (1871), 25 L T 574, and see *Windeatt v Sharland* (1871), 23 L T 877), and may, in addition to the twelve months' maintenance, prove against the estate of a pauper for five years' maintenance, but as ordinary, not preferential, creditors (*Lambell Guardians v Bradshaw's Next of Kin* (1886), 57 L T 86, *Laver v Botham & Sons*, [1895] 1 Q B 59). As to the basis of calculation of the cost of maintenance, see *Islington Guardians v Biggenden* (1909), 101 L T 677. As to the recovery by guardians of unpaid wages due to a pauper, see title FACTORIES AND SHOPS, Vol XIV, p 517.

receive so much of the annual rents and profits of the lands and tenements, of the runaway as such justices order or direct for or towards the discharge of the parish or place where such wife, child or children are left in respect of the expenses incurred for their bringing up and support. On such an order being confirmed at the next quarter sessions, that court may authorise the guardians to sell or otherwise dispose of such goods and chattels, or so much of them as the court thinks fit, and to receive the rents and profits. The guardians must account to quarter sessions for any money so received (q)

SECT 2
Recovery of
the Cost of
Relief.

1210 The liability to maintain imposed by law (i) is enforced by means of maintenance orders made by justices in petty sessions having jurisdiction in the union or parish to which the poor person in respect of whom the question arises is chargeable. Such orders may be obtained by the guardians of such union or parish (r), and money due thereunder is recoverable before a court of summary jurisdiction as a civil debt, and not as a penalty (r). An order of justices for the payment of the money so due cannot be enforced by imprisonment in default of distress, unless it be proved that the person in default has since the date of the order to pay the arrears had the means to pay the sum in respect of which he has made default (u). There is no appeal to quarter sessions (a).

Maintenance
orders.

An order must follow the words of the statute (b), and must show that the person on whom it is made is of sufficient ability to make the required payment (c). The payment ordered must be a fixed weekly sum so long as the poor person remains unable to work, or until further order (d).

(q) Poor Relief (Deserted Wives and Children) Act, 1718 (5 Geo. 1, c. 8), ss. 1, 2. As to the form of the orders, see *Stable v. Dixon* (1805) 6 East, 163.

(r) See p. 573, *post*.

(s) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 110), s. 8, Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), s. 25.

(t) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict. c. 122), s. 36, Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict. c. 49), ss. 6, 35, Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 43), s. 18, and, for the law as to the recovery of civil debts, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol. XIX, p. 609. Bankruptcy does not protect against the consequence of disobedience (*Bancroft v. Mitchell* (1867), L. R. 2 Q. B. 549).

(u) *Re Gamble*, [1899] 1 Q. B. 305, and see title MAGISTRATES, Vol. XIX, pp. 604, 609.

(a) *R. v. London Justices, Ex parte Greenwich Union*, [1900] 1 Q. B. 438.

(b) It is not sufficient to say that the person is "poor" or "destitute" (*St. Andrew's Undershaft (Inhabitants) v. De Dreta* (1701), 1 Ld. Raym. 699, *R. v. Gullely* (1715), Foley, Poor Laws, 47, *R. v. Lutton* (1718), Cas. Sett. 85, *R. v. Pennoyer* (1726), 1 Bott's Poor Laws by Const. 6th ed., 433 [5th ed., 366]). It has been said that the order must also state that the person is actually chargeable to the union or parish, see *R. v. Tripping* (1718), 1 Bott's Poor Laws by Const. 6th ed., 430 [5th ed., 366].

(c) *R. v. Halifax* (1714), Cas. Sett. 33. *R. v. Dunn* (1714), 10 Mod. Rep. 221. It is for the justices to decide whether the defendant is of "sufficient ability" to relieve and maintain, see *Coulson v. Davidson* (1906), 96 L. T. 20.

(d) *Re Morten* (1844), 5 Q. B. 591, *R. v. Gullely, supra*, *Jenkins Case* (1706), 2 Salk. 534.

SECT 2
Recovery of
the Cost of
Relief
Soldiers

1211. A soldier of the regular forces (e) is as liable to contribute to the maintenance of his wife and of his children, legitimate and illegitimate, as is any other man, but such liability cannot be enforced in the ordinary way, nor can he be directly punished for the offence of deserting his wife and family, or any member thereof, or of leaving her or them chargeable. If an order is made against a soldier, or against a man who subsequently becomes a soldier, in respect of maintenance or relief, a copy of the order must be sent to a Secretary of State, and, in such a case, or if a Secretary of State is satisfied that a soldier has deserted or left in destitute circumstances, without reasonable cause, his wife or any of his legitimate children under fourteen years of age, the Secretary of State must order a portion, not exceeding 6*d*, of the daily pay of a non-commissioned officer who is not below the rank of sergeant, and not exceeding 3*d* of the daily pay of any other soldier, to be deducted from such daily pay, and applied, first, in the liquidation of the sum adjudged to be paid, and then towards the maintenance of such wife or children, in such manner as the Secretary of State thinks fit (f).

Seamen.

1212 If during the absence of a seaman on a voyage, his wife or any of his children or step-children become chargeable, the amount expended on their maintenance during such absence may be recovered from the shipowner out of the man's wages, up to a prescribed proportion of such wages (g).

Annuitants
etc

1213 If a pauper is entitled to any annuity or periodical payment, the trustee or other person bound to make payment thereof may pay, and may be compelled to pay, thereout to the guardians the cost of relief, provided that the guardians or the relieving officer have declared such relief to be given on loan (h). Expenses incurred in the relief of a pauper or pauper lunatic who is a member of a friendly society may in certain cases be paid out of any money payable by the society (i), but not if the pauper or pauper lunatic has a wife or other relative dependent upon him (l).

(e) As to the meaning of this expression, see Army Act (44 & 45 Vict c 58), s 190. See also title ROYAL FORCES.

(f) Army Act (44 & 45 Vict c 58), s 145, as amended by the Army (Annual) Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict c 6), s 7, and the Army (Annual) Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 5), s 7. For the service of process on a soldier, see Army Act (44 & 45 Vict c 58), s 145 (3). As to deductions from pay, see also *ibid*, s 138, and, generally, see title ROYAL FORCES.

(g) See Merchant Shipping Act, 1894 (57 & 58 Vict c 60), s 182. As to the relief of destitute lascars, see *ibid*, s 185, and, generally, see title SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION. As to the right of guardians to receive payment of army or naval pensions due to persons chargeable or liable to maintain chargeable persons, see Pensions Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 51).

(h) The guardians must account to the annuitant for any surplus (*Smith v. Islington Guardians* (1902), 66 J P 664, a county court case). As to relief on loan, see p 566, *ante*.

(i) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 23. The section does not apply if there is a dispute as to the pauper's title (*R v Richardson*, [1894] 2 Q. B 323).

(l) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 12), s 1, and title FRIENDLY SOCIETIES, Vol. XV, p. 149, for the cases in which payments may be made to guardians. A trade union is not a benefit or

1214. If a bastard child for whose maintenance an order has been made by justices on the application of the mother becomes chargeable, the payments thereunder may be made to a relieving officer or other officer of the parish or union, and may be recovered by him (l).

SECT 3.
Recovery of
the Cost of
Relief.

SECT 3 —Liability to Maintain.

Payments
under affilia-
tion orders.

Persons liable
to maintain.

1215. The Statute of Elizabeth, which originated our system of poor relief, provides that the father and grandfather, and the mother and grandmother, and the children, of every poor, old, blind, lame, and impotent person, or other poor person not able to work, being of sufficient ability, must, at their own charges, relieve and maintain every such poor person (m). The liability imposed by the statute (n) only extends to blood relations (o), and only to the relations particularly enumerated (p), illegitimate children are not within its operation (q).

1216 A man who marries a woman who already has children, whether legitimate or illegitimate, is liable to maintain them as part of his family, until they attain the age of sixteen or the mother dies (r). Relief given to or on account of a wife, or of children

Husbands
and fathers.

friendly society (*Winder v Kingston upon Hull Corporation for the Poor (Governors and Guardians)* (1888), 20 Q B D 412), and it has been held by a London police magistrate that a trade union cannot be compelled to pay to the guardians the weekly sums which in the ordinary course would have been paid to a member if he had not become chargeable, see *M. Mary, Islington, Guardians v Amalgamated Society of Engineers* (1902), 66 J P 665.

(l) Bastardy Laws Amendment Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c 65), s 7. An order under the section may be made although the mother is living and not incapacitated (*Jones v Merthyr Tydfil Union Guardians* (1911), 105 L T 203). As to the right of the guardians to take proceedings against the putative father of a bastard child, see Bastardy Laws Amendment Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 9), Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 24, *Plymouth Guardians v Gibbs*, [1903] 1 K B 177, and title BASTARDY, Vol II, pp 411 *et seq*.

(m) Poor Relief Act, 1601 (43 Eliz c 2), s 6. This liability can only be enforced by means of the maintenance orders hereinafore mentioned (see p 571, *ante*). A relative liable to maintain cannot be compelled to take the poor person into his house and maintain him there (*R v Jones* (1710), *Foley*, Poor Laws, 41).

(n) Poor Relief Act, 1601 (43 Eliz c 2).

(o) See *R v Munden* (1719), 1 Stra 190 (man not liable for the maintenance of his mother in law); *R v Dempson* (1733), 2 Stra 955 (son's wife).

(p) *R v Smith* (1826), 2 C & P 449, *R v Cornish* (1831), 2 B & Ad. 498 (man not liable to maintain brother), *Maund v Mason* (1874), L R 9 Q B 254 (grandchild not liable to maintain grandfather). A named relation is liable, even though the poor person has a nearer relation able to support him (*R v Joyce* (1707), 16 Vin Abr 423, *R v Cornish*, *supra*), and even though the guardians have obtained contributions towards the maintenance from another source, see *Cole v Brown*, [1907] 2 K B 301. Children are liable to support their mother, even though she has married again (*Arrowsmith v Duckenson* (1887), 20 Q B D 252), or has committed adultery (*Re Constable* (1886), 31 Sol Jo 15).

(q) *R v Reve* (1631), 2 Bulst 344, *Westminster Only v Gerard* (1632), 2 Bulst 346, and see title BASTARDY, Vol II, pp 438 *et seq*.

(r) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 57.

SECT 3
 Liability to
 Maintain.

under the age of sixteen, not being blind or deaf and dumb, is considered as given to the husband of such wife, or to the father of such children, as the case may be (s)

When a married woman requires relief without her husband, an order may be made by justices upon the husband to make payments towards the cost of the relief of the wife (t)

If the husband of a woman is beyond the seas (a), or in the custody of the law, or in confinement in a licensed house or asylum as a lunatic or idiot, any relief given to such woman, or to her child or children, must be given to her in the same manner and subject to the same conditions as if she was a widow (b)

Wives and
 mothers

1217 If the husband of a married woman having separate property becomes chargeable, a maintenance order may be made and enforced against her in respect of such separate property (c).

A married woman having separate property is subject to the same liability as a *feme sole* for the maintenance of her parent or parents (d), and to the same liability as her husband for the maintenance of her children and grandchildren (e)

Relief given to or on account of any child or children, under the age of sixteen, of any widow, is considered to be given to such widow (f)

Part VI.—Settlement.

SECT 1—In General

Meaning of
 "settlement"

1218 By "settlement" is meant the right of a person to have, when occasion arises, the benefit of the poor laws in a particular parish or place (g) The right may be acquired by the act of the

(s) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 56 As to refusing or neglecting to maintain, see p 607, *post* For the liability of parents to maintain their children, see title INFANTS AND CHILDREN, Vol XVII, p 114

(t) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 33 For the liability of husband and wife to maintain each other, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, pp 316 *et seq* As to the enforcement of such orders, see the Summary Jurisdiction Acts, and title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 604 As to the liability of a putative father, see title BASTARDY, Vol II, pp 440 *et seq* As to maintenance in an asylum, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, p 491 As to running away and deserting a family, see p 610, *post*

(a) The provision as to a woman whose husband is beyond the seas applies also to a married woman living separate from her husband (Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 18)

(b) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 25

(c) Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 75), s 20, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 33

(d) Married Women's Property Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 27), s 1 In consequence of this provision, *Pontypool Union v Buck*, [1906] 2 K B 896, is not now good law

(e) Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 75), s 21

(f) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 56, and see p 591, *post* For the liability of a woman for the maintenance of her illegitimate child, see title BASTARDY, Vol II, p 440

(g) The law of poor law settlement and of removal (see p 590, *post*) was

SMO 1
In General.

person, or may devolve upon him without any volition on his part. Once obtained, a settlement can only be lost by the person acquiring a settlement in some other parish or place. A man cannot have two settlements at the same point of time, but his right to a settlement may be fluctuating, and if he has, for example, the means of passing one night in one parish and another night in some other parish, then of the two his place of settlement will be the place where he happened to sleep the night before the happening of the event that led to the making of the order of removal (*h*).

an inevitable consequence of the adoption of the principle of parochial relief (see p 523, *ante*) When each parish was made definitely responsible for the relief of the poor, and charged with the cost of setting the poor to work, the parish was directly concerned in the question of who were, and who were not, the poor whom it was to maintain or set to work, and to facilitate the answering of this question recourse was had to the old feudal idea whereby the labourer was deemed to be part of the soil he was born to cultivate. By analogy, the applicant for relief was deemed only entitled to receive it from the parish in which he was legally settled, and if from motives of humanity a stranger was relieved in some other parish, it was only temporary, and immediate steps could be taken to send him back to the place whence he originally came, and, for a further safeguard even against any prospective charge to a parish, the parish authorities were empowered to remove any newcomer to the parish where he properly belonged, unless he gave sufficient security for holding harmless the parish of his subsequent choice. Upon these fundamental ideas there gradually grew up the complicated and costly system of settlement and removal, which, though considerably modified by comparatively recent enactments, still remains a constant source of confusion and litigation. The present law of settlement and removal originated with the Poor Relief Act, 1662 (14 Car 2, c 12) (for earlier statutes, which are now repealed, on the subject, see stats (1388) 12 Ric 2, c 7, (1495) 11 Hen 7, c 2, (1503) 19 Hen 7, c 12, and (1603) 1 Jac 1, c 7), which, after reciting that by reason of some defects in the law poor people were not restrained from going from one parish to another, and therefore do endeavour to settle themselves in those parishes where there is the best stock, the largest commons or wastes to build cottages, and the best woods for them to burn and destroy, and when they have consumed it then to another parish, and at last become rogues and vagabonds, to the great discouragement of parishes to provide stocks where it is liable to be devoured by strangers, proceeded to enact that it should be lawful, upon complaint made by the churchwardens or overseers of the poor of any parish, to any justice of peace, within forty days after any such person or persons coming so to settle as aforesaid in any tenement under the yearly value of £10, for any two justices of the peace, whereof one to be of the quorum of the division where any person or persons that are likely to be chargeable to the parish shall come to inhabit, by their warrant to remove and convey such person or persons to such parish where he or they were last legally settled, either as a native, householder, sojourner, apprentice, or servant, for the space of forty days at the least, unless he or they give sufficient security for the discharge of the said parish, to be allowed by the said justices. With the alterations effected by succeeding enactments, which are dealt with in the following pages, this provision remains the essential basis of the law now to be considered.

(*h*) *R v Knaresborough (Inhabitants)* (1851), 16 Q B 446, *per* Lord CAMPBELL, C J, at p 448, and see *Great Yarmouth Guardians v Bethnal Green Guardians* (1907), 97 L T 440, *R v Norwood* (1867), L R 2 Q B 457, *R v Ringwood (Inhabitants)* (1813), 1 M & S 381, and *R v St Mary, Lambeth (Inhabitants)*, (1799), 8 Term Rep 240. p 585, *post*.

SECT 1

In General.

Original
settlementsDerivative
settlements

1219. Settlements are either original or derivative. An original settlement may be obtained by birth (*i*), by residence (*k*), by apprenticeship (*l*), by estate (*m*), by paying rent for premises (*n*), or by paying rates (*o*)

1220 A settlement cannot be derived from another person, except by a wife from her husband, by a legitimate child under the age of sixteen from its father or widowed mother, and by an illegitimate child from its mother (*p*) Settlements obtained through these means are called derivative settlements

(*i*) See p 577, *post*

(*k*) See p 579, *post*

(*l*) See p 581, *post*

(*m*) See p 582, *post*

(*n*) See p 584, *post*

(*o*) See p 586, *post*

(*p*) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 35, which provides that "No person shall be deemed to have derived a settlement from any other person, whether by parentage, estate, or otherwise, except in the case of a wife from her husband, and in the case of a child under the age of sixteen, which child shall take the settlement of its father or of its widowed mother, as the case may be, up to that age, and shall retain the settlement so taken until it shall acquire another. An illegitimate child shall retain the settlement of its mother until such child acquires another settlement. If any child in this section mentioned shall not have acquired a settlement for itself, or being a female shall not have derived a settlement from her husband, and it cannot be shown what settlement such child or female derived from the parent without inquiring into the derivative settlement of such parent, such child or female shall be deemed to be settled in the parish in which he or she was born." The construction of this section has been the subject of many and conflicting decisions, but in 1889 the House of Lords considered the whole subject in three cases which were heard together, namely, *Reigate Union Guardians v Croydon Union Guardians*, *Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v Westbury-on-Severn Union Guardians*, *Medway Union Guardians v Bedminster Union Guardians* (1889), 14 App Cas 465, the decisions in which remain the controlling authority on the interpretation of the section. It was laid down, *per* Lord Watson, at p 484, that the effect of the section is (1) to reserve to married women, whether during marriage or in widowhood, the same right to their husband's settlement which they had under the law existing when the Act was passed (see p 587, *post*), (2) to fix absolutely the age of sixteen as the period of emancipation, in all questions regarding the settlement of legitimate children, as had already been done in the case of illegitimates (see p 588, *post*), (3) to give to bastards the privilege enjoyed by lawful children of retaining their parentage settlement after emancipation until the acquisition of a new settlement (see p 588, *post*), (4) in all cases where the parents' settlement was itself derivative, to throw children of either class as soon as they attain the age of sixteen upon their own birth settlement until they acquire another (see p 577, *post*), (5) subject to these provisions and limitations, to reserve to children the same rights in relation to parentage settlements which they possessed under the then existing law (see p 588, *post*), and (6) to abolish all other kinds and forms of derivative settlement. As to the retrospective operation of the section, see *North Union Guardians v Berwick-on-Tweed Union Guardians*, [1892] 1 Q. B 731, *Westbury-on-Severn v Barrow-in-Furness* (1878), 3 Ex D 88, *Tenterden Union Guardians v St Mary, Islington, Guardians* (1878), 38 L.T 485, the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c 61), s 36, and *Brighton Parish Guardians v Strand Union Guardians*, [1891] 2 Q.B 156, C.A.

1221. Guardians may agree in writing under their hands, subject to the consent of the Local Government Board, that for the purposes of settlement all the parishes in a union shall be considered as one parish. When perfected, such an agreement is irrevocable, and the settlement of a poor person in any one of the parishes of the union is deemed to be a settlement in the union (q)

SECT. I.
In General.
Settlement
in unions.

1222 An addition to a parish does not affect settlements already gained therein (r), and if after a settlement has been gained in a parish, the parish is divided into two or more parishes, so that each becomes a separate parish, the settlement gained in the old parish is not destroyed, but remains in the place where it was originally gained (s)

Alteration of
parish

Where the alteration has been made pursuant to an order of the county council, confirmed by the Local Government Board, which contains clauses purporting to deal with settlements in the old parish, an objection to their legality cannot be entertained in proceedings commenced later than six months after the confirmation of the order (t)

1223 Every pauper lunatic who is chargeable to a union is, while he resides in an institution for lunatics, deemed for the purposes of his settlement to be resident in the union to which he is chargeable (a)

Pauper
lunatic.

SECT. 2.—Settlement by Birth

1224 Every English-born person has a settlement, and that settlement is *prima facie* the place of birth, but this birth settlement lasts only while the person is not shown to have acquired some other settlement (b). The moment it is shown that either the father or the mother has gained a settlement in England, the

Duration of
birth
settlement

(q) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (1 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 33, as to the formalities connected with such an agreement, see *ibid.*

(r) *West Ham Union v London County Council*, [1904] 1 A. C. 40.

(s) *West Ham Union v Edmonton Union*, [1908] A. C. 1, overruling *R v Tipton (Inhabitants)* (1842), 3 Q. B. 215, and *Dorking Union v St Saviour's Union*, [1898] 1 Q. B. 594, C. A. As to the effect of the division and alteration of parishes upon settlements, see also *Worcester Union Guardians v Birmingham Union Guardians* (1887), 65 J. P. 771, *Calne Union v St Mary, Islington, Guardians* (1900), 69 L. J. (Q. B.) 400, *Preston Union v Loutham Union* (1904), 91 L. T. 498. For division and alteration of parishes, see p. 553, *ante*, and title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol. XIX, pp. 237, 377.

(t) See *R v Middlesex Justices, Ex parte Walsall Union*, [1907] 2 K. B. 581, C. A.

(a) Lunacy Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 5), s. 286 (2). As to the settlement of a pauper lunatic, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol. XIX, p. 495.

(b) Although it is usual to call the settlement by birth the *prima facie* settlement, it is as a matter of fact the weakest of all settlements (see *R v Wakefield (Inhabitants)* (1804), 5 East, 335, *per* LE BLANC, J., at p. 338), and it is only when all other attempts to find a settlement for the pauper have failed that the birth settlement can be resorted to. Proof, however, of a birth settlement is sufficient to throw on the other side the burden of establishing a later settlement, either by parentage or in some other way (Symons, *Parish Settlements*, 2nd ed., p. 106).

SEC T 2
Settlement
by Birth

settlement of the child is, as the case may be, that of the father or mother (c). But if the parents have no settlement, or if their place of settlement cannot be ascertained, then the child's birth settlement prevails, and continues until it obtains another settlement in some other manner (d).

Children

1225 If a child under the age of sixteen has not acquired a settlement for itself, or, being a female, has not derived a settlement from her husband (e), and it cannot be shown what settlement such child or female derived from the parent without inquiring into the derivative settlement of such parent (f), such child or female is deemed to be settled in the parish in which he or she was born (g).

Exceptions to
place of birth
being place of
settlement

1226 There are certain exceptions to the general rule as to the place of birth being the place of settlement. A child born in a workhouse is, so far as settlement is concerned, deemed to be born in the district, parish, township, or hamlet, by which the mother was sent to, and on account of which the mother was received and maintained in, such house (h), and practically the same rule applies

(c) See p 588, *post*

(d) See *Spitalfields (Inhabitants) v St Andrews, Holborn (Inhabitants)* (1700) Fortes Rep 307, *Cripplegate v St Saviour's* (1710), 2 Bott's Poor Laws by Const, 5th ed., p 13, *R v Heaton Norris (Inhabitants)* (1796), 6 Term Rep 653, *R v St Nicholas, Leicester (Inhabitants)* (1824), 2 B & C 889, *R v St Mary, Leicester (Inhabitants)* (1835), 3 Ad & El 644, *R v Preston (Inhabitants)* (1840), 12 Ad & El 822, *R v Walford (Inhabitants)* (1846), 9 Q B 626, *R v All Saints, Derby (Inhabitants)* (1849), 14 Q B 207, *R v Newchurch (Inhabitants)* (1862), 3 B & S 107

(e) See p 587, *post*

(f) As to the extent to which a derivative settlement may be inquired into, see *Woodstock Union v St Pancras* (1878), 4 Q B D 1

(g) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 35. See *R v Bridgnorth Guardians* (1883), 11 Q B D 314, C A, *Reigate Union Guardians v Croydon Union Guardians, Highbury and Swindon Union Guardians v Westbury on Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v Bedminster Union Guardians* (1889), 14 App Cas 465, *per* Lord Watson, at p 484. The section acts retrospectively (*Westbury-on-Severn v Barrow-in-Furness* (1878), 3 Ex D 88, but compare *Tenterden Union Guardians v St Mary, Islington, Guardians* (1878), 38 L T 485, and see other cases cited in note (p), p 576, *ante*). As the provision of the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 35, by which an illegitimate child retains the settlement of its mother until it acquires another settlement (see note (p), p 576, *ante*) does not apply to an illegitimate child who had attained the age of sixteen before the passing of that Act, the previously existing law applies and such a child is thrown back upon its birth settlement. The birthplace of an illegitimate child born before 14th August, 1834, the date of the passing of the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), was its place of settlement, for *ibid*, s 71 did not affect a previously acquired settlement, and as an illegitimate child was *nullius filius*, it had no father's or mother's settlement to take, and was perforce driven to its birth settlement, until it acquired another in its own right or by marriage.

(h) Poor Relief Act 1814 (54 Geo 3, c 170), s 3. The workhouse of a union is deemed to be in the parish to which each poor person therein relieved is or has been chargeable (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 56). See p 558, *ante*

in the case of a child born in an asylum or hospital for lunatics where the mother is a patient (i)

SECT. 2
Settlement
by Birth.

A child born in a prison in which the mother is a prisoner, or in a lying-in hospital or certified hospital, does not thereby acquire a settlement in the place where the prison or hospital is situated (k).

A bastard born in a lying-in hospital does not acquire a settlement in the place where the hospital is situated, but follows the mother's settlement, and gains a settlement in the parish where the mother was last legally settled (l), but if the mother's settlement cannot be ascertained the child's settlement will be governed by the place of birth (m)

Where, by the fraud or collusion of a parish officer, a woman is wrongly removed or sent into a parish, where she is delivered of an illegitimate child, such child does not gain a settlement in the place of birth (n)

SECT. 3 — Settlement by Residence

1227 Where any person (o) has resided for the term of three years in any parish, in such manner and under such circumstances in each of such years as would in accordance with the several statutes in that behalf render him removable (p), he is deemed to be settled therein until he acquires a settlement in some other parish (q)

Residence for
three years.

1228 The term of residence must have been completed since 15th August, 1876 (r), for the statute creating a settlement of this nature is not retrospective (s), and the residence must be in the same parish, and not merely in different parishes in the same union (t)

Nature of
residence

(i) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 103), s 4. But see *R v Barnet Union Guardians* (1888), 58 L T 947, which, while apparently opposed to the statement in the text, seems not to have really dealt with the question as to the constructive birthplace

(k) Poor Relief Act, 1814 (54 Geo 3, c 170) s 2

(l) Lying in Hospitals Act, 1773 (13 Geo 3, c 82) s 5. The expenses of removal of mother or child to the place of the mother's last settlement, being within twenty miles of the hospital, are payable by such place (*ibid*, s 6)

(m) *Ibid*, s 9. Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 35

(n) *R v Mattheys (Inhabitants)* (1832), 4 B & Ad 211, and compare *R v Astley* (1785), 4 Doug (K B) 389

(o) A deserted wife is a "person" within the meaning of the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 34, and can acquire a settlement of her own by the joint operation of that section and the Poor Removal Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 55), s 3, see *Bethnal Green Guardians v Paddington Guardians*, [1912] 2 K B 335, and cases cited *ibid*

(p) For the essentials to the status of irremovability, see p 591, *post*

(q) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 34. An order of removal in respect of a settlement acquired under this section cannot be made upon the uncorroborated evidence of the person to be removed (*ibid*)

(r) The date of the passing of the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61)

(s) *E. v Ipswich Union* (1877), 2 Q B D 269, *R v Brompton Union* (1878), 3 Q B D 479, *R v Abergavenny Union* (1880), 6 Q B D 31, *Sunderland Guardians v Sussex (Clerk of the Peace)* (1881), 8 Q B D 99

(t) *Plomesgate Guardians v West Ham Guardians* (1881), 6 Q B D 576;

SECT. 3.
Settlement
by
Residence.

The residence must have been for a continuous and complete period of three years, without any such interruption or break as would, under the law relating to immovability, prevent the person attaining that status (*a*) Thus, poor law relief during the period (*b*), or absence on military service (*c*), will prevent the acquisition of the settlement (*d*) The residence must be actual residence, constructive residence, as by having a wife and children living in the place, is not sufficient (*e*) A mere status of immovability does not of itself confer a settlement (*f*) Detention or confinement as a prisoner on any civil process or for contempt of court does not amount to residence in the place of detention so as to confer a settlement there (*g*)

Residence while under sixteen years of age may be sufficient (*h*), or may be added to residence over sixteen to make up the term of three years (*i*), if such residence has been under such circumstances as would suffice to constitute a status of immovability (*l*).

Residence in
charitable
institutions.

1229 A person does not gain a settlement by reason of any residence in any house or other dwelling-place provided for the residence of such person by a charitable institution, while he is supported and maintained at the expense of the institution as an object of such charity (*l*)

Sunderland Guardians v Sussex (Clerk of the Peace) (1881), 8 Q. B. D. 99, but see *Bristol Poor Incorporation v Barton Regis Union* (1891), 56 J. P. 311

(*a*) See p. 591, *post*

(*b*) See *Dorchester Union Guardians v Weymouth Union Guardians* (1885), 16 Q. B. D. 31, *St Olave's Union v Canterbury Union*, [1897] 1 Q. B. 682 C. A. (absent as a patient in a hospital)

(*c*) *Maidstone Union v Newark Union* (1905), 69 J. P. 413

(*d*) As to the effect of periodical short absences, see *Great Yarmouth Guardians v Bethnal Green Guardians* (1907), 97 L. T. 440, where a railway guard travelling between London and Yarmouth, who slept some nights in London and some nights in Yarmouth, was held to be settled in Yarmouth, and see *Manchester Overseers v Ormskirk Guardians* (1886) 16 Q. B. D. 723. Long absence is, of course, a break (*Totnes Union v Cardiff Union* (1880) 51 J. P. 133)

(*e*) *West Ham Union v Cardiff Union*, [1895] 1 Q. B. 766, and see *Maidstone Union v Newark Union*, *supra*

(*f*) Poor Removal Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict. c. 66), s. 5, and see p. 591, *post*

(*g*) Poor Relief Act, 1814 (54 Geo. 3, c. 170), s. 4

(*h*) *Wolstanton and Burslem Union v Northwich Union* (1882), 46 L. T. 528, and see p. 581, *post*

(*i*) *Reigate Union Guardians v. Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v Wistbury on Severn Union Guardians, Midway Union Guardians v Redminster Union Guardians* (1889), 14 App. Cas. 465

(*k*) *West Ham Union Guardians v St. Matthew, Bethnal Green (Church wardens)*, [1894] A. C. 230

(*l*) Poor Relief Act, 1814 (54 Geo. 3, c. 170), s. 6. In *Fulham Guardians v Thanet Guardians* (1881), 7 Q. B. D. 539, C. A., BRETT, L. J., at p. 541 expressed an opinion that this section had been impliedly repealed by the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), s. 34 (see p. 579, *ante*), but it would seem that residence in a charitable institution does not of itself confer a settlement, but that under the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 &

1230 The age of the person is immaterial. A legitimate child under sixteen years of age can acquire a settlement by residence with its deserted mother in a parish from which such mother is irremovable (*m*). An illegitimate child under sixteen can acquire such a settlement, either by residence with its mother (*n*) or by residence elsewhere than with the mother (*o*). A pauper may acquire such a settlement (*p*).

SECT. 3

Residence.

Who may acquire a settlement by residence

SECT. 4—Settlement by Apprenticeship

1231 A person who is bound apprentice (*q*) by any duly stamped deed, writing, or contract (*a*), and who has resided for forty days in a place in pursuance of his apprenticeship, gains a settlement in such place (*b*). The residence need not be for consecutive days, nor in any one year (*c*), nor in the place where the place of service is, nor where the master resides, but it must be residence in the character of an apprentice, and in some way be in furtherance of the object of the apprenticeship (*d*).

Residence under contract of apprenticeship.

Residence by indulgence, or merely for recreation, and having no connection with the service, will not suffice to confer a settlement (*e*).

40 Viet c 61) s 34 a new head of settlement was created, and that it is the irremovability and not the residence that gives such new settlement.

(*m*) *Kingston upon Hull Incorporation for the Poor v Hackney Union*, [1911] 1 K B 748, C A, affirmed (1912), 28 T L R 418, H L.

(*n*) *West Ham Union v Holbeach Union*, [1905] A C 450, *Fulham Parish v Woolwich Union*, [1907] A C 255.

(*o*) *R v Leeds Union* (1879), 4 Q B D 323. *Braintree Union v Rochford Union* (1911), 81 L J (K B) 251, see also *Salford Guardians v Manchester Overseers* (1882), 10 Q B D 172, *Reigate Union Guardians v Croydon Union Guardians*, *Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v Westbury on Severn Union Guardians*, *Medway Union Guardians v Westminster Union Guardians* (1889), 14 App Cas 465, *Holborn Guardians v Chelsea Guardians* (1885), 15 Q B D 76 C A, and see p 588, post.

(*p*) *Wolstanton and Burslem Union v Northwich Union* (1882), 46 L T 528.

(*q*) An attested clerk to a solicitor may acquire a settlement by apprenticeship (*St Pancras v Clapham* (1860), 2 L & E 742).

(*a*) See *Woodstock Union v Shipston on Stour Union* (1892), 57 J P 167.

(*b*) Poor Relief Act, 1691 (3 Will & Mar c 11), s 7. Apprentices (Settlement) Act, 1757 (31 Geo 2, c 11), s 1. Residence under apprenticeship in an extra parochial place does not confer a settlement (*Clerkenwell (Inhabitants) v Brudewell* (1700), 1 Ld Raym 549). This form of settlement cannot be acquired in respect of apprenticeship to a turnpike keeper or collector (Turnpike Roads Act, 1822 (3 Geo 4, c 126), s 51), or in respect of apprenticeship to the sea service, or to a sea fisherman (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 67). A parish apprentice cannot gain a settlement by virtue of his apprenticeship unless the directions of the Parish Apprentices Act, 1816 (56 Geo 3, c 139), have been complied with, see title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol XX, p 80, note (*m*).

(*c*) *R v Aldstone (Inhabitants)* (1831), 2 B & Ad 207.

(*d*) See, as to the nature of the residence under the apprenticeship, *St Bride's Parish v St Saviour's Parish* (1706), 2 Salk 533, *R v Barmby in-the-Marsh (Inhabitants)* (1806), 7 East, 381, *R v Barnsley (Inhabitants)* (1813), 1 M & S. 377, *R v Barleston (Inhabitants)* (1822), 5 B & Ald 780; *R v Inkinthorne (Inhabitants)* (1832), 3 B & Ad 413, *R v Banbury (Inhabitants)* (1832), 3 B & Ad. 706, *R v Elswick (Inhabitants)* (1861), 3 E & E 437.

(*e*) *R v Ilkeston* (1825), 4 B & C 64, *R v Barton-upon-Irwell (Inhabitants)* (1863), 3 B & S 604. But where a master sent a sick apprentice

NOTE 1
Settlement
by Appren-
ticeship

Transfer of
service.

Test of
apprentice-
ship

Nature of
the qualifica-
tion.

The residence required means sleeping in the place (*f*), and the settlement will attach in the place in which the apprentice last slept, if there has been a residence of forty days in the whole in that parish (*g*)

1232 The acquisition of a settlement by residence under a contract of apprenticeship is not affected by the transfer of the service from one master to another, provided that it is with the express consent (*h*) of the master with whom the contract was made, and that the service is in the same capacity and under the original contract (*i*)

1233 There must be an actual apprenticeship, not merely a contract of hiring or service, the test being whether the object of the master was to teach and of the apprentice to learn his trade (*k*). A contract merely on the part of the master to teach, without any reciprocal engagement on the part of the servant to work, will not confer a settlement, even though there has been an actual service (*l*)

SECT 5 Settlement by Estate

1234 The owner of an estate in possession in land (*m*) gains a

to the workhouse and paid for him there, the stay there was held to be residence under the apprenticeship (*R v Foulness (Inhabitants)* (1817), 6 M & S 351)

(*f*) *St John Baptist, Deetzes v St James, Bishops Kenny* (1723), 1 Stra 594, *R v Castleton (Inhabitants)* (1766) 2 Bott's Poor Laws by Const 5th ed., 390 *R v St Peter's on the Hill Chester (Inhabitants)* (1741), 2 Bott's Poor Laws by Const, 5th ed 388, *R v Somerby (Inhabitants)* (1838), 9 Ad & El 310, *R v Burslem (Inhabitants)* (1839), 11 Ad & El 52 *R v Stratford upon Avon (Inhabitants)* (1809) 11 East, 176

(*g*) *R v Brighthelmston (Inhabitants)* (1793), 5 Term Rep 188

(*h*) A general permission, or the discharge of the apprentice, is not sufficient (*R v Crediton (Inhabitants)* (1800), 1 East, 59, *R v Whitechurch (Inhabitants)* (1823), 1 B & C 574, *R v St Martin's, Fidler (Inhabitants)* (1835) 4 Nev & M (K B) 388), but the consent may be given verbally (*St George, Hanover Square v St James, Westminster* (1734), 2 Stra 1001)

(*i*) See *R v Whitechurch (Inhabitants)*, *supra* *R v Maulstone (Inhabitants)* (1837), 5 Ad & El 326, *R v Sandhurst (Inhabitants)* (1837) 6 Ad & El 130, *R v Banbury (Inhabitants)* (1833) 5 B & Ad 176, *R v St Cuthbert, Wells (Inhabitants)* (1834), 5 B & Ad 939, *R v Gwnear (Inhabitants)* (1834), 1 Ad & El 152 *R v Spreyton (Inhabitants)* (1832), 3 B & Ad 818, *R v Shebbeur (Inhabitants)* (1800), 1 East, 73

(*k*) *R v Landon (Inhabitants)* (1790) 8 Term Rep 379, *R v Rainham (Inhabitants)* (1801), 1 East 531, *R v Great Washford (Inhabitants)* (1835), 4 Ad & El 216 *R v Billingham (Inhabitants)* (1836), 5 Ad & El 676, and see, generally, as to apprenticeship, title MASTER AND SERVANT, Vol. XX, pp 71, 79, 103

(*l*) *R v Bishborough (Inhabitants)* (1817), 1 B & Ald 115

(*m*) *R v Ringstead (Inhabitants)* (1829), 9 B & C 218 A mere right to a rentcharge, or to an annuity charged on land, does not support a settlement by estate (*R v Stockley Pomroy (Inhabitants)* (1774), Burr S C 762; *R v Melborne (Inhabitants)* (1745), Burr S C 244), nor does enjoyment by virtue of an office or employment connected with the estate (see *R v Warkworth (Inhabitants)* (1813), 1 M & S 473, *R v Belford (Inhabitants)* (1829), 10 B & C 54, *R v South Newton, Wills (Inhabitants)* (1830), 10 B & C 838) It is essential that there be a present right of possession (*R v Latington (Inhabitants)* (1791), 4 Term Rep 177, *R v Willoughby-with-Sloothby (Inhabitants)* (1829), 10 B & C. 62)

Sect. 5.

Settlement
by Estate.

settlement by residing for forty days (*n*) in the parish in which such land is situate. It is the residence, not the ownership, that makes the settlement (*o*), but the residence need not be on the particular land, nor on successive days (*p*). The estate may be legal or equitable (*q*), the tenure may be freehold, copyhold, or leasehold, it may be acquired by adverse possession (*r*), but not by fraud (*s*), and it is not even necessary that the person should have a beneficial interest (*t*). The value is immaterial, save in the case of an estate acquired by purchase (*u*) for a money consideration, for it is provided that a person cannot have a settlement in a parish or place by virtue of a purchase of any estate or interest in such parish or place for a less consideration than £30, *bonâ fide* paid (*b*), for longer than he inhabits such estate or within

(*n*) *R v West Shefford (Inhabitants)* (1751), Burr S C 307. The forty days' residence is necessary to satisfy the Poor Relief Act, 1662 (14 Car 2, c 12), s 1.

(*o*) *Egshp Parish v Harrow Parish* (1697), 2 Salk 521.

(*p*) *R v St Nyott's (Inhabitants)* (1739) Burr S C 132, *R v Knarles borough (Inhabitants)* (1851), 16 Q B 446.

(*q*) *R v Offchurch (Inhabitants)* (1789), 3 Term Rep 114.

(*r*) *R v Wyley (Inhabitants)* (1724), 2 Sess Cas (K B) 121, *R v Bilton (Inhabitants)* (1768), Burr S C 631, *R v Garway (Inhabitants)* (1768), Burr S C 632, *R v Butterton (Inhabitants)* (1796), 6 Term Rep 554, *R v Calow (Inhabitants)* (1814), 3 M & S 22, *R v Woburn (Inhabitants)* (1830), 10 B & C 846, *R v Chou Magna (Inhabitants)* (1830), 10 B & C 747.

(*s*) *R v St Michael's, Bath (Inhabitants)* (1781), 2 Doug (K B) 610, and see *R v Overseers of Wootton Bassett (Inhabitants)* (1812), 15 East, 356, *R v Great Glenn (Inhabitants)* (1833) 5 B & Ad 188.

(*t*) *R v Ardleigh (Inhabitants)* (1837), 7 Ad & Ll 70. *R v Dorstone (Inhabitants)* (1801), 1 East, 296. There must of course, be an estate, either legal or equitable, which is recognised in law. See *R v St Mary Castlegate (Churchwardens, etc)* (1852), 21 L J (M C) 106, *R v Cregina (Inhabitants)* (1835), 2 Ad & Ll 536, *R v Thruscross (Inhabitants)* (1834), 1 Ad & Ll 126, *R v Plantillo Crosseney (Inhabitants)* (1826), 5 B & C 461, *R v Sherrington (Inhabitants)* (1832) 3 B & Ad 714, *R v Northwold Bassett (Inhabitants)* (1824) 2 B & C 724, *R v Standon (Inhabitants)* (1814) 2 M & S 461, *R v Walby (Inhabitants)* (1814), 2 M & S 504, *R v Oakley (Inhabitants)* (1809), 10 East, 491, *R v Catherington (Inhabitants)* (1790), 3 Term Rep 771, *R v St Michael's, Bath (Inhabitants)* (1781) 2 Doug (K B) 610, *R v Painswick (Inhabitants)* (1774), Burr S C 783, for examples of what interest has been held sufficient or insufficient to support the settlement.

(*u*) The word "purchase" is not used in its strict legal signification, but as meaning an actual cash transaction (*R v Maywood (Inhabitants)* (1756), Burr S C 386). A conveyance in consideration of natural love and affection is not "a purchase" (*R v Ingleton (Inhabitants)* (1766), Burr S C 560, *R v Ilton (Inhabitants)* (1789), 3 Term Rep 251, compare *R v Puddington (Inhabitants)* (1812), 3 B & Ad 460), nor is a family arrangement (*R v Lydlinch (Inhabitants)* (1832), 4 B & Ad 150), nor a devise (*R v Wrelingham (Inhabitants)* (1781), 2 Doug (K B) 767), nor a conveyance for a mixed consideration whereof the money part did not amount to £30 (*R v Charlton (Inhabitants)* (1784), 2 Bott's Poor Laws by Coust, 6th ed., 613 (5th ed., 480)).

(*b*) This does not mean that cash must actually pass, a prior debt or work done on the land of not less value than £30 will suffice to prevent the exception applying (1) *legh Parish v Stockland Parish* (1742), 2 Stra 1162, *Wendron Overseers v Stithians Overseers* (1854), 4 E & B 147, *R v*

SECT 5
Settlement
by Estate

ten miles thereof (c) on ceasing to inhabit and becoming chargeable, the owner of such property is liable to be removed to the parish or place where he was last legally settled before the purchase and inhabitancy, or, in case he has, subsequently to such inhabitancy, gained a legal settlement in some other parish, then to such other parish (d).

By inhabitancy or residence "within ten miles" means within ten miles, as the crow flies, from the house in which the person actually resides to the boundary of the parish in which the estate is situate (e).

SECT 6—Settlement by Renting and Rating.

Inter-relation
of these
settlements.

1235 Though these forms of settlement are distinct, they are so inter-related that they may be treated together. If a renting settlement has been gained, the conditions fulfilled will also have conferred a rating settlement, and where a person has a settlement by estate it will often be found that he has also acquired a rating settlement in respect of the same property (f).

Settlement
by renting

1236 A person may acquire a settlement by renting property in a parish, if the following essentials are present—(1) The tenement must consist of a separate and distinct dwelling-house and building, or of land, or of both (g), (2) it must be *bona fide* rented by such person, at and for the sum of £10 a year

Belford Overseers (1863) 3 B & S 662, but money subsequently spent on the land cannot be taken into account (*R v Dunchurch (Inhabitants)* (1760), Burr S C 553). The consideration mentioned in the deed is not conclusive if in fact £10 or more was paid as purchase money (see *R v Scammonden (Inhabitants)* (1789) 3 Term Rep 474, *R v Cottingham (Inhabitants)* (1827), 7 B & C 603). The money will be deemed to be *bona fide* paid though a portion was borrowed on mortgage of the premises (*R v Tedford (Inhabitants)* (1735), Burr S C 57, *R v Charley (Inhabitants)* (1796), 6 Term Rep 755).

(c) In order to sustain the settlement, the residence must continue up to the date of the adjudication order.

(d) Poor Relief Act, 1722 (9 Geo 1, c 7), s 5, Poor Law Amendment Act 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 68. See *R v St Giles in the Fields (Inhabitants)* (1842), 2 Q B 446, *R v Salford (Inhabitants)* (1764), Burr S C 516. As to removal, see p 590, *post*. Though the effect of the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 68, is to destroy the settlement of the purchaser, it would seem that such destruction does not affect the already acquired derivative settlement of his emancipated children (see *R v Hendon (Inhabitants)* (1842), 2 Q B 455), though it will prevent a wife or an unemancipated child acquiring a derivative settlement after the purchaser's settlement has been lost (*R v Llan-sannffraid Glan Conway (Inhabitants)* (1853) 2 F & B 803).

(e) *R v Naffron Wadden (Inhabitants)* (1846), 9 Q B 77. If the owner goes to reside beyond the ten miles limit, and so loses his settlement by estate, he may still retain a settlement by rating, see note (f), *infra*.

(f) See p 582, *ante* for settlement by estate. A person who ceases to reside within ten miles of the parish loses his settlement by estate therein (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 68, and see the text, *supra*) but will still retain any renting or rating settlement (*R v Keynsham Union* (1885), 49 J P 308), and see p 586, *post*.

(g) Poor Relief (Settlement) Act, 1825 (6 Geo 4, c 57), s 2. The words

at the least, and for the term of one whole year at the least (h); (3) the person himself must have actually occupied under such yearly hiring for a year at least, and must have paid rent to the amount of £10 for at least a whole year (i), (4) he must have been assessed to the poor rate, and have paid the same, in respect of such tenement, for at least a year (h), and (5) he must personally have resided in the parish for forty days (l)

NOTE 5.
Settlement
by Renting
and Rating.

1237 The renting need not necessarily be under one agreement or from the same landlord (m), so long as there is an exclusive tenancy for a whole year of a distinct holding (n). The occupation must be uninterrupted and of the actual tenement, not merely of a part. Where the tenant has let off part of the premises but occupies the remainder, he does not gain a settlement (o)

Nature of
tenancy

1238 If a man is the tenant of premises of sufficient value in each of two or more parishes, and in respect of each has fulfilled the necessary conditions, he will be deemed to be settled in the parish in which he last spent the night (p)

Double
tenancies.

“separate and distinct” do not apply to land (*R v St Lawrence, Appleby (Inhabitants)* (1845), 6 Q B 842, and see notes (m), (n), *infra*)

(h) Poor Relief (Settlement) Act, 1825 (6 Geo 4, c 57), s 2, and see Poor Removal Act, 1795 (35 Geo 3, c 101), s 4. The rent may be paid weekly, monthly, quarterly or yearly, so long as there is a letting for a year; see *E v Herstmonceux (Inhabitants)* (1828), 7 B & C 551, *Paddington (Churchwardens) v Wallesden (Churchwardens)* (1863), 7 L T 784, *R v St Giles Without, Cripplegate (Inhabitants)* (1863), 4 B & S 509, *Hastings Union Guardians v St James, Clerkenwell, Guardians* (1865), 6 B & S 914, *R v Norwich Incorporation Guardians* (1874), 38 J P 677

(i) Poor Relief (Settlement) Act, 1831 (1 Will 4, c 18), s 1. If the yearly rent exceeds £10, payment up to £10 is sufficient (*ibid*, s 2). And if the total rent is in respect of land in more than one parish, it will be enough if on apportionment there is £10 a year paid for what is in the parish concerned (*R v Pickering (Inhabitants)* (1831), 2 B & Ad 267). The rent must be paid by the hirer, not by a third person (*R v Pakefield (Inhabitants)* (1836), 4 Ad & El 612), and not after his death (*R v Carshalton (Inhabitants)* (1826), 6 B & C 93)

(k) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 60, see *R v Husthwaite (Inhabitants)* (1852), 18 Q B 447, *R v St Anne, Westminster (Inhabitants)* (1860), 2 E & L 485.

(l) Poor Relief Act, 1662 (14 Car 2, c 12)

(m) *R v Macclesfield (Inhabitants)* (1831), 2 B & Ad 870, *R v Tadcaster (Inhabitants)* (1833), 4 B & Ad 703. But occupation under successive agreements is not sufficient (*R v Banbury (Inhabitants)* (1834), 1 Ad & El 136)

(n) As to what amounts to a distinct dwelling house or building, see cases cited in note (g), p 584, *ante*, **R v Great and Little Usworth and North Biddick (Inhabitants)* (1836), 5 Ad & El 261, *R v Elswick (Inhabitants)* (1860), 24 J P 787, as to land, see note (g), p 584, *ante*

(o) *R v St Nicholas, Rochester (Inhabitants)* (1833), 5 B & Ad 219, *R v St. Nicholas, Colchester (Inhabitants)* (1835), 2 Ad & El 599, *R v Borkwell (Inhabitants)* (1837), 6 Ad & El 282. *R v Pakefield (Inhabitants)* (1836), 4 Ad & El 612. But merely letting out beds for the night does not prevent the tenant being in occupation (*R v St Giles in-the-Fields (Inhabitants)* (1836), 4 Ad & El 495)

(p) *R v St. Mary, Lambeth (Inhabitants)* (1799), 8 Term R p 240, *R*,

§ 1237 6

**Settlement
by Renting
and Rating****Service
occupiers**

1239 The renting or payment of rates, as the case may be, must be by the person himself. Persons occupying rent free, by reason of their employment or office, *e.g.*, railway servants who reside in houses provided by the company, hospital doctors living in the hospital, workhouse masters and matrons, ministers living in houses hired by the officers of the church, servants living in lodges or estate cottages, and the like, do not obtain settlements in respect of renting or rating (*q*)

Toll-keepers

1240 No gate-keeper or toll keeper of any turnpike road or navigation, or person renting the tolls and residing in any toll-house of any turnpike road or navigation, and no apprentice or servant of any such collector or person, thereby gains any settlement in any district, parish, township, or hamlet (*r*)

**Parish lands
Crown lands**

1241 A settlement cannot be gained by hiring, occupying, or paying rates in respect of land let out for the employment of the poor (*s*) or of Crown land (*t*)

**Settlement by
rating**

1242 A settlement may be acquired by a person paying the "public taxes or levies" (*a*) in respect of property of the yearly value of at least £10, of which he is the owner (*b*), or in respect of property rented by him under the conditions stated above as regards settlement by renting (*c*). In either case he must have resided for forty days in the parish in which the property is situated, after having paid such rates (*d*)

If the person paying the rates is the owner of the property, it is not necessary that he should actually occupy the property (*e*), but if he is not the owner he must have occupied the tenement or a part of it for a whole year (*f*)

**Meaning of
"public taxes
or levies"**

The expression "public taxes or levies" is generally regarded as being synonymous with the term "parochial rates" (*g*), but the settlement may be acquired by the payment of other charges than

v. Lingwood (Inhabitants) (1813), 1 M & S 361 and compare cases cited p 575, note (*h*), *ante*

(*q*) See *R v Tuxton Overseers* (1861), 3 E & B 755, and see note (*g*), p 592, *post*

(*r*) Poor Relief Act 1814 (54 Geo 3 c 170), s 1 Turnpike Roads Act, 1822 (3 Geo 4, c 126), s 51

(*s*) Poor Relief Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 42) s 5

(*t*) Crown Lands Allotments Act, 1831 (1 & 2 Will 4, c 59), s 2

(*a*) See the text, *infra*

(*b*) Poor Relief Act, 1691 (3 Will & Mar c 11), s 5, Poor Relief (Settlement) Act, 1825 (6 Geo 4, c 57), s 2

(*c*) See p 584, *ante*

(*d*) Poor Relief Act, 1862 (14 Car 2, c 12), *R v Ringstead (Inhabitants)* (1829), 9 B & C 218

(*e*) *Gainsborough Union Guardians v Worksop Union Guardians* (1873), 37 J P 293

(*f*) *R v Westbury on Trym (Inhabitants)* (1857), 7 E & B 444 If a tenant, who is actually rated and pays the rate, has underlet a part of the premises it would seem that he is not precluded from acquiring a settlement (*R v Stoke Damarel (Inhabitants)* (1837), 6 Ad & El 308 *R v Brightelmstone (Inhabitants)* (1841), 1 Q B 674; *R v St Giles in the Fields (Inhabitants)* (1857), 7 E & B 205

(*g*) See *R v East Trignmouth (Inhabitants)* (1830), 1 B & Ad 214.

the poor rate (*h*), *e.g.*, of land tax (*i*), property tax (*k*), church rate (*l*), an improvement rate (*m*), or of a borough watch rate (*n*). A settlement cannot be acquired by payment only of a rate assessed for the scavenging or repairs of the highway (*o*).

SECT. 4.
Settlement
by Rating
and Rating.

SECT 7—*Settlement by Marriage*

1243 Upon marriage a woman takes her husband's settlement, and continues to take any new settlement with him until he dies (*p*). After his death she retains his last settlement (*q*) until she acquires a new one, either in her own right or by remarriage (*r*). If the husband has no settlement of his own, or his settlement cannot be ascertained, the wife retains the settlement, whether original or derivative, she had before marriage (*s*). A wife, unless deserted by her husband, cannot acquire a settlement in her own right (*t*),

Wife's
Settlement.

- (*h*) *R v St Mary Kalendar (Inhabitants)* (1839), 9 Ad & El 626
- (*i*) *R v Bramley (Inhabitants)* (1736), Burr 75, *R v East Teignmouth (Inhabitants)* (1830), 1 B & Ad 244
- (*k*) *St George, Hanover Square v Cambridge Union* (1867), L R 3 Q B 1
- (*l*) *R v St Bees (Inhabitants)* (1808), 9 East, 203
- (*m*) *R v St Thomas* (1870), L R 5 Q B 171
- (*n*) *Luciton v South Stowham* (1800), 2 L & L 771. But not a ward watch rate (*R v Christ Church London (Inhabitants)* (1828), 8 B & C 680)
- (*o*) Poor Relief Act, 1772 (9 Geo 1, c 7), s 6
- (*p*) *St Giles, Reading v Freixley Blackwater* (1724), 1 Stra 580, *R v Hinworth (Inhabitants)* (1778), Cald Mag Cas 42. This derivative settlement was preserved by the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61) s 35, see p 576, *ante*
- (*q*) *Reigate Union Guardians v Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v Westbury on Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v Bedminster Union Guardians* (1889), 14 App Cas 465, overruling *Maudsloni Union Guardians v Holborn Union Guardians* (1886), 17 Q B D 817, and *Kingsbridge Union Guardians v East Stonehouse Union Guardians* (1887) 18 Q B D 528
- (*r*) A widow cannot complete the qualification for a settlement already commenced by her husband, *e.g.*, where a tenant dies before acquiring a settlement by residence, his widow cannot perfect the settlement by continuing to reside there. But she can live in the tenement herself, and so begin to acquire a right in her own behalf, see *R v Clayford (Inhabitants)* (1826), 9 Dow & Ry (k b) 80
- (*s*) A woman's settlement is not destroyed by marriage, but only by the fact of her acquiring a new settlement under her husband. If she does not do this her maiden settlement still survives, and she may be removed there if occasion arises (see *Dorchester Union Guardians v Poplar Union Guardians* (1888) 21 Q B D 88 (C A), *Plymouth Union v Arminster Union*, [1898] A C 586, *R v St Botolph's Without, Bishopscote* (1755), Burr S C 367, *R v Woadsford (Inhabitants)* (1783), 2 Bott's Poor Laws by Const, 5th ed 86, *R v Ryton (Inhabitants)* (1778), Cald Mag Cas 39). As to when removal may be ordered, and the necessity for the husband's consent, see p 594, *post*
- (*t*) *R v Athorp Rooding (Inhabitants)* (1756) Burr S C 412, *Berthampstead v St Mary, Northchurch* (1735), 2 Bott's Poor Laws by Const, 5th ed, 25, cited in 1 Nolan, Poor Laws, 4th ed, 291, per Lord HARDWICK, C J, *R v Brington* (1827), 7 B & C 546, *Reigate Union Guardians v Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v Westbury on Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v Bedminster Union Guardians*, *supra*, per Lord HALSBURY, LC, at p 479, and per Lord WATSON, at p 482, *Rutherglen Parish Council v Glasgow Parish Council*, [1902] A C 360. As to the right of a deserted wife to acquire a settlement see note (*o*), p 579, *ante*.

SECT 7.
Settlement
by
Marriage.

though under certain circumstances she may acquire a status of irremovability, which for some purposes amounts to practically the same thing (*a*)

A marriage must be a valid one in order to confer a settlement (*b*), but if it be valid, it matters not how it was procured (*c*).

SECT 8.—Settlement by Parentage

Children
under sixteen

1244 Every legitimate child up to the age of sixteen takes the settlement of its father, but if the father dies while the child is under sixteen, and the mother, being a widow, acquires a settlement in her own right (*d*) before the child attains that age, or if the deceased father had no settlement, the child takes the settlement of its widowed mother up to the age of sixteen (*e*). In either case, whether it takes the settlement of the father or of the mother, it retains the settlement so taken until it acquires another (*f*)

When, however, after the death of the father, the widow does not acquire a settlement, a child under sixteen will take the father's settlement, and not the mother's maiden settlement (*g*), unless the father's settlement cannot be ascertained, when it may take the mother's settlement (*h*)

A derivative settlement can only be acquired by a child while under sixteen, and is not affected by any settlement acquired by the parent after the child has attained sixteen. Whatever settlement the child has on the day before it attains sixteen it retains until it acquires another in its own right (*i*)

A bastard child has and follows the settlement of the mother (*k*) until it attains the age of sixteen or acquires a settlement in its

(*a*) See p. 591, post

(*b*) *R v Brighton (Inhabitants)* (1861), 1 B & S 447

(*c*) *R v Birmingham (Inhabitants)* (1829), 8 B & C 29

(*d*) A legitimate child under sixteen will not take a settlement derived by its mother by virtue of a second marriage (*Keynsham Union v Bedminster Union* (1878), 3 Q B D 344, *Llanelly Union Guardians v Neath Union Guardians* [1893] 2 Q B 38)

(*e*) A child under sixteen takes its widowed mother's settlement in preference to its birth settlement (*Hollingbourn Guardians v West Ham Guardians* (1881), 6 Q B D 580)

(*f*) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 35. The fact that a child has a derivative settlement under this section does not prevent it acquiring a settlement by residence under *ibid* s 34 (see p 579, ante *Wolstanton and Burslem Union v Northwich Union* (1882), 46 L T 528)

(*g*) *Reigate Union Guardians v Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v Westbury-on-Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v Bedminster Union Guardians* (1889), 14 App Cas 465

(*h*) *West Derby Union Guardians v Altham Union Guardians* (1889), 24 Q B D 117, C A

(*i*) *Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v Westbury-on-Severn Union Guardians* (1888), 20 Q B D 597, C A, per LOPES, L J., at p 604 affirmed (1889), 14 App Cas 465, see at p 489

(*k*) This includes, besides any settlement acquired by the mother in her own right, the settlement of any husband whom she may afterwards marry (*R v St Mary, Newington (Inhabitants)* (1843), 4 Q B 581, *Reigate Union Guardians v Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v Westbury-on-Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v Bedminster Union Guardians*, *supra*, *Llanelly Union Guardians v Neath Union Guardians*, *supra*).

own right (l). If any child, legitimate or illegitimate, has not acquired a settlement for itself, or being a female has not gained a settlement from her husband, and it cannot be shown what settlement such child or female derived from the parent without inquiring into the derivative settlement of such parent, the child is deemed to be settled in the parish of its birth (m).

SECT. 8
Settlement
by
Parentage.

1245 The age of sixteen is the age of emancipation, on attaining that age a child ceases to follow its parents' settlement, and becomes capable of acquiring a settlement in its own right or of taking the benefit of a settlement it may have acquired before attaining that age (n). Such a settlement may be acquired in any of the methods discussed in this article, but until such acquirement the child either retains the parental settlement, if that be known and is not derivative (o), or is thrown back to its birth settlement (p).

Children
sixteen.

SECT. 9—Settlement by Estoppel

1246 When justices have made an order adjudging a person to

Settlement
by estoppel.

(l) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 71. Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), s. 35, see *Tenterden Union Guardians v. St. Mary, Islington Guardians* (1878), 38 L. T. 485. An illegitimate child born before 1834 did not derive a settlement, and so kept its birth settlement (*R. v. St. Nicholas, Leicester (Inhabitants)* (1824), 2 B. & C. 889). A child under sixteen is capable of acquiring a settlement in its own right (*Fulham Parish v. Woodrich Union*, [1907] A. C. 255, *West Ham Union v. Holbeach Union*, [1905] A. C. 450, *R. v. Elvet Inhabitants* (1859), 2 E. & L. 266, *Reigate Union Guardians v. Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v. Westbury on Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v. Bedminster Union Guardians* (1889) 14 App. Cas. 465).

(m) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), s. 35. This part of s. 35 has no application to children under sixteen (*Reigate Union Guardians v. Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v. Westbury on Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v. Bedminster Union Guardians*, *supra*, per Lord WATSON, at p. 484), and does not prohibit inquiry into the derivative settlement of the parent when the child is under sixteen at the date of the inquiry (*West Derby Union Guardians v. Atcham Union Guardians* (1889), 24 Q. B. D. 117, C. A.).

(n) *Reigate Union Guardians v. Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v. Westbury on Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v. Bedminster Union Guardians*, *supra*, per Lord WATSON, at p. 484. As to the power of an unemancipated child to acquire a settlement, see note (l), *supra*.

(o) See *West Ham Union v. Holbeach Union*, [1905] A. C. 450. Under the decision in *Reigate Union Guardians v. Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v. Westbury on Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v. Bedminster Union Guardians*, *supra*, an illegitimate child does not necessarily revert to its birth settlement, it may retain the mother's settlement until it acquires a new settlement (*Bodenham Overseers v. St. Andrews, Worcester, Overseers* (1853), 1 E. & B. 465, must be regarded as not now law in so far as it decided to the contrary in accordance with the then existing law. In *Reigate Union Guardians v. Croydon Union Guardians, Highworth and Swindon Union Guardians v. Westbury on Severn Union Guardians, Medway Union Guardians v. Bedminster Union Guardians*, *supra*, Lord MACNAGHTEN, in the course of his judgment, said that the object of the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), s. 35, was to get rid of the decision in *Bodenham Overseers v. St. Andrews, Worcester, Overseers*, *supra*).

(p) *Plymouth Union v. Arminster Union*, [1898] A. C. 586, H. L.

SECT 9
Settlement
by Estoppel.

be settled in a certain parish, and that order is not appealed from within the prescribed time, or is confirmed on appeal, the order is final and conclusive as against the world as to the place of settlement, and the person remains settled in such place until he acquires a new settlement (*q*) It matters not that the order can be shown to have been made in error, so long as it was competent for the justices to make it (*r*) Such a settlement is called a settlement by estoppel

An abandoned order (*a*), however, does not give rise to settlement by estoppel, whether the abandonment was made without an appeal being entered, or on the appeal coming on for hearing (*b*)

Relief as
 evidence of
 settlement

1247 A settlement is not necessarily acquired by the pauper being relieved in a particular parish or union, but the fact of such relief having been given may be evidence that the pauper is settled in such parish or union, or may even amount to an admission by the guardians of such settlement (*c*)

Part VII.—Removal.

SECT 1—In General

When
 removal order
 may be made

1248 If a poor person becomes actually chargeable to a particular parish (*d*) or place in which he is not legally settled, the poor law authority of that parish or place may apply to the justices for an order for the removal of such poor person to the place of his or her last legal settlement (*e*), but such an order cannot be made if the poor person has no place of settlement, *e.g.*, a foreigner just arrived in this country (*f*), or is exempt by statute from removal, and has so acquired a status of unremovability (*g*)

Chargeability

1249 A person actually in receipt of relief, if not obtained or given fraudulently or by mistake, is actually chargeable to the parish providing the relief, even though he has sufficient property

(*q*) See *Ladbroke Union v. Winchester Union* (1904), 91 L T 533, *R v. Catterall (Township)* (1817), 6 M & S 83 As to the acquirement of a new settlement defeating a settlement by estoppel, see *Rockford Guardians v. Chelsea Guardians* (1911), 75 J P (Journal) 521

(*r*) *R v. Chilverscote (Inhabitants)* (1799), 8 Term Rep 178

(*a*) See p 598, *post*

(*b*) *R v. Diddlebury (Inhabitants)* (1810), 12 East, 359, *R v. Landhey (Inhabitants)* (1847), 9 Q B 905

(*c*) See *R v. Coleorton (Inhabitants)* (1830), 1 B & Ad 25, *R v. St Giles-in-the-Fields (Inhabitants)* (1814), 13 L J (M C) 89, *R v. Lilleshall (Inhabitants)* (1845), 7 Q B 158, *R v. Bradford (Inhabitants)* (1846), 8 Q B 571, *R v. Little Marlow (Inhabitants)* (1847), 10 Q B 223

(*d*) For the purpose of removal the expression "parish" includes incorporated parishes (*R v. Fornett St Mary (Inhabitants)* (1849), 12 Q B 160, *Machynlleth v. Pool* (1869), L R 4 Q B 592 *Bristol Incorporation of the Poor (Guardians) v. Barton Regis Union Guardians* (1891), 66 L T 190), and a union (*R v. Bolton le Sands (Inhabitants)* (1865), 13 L T 523)

(*e*) Poor Relief Act, 1662 (14 Car 2 c 12), s 1, as altered by the Poor Removal Act, 1795 (35 Geo 3, c 101), s 1, and see *R v. Amphill (Inhabitants)* (1824), 2 B & C 847, *per* BAILEY J., at p 853.

(*f*) As to the expulsion of undesirable aliens, see title ALIENS: Vol I, p 323

(*g*) See p 591, *post*.

for his maintenance (*h*) For the purposes of chargeability, relief given to or on account of a wife, or to or on account of any child or children under the age of sixteen years, not being blind or deaf and dumb, is deemed to be given to the husband or the father, as the case may be (*i*) Relief given to an illegitimate child under the age of sixteen years is deemed to be given to the mother (*k*) Relief given to a child over sixteen years of age, whether legitimate or illegitimate, and even though living with the parent, is not relief to the parent (*l*)

SECT. 1
In General.

1250 A person convicted of felony, or who is determined by justices to be a person of evil fame or a reputed thief, and is not able to give a satisfactory account of himself, or of his way of living, is considered to be actually chargeable to the parish in which he resides, though not in fact in receipt of relief, and may be removed to the parish of his last legal settlement (*m*), and the same applies to a person convicted under the Vagrancy Act, 1824 (*n*), as an idle and disorderly person (*o*) or as a rogue and vagabond (*p*)

Felons and
vagrants.

1251 Boards of guardians may consent, under their common seal, to receive a pauper without an order of removal, and in such case the guardians seeking to remove the pauper may do so without an order (*q*)

Removal
without order

SECT. 2 —Immobility

1252 A man cannot be removed from a parish in which he has an estate (*r*), nor can his wife (*s*) Visitors, casuals, and wayfarers (*t*) who become chargeable cannot be removed, unless it be shown that they came to the parish with an intention of residing there (*a*) Temporary sickness, even in the case of a resident, is not

When the
status
attaches.

(*h*) *R v Amptill (Inhabitants)* (1824), 2 B & C 847, *R v Bedingham (Inhabitants)* (1844), 5 Q B 653

(*i*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 56, and see, further, p 574, *ante*

(*k*) *Ibid*, s 71

(*l*) *R v St Mary, Islington* (1862), 3 B & S 46

(*m*) Poor Removal Act, 1795 (35 Geo 3, c 101), s 1

(*n*) 5 Geo 4, c 83

(*o*) See p 607, *post*

(*p*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 20, see p 610, *post* As to the chargeability of released prisoners under the Released Persons (Poor Law Relief) Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 14), see p 569, *ante* As to a certificate of chargeability, and its admission in evidence, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 69, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 110), s 11 As to the chargeability of pauper lunatics, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 489 *et seq*

(*q*) Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 79), s 6

(*r*) *R v Mallock (Inhabitants)* (1834), 1 Ad & El 124, and see p 582, *ante*

(*s*) *R v Aythrop Rooding (Inhabitants)* (1756), Burr S C 412, *R v Leeds (Inhabitants)* (1764), Burr S C 524

(*t*) See p 567, *ante*

(*a*) See Poor Relief Act, 1662 (14 Car 2, c 12), s 1, *R v St James, Bury St Edmunds (Inhabitants)* (1808), 10 East, 25, *R v St Lawrence, Ludlow (Inhabitants)* (1821), 4 B & Ald 660, *Tomlinson v Bentall* (1826), 5 B & C 738, *R v Rotherham (Inhabitants)* (1842), 3 Q B 776. An intention to reside temporarily is sufficient to found a removal order (*R v Woolpit (Inhabitants)* (1835), 4 Ad & El 205)

SECT 2
Irre-
movability.

Residence for
one year

a ground of removal (*b*). But if a visitor remains chargeable after he is so restored as to be able to leave the parish if he wished, he becomes removable (*c*). Exemption from liability to be removed does not confer any settlement (*d*).

1253. No person can be removed, nor can a warrant be granted for removal of a person, from any parish or from any part of a union (*e*), in which such person has resided for one year next before the application for the warrant (*f*). For poor law purposes "resided" means slept in the place, or having a sleeping place therein as an inhabitant (*g*), and not as mere visitor (*h*). The one year's residence must be continuous, if there is a break of residence the irremovability ceases, and the period of residence must start afresh (*i*). A temporary absence, with an intention to return, will not necessarily break the residence, but leaving for an indefinite time will generally constitute a break (*k*), though not if caused by the fraud or improper action of the

(*b*) Poor Removal Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict c 66), s 4, which provides that a warrant cannot be granted for the removal of a person who has become chargeable in respect of relief made necessary by sickness or accident, unless the justices granting the warrant state therein that they are satisfied that the sickness or accident will produce permanent disability (see *R v Prior's Hardwick (Inhabitants)* (1849), 12 Q B 168, *R v Halifax (Inhabitants)* (1848), 12 Q B 111). As to what is included in the expressions "sickness," "accident," and "permanent disability," see *R v St George, Middleser (Inhabitants)* (1862), 2 B & S 317, *R v Whittlesey Overseers* (1863), 3 B & S 432, *R v Huddersfield (Inhabitants)* (1857), 7 E & B 794, *R v Bucknell (Inhabitants)* (1854), 3 F & B 587.

(*c*) *R v Cuckfield (Inhabitants)* (1855), 5 L & B 523.

(*d*) Poor Removal Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict c 66), s 5. But see, as to the acquirement of a settlement by residence, Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61) s 34, and p 579, *ante*.

(*e*) The word "parish" includes any parish, city, borough, town, township, liberty, precinct, vill, village, hamlet, tithing, chapelry, or any other place, or division or district of a place, maintaining its own poor, whether parochial or extra parochial, and the word "union" includes any number of parishes incorporated for the relief and maintenance of the poor under any local Act (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 109).

(*f*) Poor Removal Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict c 66), s 1, as altered by the Poor Removal Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 55), s 1, and the Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 79), s 8. As to the application of this provision to a married woman, see *Tewkesbury Union v Birmingham Union*, [1904] 2 K B 395.

(*g*) See *Blackwell v England* (1857), 8 E & B 541, *R v St Leonard, Shoreditch* (1865), L R 1 Q B 21. As to the constructive residence of a sailor by reason of his wife's residence, see *West Ham Union v Cardiff Union*, [1895] 1 Q B 766, and in case of a doctor residing in an asylum, see *R v Norwood* (1867), L R 2 Q B 457, and see p 586, *ante*.

(*h*) See *R v Stepney Union Guardians* (1885), 52 L T 959.

(*i*) *R v St Anne, Blackfriars (Inhabitants)* (1853), 2 E & B 441, *R v St Mary Arokes, Exeter (Inhabitants)* (1862), 1 B & S 890.

(*k*) See *R v Tacolneston (Inhabitants)* (1849), 12 Q B 157 (seeking employment), *R v Llanelly (Inhabitants)* (1851), 17 Q B 40, *R v Slapton (Inhabitants)* (1853), 1 E & B 766 (absence under contract), *R v Brightelmston (Directors of the Poor)* (1855), 4 E. & B. 236 (intention to return on completion of service), *Wellington Overseers v Whitechurch Overseers* (1863), 4 B & S 100 (remote return), *R v Stourbridge Union Guardians* (1865), 29 J P. 502 (conditional return); *R v Westrop* (1866), L R 1 Q B 227 (domestic servant); *R v Whitby* (1870), R 5 Q. B. 325 (leaving must be voluntary); *R v St Ives* (1872),

parish authorities (l) The making of a removal order against the pauper does not constitute a break of residence, unless he is actually removed under the order (m) If a person becomes chargeable in any parish comprised in a union, not being the parish of his settlement, the period of residence in the settlement parish, if in the same union, must not be excluded in computing the time of residence required to render him exempt from removal (n)

SECT. 2.
REMOVAL.
—

1254 In computing the period of one year there must be excluded the time during which the person has been in prison (o), or serving as a soldier, marine or sailor (p), or residing as an in-pensioner in Greenwich or Chelsea Hospitals; or confined in a lunatic asylum or house duly licensed or hospital registered for the reception of lunatics (q), or residing (r) as a patient in a hospital (s); or during which such person has received relief from any parish (t), or has been

How the
year is
computed.

L R 7 Q B 467 (pauper leaving union), *Knarenborough Union v Pateley Bridge Union* (1871), 25 L T 590 (right to return), *Guildford Union v St Olave's Union* (1872), 25 L T 803 (pauper), *R v Worcester Union* (1874), L R 9 Q B 340 (pauper obtaining work), *Newark Union v Glanford Brigg* (1876), 2 Q B D 522 (unintentional removal), *Manchester Overseers v Ormskirk Overseers* (1886), 16 Q B D 723, *Totnes Union v Cardiff Union* (1886), 51 J P 133, *Hendon Union v Hampstead Guardians* (1893), 62 L J (M C) 170 (child removing with parent), *Cambridge Union v Edmonton Union*, [1900] 2 Q B 111, *Tendring Union v Ipswich Union* (1903), 67 J P 304, *Plymouth Incorporation v Poplar Guardians* (1908), 72 J P 72

(l) *R v St Marylebone (Inhabitants)* (1851), 16 Q B 299 *West Ham Union Guardians v Poplar Union Guardians* (1902), 66 J P 504

(m) See *R v Hendon (Inhabitants)* (1863), 8 L T 276, and compare *R v Halifax (Inhabitants)* (1848), 12 Q B 111, *R v Seend (Inhabitants)* (1848), 12 Q B 133

(n) Poor Removal Act, 1864 (27 & 28 Vict c 105), s 1. The effect of this section, combined with the Poor Removal Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 55), s 1, is that a pauper cannot be removed from his parish of residence to his parish of settlement, if both are within the same union, so long as he resides for a sufficient time in the union, though in different parishes (*R v Bolton le Sands (Inhabitants)* (1866), 13 L T 52).

(o) Or detained in or absent under licence from a State inebriate reformatory or a certified inebriate reformatory (Inebriates Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict c 60), s 22) As to prisoners, see *R v Pott Shrigley (Inhabitants)* (1848), 12 Q B 143, *R v Holbeck Overseers* (1851), 16 Q B 404, *Hartfield v Rotherfield* (1852), 17 Q B 746, *R v Pottorhanworth (Inhabitants)* (1858), 1 E & E 262

(p) See *Raston Overseers v St Mary, Marlborough, Overseers* (1867), L R 2 Q B 128, *Horton Overseers v Leeds Overseers* (1855), 5 E & B 595 (militiaman)

(q) See generally title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 474 *et seq*

(r) See *St Olave's Union v Canterbury Union*, [1897] 1 Q B 682, C A; *Dorchester Union Guardians v Weymouth Union Guardians* (1885), 16 Q B D 31.

(s) A home for epileptics has been held to be a hospital (*Ormskirk Union v Chorlton Union*, [1903] 2 K B 498, C A), also, by quarter sessions, a seaside home (*Christchurch Union Guardians v St Mary, Islington, Guardians* (1906), 70 J P 247)

(t) As relief to wife or to children under sixteen in relief to the husband or parent (see pp 574, 590, 591, *ante*), the period during which such relief has been given must be excluded in calculating the period of residence (*Ipswich Union Guardians v West Ham Union Guardians* (1887),

SECT 2
Irre-
movability.

wholly or in part maintained by any rate or subscription raised in a parish in which such person does not reside, not being a *bona fide* charitable gift^(u), the time during which a child is detained in a certified school^(a), and the time during which a person is detained in a retreat under the Habitual Drunkards Act, 1879^(b).

Lunatics

1255 The removal of a lunatic pauper to an asylum, licensed house, or registered hospital, or of a pauper, otherwise than under a removal order, from his place of abode to the workhouse of the union, is not an interruption of his residence, but the time spent in the asylum, licensed house, hospital, or workhouse, and the time during which the person is relieved at the charge of the common fund of the union, must be wholly excluded from the computation of the time of residence which will exempt a poor person from being removed^(c).

Removal of
wife and
children

1256 When a person has a wife or children^(d) who have no other settlement than his or her own, such wife and children are removable when he or she is removable, and are not removable when he or she is not removable^(e), either by reason of having acquired a settlement or a status of irremovability^(f). As a general rule, a removal order cannot operate to part husband and wife who are living together, unless both consent^(g).

Widows

1257 A widow cannot be removed from the parish in which she resided with her husband^(h) at the time of his death, for twelve

20 Q B D 407) But relief to a parent on account of a child may also be considered as relief to the child (*R v Sharrington cum Gresley Overseers* (1851), 15 J P 499)

(u) Poor Removal Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict c 66), s 1. The effect of the provision is that the specified periods are to be excluded both in computing whether the person has resided for one year altogether in the parish, and also whether he has resided there for one year before the application for the removal order (*Hartfield v Rotherfield* (1852), 17 Q B 746, *R v St Andrew, Holborn* (1852), 17 Q B 746, 753, and see *West Ham Union v Poplar Union* (1896), 70 J P 255). As to maintenance by rate or subscription, see *Fulham Guardians v Thanet Guardians* (1881), 7 Q B D 539, C A

(a) Children Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 67), s 89. See title EDUCATION, Vol XII, pp 71 *et seq*

(b) 42 & 43 Vict c 19, s 32. See titles CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 417, INTOXICATING LIQUORS, Vol XVIII, pp 163, 170

(c) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 103), s 4, and see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 495 *et seq*

(d) "Children" includes illegitimate children (*Brainfree Union v Rochford Union* (1911), 106 L T 60)

(e) Poor Removal Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 111), s 1

(f) See *R v St Ebbe's (Inhabitants)* (1848), 12 Q B 137, *R v All Saints, Derby (Inhabitants)* (1849), 14 Q B 207, *Much Hoole Overseers v Preston Overseers* (1851), 17 Q B 548, *R v East Stonehouse (Inhabitants)* (1854), 3 E. & B 596

(g) See *R v St Mary, Beverley (Inhabitants)* (1830), 1 B & Ad 201, *R v Stogumber (Inhabitants)* (1839), 9 Ad & El 622, *R v Leeds (Inhabitants)* (1844), 5 Q B 916. As to the right of consortium, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 318. But the consent of a lunatic does not appear to be necessary: see *R v Preston Guardians* (1883), 11 Q B D 113.

(h) As to residence together, see *R v East Stonehouse (Inhabitants)* (1855), 4 E & B 501, *R v St Marylebone (Inhabitants)* (1851), 10 Q B 299.

calendar months next after his death, if she so long continue a widow (i)

SECT. 2

Irremovability.

1258 A woman deserted by her husband who, after his desertion, resides for one year in such a manner as would, if she were a widow, render her exempt from removal, may not be removed from the parish where she is resident, unless her husband returns to cohabit with her (j)

Deserted wives

1259. A child under the age of sixteen years, whether legitimate or illegitimate, who resides with his or her father or mother, step-father or step-mother (l), or reputed father, cannot be removed from the parish of such residence in any case where the parent or other such person cannot lawfully be removed (l); a child, however, is removable when its parent is removable (m)

Children under sixteen

1260 If a child under the age of sixteen years residing with its surviving parent is left an orphan, and such parent has at the time of death acquired an exemption from removal by reason of a continued residence, the orphan, if not otherwise removable, is exempt from removal in the manner, and to the extent, as if it had then acquired for itself an exemption by residence (n)

Orphans

1261 A child under the age of seven years which is residing with its mother cannot be removed from her, even with the mother's consent (o). This rule applies whether the child is legitimate or illegitimate (p). But if continuance with the mother is rendered impossible by the latter being sent to prison or to a reformatory (q), or will be dangerous to the child, as where the mother becomes insane (r), a child under seven may be removed to its place of settlement without the mother

Young children

(i) Poor Removal Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict. c. 66) s. 2

(j) Poor Removal Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 55), s. 3, as altered by the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (29 & 30 Vict. c. 113), s. 17. For what amounts to desertion, see *R v St Mary, Islington* (1870), L. R. 5 Q. B. 445, *R v Maidstone Union* (1879), 5 Q. B. D. 31, *R v Cookham Union* (1882), 9 Q. B. D. 522, *Southwark Union v City of London Union*, [1906] 2 K. B. 112, *C. A.*, *Bristol Union Guardians v Puddington Guardians* (1906), 70 J. P. 447, *Lastbourne Guardians v Croydon Union*, [1910] 2 K. B. 16. A deserted wife may acquire a settlement by reason of her status of irremovability (*Bethnal Green Guardians v Puddington Guardians*, [1912] 2 K. B. 335, and see note (o), p. 579, ante)

(k) Step-children are members of a man's family, and he is bound to maintain them: see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 57, and p. 573, ante

(l) Poor Removal Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict. c. 66), s. 3. See *Kingston-upon-Hull Incorporation for the Poor v Hackney Union*, [1911] 1 K. B. 748, *C. A.*, *Fulham Parish v Woolwich Union*, [1907] A. C. 255, *Maidstone Union v Wandsworth Union* (1906), 70 J. P. 403, *West Ham Union v Holbeach Union*, [1905] A. C. 450

(m) Poor Removal Act, 1846 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 111), s. 1, see p. 594, ante.

(n) Poor Removal Act 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 55), s. 2. For exemption by residence, see p. 592, ante

(o) *R v Birmingham (Inhabitants)* (1843), 5 Q. B. 210

(p) *Cripplegate v. St Saviour* (1710), 2 Bott's Poor Laws by Const. 5th ed., 13

(q) *R v St Clement Dunes (Inhabitants)* (1862), 3 B. & S. 143, and see *R v Combs (Inhabitants)* (1856), 5 E. & B. 892

(r) *R v Barnet Union Guardians* (1888) 58 L. T. 917.

SECT. 2.

Irremovability.

Children over sixteen

Effect of alteration of union

1262. As a general rule, a child reaches the age of emancipation at sixteen, and may then acquire a status of irremovability, or be removed, without reference to the status of its parent(s)

1263. The alteration of a union by the addition or subtraction of a parish or part of a parish does not affect the status of irremovability acquired by any person in the added or separated parish (t).

SECT. 3 — Removal Orders.

SUB-SECT. 1 — The Order

Obtained by relieving guardians

1264 For the purposes of relief, settlement, and removal the workhouse of any union or parish is considered as being situated in the parish to which the poor person concerned is or has been chargeable (a), and since all relief is now charged upon the common fund of the union (b), removal orders are obtained by the guardians of the union or parish to which the pauper is chargeable, and are addressed to the guardians of the union in which the pauper was last settled (c)

By whom orders are made

1265 A removal order may be made by two justices acting together (d), by a metropolitan police magistrate (e), and by a stipendiary magistrate (f), after an examination of the pauper, and of such other witnesses as may be necessary to prove the pauper's settlement (g). If, however, a pauper is by age, illness, or infirmity, unable to be brought up to petty sessions to be examined as to his settlement, the examination may be made by a single justice, who may report to petty sessions, and such report may be acted upon as if the pauper had appeared before two justices (h)

(s) See p 589, *ante*. See, however, *Mitford and Launditch Union Guardians v Wayland Union Guardians* (1890), 25 Q B D 164, C A, where Lord ESHER, M R., at p 170, said that the object of the Poor Removal Act, 1848 (9 & 10 Vict c 66), s 1, was to prevent the separation of families so long as the family continued to be one family living together, whether the children were under or over sixteen

(t) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 122), s 34, see p 577 *ante*

(a) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 56

(b) See p 549, *ante*

(c) See Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 79), ss 1—3, and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 106), s 24. As to the power of guardians of a parish to apply for a removal order with the consent of the Local Government Board, see *Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876* (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 25. In applying for removal from metropolitan parishes, regard must be had to any private Act relating to the particular parish. Guardians may obtain production of parish books etc for removal purposes, see Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 79), s 5

(d) Poor Relief Act, 1862 (14 Car 2, c 12), s 1, Poor Removal Act, 1795 (35 Geo 3, c 101), s 1

(e) Metropolitan Police Courts Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c 71), s 14.

(f) Stipendiary Magistrates Act, 1858 (21 & 22 Vict c 73), s 1.

(g) It is usual to examine the pauper, but it is not absolutely necessary (*R. v. Borden (Inhabitants)* (1807), 9 East, 101). As to process for bringing up a pauper or witnesses for examination, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 70

(h) Poor (Settlement and Removal) Act, 1809 (49 Geo 3, c. 124), s. 4.

1266 If a prisoner, or a person in custody under a warrant of commitment, has a wife or child, a justice may examine such prisoner or person upon oath touching the place of his or her last legal settlement. The examination must be taken down in writing, and be signed by the justice, and is then receivable in evidence as to such settlement before any justices, for the purpose of any order of removal, but for so long only as the person so examined continues a prisoner (*i*)

Sect. 3
**Removal
Orders.**
—
Examination
of prisoners.

1267 If a person is apprehended under circumstances that denote a derangement of mind and a purpose of committing some indictable crime, he may be ordered by justices to be conveyed to the county lunatic asylum, or to some hospital or place for the reception of insane persons, and such justices may inquire into the place of the last legal settlement of such person, and make an order upon the union of settlement to pay for his maintenance in the asylum or other place (*h*)

Inquiry in
case of
criminal
lunatic.

1268 The examination must show that the pauper is then residing in the applicants' union and is actually chargeable thereto (*l*), and that he is settled in a parish in the union to which he is to be removed (*m*)

What must
be proved

1269 The depositions on which an order for removal is made must be retained by the clerk to the justices, who must furnish a copy to the guardians of the parish to which removal is ordered, on application and payment of the prescribed fee of 2*d* a folio (*n*)

Depositions.

1270 If satisfied of the truth of the applicants' statements, the justices or magistrate may make an order for the removal of the pauper (*o*). The order must show that the justices or magistrate had jurisdiction (*p*), and must be under the hand and seal of the several justices or the magistrate making it (*q*)

The removal
order.

(*i*) Poor Relief Act, 1819 (59 Geo 3, c 12), s 28

(*h*) Criminal Lunatics Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 14), s 2 For the removal of pauper lunatics in general, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol XIX, pp 495 *et seq*

(*l*) *R v St Paul, Covent Garden (Inhabitants)* (1847), 7 Q B 533, *R v Black Callerton (Inhabitants)* (1839), 10 Ad & El 679

(*m*) The settlement must be fully proved, see *R v West Riding of Yorkshire Justices* (1842), 2 Q B 505 For form of examination, see Archbold, Poor Law, 15th ed, p 656

(*n*) Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 31), s 3

(*o*) Mandamus does not lie to compel justices to make an order (*R v Rogers* (1843), 12 L J (M C) 50)

(*p*) See *R v Chilverscote (Inhabitants)* (1799), 8 Term Rep 178, *R v Casterton (Inhabitants)* (1844), 6 Q B 507, *R v St Giles in the Fields (Inhabitants)* (1846), 7 Q B 529, *R v Stockton (Inhabitants)* (1845), 7 Q B 520, *R v Hammersmith (Inhabitants)* (1848), 11 Q B 391, *R v Halifax (Inhabitants)* (1848), 12 Q B 111 Where a union extends into several distinct jurisdictions, every matter, act, charge, or complaint by which the guardians thereof are affected, or in which they have any interest, is deemed, for the purpose of jurisdiction, to arise or exist equally throughout the union (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c 106), s 27)

(*q*) An impressed seal etc is sufficient (*R v St Paul, Covent Garden*

SECT 9
Removal
Orders.

Abandoning
order

1271 Guardians who have obtained an order for removal may abandon it, whether an appeal is pending or not, by notice in writing to the guardians of the parish to which removal is ordered. On abandonment the order becomes entirely null and void, and the guardians obtaining it must pay to the other side any costs properly incurred by the latter by reason of the order, such costs to be taxed, out of court if necessary, by the officer of the court before whom an appeal might have been brought (i)

Suspending
order

1272 Justices may suspend the execution of a removal order in the case of a sick or infirm person until satisfied that it can be executed safely, but the continuance in the place of such person owing to the suspension will not count towards the acquirement of a settlement therein, and the charges incurred during the period of suspension will be payable by the union to which removal is ordered (s). The justice or justices who subsequently direct the enforcement of a suspended removal order need not be the suspending justice or justices (t)

Where the execution of a removal order is suspended during the dangerous illness or other infirmity of a person directed to be removed, it is also suspended for the same period with respect to every other person named therein who was actually of the household or family of such sick or infirm person at the time of the making of the order of removal (a)

The order for suspension must be indorsed on the order for removal, and a copy of the indorsed order, together with a notice of chargeability and a statement of the grounds of removal, must

(*Inhabitants*) (1845), 7 Q. B. 232. For forms of order of removal see Poor Removal Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict. c. 117), Sched. C, Poor Removal Act, 1863 (26 & 27 Vict. c. 89), Schedules, Archbold, Poor Law, 15th ed., p. 669, Davey, Poor Law Settlement and Removal, p. 156.

(r), Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 31), s. 8. The costs may be taxed out of sessions (*R. v. Westmoreland Justices* (1843), 12 L. J. (M. C.) 113). As to appeals, see p. 602 *post*. For form of notice of abandonment, see Archbold Poor Law, 15th ed., p. 672. Davey, Poor Law Settlement and Removal, p. 158.

(s) Poor Removal Act, 1795 (35 Geo. 3. c. 101), s. 2, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 106), s. 26. see p. 599, *post*. As to interim payments, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict. c. 105), s. 8. The guardians in whose favour a suspended order has been made may send a quarterly account to the guardians of the union upon which it was made of the costs incurred in the maintenance of the pauper and his family, and in default of payment may recover the amount in the county court (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 106), s. 26). An order for costs of maintenance under a suspended order cannot be made *ex parte* (*R. v. Wilkinson*, [1891] 1 Q. B. 722). As to acquiring status of unremovability during suspension, see *R. v. St. John's, Hackney (Inhabitants)* (1835) 2 Ad. & Ell. 548, *R. v. Chagford (Inhabitants)* (1821), 4 B. & Ald. 235.

(t) Poor (Settlement and Removal) Act, 1809 (49 Geo. 3. c. 124), s. 1. For form of permission to remove, see Archbold, Poor Law, 15th ed., p. 677.

(a) Poor (Settlement and Removal) Act, 1809 (49 Geo. 3. c. 124), s. 3. The law as to sending and service of copies of removal orders (see p. 599, *post*) applies to suspended orders (Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 31), s. 16).

be sent to the guardians of the other union, as in ordinary cases, within ten days (b).

The time for appealing against a suspended order is computed from the service of the order, and not from the time of making the removal under the order (c)

SECT 3
Removal
Orders.

1273 A poor person cannot be removed under a removal order until twenty-one days after a notice in writing of his chargeability, accompanied by a copy of the order of removal, and by a statement in writing, signed by three guardians, of the grounds of removal, has been sent by post or otherwise by the removing union to the union to which removal is directed. The guardians of the latter union may, however, agree to receive the pauper under the order before the expiration of the twenty-one days. If within the twenty-one days notice of appeal against the removal order is given, the removal cannot be made until after the time for prosecuting the appeal has expired, or until after the final determination of such appeal (d). If depositions have been applied for, the poor person cannot be removed under the order until the expiration of the further period of fourteen days allowed for notice of appeal (e).

Notice of
chargeability.

1274 The union to which a poor person whose settlement was in question is admitted or finally adjudged to belong is chargeable with and liable to pay the cost and expense of the relief and maintenance of such poor person but no relief given under a suspended order (f) is recoverable unless notice of that order has been given within ten days of the making thereof to the union to which it is directed (g).

Cost of
maintenance

1275 Notices and other documents required to be given by guardians in connection with removal orders will be sufficiently authenticated if signed by their clerk in their name, and will be duly served if handed to the clerk of the other union, or left at his office, or sent by post to him at his office (h).

Authentica-
tion and
service of
notices.

(b) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), ss. 79, 84, Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 31), s. 10, see the text, *infra*. For form of suspension order, see Archbold, Poor Law, 15th ed., p. 674.

(c) Poor (Settlement and Removal) Act, 1839 (49 Geo. 3, c. 124), s. 2, see *R v Chedgrave (Inhabitants)* (1850), 12 Q. B. 206. *R v Alnwick (Inhabitants)* (1821), 5 B. & Ald. 184. As to appeals generally, see p. 602, *post*.

(d) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 79, as amended by Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 31), ss. 1, 2, and see *ibid.*, s. 9.

(e) Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 31), s. 9. For form of notice of chargeability and grounds of removal, see Archbold, Poor Law, 15th ed., p. 685.

(f) See p. 598, *ante*.

(g) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. 4, c. 76), s. 84. For the recovery of expenses in the case of a pauper lunatic, see title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND, Vol. XIX, pp. 488 *et seq.*, and *R v Hatherton (Lord)*, *Ex parte Ormskirk Union*, [1912] 1 K. B. 616, C. A.

(h) Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict. c. 79), s. 4, and see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict. c. 105), s. 10.

SECT 8

Removal
OrdersTo whom
pauper to be
deliveredSUB-SECT 2.—*The Removal.*(1) *In England*

1276. A pauper who has been ordered to be removed may be delivered to the master or to any officer of the workhouse of the union or parish in which his settlement has been adjudicated (*i*). Persons may be employed to conduct the pauper to his destination (*h*), and the Local Government Board may by order prescribe the extent to which guardians may pay the expenses of removing paupers from one place to another in England and charge the expenses to the common fund of the union, or other like fund under their control (*l*)

Deserting
pauper

1277 A person employed to execute a removal warrant who wilfully deserts any person therein mentioned, before he or she has been conveyed to the place of destination, is guilty of a misdemeanour and punishable with a fine not exceeding £10, and in default of payment imprisonment for not exceeding three months (*m*)

Refusal to
receive
pauper

1278 A workhouse master who refuses to receive the person named in a warrant of removal is subject to a penalty of £10 for each case of refusal. In England, the penalty may be recovered by the person applying for the warrant, by action in any county court or other court of competent jurisdiction in the place where the master is resident at the time the action is brought (*n*). A mandamus does not lie to compel guardians or officers to receive a removed pauper (*o*)

Unlawful
removal

1279 An officer of a parish or union (*p*) who unlawfully removes a poor person, or procures it to be done, or improperly induces a poor person to depart from the parish, in consequence whereof such poor person becomes chargeable to some other parish, may, on summary conviction (*q*), be fined any sum not less than 40s and not exceeding £5 (*r*)

(*i*) Poor Removal Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict c. 66), s. 7, Union Chargeability Act, 1866 (28 & 29 Vict c. 79), s. 2. As to demand for costs of maintenance, see Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict c. 105), s. 13

(*h*) See Poor Relief Act, 1814 (54 Geo. 3, c. 170), s. 10.

(*l*) Paupers Conveyance (Expenses) Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict c. 48), s. 1, see Paupers' Conveyance (Expenses) Order, 7th February, 1898 (Stat. R & O Rev., Vol. X, Poor, England, p. 231), which is expressly preserved by the Relief Regulation Order, 1911

(*m*) Poor Removal Act, 1863 (26 & 27 Vict. c. 80), s. 4

(*n*) Poor Removal Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict c. 113), s. 5. See also Poor Relief Act, 1891 (3 Will. & Mar c. 11), s. 9, which imposed a penalty of £5 upon churchwardens or overseers refusing to receive a removed pauper

(*o*) *Ex parte Downton Overseers* (1858), 8 E. & B. 856

(*p*) Including an overseer (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict. c. 105), s. 11)

(*q*) For venue, see *ibid*

(*r*) Poor Law Removal Act, 1846 (9 & 10 Vict c. 66), s. 6. The penalty is applied in aid of the poor rate of the parish to which the poor person became chargeable in consequence of the improper action of the officer (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict c. 105), s. 11).

1280. A removed pauper who returns and becomes chargeable to the union from which he was removed within the period of twelve months from such removal, without the consent of the guardians who procured his removal, may be dealt with as an idle and disorderly person (*s*).

**Secr. 3
Removal
Orders.**

**Return of
pauper after
removal**

(*u*) *Out of England.*

1281. If any person born in Scotland or Ireland, or in the Isle of Man, Scilly Isles, Jersey, or Guernsey (*t*), who has not acquired a settlement in England, becomes chargeable in England, by reason of relief given to himself or herself, or to his wife, or to any legitimate or bastard child, such person, his wife, and any child so chargeable, may be removed to the country or island of birth by an order of justices (*v*). The removal will be at the expense of the union or parish obtaining the order (*a*), though in certain cases recoupment may be had from the county rate or borough fund (*b*).

**When
removal may
be ordered.**

A person who has resided continuously for five years in England cannot be removed to Ireland (*c*), and no person can be held to have acquired a settlement in any parish in Scotland by residence therein for less than three years (*d*).

1282 A guardian, relieving officer, or overseer may take and convey before a court of petty sessions, without summons or warrant, any poor person who has become chargeable, and who he has reason to believe is liable to be removed from England, and the court may proceed to determine the matter (*e*).

**How order
obtained**

1283 A warrant for removal from England to Ireland or Scotland can only be granted by a court of petty sessions, stipendiary or metropolitan police magistrate sitting in court (*f*), and the justices or magistrate must be satisfied by personal inspection or inquiry that every person who is proposed to be removed by the warrant is in such a state of health as not to be liable to suffer bodily or mental injury by the removal. Application for the warrant must be made by the relieving officer or other officer of the guardians of the union or parish where the person has become chargeable, and the warrant must contain the name and reputed age of every person to

**Removal to
Ireland or
Scotland**

(*s*) Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 70), s 7. and see p 607, *post*

(*t*) As to the dependency of the smaller Channel Islands upon Jersey or Guernsey, see title DEPENDENCIES AND COLONIES, Vol X, p 576

(*u*) Poor Removal Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 117), s 2. As to the right of an Irish board of guardians to object to a removal order, see Poor Removal Act, 1863 (26 & 27 Vict c 89), s 7. As to the removal to England of English-born persons becoming chargeable in Scotland, see Poor Law (Scotland) Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 83), and Poor Law (Scotland) Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict c 21)

(*a*) Poor Removal Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 117), s. 2

(*b*) See *ibid*, s. 5

(*c*) Poor Removal Act, 1900 (63 & 64 Vict c 23), s. 1.

(*d*) See Poor Law (Scotland) Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict c 21), s. 1

(*e*) Poor Removal Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 33), s. 1. The guardian etc so acting has all the powers of a constable (*ibid*, s 3)

(*f*) Poor Removal Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict c 113), s 1, Poor Removal (No 2) Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 76), s 1

SECT 3
Removal
Orders.

be removed thereunder, the name of the place in Scotland or Ireland where the court finds such person to have been born or to have last resided for the space of five years in the case of removal to Scotland or for three years in the case of removal to Ireland, and a statement as to the examination as to the state of health. The warrant must be addressed to the party applying for it, and to the parochial board, or poor inspector, or the guardians, as the case may be, of the union or parish to which removal is directed, and a copy of the warrant must be given, by and at the cost of the person applying for it, to the person or the head of the family about to be removed thereunder (g). A copy must be sent by post by the guardians obtaining the warrant to the poor inspector, or the clerk of the guardians of the union to which removal is ordered, as the case may be, and also a copy of the depositions, if applied for within three months from the date of the warrant (h).

Removal by
consent

1284 In the case of a native of Ireland who has been absent from that country for less than a year, he may consent and may then be removed to some place other than that as above described, and in any case where the place of birth or continued residence cannot be ascertained, removal may be ordered to the most convenient port in Ireland or port or parish in Scotland (i).

Women and
children

1285 A woman or a child under fourteen must not be removed as a deck passenger from England to Scotland or Ireland between 1st October and 31st March (k).

SUBSECT 3 Appeals

(1) To Quarter Sessions

Who may
appeal

1286 A person or persons aggrieved by the making of a removal order or order of settlement may appeal to the next practicable general quarter sessions for the county, riding, division, city, or town from which the person was removed or in which he is adjudged to be settled (l). By person aggrieved is meant either the

(g) Poor Removal (No 2) Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 76), ss 1, 2, Poor Removal Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict c 113), ss 1, 2.

(h) Poor Removal (No 2) Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 76), s 3, Poor Removal Act 1862 (25 & 26 Vict c 113), s 3.

(i) Poor Removal (No 2) Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 76), s 2, Poor Removal Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict c 113), s 2.

(k) Poor Removal (No 2) Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 76), s 6, Poor Removal Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict c 113) s 7. Penalty not exceeding £5 on summary conviction. The offence is deemed to have been committed at the port of landing (Poor Removal Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 76), s 5).

(l) Poor Relief Act, 1862 (14 Car 2 c 12) s 2. Poor Relief Act, 1691 (3 Will & Mar c 11), s 8. stat (1696) 8 & 9 Will 3 c 30, s 6, Poor Law Procedure Act 1818 (11 & 12 Vict c 31), s 9. Appeals from orders of removal are not governed by the procedure laid down by the Summary Jurisdiction Acts (Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 43), s 35, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 611, and see *R v Somersetshire Justices* (1889), 22 Q B D 625). In a place not having quarter sessions, but only general sessions, the appeal lies to the general sessions (*R v Carmanthen Justices* (1821), 4 B & Ald 291), and where there are both quarter and general sessions, as in London and Middlesex, the appeal is to the quarter sessions (*R v Middlesex Justices* (1843), 4 Q B 807). In quarter sessions boroughs the recorder has

pauper (*m*) or the guardians of the union or parish to which removal has been ordered (*n*). An individual parishioner or ratepayer cannot appeal (*o*).

SECT 3
Removal
Orders.

1287 Where a union extends into several distinct jurisdictions, the appeal is governed by the jurisdiction of the justices who made the order (*p*).

Union in
several
jurisdictions.

1288 The appeal must be to the next practicable quarter or general sessions after service of the order for removal, which means the next sessions the date of which allows for due observance of the requirements as to notice of appeal laid down by statute or by the practice of the particular sessions to which the appeal is to be taken (*q*).

Time for
appeal.

1289 Notice of appeal must be given within twenty-one days after service of the notice of chargeability and of the statement of the grounds of removal (*r*), unless within such period of twenty-one days a copy of the depositions has been applied for, when a further period of fourteen days after the sending of the copy is allowed (*s*). The length of the notice of appeal varies from six to twenty-eight days according to the practice of the sessions to which the appeal is taken (*t*). But objection on the ground of a short notice may be waived (*a*).

Notice of
appeal

1290 If notice of appeal is given, the guardians of the appellant union, then solicitor, and authorised agents, must be given free access, at proper times, to the poor person concerned, for the purpose of examining him as to his settlement, and may be permitted to remove him, at their expense for the purpose of examination and for such time as may be necessary (*b*).

Access to
pauper

1291 The appellants must, either with the notice of appeal, or fourteen days at least before the first day of the sessions at which

Statement of
grounds of
appeal

exclusive jurisdiction to hear appeals from removal orders made by the borough justices (Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (4 & 46 Vict c 60), s 165, *R v Suffolk Justices* (1841), 2 Q B 85, *R v St Edmund's, Salisbury (Inhabitants)* (1841), 2 Q B 72).

(*m*) *R v Hartfield (Inhabitants)* (1692), Carth 222

(*n*) Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 79), s 3, Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict c 61), s 25

(*o*) *R v Colbeck* (1840), 12 Ad & Ll 161

(*p*) See Poor Law Amendment Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict c 106), s 27, *R v Staffordshire Justices* (1872), L R 7 Q B 288

(*q*) For cases as to what constitutes the next practicable sessions, see *R v Surrey Justices* (1813), 1 M & S 479, *R v Surrey Justices* (1845), 3 Dow & L 343, *R v Peterborough Justices* (1857), 7 E & B 643, *R v West Riding of Yorkshire Justices* (1858), E B & L 713, *R v Skircoat (Inhabitants)* (1859), 2 E & E 185, *R v Sussex Justices* (1865), 4 B & S 966, Ex Ch, *R v Derbyshire Justices* (1871), 35 J P 663

(*r*) See p 599, *ante*

(*s*) Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 31), s 9, see also Poor Relief Act, 1722 (9 Geo 1, c 7), s 8

(*t*) See *R v Sussex Justices*, *supra*, *R v Derby (Recorder)* (1850), 20 L J (M C) 44

(*a*) See *R v Wickenby (Inhabitants)* (1852), 16 J P 583, *R v Hertfordshire Justices* (1833), 4 B & Ad 561

(*b*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 80.

SECT. 2.
Removal
Orders.

the appeal is intended to be tried, send or deliver to the respondents a written statement of the grounds of the appeal. This is a condition precedent to the hearing of the appeal. At the hearing neither party can go into or give evidence of any other grounds of removal or of appeal than such as are set forth in the aforesaid order or statement (c). The statement may be sent by post (d). It may object that the procedure prescribed has not been followed, that the order of removal or notice of chargeability is bad, specifying the defect (e), and it should traverse any statement in the ground of removal that is not admitted (f), and set up any matters on which the appellants intend to rely (g).

A statement of frivolous or vexatious grounds of removal or of appeal may cause the offending party to be mulcted in costs (h).

Objections.

1292 Objections of defect in form of the statement of grounds of removal or of appeal must not be allowed unless the court is of opinion that the alleged ground is so imperfectly or incorrectly set forth as to be insufficient to enable the party receiving the same to inquire into the subject of such statement, and to prepare for trial, and even when the court considers that an objection ought to prevail it may amend the defect, upon such terms as to costs and postponement of trial as appears just and reasonable (i). Such amendment may extend to the addition of an entirely new ground of appeal, and the decision of the court thereon is final (h).

Abandonment of appeal

1293 An appeal may be abandoned in the same way as a removal order (l). On abandonment the respondents may apply to sessions for their costs (m).

(c) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4 c 76), s 81, Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 31), ss 1, 2

(d) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1831 (14 & 15 Vict c 105), s 10

(e), See *R v St Anne, Westminster (Inhabitants)* (1846), 7 Q B 241

(f) *R v Hockworthy (Inhabitants)* (1837), 7 Ad & El 492, *R v St John, Margate (Inhabitants)* (1841), 1 Q B 252, *R v Beddington (Inhabitants)* (1841), 5 Q B 653, *R v Latchford (Inhabitants)* (1844), 6 Q B 567, *R v Ellesmere (Inhabitants)* (1849), 12 Q B 19. If a removal order is made on the ground that the poor person was born in the parish to which removal is sought, the onus of proving that another settlement had been acquired is upon the objecting parish (*Heudington Union Guardians v Ipswich Union Guardians* (1890), 25 Q B D 143, (C A)). If the adjudicated settlement is not denied in the statement of grounds of appeal, the respondents need not prove it (*R v Hockworthy (Inhabitants)*, *supra*).

(g) See generally, as to grounds of appeal Archbold, Poor Law, 15th ed., pp 704—716. For form of notice and grounds of appeal, see *ibid*, p 717.

(h) Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 31), s 5

(i) *Ibid*, s 4. See also, as to amendment, Quarter Sessions Appeal Act, 1731 (5 Geo 2, c 19)

(l) *R v. Ruyton of the Eleven Towns (Inhabitants)* (1861), 1 B & S 534; *R v Llungenny (Inhabitants)* (1863), 4 B & S 311; *Cheltenham Union Guardians v Birmingham Guardians* (1874), 30 L T 702

(m) See p. 598, *ante*

(n) Stat (1896) 8 & 9 Will 3, c 30, s 3; *R v. Montgomeryshire Justices* (1868), 33 J P 6, *R v Leeds (Recorder)* (1861), 3 E. & E. 561, *R v Over (Inhabitants)* (1849), 14 Q B 425

1294. The proceedings at the hearing of the appeal are regulated by the practice of the particular sessions, and by the grounds for the appeal. The respondents have the right to begin, unless the whole of the respondents' case is admitted, or deemed to be admitted, by the grounds of appeal, in which case the appellants begin (*n*). The respondents may call other witnesses than those examined before the justices, and are not obliged to call those who were so examined (*o*).

SECT 3
Removal
Orders

The hearing

1295 The decision of the court upon the hearing of an appeal against an order of removal, whether upon the sufficiency and effect of the statement of the grounds of removal and of appeal, and of the notice of chargeability, and of the copy or counterpart of the order of removal sent to the appellants or upon any question of amendment, is final, and cannot be reviewed by *certiorari*, *mandamus* or otherwise (*p*). In respect of other matters, judgment may be given subject to a case stated for the consideration of the High Court upon a point of law (*q*).

Judgment.

1296 If on appeal quarter sessions determines in favour of the appellant that the removal was not justified, they may order the appellant to be repaid such a sum as has been reasonably paid by the parish or place on whose behalf the appeal was made in respect of the relief of the poor person in question, between the time of the removal and the determination of the appeal, and such sum will be recoverable in the same way as costs are recoverable (*r*).

Repayment of
maintenance

1297 The court may order the losers to pay to the other side such costs and charges as the court deems just and reasonable (*s*), and certify the amount thereof, which on default may be levied by distress and sale (*t*). By consent the costs may be taxed out of sessions (*u*).

Costs of
appeal

(*n*) *By Special Case*

1298 The parties to an appeal against a removal order have the same power of agreeing that, by order of a judge of the High Court, the facts should be stated in the form of a special case for

Special case

(*n*) See *R v Carnarvon Justices* (1820), 4 B & Ald 86, *R v Hockworthy (Inhabitants)* (1837), 7 Ad & El 402.

(*o*) See *R v Yelvertoft (Inhabitants)* (1844), 6 Q B 801, *R v Ibergenny Union* (1880), 6 Q B D 31, and, as to procedure and evidence generally, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 646, 647, and Archbold, Poor Law, 15th ed., pp 710—752.

(*p*) Poor Law Procedure Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 31), s 7. There cannot be a case stated on any of the matters included *ibid* (*R v Ruyton of the Eleven Towns (Inhabitants)* (1861), 1 B & S 534).

(*q*) For the procedure etc as to stating a case, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 664 *et seq*.

(*r*) Poor Relief Act, 1722 (9 Geo 1, c 7), s 9.

(*s*) The court must use their discretion in each case and consider the question in relation to the particular case (*R v Glamorganshire Justices* (1850), 4 New Sess Cas 110, *R v Merionethshire Justices* (1844), 6 Q B 163).

(*t*) Stat (1696) 8 & 9 Will 3, c 30, s 3, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will 4, c 76), s 82. See *ibid* as to the recovery of costs so certified.

(*u*) See *Freeman v Read* (1860), 9 C B (N S) 301, *Midland Rail Co v Edmonton Union*, 1895] A C 485.

SECT. 3
Removal
Orders

the opinion of the High Court, as they have in respect of other decisions of petty sessions (b).

(iii) *Arbitration*

Reference to
arbitrator

1299 The parties to an appeal may agree that the matter in difference shall be referred to arbitration, and to that end may apply to a judge of the High Court or to quarter sessions for an order of reference (c).

Reference to
Local Govern-
ment Board

1300 The guardians of any two unions or parishes, or the guardians of a union and the guardians of a parish, or the guardians of a union or parish and the overseers of any parish, or the overseers of any two parishes, between whom any question affecting the settlement, removal, or chargeability of any poor person shall arise, may, if they think fit so to do, by agreement in writing executed in respect of any guardians by sealing with their common seal, and in respect of overseers by the signatures of a majority of them, submit such question to the Local Government Board for its decision, and the Board may, if it sees fit, entertain such question, and by an order under its seal determine the same. Every such order is, in all courts and for all purposes as to the question therein determined (d), final and conclusive between the parties submitting such question.

Part VIII.- Vagrancy.

SECT. 1—*In General*

Meaning of
"vagrant"

1301 The term "vagrant" is an elastic one, and, as ordinarily used, no precise meaning can be attached to it, though it may be regarded for most purposes as being synonymous with vagabond or loiterer (e). So far as poor law purposes are primarily concerned, the designation "vagrant" is displaced by the expression "casual" or "casual pauper," and elaborate provision is made for the relief and incidental control of destitute wayfarers (f). These latter, however, form but a small portion of the offenders aimed at by what are known as the Vagrancy Laws, which are now based upon

(b) See Quarter Sessions Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 45), s 11, title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 663

(c) Quarter Sessions Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 45), ss 13, 14, and see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 649

(d) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1851 (14 & 15 Vict c 105), s 12. The Local Government Board will only decide questions of law, not of fact, on such a submission

(e) Blackstone, writing of vagrants (4 Bl Com 170), calls them idle persons and vagabonds, and says that ancient statutes described them as being "such as wake on the night and sleep on the day, and haunt customable taverns and alehouses, and routs about, and no man wot from whence they come, no whither they go"

(f) See p. 567, *ante*

SECT. 1

In General.

the Vagrancy Act, 1824 (*g*), and were originally directed against such offenders, whether wayfarers or not, as might fall within one or other of three arbitrary classes thereby set up, namely, idle and disorderly persons, rogues and vagabonds, and incorrigible rogues. Later statutes have provided that persons committing certain offences shall be deemed to come within one or other of these divisions, and so many offenders who are in no ordinary sense of the word vagrants, have been brought under the laws relating to vagrancy, and the greater number of the offences coming within the operation of those laws have little or no relation to the subject of poor relief, but are more properly directed towards the prevention of crime, the preservation of good order, and the promotion of social economy.

SECT. 2—*Idle and Disorderly Persons*

1302 The following are comprised under the description of idle and disorderly persons—

Idle and
disorderly
persons
Neglect to
maintain
family.

(1) Every person who being able wholly or in part to maintain himself or herself, or his or her family, by work or other means, wilfully refuses or neglects so to do, by which refusal or neglect he or she or any of his or her family, whom he or she is legally bound to maintain, shall have become chargeable to any parish, township, or place, or to the common fund of any union (*h*)

(*g*) 5 Geo. 4, c. 83

(*h*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo. 4, c. 83), s. 3, as extended by the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict. c. 103), s. 3. For liability to maintain, see p. 573, *ante*. (Chargeability may be proved by a certificate of the guardians of the union (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict. c. 101), s. 69), or by other means. In order that the neglect or refusal may be wilful, some evidence must be adduced of the defendant's means or ability (*Hosegood v. Camps* (1889), 53 J. P. 612), but it is not necessary to show that he has actually refused to work or is an idle person, for an able bodied man, who is capable of maintaining his family by work and does not do so, may be convicted as an idle and disorderly person (*Carpenter v. Stanley* (1868) 33 J. P. 37). *Mens rea* is necessary for a conviction (*Morris v. Edmonds* (1897), 77 L. T. 56). But the fact that the defendant by his own misconduct has put himself into such a condition that he is unable to work does not amount to wilful refusal or neglect (*St. Saviour's Union v. Burbridge*, [1900] 2 Q. B. 695 (delirium tremens), but see *contra*, *R. v. Hopkins, Ex parte St. Saviour's Union* (1900), 64 J. P. 582), nor does a refusal to work subject to certain conditions which have no relation to the work itself (*Poplar Guardians v. Martin*, [1905] 1 K. B. 728). 'Striking' is a refusal that may be dealt with under the section, see *A. G. v. Merthyr Tydfil Union*, [1900] 1 Ch. 516, (A). Soldiers and marines are not within this provision (Army Act (44 & 45 Vict. c. 58), ss. 145, 190, see p. 572, *ante*). A husband cannot be convicted under the section for neglecting to maintain his wife if she refuses to live with him without justification (*Flannagan v. Bishop Wearmouth Overseers* (1857), 8 E. & B. 451), or is living in adultery (*R. v. Flintan* (1830), 1 B. & Ad. 227, *Phillips v. South Dublin Union Guardians*, [1902] 2 I. R. 112, *Gouvier v. Hancock* (1796), 6 Term Rep. 603), or if he *bona fide* believes she is doing so (*Morris v. Edmonds* (1897), 18 Cox, C. C. 627), unless he has condoned or connived at the misconduct (*Hutton v. Glossop* (1888), 20 Q. B. 1354, (A)). As to what amounts to condona-

SECT. 2
Idle and
Disorderly
Persons

Neglect to
maintain
illegitimate
child
Disregarding
removal order

(2) Any woman neglecting to maintain her bastard child being able wholly or in part so to do, whereby such child becomes chargeable (1),

(8) Every person returning to or becoming chargeable to any parish, township, or place from which he or she has been legally removed by order of justices, unless he or she produces a certificate of the churchwardens and overseers of some other parish, township or place, thereby acknowledging him or her to be settled there (1),

(4) Every pauper removed under an order obtained by the guardians of a union who returns within twelve months, and becomes chargeable to that union, without the guardian's consent (1),

Fraudulent
applicants for
relief

(5) Any person who when applying for relief at any workhouse, or to any relieving officer or overseer, has at the time in his possession and under his immediate control any property of which on inquiry he does not make a correct and complete disclosure (1),

(6) Any pauper who wilfully gives a false name, or makes a false statement for the purpose of obtaining relief (a),

(7) Any person who obtains relief by giving a false answer or making a false statement (b),

(8) Any person who, for the purpose of obtaining relief from the rates raised for the relief of the poor for himself or any other person, wilfully gives a false name, or makes or uses a false statement to the guardians of any union, or any of their officers (c),

Disorderly
paupers

(9) Any pauper who (i) absconds or escapes from or leaves any casual ward before he is entitled to discharge himself therefrom, or (ii) refuses to remove to any workhouse or asylum, or (iii) absconds, or escapes from, or leaves, any workhouse or asylum during the period of detention, or (iv) refuses or neglects, whilst an

tion, see title HUSBAND AND WIFE, Vol XVI, p 489. A husband is not liable under this section in respect of his wife when she becomes chargeable by reason of lunacy.

(1) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 6. For a second offence she is punishable as a rogue and vagabond (*ibid*), as to which see p 610, *post*. The liability of the mother only attaches while she is unmarried or a widow, and while the child is under sixteen years of age, or, if a girl, is unmarried and under that age (Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will, 4 c 76), s 71), and see title BASTARDY, Vol II, p 440.

(1) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 3, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 55. This provision does not apply to a return to a different parish though situate in the same town, nor to a person coming back otherwise than in a state of vagrancy (*R v Fillongley (Inhabitants)* (1788), 2 Term Rep 709, *R v Barham (Inhabitants)* (1828), 8 B & C 95; *Mann v Daters* (1819), 3 B & Ald 103). As to removal orders, see p 596, *ante*.

(1) Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 79), s 7.

(1) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1848 (11 & 12 Vict c 110), s 10.

(a) Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict, c 108), s 7. A second conviction makes the offender a rogue and vagabond (*ibid*); see p 610, *post*.

(b) Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict, c 61), s 44.

(c) Casual Poor Act, 1892 (45 & 46 Vict c 36), s 5.

inmate of any casual ward, workhouse, or asylum, to do the work or observe the regulations prescribed (*d*);

(10) Every person relieved in a workhouse who refuses or neglects to perform the prescribed task, or who destroys his clothes, or damages the property of the guardians (*e*);

(11) Every person relieved out of a workhouse who refuses or wilfully neglects to perform the task of work, or who destroys or damages tools, materials, or other property of the guardians (*f*);

(12) Every person wandering abroad, or placing himself or herself in any public place, street, highway, court, or passage, to beg or gather alms, or causing or procuring or encouraging any child or children so to do (*g*);

(13) Every petty chapman or pedlar wandering abroad, and trading without being duly licensed or otherwise authorised by law (*h*), and

(14) Every common prostitute wandering in a public street or public highway, or in any place of public resort, and behaving in a riotous or indecent manner (*i*).

Sec. 2.
Idle and
Disorderly
Persons.

Beggars.

Pedlars

Prostitution.

Punishment.

1303 Idle and disorderly persons are punishable upon summary conviction, if before a single justice or at an occasional court house, with imprisonment with or without hard labour for not exceeding fourteen days, or if before two justices in a petty sessional court, for not exceeding one calendar month (*k*). A fine not exceeding £1 or £5, as the case may be, recoverable by distress, may be imposed

(*d*) Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 108), s 7. The master or porter of a workhouse, or officer in charge of a casual ward, may take a disorderly pauper before a justice without summons or warrant and convey the offender upon conviction to gaol (*ibid*, s 8). As to the prescribed work, see General Order of Local Government Board, 18th December, 1882, *Poplar Guardians v Martin* [1905] 1 K B 728, *A v Baddeley, Ex parte Moore* (1906), 70 T P 346, and as to misbehaviour, see *Mile End Guardians v Sims*, [1905] 2 K B 200, *Holland v Pearbel*, [1912] 1 K B 154.

(*e*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1842 (5 & 6 Vict c 5), s 5, and see p 613, *post*.

(*f*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 113), s 15.

(*g*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 3. This provision is aimed at habitual beggars, and does not touch persons collecting alms in an orderly manner under exceptional circumstances, e.g., workmen on strike (*Pointon v Hall* (1884), 12 Q B D 306). As to begging by children, see the Children Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 67), ss 14, 58, 59, and title INFANTS AND CHILDREN Vol XVII, p 163.

(*h*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 3. As to pedlars' certificates, see the Pedlars Acts, 1871 and 1881 (34 & 35 Vict c 96, 44 & 45 Vict c 45), and as to pedlars and hawkers, generally, see title MARKETS AND FAIRS, Vol XX, p 55.

(*i*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 3. Merely to accost a man is not behaving in a riotous or indecent manner (*R v Duke* (1909), 73 J P. 88 (quarter sessions case), but to take a man by the arm and walk with him against his will may be such behaviour (*Duval v Denman* (1901), 65 J P 297 (North London Sessions)), but see, *contra*, *R v De Ruiter* (1880), 44 J P. 90 (Middlesex Sessions), see also *Bonner v Lushington* (1893), 68 L T. 91.

(*k*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 3. Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 49), s 20.

SECT 2.
Idle and
Disorderly
Persons.

instead of imprisonment, but hard labour cannot be adjudged for default in payment (*l*)

. The punishment of an absconding pauper (*m*) who is suffering from an infectious disease may be suspended till he is cured (*n*).

SECT 3—*Rogues and Vaga*

Rogues and
vagabonds.

Persons
previously
convicted

Resisting
arrest.

Deserting
family.

1304 The following are comprised under the description rogues and vagabonds —

(1) Persons committing any of the offences rendering them punishable as idle and disorderly persons (*o*), after having been previously convicted of any such offence (*p*),

(2) Every person apprehended as an idle and disorderly person (*q*), and violently resisting any constable or other police officer so apprehending him or her, and being subsequently convicted of the offence for which the apprehension took place (*r*),

(3) Any person running away (*s*) and leaving his wife, or his or her legitimate child or children (*t*), chargeable (*a*), or whereby she or they, or any of them, become chargeable to any parish, township, or place, or to the common fund of any union (*b*),

(4) Any woman deserting her bastard child, whereby it becomes chargeable, or convicted for a second time of neglecting to maintain her bastard child (*c*),

(*l*) Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 49), s 4

(*m*) See pp 562, 608, *ante*

(*n*) Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict. c 108), s 7

(*o*) See pp 607 *et seq.* *ante*

(*p*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4 As to second offences by paupers, see also Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 108), s 7

(*q*) See pp 607 *et seq.* *ante*

(*r*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4

(*s*) To constitute a 'running away' there must be an absconding or concealment or absenting by going some distance away and for some considerable time, see *Cambridge Union Guardians v Parr* (1861), 25 J P 518, *per* ERLE, C J It is a question of fact for the justices whether the acts alleged amount to a running away (*Pallin v Buckland* (1911), 105 L T 197)

(*t*) *R v Maude* (1842), 2 Dowl (N s) 58 As to presumption of legitimacy, see title BASTARDY, Vol II, p 427

(*a*) *Heath v Heape* (1856), 1 H & N 478, and see *Bannister v Sullivan* (1904), 91 L T 380

(*b*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4, Poor Law Amendment Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 103), s 3 A married woman, deserted by her husband, and without separate property, cannot be convicted under these sections (*Peters v Courie* (1877), 2 Q B D 131) If when a man leaves his wife she has sufficient means of livelihood, he cannot be convicted without proof of knowledge of the chargeability (*Sweeney v Spooner* (1863), 3 B. & S 329). Soldiers and marines are not within this provision (Army Act (44 & 45 Vict c 58), ss 145, 190; and see p. 572, *ante*).

(*c*) Poor Law Amendment Act, 1844 (7 & 8 Vict c 101), s 6, see p. 608, *ante*, see also title BASTARDY, Vol II, p 440. Proceedings may be

(5) Any person going about as a gatherer or collector of alms, or endeavouring to procure charitable contributions of any nature or kind, under any false or fraudulent pretence (d);

SECT. 2.
Beggars and Vagrants.

(6) Any person wandering abroad and endeavouring by the exposure of wounds or deformities to obtain or gather alms (d);

Fraudulent beggars.

(7) Any person wandering abroad and lodging in any barn or outhouse, or in any deserted or unoccupied building, or in the open air, or under a tent, or in any cart or waggon, not having any visible means of subsistence, and not giving a good account of himself or herself (d);

Exposing wounds.

(8) Any person wilfully exposing to view in any street, road, or highway, or public place, or in the window or other part of any shop, or other building, situate in any street, road, highway, or public place, any obscene print, picture, or other indecent exhibitions (c);

Indecent exhibitions.

(9) Any person wilfully, openly, lewdly, and obscenely exposing his person in any street, road, or public highway, or in view thereof, or in any place of public resort with intent to insult any female (f);

Exposing the person.

(10) Any male person who knowingly lives wholly or in part on the earnings of prostitution, or who in any public place persistently solicits or importunes for immoral purposes (g);

Men living on prostitutes.

commenced at any time within two years from the time when the offender absconds (*Ashley v. Blaker* (1909), 101 L. T. 682, but see *Reeve v. Yeates* (1862), 1 H. & C. 435, where it was held that time did not begin to run until the date of chargeability), by any relieving officer, on an information stating that relief has been applied for on behalf of the wife or child, and that he is informed and believes that the husband or parent has left the wife or child and gone away (Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), s. 19). It is not necessary for the informing officer to obtain the sanction of the guardians (*R. v. Mirehouse* (1863), 11 W. R. 316).

(d) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo. 4, c. 83), s. 4.

(e) *Ibid.*, Vagrancy Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict. c. 38), s. 1, see also title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, pp. 537, 538, 539, Indecent Advertisements Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict. c. 18). It has been held at quarter sessions that writing obscene words on a gate in a public highway is not within the above provision (*Thomas v. Bradbury* (1883), 47 J. P. 505).

(f) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo. 4, c. 83), s. 4, see also title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 537.

(g) Vagrancy Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict. c. 39), s. 1 (1). If it is made to appear to a court of summary jurisdiction by information on oath that there is reason to suspect that any house or any part of a house is used by a female for purposes of prostitution, and that any male person residing in or frequenting the house is living wholly or in part on the earnings of the prostitute, the court may issue a warrant authorising any constable to enter and search the house and to arrest that male person (*ibid.*, s. 1 (2)). A man proved to be living with or to be habitually in the company of a prostitute, and to have no visible means of subsistence, will be deemed to be knowingly living on the earnings of prostitution, unless he can satisfy the court to the contrary (*ibid.*, s. 1 (3)). The wife of a person charged with living on the earnings of her prostitution is not a competent witness against her husband (*Director of Public Prosecutions v. Brady* (1912), 76 J. P. 141, (C. C. A.)).

SECT 3

Rogues and Vagabonds.

Fortune-
telling
suspected
persons

Possession of
house-
breaking
implements
or weapons

(11) Any person pretending or professing to tell fortunes, or using any subtle craft, means, or device (*h*), by palmistry or otherwise, to deceive and impose (*i*),

(12) Every person found in or upon any dwelling-house, warehouse, coach-house, stable, or outhouse, or in any inclosed yard, garden, or area for any unlawful purpose (*h*),

(13) Every suspected person or reputed thief frequenting or loitering about or in any river, canal, or navigable stream, dock or basin, or any quay, wharf, or warehouse near or adjoining thereto, or any street, highway, or avenue leading thereto, or any place of public resort, or any avenue leading thereto, or any street or any highway, or any place adjacent to a street or highway, with intent to commit a felony (*l*),

(14) Every person having in his or her custody or possession any picklock, key, crow, jack, bit, or other implement, with intent feloniously to break into any dwelling-house, warehouse, coach-house, stable, or outbuilding (*m*);

(*h*) It has been held that the "device" must be *ejusdem generis* with palmistry, and that the word does not include a conjuring trick (see *Johnson v Fenner* (1869), 33 J P 740), but compare cases cited *infra*, and see *R v Ward* (1900), 64 J P 776 (Central Criminal Court)

(*i*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4 As to fortune telling as a misdemeanour, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 692 It is not necessary to prove that the defendant had actually told the fortune of an individual, the offence is the offering to do so (*Penny v Hanson* (1887), 18 Q B D 478 (advertisement offering to cast nativities or tell fortunes by means of astrology)) Spiritualists and others who profess to commune with the dead may be proceeded against under this section, by virtue of the words "or otherwise" (*Monck v Hillon* (1877), 2 L R D 268, *R v Muddlser Justices* (1877), 2 Q B D 516, *R v Lutwistle, Ex parte Jones*, [1899] 1 Q B 846)

(*h*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4 It is, perhaps, doubtful whether the unlawful purpose need be a felonious purpose (see *Kerkin v Jenkins* (1863), 9 Cox, C C 311) but there must be a purpose to commit an offence punishable as a crime, and not a mere offence against *e.g.* morality (*Hayes v Stephenson* (1860), 3 L T 296) It is not necessary that the arrest should be made upon the premises (*Moran v Jones* (1911) 27 T L R 421)

(*l*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4 Penal Servitude Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 69), s 7 In order to prove intent it is not necessary to show that the accused was guilty of any particular act or acts tending to show his purpose or intent, he may be convicted if, from the circumstances of the case and from his known character, the court is of opinion that he was intending to commit a felony (Prevention of Crimes Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 112), s 15, and see *R v Paritt* (1911), 75 J P 432, C C A, and title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 383) A public highway is not necessarily a place of public resort, it must be shown that it is, or that it leads to or is adjacent to, one of the other designated places (*Re Timson* (1870), L R 5 Exch 257, following *Re Jones* (1852), 7 Exch 586 and not following *R v Brown* (1852), 17 Q B 833) The platform of a railway station is a place of public resort (*Re Davis* (1857), 2 H & N 149), but not a ship lying at a quay (*R v Taylor* (1857), 21 J P 488) A private house in which a sale by public auction is going on is, for the time being, a place of public resort (*Sewell v Taylor* (1859), 7 C B (N S) 160)

(*m*) Vagrancy Act 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4 In addition to fine or imprisonment (see p 613, *post*), the implements will be forfeited

(15) Every person being armed with any gun, pistol, hanger, cutlass, bludgeon, or other offensive weapon, or having upon him or her any instrument, with intent to commit any felonious act (*n*), § 8 Act. 3
Rogues and
Vagabonds.

(16) Every pauper who wilfully destroys or injures his own clothes or damages any of the property of the guardians (*o*), Damage by
pauper

1305 Every person playing or betting by way of gaming or wagering in any street, road, highway, or other open and public place, or in any open place to which the public have or are permitted to have access, at or with any table or instrument of gaming, or any coin, card, token, or other article used as an instrument or means of such wagering or gaming, at any game or pretended game of chance, is punishable as a rogue and vagabond, or by fine (*p*). Gambling in
public places.

Under the Lotteries Acts, persons convicted of selling tickets in a lottery are to be deemed to be rogues and vagabonds (*q*)

1306 Any person untruly confessing himself a deserter or to be improperly absent from one of His Majesty's ships, or making a false statement on enlistment in the naval service, will be deemed to be a rogue and vagabond within the meaning of the Vagrancy Act, 1824 (*r*), and may be punished accordingly (*s*). § 8 Act. 1

1307 Certain offenders against the provisions regulating alien immigration are deemed to be rogues and vagabonds (*t*). Aliens

1308 A rogue and vagabond may, on conviction of the offence before one justice or before justices sitting in an occasional court-house, be fined not exceeding 20s or sentenced to not more than fourteen days' imprisonment (*u*), or if convicted before two justices Punishment.

(Vagrancy Act 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4) As to possession by night, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 675

(*n*) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4 In addition to fine or imprisonment (see the text, *infra*), the weapons will be forfeited (Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83) s 4) As to going armed, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 468

(*o*) Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 (34 & 35 Vict c 108), s 7

(*p*) Vagrant Act Amendment Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 38), s 3, see title GAMING AND WAGERING, Vol XV, p 291 A hackney carriage standing in a street has been held to be a public place (*R v Weller* (1894), 58 J P 286)

(*q*) See title GAMING AND WAGERING, Vol XV, p 302, and *ibid*, note (*m*), for the special punishment A limited liability company cannot be convicted under the Lotteries Acts as a rogue and vagabond (*Harke v Hullon (E) & Co, Ltd*, [1909] 2 K B 93)

(*r*) 5 Geo 4, c 83

(*s*) Naval Deserters Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 62), s 10; Naval Enlistment Act, 1853 (16 & 17 Vict c 69), s 16 The last-mentioned section does not apply to a person desiring to enter the Royal Naval Reserve (*Weatherpe v Powley*, [1905] 1 K B 286), see title ROYAL FORCES

(*t*) See title ALIENS Vol I p 328

(*u*) Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 49), s 20

POOR LAW.

SECT 3 in a petty sessional court, be imprisoned, with or without hard labour, for not more than three months, or be fined not exceeding £25 (z), with imprisonment without hard labour in default of distress (w).

SECT 4 — *Incorrigible Rogues.*

Incorrigible
rogues

second con-
viction as
rogue and
vagabond

Resisting
arrest

Prison
breakers.

1309 The following may be dealt with as incorrigible rogues:—

(1) Every person committing any offence which shall subject him or her to be dealt with as a rogue and vagabond (x), such person having been at some former time adjudged so to be and duly convicted thereof (y),

(2) Every person apprehended as a rogue and vagabond, and violently resisting any constable or other police officer so apprehending him or her, and who is subsequently convicted of the offence for which he or she was so apprehended (a),

(3) Every person breaking or escaping out of any place of legal confinement before the expiration of the term for which he or she has been committed or ordered to be confined by virtue of the Vagrancy Act, 1824 (b)

Punishment

1310 Any person convicted by a justice or justices of an offence which constitutes him or her an incorrigible rogue must be committed to prison, with or without hard labour, until the next general or quarter sessions of the peace (c). At such sessions the court may examine into the circumstances of the case, and may order that the offender be further imprisoned with hard labour for not exceeding one year from the date of the order, and, further, that the offender, if a male, be whipped at such time during his imprisonment, and at such place, as, according to the nature of the offence, the court deems to be expedient (d). In such cases as begging the maximum sentence should not be imposed in the absence of aggravating circumstances (e). An appeal against the sentence imposed by quarter sessions lies to the Court of Criminal Appeal (f).

(v) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 4

(w) For scale of imprisonment in default of payment, see the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 49), ss 5, 47, and title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 604

(x) See p 610, *ante*

(y) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 5. There must be evidence that the offender has been previously convicted as a rogue and vagabond before he can be convicted as an incorrigible rogue under this provision (*R v. Johnson*, [1909] 1 K B 439, C C A.)

(a) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s 5

(b) 5 Geo 4, c 83, s 5, see also title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 508

(c) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo. 4, c. 83), s. 5, Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict c 49), s 4

(d) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo 4, c 83), s. 10

(e) *R v. Cooper* (1910), 75 J P 125, C C A; and see *R v. Edwards* (1909), 73 J. P 286, C C A

(f) *R v. Johnson*, [1909] 1 K B 439, C C A.

PART VIII.—VAGRANCY.

SECT. 5 — *Practice.*

1311. Any person may apprehend without warrant anyone found offending (g) against the Vagrancy Act, 1824 (h), and may convey him before a justice or justices, or deliver him to a peace officer (i) for that purpose (k). A constable refusing to take him into custody, and any person hindering a constable in the execution of the Act (l), may be fined a sum not exceeding £5 (m)

SECT. 5
Practice.

Arrest.

1312 On a charge of neglecting to maintain or deserting wife or family, the wife or husband of the person charged is a competent and compellable witness (n)

Witnesses.

1313 Any money found upon or in the possession of an offender may be applied towards the expenses of his apprehension, conveyance to prison, and maintenance there. If money sufficient for these purposes is not found, his effects may be ordered to be sold and so applied, any surplus being returned to him (o)

Payment of
expenses.

1314 A justice, upon information on oath that any person within the purview of the Vagrancy Act, 1824 (l), is, or is reasonably suspected to be, harboured or concealed in any house kept for the lodging of travellers, may, by warrant under his hand and seal, authorise any person to enter at any time into such house and apprehend such person (p)

Search
warrant.

1315 An appeal against a conviction under any of the three heads dealt with above lies to quarter sessions (q), but not to the

Appeal.

(g) The person must be actually committing one of the specified offences, see *Horley v Rogers* (1860), 2 E. & E. 674. As to arrest generally, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 296

(h) 5 Geo. 4, c. 83. The person giving into custody or apprehending an offender is not liable for the costs of the prosecution (*Reddish v Hutchinson* (1878), 40 L. T. 60)

(i) As to who is a peace officer, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 298

(k) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo. 4, c. 83), s. 6.

(l) 5 Geo. 4, c. 83

(m) *Ibid.*, s. 11, see also Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict. c. 43)

(n) Criminal Evidence Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict. c. 36), s. 4, Sched.

(o) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo. 4, c. 83), s. 8. As to costs generally, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol. XIX, pp. 604, 629, 648

(p) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo. 4, c. 83), s. 13. As to search warrants generally, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 310

(q) Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo. 4, c. 83), s. 14, Vagrancy Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict. c. 38), s. 1, Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict. c. 43), Sched. The prosecutor's costs of appeal may be ordered by quarter sessions to be paid by the treasurer of the county, riding, division, or place in which the offence was committed (Vagrancy Act, 1824 (5 Geo. 4, c. 83), s. 9)

If such place is a borough having a separate commission of the peace but not a separate court of quarter sessions, the order for payment should be made upon the county treasurer, not upon the borough treasurer. The word "place" in *ibid.*, s. 9, must be construed as meaning a place having a separate court of quarter sessions (*R. v West Riding Justices*, [1900] 1 Q. B. 291). As to costs of appeal, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol. XIX, p. 648.

SECT 5
Practice

Court of Criminal Appeal, as such a conviction is not a conviction upon indictment (*r*) An appeal, however, lies to that court against a sentence imposed at quarter sessions upon an incorrigible rogue (*s*). If the conviction is confirmed by quarter sessions and the appellant is not in custody, it is for quarter sessions, not for the convicting justice or justices, to issue a warrant for his apprehension to undergo his sentence (*a*)

Costs.

1316. The provisions as to payment of costs in criminal cases apply in the case of a person committed as an incorrigible rogue as if he had been committed for trial for an indictable offence, and in the case of any appeal under the Vagrancy Act 1824, as if the hearing of the appeal by the court of quarter sessions were the trial of an indictable offence (*b*)

Part IX.— Old Age Pensions.

SECT 1 — *The Pension*

**Meaning of
old age
pension**

1317 By an old age pension is meant the weekly payment out of moneys provided by Parliament which a person is entitled to receive by virtue of the provisions of the Old Age Pensions Acts, 1908 and 1911 (*c*), when and so long as such person satisfies the conditions prescribed by those Acts, and in accordance with the regulations made thereunder by the Treasury (*d*)

**Conditions
for receipt of
pension**

1318 In order to be entitled to receive an old age pension a

(*r*) *R v Brown* (1908) 72 J P 427, C C A, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 443 It is sufficient if the notice of appeal states that the appellant was not guilty (*R v Newcastle upon Tyne Justices* (1831), 1 B & Ad 933) As to appeals generally, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 642 *et seq*

(*s*) *R v Johnson*, [1909] 1 K B 439, C C A The Home Secretary, in the consideration of any petition for mercy, can, however, refer the whole matter to be dealt with by the Court of Criminal Appeal, under the Criminal Appeal Act, 1907 (7 Edw 7, c 23), s 19, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 443

(*a*) *Ex parte Moore* (1837), 1 Jur 135

(*b*) Costs in Criminal Cases Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 15), s 9 (4), see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 328, note (*s*)

(*c*) 8 Edw 7, c 40 1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16 It should be noted that the provisions of the Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), modifying the statutory conditions for the receipt of a pension are not to operate so as to disentitle a person then in receipt of a pension to continue to receive the pension or to reduce the rate of pension (*ibid*, s. 8)

(*d*) For these regulations, see Old Age Pensions Regulations, 1911

SECT. 1.
The
Pension.

Age.
Nationality.

person of either sex must have attained the age of seventy (e), and must satisfy the pension authorities (f)—

(1) That for at least twenty years up to the date of the receipt of any sum on account of a pension he or she has been a British subject (g), except in the case of a woman who satisfies the pension authorities that she would but for her marriage with an alien, have fulfilled such condition, and that, at the date of the receipt of any sum on account of a pension, the alien is dead, or the marriage with him has been dissolved or annulled, or she has, for a period of not less than two years up to the said date, been legally separated from or deserted by him (h),

Residence.

(2) That for at least twelve years in the aggregate out of the twenty years up to the date of the receipt of any sum on account of a pension he or she has had his or her residence in the United Kingdom. In computing such period of residence, there must be counted as residence in the United Kingdom (i) any periods spent abroad in any service under the Crown, the remuneration for which is paid out of moneys provided by Parliament, or as the wife or servant of a person in any such service so remunerated, (ii) any periods spent in the Channel Islands or the Isle of Man by a person born in the United Kingdom, (iii) any periods spent abroad by any person during which that person has maintained or assisted in maintaining any dependant in the United Kingdom, (iv) any periods of absence spent in service on board a vessel registered in the United Kingdom by a person who before his absence on that service was living in the United Kingdom, and (v) any periods of temporary absence not exceeding three months in duration at any one time (i), and

Yearly means

(3) That his or her yearly means, as calculated in the prescribed manner, do not exceed £81 10s (k). In calculating the means of a person account must be taken of (i) the yearly value of any property belonging to that person (not being property personally used or enjoyed by him) which is invested, or is otherwise put to profitable use by him, or which, though capable of investment or profitable use, is not so invested or put to profitable use by him, the yearly value of that property being taken to be one-twentieth part of the capital value thereof (l), (ii) the income which that person may reasonably expect to receive during

(e) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 2 (1). A person is deemed to have attained the age of seventy on the commencement of the day previous to the seventieth anniversary of the day of birth (Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 1). Attainment of the age of seventy is a condition precedent to the receipt of a pension, see *Murphy v. E.*, [1911] A C 401.

(f) See p 621, post.

(g) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 2 (2).

(h) Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 3 (1).

(i) *Ibid.*, s 3 (2).

(k) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 2 (3).

(l) Where under this provision the yearly value of any property is taken to be one-twentieth part of the capital value thereof, no account must be taken under paragraphs (ii), (iii), or (iv) of any appropriation of that property for the purpose of current expenditure (Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 2 (1)).

SECT 1.
The
Pension.

the succeeding year in cash, excluding any sums receivable on account of an old age pension under the Act, and excluding any sums arising from the investment or profitable use of property (not being property personally used or enjoyed by him), that income, in the absence of other means for ascertaining the income, being taken to be the income actually received during the preceding year, (iii) the yearly value of any advantage accruing to that person from the use or enjoyment of any property belonging to him which is personally used or enjoyed by him, except furniture and personal effects in a case where the total value of the furniture and effects does not exceed £50 and (iv) the yearly value of any benefit or privilege enjoyed by that person (m)

In calculating the means of a person being one of a married couple living together in the same house, the means must be taken to be half the total means of the couple (n) If a person has directly or indirectly deprived himself of any income or property in order to qualify for pension or for the receipt of a higher rate of pension, that income or the yearly value of that property must be taken to be part of the means of that person (o)

Disqualifica-
tions for
pension -
Poor relief

1319 A person is disqualified for receiving or continuing to receive a pension

(1) While he is in receipt of any poor relief, other than medical or surgical assistance (including food or comforts) supplied by or on the recommendation of a medical officer, or relief given to such person by means of the maintenance of a dependant in a lunatic asylum, infirmary or hospital, or other than the payment of any expenses of the burial of a dependant, or other than any other relief which by law is expressly declared not to be a disqualification for registration as a parliamentary elector or a reason for depriving any person of any franchise, right, or privilege (p),

Improvi-
dence.

(2) If before he becomes entitled to a pension he has habitually failed to work according to his ability, opportunity, and need, for the maintenance or benefit of himself and those legally dependent upon him (q),

(m) Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 2 (1)

(n) *Ibid.*, s 2 (2)

(o) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 4 (3)

(p) *Ibid.*, s 3 (1) (a) Any rule of law and any enactment the effect of which is to cause relief given to or in respect of a wife or relative to be treated as relief given to the person liable to maintain the wife or relative does not apply to disqualify for pension (see Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 4 (1)) The receipt of a pension does not deprive the pensioner of any franchise, right, or privilege, or subject him to any disability (Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 1 (4)).

(q) This disqualification does not apply if the person has continuously for ten years up to attaining the age of sixty made proper provision against old age, sickness, infirmity, or want or loss of employment, such provision, when made by the husband in the case of a married couple living together, is treated as provision made by the wife as well as by the husband (*ibid.*, s 3 (1) (b)). A person attains the age of sixty on the commencement of the day previous to the sixtieth anniversary of the day of birth; see Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 1. For a

(3) While he is detained in any asylum within the meaning of the Lunacy Act, 1890 (*r*), or while he is being maintained in any place as a pauper or criminal lunatic (*s*),

SECT. 1.
THE
PENSION.

(4) While detained in prison under any sentence imposed without the option of a fine, and for a further period of ten years after the date on which he is released from prison (*a*), or, if the term for which he has been ordered to be imprisoned without the option of a fine does not exceed six weeks, for a further period of two years after the date on which he is released (*b*),

Lunacy.
Imprisonment

(5) During the continuance of any period of disqualification arising or imposed in consequence of conviction for an offence (*c*)

By order of
court etc.

In addition to the specific disqualification mentioned above (*d*), a person of sixty years of age or upwards (*e*) who, having been convicted before any court, is liable to have a detention order made against him as an habitual drunkard (*f*), and is not in consequence necessarily disqualified for pension, may be ordered by the court to be disqualified for any period not exceeding ten years (*g*); and any person already in receipt of a pension who is convicted of certain specified offences (*h*) will, if not otherwise subject to disqualification, be disqualified for receiving or continuing to receive a pension

definition of 'proper provision,' see Old Age Pensions Regulations, 1911, s. 30

(*r*) 53 & 54 Vict c. 5. By *ibid.* s. 341, 'asylum' means an asylum for lunatics provided by a county or borough, or by a union of counties or boroughs. See also title LUNATICS AND PERSONS OF UNsound MIND, Vol. XIX, p. 440

(*s*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 40), s. 3 (1) (*c*)

(*a*) *Ibid.* s. 3 (1) (*d*), (2)

(*b*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo. 5, c. 16), s. 4 (2).

(*c*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 40), s. 3 (1) (*d*)

(*d*) Namely, under *ibid.* s. 3 (2), as supplemented by the Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo. 5, c. 16), s. 4 (2)

(*e*) See note (*g*), p. 618, *ante*

(*f*) Under the Inebriates Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict c. 60), see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol. IX, p. 417

(*g*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 40), s. 3 (3)

(*h*) *I.e.*, any offence mentioned or deemed to be mentioned or included in the Inebriates Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict c. 60), Sched. I, namely being found drunk in a highway or other public place, whether a building or not, or on licensed premises, being guilty while drunk of riotous or disorderly behaviour in a highway or other public place, whether a building or not, being drunk while in charge, on any highway or other public place, of any carriage, horse, cattle, or steam-engine, being drunk when in possession of any loaded firearms (Licensing Act, 1872 (35 & 36 Vict c. 94), s. 12), refusing or failing when drunk to quit licensed premises when so requested (*ibid.* s. 18), refusing or failing when drunk to quit any premises or place licensed under the Refreshment Houses Act, 1860, when so requested (Refreshment Houses Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c. 27), s. 41), being found drunk in any street or public thoroughfare within the Metropolitan Police District, and being guilty while drunk of any riotous or indecent behaviour (Metropolitan Police Act, 1839 (2 & 3 Vict c. 47), s. 58); being drunk in any street, and being guilty of riotous or indecent behaviour therein (Town Police Clauses Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c. 89), s. 29), being intoxicated while driving a hackney carriage (*ibid.* s. 61); being drunk during employment as a driver of a hackney carriage, or as a driver or conductor of a stage carriage in the Metropolitan Police District (London Hackney Carriages Act, 1843

SECT 1
The
Pension.

Rate of
pension.

for a period of six months after the date of his conviction, unless the convicting court direct to the contrary (*l*)

1320 The rate of pension payable depends upon the yearly means of the pensioner, varying from 5s to 1s a week (*l*), and, subject to the directions of the Treasury in special cases, is paid weekly in advance on Friday, in such manner and subject to such conditions as to identification as the Treasury direct (*l*) No sum, however, can be paid on account of pension to any person while absent from the United Kingdom, or after three months from the date on which it became payable (*m*)

Pension not
assignable.

1321 A pension cannot be assigned or charged, and on the bankruptcy of a pensioner the pension does not enure for the benefit of his creditors (*n*)

False
statements

1322 If for the purpose of obtaining or continuing a pension, or of obtaining or continuing a pension at a higher rate than is appropriate to the case, either for himself or for any other person, any person knowingly makes any false statement or declaration, he is liable on summary conviction to imprisonment for a term not exceeding six months, with hard labour (*o*)

Repayment
of pension

1323 If it is found at any time that a person has been in receipt of a pension while the statutory conditions were not fulfilled, or while he was disqualified, or of a pension at a rate higher than the appropriate rate, he, or in case of his death his personal representative, will be liable to repay to the Treasury any sums improperly received as pension, which sums may be recovered as a debt due to the Crown (*p*), or may be deducted from any sums to which the person becomes entitled on account of an old age pension. In the case of a personal representative the deduction can only be made from any sums to which he becomes entitled as a personal representative (*q*)

(6 & 7 Vict c 86), s 28), being drunk and persisting, after being refused admission on that account, in attempting to enter a passenger steamer, being drunk on board a passenger steamer, and refusing to leave such steamer when requested (Merchant Shipping Act, 1894 (57 & 58 Vict c 60), s 287), being found drunk in any highway or other public place, whether a building or not, or on any licensed premises, while having the charge of a child apparently under the age of seven years (Licensing Act, 1902 (2 Edw 7, c 28), s 2)

(*l*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 4 (3)

(*k*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 1 (2), Sched

(*l*) *Ibid.*, s 5

(*m*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 5

(*n*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 6

(*o*) *Ibid.*, s 9 (1)

(*p*) *Ibid.*, s 9 (2), Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 7 (1), see title CROWN PRACTICE, Vol X, pp 14 *et seq* As to the conclusiveness and proof of the decision of the local pension committee on any point as to the improper receipt of pension, see Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 7 (2)

(*q*) *Ibid.*, s 7 (3)

SECT. 2.—*The Pension Authorities.*

SECT. 2.

The Pension Authorities.

1324 The Old Age Pensions Acts (r) are administered by the Local Government Board (s) as the central pension authority (t), by local pension committees, and by pension officers who are appointed by the Treasury (u). These authorities act in accordance with regulations made by the Treasury in conjunction with the Board and with the Postmaster-General (so far as relates to the Post Office). Such regulations may prescribe the evidence to be required as to the fulfilment of statutory conditions, the manner in which claims to pensions are to be made, considered, and determined, the mode in which questions are to be raised, the number, quorum, term of office, and proceedings generally of the local pension committee, the use by the committee of any offices of a local authority, the payment of expenses, and other matters necessary for carrying the Acts into effect. Regulations must be laid before each House of Parliament (v).

Pension
authorities.
Regulations.

1325 The council of every county (h), and of each borough and urban district with a population of 20,000 or over, appoint a local pension committee for their area. The persons appointed to be members of a committee need not be members of the council appointing them. A committee may appoint sub-committees, consisting either wholly or partly of the members of the committee, and may delegate, either absolutely or conditionally, any of their powers and duties to any such sub-committee (i).

Local pension
committees.

1326 All claims for old age pensions, and all questions whether the statutory conditions are fulfilled in the case of any claimant or pensioner, and all questions of disqualification, come before the local pension committee, who must, except in the case of a question which has been originated and already reported on by the pension officer, refer the claim or question to the pension officer for report and inquiry. The officer must inquire into and report upon the matter, and the committee then consider the case and give their decision (j).

Claims and
questions.

1327 A question may be raised at any time, whether at any time or during any period a person has been in receipt of an old age pension when the statutory conditions were not fulfilled, or when he was

Raising
questions.

(r) 8 Edw 7, c 40, 1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16.

(s) As to the Local Government Board generally, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, p 103.

(t) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 8 (3).

(u) *Ibid.*, s 8 (4), Finance Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 16), s 14. Order in Council, 15th February, 1909: Old Age Pensions Regulations, 1911 r 32.

(v) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 10. The Old Age Pensions Regulations, 1911, have been made under this authorisation. The Treasury have also by Minute, dated 20th August, 1908, given instructions on financial matters to the pension committees.

(h) The Scilly Isles are deemed to be a county (Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40) s. 11 (3)).

(i) *Ibid.*, s 8 (1), (2).

(j) *Ibid.*, s 7 (1) (a), (b). For the duties of the officers, see the Old Age Pensions Regulations, 1911, rr. 9, 10.

SECT 2
The Pension
Authorities

disqualified for receiving the pension, and whether a person has been at any time or during any period in receipt of a pension at a certain rate when his means exceeded the amount which justified the payment of a pension at that rate, and, if so, at what rate the pension, if any, should have been paid, and whether a person who is in receipt of a pension, at a certain rate, is, having regard to his means, entitled to a pension at a higher or a lower rate, and if so, at what rate the pension, if any, should be paid; and an application may be made at any time to alter or revoke a provisional allowance of a claim for a pension (*e*)

Any such question may be raised notwithstanding that a decision thereon involves a decision as to the correctness of a former decision of the committee or the central authority, but if by a later decision a former decision is reversed, a person who has received any sums on account of pension in accordance with the former decisions is entitled to retain such sum, in the absence of any fraud on his part (*f*)

Discontinuing
pensions

1326 Where a question is raised as to the disqualification of a person to receive an old age pension, and it is alleged that the disqualification has arisen since the person has been in receipt of the pension, and that the disqualification is continuing at the time the question is raised, or, if it has ceased, has ceased less than three weeks before that time, the payment of the pension must be discontinued, and no sum can be paid to the pensioner on account of the pension after the date on which the question is raised. But if the question is decided in favour of the pensioner, he will be entitled to receive all sums which would have been payable to him if the question had not been raised (*g*)

If the decision on any question involves the discontinuance of an old age pension, or the reduction of the rate at which the pension is paid, or if, in a case where the payment of the pension has been discontinued on the raising of the question, the question is not decided in favour of the pensioner, the person in respect of whose pension the decision is given is not entitled to receive a pension or to receive a pension at a rate higher than that determined by the committee or authority, as the case may be, notwithstanding any change of circumstances, unless he makes a fresh claim for the purpose and the claim is allowed, or, in a case where he alleges that he is entitled to receive a pension at a higher rate, raises a question for the purpose and the pension is allowed at a higher rate (*h*)

(*e*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 6 (1). The Old Age Pensions Act 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 7, applies to any such question or application (Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s. 7 (2)). These provisions appear to render unimportant the decisions in *R. (Pawley) v. Local Government Board for Ireland*, [1910] 2 I. R. 440, C. A., and *R. (Simnett) v. Co. Wexford Local Pension Committee*, [1910] 2 I. R. 403.

(*f*) See Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s. 6 (3), which to this extent limits the effect of the Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s. 9 (2), as to which see p 620, *ante*.

(*g*) Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 6 (4)

(*h*) *Ibid.*, s. 6 (5).

1329 The pension officer and any person aggrieved may appeal to the central pension authority against a decision of the local pension committee on any claim or question, and if any person, including the pension officer (i), is aggrieved by the refusal or neglect of a local pension committee to consider a claim or determine a question, that person may apply to the central authority, who may consider and determine the claim or question (k) Appeals and applications must be made within the time and in the manner prescribed by the regulations (l)

SECT. 3
The Pension
Authorities.
Appeals.

(i) Old Age Pensions Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 16), s 6 (6)

(k) Old Age Pensions Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 40), s 7 (1) (c), (d)

(l) *Ibid* For these regulations, see Old Age Pensions Regulations, 1911, rr 18—20 The Local Government Board must notify an applicant for a pension that an appeal has been taken, but is not bound to give him notice of the time or place fixed for hearing the appeal, nor need he be permitted to give evidence (*R (Cairns) v Local Government Board*, [1911] 2 I R 331).

PORT AND PORT DUES.

See SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION, WATERS AND WATERCOURSES.

PORT OF LONDON.

See METROPOLIS, WATERS AND WATERCOURSES.

PORTIONS.

See EQUITY; INFANTS AND CHILDREN, SETTLEMENTS, WILLS.

PORTS AND HARBOURS.

See WATERS AND WATERCOURSES

POSSESSION.

See DISTRESS ; LANDLORD AND TENANT ; MORTGAGE , PERSONAL
PROPERTY , REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTLS REAL , RECEIVERS ,
SALE OF LAND , SHERIFFS AND BAILIFFS

POSSESSORY TITLE.

See SALE OF LAND

POSTHUMOUS CHILDREN.

See DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION , PERPETUITIES , SETTLEMENTS ,
WILLS

POST-NUPTIAL SETTLEMENTS.

See BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY , FRAUDULENT AND VOIDABLE
CONVEYANCES ; SETTLEMENTS.

POST-OBIT BONDS.

See BONDS.

POST OFFICE.

	PAGE
PART I CONSTITUTION	627
SECT 1 IN GENERAL	627
SECT 2 THE POSTMASTER-GENERAL	628
Sub-sect 1 Appointment	628
Sub-sect 2 Assistant Postmaster-General	628
Sub-sect 3 Appointment of Officers	628
Sub-sect 4 General Powers	630
Sub-sect 5 Monopoly	631
SECT 3 FINANCE	633
Sub-sect 1 Revenue	633
Sub-sect 2 Expenses	634
Sub-sect 3 Accounts	634
PART II DEALINGS WITH LAND	634
SECT 1 HOLDING OF LAND	634
SECT 2 ACQUISITION OF LAND	634
SECT 3 DISPOSITION OF LAND	636
PART III CONDUCT OF BUSINESS	636
SECT 1 REGULATIONS	636
SECT 2 POSTAGE	637
Sub-sect 1 In General	637
Sub-sect 2 Rates of Postage	637
Sub-sect 3 Payment of Postage	639
Sub-sect 4 Recovery of Postage	640
Sub-sect 5 Exemptions from Postage	640
SECT 3 CONDITIONS OF TRANSIT OF POSTAL PACKETS	642
Sub-sect 1 In General	642
Sub-sect 2 Liability for Loss	642
Sub-sect 3 Order of Despatch	643
Sub-sect 4 Return of Postal Packets	644
Sub-sect 5 Abuse of Postal Facilities	644
SECT 4 GENERAL REGULATION OF BUSINESS	645
SECT 5 NEWSPAPERS	646
Sub-sect 1 In General	646
Sub-sect 2 Registration	646
SECT 6 MONEY ORDERS	648
Sub-sect 1 In General	648
Sub-sect 2 Provisions as to Money Orders	648
SECT 7 POSTAL ORDERS	648
SECT 8 ADDITIONAL POSTAL FACILITIES	649
Sub-sect. 1 In General	649
Sub-sect. 2 Indemnity to Postmaster-General	650
Sub-sect 3 Arrangements with Local Authorities	650

	PAGE
PART III CONDUCT OF BUSINESS—continued	
SECT 9 CONVIYANCE OF MAILS - - - - -	651
Sub-sect 1 In General - - - - -	651
Sub-sect 2 Inland - - - - -	651
Sub-sect 3 By Ship - - - - -	654
Sub-sect 4 Exemption from Tolls - - - - -	656
SECT 10 ESTABLISHMENT OF POSTS IN BRITISH POSSESSIONS -	657
SECT 11 ARRANGEMENTS WITH FOREIGN COUNTRIES - - -	657
PART IV COMMUNICATIONS BY POST - - - - -	657
SECT 1 LEGAL EFFECT - - - - -	657
SECT 2 EVIDENCE - - - - -	658
PART V OFFENCES - - - - -	659
SECT 1 IN GENERAL - - - - -	659
SECT 2 INFRINGEMENT OF POSTAL MONOPOLY - - -	660
SECT 3 ABUSE OF EXEMPTION OF PRIVILEGED PERSONS LETTERS - - - - -	660
SECT 4 ABUSE OF EXEMPTION OF SHIPOWNERS' LETTERS -	660
SECT 5 FRAUDULENT RECEPTION OF MAIL BAG OR POSTAL PACKET - - - - -	661
SECT 6 SENDING DANGEROUS SUBSTANCE BY POST - - -	662
SECT 7 INTERFERENCE WITH LETTERS - - - - -	662
SECT 8 NEGLIGENCE OR MISCONDUCT OF LETTER CARRIERS -	663
SECT 9 FRAUDULENT ISSUE OF MONEY ORDERS - - -	664
SECT 10 SENDING OR MAKING PAPER IN IMITATION OF POST OFFICE PAPER - - - - -	664
SECT 11 FICTITIOUS STAMPS - - - - -	665
SECT 12 UNAUTHORISED NOTICE AS TO CARRYING ON POST OFFICE BUSINESS - - - - -	665
SECT 13 UNAUTHORISED AFFIXING OF NOTICES TO POST OFFICE - - - - -	666
SECT 14 INJURY TO LETTER BOXES - - - - -	666
SECT 15 OBSTRUCTION OF OFFICER OF THE POST OFFICE -	667
SECT 16 DEMANDING TOLL FOR MAILS - - - - -	667
SECT 17 SOLICITING TO COMMIT OFFENCES - - - - -	667
PART VI LEGAL PROCEEDINGS - - - - -	668
SECT 1 RECOVERY OF FINES AND FORFEITURES - - -	668
SECT 2 SUMMARY PROCEEDINGS - - - - -	668
SECT 3 INDICTMENTS - - - - -	669
SECT 4 PROCEEDINGS APART FROM POST OFFICE ACT, 1908 -	669

For Annuities - - -

Bills of Exchange -

Carriers - - -

Contracts by Post -

Criminal Law - - -

Insurance - - -

Mail Ships - - -

Messengers - - -

See title INSURANCE, RENTCHARGES AND ANNUITIES

BILLS OF EXCHANGE.

CARRIERS

CONTRACT

CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE.

INSURANCE

SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION

STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC.

<i>For National Insurance</i>	- - -	<i>See title</i>	WORK AND LABOUR.
<i>Negligence</i>	- - -	"	NEGLECTANCE.
<i>Old Age Pensions</i>	- - -	"	POOR LAW.
<i>Public Authorities Protection Act</i>	- - - - -	"	PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS
<i>Railways</i>	- - - - -	"	RAILWAYS AND CANALS
<i>Revenue</i>	- - - - -	"	REVENUE
<i>Savings Bank</i>	- - - - -	"	BANKERS AND BANKING
<i>Shop Hours Act</i>	- - - - -	"	FACTORIES AND SHOPS
<i>Telegraphs and Telephones</i>	- - - - -	"	TELEGRAPHS AND TELEPHONES.
<i>Weights and Measures</i>	- - - - -	"	WEIGHTS AND MEASURES

Part I.—Constitution.

SECT. 1.—*In General*

1330 The Post Office is conducted by the Postmaster-General with the aid of an Assistant Postmaster-General, and a staff of permanent officials (*a*) Its business includes the transmission of inland, foreign, and colonial correspondence, the transmission of telegraphic messages, the conduct of telephone communications, and of wireless telegraphy (*b*), in respect of all of which it has a monopoly (*c*), the transmission of small sums through the post by means of money orders and postal orders (*d*), the conduct of the Post Office Savings Bank, and of investments in Government stock (*e*), life insurance, and the grant of annuities (*f*) through the medium of the Bank of England It also sells postage stamps, post-cards, letter-cards, stamped envelopes and newspaper wrappers, issues local taxation

(*a*) The staff includes a solicitor, who is deemed duly qualified to act under the Attorneys and Solicitors Act, 1874 (37 & 38 Vict c 68), s 12, see also Revenue Solicitors' Act, 1828 (9 Geo 4, c 25), Solicitors Act, 1843 (6 & 7 Vict c 73), s 47, Solicitors Act, 1860 (23 & 24 Vict c 127), s 33, and title SOLICITORS

(*b*) The business of the National Telephone Co, Limited, was transferred to the Post Office by the Telephone Transfer Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 26), as amended by the Telephone Transfer Amendment Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 56), and a working agreement between the Postmaster General and Marconi's Wireless Telegraph Co, Limited, was concluded in March, 1912 As to licences for wireless telegraphy, see the Wireless Telegraphy Act, 1904 (4 Edw 7, c 24) As to telegraphs and telephones generally, see title TELEGRAPHS AND TELEPHONES As to nuisance by telegraph wires, see title NUISANCE, Vol XXI, p 516

(*c*) The Post Office originated in the provision by the Crown of messengers, starting at fixed times, and travelling by means of relays of horses, for the carriage of letters between London and two or three of the principal towns of the kingdom; a monopoly of the right so to carry letters was subsequently claimed. The first statutory grant of a monopoly was embodied in an Ordinance of the Protectorate, this was replaced by an Act passed soon after the Restoration, and the monopoly has been regranted from time to time in substantially the same form by successive statutes; that now in force is the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), ss. 3, 34 (2), (3), and see pp 631, 660, *post*

(*d*) See pp 648, 649, *post*

(*e*) See title BANKERS AND BANKING, Vol I, pp 579, 580

(*f*) See titles BANKERS AND BANKING, Vol I, p 580, RETIREMENTS AND ANNUITIES.

SECT 1 licences (g), carries parcels (h), pays old age pensions (i), and trans-
In General. acts various other Government business of minor importance (j).

SECT. 2 —The Postmaster-General

SUB SECT 1 —Appointment.

Appointment **1331** The Postmaster-General is appointed by His Majesty by letters patent, by the style of His Majesty's Postmaster-General (k). By virtue of such appointment the benefit of all contracts, bonds, securities, and things in action, vested in his predecessor, is transferred to, and vested in, the person so appointed, in the same manner as if he had been contracted with instead of his predecessor, and as if his name had been inserted therein instead of the name of his predecessor (l).

Appointment to the office of Postmaster-General does not disqualify the holder from being elected, or from sitting or voting, as a member of the House of Commons (m).

Oath **1332** Upon acceptance of office the Postmaster General must take the statutory oath of allegiance and official oath (n).

SUB SECT 2 —Assistant Postmaster-General

Power to appoint Assistant Postmaster-General. **1333** The Postmaster-General may appoint an Assistant Postmaster-General, who is not, by reason of his office, incapable of being elected to, or of voting in, the House of Commons (o).

SUB-SECT 3 —Appointment of Officers

Power to appoint subordinates **1334** The Postmaster-General has power by statute (p) to appoint such officers, deputies, agents, and servants as seem to him necessary.

Salaries. The salaries of the Postmaster-General, the Assistant Postmaster-General, and of the permanent staff of the Post Office are paid out

(g) See title **REVENUE**

(h) See p 653, *post*

(i) See title **POOR LAW**

(j) As to the duties of the Post Office under the National Insurance Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 55), see title **WORK AND LABOUR**. As to provisions under the Finance Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 48), s 20), for enabling the Post Office to exercise powers in relation to stamps etc, see title **REVENUE**

(k) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 33 (1), see title **CONSTITUTIONAL LAW**, Vol VII, pp 105, 106. See also p 634, *post*

(l) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 33 (2). Balances standing in the name of the Postmaster-General are, at his death, resignation or removal, vested in and transferred to the public accounts of his successor (Exchequer and Audit Departments Act, 1886 (29 & 30 Vict c 39), s. 18)

(m) See Succession to the Crown Act, 1707 (6 Anne, c. 41), Post Office (Postmaster-General) Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 55), s. 1. As to the House of Commons generally, see title **PARLIAMENT**, Vol XXI, pp 655 *et seq*

(n) Promissory Oaths Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 72), ss. 2, 3, 5. As to these oaths, see title **CONSTITUTIONAL LAW**, Vol VII, pp 24 *et seq*

(o) Assistant Postmaster-General Act, 1909 (9 Edw 7, c 14), s. 1.

(p) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 42. Any officer appointed by any Act repealed by the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c 48), is deemed to have been appointed under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*ibid.*, s 92-(b)). As to definition of "officer of the Post Office," see note (u), p 630, *post*.

of moneys annually voted by Parliament upon estimates submitted by the Treasury (q)

1335 The Postmaster-General is not liable for wrongful acts done by his subordinates in carrying on the business of the Post Office (r)

1336 Any act authorised or required to be done by, to, or before the Postmaster-General may subject to his special directions, be done by, to, or before any officer, deputy, servant, and agent appointed by him (s). Any instrument requiring to be executed by the Postmaster-General, or to which he is a party, may be executed in his name by any of the secretaries of the Post Office, if so executed, it is deemed executed by him, and has effect accordingly (t). Any deed, instrument, money order, bill, cheque, receipt, or other document made for Post Office purposes by, to, or with His Majesty or any officer of the Post Office, is exempt from stamp duty (u). Any person having general or special authority under the seal of the Postmaster-General may, on his behalf, give any notice, or make any claim, demand, entry or distress which the Postmaster-General, in his corporate capacity or otherwise, might give or make, every such notice, claim, demand, entry or distress is deemed given and made by the Postmaster-General on behalf of His Majesty (v)

SECT. 2

**The
Postmaster-
General.**

Acts done by
Postmaster-
General or his
subordinates.

(q) The benefits of the Superannuation Act, 1859 (22 Vict. c. 26), are extended by the amending Acts (Superannuation Act Amendment Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict. c. 23), now repealed, and the Superannuation Act, 1881 (44 & 45 Vict. c. 43)) to persons appointed before 1882 to subordinate positions in the Post Office without certificate from the Civil Service Commissioners. The Post Office and Telegraph Act, 1897 (60 & 61 Vict. c. 41), s. 3, makes special provision for the superannuation of certain former servants of the Submarine Telegraph Co., Ltd., and the Société Carmichael et Cie, who on 1st April, 1889, entered the permanent civil service, see Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 40, and the Annual Appropriation Acts. The Telephone Transfer Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo. 5, c. 26), provides for the transferred staff of the National Telephone Co., Limited, see title TELEGRAPHS AND TELEPHONS.

(r) *Bainbridge v. Postmaster General*, [1906] 1 K.B. 178 (C.A.). See *Lane v. Cotton* (1701), 1 Ld. Raym. 646, approved in *Whitford v. Le Despencer (Lord)* (1778), 2 Cowp. 754 (bank-note stolen by letter sorter), compare *Jones v. Mansell* (1872), 6 L.R. (C.L.) 155, and the decision (as to the Admiralty) in *Ruleigh v. Gouschen*, [1898] 1 Ch. 73. See also *Postmaster-General v. Green* (1887), 51 J.P. 582 (mistaken representation by clerk as to sum payable on telegram), as to liability for loss of postal packet, see pp. 642, 643, *post*, as to liability in respect of money orders, see p. 648, *post*.

(s) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 42.

(t) *Ibid.*, s. 35 (1). Instruments purporting to be so executed are deemed duly executed till the contrary is proved (*ibid.*, s. 35 (2)).

(u) Under any statute past or future (*ibid.*, s. 38), but this provision does not apply so as to prevent increment value duty being collected on any instrument by which the transfer on sale of the fee simple of, or any interest in, any land, or the grant of any lease of any land to the Post Office, or to any officer on behalf of or for the purposes of the Post Office, is effected or agreed to be effected (Finance (1909-10) Act, 1910 (10 Edw. 7 & 1 Geo. 5, c. 8), s. 10 (2)). The exemption from stamp duty does not extend to duty declared by the document, or some memorandum indorsed thereon, to be payable by some person other than the Postmaster-General, nor to any specific charge by a future Act (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 38). See title REVENUE.

(v) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 37.

SECT 2

The
Postmaster-
General.Privileges of
officers.Return of
property on
vacation of
office.

1337 No officer of the Post Office (*a*) can be compelled to serve as mayor (*b*) or sheriff, or in any ecclesiastical, corporate parochial or other public office or employment, or on any jury or inquest, or in the militia (*c*)

1338. Where an officer of the Post Office (*d*) vacates his office, whether by reason of dismissal, resignation, death, or otherwise, he, or, if he be dead, his personal representative or the person acting as such, must deliver to the Postmaster-General all articles, whether uniform, accoutrements, appointments, or other necessities, issued to such officer for the execution of his duty, and not his property, in good order and condition, fair wear and tear only excepted (*e*).

SUB SECT 4—General Powers

General
powers

1339 The Postmaster-General has power to establish posts (*f*) and post offices (*g*) as he thinks expedient, and to collect, receive, forward, convey, and deliver, in such manner as he thinks expedient, all postal packets (*h*) transmitted within, or to, or from the British

(*a*) "Officer of the Post Office" includes the Postmaster General, and any person employed in any business of the Post Office, whether employed by the Postmaster-General, or by any person under him or on behalf of the Post Office (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 89), see note (*t*), p 664, *post*

(*b*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 43 As to the office of mayor, see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, pp 296 *et seq*

(*c*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 43, see title JURIES, Vol XVIII, p 232, note (*e*) Exemption from the office of parish constable was given by the Parish Constables Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict c 20), s 5 As to protection of officers of the Post Office in actions, see title PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS.

(*d*) See note (*a*), *supra*

(*e*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 44 (1) Any person failing to do so is liable on summary conviction to a fine not exceeding 40s, and to pay such further sum, not exceeding 40s, as the court may determine to be the value of the articles undelivered or of the damage done thereto (*ibid*, s 44 (2)) A justice of the peace in such case may issue a search warrant as in the case of stolen goods (*ibid*, s 44 (3)) As to search warrants generally, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 310, MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 576, POLICE, p 498, *post*

(*f*) By the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 92 (*a*), any post established under any Act thereby repealed continues as if established under the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48)

(*g*) "Post office" is defined (*ibid*, s 89) as including any house, building, room, carriage, or place used for the purpose of the Post Office, and any post office letter box The expression "post office letter box" includes any pillar box, wall box, or other box or receptacle provided by the permission or under the authority of the Postmaster-General for the purpose of receiving postal packets, or any of them, for transmission by or under his authority (*ibid*) As to notices in post offices and as to early closing, see p 645, *post*

(*h*) "Postal packet" means a letter, post-card, reply post card, newspaper, book packet, pattern or sample packet, or parcel, and every packet or article transmissible by post, and includes a telegram (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 89) Upon the question whether any postal packet is a letter or any other description of postal packet within the meaning of this Act, or any warrant or regulations made thereunder, the decision of the Postmaster-General is final; but the Treasury may, if they think fit, on the application of any person interested, reverse or modify the decision and order accordingly (*ibid*, s 19).

Islands (i) or any British possession (k), subject to the provisions contained in the Post Office Act, 1908 (l).

SECT. 2.

The Postmaster-General's powers extend to the Channel Islands and the Isle of Man (m), and to British possessions where there is a post established by him, subject to modification by Order in Council or by any enactment of the legislature of the possession (n)

The
Postmaster-
GeneralExtent of
powers.

1340 He may also, with the consent of the Treasury, either generally, or in the case of any particular person, authorise letters or other postal packets to be sent, conveyed, and delivered otherwise than by post (o), and the same to be collected otherwise than by an officer of the Post Office, subject to such conditions and restrictions as are specified in the Post Office regulations (p)

Power to
authorise
collection and
despatch.SUB-SECT 5.—*Monopoly*

1341 Subject to the provisions contained in the Post Office Act, 1908 (q), with respect to British possessions (r), the Postmaster-General has, subject to the exceptions set out below, wherever within His Majesty's dominions posts (s), or post communications, are for the time being established, the exclusive privilege (t) of conveying from one place to another all letters (u), and also the exclusive privilege of performing all the incidental services of receiving, collecting, sending, despatching, and delivering all letters

Monopoly

The exceptions are —

(1) Letters sent by a private friend in his way, journey, or travel, Exceptions.

(i) "British Islands" include the Channel Islands and the Isle of Man (Interpretation Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 63) s 18 (1), see title STATUTES)

(k) "British possession" does not include the Channel Islands or Isle of Man (Post Office Act 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 89), under the Interpretation Act, 1889 (52 & 53 Vict c 63), s 18 (2) it includes any part of His Majesty's dominions exclusive of the United Kingdom

(l) 8 Edw 7, c 48, s 34 (1)

(m) *Ibid.*, s 88

(n) *Ibid.*, s 84 As to the power of the legislature of a British possession to establish posts and the effect of the exercise of this power upon the Postmaster-General's position, see p 657, *post*

(o) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 14 (a), see District Messenger Company Warrant, 1907 (Stat R & O, 1907, p 913), and conditions therein contained

(p) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 14 For definition of "officer of the Post Office," see note (a), p 630, *ante*

(q) 8 Edw 7 c 48

(r) See p 657, *post*

(s) "Post" here includes all post communications by land or water (except outward-bound vessels not being employed by or under the Post Office or Admiralty to carry postal packets (Post Office Act 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 34 (6)) "Outward bound" includes vessels bound from ports in the United Kingdom or in a British possession (*ibid.*, s 89) For definition of "postal packet," see note (h), p 630, *ante* It is unlawful to make a collection of letters for transmission by a private outward bound vessel (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 34 (2))

(t) *Ibid.*, s 34 (2) The postal monopoly only is here dealt with, for the Postmaster-General's telegraph and telephone monopoly, see title TELEGRAPHS AND TELEPHONES

(u) "Letter" here includes packet (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 34 (7)) The monopoly does not extend to newspapers (*ibid.*, s. 20 (3); see pp 646 *et seq.*, *post*), or to parcels (see pp 653, 654, *post*)

SECT 2
The
Postmaster
General.

so as those letters be delivered by him to the person to whom they are directed,

(2) Letters sent by a messenger on purpose, concerning the private affairs of the sender or receiver thereof (*i*),

(3) Commissions or returns thereof, and affidavits and writs, process or proceedings, or returns thereof, issuing out of a court of justice,

(4) Letters sent out of the British Islands by a private vessel, not being a vessel carrying postal packets (*a*) under contract,

(5) Letters of merchants, owners of vessels of merchandise, or the cargo or loading therein, sent by those vessels of merchandise or by any person employed by those owners for the carriage of those letters, according to their respective directions, and delivered to the respective persons to whom they are directed, without paying or receiving hire or reward, advantage or profit for the same in any wise (*b*),

(6) Letters concerning goods or merchandise sent by common known carriers (*c*), to be delivered with the goods which those letters concern, without hire or reward or other profit or advantage for receiving or delivering those letters

Collection of
excepted
letters not
authorised

1342 None of these statutory exceptions authorise anyone to make a collection of such excepted letters for the purpose of sending them in the manner thereby authorised (*d*)

Persons
forbidden to
carry or
receive
letters.

1343 Subject as aforesaid, the following persons are (*e*) expressly forbidden to carry a letter, or to receive or collect or deliver a letter, although they receive no hire or reward for it —

(1) Common known carriers (*c*), their servants or agents, except a letter concerning goods in their carts or waggon or on their pack horses (*f*), and owners, drivers, or guards of stage coaches,

(2) Owners, masters, or commanders of ships, vessels, or steam-boats, sailing or passing coastwise or otherwise between ports or places within the British Islands, or between, to, or from any ports within His Majesty's dominions out of the British Islands, or their servants or agents, except in respect of letters of merchants, owners of ships or goods on board,

(3) Passengers or other persons on board any such ship, vessel, or steam-boat,

(4) The owners of, or sailors, watermen, or others on board, a

(*v*) See *Circular Delivery Co. Ltd v. Clare* (1869), 20 L. T. 701 (conviction under the similar provision in the Post Office (Management) Act, 1837 (7 Will. 4 & 1 Vict. c. 33), repealed by Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48))

(*a*) For definition of "postal packet," see note (*h*), p. 630, *ante*

(*b*) As to shipping generally, and as to owners and masters of ships, see title SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION

(*c*) As to who is a common carrier, see title CARRIERS, Vol. IV, pp. 1—5.

(*d*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 34 (2)

(*e*) *Ibid.*, s. 34 (3)

(*f*) See *Bennett v. Clough* (1818), 1 B. & Ald. 461 (a decision under stat. (1802) 42 (reo. 3, c. 81, s. 6 (now repealed))).

ship, vessel, steam-boat, or other boat or barge passing or repassing on a river or navigable canal within His Majesty's dominions (*g*).

1344 Any unauthorised person who sends or causes to be sent, or tenders or delivers in order to be sent, or conveys, or performs any service incidental to conveying, otherwise than by post (*h*), any letter not excepted from the exclusive privilege of the Postmaster-General, or makes a collection of those excepted letters for the purpose of conveying or sending them either by post or otherwise, is liable on summary conviction to a fine not exceeding £5 for every letter, or, if he be in the practice of doing any of the said things, to a forfeit of £100 for every week during which the practice is continued (*i*).

SECT. 2.
The
Postmaster-
General.

Offences and
penalties

SECT. 3—Finance

SUB-SECT. 1—Revenue

1345 The gross revenues of the Post Office (*j*) must be paid at the times and under the regulations prescribed by the Treasury, to the account of His Majesty's Exchequer at the Bank of England and the Bank of Ireland respectively (*k*). But of the gross receipts (*l*) from the carriage of postal parcels (*m*) conveyed by railway (*n*), eleven-twentieths, or, upon revision, such other amount as may be fixed by agreement or arbitration (*o*), must by statute (*p*) be apportioned and paid to the railway companies through the medium of the London Railway Clearing Committee (*q*).

To whom
revenue
payable.

1346 Post Office revenue vested in the Crown is alienable, chargeable, or grantable by the Sovereign for his or her life only, all gifts, grants, or alienations made other wise are null and void (*r*).

Vested in
Crown.

(*g*) As to rivers and navigable canals, see titles RAILWAYS AND CANALS, WATERS AND WATERCOURSES.

(*h*) See definition, note (*s*), p. 631, *ante*.

(*i*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 34 (4), (5). As to offences and penalties generally, see p. 660, *post*.

(*j*) After deduction of payments for draw backs, bounties of the nature of draw backs, repayments, and discounts (Exchequer and Audit Departments Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict. c. 39), s. 10).

(*k*) *Ibid.*, and see title REVENUE.

(*l*) See Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 74), ss. 2 (2), 4.

(*m*) "Parcels" are all such postal packets as by the Regulations of the Treasury, made under the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), are defined to be parcels (Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 74), s. 17, Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 91). See Inland Post Warrant, 1903, s. 79 (Stat. R. & O. Rev., Vol. X, Post Office, p. 32).

(*n*) See p. 653, *post*.

(*o*) See Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 74), s. 8. Under the Railway Companies Arbitration Act, 1850 (22 & 23 Vict. c. 53), and amending Acts, and now by the Conveyance of Mails Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 38), s. 1, at the instance of any party, the Railway and Canal Commission are the tribunal of arbitration, as to which see titles COURTS, Vol. IX, p. 217. RAILWAYS AND CANALS.

(*p*) Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 74), s. 6.

(*q*) *Ibid.*, ss. 5, 12, and see Railway Clearing Act, 1850 (13 & 14 Vict. c. xxxiii), title RAILWAYS AND CANALS.

(*r*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 39, see also Crown Lands Act, 1702 (1 Anne, c. 1), s. 7, confirmed by Civil List Act, 1837 (1 & 2 Vict. c. 2), s. 1, Civil List Act, 1910 (10 Edw. 7 & 1 Geo. 5, c. 28), see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol. VII, p. 108.

SECT 3

SUB-SECT. 2 — *Expenses.*

Finance.

Expenses.

1347 Without prejudice to the provision above-mentioned as to payment for the carriage of parcels, all expenses incurred by the Postmaster-General in the management of the Post Office are paid out of moneys provided by Parliament (s)

SUB-SECT 3 — *Accounts*

Accounts.

1348 The Postmaster-General must cause such accounts to be kept of the Post Office revenue and expenses by such officers and under such regulations as the Treasury direct (t).

Audit.

1349 The Comptroller and Auditor-General must, if so required by, and according to any regulations prescribed by, the Treasury, examine and audit the accounts of the Post Office (a).

Part II.—Dealings with Land.

SECT 1 — *Holding of Land*

Postmaster-General a corporation sole.

1350 The Postmaster-General for the time being is a corporation sole (b) for the purpose of acquiring and holding land (c) All land vested in him is held in trust for His Majesty for the purpose of the Post Office (d)

SECT 2 — *Acquisition of Land.*

Power to purchase land

1351 The Postmaster-General, with the consent of the Treasury, may purchase land for the purpose of the Post Office (e) Such

(s) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 40

(t) *Ibid*, s 41 Accounts of the payments of gross revenues into³ Exchequer must be rendered to the Comptroller and Auditor General daily, in such form as the Treasury may prescribe (Exchequer and Audit Departments Act, 1866 (29 & 30 Vict c 39), s 10)

(a) *Ibid*, s 33

(b) By the name of His Majesty's Postmaster General with perpetual succession and an official seal (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 45 (1)), see title CORPORATIONS, Vol VIII, p 305 As to the purpose of his incorporation, see *Bainbridge v Postmaster General*, [1906] 1 K B 178, C A, per MATHEW, L J, at pp 193, 194, as to the effect of his demise, see some observations of F W Maitland, Law Quarterly Review, Vol XVII, p 145, see title CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, pp 105, 106, and see, further, p 628, ante

(c) "Land" here includes any right or easement in, over, or in respect of land (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 46 (4))

(d) The "purpose of the Post Office" means any purpose of any of the Post Office Acts or of any Acts for the time being in force relating to Post Office money orders, Post Office telegraphs, or Post Office savings banks, and includes any purpose relating to or in connection with the execution of the duties for the time being undertaken by the Postmaster-General or any of his officers (*ibid*, s 89)

(e) *Ibid*, s 46 (1), and see title COMPULSORY PURCHASE OF LAND AND COMPENSATION, Vol VI, p 162, see definition of "land" in note (c), *supra*. See also the text, *supra* The vendor or lessor is not bound or entitled to inquire if the dealing has statutory authority or the consent of the Treasury (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 47 (3)). Where the Postmaster General has purchased land, compulsorily or by agreement, for the purposes of the Post Office, with notice of restrictive

purchase is sometimes made under special statutory powers (*f*); it may also be made under the provisions of the Lands Clauses Acts (*g*), which are incorporated with the Post Office Act, 1908 (*h*), except the provisions relating to access to the special Act (*i*)

The provisions of these incorporated Acts with respect to compulsory purchase of land must not be put in force until the sanction of Parliament has been obtained (*j*)

SECT. 2. Acquisition of Land.

Sanction of
Parliament
required to
purchase
compulsorily.
Procedure to
obtain
sanction.

1352. At least three months before application is made to Parliament for sanction to the compulsory purchase of land, the Postmaster-General, with the consent of the Treasury, must serve a notice on every owner or reputed owner, lessee or reputed lessee, and occupier of any land intended to be so purchased, describing the land intended to be taken, and in general terms the purposes to which it is to be applied, and stating the intention of the Treasury to obtain the sanction of Parliament to the purchase thereof, and inquiring whether the person so served assents or dissents to the taking of his land, and requesting him to forward to the Treasury any objections he may have to his land being taken (*k*) The Treasury must, at some time after the service of the notice, make a local inquiry by a competent officer into the objections made by any persons whose land is required to be taken, and by any other persons interested (*l*) The Treasury, if satisfied after inquiry that

covenants thereon, the covenantee's remedy for injury is to claim compensation under the Lands Clauses Consolidation Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 18), s 68 (see title COMPULSORY PURCHASE OF LAND AND COMPENSATION, Vol VI, p 43), and not damages by action for breach of covenant (see *Kirby v Harrogate School Board*, [1896] 1 Ch 437 (C A)) Similarly, interference by a Post Office building with ancient lights cannot be restrained, but gives rise to a claim for compensation As to acquisition of rights to light as against the Crown, see title EASEMENTS AND PROFITS A PRENDRE, Vol XI, p 309 For a case of alleged breach of covenant by the Postmaster General to use premises as a post office for the district, see *Wadham v Postmaster General* (1871), L R 6 Q B 644 For form of lease to the Postmaster General, see *Encyclopædia of Forms and Precedents*, Vol VII, p 418 As to increment value duty and stamp duty, see p 629, *ante*

(*f*) For example, power was given by the Post Office Extension Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict c 87), to purchase a site for the extension of the General Post Office in St Martin's le Grand, and by the Post Office (Sites) Act, 1865 (48 & 49 Vict c 45), to acquire certain lands in London, Birmingham Bristol, and Newcastle upon Tyne for the public service The Public Buildings Expenses Act, 1898 (61 & 62 Vict c 5), provided for defraying expenses of purchase of land for, and works on, Post Office buildings at Queen Victoria Street and West Kensington, see also Public Buildings Expenses Act, 1903 (3 Edw 7, c 41)

(*g*) See title REAL PROPERTY AND CHATTELS REAL

(*h*) 8 Edw 7, c 48, s 46

(*i*) In construing those Acts for this purpose, the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), is the "special Act," the Postmaster General is "the promoter of the undertaking," and "land" has the meaning as in note (*c*), p 634, *ante* (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c 48), s 46 (2) (*a*)) The bond required by the Lands Clauses Consolidation Act, 1845 (8 & 9 Vict c 18), s. 85, must be under the Postmaster-General's seal, and is sufficient without sureties (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s. 46 (2) (*b*))

(*j*) *Ibid.*, s 46 (2) (*c*)

(*k*) *Ibid.*, s 46 (2) (*c*), (*d*)

(*l*) *Ibid.*, s. 46 (2) (*e*).

SECT 2
Acquisition
of Land.

the land ought to be taken, ^{may} submit a Bill to Parliament authorising the Postmaster-General to take the land. Any such Bill is deemed to be a public Bill, and, if passed into an Act, to have conveyed the sanction of Parliament to the compulsory purchase therein mentioned. The period for the compulsory purchase is three years after the passing of the Act (*m*).

Lands
belonging to
Duchy of
Lancaster

1353 Where the Postmaster-General deems it expedient, with the consent of the Treasury, to purchase for the purpose of the Post Office any land belonging to His Majesty in right of the Duchy of Lancaster, the Chancellor and Council of the Duchy may, if they think fit, agree with the Postmaster-General for the sale of, and may absolutely make sale of, such land for such sum of money as may to them appear sufficient consideration for the same (*n*).

SECT 3 — Disposition of Land

General
powers as to
disposition of
land

1354 The Postmaster-General may, with the consent of the Treasury, sell, exchange (*o*), lease, or surrender on any terms, any land for the time being vested in him (*p*), stipulating for, creating, or reserving all such rights or easements as may be deemed proper (*q*). He may sell either by public auction or by private contract, and may make any stipulations, as to title or otherwise, in any conditions of sale or contract of sale or exchange, and may buy in at any auction, and may rescind or vary any contract for sale or exchange, and may re-sell or re-exchange any such land (*r*).

Part III. - Conduct of Business.

SECT 1 — Regulations.

✱ ✱

Regulations.

1355 The Treasury may make regulations by warrant (*s*), on

(*m*) If while the Bill is pending in either House of Parliament a petition is presented against anything comprised therein, the Bill may be referred to a select committee and the petitioner may appear and oppose as in the case of private Bills (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 46 (2) (f)). See also title **PARLIAMENT**, Vol XXI, pp 747 *et seq*.

(*n*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 46 (3). The land may be assured to the Postmaster-General and the money is to be paid and dealt with as if the land had been sold under the Duchy of Lancaster Lands Act, 1855 (18 & 19 Vict c 58). See also title **CONSTITUTIONAL LAW**, Vol VII, pp 221, 222, 228.

(*o*) On any such exchange he may give or receive any money for equality of exchange (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 47 (1)).

(*p*) *Ibid*. No party to the dealing is bound or entitled to inquire whether statutory authority or the consent of the Treasury has been given thereto (*ibid*, s 47 (3)).

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 47 (2).

(*r*) *Ibid*, s 47 (1). As to stamp duty see p 629 *ante*.

(*s*) Any such warrant may be signified in manner provided by the Treasury Instruments (Signature) Act, 1849 (12 & 13 Vict c 89), any order, consent, authority, or direction of the Treasury (not being a warrant) under the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), may be signified either as by that Act provided, or under the hand of one of their secretaries or assistant secretaries (see p 629, *ante*) (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 83). Warrants or regulations made under any Act repealed by the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), may be revoked or altered by

the representation of the Postmaster-General (t), with respect to all matters authorised or required by the Post Office Act, 1908 (u), to be effected by Post Office regulations (v). All Post Office regulations must be laid as soon as may be before both Houses of Parliament, and a notice of the regulations having been made, and of the place where copies of them can be purchased, must be published in the *London Gazette* (w).

SECT. 1.
Regulations.
—

SECT. 2—Postage.

SUB-SECT. 1—In General

1356 On all postal packets (r) which are conveyed or delivered for conveyance by post under his authority, the Postmaster-General has power to charge, for the use of His Majesty, such postage (y) and other sums as may be fixed by the Treasury by warrant (z).

Power to
charge
postage

SUB-SECT. 2—Rates of Postage

1357 The Treasury may within certain limits (a), by warrant (b), fix the rates of postage (c) and other sums to be charged in respect

Control of
Treasury over
rates

warrant under the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), but, if not so revoked or altered, they remain in force (*ibid*, s 92 (d))

(t) *Ibid*, s 82 (1)

(u) 8 Edw 7, c 48

(v) "Post Office regulations" are regulations for the time being in force made under the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), by warrant of the Treasury, whether made upon the recommendation of the Postmaster General or otherwise (*ibid*, s 89). The matters authorised or required to be effected by Post Office Regulations are—Rates of postage (see the text, *supra*, and pp 638, 639, *post*), conditions of transit (see p 642, *post*), circulars or marks on newspapers not chargeable as letters (p 639, *post*), re-direction of postal packets (p 639, *post*), and of privileged letters (p 641, *post*), postal arrangements with foreign States (p 657, *post*), stamping paper provided privately (p 640, *post*), collection and delivery of letters not by post (p 631, *ante*), detention of book packets (p 643, *post*), indecent communications (p 644, *post*), newspaper supplements (p 647, *post*), literature for the blind (p 638, *post*), money orders (p 647, *post*), postal orders (p 648, *post*), and gratuities to masters of vessels (p 656, *post*). See the warrants thereat severally referred to, as to the effect thereof, see Post Office Guide. See also note (p), p 642, *post*. As to proof of Post Office regulations, see Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 30, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 525, note (q).

(w) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 82 (2)

(x) See note (h), p 630, *ante*

(y) "Postage" means the duty chargeable for the transmission of postal packets (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 89). All duties of postage and other sums in respect of postal packets payable in pursuance of the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), or any warrant or regulations made thereunder, are chargeable as stamp duties, and all enactments relating to stamp duties apply thereto (*ibid*, s 10). As to provisions under the Finance Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo 5, c 48), s 20, for enabling the Post Office to exercise powers in relation to stamps etc., see title REVENUE

(z) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), ss 1, 2

(a) See p 638, *post*

(b) See note (s), p 636, *ante*. A warrant under the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), may, subject to the limitations therein contained, revoke and alter any existing rate of postage or other sums, and any existing warrant and regulation made under any Act thereby repealed (*ibid*, s 92 (d))

(c) See note (y), *supra*.

SECT 2
Postage.

Scale of
inland rates.

of postal packets (*d*) under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*e*); and may regulate the scale of weights and the circumstances according to which those rates and sums are to be charged, and the power of the Postmaster-General, with or without the consent of the Treasury, to remit any such rates or sums (*f*).

1358 In the British Islands the minimum rate for an inland (*g*) letter must be one penny, the maximum prepaid rate for (1) an inland post-card (*h*), one halfpenny, (2) a reply post-card, double that sum, (3) an inland book packet, one halfpenny for every two ounces in weight, or for any fractional part of two ounces above the first or any additional two ounces, (4) each inland registered newspaper, whether with or without a supplement or supplements, and whether single or in a packet of two or more, one halfpenny, but for an inland packet of two or more registered newspapers, with or without a supplement or supplements, the maximum rate is the prepaid postage for an inland book packet of the same weight (*i*).

Special rates

1359 A Treasury warrant may also fix special rates and regulations for the transmission by post of postal packets consisting of books and papers impressed for the use of the blind (*j*).

Foreign and
colonial rates
and control of
Treasury

1360 Rates of postage between the United Kingdom and British possessions and foreign countries are fixed by the Postal Union Convention, except in the case of the very few countries which are not parties to the Postal Union, when the rates are the subject of special agreement (*k*). The Treasury is by statute (*l*) authorised to make regulations, by warrant, for carrying into effect the provisions of the Postal Union Convention, so far as they relate to foreign States, and any other arrangements, with respect to the conveyance by post of postal packets between the British Islands and places out of the British Islands, or between places out of the British Islands (*m*).

(*d*) See note (*h*), p. 630, *ante*

(*e*) 8 Edw. 7, c. 48

(*f*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 2

(*g*) "Inland," used in relation to any postal packet or description thereof, means, in the case of the British Islands, posted therein and addressed to some place therein, in the case of a British possession, posted therein and addressed to some place therein, used in relation to postage, it means the postage charged on the packet (*ibid.*, s. 89)

(*h*) See note (*i*), p. 643, *post*

(*i*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 2 (1) (*a*), (*b*)

(*j*) *Ibid.*, s. 2 (1) (*d*), see Inland Post Warrant, 1903 (Stat. R. & O. Rev., Vol. X, Post Office, p. 8), as amended by Inland Post Amendment (No. 9) Warrant, 1907 (Stat. R. & O., 1907, p. 876) (rates of postage), and Inland Post Amendment (No. 10) Warrant, 1908 (Stat. R. & O., 1908, p. 714) (special conditions relating to literature for the blind).

(*k*) A meeting of all States belonging to the Union is held about every five years, and between the meetings the business of the Union is transacted by the International Postal Bureau at Berne. The Convention originally made at Berne in 1875 is revised at the successive meetings: the last revision took place at Rome in 1906

(*l*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 4

(*m*) See p. 657, *post*. As to the maximum rate of prepaid postage on newspapers, not being inland postage, see p. 646, *post*.

PART III.—CONDUCT OF BUSINESS.

1361. Post Office regulations (*n*) may determine (1) what circulars or what commercial, legal, and other similar documents (*o*), and (2) what marks or indications referring to the contents of a registered newspaper (*p*), when written or printed on the newspaper or its cover, shall not be charged with postage as letters (*q*)

SECT. 3
Postage.
Regulations
as to
exemptions.

Such regulations may also make provisions respecting the re-direction of postal packets, and the transmission of postal packets so re-directed, either free of charge or subject to such postage as may be specified in the regulations (*r*)

SUB-SECT 3—*Payment of Postage*

1362 Postage is usually prepaid by means of stamps. When an inland letter or packet (other than Votes or Parliamentary Proceedings (*s*)) in the British Islands is not prepaid or is insufficiently prepaid, the postage charged thereon is, subject to any Treasury Warrant under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*t*), double the postage otherwise chargeable on the deficiency (*u*)

Mode of
payment.

1363 Where the postage or any other sum chargeable on any postal packet (*v*) is not prepaid by the sender, or is insufficiently prepaid, the postage or sum, or the deficiency, as the case may be, must be paid by the addressee on the delivery thereof to him; or, if the postal packet is refused, or the addressee is dead or cannot be found, by the sender (*w*). In such case of non-prepayment or insufficient prepayment, if the addressee, on receiving the packet and paying the amount due, desires to reject it, and to compel the sender thereof to pay the amount due, the Postmaster-General, on the application of the addressee, and subject to Post Office regulations (*x*), may charge the postage or other sum, or deficiency, as the case may be, to the sender, with the additional postage of returning the packet to him: the sender must then pay the said charges, and on payment thereof by him the Postmaster-General must repay the addressee (*y*)

Where
postage not or
insufficiently,
prepaid

Postage may be prepaid in certain cases by money (*h*).

(*n*) See p 636, *ante*, and see Post Office Guide

(*o*) See Inland Post Amendment (No 7) Warrant, 1906 (Stat R & O, 1906, p 526)

(*p*) See p 646, *post*, see Inland Post Warrant, 1903, s 30

(*q*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 2 (3)

(*r*) *Ibid*, s 2 (4), see Inland Post Warrant, 1903, ss 40-44

(*s*) See p 641, *post*

(*t*) 8 Edw 7, c 48

(*u*) *Ibid*, s 2 (2) As to parcels and for detailed rates of postage, see Post Office Warrants, the effect of which appears in the Post Office Guide.

(*v*) See note (*h*), p 630, *ante*

(*w*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 3 (1).

(*x*) See p 636, *ante*, and see Post Office Guide

(*y*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 3 (2) But the addressee is none the less liable to pay the postage or other sum chargeable on a packet or any deficiency thereon on the delivery thereof to him (*ibid*, s 3 (3)), unless he refuses to accept the packet without opening it.

(*h*) See Inland Post Amendment (No 1) Warrant, 1904 (Stat R & O, 1904, p 589), and Post Office Guide As to telegrams, see title TELEGRAPHS AND TELEPHONES

SECT. 2.

Postage.

Recovery
similar to
revenue
duties

Sums not
exceeding
£20

Sums not
exceeding
£50

Procedure on
recovery.

SUB-SECT. 4.—*Recovery of Postage.*

1364 All postage (*c*) and other sums payable under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*d*), in respect of postal packets (*e*), may be recovered in like manner as any duties granted to His Majesty by an Act relating to His Majesty's revenue (*f*) are recoverable by law (*g*).

Any sum not exceeding £20, due from any person for postage or in respect of postal packets, may be recovered in the United Kingdom summarily as a civil debt (*h*), any such sum, not exceeding £50, may be recovered in Ireland, without prejudice to any other mode of recovery, in the civil bill court (*i*)

1365. In proceedings for the recovery of postage or other sums in respect of postal packets, the production of any postal packet in respect of which such recovery is sought, having thereon a Post Office stamp denoting that the packet has been refused or rejected, or that the addressee was dead or could not be found, is *prima facie* evidence of the fact denoted (*h*), and the person from whom such postal packet purports to have come is, until the contrary be proved, deemed to be the sender of the packet (*i*). The official mark of any sum on any postal packet as due to the Post Office, British, colonial, or foreign, in respect of that packet, must in every British court, within or without the United Kingdom, be received as evidence of the liability of the packet to the sum so marked, and the sum is recoverable in any such court as postage due to His Majesty (*m*)

Powers of
Inland
Revenue as to
stamping
stationery

1366 The Commissioners of Inland Revenue may, under regulations made or sanctioned by the Treasury, stamp any paper sent to them for the purpose of being stamped as covers or envelopes of letters or packets, with stamps denoting the several rates of postage on payment of the amount of the stamps required to be impressed on the paper, and, unless the amount exceeds £10, on payment of such added fee as the Treasury may direct (*n*)

SUB-SECT. 5.—*Exemptions from Postage*

Statutory
exceptions —
Petition to
the King

1367 There are certain statutory exemptions from the liability to payment of postage (*o*) Petitions and addresses forwarded to His

(*c*) See note (*y*), p. 637, *ante*.

(*d*) 8 Edw 7, c 48

(*e*) See note (*h*) p 630, *ante*

(*f*) See title REVENUE.

(*g*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 7 (1) In the Channel Islands and Isle of Man, as a debt due to the Crown (*ibid*)

(*h*) *Ibid*, s 7 (2) As to recovery of debts summarily, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 609, 610

(*i*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 7 (3)

(*k*) *Ibid*, s 8 (1)

(*l*) *Ibid*, s 8 (2)

(*m*) *Ibid*, s 9

(*n*) *Ibid*, s 11. See title REVENUE. As to the application of enactments relating to stamp duties to postage, see note (*y*), p 637, *ante*

(*o*) See note (*y*), p 637, *ante*.

Majesty by post are exempt from postage (*p*). Members of each House of Parliament may receive by post petitions and addresses to His Majesty and petitions addressed to either House of Parliament, not exceeding thirty-two ounces in weight, exempt from postage, provided the same are sent without covers, or in covers open at the sides (*q*).

SECT. 2.

Postage.

Petitions to members of Parliament.

1368 The postage charged upon any Votes or Parliamentary Proceedings sent by post within the British Islands, not prepaid or insufficiently prepaid, is, subject to any Warrant of the Treasury under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*r*), the postage or deficiency which would otherwise be chargeable on them (*s*).

Votes or Parliamentary Proceedings.

1369 Certain seamen and soldiers (*a*) are privileged to send and receive letters, not exceeding half an ounce in weight, by post, or by private ships between the British Islands and places beyond the seas, on their own private concerns, at a postage of one penny for each letter when prepaid, subject in the case of letters sent by private ship to the payment of the gratuities payable to the master of the ship (*b*). The enjoyment of the privilege is subject to the following provisions — On any such letter sent by (*c*), or to be received by (*d*), any such privileged person, postage must be duly prepaid on the letter being posted, unless sent from parts beyond the seas, on such letters sent or received from parts beyond the seas, if the postage of one penny is not prepaid, postage of twopence is charged to the receiver (*e*). In the case of letters sent by a privileged person the writer's name, his class or description in the vessel, regiment, corps, or detachment, to which he belongs, must appear with the direction on the letter, and the name of such vessel, regiment, corps, or detachment, and the signature of the officer commanding it, must be written on the letter by the said officer in his own handwriting (*f*). Any such letter to be received

Seamen and soldiers.

Provisions as to privilege.

(*p*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 5 (1)

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 5 (2)

(*r*) 8 Edw 7, c 48, see p 636, *ante*

(*s*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 5 (3)

(*a*) The privileged persons are the following, while actually employed in His Majesty's service whether at home or abroad — I or all purposes, every non commissioned officer (not being a warrant officer) every bandmaster, schoolmaster, and soldier in any of His Majesty's regular forces within the meaning of the Army Act, any special reservists within the meaning of the Territorial and Reserve Forces Act, 1907 (1 Ldw 7, c 9), Part III (see title ROYAL FORCES), every seaman in His Majesty's Navy or Indian Marine Service, and, as regards re-direction, every officer, commissioned or not, in the said regular forces, every commissioned officer in the special reserve of officers, and every non commissioned officer in any body of special reservists, and every officer, commissioned or not, in the said Navy or Marine Service, and every midshipman and master's mate in His Majesty's Navy (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 6 (4)). As to the military and naval forces generally, see title ROYAL FORCES. For various offences arising out of the abuse of this privilege, see p 600, *post*

(*b*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Ldw 7, c 48), s 6 (1).

(*c*) *Ibid*, s. 6 (2) (a)

(*d*) *Ibid*, s 6 (2) (c)

(*e*) *Ibid*, s 6 (2) (f)

(*f*) *Ibid*, s 6 (2) (b).

SECT 2
Postage

by a privileged person must be directed to that person, and the vessel, regiment, corps, or detachment to which he belongs must be specified in the direction (*g*); and must not be delivered to any person except the privileged person to whom it is addressed, or to some person authorised in writing to receive the letter by the officer in command (*h*)

SECT 3 — *Conditions of Transit of Postal Packets.*

SUB-SECT 1 — *In General*

General
conditions

1370 All postal packets (*i*) must be posted (*k*), forwarded, conveyed, and delivered (*l*) subject to such provisions, conditions, prohibitions, and restrictions respecting the time and mode of posting and delivery, and of the payment of postage (*m*) and other sums in respect thereof chargeable under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*n*), or any warrant or regulations made thereunder, and respecting the registration of, and giving receipts for, and giving and obtaining certificates of posting and delivery of any postal packet, and the sums to be paid in addition to any other postage for that registration, receipt, or certificate, and respecting stamps, covers, form, dimensions, maximum weight, inclosures the use of packets (other than letters) for making communications, and otherwise, as may be directed by Post Office regulations (*o*)

SUB-SECT 2 — *Liability for Loss*

Liability for
loss

1371 The Postmaster-General is not liable for the loss of a postal packet, or for any injury to the packet (*p*), in the course of its transmission by post (*q*)

Registered
postal
packets

Postal packets may be registered (*r*) upon payment of a small fee, and registration ensures a hand to hand check throughout the transmission

Certificates of
posting

A certificate of the posting of an unregistered inland parcel and

(*q*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48) s 6 (2) (d)

(*h*) *Ibid*, s 6 (2) (e) A Treasury Warrant under the Post Office Act 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), with respect to rates of postage, must, if necessary, provide for the delivery of letters of privileged persons on their own private affairs, not exceeding, in the case of privileged persons other than such commissioned and warrant officers and midshipmen and master's mates as mentioned in note (*a*), p 641, *ante*, half an ounce in weight, free from any postage in respect of re direction (*ibid*, s 6 (3))

(*i*) See note (*h*), p 630, *ante*

(*k*) As to proof of posting, see p 659, *post* As to certificate of posting, see note (*g*), p 646, *post*

(*l*) As to proof of delivery see p 659 *post*

(*m*) As to definition of 'postage' see note (*y*), p 637, *ante*

(*n*) 8 Edw 7, c 48

(*o*) *Ibid*, s 12

(*p*) See *Lane v Cotton* (1701), 1 Ld Raym 646, approved in *Whitfield v Le Despencer* (Lord) (1778), 2 Cowp 754 (bank-notes stolen by letter carrier)

(*q*) For definition, see Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 90 (a) As to the effect of delay or loss in the post upon formation or revocation of contract, payment etc., see p 658 *post*.

(*r*) For particulars of these several services, see the Postal Guide They are sanctioned, so far as necessary, by Treasury Warrant. For service by registered post, see p. 658, *post*.

of an insured foreign or colonial parcel can also be obtained, and a certificate of the delivery of most articles of registered or insured foreign or colonial correspondence.

An inland postal packet may also be sent by express messenger throughout its entire course, in which case it can be traced from hand to hand (s).

1372 The registration of, or giving a receipt for, a postal packet (a), or the giving or obtaining of a certificate of posting or delivery of a postal packet (b), does not, however, make the Postmaster-General or the Post Office revenue in any manner liable for the loss of the packet or its contents (c). Nevertheless, subject to certain rules, and within certain limits, the Postmaster-General voluntarily and as an act of grace pays compensation, according to a published scale (d), for loss of, or damage to, registered packets, parcels and express packets, and certain insured foreign and colonial postal packets (e). On the same footing he pays compensation in certain cases for the loss of, or damage to, insured inland parcels (f).

**Part 3.
Conditions
of Transit
of Postal
Packets.**

Express
packets

Registration
does not
make liable

Compensation
paid
voluntarily

SUB-SECTION 3—Order of Despatch

1373 Where the despatch or delivery from a post office (g) of letters (h) would be delayed by the despatch or delivery therefrom at the same time of book packets, pattern or sample packets, and post cards (i), or any of them, those packets, or cards, or any of them, may, subject and according to Post Office regulations, be detained in the Post Office until the despatch or delivery next following that by which they would ordinarily be despatched or delivered (k).

Order of
despatch

(a) See Inland Post Warrant, 1903. Postal packets which contain coin and certain other articles, or which are marked "registered," must be registered (*ibid.*, ss 62—67), as amended by Inland Post Amendment (No 11) Warrant, 1910 and (No 14) 1911 (Stat R & O, 1910, p 608, 1911, p 328).

(a) See note (h), p 630, *ante*.

(b) See Inland Post Warrant, 1903, ss 68, 69, as amended by Inland Post Amendment (No 13) Warrant, 1911 (Stat R & O 1911, p 327), and Post Office Guide.

(c) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 13. As to the liability of railways in respect of parcels, see p 634, *post*.

(d) See Inland Post Warrant, 1903, ss 70—73, and the rates of compensation in Inland Post Amendment (No 3) Warrant, 1905 (Stat R & O, 1905, p 366). See, generally, Post Office Guide.

(e) As to express delivery, posting, mileage, and extra distance fees, see Inland Post Warrant, 1903, ss 48—61, as amended by Inland Post Amendment (No 6) Warrant, 1906 (Stat R & O 1906, p 525), and Post Office Guide. As to conveyance of foreign and colonial postal packets, see Post Office Guide.

(f) See Post Office Guide.

(g) For definition of "post office," see note (g), p 630, *ante*.

(h) The Inland Post Warrant, 1903, s 79, defines a letter as any postal packet which is not a post card, halfpenny packet, newspaper, or parcel, for a definition of "halfpenny packet," see Inland Post Amendment (No 7) Warrant, 1906 (Stat R & O, 1906, p 526).

(i) Post-card (*ibid.*) means a card of the authorised dimensions bearing either an impressed or an adhesive stamp denoting a rate or duty of postage, and, except where the context otherwise requires, includes a "reply post-card" (see *ibid.*, and *ibid.*, ss 15—18).

(k) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s 15, largely following the Inland Post Warrant, 1903, s. 75.

SECT 9

SUB-SECT 4—*Return of Postal Packets*Conditions
of Transit
of Postal
PacketsNo obligation
to return

1374 The Postmaster-General's duty is to deliver the postal packet as addressed, and delivery cannot be countermanded or directed by the sender. When delivery cannot be effected or is refused, the Postmaster General is under no obligation to return the postal packet to the sender by post (*l*)

In practice letters and parcels are always returned by post free of charge when the sender's name and address can be ascertained (*m*). For the purpose of return, the Postmaster General is authorised to open a letter or other closed postal packet (*n*). Post-cards, halfpenny packets and newspapers are only returned by post if they bear a request to that effect, and in that case a second postage is charged (*o*)

SUB-SECT 5—*Abuse of Postal Facilities*Regulations
as to abuse
of postal
facilities

1375 Post Office regulations may be made for preventing the sending or delivery by post of indecent or obscene prints, paintings, photographs, lithographs, engravings, books, or cards, or of other indecent or obscene articles, or of letters, newspapers, supplements, publications, packets, or post-cards having thereon, or on the the covers thereof, any words, marks, or designs of an indecent, obscene, libellous, or grossly offensive character (*p*)

Powers as to
postal packet
sent in
contravention
of regulations

1376 If any postal packet (*q*) is posted or sent by post in contravention of the Post Office Act, 1908 (*r*), or of any warrant or regulations made thereunder, the transmission thereof may be refused, the packet may, if necessary, be detained and opened in the post office. It must either be returned to the sender thereof, or forwarded to its destination, in either case charged with such additional postage at a rate not exceeding the letter rate of postage, or without any additional charge, as Post Office regulations may direct (*s*)

Contraband
goods

1377 The Postmaster General may detain any postal packet (*q*) suspected to contain any contraband goods and forward the packet to the Commissioners of His Majesty's Customs (*t*)

(*l*) As to alleging property in a postal packet in an indictment, see p 669, *post*

(*m*) See *Re Struck's Trusts* [1912] W N 149 and p 650 *post*

(*n*) The implied authority is the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 56 (2), see titles CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, Vol VII, p 69, note (i), CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 488, note (n)

(*o*) See Inland Post Warrant, 1903, s 46

(*p*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 16, and Inland Post Warrant 1903 s 6 see, as to the punishment for sending or enclosing such matters title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 539, see also *R v De Marny*, [1907] 1 K B 388 (a prosecution under the now repealed Post Office (Protection) Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict c 76), s 4.

(*q*) See note (h), p 630, *ante*

(*r*) 8 Edw 7, c 48

(*s*) See *ibid*, s 17

(*t*) See *ibid*, s 18, and title REVENUE The Commissioners, in the presence of the person to whom the packet is addressed, or if, after notice in writing from them requiring his attendance, left at or forwarded by post to the address on the packet, he fails to attend, then in his absence, may

SECT. 4 — *General Regulation of Business*

SECT. 4.

General Regulation of Business.

Early closing

1378 The terms and conditions respecting the early closing of Post Office business are subject to the approval of the Postmaster-General (*u*) No closing order can apply to any shop where the only trade or business carried on is Post Office business (*r*) Where Post Office business is carried on in any shop in addition to any other business, if the shop is a telegraph office, there is no obligation to close on the weekly half-holiday so far as relates to the transaction of Post Office business (*u*) Where the Postmaster-General certifies that the exigencies of the postal service require that Post Office business be transacted in such a shop at times when under the Shop Act, 1911 (*r*), the shop must otherwise be closed for the weekly half-holiday or under conditions not authorised by that Act, the shop is exempted from that Act for the purpose of the transaction of Post Office business, to the extent certified to be necessary by the Postmaster-General (*y*)

1379 Weights and measures supplied by the Post Office and used for Post Office business cannot be tested and condemned under the Weights and Measures Act, 1878 (*-*)

Weights and measures.

1380. Post Office buildings are not liable to be rated (*a*)

Rates

1381 Notices and lists ordered by the Registration Acts (*b*) to be affixed near post offices (*c*) must nevertheless not be affixed in or on any post office or any place or property belonging to or used by or on behalf of the Postmaster-General without his authority. Where he thinks that such affixing would obstruct or inconvenience the business of the post office, he may refuse that authority (*d*)

Exhibiting notices

open and examine the packet. If they find any contraband goods, they may detain the packet and its contents for the purpose of prosecution; if they find none, they must either deliver the packet to the addressee upon his paying the postage, if any, chargeable thereon, or, if he is absent, forward the packet to him by post (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 18)

(*u*) Shop Hours Act, 1904 (4 Edw. 7, c. 31), s. 2 see title FACTORIES AND SHOPS, Vol. XIV, p. 511

(*r*) Or where the only trade or business is Post Office business together with any of the following — Sale of medicines, refreshments, tobacco or newspapers, retail of intoxicating liquors, or railway bookstall or refreshment room business (Shop Hours Act, 1904 (4 Edw. 7, c. 31), s. 2 (5), Sched.)

(*w*) Shop Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo. 5, c. 54), s. 10 (1) (*a*)

(*r*) *Ibid.*, s. 2

(*y*) *Ibid.*, s. 10 (1) (*b*) Save as above stated, the Shop Act, 1911 (1 & 2 Geo. 5, c. 54), does not apply to Post Office business, nor to any premises wherein it is transacted (*ibid.*, s. 10 (2))

(*z*) 41 & 42 Vict. c. 49, *R v Kent Justices* (1880), 24 Q. B. D. 181 (where a postmaster traded also as a baker), see title WEIGHTS AND MEASURES

(*a*) *Smith v Birmingham Guardians* (1857), 7 L. & B. 483, see *Mersey Docks v Cameron, Jones v Mersey Docks* (1865), 11 H. L. Cas. 443, and title RATES AND RATING

(*b*) See title ELECTIONS, Vol. XII, pp. 193 *et seq.*

(*c*) By the Parliamentary and Municipal Registration Act, 1878 (41 & 42 Vict. c. 26), s. 9, see title ELECTIONS, Vol. XII, p. 261

(*d*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 80 As to the offence of affixing advertisements, notices, etc., to post offices, or painting or disfiguring etc., post office letter boxes, see p. 666, *post*

PART 4

General
Regulation
of Business.Private
posting box

1362. When it appears to the Postmaster-General that any post office letter box (e), by reason of being on the premises of any private person or otherwise, is so situate as not to afford the same security against the improper removal of postal packets (f) therefrom or other fraud as exists in the case of other post office letter boxes, he may declare such box to be a private posting box. He must affix upon or near it a notice of its being and of the effect of its being a private posting box. A postal packet put therein is not, for the purpose of any enactment, law, or contract, whereby the due posting of a postal packet is evidence of the receipt thereof by the addressee, deemed to have been duly posted (g).

SECT 5 — Newspapers

SUB-SECT 1 — In General

Rates for
newspapers

1363 It is not compulsory to send newspapers by post (h). Where they are sent by post, they are carried within the British Islands (i) at a special postal rate if they are registered (k).

For newspapers sent to places outside the British Islands, except in the case of Canada and Newfoundland (l), there is no special rate. They are carried as printed papers. But the maximum prepaid rate for a single newspaper sent by post between the British Islands and places out of the British Islands, or between places out of the British Islands, whether through the British Islands or not, is 8d, exclusive of any additional charge made by any British possession or foreign country (m).

Special rates
to Canada
and New-
foundland

By Treasury Warrant a specially low rate has been fixed for British newspapers, magazines, and trade journals sent, under certain conditions, to the Dominion of Canada and to Newfoundland (n). To enjoy this privilege the publications in question must be registered (o).

SUB-SECT 2 — Registration

1364 Provision is made by statute (o) for the registration of

(e) See note (g), p 630, *ante*

(f) As to definition of "postal packet," see note (h), p 630, *ante*

(g) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 81 (1). A certificate purporting to be signed by the Postmaster General or any secretary or assistant secretary of the Post Office, to the effect that any box or receptacle is or was provided by the permission or under the authority of the Postmaster General for the purpose of receiving postal packets, is in any legal proceedings evidence of the facts therein stated (*ibid*, s 81 (2)). As to proof of posting generally, see p 659, *post*

(h) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 20 (3). As to the law relating to newspapers generally, see title PRESS AND PRINTING

(i) As to definition of "British Islands," see note (r), p 631, *ante*.

(k) As to registration, see the text, *infra*

(l) See the text, *infra*

(m) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 2 (1) (c). As to definition of "British possession," see note (k), p 631, *ante*

(n) Foreign and Colonial Post Warrant, 1907, ss. 5, 24—29 (Stat R. & O., 1907, p 887), and Foreign and Colonial Post Amendment (No 6) Warrant, 1909 (Stat R. & O., 1909, p 644)

(o) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), ss. 20—22.

Annex I
Newspapers

Definition of
"newspaper."

newspapers (p). For the purpose of registration any publication consisting wholly or in great part of political or other news, or of articles relating thereto or to other current topics, with or without advertisements, is deemed a newspaper, provided that it be printed and published in the British Islands, and published in numbers at intervals of not more than seven days, and that it have the full title and date of publication printed at the top of the first page, and the whole or part of the title and the date of publication printed at the top of every subsequent page (q). For the same purpose certain publications are deemed to be newspaper supplements (r), provided that all sheets of a supplement must be put together in some one part of the newspaper, whether gummed or stitched up with the newspaper or not (s).

1385 The proprietor or printer of any newspaper within this description, or of any publication which, regard being had to the proportion of advertisements to other matters therein, is not within this description, but which was stamped as a newspaper before the 15th June, 1855, may register it at the General Post Office in London, at such time in each year and in such form and with such particulars as the Postmaster-General directs, paying on each registration such fee not exceeding 5s. as Post Office regulations direct (t).

Newspapers
not within
definition

1386 The Postmaster-General may revise the register and remove therefrom any publication not being a newspaper (u). His decision is final as to the admission to or removal from the register of a publication, save that the Treasury may, if they think fit, on the application of any person interested, reverse or modify the decision and order accordingly (x).

Register

(p) As to the postal rate for registered newspapers, see p 638, *ante*, and Post Office Guide

(q) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 20 (1)

(r) For this purpose a supplement is a publication consisting wholly or in great part of matter like that of a newspaper, or of advertisements, printed on a sheet or sheets or a piece or pieces of paper, or consisting wholly or in part of engravings, prints, or lithographs illustrative of articles in the newspaper, the publication in every case being published with the newspaper, and having the whole or part of the title of the newspaper printed at the top of every page, or at the top of every sheet or side on which any such engraving, print, or lithograph appears (*ibid*, s 20 (2)). In the case of supplements consisting wholly of engravings, prints, or lithographs illustrative of newspaper articles, these provisions may be modified by Post Office regulations (*ibid*, s 20 (2) (a)).

(s) *Ibid*, s 20 (2) (b)

(t) *Ibid*, s 21 (1)

(u) *Ibid*, s 21 (2). Any publication for the time being on the register is a registered newspaper for the purposes of the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48) (*ibid*, s 21 (4)). A registered newspaper is deemed a newspaper for the purposes of postal arrangements with the Governments of British possessions or foreign States (*ibid*, s. 22), see p 657, *post*.

(x) *Ibid*, s. 21 (3). Newspapers registered for transmission in the British Islands at the newspaper rate of postage are deemed to be also registered for transmission to Canada and Newfoundland at the special rate of postage (Foreign and Colonial Post Warrant, 1907, ss 5, 24—29 (Stat. R & O, 1907, p 889), Foreign and Colonial Post Amendment (No. 6) Warrant, 1909 (Stat. R & O, 1909, p 644)), as to special rates, see

SECT 6

Money
Orders

Money orders

SECT. 6.—*Money Orders.*SUB-SECT 1—*In General*

1387 So long as the Treasury think fit, the Postmaster-General has power (*a*) to provide for the remission of small sums of money through the Post Office by means of money orders (*b*). He may demand and receive for the use of His Majesty in respect of such orders, such rates of poundage, as may be fixed by Post Office regulations (*c*), all poundage so received is deemed part of the Post Office revenue (*d*).

SUB-SECT 2—*Provisions as to Money Orders*General
regulations
as to money
orders

1388 Post Office regulations may make provisions with respect to money orders, and to the payment thereof, and to the persons by or to whom they are to be paid, and the times and mode of payment (*e*). Subject to such regulations the Postmaster-General may repay the amount of any money order to the person to whom the order is issued, or his executors or administrators, whether the order remains in the possession of that person or not. Upon such repayment all liability on the part of the Postmaster-General, or any officer of the Post Office, or the Post Office revenue, or the Consolidated Fund, in respect of the money order ceases absolutely as against the payee of the money order, and the holder thereof, and every other person whomsoever (*f*). No action or other legal proceeding can be instituted against the Postmaster-General or any officer of the Post Office, or any person whomsoever, in respect of any compliance with such regulations, or otherwise in relation thereto, or in respect of the payment of such orders being refused or delayed by any accidental neglect, omission, or mistake, on the part of any officer of the Post Office, or for any other cause whatsoever, without fraud or wilful misbehaviour on the part of any such officer (*g*).

SECT 7—*Postal Orders*

Postal orders

1389 The Postmaster-General, with the consent of the Treasury, may authorise any of his officers (*h*), or, if the regulations so p 646, *ante*) Other newspapers, magazines, and trade journals may be registered for similar transmission to Canada or Newfoundland if they comply with certain conditions (Foreign and Colonial Post Warrant, 1907, ss 5, 24—29 (Stat R & O, 1907, p 889), Foreign and Colonial Post Amendment (No 6) Warrant, 1909 (Stat R & O, 1909, p 644)

(*a*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 23 (1)

(*b*) For payment of taxes by post office orders in Scotland and, where directed by the Treasury, in parishes in England, see Taxes Management Act, 1880 (43 & 44 Vict c 19), s 99, and title REVENUE

(*c*) See Money Order Regulations, 1903 (Stat R & O Rev, Vol X, Post Office, p 130), as amended by Money Order Amendment (No 2) Regulations 1908 (Stat R & O, 1908, p 753), and Post Office Guide

(*d*) As to Post Office revenue, see p 633, *ante*

(*e*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 23 (2) As to Post Office regulations generally, see p 636, *ante*

(*f*) See title BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS Vol II, p 567

(*g*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c 48), s 23 (4) As to the general liability of such officers, see p 629, *ante*, and title PUBLIC AUTHORITIES AND PUBLIC OFFICERS

(*h*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 24 (1)

SECT. 7
Postal Orders.

provide, any person holding office under* the Crown (i), to issue postal orders. Postal orders are money orders for a prescribed amount not exceeding 21s (k), issued in a special form to* be prescribed by the regulations, and payable in the manner and subject to the conditions thereby prescribed (l).

1390 A bank which, in collecting for any principal, has received payment or been allowed by the Postmaster-General in account in respect of a postal order, or a document purporting to be a postal order, incurs no liability to anyone except that principal by reason of having received the payment or allowance, or having held or presented the order or document for payment. The principal for whom such order or document has been so held or presented is not, however, relieved from liability in respect of his possession of such order or document or of the proceeds thereof (m).

Banking
practiceSECT. 8 — *Additional Postal Facilities.*SUB SECT. 1 *In General*

1391 The Postmaster General is empowered to make special arrangements with local authorities and with private persons for the provision of additional postal facilities when he is of opinion that such provision at the expense of the taxpayers cannot be justified

Arrangements
with local
authorities
and private
persons

(i) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 24 (3) Such person is, for the purpose of the issue and payment of postal orders, deemed an officer of the Postmaster General and of the Post Office (see definition of "officer," note (a), p 630, *ante*, and see note (l), p 664, *post*)

(k) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 24 (1) (a) The poundage must not exceed 2d. The order must not be issued until its amount and poundage have been paid to the issuing officer (*ibid*, s 24 (1) (b)).

(l) *Ibid*, s 24 (1) After three months from the last day of the month of issue, the order is payable only on payment in manner prescribed of a commission equal to the original poundage (*ibid*, s 24 (1) (c)). No interest is payable in respect of a postal order (*ibid*, s 24 (2)).

(m) *Ibid*, s 25 See title BANKERS AND BANKING, Vol. I, p 601, Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), repealing and re-enacting in substance the Post Office (Money Orders) Act, 1880 (43 & 44 Vict c 33), and the Post Office (Money Orders) Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict c 58). Neither a postal order nor any other kind of money order is a negotiable instrument. If, therefore, a postal order is lost or stolen in the post, neither the finder nor any holder for value has a good title to payment as against the rightful owner. A postal order is an imperfect instrument until either the name of the payee is entered in it, or it is crossed for payment to a banker (Postal Order (Inland) Regulations, 1905, s 9 (Stat R & O, 1905, p 383)), see title BILLS OF EXCHANGE, PROMISSORY NOTES AND NEGOTIABLE INSTRUMENTS, Vol. II, p 567. The finder of an order not so filled up or crossed has, therefore, no claim to payment. The postal order system may by arrangement be extended to a British possession, foreign State, or British protectorate, and when such an arrangement is made, the provisions of the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), with respect to postal orders, so far as is consistent with the tenor thereof, and subject to modification by Post Office regulations, apply (*ibid*, s 87). In such case the form of the order, and the amount (not exceeding 21s) may be prescribed by Post Office Regulations (*ibid*, s 87 (b)). As to offences in respect of money orders, see p 664, *post*.

SECT 8

Additional
Postal
Facilities.

Indemnity
against loss
by private
person.

Arrangements
with local
authorities

SUB-SECT 2 — *Indemnity to Postmaster General*

1392 The Postmaster-General may contract with, or take security from, any person applying to him to establish any post or telegraph office or to extend the accommodations of the postal or telegraphic service to any place, for indemnifying the Postmaster-General against any loss he may sustain thereby (n).

SUB SECT 3 — *Arrangements with Local Authorities*

1393 If a borough council (o) or urban district council (p) considers that it would be beneficial to the inhabitants of its borough or district, and if a rural district council (q), or a parish council (r) or, in the case of a parish not having a parish council, a parish meeting (s), considers that it would be for the benefit, in the case of a rural district council, of any contributory place or places within its district, and in the case of a parish council or parish meeting, of its parish, that any post or telegraph office should be established or any additional postal or other facilities provided by the Postmaster-General (t), then that council or meeting may undertake to pay to the Postmaster-General any loss he may sustain by reason of the establishment or maintenance of the office, or the provision of the facilities (u)

(n) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 48 The indemnity may be either for the whole or for part of the loss sustained, and for such time as the Postmaster General may think necessary

(o) See title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, pp 293 *et seq*

(p) *Ibid*, pp 262 *et seq*

(q) *Ibid*, pp 329 *et seq*

(r) *Ibid*, p 249

(s) *Ibid*, pp 254 *et seq*

(t) In or for the purposes of the borough or district in the case of borough or urban district councils, and whether within or without the area to be benefited, in the case of rural district councils or parish councils or meetings (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 49 (2), (3)) But a rural district council cannot proceed in respect of any office or facilities outside the contributory place proposed to be charged without the consent of the parish council, or, if there is no parish council, the parish meeting, of any parish wholly or partly situated in the contributory place (*ibid*, s 49 (3)) See title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, pp 331, 335

(u) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 49 (2), (3) These provisions do not apply to the Channel Islands (*ibid*, s 49 (10)), and special provisions are made for Scotland, Ireland, and the Isle of Man (*ibid*, s 49 (8), (9), (11)) Under *ibid*, s 49 (4), any expenses thus incurred under this section, in the case of borough councils, may be paid out of the borough fund or rate (see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, pp 310 *et seq*), in the case of urban district councils (not boroughs), out of the rate out of which the general expenses of the council under the Public Health Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 55), are defrayed (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 49 (4)), see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, pp 281 *et seq* Any expenses incurred in pursuance of an undertaking thus given may in the case of a rural district council be defrayed as special expenses legally incurred in respect of the contributory place or places, and must be apportioned between those places if more than one (subject to the Public Health Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 55), ss 229—231), and, in the case of a parish council or parish meeting, as expenses thereof within the provisions of the Local Government Act, 1894 (56 & 57 Vict c 23) (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 49 (5), (6)); see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, pp. 242 *et seq*.

1394. Any borough council or any urban district council, if it considers that it would be beneficial to the inhabitants of the same that any new post office should be on a more expensive site, or of a larger size, or of a more ornate building, or otherwise of a more expensive character than the Postmaster-General would otherwise provide, may contribute towards the new post office, either by a grant of money, or, with the consent of the Local Government Board (v), by the appropriation of land belonging to the council, or by the purchase of land for the purpose (w).

**Sec. 2.
Additional
Postal
Facilities.**

**Larger and
better
premises.**

SECT 9—Conveyance of Mails.

SUB-SECT 1—In General

1395. Statutory provision is made for the conveyance of mails (x) inland (a) and by ship (b) Mails
generally

SUB SECT 2—Inland

1396 The Postmaster-General may require railway companies to convey mails either by the trains which they run for their own purposes (c), or by trains run at times fixed by him (d) In the latter case six months' notice must be given to the company by the Postmaster-General (e). By railway

(v) See title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, pp 282, 283.

(w) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 49 (1) For this purpose by *ibid*, s 49 (7), a borough council may borrow under the Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 50), s 106, and any Act amending the same (see title LOCAL GOVERNMENT, Vol XIX, p 317), the council of an urban district (not a borough) may borrow as under the Public Health Act, 1875 (38 & 39 Vict c 55), see title PUBLIC HEALTH AND LOCAL ADMINISTRATION.

(x) For the purpose of the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), "mail" includes every conveyance by which postal packets are carried, whether it be a carriage, coach, cart, horse, or any other conveyance, and also a person employed in conveying or delivering postal packets, and ~~also~~ any vessel employed by or under the Post Office for the transmission of postal packets by contract or otherwise in respect of postal packets transmitted by the vessel (*ibid*, s 89) For the purposes of the Conveyance of Mails Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 38), "mails" (*ibid*, s 5 (1)) includes parcels within the meaning of the Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 74), see p 653, *post* See note (r), p 654, *post*

(a) As to definition of "inland," see note (g), p 638, *ante*

(b) As to Mail Ships Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 31), and Orders in Council under the Act now in force, see title SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION

(c) Regulation of Railways Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 48), s 18

(d) Railways (Conveyance of Mails) Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 98), s 1; see *R (Postmaster-General) v Great Northern (Ireland) Rail Co*, [1907] 2 I R 242 (mandamus to compel Irish train running under notice from Postmaster-General to await arrival of mails from Holyhead), and see title CARRIERS, Vol IV, pp 70, 71 As to railways generally, see title RAILWAYS AND CANALS

(e) Railways (Conveyance of Mails) Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 98), s 1 Agreements with railway companies may be altered upon increase or decrease of service (*ibid*, s. 7), and terminated upon six months' notice (*ibid*, s 8), or without notice, if full and fair compensation be paid, unless the railway company was in default in performing its service (*ibid*, s 9) Refusal or neglect to carry mails incurs a forfeit of £20 for each offence (*ibid*, s. 12), apart from forfeit of bond given as security (*ibid*, s 13). Such bond cannot contain a proviso excusing the company for non-performance due to the neglect or default of a post office servant (*A-G v London*

Sec 9	Sorting carriages, fitted up as the Postmaster-General may direct, are to be provided at the request of the Postmaster-General (f).
Conveyance of Mails	His Majesty's mail coaches must, if required, be carried instead of the carriages of the company (g). The mails need not be accompanied by an officer of the Post Office (h). Where mails are conveyed by special train the Postmaster General may require the whole train to be appropriated thereto exclusively of all other traffic except such as he may sanction (i).
Sorting carriages.	
Mail coaches	
Remuneration of railway companies	The remuneration of railway companies, except for the carriage of parcels, is determined, in default of agreement, by the Railway and Canal Commissioners (k).
Steam vessels	Where railway companies wholly or partly work steam vessels for communication between any towns or ports, the statutory provisions as to conveyance of mails by railways, so far as applicable, extend thereto (l).
Tramway company	A tramway company (m) must, if required by the Postmaster-General (n), perform all reasonable services in regard to the conveyance of mails as he may direct (o).
Tramroads	Tramroads (p) are, for the purpose of conveying mails, deemed to

and *North Western Rail Co* (1859) *John* 28) An agreement between railways that one of them shall carry no mails is not illegal (*Shrewsbury and Birmingham Rail Co v London and North Western Rail Co* (1851) 17 Q B 652)

(f) Railways (Conveyance of Mails) Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 98), s 3, Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 74) s 3 (5)

(g) Railways (Conveyance of Mails) Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 98), s 4

(h) Post Office (Duties) Act, 1847 (10 & 11 Vict c 85), s 16 and see title CARRIERS, Vol IV, p 71. An officer accompanying mails can recover damages for negligence against the company in spite of having no contract with them (*Collett v London and North Western Rail Co* (1851) 16 Q B 984, see title CARRIERS, Vol IV, p 46, and title NEGLIGENCE, Vol XVI, pp 426, 427)

(i) Regulation of Railways Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict c 119), s 36

(k) Railways (Conveyance of Mails) Act, 1838 (1 & 2 Vict c 98), s 6
Conveyance of Mails Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 38) s 1. As to remuneration generally, see titles CARRIERS, Vol IV, p 71, RAILWAYS AND CANALS. As to the Railway and Canal Commissioners, see titles COURTS, Vol IX, pp 217 *et seq*, RAILWAYS AND CANALS

(l) Regulation of Railways Act, 1873 (36 & 37 Vict c 48), s 20

(m) This includes every company, body, or person owning or working any tramway authorised by Act of Parliament passed after the 1st January, 1893 (Conveyance of Mails Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 38), s 2), a tramway means one authorised by an Act to be constructed wholly along public roads or streets without any deviation therefrom (*ibid*, s 5(1)), see title TRAMWAYS AND LIGHT RAILWAYS

(n) He cannot require carriage of mails in excess of certain weights, see Conveyance of Mails Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 38), s 2 (1) (a)

(o) Mails must be so carried as neither to interfere with the custody of the Post Office officer in charge of them, nor to inconvenience passengers (*ibid*, s 2 (1) (b)). In a carriage for passengers only and not for goods, the officer may not carry mails except as a passenger (*ibid*, s 2 (1) (c)). Where goods are carried, the above mentioned Acts as to conveyance of mails by railway apply (*ibid*, s 2 (1) (d)). Remuneration is determined by agreement, or in default thereof, by the Railway and Canal Commissioners (*ibid*, s 2 (2)). As to the Railway and Canal Commissioners, see titles COURTS, Vol IX, pp 217 *et seq*, RAILWAYS AND CANALS

(p) If authorised by an Act of Parliament passed after the 1st January, 1893

be railways, and the statutory provisions as to conveyance of mails by railways apply accordingly (*q*)

SECT 9
Conveyance
of Mails.

Arrangement
with railway
companies as
to parcels

1397. Under an arrangement confirmed by statute (*r*), to which all the important railway companies of the United Kingdom (*s*) were parties, parcels are conveyed (*t*), with or without notice, and with or without a person appointed by the Postmaster-General (*u*), by any trains by which passengers, goods or parcels are conveyed (*b*), and the remuneration is a sum equal to a certain proportion of the postage payable on every parcel conveyed throughout any part of its course by railway, and is payable in one sum to the London Railway Clearing Committee, which divides it amongst the companies according to certain rules (*v*). This amount of remuneration may on notice be varied by agreement or arbitration before the Railway and Canal Commission (*d*), and the whole arrangement may be determined on twelve months' notice by either the Postmaster-General or the railway companies (*e*). Notices to or on behalf of the railway companies are given to or by the secretary to the London Railway Clearing Committee (*f*). The railway companies must provide special parcel sorting vans if required (*g*) and must afford all reasonable facilities for the receipt and delivery of the sacks or other receptacles containing parcels at any of their stations without requiring them to be booked or interposing any other delay, and must transfer them to and from the vehicles of the Postmaster-General at the outwards and inwards railway stations (*h*)

(Conveyance of Mails Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 38), s. 3). A tramroad is defined (*ibid.*, s. 5 (1)) as any tramroad or tramway which is not a tramway as defined in note (*m*), p. 652, *ante*, and includes a tramway constructed under the Tramways (Ireland) Acts, 1860 to 1891, or the Railways (Ireland) Act, 1890 (53 & 54 Vict. c. 52), see title TRAMWAYS AND LIGHT RAILWAYS

(*q*) Conveyance of Mails Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict. c. 38), s. 3

(*r*) See preamble to Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 74), and *ibid.*, s. 2. The arrangement was for twenty one years and thereafter till determined by twelve months' notice on either side (*ibid.*, s. 3 (4))

(*s*) See *ibid.*, Sched. 1, as to other companies becoming parties, see *ibid.*, s. 9. The provisions of the Act apply, as far as they can, to any steam vessels worked by such railway companies (*ibid.*, s. 13)

(*t*) Parcels are defined (*ibid.*, s. 17) as meaning all such postal packets as by Treasury regulations made in pursuance of the Post Office Acts (see Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Fdw. 7, c. 48), s. 91 (1)), are defined to be parcels (see note (*m*) p. 633, *ante*)

(*u*) Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 74), s. 3 (1). Any servant of the Postmaster General appointed to take charge of the parcels during such conveyance must be carried free, and there is special provision for payment of damages in case of his injury (*ibid.*, s. 3 (3)). Assistance must, if required, be given to him, and he must not be interfered with (*ibid.*, s. 3 (4))

(*b*) The convenient and punctual working of mail and express trains must not be prejudiced thereby (*ibid.*, s. 3 (1))

(*e*) Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 74), ss. 5, 6, Sched. III

(*d*) *ibid.*, s. 2 (2), (3), see title COURTS, Vol. IX, pp. 217 *et seq.*
RAILWAYS AND CANALS

(*e*) Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 74), s. 2 (4)

(*f*) *Ibid.*, s. 12 (3)

(*g*) *Ibid.*, s. 3 (5)

(*h*) *Ibid.*, s. 3 (2). As to "outwards" and "inwards," see *R. v. London and North Western Rail. Co* (1896), 74 L. T. 624.

SEC 9
Conveyance
of Mails.
Conditions.

1398 The Postmaster-General must observe certain conditions in the distribution and delivery of the parcels (i) With regard to security and compensation for loss or otherwise the parcels are treated as letters sent by post. The companies are not liable in respect of the conveyance or loss of or damage to parcels, but must take all reasonable care for their security (k)

Application
of Customs
Acts

1399 The Customs Acts (l) apply to foreign parcels (m), subject to variation by Treasury regulations (n)

Parcels by
tramways

1400 The conveyance of parcels by tramways is subject to the same regulation as the conveyance of mails thereby (o)

SUB-SECT 3—By Ship

Obligation of
master of
vessel out-
ward bound

1401 Every master of a vessel (p) outward bound (q) must receive on board his vessel every mail bag (r) tendered to him by an officer of the Post Office (s) for conveyance, having received it, he must deliver it, on arriving at the port or place of his destination, without delay (t) If he fails to do so, he incurs a forfeit of £200 (u)

Obligation of
master of
inward bound
vessel.

1402 Every master of a vessel inward bound (b) must collect all

(i) Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 74) s 7 (1), (2), (3)

(k) *Ibid*, s 7 (5) They may refuse to carry any explosive or dangerous article not carried as a railway parcel by passenger train (*ibid*, s 7 (4)) see titles CARRIERS, Vol IV, p 27, EXPLOSIVES, Vol XIV, pp 385, 386, RAILWAYS AND CANALS

(l) See title REVENUE

(m) Foreign parcels are those either posted in, and sent to a place out of, the United Kingdom, or posted in a place out of, and sent to a place in, the United Kingdom, or in transit through the United Kingdom to a place outside the United Kingdom (Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 74), s 17) Parcels sent between the United Kingdom and the Channel Islands or Isle of Man are subject to Treasury regulations as to customs charges (*ibid*, s 15)

(n) *Ibid*, s 14 (1), (2)

(o) See p 652, *ante*, parcels are included in "mails" (see note (x), p 651, *ante*) See, however, the limitations as to weight (Conveyance of Mails Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 38), s 2 (1) (a)), and see *Clogher Valley Tramway Co v R* (1892), 30 L R 11 316 (tramway not a railway within Post Office (Parcels) Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict c 74), special Act)

(p) These words include every person except a pilot, having command or charge of a vessel, whether the vessel is a ship of war or other vessel (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 89)

(q) These words include vessels bound as well from any port in the United Kingdom as from any port in a British possession "British possession" does not include the Channel Islands or Isle of Man (*ibid*, s 89), see note (k), p 631, *ante*

(r) A "mail bag" includes a bag, box, parcel, or other envelope or covering in which postal packets in course of transmission by post are conveyed, whether it does or does not contain any such packets (*ibid*)

(s) See note (a), p 630, *ante*

(t) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 26 (1)

(u) *Ibid*, s 26 (2) For a case of injunction restraining refusal to receive mail bags (before the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), see *A. G. v. Onward Steamship Co* (1886), 3 T L R 262.

(b) These words include vessels bound as well to any port in the British Islands as to any port in a British possession (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 89); and see note (k), p. 631, *ante*.

PART III.—CONDUCT OF BUSINESS.

64

postal packets(c) on board his vessel being within the exclusive privilege of the Postmaster-General(d), and not being shipowners' letters(e) He must enclose them in some bag or other covering, sealed with his seal, and addressed to the Postmaster-General, and without delay deliver those packets to the proper officer of the Post Office(f) demanding them, or, if no such demand is made, then at the post office with which he can first communicate(g)

SECT. 9
Conveyance
of Mails.

The master of every such vessel must, at the port where the vessel reports, sign, in the presence of the proper officer of the Post Office(f) or other person authorised by the Postmaster-General(h), a declaration of compliance with the above provisions Until he has performed the duties above mentioned, he must not break bulk or make entry of any part of her cargo in any port(i).

1403. Such master incurs a forfeit of £200 if he does not duly deliver any postal packets(c) as above required(A), of £50 if he refuses or wilfully neglects to make the declaration above required(I), and of £20, recoverable summarily, if he breaks bulk or makes entry(m) before the postal packets on board his vessel have been delivered as above required(n) Penalty

1404 An officer of customs(o) must not allow any inward bound vessel(p) to report until the above-mentioned declaration has been made and produced to him He may refuse to permit bulk to be broken on board such a vessel or entry to be made of any part of her cargo(m) until the postal packets(c) on board the vessel have been delivered as above required He may search every such vessel for postal packets which may be on board contrary to statute(q), and may seize the same and forward them to the nearest post office(r) He incurs a forfeit of £50 if he permits Duty of customs officer

(c) For definition of "postal packet," see note (h), p 630, *ante*

(d) See p 631, *ante*

(e) "Shipowners' letters" under the Post Office Act 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 30 (1), include letters of the owners, charterers, or consignees of vessels inward bound, and of the owners, consignees, or shippers of goods on board those vessels, see p 660, *post*

(f) See note (a), p 630, *ante*

(g) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 27 (1)

(h) Such officer or other person present must also sign the declaration (*ibid.*, s 27 (2))

(i) *Ibid.* The declaration may be in the form contained in *ibid.* Sched I, which affirms the due delivery to the Post Office of all mail bags, packets etc on board the vessel, except such packets as are exempted by law As to what constitutes "breaking bulk" or "making entry," see title SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION

(k) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 27 (3)

(l) *Ibid.*, s. 27 (4)

(m) See note (i), *supra*

(n) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 27 (5) As to penalty for master of vessel opening mail bag, see p 662, *post*

(o) As to officers of customs, see title REVENUE

(p) See note (b), p 654, *ante*.

(q) See pp 631—633, *ante*.

(r) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c 48), s 20 (1).

SECT 9
Conveyance
of Mails.

Shipowners'
letters

any vessel to report before the above-mentioned requisites have been complied with (a).

1405 Shipowners' letters (b), provided that the letters brought by any one vessel to any one person do not collectively exceed six ounces in weight (c), and that the owner, charterer, or consignee be described as such on the address and superscription (d), and that, in the case of owners, shippers, or consignees of goods, it also appears by the ship's manifest (e) that they have goods on board the vessel (f), must, if required to be delivered at the port of the vessel's arrival, be delivered to the owners, charterers, consignees, or shippers, by the master free of inland postage, and the persons to whom they are to be delivered are entitled to the delivery thereof before the delivery of the other letters to the Post Office (g), if delivered elsewhere in the British Islands must be delivered by post on payment of inland postage only (h). Delivery in either case is subject to the previous payment to the Post Office of the gratuities payable to masters of vessels bringing the letters (i).

Allowances to
masters of
vessels

1406 Post Office regulations (j) may provide for the allowance to masters of vessels (k) in respect of postal packets (l), or any description thereof, conveyed by them on behalf of the Post Office, and also to pilots, seamen, and others in respect of postal packets, or any description thereof, brought by them to any post office from any vessels, of such gratuities under such conditions and restrictions as the Postmaster-General may from time to time think fit (m).

SUB SECT 4 — Exemption from Tolls

Exemption
from tolls

1407 Carriages or horses conveying mail bags (n) are exempt from toll at places where tolls are otherwise demandable (o).

(a) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 29 (2)

(b) For definition of "shipowners' letters," see note (e), p 655, *ante*

(c) Except in the case of letters brought by vessels coming from Ceylon, the Mauritius, India, or the Cape of Good Hope, into any port of the British Islands for an owner, charterer, or consignee of such a vessel in which case they may be collectively twenty ounces in weight (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 30 (2) (a)). An officer of customs, on finding any shipowners' letters to exceed these limits of weight, may seize and take to the nearest post office so many of the letters as will reduce the remainder within the limits (*ibid*, s 30 (3)).

(d) *Ibid*, s 30 (2) (b). For the criminal offence of abusing this privileged exemption, see p 660, *post*

(e) As to a ship's manifest see title SHIPPING AND NAVIGATION

(f) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 30 (2) (c)

(g) *Ibid*, s 30 (1) (a).

(h) *Ibid*, s 30 (1) (b)

(i) *Ibid*, s 30 (1)

(j) See p 636, *ante*

(k) For definition of "master," see note (p), p 654, *ante*

(l) For definition of "postal packet," see note (h), p 630, *ante*

(m) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 31

(n) For definition of "mail bag," see note (r), p 654, *ante*

(o) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 79 (1), see a case previous to the Act (*Northam Bridge Co. v R* (1886), 55 L T 759). See title HIGHWAYS, STREETS, AND BRIDGES, Vol XVI, p 65. The privilege of Post Office officials does not apply to a ferry (not being an ancient legal

PART III—CONDUCT OF BUSINESS.

SECT. 10—*Establishment of Posts in British Possessions.*

1408 The legislature of any British possession (*p*) may by any enactment make such provision as may seem fit for the establishment, maintenance, and regulation of posts within the possession, and for charging rates of postage, and for appropriating the revenue derived therefrom (*q*) Where any such enactment for establishing, maintaining, and regulating posts within the possession has come into operation (*r*), the powers and privileges of the Treasury and the Postmaster-General in relation to such posts shall cease after that date (*s*)

SECT 10
Establish-
ment of
Posts in
British
Posses-
sions.

Posts in
British
possessions.

SECT 11—*Arrangements with Foreign Countries*

1409 Where an arrangement has been made by His Majesty with any foreign State with respect to the conveyance by post of any postal packets (*t*) between the British Islands and places out of the British Islands, or between places out of the British Islands whether through the British Islands or not, the Treasury may, by warrant, make such regulations as may seem to them necessary for carrying the arrangement into effect, and may make provisions as to the charges for the transit of postal packets, single or in bulk, and the scale of weights to be adopted, and the accounting for and paying over to any foreign State of any money received by the Postmaster-General (*a*)

Arrangements
with foreign
countries.

Part IV.—Communications by Post.

SECT 1—*Legal Effect*

1410 The legal effect of communications by post (*b*) has been dealt with in respect of the following matters elsewhere:—

Letters in
contract,
label etc

ferry) which a statutory corporation is authorised to work but not obliged to maintain (*A-G v Londonderry Bridge Commissioners*, [1903] 1 I R 389) As to the offence of demanding toll, see p 667, *post* Tolls leviable in Scotland or Ireland in respect of mails must be accounted for and paid by the Postmaster-General out of moneys provided by Parliament (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 79 (4))

(*p*) For definition of "British possession," see note (*k*), p 631, *ante*

(*q*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 85 (1). As to newspapers, see note (*u*), p 647, *ante*

(*r*) Where there is in the possession any post established by the Postmaster-General, the enactment does not come into operation until His Majesty's consent thereto given by Order in Council is declared in the possession, or until such later date as the Order may fix (*ibid*, s 85 (2))

(*s*) *Ibid*, s 86.

(*t*) For definition of "postal packet," see note (*k*), p 630, *ante*

(*a*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 4 As to Treasury warrants and regulations, see p 636, *ante* as to postal orders, see note (*m*), p 649, *ante*, as to newspapers, see note (*u*), p 647, *ante*

(*b*) As to criminal law, see p 659 *et seq*, *post*.

SECT 1
Legal
Effect.

of contract by post (c); copyright (d) and property (e) in letters; publication of libel by letter (f), postcard (g), or telegram (h); payment by post (i), address of communications to a company (k), payment of dividend warrant (l), and notice of allotment of shares (m) by post, service of process in general (n) by post, and service of notices and other documents upon companies (o), in trustee matters (p), mortgages (q), landlord and tenant notices (r), or in bankruptcy cases (s) by post.

SECT 2—*Evidence.*

Evidence and
proof

1411. The admissibility in evidence of letters in general (t), and of letters marked "private and confidential" (u) or "without

(c) See title CONTRACT, Vol VII, pp 352 (contracts made through the post), 353 (acceptance made through post demand of acceptance "by return of post", effect of delivery to postman agency of Post Office delay and loss in post), 354 (revocation of offer by post) As to posting notice of allotment of shares, see the text, *infra* As to proof of posting, delivery etc, see pp 643, *ante*, 659, *post* As to inference to be drawn from failure to answer letter, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 458

(d) See title COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY, Vol VIII, p 138 (right to restrain publication of letter)

(e) See *ibid*, p 138 (right to recover possession of letter), see note (b), p 669, *post* See also title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 448 (possession of letter with seals broken, presumed knowledge of contents) As to forwarding of letters, see p 644, *ante*, and note (l), p 663, *post*

(f) See title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, pp 660 (letter addressed to plaintiff and opened by third party: letter placed in wrong envelope), 661 (transmission by post as evidence of receipt), as to which see also title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 441, 556

(g) See title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 661 For definition of "post-card," see note (s), p 643, *ante*

(h) See title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 661

(i) See title CONTRACT, Vol VII, p 449 As to effect of loss of cheque in post, see *ibid*, and title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 556, note (c), see also pp 642, 643, *ante*

(k) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 83

(l) See *ibid*, p 529 As to whether posting of a warrant may be payment of a dividend, see *Thantwall v Great Northern Railway*, [1910] 2 K B 508.

(m) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, p 173

(n) See titles COUNTY COURTS, Vol VIII, pp 619 *et seq*. MAYOR'S COURT, LONDON, Vol XX, p 291, PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE

(o) See title COMPANIES, Vol V, pp 83, 306, 307, 308, 561.

(p) As to service of request to a trustee under the Trustee Act, 1893 (56 & 57 Vict c 53), s 35, see *Re Struve's Trusts*, [1912] W N 149; title TRUSTS AND TRUSTEES

(q) As to sufficient address and service of notice under the Conveyancing and Law of Property Act, 1881 (44 & 45 Vict c 41), s 67, see title MORTGAGE Vol XXI, pp 251, 252

(r) As to service of notice by superior landlord upon undertenant or lodger by registered post, see title DISTRESS, Vol XI, p 147; *Jarvis v. Remondos*, [1912] 1 Ch 462; and p 643, *ante*.

(s) See title BANKRUPTCY AND INSOLVENCY, Vol. II, pp. 291 (effect of notice by post), 320 (service by post)

(t) See title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 439

(u) See title COPYRIGHT AND LITERARY PROPERTY, Vol. VIII, p. 138.

prejudice" (a), and the proof of the posting (b), date (c), delivery (d), and receipt (e) of letters are also dealt with elsewhere

SECT. 2
Evidence

Part V.—Offences.

SECT 1—In General

1412 Various offences against the Post Office are defined by statute (f). Some of these have been mentioned elsewhere as part of the general criminal law (g), others are set out in the following paragraphs

Offences
defined by
statute.

(a) See title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 457, 557 *et seq*

(b) See *ibid*, pp 441 (how far conclusive by statute and orders), 556 (general proof of posting), 557 (copy in letter book, evidence of posting as against owner). As to a solicitor's bill of costs "sent by the post" see *Browne v Black*, [1912] 1 K B 316, C A, and title SOLICITORS, as to transmission of case stated to court within three days, see *Holland v Peacock*, [1912] 1 K B 154, title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, p 651 note (r). As to sending (within seven days) notice of defence of written warranty under Sale of Food and Drugs Act, 1899 (62 & 63 Vict c 51), s 20 (1), see *Retail Dairy Co, Ltd v Clarke*, [1912] 2 K B 388. As to certificate of posting, see note (g), p 646, *ante*.

(c) See title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, pp 556 (postmark evidence of time and place of posting), 557 (date of letter *prima facie* evidence of date of writing)

(d) See *ibid*, pp 441 (delivery of letter unsealed, presumed posting unsealed), 448 (possession of letter with seals broken, presumed knowledge of contents), 556 (general proof). As to liability for non delivery, see p 642, *ante*.

(e) See title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 441 (receipt presumed on proof of proper addressing and posting). As to posting in ordinary course of business, see *ibid*, see also *ibid*, p 458 (failure to answer, not necessarily an admission of truth of contents). As to proof of publication of libel, see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, pp 660, 661.

(f) Chiefly by the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), ss 50—69. Most of the cases hereafter cited were decided under statutes repealed and re-enacted by that Act.

(g) See title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 488 (opening or delaying postal packets by Post Office officer), 539 (sending indecent or obscene prints, words etc.), 644, 645 (stealing postal packet, stealing or embezzling postal packet by Post Office officer), 746 (imitating paper etc used for stamp duties), 747 (possession of paper, plates or dies), 748, 749 (forging dies, stamps etc), and see title REVENUE. See also as to various other statutory penalties under the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), p 633, *ante* (evasion of postage), note (e), p 651, *ante* (refusal or neglect to carry mails), pp 654, 655, *ante* (offence by shipmaster), p 655, *ante* (offence by customs officer), p 633, *ante* (infringement of postal monopoly), p 630, *ante* (for non-surrender of uniform). For offences in sending threatening letters, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX., pp 596 (threat to murder), 664 *et seq*. (demand of money etc. by threatening letter), 666 (threat to accuse of crime), 668 (threat to publish libel). For offences in respect of telegrams, see title TELEGRAPHS AND TELEPHONES.

SECT 2

Infringe-
ment of
Postal
MonopolyInfringement
of postal
monopolyAbuse of
exemption of
privileged
persons
lettersSECT 2—*Infringement of Postal Monopoly.*

1413. Infringement of the Postmaster-General's monopoly (*h*) is an offence punishable on summary conviction (*i*) by fine (*k*)

SECT 3—*Abuse of Exemption of Privileged Persons' Letters*

1414 A fine not exceeding £5 for each offence, recoverable summarily (*l*), is incurred by every person who, (1) not having at the time the command of any vessel, regiment, corps, or detachment to which a privileged person belongs (*m*), writes his name upon a letter in order that it may be sent at a lower rate of postage than by law established (*n*), or (2) procures a privileged person to obtain (*o*), or being a privileged person obtains (*p*), the signature of his commanding officer upon a letter which is not from that privileged person and upon his private concerns only, in order to avoid the payment of the postage by law established, or (3) wilfully addresses a letter to a privileged person which is intended for another person or concerns the affairs of another person, with intent to evade the payment of the legal postage (*q*), or (1) being a commanding officer authorised to write (*r*) upon the letter of a privileged person, wilfully writes his name upon a letter that is not from and on the private concerns only of a privileged person (*s*)

SECT 4—*Abuse of Exemption of Shipowners' Letters*Falsely
supercribing
shipowners
letters

1415 A fine not exceeding £10 for each offence, recoverable summarily (*l*), is incurred by every person who, with intent to evade any postage (*t*), falsely supercribes a letter as being the owner or charterer or consignee of the vessel conveying the letter, or as the owner or the shipper or the consignee of goods shipped thereon (*u*)

Wilful
retention of
privileged
letter

1416. A fine not exceeding £5, recoverable summarily (*l*) is incurred by every person, who being either the master or one of

(*h*) As to which, see p 631, *ante*

(*i*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 34, p 633, *ante* As to summary proceedings, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp. 589 *et seq*

(*k*) See p 633, *ante* Such fines and forfeitures are incurred whether the letter is sent simply or with anything else, or the incidental service is performed in respect to a letter either sent or to be sent singly or together with some other letter or thing In any proceeding for the recovery of such fines or forfeitures, it lies upon the person proceeded against to prove that the act in respect of which the fine or forfeiture is alleged to have been incurred was done in conformity with the Act (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 34 (6))

(*l*) As to summary proceedings, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol. XIX, pp 589 *et seq*

(*m*) See p 641, *ante*

(*n*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 6 (6) (a)

(*o*) *Ibid*, s 6 (6) (b)

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 6 (7)

(*q*) *Ibid*, s 6 (6) (c).

(*r*) See p 641, *ante*

(*s*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48) s. 6 (5)

(*t*) See note (y), p 637, *ante*

(*u*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 30 (4), see | p 632, 656 *ante*.

the officers or crew of a vessel inward bound (a), or a passenger thereof, knowingly has in his baggage or in his possession or custody any postal packet (b), except a postal packet not within the privilege of the Postmaster-General (c), after the master has sent any part of the postal packets on board his vessel to the Post Office (d)

SECT 4.
Abuse of
Exemption
of Ship-
owners'
Letters.

1417 If such person detains any such packet after demand made either by an officer of customs (e) or by any person authorised by the Postmaster-General to demand the postal packets on board the vessel, he is liable for every postal packet on summary conviction to a fine not exceeding £10 (f).

Punishment.

SECT 5 — *Fraudulent Retention of Mail-bag or Postal Packet*

1418 Anyone is guilty of a misdemeanour (g) who fraudulently retains, or wilfully secretes (h) or keeps, or detains (i), or when required by an officer of the Post Office (k), neglects or refuses to deliver up —

Fraudulent
retention of
mail bag or
postal packet

(1) Any postal packet (l) which is in course of transmission by post (m) and which ought to have been delivered to any other person, or

(a) As to what is an "inward bound" vessel, see note (b) p 651, *ante*

(b) For definition of "postal packet," see note (h), p 630, *ante*

(c) See p 631, *ante*

(d) See pp 654, 655, *ante* • • •

(e) See title REVENUE

(f) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 32

(g) *Ibid*, s 53

(h) See, as to secreting, *R v Wynn* (1848) 2 Car & Kir 819 (1849) 1 Den 365, C C R, where a letter sorter, to avoid detection of his mistake in sorting, threw unopened letters down a water closet

(i) Compare *R v Poynton* (1862), L R 1 Q B 247 (undelivered letter kept in postman's pocket with intent to steal or secrete), and see *Merrells v Banning* (1811), 2 B & Ad 909 (assignee of bankrupt demanding letters) As to civil proceedings in detinue, see title TROVER & DETINUE

(k) For definition of "officer," see note (a), p 630, *ante*, and note (l), p 664, *post*

(l) For definition of "postal packet," see note (h), p 630, *ante* For the effect of fictitious letters for the purpose of testing persons' honesty, see *R v Young* (1846), 2 Car & Kir 486 (letter to fictitious address), overruling *R v Gardner* (1845), 1 Car & Kir 628 As to evidence of an article being a postal packet, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 684, note (m)

(m) "Transmission by post" for this purpose time runs from the time of delivery to a post office to the time of delivery to the addressee (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 90 (a)) Delivery to a letter carrier or other authorised person is delivery to a post office (*ibid*, s 90 (b)), delivery at the house or office of the person to whom the packet is addressed, or to him or to his servant or agent or other person considered to be authorised to receive the packet, according to the usual manner of delivering that person's postal packets, is delivery to the person addressed (*ibid*, s 90 (c)) As to evidence of the posting of a letter, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 556, pp 643, 658, *ante* As to what constitutes posting in the ordinary way, see title EVIDENCE, Vol XIII, p 441, and *R v Rathbone* (1847), 2 Mood C C 242, 2 Car & M 220, *R v Shepherd* (1856) Dears C C 606 As to posting as publication of libel, see title LIBEL AND SLANDER, Vol XVIII, p 661, p 658, *ante*

SECT 5
Fraudulent
Retention of
Mail-bag or
Postal
Packet.

Punishment

(2) Any postal packet⁽ⁿ⁾ in course of transmission by post^(o) or any mail-bag^(p) which shall have been found by him or by any other person^(q)

1419 The punishment for this offence is fine and imprisonment with or without hard labour^(r)

SECT 6 - Sending Dangerous Substance by Post

Sending
dangerous
substance by
post

1420 Any person is guilty of a misdemeanour^(s) who sends or attempts to send a postal packet^(t) which encloses any explosive, dangerous, noxious, or deleterious substance, any filth, sharp instrument not properly protected, any living creature which is either noxious or likely to injure other postal packets in course of conveyance or an officer of the Post Office^(u), or any article or thing whatsoever which is likely so to injure such other packets or officer^(v)

Punishment.

The punishment for this offence is, on summary conviction, a fine not exceeding £10, and, on conviction on indictment^(w), imprisonment for a period not exceeding twelve months with or without hard labour^(a)

SECT 7 - Interference with Letters

Interference
with letters
by master
of a vessel

1421 A master of a vessel^(b) who either opens a sealed mail-bag^(c) with which he is entrusted for conveyance, or takes out of a mail-bag with which he is entrusted for conveyance any postal packet^(d) or other thing, incurs a forfeit of £200^(e) Any person to whom postal packets have been entrusted by the master of a vessel to bring on shore who breaks the seal or in any manner wilfully opens them, is liable on summary conviction to a fine not exceeding £20^(f)

(n) See note (h), p 630, *ante*

(o) See note (m), p 661, *ante*

(p) See note (i), p 654, *ante*

(q) As to stealing or receiving stolen postal packets or mail-bags, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 645, 684

(r) The Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 53, which substantially re-enacts the Post Office (Offences) Act, 1837 (7 Will 4 & 1 Vict c 36), ss 31, 42, does not specify the amount of the fine and imprisonment

(s) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 63 (1)

(t) See note (h), p 630, *ante*

(u) See note (a), p 630, *ante*, and note (t), p 664, *post*

(v) See title EXPLOSIVES, Vol XIV, p 395 As to sending by post prints, articles etc which are indecent or obscene, or have indecent words, marks, or designs, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 539 Detention in the post office of any postal packet contravening this section does not exempt the sender from proceedings which might have been taken in case of due delivery by post (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 63 (3)) See also title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX., pp 586, 587

(w) Indictment includes an information (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 89).

(a) *Id.*, s 63 (2)

(b) See note (p), p 654, *ante*

(c) See note (r), p 654, *ante*

(d) See note (h), p 630, *ante*

(e) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 28 (1), see pp 654, 685, *ante*.

(f) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 28 (2).

PART V — OFFENCES.

1422. Any person not in the employment of the Postmaster-General (*g*) is (*h*) guilty of a misdemeanour, who, not being a parent, or in the position of parent or guardian, of the addressee of the letter (*s*), wilfully and maliciously, with intent to injure any other person, either opens, or causes to be opened, any letter (*k*) which ought to have been delivered to that other person, or does any act or thing whereby the due delivery of the letter to that other person is prevented or impeded (*l*)

SECT. 7.
Interference with Letters.
by person not a parent or guardian.

The punishment for this offence is a fine not exceeding £50, or imprisonment for a term not exceeding six months with or without hard labour. Prosecutions for this offence cannot be instituted without the direction or consent of the Postmaster-General (*m*)

Punishment.

SECT. 8 — *Negligence or Misconduct of Letter Carriers.*

1423. Any person employed to convey or deliver a mail-bag (*n*) or a postal packet (*o*), in course of transmission by post (*p*), is liable on summary conviction to a fine not exceeding £20 who while so employed, or while in possession or custody of the mail-bag or postal packet—

Offences by letter carriers

(1) Leaves it, or suffers any person, not being the guard or person employed for that purpose, to ride in the place appointed for the guard in or upon any carriage used for its conveyance (*q*), or to ride in or upon a carriage so used and not licensed to carry passengers, or upon a horse used for its conveyance on horseback, or

(1) Leaving mail unguarded;

(2) Is guilty of any act of drunkenness, or

(2) drunkenness

(3) Is guilty of carelessness, negligence, or other misconduct, whereby the safety of the mail bag or postal packet is endangered, or

(3) negligence,

(4) Without authority collects, receives, conveys, or delivers a postal packet otherwise than in the ordinary course of post, or

(4) collecting postal packets without authority,

(5) Gives false information of an assault or attempt at robbery upon him, or

(5) false information as to assault;

(*g*) See note (*a*), p. 630, *ante*, and note (*l*), p. 664, *post*

(*h*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 54 (1)

(*i*) *Ibid*, s. 54 (2)

(*k*) "Letter" here means a postal packet (see note (*h*), p. 630, *ante*) in course of transmission by post (see note (*m*), p. 661, *ante*), and any other letter which has been delivered by post (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 54 (4))

(*l*) See *Stapleton v. Foreign Vineyard Association* (1864), 11 L. T. 77 (where the court refused to restrain the Postmaster-General from delivering, or the company from receiving and opening, letters directed to the ex-manager of a company at that company's premises), and *Hermann Loog v. Bean* (1884), 26 Ch. D. 306, C.A. (where an ex-manager who had resided on the company's premises was compelled by injunction to withdraw a direction to the Postmaster-General that letters so directed should be forwarded to his private address)

(*m*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s. 54 (1), (3).

(*n*) See note (*r*), p. 654, *ante*.

(*o*) See note (*h*), p. 630, *ante*

(*p*) See note (*m*), p. 661, *ante*

(*q*) As to railways, see pp. 652, 653, *ante*.

SECT 8
Negligence
or Mis-
conduct of
Letter
Carriers.

(6) loiter-
 ing,

Fraudulent
 issue of
 money orders

(6) Loiters on the road or passage, or wilfully mis-spends his time so as to delay the progress or arrival of a mail bag or postal packet in course of transmission by post (*i*), or does not use due care and diligence safely to convey a mail-bag or postal packet at the due rate of speed (*s*)

SECT 9—Fraudulent Issue of Money Orders

1424 Any officer of the Post Office (*t*) is guilty of a felony who grants or issues any money order (*u*) with a fraudulent intent (*a*)

SECT 10—Sending or Making Paper etc in Imitation of Post Office Paper

Sending or
 making paper
 etc in imita-
 tion of Post
 Office paper

1425 A fine of 40s, recoverable summarily, is incurred by any person who, without due authority—

(1) Makes, issues, or sends by post or otherwise any envelope, wrapper, card, form, or paper in imitation of one issued by the Postmaster-General or any foreign or colonial postal authority, or having thereon any words, letters, or marks, which signify or imply, or may reasonably lead the recipient to believe, that a postal packet (*b*) bearing them is sent on His Majesty's service, or

(2) Makes on any envelope, wrapper, card, form, or paper for the purpose of being issued or sent by post or otherwise, or otherwise

(*r*) See also title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 488, as to wilful detaining or delaying of postal packets. For actions against Post Office officers for non delivery of letters, see *Rowning v Goodchild* (1773), 2 Wm Bl 906, *Smith v Pordick* (1774), 1 Cowp 182. For the effect of delay upon formation of contract and other matters, see p 658, *ante*

(*s*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 57

(*t*) See note (*u*), p 630, *ante*. Proof of appointment is unnecessary (*R v Borrett* (1833), 6 C & P 124, *R v Reis* (1834), 6 C & P 606, see also title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 389). As to the inference to be drawn from evidence of employment, see *R v Goodwin* (1828) 1 Lew C C 100, *R v Townsend* (1841), Car & M 178 (son of letter carrier acting during father's illness), *R v Reason* (1853), Dears C C 226 (person assisting in letter-sorting at postmaster's request), *R v Milner* (1850), 4 Cox, C C 275, *R v Simpson* (1850), 4 Cox, C C 276. On the other hand, see *R v Pearson* (1831), 4 C & P 372 (person cleaning boots and assisting in tying up bags, not an officer), *R v Glass* (1846), 2 Car & Kir 395 (where the prisoner's act was not done in the course of duty as a Post Office servant)

(*u*) See p 648, *ante*. A money order is an "order for the payment of money," and a "valuable security" within the meaning of the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), and any other law relating to forgery or stealing (*ibid*, s 59 (1)). See title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 641, 642, 697 (larceny of valuable security), 667, 668 (extortion) 684—686 (restitution) 719 (forging orders). Fraudulent obliteration or alteration of a money order is, as in the case of a cheque (see *ibid*, p 727) felony under the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 59 (2)

(*a*) *Ibid*, s 58 (1). Re issuing a money order previously paid is deemed an issuing of an order with fraudulent intent (*ibid*, s 58 (2)). The punishment for this offence is, at the discretion of the court, penal servitude for not less than three nor more than seven years, or imprisonment with or without hard labour for not more than two years (*ibid*, s. 58 (1)).

(*b*) See note (*s*), p 630, *ante*.

used, any mark in imitation of or similar to, or purporting to be any stamp or mark of any post office under the Postmaster-General or any foreign or colonial postal authority, or any words, letters, or marks which signify or imply, or may reasonably lead the recipient thereof to believe, that a postal packet bearing them is sent on His Majesty's service, or

(3) Issues or sends by post or otherwise any envelope, wrapper, card, form, or paper so marked (c)

SECT. 10.
Sending or
Making
Paper etc. in
imitation of
Post Office
Paper.

SECT 11 — Fictitious Stamps

1426 A fine not exceeding £20 (d), recoverable summarily, is incurred by any person who —

(1) Makes, knowingly utters, deals in, sells, knowingly uses for any postal purpose, or without showing lawful excuse has in his possession, any fictitious stamp (c), or

(2) Makes, or without showing lawful excuse has in his possession, any die, plate, instrument, or materials for making any fictitious stamp (f)

A prosecution for this offence can only be begun by order of the Inland Revenue Commissioners (d) A conviction is subject to the like right of appeal as in the case of a penalty under the Acts relating to the Excise (g)

Fictitious
stamps
Making
stamps

Making die

Appeal

SECT 12 — Unauthorised Notice as to Carrying on Post Office Business

1427 A fine not exceeding 40s (h), recoverable summarily, is incurred by any person who, without authority from the Postmaster-General, places or maintains in or on any house, wall, door

Unauthorised
notice as to
carrying on
Post Office
business.

(c) Post Office Act, 1908 (81 dw 7, c 48), s 64, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 748

(d) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Ldw 7 c 48), s 65

(e) "Fictitious stamp" here means any facsimile or imitation or representation, whether on paper or otherwise, of any stamp for denoting any rate of postage, including any stamp for denoting a rate of postage of any British possession or of any foreign country (*ibid*, s 65 (4)) for definition of "British possession," see note (f), p 631, *ante* As to forgery, fraudulent printing, and erasing of stamps etc, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 746, 747, as to defacing unused adhesive stamps, and as to fraudulent practices not specially provided for by law in respect of any duty (*ibid*, s 21), see Stamp Duties Management Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 38), ss 20, 21, title REVENUE

(f) A newspaper proprietor and printer who ordered and kept in his possession a die for making uncoloured illustrations of a current colonial postage stamp in an illustrated stamp catalogue or newspaper, was held to have the die in his possession without lawful excuse, under the (repealed) Post Office (Protection) Act, 1884 (47 & 48 Vict c 76), s 7 (c) (*Dickins v Gull*, [1896] 2 Q B 310) Any stamp, die, plate, instrument, or materials found in the offender's possession are forfeited and may be seized (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 65 (3)) As to forged postal orders, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 746, note (b), as to possession of forged stamps, search warrants etc, see *ibid*, p 747, note (c), and title REVENUE

(g) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 65 (2), see title REVENUE

(h) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 66 An offence continuing after a previous conviction is punishable with a fine not exceeding 6s. for every day during which it continues (*ibid*, s 66 (2))

SECT 12
Unauthorised Notice
as to
Carrying on
Post Office
Business.

window, box, post, pillar or other place belonging to him or under his control, any of the following words, letters, or marks:—

(1) The words "post office" or "postal telegraph office"; or
 (2) The words "letter box," with words, letters, or marks which signify or imply, or may reasonably lead the public to believe, that it is a post office letter box (i), or

(3) Words, letters, or marks which signify or imply, or may reasonably lead the public to believe, that any house or place is a post office, or that any box is a post office letter box (i)

Notices must
 be removed

1428 Every person required by a notice given by the Postmaster-General to remove or efface the same, or to remove or effectually to close up any letter box belonging to such person or under his control, which has been a post office letter box (i), must comply with the request (j)

SECT 13 — Unauthorised Affixing of Notices to Post Office.

Affixing
 notices
 without
 authority

1429 Anyone is liable on summary conviction to a fine not exceeding 40s who, without due authority, affixes or attempts to affix any placard, advertisement, notice (k), list (l), document, board or thing in or on, or paints or tars, any post office (m), post office letter box (i), telegraph post (n), or other property belonging to or used by or on behalf of the Postmaster General, or who in any way disfigures any such office, box, post, or property (o)

SECT 14 — Injury to Letter Boxes

Injury to
 letter boxes

1430 Anyone is guilty of a misdemeanour (p) who places or attempts to place in or against any post office letter box (a) any fire, match, light, filth or fluid, or any explosive, dangerous, noxious or deleterious substance, or who commits a nuisance in or against any post office letter-box (a), or does or attempts to do anything likely to injure the box, appurtenances, or contents

Punishment

The punishment for this offence is upon summary conviction a fine not exceeding £10, and on conviction on indictment (b) imprisonment for a period not exceeding twelve months with or without hard labour

(i) See note (g), p 630, *ante*

(j) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 66 (1) (c)

(k) As to notices in post offices, see p 645, *ante*

(l) As to lists in post offices, see p 645, *ante*, and title ELECTIONS, Vol XII, p 261

(m) See note (g), p 630, *ante*

(n) "Telegraph post" means a post, pole, standard, stay, strut, or other above-ground contrivance for carrying, suspending, or supporting a telegraph as defined by the Telegraph Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict c 73) (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 89) See title TELEGRAPHS AND TELEPHONES, and, as to injury to telegraphic apparatus, title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p 787 As to nuisance by telegraph wires, see title NUISANCE, Vol XXI, p 516

(o) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 62

(p) *Ibid.*, s 61; see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, p. 259; and, as to malicious damage, see *ibid.*, pp 773, 775

(a) See note (g), p 630, *ante*, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX., pp. 586, 587

(b) Indictment includes an information (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c. 48), s 89).

PART V.—OFFENCES.

SECT 15.—Obstruction of Officer of the Post Office.

1431. A fine not exceeding 40s (c), recoverable summarily, is incurred by any person who wilfully obstructs, or incites anyone to obstruct, an officer of the Post Office (d) in the execution of his duty, or who whilst in any post office (e), or within any premises belonging thereto or used therewith, obstructs the course of business of the post office (f).

Any such offender may be required by any officer of the Post Office to leave a post office or any such premises, if he refuses or fails to comply with such requirement, he is liable on summary conviction to a further fine not exceeding £5, and may be removed by any officer. All constables must on demand remove or assist in removing such offender (g).

SECT 15

Obstruction
of Officer
of the Post
Office.

Obstructing
officer

Removal of
person
obstructing.

SECT 16.—Demanding Toll for Mails

1432 A fine not exceeding £5 for each offence, recoverable summarily, is incurred by any person who, being a toll collector or receiver, or other person employed to receive the tolls or rates at a gate or bar erected upon a highway, bridge, or post road, demands toll for any mail (h) or any person, horse or carriage going for or employed to go for any mail bag (i), or does not permit any such mail, person, horse, or carriage to pass without delay, or wilfully delays or obstructs any such mail, person, horse, or carriage at or in passing a gate or bar, or who being a ferryman, or other person employed to receive the tolls at a ferry, demands any toll for any mail, or does not, within fifteen minutes after demand made, convey the mail (if it be possible or safe to do so) across the ferry to the usual landing-place (k).

Demanding
toll.

SECT 17.—Soliciting to Commit Offences

1433. Any person is guilty of a misdemeanour (l) who solicits or endeavours to procure any other person to commit an offence punishable on indictment under the Post Office Act, 1908 (m)

Soliciting to
commit
offences.

(c) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 67 (1)

(d) See note (a), p 630, *ante*, and see note (t), p 664, *ante*.

(e) See note (g), p 630, *ante*

(f) Any hawker, news vendor, or idle or disorderly person stopping or loitering on the flagway or pavement opposite the General Post Office in London, or any part thereof, is liable on summary conviction to a fine not exceeding £5 (Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw. 7, c 48), s 68 (3)). As to obstruction in neighbourhood of London General Post Office by hackney carriages (*ibid*, s. 68 (1), (2)), see titles **MARKETS AND FAIRS**, Vol XX, p 59, note (i), **STREET AND AERIAL TRAFFIC**. As to obstruction of post office business by notices, see p 646, *ante*

(g) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s. 67 (2). As to the powers of a constable, see title **POLICE**, pp 497 *et seq*, *ante*

(h) See note (x), p 651, *ante*

(i) See note (r), p. 654, *ante*

(k) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s. 79 (2), (3); see p 656, *ante*, and title **HIGHWAYS, STREETS, AND BRIDGES**, Vol. XVI, p 66

(l) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 69, see title **CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE**, Vol. IX, p 260

(m) 8 Edw 7, c 48, see pp 659 *et seq.*, *ante*, and title **CRIMINAL LAW AND**

SECT 17
Soliciting to
Commit
Offences

Punishment

The punishment for this offence is imprisonment with or without hard labour for any term not exceeding two years (*n*).

Part VI.- Legal Proceedings.

SECT 1- *Recovery of Fines and Forfeitures.*

Recovery of
fines and
forfeitures

1434 A fine or forfeiture imposed by the Post Office Act, 1908 (*o*), whether recoverable on summary conviction or not, may be recovered with costs by any person who sues for the same in the High Court. He may sue for the maximum amount, but can recover only such sum as the court awards (*p*). Proceedings must be commenced within one year next after the fine or forfeiture was incurred (*q*).

Power of
Postmaster
General to
compromise

The Postmaster-General may compromise and compound any legal proceeding commenced by his authority, or under his control, against any person to recover any fine or forfeiture incurred under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*o*), on such terms and conditions as the Postmaster General in his absolute discretion thinks proper, with full power for him, or any of his officers or agents duly authorised, to accept any fine or forfeiture so incurred or alleged to be incurred, or any part thereof, without legal proceedings (*r*).

SECT 2- *Summary Proceedings*

Summary
proceedings

1435 All offences under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*o*), which are punishable on summary conviction, may be prosecuted, and all fines and forfeitures recoverable on summary conviction may be recovered, in the United Kingdom, in manner provided by the Summary Jurisdiction Acts (*s*). Any person convicted on summary conviction may

PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 488, 539, 644, 645. See *R v James* (1890), 24 Q B D 439, C C R (prisoner inducing postman to intercept letters, accessory before the fact). Accessories and Abettors Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict c 94), s 1), as to accessories before and after the fact, and as to incitements to crime, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 257, 258, 260.

(*n*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 69.

(*o*) 8 Edw 7, c 48.

(*p*) *Ibid*, s 70 (1). As to recovery of fines and forfeitures outside the United Kingdom, see *ibid*, s 70 (3). As to recovery of unpaid postage not exceeding £20 see p 640, *ante*. By the Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 75, fines, forfeitures, and other sums recovered must, notwithstanding anything in any other Act, be paid into the Exchequer, unless applied as an appropriation in aid under the Public Accounts and Charges Act, 1891 (54 & 55 Vict c 24), s 2, see title REVENUE. As to the practice of the High Court, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE.

(*q*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 70 (2). As to time limits of actions generally, see title LIMITATION OF ACTIONS, Vol XIX., pp 33 *et seq*.

(*r*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 76. As to compounding penal actions otherwise, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX., p 504, as to compounding civil actions, see title PRACTICE AND PROCEDURE.

(*s*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 71 (1), as to Isle of

appeal in England to a court of quarter sessions (*h*). Any sum, recoverable summarily as a civil debt (*a*), is recoverable in manner provided by these Acts

SECT 3
Summary
Proceed-
ings.

SECT 3 —*Indictments*

1436 In any indictment (*a*) or legal proceeding for any offence or any malicious, injurious, or fraudulent act or thing in respect of the Post Office or the Post Office revenue, or any property under the management or control of the Postmaster-General, it is enough to allege such property to belong to His Majesty's Postmaster-General (*b*), and to allege such act or thing to have been done with intent to injure or defraud him, without naming the particular Postmaster-General, and without alleging or proving upon trial or otherwise that such property was of any value (*c*). In any indictment or legal proceeding under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*d*), against any officer of the Post Office, it is enough to allege that the alleged offender was an officer of the Post Office at the time of the committing of the offence, without stating further the nature or particulars of his employment (*e*)

SECT 4 —*Proceedings apart from Post Office Act, 1908*

1437 When proceedings are taken before any court in respect of an offence under the Post Office Act, 1908 (*d*), which is also an offence under some other Act or at common law, the court may direct that, instead of such proceedings being continued, proceedings be taken under such other Act or at common law (*f*)

Man and elsewhere, see *ibid*. As to summary procedure, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 680 *et seq*

(*h*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 71 (2), as to Scotland and Ireland, see *ibid*. As to appeals to quarter sessions, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 642 *et seq*

(*u*) Post Office Act 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 71 (1), which see as to Ireland. Sums not exceeding £20 due from any Post Office officer or his sureties in respect of moneys received in the discharge of his duty may be recovered summarily as a civil debt (*ibid*, s 78). As to recovery of civil debts summarily, see title MAGISTRATES, Vol XIX, pp 609 *et seq*. As to recovery of postage, and evidence in proceedings therefor, see p 640, *ante*

(*u*) See note (*u*), p 662, *ante*

(*b*) See title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 648 note (*d*), 684, note (*p*). As to property in a letter where the writer regains possession of it, see *Oliver v Oliver* (1861), 11 C B (N S) 139, and p 658, *ante*. As to venue, see title CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE, Vol IX, pp 284, 288, note (*h*). As to evidence of an article being a postal packet, see *ibid*, p 684, note (*m*)

(*c*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 73 (1)

(*d*) 8 Edw 7, c 48

(*e*) *Ibid*, s 73 (2). and see note (*u*), p 630, *ante*, and note (*h*), p 664, *ante*

(*f*) Post Office Act, 1908 (8 Edw 7, c 48), s 77.

POUND AND POUND-BREACH.

See ANIMALS

POWER OF APPOINTMENT.

See POWERS.

POWER OF ATTORNEY.

See AGENCY

END OF VOL. XXII.

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP.

- abroad, jurisdiction of the court as to partnership, 71
- account, action not maintainable in respect of competing business, 81
 - cost of taking, how payable, 76
 - defences to action for an, 72
 - denial of partnership as defence to action for, 72
 - dissolution action, in, when ordered, 70
 - how far partner bound by his own, 73
 - illegal business, of, court may order taking of, 71, 72
 - interest on delay in rendering, 61, 65
 - liability of partner to, 47
 - mode of taking, 73
 - nature of, to be furnished, 68
 - parties entitled to an, 71
 - payment of balance of, consideration for implied promise for, 75
 - profits, of, when action will not lie for, 17
 - relief by way of, circumstances not barring, 71
 - re-opening of, proof necessary to order for, 72
 - right of partner or legal personal representative to an, 65
 - stranger's right to an, 71
 - striking monthly balance as affecting right to, 71
 - unsaleable assets to be charged in the, 103
 - who should join in action for, 66, 67
- acquiescence, acts of partner amounting to, 34
 - as a bar to right to re-opening accounts, 73
- act of partner, binding of firm by, 32
- action, between two firms having common partner, 41
 - by and against firms, regulation of, 39
 - partners how may be brought, 34, 35, 39
 - partner's power to release cause of, 28, 29
 - power of the court to order names and addresses of partners to be furnished, 40
- administration, deceased partner's estate, of, effect of, 71
- admission, partner, of, consent required on, 50, 51
- adultery, partner, of, when not a ground for dissolution, 92
- advance, interest payable to partner making, 60
 - one of two co-owners for joint benefit, by, when partnership not constituted by, 6, 7, 10
 - right to indemnity of partner making, 60
 - share of profits in consideration of, effect of, 11, 12
- adventure, completion of, as affecting dissolution, 80
- agent, power of partner to bind firm as, 21
 - remuneration by share of profits as affecting status of, 10, 11
- agreement, partnership, when liability of partners attaches in respect of, 37
 - writing necessary to, 21, 22
- alien, validity of partnership between British subject and an, 19
- annuity, share of profits by way of, effect of, 10, 11
- antecedent debts, when new partner may be liable for, 36
- appeals, as to winding up of limited partnership, provisions governing, 121
- appearance by partners to action against firm, form of, 43, 44
- arbitration clause, as affecting right to dissolution, 90
- arbitrators, power to award return of premium, 96
- arrangement, deed of, trustees not partners, 6

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP—continued

- articles, surviving partner's right to goodwill affected by, 104
- assets, application of realised, order of, 103 104
 - disposal of residue after application of, 104
 - goodwill as part of the, 104
 - inclusion in accounts, 73
 - limited partnership, of, distribution of surplus, 120
 - realisation on liquidation, 118
- new partnership implied after dissolution from use of, 101
- partner's implied right to pledge, 27
 - rights as to application of, 61, 62
- pledging after dissolution, powers, 98
- preservation of, by appointment of receiver, 77
- realisation and disposal after dissolution, partner's rights as to, 101
- surviving partner's duty to pay debt out of partnership 55
- treatment and valuation as goodwill, 107
- unsalable, how charged in the accounts, 104
- use by partners continuing business, effect on rights of outgoing partner, 99
- wrongful dealing with restrained 82
- assignee, partner's share, of, not a necessary party to action for account, 68
 - rights to which subject, 57 58
- assignment, partner's share of, when operating as a dissolution 58 59
- associations, instances of, other than partnerships, 4 5
- attachment, discovery by partners compelled by, 46
 - of debts, due to partnership firm 47
- authority, partners, of, extent of 24, 25
- balance of account, implied promise to pay, what will amount to 75
- bankers, receipt of money for investment by, effect of, 31
- banking account, in name of one partner for firm's purpose, effect of, 93
 - business, association for purpose of, when right to
 - limitation of number of partners in, 108
- bankruptcy, dissolution effected by partner's 84
 - limited partner, of, effect of, 111
 - non-liability of married woman as partner of husband to, 21
 - return of premium on, 94
 - rights of vendor paid by share of profits as affected by, 14
- barristers, partnership does not exist between, 4
- building at sale, right of partners as to 103
- bill of exchange, acceptance by one partner in firm name, effect of, 93
 - implied authority of partner as to 26, 27
 - personal liability of partner signing in own name 33
 - presumption arising where received for one partner's debt, 26, 27
- book debts, sale of with the business, 103
- bookmaking business, order for account in, when made 71 72
- books, access and inspection of, rights as to, 60 61 to
 - improper extracts from, restraint, 60, 66
 - limited partnership, of, power of the court as to on a winding up, 121
 - partner's right as to, when containing private matter, 45, 66
 - partnership, of, as evidence, 68
 - private matter in, right to seal up, 65, 66
 - removal by partner restrained, 82
- breach of covenant as to engaging in similar business remedy on 81
 - trust, joint and several liability of partners for 31
 - liability of partners borrowing money with knowledge of, 100
- broker, remuneration by share of profits, effect of, 10 11
- building fund, partnership arising from co-ownership of, 6
- business, existence of, necessary to constitute a partnership, 107
- "business," meaning under the Limited Partnership Act, 1907 103
- calls due to limited partnership, power of the court as to, 120
- capital, as distinguished from income, 64
 - division of, presumption as to, 62, 63
 - when profits regarded as, 64
- charging order, appointment of receiver in aid of, when made, 59
 - partner's share, on, effect of, 59
 - right of judgment creditor as to, 55
 - procedure as to, 59

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP—continued

- charging order, redemption of shares subject to, power of remaining partners, 59, 60
 - right of remaining partners on making of, 87
- charitable society, partnership not existing in respect of 1
- city of London, married woman's trading rights by custom of, 20
- clergymen, as partners in a firm, when legal, 19
- colliery, position of joint owners of, as partners, 71
 - tenants in common of, as constituting partnership 6
- commission agent, no implied authority in, to sign negotiable instruments, 26
- company, adoption by firm of title of effect of, 16
 - distinguished from partnership, 3, 4
- competition, restrained as between partners and firm 48
 - retiring partner, by, when restrained, 83 84
- conditions of sale, on sale of goodwill by the court, 106
- conduct, as ground for dissolution, 92
 - partnership implied from, 15
 - right to bring partners before the court may be lost by 68
 - return of premium not prejudiced by, 95
- contempt of court, interference with receiver as 79
- contract, division of proceeds arising from illegal court will not aid, 17
 - infants liability on partnership, extent of 19, 20
 - partnership as considered from a question of, 9
 - receiver's right to enter into, 79
- contribution, partner's liability to make, extent of, 60, 61
 - right to, extent of, 35, 36 61
- contributories, limited partnership, to, liability of 119 119
 - persons included in list of, 120
 - power of court to settle list of, 119, 120
 - right of liquidator against estates of deceased, 119
- conversion, joint property into separate, 57
 - land into personal property, of as between partners, 50
 - partnership land subject to, 56
 - sale of partnership land as affecting, 102
 - separate into joint partnership property, 54, 55
- convict partner, Forfeiture Act as affecting rights of, 19
- co-ownership, partnership not constituted by, 5
 - where property not the subject of, 7
- corporation limited partner may be 1, 108
- costs, dissolution where partner becomes lunatic of how paid 91
 - taking accounts, of, payment of, 76
- Courtes Palatine of Lancaster and Durham, jurisdiction as to dissolution, 89
- county courts, jurisdiction as to dissolution of partnership 80
- covenant, void when restriction of space is to carrying on similar business unlimited, 106
- credit of partnership, attempt to pledge by one partner when not binding, 27, 28
 - power of individual partner to pledge, 27, 28
- creditors, limited partnership, of, rights of, 119
 - rights against personal representatives of last survivor, 45
 - not affected by agreement between partners, 37, 38, 98, 99
 - on dissolution, 98
 - transfer of partnership property between partners as affecting, 53, 54
- custom of trade, payment of interest as between partners affected by, 61, 65
- death, dissolution of partnership by, 86
 - limited partner, of, effect of, 111
- debtor and creditor, advance made on share of profits, not purely a between, effect of, 12
 - relationship of partners not that of, 4, 75
- debts, attachment by creditor, effect of, 47
 - bill given for partner's private, presumption arising from, 26, 27
 - book, sale with the business, 103
 - creditors not affected by arrangements by partners as to payment of, 98, 99

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP—continued

- debts, duration of liability of partner for, 35—38
 - implied authority of partners to receive and pay, 28
 - payment by surviving partner of firm's, how made, 55
 - release by one partner, powers, 28, 29
 - right of surviving partner to recover partnership, 68
 - subsequent, when retiring partner may be liable for, 38
 - when new partner may be liable for antecedent debts, 36
- deceased partner, several liability of estate of, 35, 36
 - use of name of, by continuing partners, effect of, 13
- deed, no implied authority in partner to execute, 26
 - unauthorised execution by partner having implied authority to borrow, effect of, 26
- Needs of Arrangement Act, 1887, application to limited partnerships, 121
- deficiency, liability of partners to after dissolution, 103
- determination, partnership for indefinite period, of, 24
- disablement, partner, of, as ground for dissolution, 92
- discovery, right of creditor to in action against firm, 44 45, 46
- dissolution, absence of prospect of profit as cause of, 93, 94
 - account ordered without a claim for, 71
 - action for, how commenced, 89
 - acts of partner restrained after, 83, 84
 - agreement as to goodwill protected on, 107
 - to take shares *in specie* by valuation on, effect of, 71, 75
 - appointment of receiver after, 77
 - arbitration clause as affecting right to, 90
 - assignments by partners on, 53
 - of partner's share operating as a, 58, 59
 - authority of partners after, 97, 98
 - bankruptcy of partner as affecting, 87
 - charging order on partner's share may effect, 87
 - commencement of action for, 89
 - conduct of partner as ground for, 92
 - considerations affecting the rights of parties after, 109
 - of the court in ordering a, 94
 - courts having jurisdiction as to, 88, 89
 - date from which taking effect, 85
 - of where partner a lunatic, 91
 - death of partner as effecting, 84
 - distinction between actions for account and, 67
 - distribution of profits after, 99
 - fluxion of time on completion of adventure as effecting, 86
 - essentials of notice of, 85 86
 - form of action against partners after, 43
 - grounds of, 90—94
 - injunction ancillary to when granted, 81, 82
 - granted pending, 80
 - limited partnership on winding up of, 121, 122
 - not prevented by holder of option of partnership, 51
 - notice of, what may be sufficient, 96 97
 - onus of proof on stay of action for, 90
 - parties to action for, 66, 67
 - partner's right to disposal of assets on, 101
 - power of judge in lunacy as to, 89
 - to pledge assets after, 98
 - profits made after, liability to account for, 63
 - public notice of, right as to, 96
 - representation of partners in action for, 66, 67 68
 - return of premium on, power of the court as to, 94, 95
 - rights of outgoing partner as to profits made after, 99
 - stay of action for, when refused, 90
 - unreasonable conduct as ground for, 93
 - where partnership becomes illegal, 87
 - winding up of limited partnership on, 112
- Dublin Gazette*, publication of notice of dissolution in, effect of, 96, 97
- duty of partner, limitation of, 49
- Edinburgh Gazette*, publication of notice of dissolution in, effect of, 96, 97
- elections, outgoing partner's right as to, 63, 64

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP—continued

- embezzlement, trust funds by solicitor, of, as ground for dissolution, 82
- equity, right of survivorship as to partnership property not recognised in, 55, 56
- estoppel, creditor obtaining judgment against continuing partner, of, 16, 47
 - liability as partner by, 13, 14
 - partnership from representation by, 13, 14
- evidence, dissolution, of, admissibility of *Gazette* notice as, 96
- execution, enforcement of judgment by, 46
 - leave required where receiver appointed, 79
 - no right to, on separate judgment against partner, 55
- executors, deceased partner in specific undertaking, of, rights of, 64
 - partner's, personal liability of, 101
 - right of retainer of surviving partner as, 75
 - to an account, 65
 - when not restrained from carrying on a similar business, 83
 - rights when power to nominate partners vested in, 62
 - sale of share to surviving partners by, when supported, 70
- expulsion of partner, powers, 88
- fiduciary relationship, as between partners, 47
 - not extending to purchase of share of one partner by another, 48
- "firm," meaning under the Limited Partnership Act, 1907 108
- firm name, right of purchaser of goodwill to use 104
- "firm name," meaning under the Limited Partnership Act, 1907 108
 - nature of a, 5
- foreign embassy in England, jurisdiction of the court as to partner member of, 19
- Forfeiture Act, convict partner as affected by, 19
- fraud, as ground for rescission of agreement, 69
 - goods obtained by one partner by, property in, 82
 - liability of innocent members of firm of solicitors for their partner's, 30, 81
 - person induced to be partner by, 70
 - when firm liable for individual partner's 80
- fraudulent misrepresentation, liability of infant partner for, 19, 20
- gain, relation must exist for the purpose of, 24
- goods, separate purchase and ratable division of profits in respect of, effect of, 9, 10
 - of, for joint adventure, when partnership arises from, 6, 7
- goodwill, as part of the assets, 104
 - benefit of agreements passing on sale of, 105
 - definition of, 104
 - grounds upon which treated as assets, 104
 - inclusion in account and valuation on death of partner, 107
 - provisions of articles as affecting right to, 104
 - purchaser's right to use firm name, 104
 - right of deceased partner's estate to share in proceeds of, 104, 107
 - partner entitled by contract to 84
 - rights of vendor and purchaser of, 105, 106
 - valuation of, 106
 - when injunction will be granted to protect, 84
 - passing without express mention, 106, 107
- gross receipts, theatre, of a, partnership not arising from, 8
 - returns, partnership may not arise from the sharing of, 7, 8
- guarantee, effect when signed by one partner only, 82
 - extent of partner's power to give, to or for the firm, 26
- holding out, enforcement of liability against persons, 15, 16
 - liability of persons in respect of, 13, 14
 - prospective partner on, 87
- illegal adventure, right to recover amount paid for shares in, 68
- association, winding-up under the Companies Acts, 18
- partnership, association for banking business, when an, 16
 - dissolution where firm becomes an, 87
 - effect of, 17
- transaction, relief on ceasing of, 18
- implied agreement, for continuation of partnership, how evidenced. 23

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP—continued

- implied authority of partners, extent of, 25—30
- incapacity, dissolution on grounds of permanent, 92
- income, receipt out of profits, as evidence of partnership, 4
- incoming partner, how far bound by terms of partnership, 52
- incompetence, no ground for refusing return of premium, 93
- indemnity, right lost by laches, 61
 - of individual partners to, 60
- infant, contract of partnership made by, effect of, 19, 30
- injunction, at whose instance will be granted, 80
 - carrying on of similar business restrained by, 81
 - exclusion of partner restrained by, 80
 - granted pending dissolution, 80
 - interlocutory, facts necessary to obtain grant of, 80
 - lunatic partner restrained by, 82
 - nature of matter for which granted, 80, 81
 - not granted when matter outside partnership relationship, 81
 - partner restrained as to new partnership by, 80
 - protection of goodwill by, 81
 - publication of news by partners in rival newspaper restrained by, 81
 - trader carrying on business to suggest a partnership restrained by, 81
 - when court will grant, 80
 - wrongful dealing with assets restrained by, 82
- innocent partner, liability for fraud of other partner, 31
 - partners, relief on cess of illegal transaction granted to, 13
- inquiry, as to lunatic partner, when ordered, 91
- insanity as ground for dissolution, 90, 91
 - who may apply for relief on grounds of, 91
- inspection, partnership books, of, rights as to, 65, 66
- interest allowance when delivery of account delayed, 61, 63
 - as between partners, when allowed, 63, 64, 65
 - rate to which partner making advance is entitled, 60
- investment, no part of business of solicitors or bankers to receive money for general, 31
- joint adventure, relationship of persons interested in, 6, 7
 - liability, effect of undischarged judgment against one partner in action to enforce, 15
 - partners, of, 14, 35
 - ownership, none who purchase separate and division of profit rateable, 9, 10
 - property, conversion into separate, 57
- judge in lunacy, powers as to dissolution, 80
- judgment, charging order on partner's share as giving effect to, 75
 - creditor appointment of receiver as affecting right of execution, 73
 - enforcement against partnership property, 46
- just and equitable, question as to when cause for dissolution may be, 91
- labour, contribution by third party as effecting partnership, 6
- laches, as a bar to order for account, 72
 - claim to profits lost by, 61
 - share of profits may be lost by, 61
 - right to indemnity lost by, 61
 - when interest of partner not divested by, 61
- land, as partnership property, 53
 - building when partnership may arise from living out of, 6
 - conversion as regards partnership, 56
 - deemed converted into personal estate as between partners, 73
 - partners in profits of rights of, 63
 - partnership arising from co ownership of, essential to, 6
 - property by use, 53
 - proceeds of sale of partnership, nature of, 102
 - sale of partnership, 102
- lease, contract with partner for, effect where occupied by the firm, 72
 - purchase by partners not evidence of partnership term, 23
 - renewal by one partner, effect of, 48, 49
- lender, receipt of loan by share of profits by effect of, 12, 13
- lien, partner, of, against whom available, 61, 62
 - property to which attaching, 61, 62
 - right to on making advance, 61, 62

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP—continued

- limited partner, bankruptcy on death of, effect of, 111
 - corporation may be 108
 - definition of, 108
 - liability on liquidation of limited partnership, 119
 - powers and liabilities of, 110, 111
- partnership, Act authorising the formation of 107
 - application of Deeds of Arrangement Act, 1847, to, 121
 - court having jurisdiction in winding up of 113, 114
 - definitions applicable to winding up of 113
 - dissolution on winding up of, 122
 - distribution of surplus assets of 120
 - duties of the official receiver as to winding up 117, 118
 - grounds for winding up 114, 115
 - liability of partners other than limited in, 108
 - liquidator of, powers and duties of, 118
 - list of contributories to power of court as to, 120
 - non-registration of, effect of, 109
 - number of partners allowed in, 108
 - order for winding up, effect of 116
 - particulars to be registered in respect of, 109
 - penalty on making false statement on registration of, 110
 - position of member of a, 107, 108
 - practice as to petition for winding up, 115, 116
 - procedure when wound up by liquidator, 118
 - registrar of, 109
 - rights of limited as opposed to general partner in, 111
 - rules of law and equity applicable to 110
 - stay of proceedings in respect of, rules applicable to, 116, 117
 - who may present petition for winding up, 115
 - winding up as an unregistered company 112
 - on dissolution, 112
- loan, duty of lender where made to one partner, 28
- repayment by share of profits, effect of 11, 12
- London Gazette*, admissibility of notice of dissolution in as evidence 96
 - notice as to partner becoming a "limited" to be advertised in, 109
 - publication of notice of dissolution in, effect of 96
- loss, dissolution where business carried on at a 94
- losses, division in which to be borne by partners of
 - order of funds from which to be paid, 104
 - sharing of, presumption arising from, 9
- lunatic, date of dissolution where partner a 91
 - partner, court will restrain by injunction
 - dissolution in respect of, extent of or of required 20
 - partnership entered into by, when valid 20
 - power of judge in lunacy as to dissolution of partner becoming, 89
- malicious prosecution partner's liability to action for, as affecting firm, 32
- management, partnership business of rights as to, 19, 20
 - surviving partner's right to just allowances for, 50
- managing partner, duties of, 18
 - limited partnership of, position of 108
 - remuneration of, 50
- married woman, right to effect a contract of partnership 20, 21
- medical practice, receipt of lump sum and share of first year's profit by
 - vendor of, effect of, 11
 - practitioners, ground for dissolution between, 92
- mercantile partnerships, implied authority of partners of, 26, 27
- misappropriation, liability of firm for partner's, 30
 - solicitor's innocent partner in respect of, 30, 31
- misconduct, as affecting right to dissolution, 93
 - effect on liability of partners for costs, 76
 - right to return of premium forfeited by, 94, 95
- misrepresentation, as ground for rescission, 69
 - liability of firm for partner's, 31
 - person induced to be a partner by, 70
- mode of dealing, as evidence of partnership, 22
- mortgage, deceased partner in favour of firm, by, how enforced, 64

INDEX..

PARTNERSHIP—continued

- mortgagee, partner's share, of, rights to which subject, 57, 58
- name of firm, sale of business as affecting use of, 104, 105, 106
 - use after dissolution restrained, 53
- names and addresses, members of firm, of, power of court as to furnishing, 40
- negotiable instruments, implied authority of partner as to, 26, 27
- new partner, admission of, 50
- newspaper, publication of news by partners in rival, restrained, 81
- nomination partner by, rights and duties of, 51, 52
- notice, as determining date of dissolution, 85
 - of dissolution as affecting retired partner's liability 38
 - consent necessary to withdrawal of, 85, 86
 - facts from which inferred, 96
 - partner's right to give public, 96
 - publication in *London Gazette*, effect of, 98
 - what will amount to, 96, 97
- partner's death, of, not necessary to terminate liability for debts contracted after death, 86, 87
- transactions by one partner, in, when necessary to bind firm, 34
- unauthorised transaction, of, effect of, 33 34
- option, of partnership, liability not attaching until exercise of, 37
 - of person having, 51, 52
- outgoing partner, of, on leaving share in business, 99
- official receiver, duties as to winding up of limited partnerships, 117, 118
- parol evidence, partnership established by, 22
 - variation of articles of, requirements as to, 23
- part performance, as evidence of partnership, 22
- partner, act of one, when not binding on the firm, 32, 33
 - advance for purposes of firm made by, rights as to, 60
 - amount of shares of, rule as to, 57
 - assignment of share by, right as to, 57
 - bidding by a power of the court to allow, 102, 103
 - binding of firm by act of, 33
 - court will restrain competition with firm by, 48
 - death of, as effecting dissolution, 80
 - deceased, right of estate of, to share on sale of business, 101, 107
 - executors of, where undertaking specific, 64
 - several liability of estate of, 35, 36
 - delegation of powers of, consent required as to, 25
 - execution not available against firm's property on separate judgment against, 55
 - expulsion of, powers, 88
 - when invalid, 88
 - how far bound by his account, 73
 - implied authority of, extent of, 25—30
 - incoming, terms to which subject, 52
 - injunction to restrain, when will be granted, 80, 81
 - innocent, liability for fraud of other partners, 31
 - liability for breach of trust by co-partner, extent of, 100, 101
 - costs of an account, 76
 - losses, extent of, 64
 - of, duration of, 36—38
 - firm for wrongful act of, 30—32
 - when fixed, 45
 - to contribution, extent of, 60, 61
 - lien of, on making advances, 51, 52
 - limitation of diligence required from, 30
 - duty of 49
 - limited, *see* limited partner
 - managing, duties of, 48
 - implied authority to defend action, 29
 - remuneration of, 50
 - nature of share of, 55
 - outgoing, share of, how ascertained, 99, 100
 - power to bind firm, 24
 - purchase of share by, rights as to, 48
 - when set aside, 70
 - remuneration as receiver, 79
 - representation of, in action for dissolution, 66, 67.

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP—continued

- partner, right as to an account, 65, 74
 - application of assets, 61, 62
 - appointment of a receiver, 77, 78
 - on production of books containing private matter, 45
 - rescission of contract for fraud, 69
 - to sign for firm, extent of, 26
 - sue strangers in firm name 39, 40
- sleeping, extent to which bound, 24, 26
- surviving, allowance to, on winding-up 50
 - remuneration of, before division of profits, 99
 - right of retainer when executor of deceased partner, 75
 - to just allowances for management, 50
- writ of attachment not available against, 76
- partner's lien, against whom available 62
- partners, authority of, after dissolution, 97, 98
 - ratio of liability in respect of losses, 103
 - relationship between, 4
- Partnership Act, 1890, variation of rights and duties of parties under, 22, 23
- partnership action, persons not necessary parties to, 61, 63
 - production of books in, 66
 - representation of parties 67
 - admission of nominee into, 51, 52
 - agreement, when liability attaches in respect of, 17
 - arising from the sharing of profits, 8, 9
 - at will, when premium returnable in respect of, 96
 - books, access to, 50
 - business, no power in majority of partners to change nature of, 49
 - continuation of, how evidenced 21
 - when presumed, 24
 - creation of, 16
 - definition of, 3, 4
 - determination of indefinite 24
 - dissolution when lunatic member of, proof required 29
 - duration of, 23, 24
 - fiduciary relationship of members of 4
 - formation and terms of, how evidenced, 21, 22
 - illegal, instances of, 16, 17
 - illegality of, where business formed for illegal purpose, 16
 - management of business of, rights as to 49, 50
 - name, use after dissolution, when restrained, 83
 - names and addresses of members, order to furnish, 10
 - nature of, 4
 - personal capacity as affecting, 19, 21
 - presumption arising from representation 13, 14
 - in respect of persons holding out, 13, 14
 - property, execution not available on separate judgment against partner 65
 - of what it consists, 52
 - purposes for which may be used, 52
 - transfer as between partners, effect of, 53
 - rights of majority or minority of members of, 49
 - shares of, presumption as to division of, 67
 - strangers to, when entitled to an account, 74
- patent, when injunction granted in respect of, 81
 - working of a, by patentee and capitalist, effect of 7
- payment into court of partnership moneys, when ordered, 15, 76
- penalty, making false statement on registration of limited partnership 110
- personal representative, as necessary party to proceedings for dissolution, 67
 - right of creditors to sue, 45
 - to an account, 65, 68, 74
 - sue of deceased partner's share by, effect of, 51
- petition for winding up limited partnership, practice as to, 115, 116
 - who may present, 116
- power of attorney, power of partner under, 29
- pre-exemption, enforcement of rights under power of, 63
- premium, amount returnable, 95

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP—*continued*

- premium, considerations upon which the court acts in ordering a return of, 94, 95
 - power of the court to order return of, 94 95
 - principle upon which return ordered, 94
 - rule as to return of, when not applicable, 94, 95
 - time at which question as to return should be dealt with, 96
 - when returnable in respect of partnership at will, 96
- private benefit, partner may not derive, in conduct of firm's business, 48
- proceedings, by or against partners, how may be brought, 38, 39
- profits, absence of prospect of, as cause for dissolution, 93, 94
 - account of, when action will not lie for, 17
 - claim to share of, how lost, 63
 - distribution, after dissolution, 99
 - division of, 62, 63
 - presumption as to, 62, 63
- liability of partner to account for individual, 47
 - to account when made after dissolution, 63
- meaning of, 62
- receipt by vendor of business of share of, effect of, 11, 13
- remuneration of surviving partner before division of, 99
- rights of outgoing partner where made after dissolution, 99
 - to claim share of, when lost, 63
 - when made after dissolution, 63
- share of, after dissolution, how ascertained, 100
- sharing, as constituting partnership, test of, 8—10
 - where regarded as capital, 64
- promise to pay, effect where made by one partner as to firm's debt, 33
- property, partnership, effect of transfer of, 53
 - enforcement of judgment against, 46
 - power of individual partner to pledge, 27
 - purposes for which may be used, 52
- purchase with partnership money, presumption as to, 52, 53
- public policy illegality of business formed for purpose contrary to, 16
- publication, partner, by, when restrained, 84
 - title of, as part of the assets, 103
 - trade secret, of, restrained by injunction, 82
- purchaser, goodwill, of, rights of, 104, 105
 - partner's share, of, rights and liabilities of 57, 58
- racehorse, co-owners of, not necessarily partners, 5 8
- ratification, act of one partner by firm of, effect of, 34
- receiver, appointment of, as affecting partner's right to deal with assets, 27
 - form of order for, 78
 - grounds for, 77, 78
 - jurisdiction of the court as to, 77
 - when charging order made, 39
- interference with, a contempt of court, 79
- limitation of management of, 79
- remuneration when a partner 79
- rights as to carrying on a similar business, 79
 - when court will not appoint a, 77 78
- registrar, limited partnership, of, duties of, 110
- registration, limited partnership, of, particulars required on, 109
 - penalty in default of, 109
 - on making false statements on, 110
- release, cause of action, of, partner's power as to, 28, 29
 - partner, of, not under seal, effect of, 28
- religious society, partnership not existing in respect of, 4
- remuneration, managing partner, of, 50
- renewal of lease, by one or more partners, effect of, 48, 49
- rent, share of profits as, effect of, 8
- representation, partnership arising from, 13, 14
- rescission, partnership agreement, of, fraud as ground for, 69
 - rights of partner on, 69
- residue, disposal of, on application of assets, 104
- restraint from anticipation, married woman's contracts affected by, 21
- rests, when executor or trustee partner may be charged with, 101
- retainer, right in surviving partner as executor of deceased partner, 75

PARTNERSHIP—continued

- retired partner, extent of liability of 37
 - use of " & Co " by firm as affecting, 15
 - when liable for subsequent debts, 38
 - not liable for price of goods ordered by himself, 38
- right of survivorship, application to partnership property 55, 56
 - partnership property, in, not recognised in equity, 55, 56
- salary of office, profits not to include a partner's 63
- sale, book debts should be sold with the business, 103
 - effect where carried out under order of the court, 102, 103
- executors, by, of deceased partner's share to surviving partners, when set aside, 70
- loss on, when partner may be liable for, 103
- partner's right to bid at, 103
- principles upon which the court acts in ordering a 103, 103
- provisions obviating a, when binding on partners, 101
- rights of partner as to, 102, 103
- when the court may order a, 102
- Scotland, nature of partnership firm in, 3
- secret profit, rights of partners where member makes a, 65, 69
- security, surviving partner's right to give, 98
- servant, remuneration by shares of profits, effect of, 10, 11
- set-off, none of separate debt of one partner against debt owing to firm, 41
- settled accounts, where re-opened, 72, 73
- several liability, action to enforce, 15
 - when attaching to partners, 31, 35
- share of profits, partnership not necessarily arising from 9
 - right to claim, when may be lost 67
 - vendor or lender receiving payment by, rights and liabilities of 12, 13
 - wages calculated upon, effect of 10, 11
- partner's, nature of, 65
 - right to assign, 57
 - sale of, when may be set aside 60
- shares, partners, presumption as to division of 61
 - rule as to amount of, 57
- purchase by partner, when advertising not restrained in respect of, 81
 - set aside, 58, 59
- recovery of amount paid for, where adventure illegal 68
- sharing gross returns, partnership may not arise from, 7, 8
- losses, presumption arising from, 9
- profits as constituting partnership, test of 9, 10
 - when constituting a partnership 8, 9
- ship, joint owners of, when not partnership, 7, 8
- similar business, when retiring partner restrained from carrying on 83
- single adventure, extent of partnership term of, 24
- skill, contribution by third party may effect a partnership, 6
- sleeping partner, extent to which bound, 24, 25
- society, incorporated voluntary disbursement of proceeds of land of, taken for public purposes, 56
- solicitation of old customers, restrained 83, 84
- solicitors, grounds for dissolution between, 82
 - illegalities in partnerships by, 17
 - joint and several liability of partners in firm of, 35
 - liability of innocent members of firm of for partner's fraud, 30, 31
 - no implied authority in, to sign negotiable instruments, 26
 - receipt of money for investment by, effect of, 31
- Statutes of Limitation, part-payment by partner as affecting running of, 28
 - payments after dissolution not affecting running of, 98
- stay of proceedings, arbitration more suitable than action for dissolution, 90
 - as to limited partnership, rules applicable, 116, 117
- sub-partnership, presumption as to term of, 23, 51, 68
- surety, new agreement for partnership as affecting one partner's, 24, 24
- surviving partner, allowance to on winding up, 50
 - duty as to payment of firm's debts, 55
 - extent to which a trustee, 53
 - use of firm name by, effect on deceased partner's estate, 15
- tenants in common of a colliery, partnership arising from, "
- theatre, sharing of gross receipts by owner and occupier of, effect of, 6

INDEX.

PARTNERSHIP—*continued*

- third party, contribution of skill and labour by, partnership arising from, 6
- liability of firm for partner's wrongful act to, 30
- partners to, nature of, 34, 35
- partnership arising from representation by, 11, 15
- relation between partners and, 21
- time, dissolution effected by effluxion of, 86
- tort, liability of infant partner for, 19, 20
- trade marks, passing of, on sale of business, 106, 107
- secret, restraint of publication of, 82
- trespass, when partner not liable for co-partner's, 32
- trust fund, association for management of, legality of 18
 - liability where received by partner as *quid* trustee, 81
- property, liability of partners in respect of, 31
- trustee, extent to which surviving partner a, 56
 - improper loan to firm by, effect on liability of partners, 85
 - in bankruptcy of partner, right to an account, 71
 - liability of partners of a, 35
 - on lending moneys of deceased partner's estate to surviving partners, 100, 101
- trustees, no partnership exists as between 4, 5
- undertaking, joint and several liability of partners on an, 35
 - retiring partner not to complete, by enforcement of, 81
- underwriting, action in respect of, when will not lie, 17
- unregistered partnership, when becoming illegal 16
- unsatisfied judgment, against one partner, effect on action to enforce joint liability of partners, 45
- windor, goodwill, of, when similar business may be carried on by, 105
 - payment by share of profits to, effect of bankruptcy, 13
 - receipt of share of profits by, effect of, 11, 13
- winding up, limited partnership, of, as an unregistered company, 112, 113
 - court having jurisdiction in, 113, 114
 - definitions applicable to, 113
 - duties of the official receiver as to, 117, 118
 - effect of order for, 116
 - on invalid transactions, 121
 - grounds for, 114, 115
 - on dissolution, 112
 - practice as to petition for, 115, 116
 - rules applicable to, 112, 113
 - who may present petition for, 115
- partnership business, of, 97—107
 - continuation of business for purposes of, effect of, 97, 98
- writ, action for dissolution commenced by, 89
 - of attachment, not available against partner disobeying order for payment into court, 76
 - service of, in action against firm, 42, 43
 - substituted service against firm, when may be ordered, 43
- writing, variation of partnership agreement in, by consent, 22, 23
 - where partnership agreement must be in, 21, 22
- wrongful act, liability of firm for partner's, 30—32

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS,

- abroad, foreigner resident, as grantee, 183
 - invention communicated from, effect of, 182
 - revocation of patent where mainly worked, 208, 209
 - test as to validity where invention imported from, 183
- account of profits, licensors right to an, on suing for royalties, 196
 - plaintiff's right to, on proof of infringement, 238
- accounts, production on application for extension of term of patent, 204
- action for infringement, facts necessary to be proved in, 212
 - how commenced, 215, 216
 - parties to, 214
 - proceedings at trial, 221, 223
- additional invention, grant where complete specification contains, 169

INDEX.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS—continued.

- address for service, alteration of patentee's, notification of, 180
- applicant must file, 153
- Admiralty, certificate of secrecy by, effect of, 189
 - power as to acquisition of patents, 188, 189
- advertisement, acceptance of specification, of, 174
 - intention to apply for extension of term of patent, 199, 200
- agent, *see* patent agent
- aggrieved person, who may be by error in register, 180
- alien enemy, incapacity of, to become grantee of patent, 130
- ambiguity, claim is bad for, 163
- amendment, specification, of,
 - after examiner's report, time for, 160
 - at instance of applicant or patentee, 170—173
 - Comptroller, 170
 - leave of court, by, 173, 174
 - power of Comptroller to require, 168
 - where none allowed, 172, 173
- anticipation, patent, of, when not a bar, 167
 - report of examiner as to, effect of, 166
- appeal from decision of Comptroller, method of, 178
 - procedure, 189, 170
 - when lying, 169
 - none as to grant of certificate of validity, 224, 225
 - from decision of court as to extension of term, 205
- revocation of patent by Comptroller, against, 208
 - mainly worked abroad, 210
- stay of proceedings may be granted pending, 227
- applicant, amendment of specifications at instance of, 170—173
 - attendance before Comptroller, 168
 - instructions for, how obtained, 152, 153
 - right to be heard by Comptroller, 167
- application, extension of term of patent, for, 199, 200
 - patent, for, documents to accompany, 154
 - examination of, 165
 - fees on, 154
 - hearing of case where opposed, 177, 178
 - may be joint or several, 162, 163
 - nature of declaration to accompany, 191
 - where to be made, 153, 154
 - who may make, 152
 - of addition, for, procedure on, 204, 206
 - protection, for, of foreign or colonial invention, 229
 - restoration of lapsed patent, for, procedure, 182, 183
 - revocation of patent, for, mainly worked abroad, *ibid.*, 209
- art, nature of, as evidence of invention, 133
 - process as an, for purposes of patent, 137
- "art," use of word as equivalent to 'manufacture', 131
- assignee, registration essential to action by, 214, 215
 - rights as to protection of patent, 187
 - with notice, position of, 185, 186
- assignment, licence, of, 196
 - patent, of, clauses and covenants in, effect of, 181, 185
 - for improvements in war material, 184, 189
 - form and nature of subject-matter of, 181, 181
 - registration of, 186
 - share of patent, of, usual covenants inserted in, 184
 - profits in patent as effecting a partnership, 185
- assignor, estoppel from denying validity, 218, 219
- authorship, invention compared with, 127
- bankruptcy of patentee, effect of, 189, 190
- bargain, patent in the nature of a, 131
- Board of Trade, certificate of, as protection on exhibiting, 144, 145
 - compulsory licence, evidence in support of, 198
 - petition for grant of, 197, 199
 - proceedings as to, before, 197, 199
- certificate, Board of Trade, of, as protection on exhibiting invention, 144, 145
 - Comptroller, of, as evidence, 160
 - Secretary for War or Admiralty, of, as to secrecy, effect of, 189
 - validity, of, effect of, 226

INDEX.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS—*continued*

- certificate, validity, of, power of the court as to, 224, 225
- chemical equivalents, substitution of as amounting to infringement, 214
 - process, nature of to be subject of patent, 139
- choses in action, nature of patent rights as a, 141
 - patentee's right as a, 127
- claim, ambit of invention must be circumscribed by definite, 161, 162
 - distinguishment of things old and new not necessary to, 162, 163
 - limitation of, as affecting the validity of the patent, 162
 - meaning of, as to inventions, 162
 - must not be ambiguous, 163
- claims, result arrived at on construction of, 164
- clerical error, Comptroller may correct, 168
- colonial invention, protection of, 229
- colonies, affected by arrangements for mutual protection of inventions, 229
- combination, inventive faculty must be cause of invention, 139
 - parts, of, infringement by, 214
- commercial utility, as evidence of invention, 135, 136
- common law, monopoly not always valid at, 128
- company, dissolution of a, vesting of patent on, 190
- complete specification, essentials of, 159, 160
 - function of, 159
 - lodgment and effect of, 158, 159
- Comptroller, advice of law officers of the Crown may be taken by, 168
 - amendment of specifications at instance of, 170
 - appeal against order for revocation of patent worked abroad, 210
 - from decision of, to law officer, 178
 - when lying, 169
 - attendance of applicant before, 168
 - correction of register by, 180
 - decision of, notification of, 168
 - on application to amend specification, effect of, 172
 - duty and power as to examiner's report, 165, 166
 - as to extension of time for lodging specification, 158
 - hearing applicant, 167
 - may dispense with evidence, 169
 - notice of hearing by, to be given to applicant, 168
 - powers of, 168, 169
 - revocation by, application for, 207
 - nature of order for, 208
 - where mainly worked abroad, 208, 209
 - who may apply for, 206
 - right to appeal at hearing of application to extend term, 202
- Comptroller-General, appointment and salary of, 163
- compulsory licence, grant on grounds of public policy, 197
 - petition to Board of Trade for grant of, 197
 - proceedings before Board of Trade as to grant of, 197, 198
- conditions, insertion of, prohibiting user, illegality of, 193
- consideration, for grant of patent, nature of, 131
- construction, invention, of, rule as to, 163, 164
 - specification, of, mode of, 161, 165
 - must be as a whole, 164
- contract for sale of patent prohibitive conditions of user in, illegal, 193
- co-owners, assigned share, of, rights of, 188
 - rights of, 187
- copies, entry in register, of, 151
- corporation, cannot be an inventor, 170
- costs, action for infringement, in, 225, 226
 - liability of directors of limited company in patent action for, 226
- counsel, number allowed in patent action, 226
- counterclaim, revocation of patent for when defendant entitled to, 219, 225
- covenants, assignment of share of patent, on, 188
 - licensor of patent, by, 192, 193
 - usual on assignment of patent, 181, 185
 - warranty and validity of patent, for, nature of, 185
- Crown, as grantee of privilege of monopoly, 129, 130
 - exception as to exhibition of invention may be made by the, 145
 - importer alone dealt with as grantee by the, 133
 - position as licensee, 192

INDEX.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS—continued

- Crown, right to object to title of applicant, 155
- rights as to user of patent, 211
- vesting of patent in the, when happening, 190
- damages, inquiry as to, duty of defendant, 223
 - measure of, in action for infringement, 223
 - plaintiff's right to, on proof of infringement, 223
 - relief of innocent infringer from payment of, 224
- date of patent, provision as to, 178
- death of patentee, devolution of patent on, 190
- declarant, attendance for cross-examination, power to order, 169
- declaration, accompanying application for patent, nature of, 151
 - necessity for on application, 153
 - supporting and opposing amendment of specifications, 171, 172
- dedication, invention to the public, of what will amount to, 141
- deed, licence should be granted by, 192
- default of appearance, action for infringement in, procedure on, 223
- defective title, may be cured by specification, 156
 - objection to, 155
- defence, action for infringement, to, pleas open to defendant, 217, 218
- defendant, action for infringement, to who may be, 217
- description, invention, of, essentials to, 159, 160
 - inventor must particularise in his, 160, 161
 - misleading, effect of, 160
 - necessity for experiments shown by, effect of, 160
- devolution of patent, on death of patentee, 190
- directors, limited company of, personal liability for costs, 226
- discovery, as an essential characteristic of invention, 134, 135
 - grant of patent as reward for disclosure of, 131
 - order for in respect of examiner's report, when made, 167
 - patent action, in, rules applicable to, 220, 221
- documents, accompanying application for patent, to, 151
 - protection of foreign or colonial inventions, 228
 - request for amendment of specifications, 171
- drawings, accompanying application, regulations as to, 161
- error clerical Comptroller may correct, 168
- estoppel, application of doctrine to assigner of patent, 219
 - licensee of patent, 219
- defence of must be specially pleaded, 219
- licensee of, during continuance of licence, 191
- evidence, action for infringement, in, how given, 222
 - where want of novelty or other matter pleaded, 222
- applicant before Comptroller by, how given, 168
- application for interlocutory injunction, in, how given, 219
- certificate under hand of Comptroller as, 167
- Comptroller may dispense with, 169
- existence of invention as to nature of, 135, 136
- invention, of, nature of the art as, 136
- register as, 181
- supporting opposition to, grant, of application for, 177
 - petition for compulsory licence, 197, 198
 - revocation of patent mainly worked abroad, 208, 209
- examiner, duty as to application for patent, 160, 166
 - reference of specification to, 168
 - report of, amendment of specification on, 163
 - duty of Comptroller on, 167, 169
- exhibition, avoidance of patent by, 144, 145
 - industrial or international exhibitions, at, 144, 145
- limitation of time for application for patent after permitted, 145
- experiment, abandonment as evidence of unsuccessful, 146
 - description showing necessity for, effect of, 160
 - distinction between use for profit and, 144
 - use of invention by way of, no bar to patent, 146
- extension, term of patent, of, application for, 199, 200
 - grounds upon which granted, 202, 203
- false claim, patent rights, of, offence of, 231
- entry, offence of, 231

INDEX.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS—*Continued*

- fees, application for patent, on, 154
- renewal, effect of non-payment, 181
- scale and payment of, 181, 182
- foreign invention, protection of, 229
 - States, affected by arrangements for protection of inventions, 228
- foreigner, as grantee when resident abroad, 188
- fraud, as ground for revocation of patent, 206, 207
 - invalidity of patent obtained by, 180, 181
- grant of patent, effect of, 158, 159
 - essentials of, 129
 - opposition to, 176
 - procedure on making the, 178, 179
 - validity of, 179
- grantee, as true and first importer, test as to validity of claim, 133, 134
 - capacity and incapacity to become, 129, 130
 - foreigner resident abroad as, 138
 - must be the true and first inventor, 180, 181
- hearing, application for patent before Comptroller, 167, 168
 - when opposed, 177, 178
- identity, no infringement without, 213, 214
 - thing used with, of, invention, as test of prior use, 145
- importation, infringement may arise from 211
- imported invention, must be from without the realm, 133
 - test of validity of, 138
 - grant for, 133
- importer, position as grantee, 133, 134
 - in relation to third party 134
 - true and first inventor as true and first 132, 133
- improvement, existing patent on right to patent, 138
 - master's right to servant's supplemental, 132
- indorsement of writ action for infringement, in, 216
- infant, right to apply for letters patent, 129
- information, combination of sources of, 150
- infringement, action for, how commenced, 215, 216
 - proceedings at trial of, 221, 222
 - by combination of parts, 211
 - duty of licensee suing as to, 194
 - is necessary to be proved in action for, 212
 - liability of vendor of patented article for, 212
 - none where patent invalid, 211
 - without identity, 213, 214
 - novelty, of patented, what will amount to 212, 213
 - part of patented invention by taking, 213
 - parties to action for, 214, 215
 - proceedings for, 217
 - substitution of chemical equivalents amounting to, 214
 - user amounting to, extent of, 211, 212
 - what constitutes 210, 211
- infringer, intention of, immaterial, 211
- infringing articles destruction or delivery up of 224
- injunction, restraint of threats of proceedings by 227
 - when granted in action for infringement 224
- inspection, order for, in action for infringement, 221
 - register, of, provision for, 181
- insufficiency, want of utility supporting plea of, 151, 152
- interlocutory injunction, delay in application as affecting rights to 219, 220
 - evidence on application for, how given, 220
 - in respect of infringement, how obtained, 219, 220
- international agreements, effect of, 184
 - patent, procedure as to 227, 228
- interrogatories, patent action in rules applicable to, 220, 221
- invalidity, plea of, nature of, 151
- invention, a property only by virtue of monopoly, 127
 - acquisition by Secretary for War or Admiralty, 166, 169
 - additional, effect of grant of patent as to, 159
 - complete specification, effect of, 158
 - ambit of, must be circumscribed by definite claims, 163
 - certificate of Board of Trade as a protection on exhibiting, 144, 145

INDEX.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS—*continued*

- invention, claims in respect of how set out, 161—163
- colonial, protection of 227 226
- communicated from abroad, effect of, 132, 133
- compared with authorship, 127
- dedication to the public by sale, 144
- description of, essentials to, 159, 160
- distinction between purpose or subject-matter and purpose of, 163
- enforcement of right of master in respect of, 132
- essential characteristics of, 131, 135
- existence of, evidence admissible as to, 185, 186
 - question as to, one of fact, 135
- foreign, protection of, 227
- grant of patent of addition as affecting, 206
- grounds of opposition to grant of patent for 175—177
- invalidity of patent when against public policy, 152
- nature of the art as evidence of 136
- new and old principle may be applied to valid, 137
- novelty of, as an essential 111, 112
- patentee must particularise the nature of, 161 162
- provisional protection of, 156
- public user by exposure, 142
- right to, as between master and servant 131, 132
- substantive, by servant property in, 152
- title to, provisions relating to 151 155
- use by way of experiment not a bar to patent 110
- utility of, as affecting validity of patent 150, 151
- inventions, classification and differentiation between 139
- inventive faculties, combination must be result of exercising 139
 - exercise necessary to validity of invention, 135, 137
- inventor, as grantee, must be the "true and first," 130
 - definition of, 130
 - duty as to description of invention on filing specifications, 159 161
 - improvement on patent, of, rights of, 138
 - inability of corporation to be an, 130
 - publication without knowledge or consent of, effect of, 147
 - rediscoverer of lost art as the first and true, 131
 - when a "true" inventor, 130
- investigation, right of applicant to be heard before Comptroller after, 167
 - specification of, by examiner, 165 166
- jurisdiction, action for infringement, in courts having, 215
- knowledge, nature of, conveyed to public mind, importance of, 118 119
 - prior publication as means of, the public acquiring, 116
 - public access to, what may be, 116
 - by, as a bar, 112
 - inference as to opportunity taken to obtain, 117
 - quantum imparted, when sufficient, 119
 - question of extent furnished by prior publication, 118
- lapsed patent, restoration of, procedure on, 182, 183
- law officer, appeal from decision of Comptroller to, 178
- lease of patent, illegality of insertion of prohibited conditions as to user in, 193
- legal proceedings, restraint of threatened, 227
- letters patent, *see* patent
- licence, assignment of, 195
 - determination of, 195
 - estoppel of licensee during continuance of 191
 - illegality of insertion of prohibited conditions in, 193
 - may be revocable, 195
 - work patent, to, formalities on granting 192, 193
 - nature of, which may be granted, 191
 - who may grant, 190 191
- licensee, application of doctrine of estoppel to, 219
 - position of Crown as, 192
 - rights and obligations of, 191
- limitation of time, application for patent, for, after permitted exhibition, 145
- limited company, personal liability of directors of, for costs in patent action, 326

INDEX.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS - *continued*

- lost art, rediscoverer of, as a first and true inventor, 131
- rediscovery of, right to patent on 143
- lunatic, right to apply for letters patent, 129
- manufacture, definition of, 134
 - product of, as subject of a patent, 140, 141
- married woman, right to apply for letters patent, 129
- master, assistance to, by servant, effect of, 132
 - enforcement of right of, 132
 - right to benefit of servant's invention, extent of, 131, 132
 - servant as trustee of patent for, 132
 - supplemental improvements by servant as property of, 132
- merit, importance of, as ground for extension of term of patent, 203
- model, exhibition of, no sufficient user, 146
- monopoly, as affected by the Statute of Monopolies, 129
 - definition of, 128
 - invention a property by virtue of, 127
 - not always valid at common law, 128
- morality, invention contrary to law or, right of Comptroller as to 168
- munitions of war, assignment of patent for improvement in, 184, 189
- new art, as an essential characteristic, 131, 135
 - nature of principle not of itself a 134 137
 - purpose application of old contrivance to, as an invention, 110
- notice, acceptance of specification, of, 144
 - applicant to as to hearing before Comptroller, 168
 - assignee with, position of, 185
 - opposition, of, to amendment of specifications 141
 - extension of term of patent, 201
 - grant of patent 175
 - restoration of lapsed patent, 182
- novelty, as essential to validity of patent, 141 112
 - the real test not utility 151
 - infringement of patented what will amount to, 212, 213
 - want of, as plea in defence to action for infringement 218
- offences in connection with the granting of patents, 231
- opposition, amendment of specifications, to, declaration in support of, 171
 - extension of term of patent, to, notice of, 201
 - grant, to, evidence supporting 177
 - grounds of, 175 177
 - hearing of case on, 177, 178
 - who may make 175
 - restoration of lapsed patent, to, 182 183
- order, extension of term of patent for, nature of 204
 - restoration of lapsed patent, for, 182 183
 - protection of *interim* users 183
- revocation of patent mainly worked abroad for, nature of, 209 210
 - variation of, 210
- partnership, assignment of share of profits of a patent may create, 183
 - patent in a, effect of 188
- parts, infringement by combination of 214
- patent agent, duties of 230 231
 - nature of employment of, powers 230
 - qualification for registration 229
 - who may act as, 229
 - not act as 230
- "patent agent," use of words as an offence, 231
- patent agents, register of, contents of, 229
 - appointment and duties of, 229
- assignment of, clauses and covenants in effect of, 184, 185
 - form and nature of subject-matter of, 183
 - share of, usual covenants in, 188
- avoidance by exhibition, 144 145
- capacity to obtain, 129
- date of, provision as to 179
- grant of, as reward for disclosure of discovery, 131
 - effect of 158 159
 - essentials of the, 129
- improvement on right of inventor as to, 138
- incapacity to obtain, 129, 130

INDEX.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS—continued

- patent infringement of, what constitutes, 210, 211
- invalidity where invention against public policy 137
 - obtained by fraud, 180
- lapsed, restoration of procedure on, 182, 183
- lost or destroyed, power of Comptroller as to 179
- maintenance of, 181
- meaning of, 127
- nature of, as a bargain, 191
 - consideration for grant of, 131
 - public user as affecting right to, 142, 143
- new and old principle may afford good subject-matter for 137
- novelty as essential to validity of 141
- of addition, application for, procedure on, 200, 206
 - definition of, 206
 - effect of grant of, 188, 206
- office library, publication by being placed in the, 146, 147
 - situation and control of, 152, 153
- opposition to grant of, who may make, 175
 - grounds of, 175—177
- privilege granted by under the Statute of Monopolies 123
- process may be an art for purposes of 137
- protection of, rights of assignee as to, 187
- public knowledge as affecting validity, 142
- servant as trustee of master's, 132
- subject-matter of a, 131—141
- renewal fees on, effect of non payment 181
- right, nature of, as a chose in action, 141
- rights of co-owners of, 184
- term of, *see* term of patent
- validity of grant of 170
 - test of, 131
- who may apply for a, 129
- "patent office," use of words, as an offence 211
- patentee, amendment of specifications at instance of, 170—173
 - bankruptcy of, effect of, 189, 190
 - death of, devolution of patent on, 190
 - intestacy of, vesting of patent on, 190
 - right conferred by letters patent on nature of, 127
- patents, register of entries made in, 179, 180
- petition, compulsory licence, for, evidence to support, 197, 198
 - grounds of, 197
 - order of the court as to, effect of, 198
 - powers of Board of Trade on hearing, 198
 - court on hearing, 198
 - reference from Board of Trade to court, 198
- extension of term of patent, for, 199, 200
- revocation of a patent, for, who may present, 206
- plaintiff, action for infringement, in, who may be, 214
- pleadings, action for infringement, in, 215—219
- principle, new and old, as good subject-matter for patent, 137
- proceedings, infringement, for, 210—227
- process, an art for purposes of a patent, 137
 - selection of one out of a class as subject for patent, 139
- product of manufacture, as subject of a patent, 140, 141
- profit, consideration of, on application for extension of term of patent, 203
 - distinction between experiments and use for, 144
- provisional protection, when given to applicant, 156
 - specification, considerations in preparing, 157
 - description of invention in, nature of 156, 157
 - discrepancy between complete and, 158
 - function and object of, 155, 156
- public, invention known to, at time of grant effect of, 131
 - knowledge in the, by prior publication, 116
 - inference as to opportunity taken to obtain, 147
 - invention, of, as a bar, 142
 - nature imparted by prior publication, effect of, 148, 149
 - quantum imparted 149
- policy, grant of compulsory licence on ground of, 197

1

-continued-

- Comptroller, 170**

INDEX.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS—continued.

- specifications, amendment of, on report of examiner, 166
 - when none allowed, 172
 - choice of, considerations governing, 156
 - classification of persons to whom must be intelligible, 149, 150
 - complete, essentials of, 159, 160
 - knowledge acquired since filing a provisional, must be put into 161
 - must conform with provisional, 161
 - construction of, mode of, 164, 165
 - must be as a whole, 164
 - rule as to, 163, 164
 - difference between a good and bad, 160
 - discrepancy between provisional and complete, effect of, 158
 - examiner must investigate previous, 165, 166
 - function of, 155, 156
 - insufficiency as affecting validity of patent 151, 162
 - investigation of, lodged subsequent to application, 166
 - lodgment of complete, time for, 158
 - nature and *quantum* of knowledge imparted by, 148, 149
 - patent anticipated by when no bar, 167
 - provisional, considerations in preparing 157
 - description in, 166, 157
 - function of, 155, 156
 - object of, 156
 - publication in, effect of, 147, 148
 - reading of, 161
 - reference to an examiner, 158
 - test of sufficiency of information imparted in, 149
 - title, should commence with the, 161
- stamp on assignment of patent, nature of, 181
- statement of claim, action for infringement, in, form of, 216, 217
- statute of Monopolies, effect of 124
 - meaning of terms used in the, 184
 - term of privilege granted by the, 128
- statutory declaration, when opponent to grant must file, 177
- stay of proceedings, may be granted pending appeal, 227
- term of patent, considerations of the court as to extension of, 202, 203
 - duration of original grant, 198
 - extension of, application for, 199, 200
 - costs as to, 205
 - order, for, nature of, 201
 - partial, 205
 - proceedings for, as to 201, 204
 - refused where patent not of utility, 203
 - finality of decision of the court as to 202
 - privilege, provision of the Statute of Monopolies as to, 128
- third party, position of importer in relation to, 131
- time, acceptance of amendment, for extension of, 174
 - specification, for, 174
 - extension, for leaving complete specification duty of Comptroller 174
 - filing appeal, for, against decision of Comptroller, 169, 170
 - limitation of, for application for patent after permitted exhibition, 145
 - lodgment of complete specification, 158
 - scaling the grant, for, 178, 179
- title, defective, may be cured by specification, 156, 157
 - objection to, 155
 - nature of, to accompany application 155
 - right of the Crown to object to applicants, 155
 - specification must commence with, 154
 - vagueness of applicants, effect of 155
- tools, new method of use of, not subject of a patent, 140
- "trade," use of word, effect of, 184
- trial, action for infringement, in, proceedings at, 221, 222
- true and first inventor, as including true and first importer, 132, 133
 - grantee must be the, 131
- user, when amounting to an infringement 211, 212
- utility, meaning of with reference to an invention 150, 151
 - plea of insufficiency supported by want of, 161, 162

INDEX.

PATENTS AND INVENTIONS—*continued.*

- utility, real test is novelty, not, 151
- use of in application to patents, 150, 151
- want of, as a plea of invalidity, 151
- validity of patent, objection to, as plea in action for infringement, 218
- vendor, infringement of patented article by, 212
- vesting order, power to make as affecting patents, 190
- war material, provisions as to invention relating to, 189
- warranty of validity, covenant for, on assignment of patent, 187
- witnesses, attendance for cross-examination, power to order, 169

PAWNS AND PLEDGES,

- action for debt, pawnee's right to recover deficiency by, 245
- real owner's right of, where goods pledged without consent, 253, 255
- special matter may be pleaded in, under Pawnbrokers Act, 259
- administrators, pawnbroker's, extension of Pawnbrokers Act to, 250
- advance, delivery not simultaneous with, 238
- agent, liability of pawnbroker for acts of, 250
- appeal from refusal to grant certificate, 259
 - summary conviction, to what court, 259
- application, pawnbroker's licence, for, 248
- assignment, pawnee's rights in thing pledged, effect of, 244
- auctioneer, goods sent for sale to, not a pledge for advances before sale, 210
- bailed goods liability of pawnbroker taking into pawn, 250
- bankruptcy, effect on property in thing pledged 246
 - pawner, of, pawnbroker's title against trustee, 246
 - pawnee a secured creditor on, 246
- bill of sale, pawn does not amount to 236
- books, duty of pawnbroker as to keeping, 249, 250
 - production of, liability of pawnbroker as to 256
- business, conduct of pawnbroker's, offences connected with, 255
- care of pawn, pawnee's duty as to, 243
- catalogue of pledges, right of inspection in pawner, 252
- certificate, appeal from refusal to grant, 259
 - justice may give, for payment of pawnbroker's expenses in a prosecution, 258
 - pawnbroker's, forgery of liability of offender, 249
 - how obtained, 248, 249
 - refusal of, grounds for, 249
- certiorari*, writ of, not applicable, 259
- charges, pawnbroker's right to make, 251
- common law, persons entitled to pawn at, 239
- compensation of alleged offender, in respect of frivolous prosecution, 259
 - pawnbroker on prosecution of pawner, 258
- compounding offences, liability for, 259
- conduct of business of pawnbroker offences relating to, 255
- consolidation, principle of, no application to contract of pawn, 242
- contract of pawn, essentials of, 238
 - extinction of, 239
 - nature of, 235
 - not avoided by conviction of pawnbroker, 257
 - principle of consolidation no application to, 242
 - stamp on, 236
 - when handing back property does not affect, 239
- conversion, pawner, by, what will amount to, 243
- conviction, delivery of pledged stolen goods on proof of 254, 255
 - pawnbroker, of, cancellation of licence on, 249
 - contract of pawn not avoided by, 257
- custom of trade, mercantile agent's right to pledge affected by, 240
- damage to pledge, extent of liability of pawnbroker as to, 254
- damages, pawner's right to, on loss of pawn, 243
- death of pawner, devolution of right on, 242
- declaration, as to lost pawn-ticket, 253
 - indemnity of pawnbroker by, 253
 - false, offence of making, 253
- deferred pay, invalidity of pledge of, 237
- delivery, advance not simultaneous with, 238
 - as essential to contract of pawn, 238

INDEX.

PAWNS AND PLEDGES—continued

- delivery, failure of pawnbroker to make, liability on, 233
 - pledged stolen goods, of, order for, 254, 255
- detention, pawner, of, by pawnbroker in metropolis, 258
 - producing counterfeit pawn-ticket, of, 258
 - reasonable suspicion as cause for, 257
 - suspected of illegal pawning, 257, 258
- distress, goods pledged with pawnbroker not liable to, 246
- documents, duty of pawnbroker as to keeping, 249, 250
- drunken person, invalidity of pawn by, 238
- equitable mortgage, pawn does not amount to, 236
- excise duty on pawnbrokers licence, 249
- execution against pawned goods, when sheriff can levy, 245
- executors, devolution of right of pawner to him, 242
 - pawnbroker's, extension of Pawnbrokers Act to, 250
- factors, capacity of, to pawn, 239, 240
- false declaration, offence of making, 253
- fine for illegal pawning, application of, 257
- fire, liability of pawnbroker for damage by, 254
- foreclosure, pawnee no right of, 246
- fraud, rights of owner of chattel obtained by, against pawnee, 246
- frivolous prosecution, compensation of alleged offender in respect of, 259
- hosiery materials, illegality of pawn of, 237
- illegal pawning, detention of person suspected of, 257, 258
 - liability of offender in respect of, 257
 - pawnbroker in respect of, 255, 256
 - title to goods the subject of, 247
- infants, invalidity of pawn by, 238
- interpleader, pawnee's right to proceed in, 247
- larceny, pawn-ticket as subject of, 251
- laundry work, illegality of pawn of, 237
- lien, difference between pawn and, 235, 236
- licence, pawnbroker's, cancellation on conviction, 249
 - excise duty on, 249
 - procedure to obtain, 248
- lost pawn-ticket, declaration necessary as to, 253
- lunatic, invalidity of pawn by, 238
- measure of damage on loss of pawn, 243
- mercantile agent, capacity of, to pawn, 239
 - custom of trade affecting right of, to pledge, 240
 - power to pledge, 239
 - what pledge by includes, 240
- metropolis, delivery of unlawfully pledged goods in the, order for, 247
 - detention of persons by pawnbroker in, 258
- military stores, articles within meaning of, 236, 237
- "money-lender," pawnbroker not a, 250
- mortgage, difference between pawn and, 235
- negligence, liability of pawnbroker for damage caused through, 254
- notice, application for pawnbroker's licence on, 248
- notices to be exhibited by pawnbroker, 250
- offences, compounding, liability for, 259
 - conduct of pawnbroker's business in liability for, 258
 - penalties for, under the Pawnbrokers Act, 258, 259
- order for delivery of pledged stolen goods, effect of, 254
 - when made, 254, 255
- partners, goods pledged by, right to redeem, 242
- partnership, invalidity of pawnbroker's secret, 250
- pawn, care of, pawnee's duty as to, 243
 - definition of, 234
 - difference between lien and, 235, 236
 - mortgage and, 235
 - nature of property in, 235
 - not liable to distress when pledged with pawnbroker, 246
 - person entitled at common law to, 239
 - property passes by delivery, 235
 - things capable of being the subject-matter of a, 236
- pawnbroker, acting without licence, penalty, 249
 - books and documents to be kept by, 249
 - cancellation of licence on conviction of, 249

INDEX.

PAWNS AND PLEDGES—*continued*

- pawnbroker, certificate of, how obtained, 248, 249
- conviction of, contract of pawn not avoided by, 257
- definition of, 284, 285
- detention of persons in metropolis by, 258
- indemnity of, by declaration in respect of lost pawn-ticket, 253
- liability for acts of agent or servant, 250
 - damage, extent of, 254
 - non-delivery of pledge, 255
 - in respect of illegal pawning, 255, 256
 - sales, 256, 257
 - to produce books and papers, 256
- licence of, cancellation on conviction, 249
 - excise duty on, 249
 - procedure to obtain, 248
- not a "money-lender," 250
- notices to be exhibited by, 250
- property in pledges under 10s, 251
- special contract, right to make, 251
- title of, against trustee in bankruptcy of pawner, 248
- pawnee, assignment of rights of, effect of, 244
 - definition of, 234
 - duty as to care of pawn, 243
 - execution against, effect of, 245
 - no right of foreclosure in, 245
 - right to action of trespass where dispossessed of thing pledged, 245
 - rights as to interpleader, 247
 - of owner of stolen goods against, 246
 - special property of, in subject of pawn, 243
 - use of pledge by, rights as to, 244
- pawner, death of, devolution of right on, 242
 - detention of, right of pawnbroker as to, 257, 258
 - definition of, 284
 - implied warranty of title of, 241
 - offences by, 257
 - remedies as to recovery of pawn, 242, 243
 - sale of pledge by, effect of, 241
- pawns, classes of, 235
- pawn-ticket, as evidence of right to redeem, 252
 - delivery of pledge on production of, 253
 - detention of person producing counterfeit, 258
 - duty of pawnbroker to give, 250
 - exemption from stamp duty, 251
 - lost or stolen, declaration as to, 254
 - redemption where, 253
- penalties, application of, 258
 - offence of making a false declaration, 259
 - offences under Pawnbrokers Act, for, 258, 259
 - pawnbroker's liability on acting without licence, 249
- pension, invalidity of pledge of, 237
- personal representatives, application of Pawnbrokers Act to pawnbroker's, 250
- plea action or prosecution under the Pawnbrokers Act, to, what may be the subject of, 259
- pledge, damage to, extent of pawnbroker's liability for, 254
 - duty of pawnbroker as to sale of unredeemed, 252
 - mercantile agent, by, what it includes, 240
 - redemption of, time for, 251
 - when over 10s, 252
 - right of action of real owner of, 253
 - Sale of Goods Act as applied to, 240
 - under 10s, pawnbroker's right as to, 251
- police clothing, illegality of pledge of, 237
- possession, when no proof that property in pawner, 241
- power of sale of pawnee, extent of, 244
- public stores, illegality of pledge of, 237
- quality, no implied warranty of, by pawner, 241
- quarter sessions, appeal from summary conviction to, 259

INDEX.

PAWNS AND PLEDGES—*continued*

- redemption, goods pledged by partners, *of*, 242
- pawn, *of*, time for, 241, 242, 251
- pawn-ticket as evidence of right *of*, 253
 - lost or stolen, where, 253
 - production of pawn-ticket on, 253
 - sale of pledge before, effect *of*, 241, 242
- regimental equipment, articles within meaning *of*, 236, 237
- sale, deficiency on, pawnee's right to recovery, 245
 - liability of pawnbroker in respect *of*, 256, 257
- Sale of Goods Act, 1893, application of Act to pledges, 210
- sale, pledge by pawner, *of*, effect *of*, 211
 - power in pawnee as to, 244
 - unredeemed pledge, *of*, application of surplus to arise from, 252
 - duty of pawnbroker as to, 252
 - regulations as to, 252
 - warranty of title on, none where by pawnbroker, 244
- Seaman's Clothing Act, 1869, towns to which Act applying, 237
- seamen's property, meaning *of*, 237
- search warrant, rights of owner of unlawfully pawned goods to obtain, 250
- secret partnership, invalidity of pawnbroker's, 250
- security, increase in value *of*, pawner's right to, 213
- servant, liability of pawnbroker for acts *of*, 250
- sheriff, right *of*, on issue of execution against pawned goods, 243
- special contract, when pawnbroker may make, 251
- stamp, contract of pawn on, 236
 - duty, exemption of pawn-ticket from, 251
- Statutes of Limitation, pawner's right to redeem not barred by, 211, 213
- stolen goods, delivery *of* pledged, in the metropolis, order for, 211
 - order for, 254, 255
 - owner's rights against pawner *of*, 210
- surplus, application where arising from sale of unredeemed pledge, 252
- ticket, *see* pawn-ticket
- time, redemption *of* pledge, for, 211, 212, 251
- title, goods illegally pawned, to, 217
 - pawner, *of*, implied warranty *of*, 241
 - warranty *of*, none on sale by pawnbroker, 244
- trespass, pawnee's right to action for, where dispossession *of* thing pledged, 213
- trover, owner of stolen goods may maintain, 246
 - pawner's right to maintain in respect *of* pawn, 212, 213
- unauthorised pawn rights of pawnee as to, 211
- unfinished goods, illegality *of* pawn *of*, 257
 - liability of pawnbroker taking into pawn, 256
- unlawful pledge, property the subject *of*, 256-258
- unredeemed pledge, regulations as to sale *of*, 252
 - when pawnbroker must sell by auction, 252
- value of security, increase in, right of pawnee as to, 213
- warrant, search, right of owner of unlawfully pawned goods to obtain, 250
- warranty, none as to quality by pawner, 241
 - of* title, implied by pawner, 241
 - none on sale by pawnbroker, 244
- washing, illegality *of* pledge *of*, 237
- workhouse property, illegality *of* pawn *of*, 237
- writ *of* *certiorari*, no application to justices' order or conviction, 273

PEERAGES AND DIGNITIES,

- abeyance, application of doctrine to peerages, 273
 - arising on death, 273
 - as distinguished from co-heirship, 274
 - may arise from disqualification of heir, 274
 - power of the Crown to terminate in favour of one co-heir, 274
- Act of Union, Ireland, effect on creation of new peers, 267
 - Scotland, effect as to creation of new peers, 267
- arms, *see* College of Arms
- arrest, privilege of a peer as to, 271
- attainder, co-heir, *of*, effect *of*, 276
 - forfeiture of peerage on, 275
 - restitution of blood corrupted by, 276

PEERAGES AND DIGNITIES—*continued*

- attainder, when successor to dignity not affected by, 277, 274
- audience, right of, of a peer, 271
- bankruptcy, peer, of a, disqualification arising on, 270
- baron, degree of peerage of the title of, 264
 - first creation of, by letters patent, 266
 - rank of, Lord of Appeal as, 263
- baronet, institution of dignity of, 283
 - meaning of, 283
 - official roll relating to dignity of, provision for keeping, 285
 - precedence of, 281
 - privileges of a, 284, 285
 - wife of, right to prefix of "Dame," 284
- baronetcy, claim to, how made, 285
 - nature of as an incorporeal hereditament 283
 - "land," 283
- barony by writ, no merger in subsequent earldom, 274
 - of tenure, extinguishment of, 265
- Bath, Order of the nature of, 286, 287
- blood, restitution of, corrupted by attainder, 276
- claim to peerage, jurisdiction as to, 277
- Close Roll, production as evidence in peerage claim, 260
- co-heir, attainder of, effect of, 276
 - power of Crown to terminate abeyance in favour of one, 271
- co-heirs, office of honour remains vested in all 274
- co-heirship, abeyance distinguished from, 273
- College of Arms, constitution of, 288
 - incorporation of, 288
 - returns of visitations, production from the 289
- Committee of Privileges, reference of petition to on report of law officers, 278
- costs, security for, when peer must give 271
- "Dame," right of wife of baronet to prefix of, 284
- death, abeyance arising on, 274
- declaration as to pedigree, admissibility of 264
- deprivation, peerage, of, how effected, 276
- descent, claimant to peerage claim must prove, 279—281
 - peerage, of a, nature of, 269
- dignity, peers, of, 262, 263
- disqualifications appertaining to dignity of a peer, 270
- documentary evidence, admissibility in peerage claim, 281, 282
- duke, degree of peerage of title of, 263
- earl, degree of peerage of title of, 264
- Earl Marshal, jurisdiction of, 289
- earldom, extent of an, 264
 - no merger of barony by writ in subsequent, 271
- elections, parliamentary peers qualified to vote at, 270
- extinction, peerage, of, by failure of heirs, 273
- evidence
 - descent, of, necessary in peerage claim, 279—281
 - documentary, admissibility in peerage claim, 281, 282
 - peerage claim, in, admissibility of 279
 - declarations as, 281
 - nature of, 279, 280
 - visitations as, 289
- failure of issue, extinction of peerage by, 273
- foreign dignities, not recognised in this country, 290
 - medals and orders, regulations as to wearing 290, 291
- forfeiture, peerage, of, arising without attainder, 276
 - on attainder, 275
- heir, abeyance may arise from disqualification of 271
- heralds, description and function of, 288, 289
 - variation in number of, 288, 289
- honour, right to peerage distinguished from title of, 263
- House of Commons, peers who may sit in the, 270
 - Lords, jurisdiction as to claim to peerage, 277
- illegitimate children, legitimation of, upon what depending 282
- incompetency, proof in peerage claim, right as to, 282
- incorporeal hereditament, nature of baronetcy as an, 283
 - peerage as an, 269
- Indian Empire, Knight of the Order of the, foundation of, 287

INDEX.

PEERAGES AND DIGNITIES—*continued*

- infant peer, extent of disqualification of, 270
- Ireland, Act of Union with, as affecting creation of new peers, 267
- Irish peers, claim to vote by, procedure, 278
 - power of the Crown to create, extent of, 267
 - qualification to sit in House of Commons, 270
 - rights of, generally, 271
- kings of arms, origin and function of, 288
- knight of the Garter, precedence of, 286
- knighthood, authority of the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland to confer, 286
 - nature of dignity of, 285, 286
 - order of, how created, 285, 286
 - right of holder of dignity to prefix of 'Sir,' 283
 - various orders of, 287
- knights bachelor, nature of order of, 287
- land, baronetcy as, 284
- lapse of time, no bar to claim to peerage, 274
- legal proceedings, description of peer in, 271
 - plea of privilege by peer in, 271
- legitimacy, question of, as affecting peerage claims, 282
- letters patent, creation of baronet by, 281, 284
 - peerage by, 267, 268
 - first creation of baron by, 266
 - form of, 268, 269
 - invalidity of shifting clause in, 268, 269
 - limitation of grant of, 266
 - no refusal of grant of peerage by, 269
- life peerage, privilege attached to, 269
- Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, authority to confer knighthood, 286, 287
- Lord of Appeal, dignity of rank of, 263
 - no descent of dignity of, 269
- Lords Spiritual, as lords of Parliament, 262
- marquess, degree of peerage of title of, 264
- medals, foreign regulations as to wearing, 290, 291
- merger, none of honours by writ in subsequent rank, 274
 - peerage, of, in the Crown, 274
- naming of a place, not essential to creation of peerage, 269
- new peerage, creation of, 266
 - peers Act of Union with Ireland as affecting creation of, 267
 - Crown may create, of the United Kingdom, 267
- non-access, evidence in peerage claim as to, 282, 283
- novodamus*, right to Scottish peer to resign for a, 275
- office of honour, devolution of, 274
- officers of arms, jurisdiction of, 289
- official roll, baronets, of, provision for keeping, 289
- Order of the Bath, nature of, 286, 287
- orders of knighthood, classification of, 286, 287
- Parliament, precedence of peers in, 272, 273
 - writ of summons must be to, 266
- peerage claim, evidence in, admissibility, 279
 - generally, 279-281
 - jurisdiction as to, 277
 - deprivation of, how effected, 276
 - creation of, procedure on, 267, 268
 - definition of, 262
 - degree of title of baron in the, 264
 - duke in the, 263
 - earl in the, 264
 - marquess in the, 263, 264
 - viscount in the, 264
 - estate in and descent of, nature of, 269
 - lapse of time no bar to claim to, 274
 - limitation for life, effect of, 269
 - of grant creating, 268
 - naming of a place not essential to creation of a, 269
 - new, creation of, 266, 267
 - refusal of, no right of, 269
 - right to, as distinguished from a title of honour, 263
 - when writ does not create a, 266

INDEX,

PEERAGES AND DIGNITIES—*continued.*

- peeresses, trial of, rights and privileges in connection with, 272
- peers, as lords of Parliament, 262
 - classification of, 262
 - creation of, modes of, 265
 - dignity of, compared with that of a Sovereign, 262
 - plea of privilege by, 271
 - precedence of, in Parliament, 272, 273
 - Scottish, may be representative peers, 262
 - trial of, privileges in connection with, 271, 272
- petition, claim to baronetcy by, 285
 - peerage by, procedure, 278
 - form of prayer of, 278
 - reference to Committee of Privileges, 278, 279
 - report on, by law officers of the Crown, 278, 279
- precedence, peers in Parliament, of, 272, 273
- privilege, peer, of, as to arrest, 271
 - generally, 270
 - plea as to, 271
- Privileges, Committee of, reference of petition to on report of law officers of the Crown, 278
- pursuivants, names and number of, 289
- reports, proceedings on other claims, of, nature of admission of, 282
- representative peer, Scottish peer may be elected as a, 262
- resignation, none by peer of England, 275
- Royal Victorian Order, Knight of the, foundation of, 287
- St Andrew, Knight of the Thistle or, Order of, when founded 287
- St Michael and St George, Knight of, foundation of Order of, 287
- St Patrick, Knight of, foundation of Order of, 287
- Scottish peer, creation of new, power of the Crown as to, 267
 - may be a representative peer, 262
 - right to resign his dignity, 275
 - rights of, 270
- security for costs, when peer must give 271
- shifting clause, letters patent, in, invalidity of, 268, 269
- "Sir," right of baronet to prefix of, 281
 - holder of dignity of knighthood to prefix of 285
- sitting, necessity for, to create a peer by writ of summons 261
- Star of India, Knight of the Order of the, when founded 287
- succession, dignity, to, when unaffected by attainder, 275, 276
- surrender, none of English peerage, 275
- tenure, barony of, extinguishment of, 265
- Thistle, Knight of St Andrew or the, when founded 287
- trial, peer, of a, privilege in connection with, 271, 272
 - peeress, of, rights and privileges on, 272
- United Kingdom, power of the Crown to create peers of the, 267
- viscount, degree of peerage of the title of, 261
- visitations, nature and object of, 289
 - production of, how compelled, 289
- vota, peers qualified to, limitation as to, 270
- writ of summons, creation of barony by, 265
 - when followed by a sitting, 265
 - must be to Parliament, 266
 - sitting necessary to create peerage by, 265

ILLUSTRATIONS.

- abroad, rule no application to property, 312
- accumulation, calculation of the statutory periods of, 375
 - capitalisation may be subject of, 373
 - determination of appropriate statutory period for, 374, 375
 - direction for repairs and replacement out of working capital, when not an, 380
 - directions as to timber not void as direction for, 380
 - for, when void, 304, 305
 - within the statutory rules relating to, nature of, 373
 - effect where required by law, 373, 374
 - exceptions from the statutory rules relating to, 375—381
 - executive, effect of, 371, 372

INDEX.

PERPETUITIES—continued

- accumulation, in interests of children, word "portion" not necessary to, 379
- payment of debts, for, validity of provision for, 376
- property subject to the statutory rules relating to, 372
- provision for, under trust to pay debts, when valid, 327, 328
 - when within the perpetuity period, 301
- purposes of, 371
- recompment, for, must come within the rule 329
 - of beneficiaries, for, validity of, 376, 377
- rents, of, to pay charges on the estate, validity of, 328
- restriction of, 370—384
- trust for, for particular person, when valid, 327
 - is subject to the rule against perpetuities, 370
- trusts not within exception to rules against, nature of, 380, 381
- Accumulations Act, 1800, limit of accumulation period under, 379, 371
 - 1892, as affecting accumulations for purchase of land, 371
- accumulations, application where ineffective, 383
 - charge under a power, in respect of, application of, 383
 - costs of proceedings relating to invalidity of, 383, 384
 - implied trust for, when arising, 373
 - invalidity of, effect of, 381
 - position of the heir as to, 383
 - savings out of income not within rules against, 381
 - trust to invest, effect of, 383
- adoption, conveyance upon trust, when void under rules against perpetuities, 297
- alienee, remoteness of description of, 305
 - survivor of a class cannot be a direct, 305
- alternative limitation, may take effect, 318
- ambiguous clause, intution effectuated in case of, 307, 308
- America, rule against perpetuities upheld in, 315
- animals, correct method of making provision for, 298
 - trust in favour of, validity of, 298
- appointees, general power, of, effect of remoteness of 356
 - special power, of, effect of remoteness of 354
- appointment, exercise of special power of, period for, 333
 - invalid, with concurrence of object, effect of 359
 - life, for, with special power by will, effect of, 359
 - next of kin, to, when valid, 359
 - test for remoteness in, 358
 - will, by, may be valid at death though invalid at date of making, 359
- articles of association, validity of restrictive transfer of shares under, 322
- beneficiaries, provision for recompment of, not within statutory rules as to accumulation, 376, 377
 - vesting of interest where trust determinable by, 326, 327
- charities, future gift to, application of the rule to 339
 - rule against perpetuities not applicable to, 300
 - gift over to person after gift to, invalidity of, 330
 - when rule has no application to, 322, 324
- charity, gift over, from one to another, may be valid, 329
- chattels, effect where settled as realty, 317
 - trust of, in favour of unborn person, effect of, 318
- child, *ex ventre sa mère*, as life in being, 301—303
 - retrospective treatment on birth, 314
 - vesting of interest where 310
- child-bearing, inadmissibility of evidence that woman is past, 325
- children, accumulation in interests of, 379
 - interest taken by parent in interest of, 379
- class, direction for settlement of each share of, effect of, 316
 - forfeiture clause on gift to, may be severable, 346
- gift, principles governing limitation by way of, 311
 - to, by description as part of a super-class, effect of, 313
 - court cannot remodel, 345
- individual gift to each member not a gift to a, 348
 - of a, effect of, 345, 346
- limitation to, living at a remote event, when void, 342
 - members ascertained by description, 342, 343
 - survivor of a, when valid, 365

INDEX,

PERPETUITIES—*continued*

- class, limitation to unborn children as a, on attaining age of twenty-one, 315
 - what is meant by, 341
 - with substitutionary clause added, effect of, 346
- objects of power, of, comprising valid and invalid objects, 357
- restraint on anticipation, severable among shares of a, 352
- taking at age greater than twenty-one, effect of, 343, 344
- validity of limitation to, where attainment of age not a condition precedent to vesting, 344
- collateral powers, application of rule to, 361, 362
- common law assurance, exempt from the rule, 430
 - condition subsequent, application of rule to 314, 317
- company, contract restricting transfer of shares of, validity of, 322
- securities, validity of, 364
- condition, distinction between conditional limitation and an executory devise and a, 314
 - precedent, limitation may be rendered void when the vesting is subject to a, 338, 439
 - subsequent, rule against perpetuities as affecting, 303
- conditions, when rule does not apply to, 322, 323
- construction, contract, of, when creating a right of property *in futuro*, 320
 - duration of powers a matter of, 361
 - executory trusts, of, by the court, 317
 - limitation, of, effect of the rule on 306
 - "vested," of, effect on validity of limitation, 339, 310
- contingent events, remoteness of, effect of, 305
 - power, must be exercisable within the perpetuity period, 354, 355
- accumulation, application of the rule to, extent of, 313, 314
 - effect of Land Transfer Act 1897, as to 314
 - gift over, single in expression may take effect as a 350
 - validity of, where contingency not too remote, 314
 - when rule not applicable to, 332
- contract, application of rule to, where creating limitations of property, 320
 - construction where creating right of property *in futuro*, 320
 - of insurance, payment under not an accumulation, 381
 - personal not within the rule, 431
 - rule against perpetuities not generally affecting, 319, 320
- corporations, extent to which rule against perpetuities not offended by, 300
 - rule has no application to, 322, 323
- costs, proceedings to determine invalidity of accumulations, by whom paid, 183, 384
- covenant, grant or renewal of lease for, application of rule to, 321, 322
- covenants, restrictive, when rule against perpetuities not offended by, 299
 - running with the land, rule against perpetuities not offended by, 300
 - when rule does not apply to, 322, 323
- creation of interest, time of 303
- Crown grant, application of rule against perpetuities to 311
- customary rights, rule against perpetuities not offended by 300
 - when rule has no application to, 322, 323
- cy-près* doctrine, application to limitation to children of unborn person 368
 - where estates for life given to class of children of living person, 369
 - instruments to which applicable, 367
 - nature of, 367
 - no application where succession not in course of descent, 369
 - not to be extended, 369
 - objects of testator's bounty not restricted by, 368
- date from which perpetuity period reckoned, 332, 333
- debts, accumulation under trust to pay when valid, 327, 328
 - provision for payment of, not within statutory rules relating to accumulation, 376
- deeds, *cy-près* doctrine not applicable to 367
- destructible interests, application of the rule to, 323
- devolution, interest invalidly limited, of, 351
 - of, is subject to valid directions, 351
- donee, general power of appointment, of, must not be remote, 354
- double contingency, expression of, effect of, 349
 - possibilities, nature of, rule against 295, 296
- essentials, perpetual nature of not objectionable, 293

INDEX.

PERPETUITIES—continued

- easements, not applicable to, 322-323
 election, application of doctrine to special powers, 361
en ventre sa mère, child a life in being when, 301
 considered life in being when, 302, 303
 retrospective treatment on birth of child, 331
 vesting of interest where child, 310
 equitable interests, application of the rule to, 317
 escheat, rights of exemption from rule, 331
 estate of inheritance, implied from words indicating a life interest, 368
 tail, application of exception to rule as to, 321, 31
 limitation in, subject to the rule, 325
 powers barrable by tenant in tail not obnoxious during continuance of, 362
 validity of limitations in defeasance of an, 323, 324
 taking effect on determination of an, 321
 evidence, admissibility in considering validity of limitation, 331, 331
 as to woman being past child-bearing, inadmissibility of, 335
 executory bequests, application of the rule to, 316
 devise, distinction between a condition and an, 314
 limitation void as may be valid with rule, 332
 must vest within the perpetuity period, 331
 devises, examples of valid, 312-313
 held invalid, 318
 trust, construction of, 317, 318
 execution by the court to exclude rule, 317
 intention to tie up property by creating, 318
 floating charge company's assets, on, validity of, 364
 foreign country, rule no application to property in, 312
 forfeiture clause, gift to class on, may be severable, 316
 future goods, rule no application to assignment of, 310
 gestation, period of, taken into consideration, 304
 time allowed for, 310
 perpetuity period extended by period of, 332-303
 gift, accumulation may be implied from form or nature of, 313
 class, to, court cannot remodel, 315
 expressed as single, when divisible, 319, 340
 fund in separate shares of, effect of, 316
 individual, to each member of class, effect of, 315, 316
 non-charitable object, for, when void, 298
 over after gift to charity when subject to the rule, 330
 effect where becoming void, 350-361
 expressed as single, effective as contingent remainder, 350
 valid in certain cases, 329
 personal estate, of, *cy-pres* doctrine no application to, 367
 remote direction to pay without actual effect of, 340
 heir, position of, as to accumulations, 383
 heirlooms, settlement of chattels as, when effective, 317
 improvements, trust out of income to effect validity of, 380
 indefinite object, gift for, when invalid, 298
 indemnity fund when not within statutory periods relating to accumulation, 380
 trust of lands conveyed for purpose of, validity of, 323
 insurance, payment under contract of, not an accumulation, 381
 intention, effectuated where words of limitation ambiguous, 307
 tie up property, to, effect given to, 318
interesse termini, as a valid interest, 316
 interest, contract, under, when rule against perpetuities does not affect, 319, 320
 devolution of, is subject to valid directions, 351
 on failure of limitation, 361
 quantum of, how ascertained, 304
 time of creation of, 303
 when becoming vested, 304
 said to be "too remote," 304
 interests, acquired by operation of law, not subject to rule, 331
 common law assurances, under, exemption from the rule, 339
 in presenti, when considered void, 297, 298
 yielding of, notwithstanding trust for payment of debts, 328

INDEX.

PERPETUITIES—*continued*

- invalid appointment, with concurrence of an object, effect of, 359
- land, Accumulations Act, 1892, as affecting, 371
 - covenants and conditions binding, when rule not applicable to, 322, 323
- interests in, not objectionable on ground of perpetuity, 299, 300
 - meaning of, in connection with accumulation, 371
- Land Transfer Act, 1897, effect as to remainder, 314
- least, covenant to grant or renew, application of rule to, 321, 322
 - right of re-entry reserved by, exemption of, 331, 332
- legal contingent remainder, *see* contingent remainder
- estate, where held subject to the rule, 312, 313
- life estate, gift to husband or wife of unmarried person, validity of, 336
- interest, estate of inheritance by implication from words indicating a, 368
- limitation, alternative, may take effect, 318
 - class of unborn children, to, on attaining age of twenty-one, 315
 - to a, validity of, where attainment of age not a condition precedent to vesting, 314
 - vesting on, 311
 - what is meant by, 311
- condition precedent to the vesting may render void, 338, 339
- construction of, effect of rule on, 306
- contingent on exercise of power, application of rule to, 319
- devolution of interest on failure of, 351
- double aspect, with, application of rule to, 318, 319
- duration of, 335—337
- estate tail, in, subject to the rule, 325
- evidence admissible in considering the validity of, 331, 335
- failure of, effect on subsequent limitations, 351, 352
 - gift over from invalidity as affecting *a priori*, 350, 351
- in default of appointment unaffected by void power, 352
- interest, of, not void when necessarily ending within the perpetuity period, 332
- in present*, invalidity of, 297
- members of a class ascertained by description, to, 342 343
 - living at a remote event, when void, 312
- none to survivor of number of unborn persons, 337
- property, of, application of rule to contract creating, 320
- remoteness in cesser of, not affected by rule, 335, 336
- series of individuals, to, effect of, 317
- successive generations of unborn issue, to rule as to, 364 363
- validity of, how question as to brought before the court, 306
 - upon what depending, 306
- void, effect where, 350
 - when considered not too remote, 323 321
- words of, how effectuated when ambiguous, 307
 - may be controlled by other part, 307
- lives, choice of, may be arbitrary, 308
 - essential qualification of chosen, 308, 309
 - instances of validly chosen, 309
 - perpetuity period where none chosen, 310
- mortgagee, collateral advantages given to, protection of 311
 - restriction on estate of, rule not applicable to, 361
- mortgagor, application of the rule to, 362, 363
 - restriction of right of redemption of, invalidity of 363
- mortmain, law of, a check on interests held by corporations 300
- name and arms, devise on condition of taking, not subject to rule, 315
- next of kin, appointment to, when valid, 359
- objects, testator's bounty, of, only take, 368
- operation of law, interests acquired by, not subject to the rule, 331
- option to purchase application of rule where limited *in futuro* 320, 321
- originating summons, question of validity brought before the court by, 306
- parent, interest taken by, in interest of children, nature of, 379
- period, *see* perpetuity period
- perpetual interests, when rule has no application to, 323, 323
- perpetuities, interests not offending rule against, 299
 - rule against, *see* rule against perpetuities,
- perpetuity, definition of 296, 297, 301
 - period, choice of, 309, 310

INDEX.

PERPETUITIES—continued

- perpetuity, period, contingent power must be exercisable within, 331, 333
 - date from which reckoned, 332, 338
 - executory devise must vest within the, 331
 - exercise of special power of appointment, for, 333
 - extended by period of gestation, 303
 - gift to unborn person must vest within the, 336
 - interests under trusts determinable by beneficiaries must vest within the, 326, 327
 - limitation necessarily ending within cannot be void, 332
 - limitations made by the, 303
 - object of the, 303, 304
 - provision for accumulation when within the, 304
 - subsequent events of, no effect where created interest within, 303
 - time for ascertaining facts with regard to 333, 334
 - from which, runs in respect of general powers, 356
 - where no lives are chosen, 310
- personal contracts, not within the rule 331
 - estate, application of rule to, 316
 - cy-près* doctrine no application to gifts of, 367
 - property, application of the rule to, 311, 312
- portion, meaning of 377
 - provision for a, directions not amounting to, 378
- portions, accumulation for purpose of raising, validity of, 377
 - funds which may or may not be 376, 378
 - instruments which may create, 377
- possession, postponement of, not affected by rule 338
- power of appointment, limitation in exercise of, period of 331
 - remoteness of donee of 364
 - special, as affected by the rule 356, 361
 - test for remoteness in, 358
 - to a class comprising valid and invalid objects, 366
- sale, application of rule to 361
- powers, application of rule prohibiting limitation to generations of unborn issue to, 366
 - barred by tenant in tail, when not obnoxious, 362
 - change nature of interests, to, within the rule, 362
 - contingent, must be within the rule 354
 - duration of, a matter of construction 361
 - exceptions to application of the rule as to, 363
 - exercisable by will of person unborn at its creation, validity of, 365
 - limitations contingent upon, application of the rule to, 349
 - of, framed in general term, 361, 362
 - may be severable, 354
 - objection to, grounds upon which may be made, 364
 - when may be made, 363
 - severability of, where given to series of persons, 349
 - when rule does not apply to 326
- pre-emption, right of, when subject to the rule 321
- profits *a prendre*, perpetual nature of not objectionable 329
 - rule not applicable to, 322, 324
- property, subject to the rule against perpetuities, 311, 312
 - when not subject to the rule 312
- public policy, nature of, as basis of rules affecting perpetuities, 291, 295
 - rules affecting perpetuities are based on, 291, 295
- purchase, option to, application of rule where limited *in futuro*, 320, 321
- quantum of interest, how ascertained, 304
- real estate, application of the rule to, 311, 312
 - chattels settled as, effect of 347
 - interests in subject to the rule, 312, 313
- recompment, accumulation for must come within the rule 329
- redemption of mortgage invalidity of mortgagor's right as to, 363
- remoteness, appointees of general power, of, effect of, 356
 - special power, of, effect of, 358
 - as affecting contingent powers, 354, 355
 - contingent events, of, effect of, 365
 - description of alienee of, effect of, 305, 309
 - in the appointees, 376

INDEX.

PERPETUITIES—continued

- remoteness, nature of, against which rule is directed, 335
 - objects of special power, in, effect of rule as to, 357
 - test for appointments in respect of, 358
- renewal of lease, covenant for, application of rule to, 321, 323
- rentcharges, perpetual, nature of, not objectionable, 299
 - rule no application to, 322, 323
- repairs, directions for, validity of, 380
- restraint on anticipation, invalidity of, when imposed on unborn person, 353
 - severable among shares of a class, 352
- restrictions, estate of mortgagee, on, rule no application to, 364
 - principles as to rejection of, application to appointments under powers, 359
- restrictive covenants, rule against perpetuities not offended by, 299
- resulting uses and trusts, exemption from rule, 351
- reverter, rights of, exemption from rule, 331
- right of entry, as being within the rule, 315, 316
 - common law condition subsequent, under application of the rule to, 314
 - exemption from rule, 331, 332
 - when subject to the rule, 313
- pre-emption, when subject to the rule, 321
- purchaser, application of rule to, 321
- rule against double possibilities, nature of, 295, 296
 - perpetuities, application, of, not to devise conditional on taking name and arms, 315
 - to common law conditions, 314, 315
 - covenants for grant or renewal of leases, 321, 322
 - option to purchase, 320, 321
 - personal estate, extent of, 316
 - powers, 353—362
 - securities, 362—364
 - condition subsequent or affected by, 303
 - construction of ambiguous clause where offending, 305
 - clause offending, effect of, 307
 - limitation affected by, 306
 - contracts in general not affected by, 319, 320
 - equitable estates as subject to, 317
 - interests not subject to, 322, 323
 - nature of, 295, 300, 301
 - remoteness against which directed, 335
 - object of, 303, 304
 - origin of, 300, 301
 - possible extension of, 322
 - postponement of possession not affected by, 319
 - property not subject to, 312
 - subject to the, 311, 312
 - remoteness in cases of limitation not affected by, 335
 - rules of law affecting basis of, 294, 295
 - trust for accumulation is subject to, 370
 - sale invalid when offending against, 318
 - valid trusts of indefinite duration not affected by, 319
 - when not affecting trusts and powers, 326
 - where legal estate subject to, 312, 313
- restrictive covenants, when rule does not apply to, 322, 323
- savings, rules against accumulation do not prevent trustees making, 381
- Scotland, rule no application to property in, 313
- securities, application of the rule to, 362—364
- settlement, application of surplus accumulations under, 382
 - directions for, rejected where trust fails for remoteness, 353
 - each share of gift to class, of, effect of, 346
- severable powers, exercise within the rule, 354
- shares, contract restricting transfer of, under articles of association, validity of, 323
- shifting use, application of the rule to, 312, 313

INDEX.

PERPETUITIES—continued.

- special powers of appointment, application of doctrine of election to, 361
 - effect of rule on, 356—361
 - remoteness in objects of, effect of rule as to, 357
- springing use, application of rule to, 312, 313
- statutory interests, rule against perpetuities not applicable to, 300
 - periods, accumulations, for, calculation of, 375
- subsequent limitation, failure of prior limitation as affecting, 351, 352
- substitution clause of, on limitation to class, effect of, 346
- surplus accumulations, application of, 381—384
- survivor, class, of a, not a direct alienee, 305
- suspension of vesting, limit of, 302
 - period allowed for, 300
- tomb, direction as to, not void as direction for accumulation, 380
 - power to cut and apply proceeds for payment of incumbrances, validity of, 328
- time, ascertaining facts in applying the rule, for, 333, 334
- creation of interest, of, 303
- tomb, trust for repair of, when invalid, 297, 298
- trust, accumulation, for, for a particular person, when valid, 327
 - failure for remoteness, directions for settlement inoperative on, 353
 - favour of animals, in, validity of, 298
 - for sale, invalid when offending against the rule, 318
 - presumption as to valid continuance of, 361
 - indefinite duration of, when rule does not affect, 319
 - interest held upon non-charitable, invalidity of, 297
 - pay debts, to, when provision for accumulation valid under, 327, 328
 - payment of debts, for, interests will vest notwithstanding, 328
 - repair of tomb, for, when invalid, 297, 298
 - vesting of interests where determinable by beneficiaries, 326, 327
 - when not within exceptions to rule against accumulation, 380, 381
 - rule does not apply to, 326
- trustees, creation of estate in, where beneficial interests void for remoteness, 318
- unborn children limitation, to as a class on attaining twenty-one, 345
 - issue, application of rule prohibiting limitation to successive generations of, 366
 - limitations to successive generations of, rule as to, 364, 365
 - person, application of *cy-pres* doctrine to limitation to children of, 368
 - examples of gifts for life to, 336
 - invalidity of restraint on anticipation imposed on, 352
 - power exercisable by will of, when invalid, 355
 - of appointment to, taking place at his death, invalidity of, 356
 - time of vesting as test of validity of gift to, 336
 - trust of chattels in favour of, 348
 - persons, no limitation to survivor of number of, 337
- unmarried person, gift of life estate to husband or wife of, validity of, 336
- "vested," construction of, effect on validity of limitation, 339, 340
- vested interests, future, when rule does not apply to, 322
 - rule does not apply to, 329
- vesting, determination of the time of, 303
 - effect on, where possession postponed, 338, 339
 - estate or interest, of, period of, 304
 - interest, of, notwithstanding trust for payment of debts, 328
 - where child *en ventre sa mère*, 310
 - limitation to a class, on, 341
 - period allowed for, 300, 301
 - of, determines validity of limitation to a class, 341
 - suspension of, limit on, 302
 - validity of gift to unborn person depends upon time of, 336
 - limitation to class where attainment of age not a condition precedent to, 344
- void for remoteness, when estate or interest said to be, 303, 304
- Welsh mortgage, validity of proviso for redemption in, 363
- will, application of surplus accumulations under, 382
 - appointment by, may be valid at death though invalid at date of making, 389
- cy-pres* doctrine as applied to, 367
- limitation by, time for ascertaining facts where, 333, 334

INDEX.

PERSONAL PROPERTY,

- abandonment of possession, what will amount to, 396, 397
- absolute possession, what will amount to, 392
- accession, acquisition of ownership by, 401
 - grounds for, 401
- after-acquired property, assignment of, effect of, 410
 - invalidity of bill of sale of, extent of, 410
- alienation, chattels, of, by deed, 406
 - distinguished from alienation of land, 404
 - contract of sale, by, 406, 407
 - death, at, 408
 - distress, by, 407
 - involuntary, when occurring, 407
 - limitation until, validity of, 412
 - particular parties, by, 412
 - restraints on, 410—412
 - voluntary, methods of, 404—406
- aliens, ownership by, extent of, 399
- animals, possession of, may be absolute or qualified, 392, 393
 - wild, acquisition of ownership, by capture of, 392, 400
- assignment, future-acquired property, of, 400, 410
- bailor, nature of possession by, 392, 394
 - servant may hold master's goods as, 392
- bankruptcy, involuntary alienation of goods by, 408
- bill of sale, after-acquired property of, extent of invalidity of, 410
- capture, acquisition of ownership by, 400, 401
- charities, ownership by, 399
- "chattel," derivation of word, 388
- chattels, alienation by deed, 406
 - distress in respect of, 407
 - inclusion of real and personal in "personal estate," 388
 - lost, ownership may be acquired of, 400
 - ownership of, distinguished from ownership of land, 398
 - personal, nature of, 389
 - possession by finder of lost, 394, 395
 - trespasser, what will amount to, 394
 - of, how acquired, 395, 396
 - real, nature of, 388
 - successive interests in, creation of, 413, 414
 - trust the usual method of creating successive interests in, 414
- choses in action, definition of, 390
 - personality as a, 389, 390
 - right of indemnity may be a, 390
- possession, definition of, 390
 - document as a, 390
- coin, ownership follows possession of, 400
- confusion, acquisition of ownership by, 401
- constructive delivery, change of character of possession as effecting, 405
 - means of, 405
 - possession, nature of, 393
 - possession by bailee may be, 394
- consumable stores, specific bequest for life of, nature of, 414
- contract of sale, transfer of goods by, 406
- co-owners, possession by, 393, 394
- co-ownership, joint and in common, 403, 404
- copyright, acquisition of ownership of, by the Crown, 402
- corporation aggregate, acquisition of ownership by, 399
 - sole, acquisition of ownership by, 399
- corporations, ownership by, nature of, 398, 399
- corporeal chattels, nature of, 389
- Crown, acquisition of ownership by or through the, 402
 - transfer of ownership by the, 402, 403
- customs, acquisition of ownership of, 402
- death, alienation at, 408, 409
 - vesting of property of intestate upon, 409
- debtor, involuntary alienation by, 408
- deed, alienation of chattels by, 406
- de facto* possession, meaning of, 391
- delivery, alienation by, 404

INDEX.

PERSONAL PROPERTY—continued

- delivery, by means of a key, 405
 - constructive, change of character of possession as effecting, 405
 - means of, 405
- gift vested by, 406
 - in part, effect of, 405
 - specific purpose, for, effect of, 404, 405
- destruction of chattel, loss of possession by, 397
- dispossession, loss of possession by, 397
 - personalty, of, remedy for wrongful, 387
- distress, alienation of chattels by, 407
- elements, acquisition of the, 400, 401
- equitable interests, alienation cannot be restrained, 411
- exchange, transfer of chattels by, 406, 407
- execution, involuntary alienation of goods by, 408
- executor, possession of testator's goods by, nature of, 393
- finder, possession by, rights attached to, 391, 395
- fixtures, acquisition of ownership of, by accession, 401
- future-acquired property, assignment of, 409, 410
- gift, delivery as affecting vesting of, 406
 - over, on alienation, invalidity of, 411
 - repugnant condition on, invalidity of, 410
 - restrictions on alienation of, when invalid, 410, 411
- heirlooms, settlement of, 414
- incorporeal chattels, nature of, 389
- indemnity, right of, as a chose in action, 390
- invention, ownership acquired by, 401
- joint ownership, how distinguished, 403
 - tenants, possession by, nature of, 393, 394
- key, delivery of a, effect of, 405
- land, ownership of chattel distinguished from ownership of, 398
- lapse of time, *de facto* possession may be converted into ownership by, 400
- leaseholds, nature of trust of, 413
- legal possession, lost property of remains in owner, 392
 - meaning of, 392
 - nature of, 392
 - servant may be in, 392
 - stolen property, of, may be in thief, 392
- loss of possession, destruction of chattel by, 397
 - discontinuance of physical control, 396
 - dispossession, by, 397
 - ownership lost by, 399, 400
 - transfer or delivery as effecting, 397
- lost chattels, ownership may be acquired of, 400
 - possession by finder of, rights attaching to, 391, 395
 - property, legal possession remains in owner of, 392
- "man in possession," meaning of, 391
- married women, extent of restraint allowed in respect of gift to, 411, 412
 - validity of restraint on anticipation by, 411
- owner, reduction into possession no creation of title against, 395
 - rights of, how far divisible, 398
 - stranger cannot set up title of, 395
 - when enjoying full rights of ownership, 393
- ownership, acquisition by, accession, 401
 - capture, 400, 401
 - corporation aggregate and sole, 399
 - under Royal Prerogative, 402
- aliens, by, extent of, 399
- chattels, of, acquisition by confusion, 401
- corporations, by, nature of, 399
- divisibility of, 398
- in common, nature of, 403, 404
- invention, acquired by, 401
- may be acquired of lost chattels, 400
- meaning of, 397
- possession of coin and negotiable instruments followed by, 400
- right to possession as equivalent to, 392
- specific chattels, of, lost by loss of possession, 399, 400.
- stolen goods, of, not lost after sale, 400

INDEX.

PERSONAL PROPERTY—*continued*

- ownership, transfer by Royal authority, 402
- trusts, under, vesting of, 398
- part delivery, effect of, 405
- partners, doctrine of survivorship does not apply to, 408
- "personal estate," inclusion of real and personal chattels in, 388
 - nature of, under the Wills Act, 1837 389
- personal property, *see* personality
- personality, as a chose in action, 389, 390
 - distinguished from realty, 387, 388
 - definition of, 387
 - kinds of property now included in term, 388, 389
 - remedy of dispossessed owner of, 387
- possession, absolute, what will amount to, 342
 - acquisition of, mode of, 396, 396
 - as annexed to ownership, 393
 - bailee, by, nature of, 392, 394
 - co-owners, by, 393, 394
 - evidence of, what will amount to, 391
 - executor, by, nature of, 393
 - finder of lost chattels, by, nature of, 394, 395
 - loss of, by abandonment, 396, 397
 - discontinuance of physical control, 396
 - meaning of, ambiguity of, 291
 - de facto*, 391
 - legal, 391
 - relating to distress, 391
 - right to, 392
 - presumption of *prima facie* title, 395
 - qualified, nature of, 392, 393
 - right to recover, 397
 - where claimed by two persons 396
 - transfer or delivery of, effect of, 397
- powers of appointment, creation of future interests by, 414, 415
- qualified possession, nature of, 392, 393
- realty, personality as distinguished from, 387, 388
- remainder, personality not the subject of, 413
- repugnant conditions, gift, on, invalidity of, 410
- restraint on alienation, how far invalid, 410—412
- right of survivorship, attaches to joint tenancy of personality, 403
 - no application to partnership, 403
- to possession, as equivalent to ownership, 392
- Royal fish, ownership of the Crown in, 402
- Prerogative, acquisition of ownership by, 402
- rule against perpetuities, executory bequest of chattels must not infringe, 414
- servant, delivery to, for special purpose, effect of, 404, 405
 - possession by, when as bailee, 392
 - of master's property by, effect of, 394
- Shelley's Case* application of rule of construction analogous to rule in, 414, 415
- specific goods, loss of ownership by loss of possession of, 399
 - purpose, delivery of chattel for, effect of, 404, 405
- stolen goods, reversion in owner after sale, 400
 - property, legal possession of, may be in thief, 392
- stranger owner's title cannot be set up by, 395
- sturgeon, ownership of the Crown as to, 402
- succession, acquisition of ownership by corporation aggregate by, 399
 - individual may acquire ownership by, 399
- successive interests, creation of, 413—415
- survivorship, right of attaches to joint tenancy of personality, 403
- tame animals, possession of, may be absolute, 392
- taxes, acquisition of ownership of, 402
- title, presumption of *prima facie*, from possession, 395
 - property, to, not acquired against owner by reduction into possession, 395
- treasure trove, ownership of the Crown in, 402
- trespasser, owner's right to retake from, 397
 - possession by, as foundation of action of trespass, 394

INDEX.

PERSONAL PROPERTY—*continued*

trespasser, possession of chattels by, what will amount to, 394
trusts, legal and beneficial ownership under, in whom vested, 398
whale, ownership of the Crown in, 402
wild animals, ownership acquired by capture, 392, 400
Wills Act, 1837, "personal estate" under the, nature of, 389

PLEADING,

abatement, plea in, not allowed, 449
abuse of process, power of the Court to stay action in, 436
accord and satisfaction, how pleaded, 447
account, particulars of, when ordered, 454
 special indorsement of claim for, statement of claim not required, 441
 stated or settled, how pleaded, 427, 428
Admiralty, as to particulars of claim in, 454
admission, allegations, of, when presumed, 429
adultery, particulars of charge of, 454
aggravation of damage, plea of facts in, not necessary, 425, 426
agreement, bare denial of, effect of, 431, 432
allegations, admission of, when presumed, 429
 general denial of, insufficient 429, 430
 of fact, denial of, how pleaded, 430, 431
amendment, counterclaim or set-off, of, 438
 defects or errors, of, jurisdiction of the court as to, 440
 disallowance of, costs on 438
 form of, 420, 421
 leave to make, power of the court as to, 438, 439
 marking of, 420, 421
 pleading on, 421
 pleadings, of, new ground if claimed raised by, 437
 provision as to 438
 statement of claim, of, when without leave, 437
 when to be printed, 440
appearance, defence in default of, time for delivery, 450
application, leave to amend, for, how made, 439
 statement of claim, for, where writ indorsed for trial without
 pleadings, 441
authority, want of, as a defence, 447
belief, particulars of, may be ordered, 454
breach of trust, how to be pleaded, 425
 particulars must be given in respect of alleged, 458
brevity, pleadings must be drawn with a view to, 424
burden of proof, as to presumed facts, 425
cause of action, contents of statement of claim as to 442, 443
Chancery Division, assignment of action to judge in the, 420
claim, new ground of, raised by amendment of pleadings, 437
claims, pleading of distinct, 428
concealed fraud as a defence, 447
condition of mind, allegation as to, how pleaded, 427
 may be alleged as a fact, 454
precedent, particulars required of, 454
 presumption as to performance of, 426
confession, defence by plaintiff, of, effect of, 450, 451
conspiracy, particulars may be ordered of alleged, 454, 455
contract, bare denial of, effect of, 431, 432
 fraud must be pleaded when a ground for rescission of, 439
 particulars relating to, must be pleaded, 455
 reference to, in pleading, 427
contributory negligence, as a defence, 447
 particulars should support plea of, 455
conversations, how referred to in pleading, 427
Conveyance Act, 1881, as a defence, 447
costs, right to sign judgment for, on confession of defence, 450, 451
counsel, petition under Law of Property Amendment Act, 1860, must be signed
 by, 421
 signing of pleading when settled by, 421
counterclaim, amendment of, when without leave, 438
 defence to, arising after defence or reply, 453

INDEX.

PLEADING—*continued*

- counterclaim, defendant's right to, 451
 - pleading by way of, form of, 421
- county courts, pleadings in, procedure, 419
- credit, statement of claim giving, particulars should be given, 455
- criminal cases, pleading in, 418
- cruelty, as to particulars of allegations of, 455
- damages, deemed to be put in issue unless expressly admitted, 430
 - default in delivery of defence in action for pecuniary, effect of, 452
 - general, admission of, must be express, 429
 - no denial or defence necessary to claim for, 446
 - particulars of, when not necessary, 455
 - plea of facts in aggravation or mitigation of, not necessary, 425, 426
 - special, should be dealt with in defence, 446
- debt, default in delivery of defence in action of, effect of, 451, 452
 - defence to action for, 446
- defamation, particulars must be pleaded, 455
 - presumption as to malice in action for, 431
- default, delivery of defence, in, effect of, 451—453
 - reply, in, effect of, 459
 - in delivery of statement of claim, effect of, 445
 - of appearance, defence in, time for delivery, 450
- defects, amendment of, jurisdiction of the court as to, 440
- defence, action for debt or liquidated demand, 446
 - allegations as to plaintiff's capacity must be specified in, 446
 - arising after reply, effect of, 459
 - claim on specially indorsed writ, to, 450
 - to special damage should be dealt with in the, 446
 - confession by plaintiff as to, effect of, 450, 451
 - default in delivery of, effect of, 451—453
 - delivery in part, effect of, 453
 - of further, by leave, time for, 450
 - time for, 449, 450
 - where writ specially indorsed, 441
 - denial to allegations must be specified in, 445, 446
 - ground of, arising after action brought, 450
 - improper denial or admission in liability of defendant as to, 446
 - not necessary to claim for damages, 446
 - pursuant to order or default of appearance, 450
 - special matters to be pleaded in, 446, 447
 - statutory plea in, 448, 449
- defendant, non-appearance of, filing statement of claim on, 442
- delivery, as distinguished from service, 434
 - of pleadings, procedure as to, 433, 434
- delusions, particulars as to, 455
- denial, allegation, of, joinder of issue operating as, 431
 - when insufficient, 429
 - contract, promise or agreement, of, effect when bare, 431, 432
- detention of goods, default in delivery of defence in action for, effect of 452
- distinct claims, must be separately and distinctly pleaded, 428
- district registry, marking of pleadings where action commenced in the, 421
- document, statement of contents of, in pleading, 427
- embarrassing matters, power to strike out, 434, 435
- equitable defences, right of defendant to set up, 447
 - interest, particulars must be pleaded of, 455
- errors, amendment of, jurisdiction of the court as to, 440
- estoppel as a defence, 447
- evidence, pleading should not contain 422, 423
- facts, material, what are 423
 - pleading must contain statement of, 422, 423
 - presumed, pleading not necessary of, 425
- fair comment, particulars of basis of, must be pleaded, 455
- false entries, allegations of, must be particularised, 455, 456
- Fatal Accidents Act particulars of claim under, 456
- folio, number of words comprising a, 422
- forms, use of prescribed where possible, 424
- fraud, allegations of, must be specially pleaded, 433
 - defence of, must be specially pleaded, 446, 447

INDEX.

PLEADING—*continued*

- fraud, how to be pleaded, 425
 - must be specially pleaded, 456
- fraudulent intention, allegation of, 427
- further and better particulars, power of the court to order, 428
 - when ordered, 453
- Gaming Acts, as a defence, 447, 448
- goods sold and delivered, particulars of, 456
- heirship pedigree, particulars of, must be pleaded, 456
- highway, plea of, extent of particulars required as to, 456
- husband and wife, joinder of claims against, 444
- illegal contracts, court will not enforce, 432
- illegality, as a defence, 448
- immaterial allegations, no particulars will be ordered of, 456
- indecent matters, power to strike out, 434, 435
- indorsement, amendment of, marking of, 420, 421
 - special, amendment of claim the subject of, 387
 - how far a pleading, 419
- inevitable accident as a defence, 448
 - particulars not necessary of, 456
- infant, allegation not traversed by, effect of, 429
- inference of law, must be set out in pleadings, 424
- inferior courts, pleadings in, 419
- insurance, particulars in respect of, when ordered, 456
- intention, particulars as to, when not required, 456, 457
- joinder of causes, in action for recovery of land, leave required on, 444
 - claims, by or against husband or wife, 444
 - personal representatives, 444
 - power of the court as to improper, 444
 - defendants, present law as to, 443
 - issue, effect as a denial, 481
 - form of, 431
 - parties, power of the court as to improper, 444
- judge, marking of name on pleadings, where action assigned, 420
- judgment, against one of two jointly liable, as a defence, 448
- justification, as a defence, 448
 - particulars of facts relied on must be given, 457
- land, default in delivery of defence in action for recovery of, effect of, 452, 453
 - defence of possession, in action for recovery of, 449
 - joinder of causes in action for recovery of, leave required as to, 444
 - recovery of, when title must be shown in action for, 458
- leave to amend, application for, 439
 - order for, when becoming void, 439
 - rules as to, 438, 439
- legal relationship, must be stated when existing, 426
- letter, not a pleading, 422
- letters, how referred to in pleading, 427
- libel, amendment of statement of claim for, when leave required, 487
 - particulars of, where of great length, extent of, 457
 - precise words of, must be pleaded, 427
- liquidated demand, default of delivery of defence in action for, 451, 452
 - defence to action for, 446
- lump sums, particulars of claim or credit for, must be given, 457
- malice, how alleged, 427
 - particulars of, not necessary, 457
 - presumed in action for defamation, 431
- marking, pleadings, of, provision for, 420
- material facts, what are, 423
- Mayor's Court, London, pleadings in, how regulated, 419
- mine profits, default in delivery of defence in action for recovery of land with, effect of, 452, 453
- misrepresentation, how to be pleaded, 425
 - particulars relating to plea of, 457
- mitigation of damage, facts not necessary to be pleaded in, 425, 426
- money claims, particulars in, must be given, 457
- Money-lenders Act, 1900, as a defence, 448
- names of persons, disclosure may be ordered to complete the statement, 458
- negligence, allegation of, extent of particulars of, 457
- non est factum* as a defence, 448

INDEX.

PLEADING—*continued*

- "not guilty" by statute, when may be pleaded, 449
 - former plea of, 448
- notice, allegation of, how set out, 427
 - particulars of, must be given when pleaded, 457
- offensive matters, power to strike out, 434, 435
- originating summons, not a pleading, 422
- paragraphs, division of pleading into, 421
- part performance, as a defence, 448
- particulars, cases illustrating the principles of the law as to, 454—459
 - court may order further and better, 428
 - degree of particularity required from, 454
 - extent of parties' rights to, 454
 - function of, 428, 453, 454
 - when ordered, 453
- passing-off, nature of particulars in respect of, 457
- patents, particulars in actions relating to, 457
- payment into court, particulars of, 457
- pecuniary damages, default in delivery of defence in action for, effect of, 452
- personal representatives, joinder of claims against, 444
- plaintiff, title to sue, as a defence, 448
- pleading, definition of, 419, 420
 - may be struck out when showing no cause of action, 435, 436
 - meaning of, as used in law, 418
 - requisites of a good, 422, 423
 - rules determining practice of, 419
 - striking out when an abuse of process of the court, 436
- pleadings, amendment of, 437—440
 - conduct in early times, 418
 - county courts, in, how regulated, 419
 - court may order further and better, 428
 - extent to which party bound by, 429
 - form of, 420
 - function of, 418, 419
 - must be drawn with a view to brevity, 424
 - in the prescribed form when possible, 424
 - nature of statement in, 422
 - objections to, 434—436
 - order for, on summons for directions, 442
 - signature to, provision as to, 421
 - when must be printed, 422
- point of law, how disposed of, 433
 - may be raised on the pleadings, 433
- possession, facts which may be proved under plea of, 449
 - plea of, in action for recovery of land, 449
- presumption, as to admission of allegations, 429
 - condition precedent, 426
- presumptions, when not to be pleaded, 425
- printing, amendments requiring, 440
 - when necessary to pleadings, 422
- privilege, particulars of plea of, 457, 458
- proximity, pleading must not be the subject of, 424
- promise, bare denial of, effect of, 431, 432
- rescission, decree of, date from which operating, 432
- recovery of land, title in action for, when must be shown, 452
- relief, statement of claim must specify claim for, 444, 445
- reply, contents of, 459
 - default in delivery of, effect of, 459
 - defence arising after, effect of, 459
 - delivery of, time for, 458, 459
- representative capacity, plaintiff, of, as a defence, 448
- res judicata* as a defence, 448
- right of way, extent of particulars required in action affecting, 455
- rules determining practice of pleading, 419
- scandalous matter, power of the court to strike out, 434, 435
- seduction, particulars in respect of, when ordered, 458
- set-off, amendment of, when without leave, 438
 - defence to, arising after defence or reply, 459
 - defendant's right of, 451

INDEX.

• PLEADING—continued

- set-off, pleading by way of, form of, 321
- signature, counsel or solicitor, of, must be appended to pleadings, 421
- slander, precise words of must be pleaded, 427
- solicitor, indorsement of name and address of, 421
- special damage must be alleged, 458
 - indorsement, amendment of claim the subject of, 437
 - how far a pleading, 419
 - statement of claim not required in case of, 441
- specially indorsed writ, defence to claim on, 450
 - procedure under, 441 442
 - time for delivery of defence to, 449, 450
- statement of account, how pleaded, 427, 428
 - claim, amendment of, when without leave, 437
 - application for, when writ indorsed for trial without pl
ings, 441
 - contents as to plaintiff's cause of action, 442, 443
 - default in delivery of, effect of, 445
 - definition of, 440
 - filing on non-appearance of defendant, 442
 - form of, 420, 421
 - grounds of relief, separate, how stated in, 445
 - nature of, where there are several defendants, 443
 - plaintiffs, 443
 - parties named in, 442
 - relief sought must be specified in, 444, 445
 - tort, in, how limited, 443
 - when not required, 440, 441
- Statute of Frauds Amendment Act, as a defence, 448
 - as a defence, 448
- statute, pleading the general issue by, 448, 449
- Statutes of Limitation as a defence, 448
 - defence of, must be specially pleaded, 446, 447
- stay of proceedings, where action an abuse of process of the court, 436
- striking out, unnecessary or scandalous matter, of, provision for, 434, 435
- subsequent pleadings, delivery of, time for, 458, 459
- summary form, facts must be pleaded in, 423, 424
- summons for directions, order for pleadings on, 442
- time, delivery of defence, for, on default of appearance, 450
 - to specially indorsed writ, 449, 450
 - further defence by leave, for, 450
 - reply or subsequent pleadings, for, 458, 459
- title, action for recovery of land, when to be shown, 453
 - of the action, meaning of, 420
- tort, allegations in statement of claim in respect of how limited, 443
- trade union, striking out as defendants, 444
- traverse, opponent's case, of, procedure, 429—432
- typewriting, included in "writing" 422
- undue influence, how to be pleaded, 425
- unsound mind, allegations not traversed by person of, 429
- wilful default, how to be pleaded, 425
- work done, particulars of must be given, 458
- writ of summons, special indorsement of, how far a pleading, 419
 - specially indorsed, procedure under, 441, 442
- writing, including typewriting, 422
- wrongful dismissal, particulars in respect of, 458

POLICE.

- absconding tenants, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- absence from duty, liability of constable for, 501
- accounts, Metropolitan Police Force, of, placing before Parliament, 468,
469
 - preparation and audit of, 468, 469
- action against constable, limitation of time for, 499
- additional constables, power of chief constable of county to appoint, 496
- adoptive Act, powers of borough police under, 488
- advertisements, power of Commissioner of Metropolitan Police as to, 472
- agreement, consolidation of borough and county police forces by, 490, 491

INDEX.

POLICE—continued

- aiding constables, duty of private persons as to, 499
- aliens, statutory powers of police as to, 502
- animals, statutory powers of police as to, 502
- annual police returns to be made to Home Secretary, 517, 518
- appeal, refusal or forfeiture of pension, from, 513
 - to admit claim to compensation for damage by riot, 509
- approved service, meaning of, 510, 511
- army, statutory powers of, as to various matters, 502
- arrest, City Police, powers as to, 479
 - constable's power of, 497, 498
 - handcuffs, when may be used on, 498
 - persons under police supervision in the metropolis, 472
 - without warrant, powers, 497, 498
- assault, constable, on, offence of, 499, 500
 - special constables, on, punishment for, 494
- assistance, as between different police forces, powers as to, 491
- Assistant Commissioners, duties vested in Commissioner of Metropolitan Police, and the, 478
 - Metropolitan Police, of, duties of, 478
- ball, powers of superior officers and constables as to, 505, 506
 - statutory powers of police as to, in various matters, 502
- bankruptcy, payment of pension not affected by, 512, 513
- beadles, as constables in former times, 466
- bear baiting, power of the Commissioner of Metropolitan Police as to, 472
- betting, statutory powers of police as to, 502
- billiard licences, statutory powers of police as to, 502
- borough police, area of authority of, 487
 - boroughs with separate, 486, 487
 - consolidation of county and borough, 490, 491
 - controlling authority of, 487
 - development of, 486, 488
 - disqualification at elections, extent of, 489
 - employment as fireman, powers, 489
 - fund, treasurer of, 488
 - general duties of, 489
 - how maintained, 487, 488
 - powers of local authority as to, 488
 - under the adoptive Act, 488
 - statutory powers of, 488
 - swearing in, 489
- borsholders, formation and duties of, 462
- brawling, statutory powers of police as to, 502
- bread, statutory powers of police as to, 502
- bribing constable, liability of licensed victualler as to, 502
- brothels, statutory powers of police as to, 502
- canal police, appointment and dismissal of, regulations as to, 495
 - liability for neglect of duty, 495
 - powers of, 495, 496
- canals, appointment of special constables for service near, 494—496
 - statutory powers of police as to, 502
- cattle driving, regulations as to, by whom made, 471
 - statutory powers of police as to, 502
- certificates of efficiency, issue by the Home Secretary, 516, 517
- chief constable, county police, of, by whom appointed, 482
 - disqualifications and privileges of, 484, 485
 - duties and powers of, 484
 - power to appoint additional constables, 490
- children, constable, of, provision for, 511, 512
 - statutory powers of police as to, 502
- chimney-sweepers, licensing in metropolis, 471
 - statutory powers of police as to, 502
- City of London, damage by riot in, police authority as to, 481
 - distinct existence for police purposes, 478
 - not within the Metropolitan Police District, 466, 467
 - Police, *see* City Police.
- Police, appointment of, 475
 - control of, in whom vested, 478
 - co-operation with Metropolitan Police, powers, 481

INDEX.

POLICE—continued.

- City Police fund, sources from which derived, 480
 - not under control of Home Secretary, 518
 - Pension Fund, maintenance and management of, 480
 - powers within the City, 479
 - special allowance to disabled, 481
 - superannuation of, 481
 - treasurer of the, 480
- claimant, compensation for damage by riot, to, effect of conduct of, 508
- clerk of the peace, list of parish constables to be sent to, 484
- closing hours, licensed victuallers in metropolis, power of Commissioner of Police as to, 472
- clubs, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- coal, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- Commissioner, City Police, of, appointment of, 478
 - temporary Commissioner in absence of, 479
 - as *ex officio* justice, 478
 - powers of, 479
- Metropolitan Police, of, as controller of public vehicles, 471
 - as *ex officio* justice, 469, 470
 - governor of Metropolitan Police Force, 467
 - grantor and registrar of licences, 471, 472
 - powers as to closing hours of licensed victuallers, 472
 - efficiency of the force, 470
 - street traffic, 470
- compensation, damage by riot, for, 507, 508
 - nature of the claim for, 508
- consolidation, county and borough police forces, 490, 491
 - police force, of, power of the Home Secretary as to, 518
- 'constable,' early use of term 163
- constables, execution of search warrants by, 498
 - general powers and duties of, 497—507
 - handcuffs, when may be used by, 498
 - liabilities of persons for offences against, 499, 500
 - liability to action, extent of, 499
 - metropolis, in, appointment, 473
 - area of exercise of powers, 473
 - attendance at court, 174
 - duties of, 474
 - not prevented from receiving rewards, 500
 - of hundreds, creation and duties of, 11
 - payments to, duty as to, 499
 - power to search without warrant, extent of, 498, 499
 - powers of arrest of, 497, 498
 - privileges and exemptions appertaining to, 500
 - right to call on private persons for aid, 499
 - statutory powers of, as to various matters, 502—504
 - weekly rest day for, 501
- constablewick, definition of, 497
- costermongers, regulation in metropolis, 472
- county court, action for compensation for damage by riot to be brought in the, 509
 - division of, into police districts, 483
 - police, area of authority of, 482
 - consolidation of borough and county, 490, 491
 - control of, 482
 - cost of, how defrayed, 483
 - development of, 481, 482
 - powers of standing joint committee over, 482, 483
 - rules for government of, 483
 - subordinate officials of, appointment of, 485
 - powers, 485
- Criminal Investigation Department, organisation of, 507
- criminals, statutory powers of police as to, 503

INDEX.

POLICE—continued

- customs and excise, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- damage by riot, action in respect of, jurisdiction, 509
 - compensatory principle in respect of, 507, 508
 - source of payment of compensation in respect of, 509
- declaration, made by special constables on appointment, 493
- deductions from pay, return to constable of, in what cases, 515
- detective departments, maintenance of, 506, 507
- disorderly persons, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- disposition, police forces, of, 506, 507
- distress, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- dock police, appointment and powers of, 496
- dogs, muzzling orders as to, in metropolis, 472
 - statutory powers of police as to, 503
- drunkards, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- elections, disqualification of borough police as to, extent of, 489
 - Metropolitan Police may not canvass at, 474
 - statutory powers of police as to, 503
- entry and search, police powers of, 506
- Exchequer contribution, Metropolitan Police Fund, to, 475
- explosives, powers in the metropolis as to, 472
 - statutory powers of police as to, 503
- factories and shops, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- fairs, unlawful, power of the Commissioner of Metropolitan Police as to, 472
- fees, metropolitan police courts, in, appropriation of, 476, 477
 - right of parish constable as to, 465
- fine, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- finer, metropolitan police courts, in, appropriation of, 476
- fireman, employment of borough police as to, 489
- food and drugs, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- fresh pursuit, constable's powers as to, 498
- game, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- gaming, power of Commissioner of Metropolitan Police as to, 472
 - statutory powers of police as to, 503
- gratuities, widow and children of constable may be entitled to, 511, 512
- gratuity, when incapacitated constable entitled to, 511
- hackney carriages, inspection of, in metropolis, 471
- handcuffs, when may be used in arresting, 498
- harbour police, appointment and powers of, 496
- harbouring (constable on licensed premises, offence of, 502
- hawkers, regulation in metropolis, 472
 - statutory powers of police as to, 503
- headboroughs, formation and duties of, 462
- high constables, appointment and duties of, 463
- highways, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- Home Secretary, annual returns to be made to, 517, 518
 - appointment of inspectors by, 516
 - appointments requiring approval of, 517
 - as central police authority, 516
 - controlling the Metropolitan Police Force, 467, 468
 - certification of Exchequer contribution to Metropolitan Police Fund by the, 475, 476
 - forces not under control of, 518
 - issue of certificates of efficiency by, 516, 517
 - powers as to adjustment of pension funds, 518
 - consolidation orders and agreements, 518
 - formation of districts, 518
 - Metropolitan Police, 518
 - parish constables, 519
 - Receiver's accounts, 469
 - special constables, 518, 519
- house duty, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- illegal sports, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- innkeepers, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- inspectors, police forces, of, appointment of, 516
 - reports of, 516
- intoxicating liquors, statutory powers of police as to, 503
- justices, right of appointment of parish constables, 468
- libel, chief officer of police privileged in respect of, 500

INDEX.

POLICE—continued.

- licences, Commissioner of Metropolitan Police as grantor and registrar of, 471, 472
 - statutory powers of police as to, 504
- licensed victuallers, closing hours of, power of the Commissioners of Metropolitan Police as to, 472
 - liability on bribing or harbouring constable, 502
- loans required by Metropolitan Police, how obtained, 469
- local authority, powers as to borough police, 488
- Lord's Day observance, power of Commissioner of Metropolitan Police as to, 472
- lunatics, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- management, police forces, of, 506, 507
- mandamus, right of constable to, where police authority exceeds its jurisdiction, 513
- markets and fairs, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- medical certificate, when constable may retire on pension without, 510
- merchandise marks, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- messengers, granting of licences to, in the metropolis, 471
- Metropolitan Police, co-operation with City Police, powers, 481
 - courts, appropriation of fines and fees received in, 476, 477
 - in whom vested, 469
- Force, appointment and duties of Receiver of, 468
 - area served by, 466, 467
 - Commissioners of, 467, 468
 - control of, 466
 - disqualification of officials of, 468
 - efficiency of, powers of Commissioners as to, 470
 - formation of, 466
 - Home Secretary as controller of, 467, 468
 - fund, Exchequer contribution to, 475, 476
 - sources from which obtained, 474
- motor cars, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- neglect of duty, liability of constable for, 501
- obstructing constable, offence of, 499, 500
- offence, fraudulently obtaining a pension, 513
- offences against constables, liability of offenders as to, 499, 500
 - by constables, 501, 502
- parish constables, appointment of, 463, 464
 - fees and allowances to be paid to, 465
 - liability for neglect of duty, 465
 - list of appointed, must be sent to the clerk of the peace, 464
 - no power to appoint in the City of London, 180
 - not eligible for service in metropolis, 474
 - persons exempt from serving as, 464
 - powers of, 465
 - qualification and disqualification for appointment, 464, 465
 - to whom subject, 465
- Parliament, accounts of Metropolitan Police must be placed before, 168, 469
- pedlars, licensing in metropolis, 471
 - statutory powers of police as to, 504
- penalties, offences against constables for, 499, 500
 - by constables, 502
- pension, appeal from refusal or forfeiture of, 513
 - forfeiture of, grounds for, 512
 - fund, investments in respect of, 515
- Pension Fund, Metropolitan Police Force, for the, appeal against refusal of grant from, 477
 - nature of, 477
 - relation of Commissioners to, 477
- pension fund, sources of revenue of, 514
 - treasurer of, 514
 - incapacitated constable, for, rights, 511
 - offence of fraudulently obtaining, 513
 - payment and receipt of, 512, 513
 - reduction of, when may be made, 512

INDEX.

POLICE—continued

- pension, reduction *pro tanto* where constable entitled out of two funds, 514
 - refusal of, liability of constable to, 513
 - rejoining force, effect on payment of, 515
 - return of deductions from pay where constable retires without, 515
 - service entitling constable to retire on, 510
 - superior officers, of, provisions applying, 516
 - suspension during other service, 514
 - widow and children of constable may be entitled to, 511, 512
- petroleum, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- petty constables, appointment and duties of, 463
- piec police, appointment and powers of, 496
- poaching, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- police area, modification of, 466
 - authorities, what are, 506, 508, 510
 - disposition and management of, 506, 507
 - districts, division of counties into, 483
 - force, establishing of the modern, 466
 - graduations of rank in the, 505
 - transition from old to modern, 466
- organisation, earliest forms of, 462
- property, omission to deliver up, liability for, 501
 - unauthorised possession of, liability of constable for, 501
- 502
- prosecutions, provisions as to, 505
- rate, appeal against assessment to, in metropolis, 475
 - assessment in metropolis, 474, 475
 - collection of, 475
 - limitation of, 474
 - special extra, right to impose in metropolis, 475
- statutory powers of, as to various matters, 502—504
- supervision, arrest of persons in metropolis when under, 472
- post office, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- property, powers of receiver of Metropolitan Police as to, 469
- prosecutions, police, provisions as to 505
- prostitutes, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- public health, statutory powers of police as to, 504
 - vehicles, control of, in Metropolitan Police area, 471
 - works, appointment of special constables for service near, 494, 496
- railroads, appointment of special constables for service near, 491—496
- railway police, appointment and dismissal of, regulations as to, 491, 495
 - position of, 495
- railways, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- rank, reduction in, liability of constable to, 513
- Receiver of Metropolitan Police, appointment of temporary receiver in absence of, 469
 - creation of post of, 468
 - duties of, 468
 - powers as to property, 469
 - preparation of accounts by, 468, 469
 - treasurer of the force as, 467, 468
- reduction in rank, liability of constable to, 513
- refreshment houses, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- resisting constable, offence of, 499, 500
- retirement, superior officers, of, when compulsory, 516
- returns, annual, to be made to Home Secretary, 517, 518
- rewards, constable may receive, 500
- riot, compensatory principle in respect of damage by, 507, 508
 - conduct of claimant to compensation for damage by, effect of, 508
 - damage by, City Police authority as to 481
- river police, appointment and dismissal of, regulations as to, 495
 - powers of, 496, 496
- Scotland Yard, organisation of departments at, 507
- search, police powers of entry and, 506
 - powers of City Police as to, 479
 - warrants, execution of, 498
- issue of, cases to which confined, 498
- Secretary of State, powers as to appointment of special constables, 492
- service beyond prescribed period, effect of, 515, 516
 - entitling constable to pension or gratuity, 510—516

INDEX.

POLICE—continued

- ships, statutory powers of police as to, 501
- shoeblacks, granting of licences to, in metropolis, 471
- small tenements, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- special constables, allowances to, 493, 494
 - annual appointment in boroughs, 492
 - appointment at public undertakings, 494 496
 - in the City of London, 180
 - of, 466
 - method of, 492
 - area of authority of, 493
 - declaration required of, 493
 - duration of appointment of, 493
 - grounds for exercising power of appointment of, 492
 - liability of persons eligible as parish constables to be appointed, 492
 - metropolis, in, power to appoint, 474
 - number which may be appointed, 492
 - payment of, employed on public undertakings, 494
 - power of authorities to appoint, 491
 - powers of Home Secretary as to, 518, 519
 - punishment for assault on, 494
 - qualification of, 492
- stage carriages, inspection of, in metropolis, 471
- standing joint committee, powers as to county police, 482, 483
- street offences, statutory powers of police as to, 504
 - traffic, power of Commissioner of Metropolitan Police as to, 470, 471
 - statutory powers of police as to, 501
- Sunday observance, statutory powers of police as to, 501
- superannuation allowance, power as to, in the metropolis, 477
 - City Police, of, 481
 - general provisions as to, 509, 510
- superior officers, compulsory retirement of, 516
- tenants absconding, statutory powers of police as to, 504
- Thames traffic, regulation of, power of Commissioner as to, 471
- theatres and music-halls, statutory powers of police as to, 504
 - unlicensed, power of the Commissioner of Metropolitan Police as to, 472
- tithing men, formation and duties of, 462
- Town Police Clauses Act, 1847, powers of borough police under, 488
- Trafalgar Square, when brought within the Metropolitan Police area, 467
- treasurer, borough police fund, of, 488
 - City Police, of the, 480
 - Metropolitan Police Force, of, appointment of, 467, 468
- Tyne Improvement Commissioners, powers relating to police, 508 510, 518
- universities, appointment of special constables at, 49
- unlawful fairs, power of the Commissioner of Metropolitan Police as to, 472
- watch committee, as controlling authority of borough police, 487
 - duty to make returns as to regulations, 489
- watchmen as constables in former times, 466
- water bailiffs, appointment and powers of, 496
- weekly rest day, constables, for, provision for, 501
- widow, constable, of, provision for, 511, 512

POOR LAW,

- absconding pauper, suspension of punishment if diseased, 610
- access, pauper, to, on appeal against removal order, 603
- accident, meaning of, 592
 - pauper, to, non-liability of guardians for, 561
- accounts, duty of guardians to keep, 550, 551
- additional guardians, power of guardians to elect, 588
- adjustments, property and liabilities, of, power of the Local Government Board as to, 525
- admission to workhouse, casual paupers, of, 568
 - regulation of, 559, 560
- adopted child, escape of, offence of inducing or assisting, 569
- adoption of children, provision for, 568, 569
- affiliation orders, payments to guardians of sums due under, 578

INDEX.

POOR LAW—*continued*

- aliens, status of irremovability acquired on arrival by, 590
 - when deemed rogues and vagabonds, 613
- alteration of union, payment of superannuation allowance on, 548
 - power of the Local Government Board as to, 553, 554
- annual return, superannuation allowances and gratuities, of, 518
- annuitants, pauper, right of guardians in respect of, 572
- appeal, against conviction under the Vagrancy Act, 1824 615, 616
 - removal order, abandonment of, 604
 - by special case, 605, 606
 - costs of, 605
 - duty to lodge statement of grounds of, 603, 604
 - finality of judgment on, 605
 - hearing of, 605
 - notice of, 603
 - time for, 603
 - where union in several jurisdictions, 603
 - who may, 602, 603
 - suspension of removal order, time for, 599
 - costs of, under the Vagrancy Act, 1824 616
 - old age pension, relating to, to what authority, 622, 623
- apprenticeship, guardians' power to bind poor children in, 565, 566
 - settlement by residence under, 581, 582
 - test of, as affecting settlement, 582
 - transfer of service under contract of, settlement not affected by, 582
- arbitration, reference of dispute as to removal order to, 606
- areas, alteration of, powers as to, 527
- arrest, powers under the Vagrancy Act, 1824 615
 - resisting, as a rogue and vagabond, liability, 614
 - an idle and disorderly person, offence of, 610
- assault, officers, on, offence of, 545
- asylums, power of county councils as to provision of, 528
- audit, guardians' accounts, of, extraordinary, powers as to, 551
 - provision for, 551
- bastard child, payments to guardians under affiliation orders, 573
 - settlement of, 588, 589
- beggars as idle and disorderly persons, 609
 - fraudulent, treatment as rogues and vagabonds, 611
- birth, settlement by, duration of, 577, 578
 - exceptions as to, 578, 579
- board of guardians, *see* guardians
- boarding out of children, power of guardians as to, 565
- bonds, exemption from stamp duty, 536
- borrowing powers, guardians, of, for purposes of workhouses, 556, 557
 - sanction required to, 537, 538
 - managers of Metropolitan Asylums Board, 538
- burials, duty of overseers as to, 580
- casual paupers, admission of, 568
 - definition of, 567
 - relief, power to grant, 567
 - ward, meaning of, 567
 - wards, metropolis, in, provision of, 567, 568
 - use of, in Metropolitan Asylums Board, 552
- certiorari*, removal of order of Local Government Board to High Court by, 523
- chairman of guardians, appointment of, 538
- chaplain, appointment, duties and removal of, 542, 543
- chargeability, felons and vagrants, of, 591
 - person actually in receipt of relief of, 590, 591
- charitable institution, settlement not gained by residence in, 580
- child, adoption of deserted, 568, 569
 - age of emancipation of, 596
 - apprenticing of, power of guardians as to, 565, 566
 - boarding out of, power of guardians as to, 565
 - reception of, duty of guardians as to, 537
 - removal of, rules as to, 594
 - when not as deck passenger, 602
 - settlement of, 578
 - by parentage, 588, 589

INDEX.

POOR LAW—*continued*

- child, settlement of, when over sixteen, 589
- under seven, when may be removed, 595
- sixteen, when removable, 595
- Children Act, 1908, proceedings under, power of guardians as to, 543
- children, visitors of, appointment of, 544, 545
- clerk to guardians, appointment and duties of, 542, 543
- liability of, on failure to make return, 538
- common fund, contributions to, apportionment of, 549, 550s
- payments to be made out of the, 549
- power of guardians to charge costs of proceedings to, 540, 541
- poor fund, metropolis, purposes for which raised, 550
- compensation of officers for loss of office, 548 *
- conferences, expenses of attending, powers, 548
- constable, City of London, of, powers as to destitute persons, 568
- metropolitan, powers as to destitute persons, 567, 568
- contracts by guardians, provisions relating to, 535, 536
- contributions, common fund, to the, apportionment, 549, 550
- enforcement of, 549, 550
- conviction, second, as a rogue and vagabond, liability on, 614
- copyholds, acquisition and enfranchisement for purpose of workhouses, 558
- corporal punishment, forbidden in workhouses, 560, 561
- corporations, power to sell lands for provision of workhouses, 557, 558
- cost of relief, recovery of, 570—573
- costs, appeal under the Vagrancy Act, 1824, statute applicable to, 616
- county councils, grants to guardians by, 528
- position as poor law authorities, 531
- powers as to election of guardians, 531
- fund, payment to guardians out of, 528
- criminal lunatic, inquiry for purpose of removal in case of, 597
- Crown lands, settlement by renting not gained by occupation of, 586
- damage, clothing by pauper, to, offence of, 613
- debts, overseers' right to contract, 530
- depositions, retention of, relating to order for removal, 597
- deputations, power of guardians to send, 549
- derivative settlement, acquisition by child, 588
- deserted children, adoption of, 568, 569
- wives, removal of, rule as to, 595
- deserting family, information as to offence of, when to be laid, 610, 611
- offence of, 610
- workhouses, from, offence of, 562
- desertion, powers of guardians as to property of person guilty of, 570, 571
- detention of pauper, provision for, 561
- disorderly pauper, liability of, 608, 609
- dispensaries, London, provision of, 557
- disputes between guardians, submission to Local Government Board, 525
- dissolution, union, of, effect of, 554, 555
- position of guardians on, 555
- power of the Local Government Board as to 553, 554
- transfer of property on, 555
- district committees, appointment in scattered parishes, 534, 535
- documents, exemption from stamp duty, 536
- double tenancies, as affecting settlement by renting, 565
- election of guardians, 531
- effect of failure to make, 533
- powers of county councils as to 528
- emigration, poor persons, of, power of guardians to assist, 565
- emoluments, meaning of, 546
- estate, settlement by, nature of qualification, 582—584
- not obtained by fraud, 584
- estoppel, settlement by, justice's order as effecting, 589, 590
- evidence, order of Local Government Board, of, 525
- settlement, of, relief as, 590
- expenses, when offenders liable for payment of, 615
- exposing the person, offence of, 611
- wounds, offence of, 611
- fathers, liability for maintenance of children, 573, 574
- felons, chargeability of, 591
- fortune-telling, offence of, 613

INDEX

POOR LAW—*continued*

- fraud, application for relief, in, liability, 608
- fraudulent beggars, treatment as rogues and vagabonds, 611
- friendly society, out relief to member of, extent of, 564
- gambling, public places, in, offence of, 613
- grants, guardians, to, by county councils, 528
 - in London, 529
- guardians, appointment of overseers by, 530
 - visiting committee by, 559
 - as statutory local and spending authorities, 535
 - borrowing powers of, for purposes of workhouses, 556, 557
 - sanction required to, 537, 538
 - constitution of, 530, 531, 535
 - proof of, in legal proceedings, 539
 - contracts by, provisions relating to, 535, 536
 - control of unions by, 524
 - disputes between, submission to Local Government Board, 525
 - documents relating to transactions of, exempt from stamp duty, 536
 - duties, powers and liabilities of, 535—539
 - duty as to appointment of officers, 542—544
 - granting relief, 563
 - management of workhouses, 558, 559
 - offences against servants, 541
 - to keep accounts, 550, 551
 - make returns, 538
 - election of, 531
 - power of county councils as to, 528
 - grants to, duty of county councils to make, 528
 - jurisdiction of, 541
 - liability for disobedience to orders of Local Government Board, 527
 - torts of officers, 546
 - meeting of, notice required as to, 534
 - meetings and proceedings of, how regulated, 533, 534
 - non-liability for accidents to paupers, 561
 - payments by, of solicitors' costs, 541
 - when to be made, 536
 - position on dissolution of union, 555
 - power as to property of person guilty of desertion, 570, 571
 - to adopt deserted children, 568, 569
 - assist boys to join the navy, 566
 - the emigration of poor persons, 565
 - bind poor children in apprenticeship, 565, 566
 - board out children, 565
 - consent to removal, 591
 - obtain maintenance orders, 571
 - reimburse injured officers, 515
 - relieve by way of loan, 566, 567
 - send deputations, 549
 - subscribe to hospitals, 537
 - powers as to pauper's property, 570
 - proceedings for protection of property by, 540
 - profit not to be made by penalty, 536
 - qualifications and disqualifications of, 532
 - reception of children and young persons by, duty as to, 537
 - resignation of, consent required on, 538
 - right to incur expenses in collecting information, 537
 - rights as to pauper annuitants, 572
 - rural districts, in, 531
 - term of office of, 533
- Guernsey, removal to, when order made for, 601
- hospitals, subscriptions to, power of guardians to make, 537
- house-breaking tools, offence of possession of, 613
- husband and wife as competent and compellable witnesses, 615
- husbands, liability for maintenance of children, 573, 574
- idle and disorderly persons, punishment of, 609, 610
 - who may be, 607—610
- illegitimate child, desertion by mother, offence of, 610

INDEX.

POOR LAW—continued

- illegitimate child, liability on neglect to maintain, 608
 - settlement of, 578
 - whence derived, 576
- incorrigible rogues, punishment of, 614, 615
 - who may be treated as, 614, 615
- indecent exhibitions, liability of offenders making, 611
- indoor pauper, definition of, 529
- information, expense of collecting, guardians may incur, 537
- inmates, workhouses, of, classification of, 560
 - management of, 558-560
 - religious instruction of, 561, 562
 - treatment of, 560, 561
- inquiries, inspector may be authorised to hold, 528
 - power of Local Government Board to hold, 525
- inspectors, appointment of, 527
 - powers and duties of, 527, 528
 - workhouses, of, power to appoint, 559
- insured person, grant of outdoor relief to extent of, 561
- intoxicating liquor, introduction into workhouses forbidden 560
- Ireland, removal of native of, when by consent, 602
 - to, when order made for, 601
- irremovability, settlement not conferred by status of, 580, 592
 - status of, when attaching, 591, 592
- Isle of Man, removal to, when order made for, 601
- Jersey, removal to, when order made for, 601
- judgment on appeal against removal order, finality of, 605
- jurisdiction, guardians, of, 541
- justices, appearance in proceedings by guardians before, 539, 540
 - of the peace, poor law powers of, 529
- labour, workhouses, in, provision for, 561
- land, acquisition for purposes of workhouses, 557, 558
- legal proceedings by guardians before justices, appearance 539 510
 - provisions as to, 539-541
- living on prostitutes, offence of, 611, 612
- loan, relief by, power of guardians as to, 566 567
- Local Government Board, appointment and removal of officers by, 541 514
 - of inspectors by, 527
 - as old age pension authority, 621
 - constitution of unions by, 553
 - disobedience to orders of, liability for, 527
 - institution of inquiries by, 525
 - power as to election of guardians, 531
 - to make orders, 525
 - reference of disputes to settlement to, 606
 - sanction of, how provided, 524
 - submission of differences to, 525
 - supreme control of, 524
- London, grants in relief of the poor in, 529
 - workhouses in, provisions as to, 557
- loss of office, compensation of officer for, 548
- lunatic, criminal, inquiry for purpose of removal in case of, 597
 - paupers, provision of asylums for, 528
 - removal to an asylum, 594.
 - settlement of, 577
- lying-in-hospital, expenses of removal from, by whom payable, 579
 - settlement of child born in, 579
- "maintained," meaning of, 568
- maintenance, family, of, liability for neglect to provide, 607
 - liability of husbands and fathers for, 573, 574
 - married woman for, 574
 - orders, liability of seamen under, 572
 - soldiers under, 572
 - power of guardians to obtain, 571
 - persons liable in respect of, 573
 - recovery of cost of, under removal order, 599
 - repayment to appellant against removal order, 605
- marriage settlement by, how acquired, 587, 588
 - nature of, 588

INDEX.

POOR LAW—continued

- married couples, workhouses, in, provisions relating to, 560
- woman, liability for maintenance of husband, 574
- master of workhouse, appointment and duties of, 542—544
- medical officers, appointment, duties and removal of, 542, 543
 - practitioner, payment to, for notification of disease not a disqualification as guardian, 532
- meetings, guardians, of, notice required as to, 534
 - proceedings at, how regulated, 533, 534
- metropolis, borrowing powers of guardians in the, 538
- Metropolitan Asylums Board, borrowing powers of managers of, 538
 - constitution and management of, 552
 - powers and duties of, 552
 - provision of workhouses by, 557
 - use of casual wards, 552
- casual wards, provision of, 567, 568
- common poor fund, purposes for which raised, 550
- mortgage, stamp duty not payable by guardians on a, 536
- National Insurance Act, 1911, relief to person entitled under the, 564
- navy, assisting boys to join the, powers, 566
- neglect to maintain family, liability in respect of, 607
 - illegitimate child, liability of mother, 608
- notice, appeal, of, against removal order, when to be given, 603
 - chargeability, of, time for, 599
 - meeting of guardians, of, provision as to, 534
- notices, removal, authentication and service of, 599
- nurse, appointment and removal of, 542—544
- objections to grounds of removal or appeal, when not allowed, 604
- offences, prosecution in respect of powers, 540
- officer, assault on, offence of, 545
 - compensation for loss of office, 548
 - default by guardians in appointment of, effect of, 542
- officers, appointment and duties of, 541, 542
 - of, when under seal, 543
 - contribution to superannuation fund, 546
 - duty of guardians as to appointment of, 542—544
 - forfeiture of right to claim from superannuation fund, 547
 - liability of dishonest, 545
 - disobedient, 545
 - guardians for torts, of, 546
 - persons covered by the term, 542
 - qualification and dismissal of, 542
 - reimbursement of injured, power of guardians, 545
 - removal of, 544
 - right to benefit from superannuation fund, 547
- old age pension, appeals relating to, to what authority, 622, 623
 - authorities for administering the, 621
 - calculation of yearly means for purposes of, 617, 618
 - claims and questions as to, by whom dealt with, 621
 - conditions entitling persons to receipt of, 616, 617
 - court may disqualify person entitled to, 619, 620
 - discontinuance of payment of, powers as to, 622
 - disqualifications for, 618, 619
 - false statement for purposes of obtaining, offence of, 620
 - imprisonment as a bar to receipt of, 619
 - local pension committee, appointment of, 621
 - lunacy as affecting right to, 619
 - meaning of, 616
 - nationality as affecting right to, 617
 - not assignable, 620
 - questions as to, when may be raised, 621, 622
 - rate of, 620
 - regulations for administering the, 621
 - repayment of, when may be ordered, 620
 - residence as qualification for, 617
- orders, Local Government Board, of, liability for disobedience of, 527
 - nature of general, 526
 - power to make, 525
 - proof of, 525

INDEX.

POOR LAW—*continued*

- orders, Local Government Board, of, publication of, 536
 - testing validity of, 536
- orphans, when exempt from removal, 595
- out relief, as alternative for relief in workhouse, 563
 - form in which to be given, 563
 - grant to insured person, extent of, 564
 - member of friendly society, extent of, 564
- overseer, power to give order to admit to the workhouse, 530
- overseers, appointment of, 530
 - duty to relieve in urgent cases, 529, 530
 - of the poor, origin of, 523
 - power to contract debts, 530
- palimistry, offence of telling fortunes by, 612
- parentage, settlement by, how acquired, 588, 589
- parish, alteration of, settlement not affected by, 577
 - lands, settlement by renting, not gained by occupation of, 586
 - what is included in term, 592
- parochial system, origin of, 523
- pauper, access to, on appeal against removal order 603
 - accidents to, non-liability of guardians for, 561
 - annuitants, right of guardians as to, 572
 - damage to clothing by, offence of, 613
 - delivery of, after removal order, 600
 - deserting in transit, liability of officer, 600
 - detention of, provision for, 561
 - disorderly, liability of, 608, 609
 - lunatics, provision of asylums for, 528
 - settlement of, 577
 - maintenance in houses and institutions other than workhouses, 564, 565
 - misbehaviour by, evidence of, 561
 - property of, guardians' powers as to, 570
 - refusal to perform task, offence of, 564
 - receive under warrant of removal, penalty 600
 - return of, after removal, liability, 601
- paupers, persons liable for maintenance of, 578
- payments, guardians, by, when to be made, 536
 - sums certified by district auditor, of, enforcement of, 531
- pedlars, unlicensed, as idle and disorderly persons, 609
- penalty, conviction as an idle and disorderly person, on, 609, 610
 - deserting or running away from workhouse, 562
 - failure by clerk to guardians to make return, 548
 - inducing or assisting in escape of adopted child, 569
 - liability of dishonest officers to, 545
 - disobedient officers to, 545
 - guardians on making profit to, 536
 - offender to, for assault on officer, 515
 - offences against workhouse rules, for, 559
- permanent disability, meaning of, 592
- poor law offences, prosecution for, powers, 540
- Poor Law Union Association, subscription to, power to make, 548, 549
- poor laws, complexity of the, 523
- porter, appointment and removal of 512—544
- previous conviction as idle and disorderly person, offence of, 610
- prison breakers, offence committed by, 614
 - settlement of child born in, 579
- prisoners, examination of, for purpose of removal order, 597
 - relief to released, powers as to, 569, 570
- proceedings, guardians before justices, by, appearance, 539, 540
 - by, provisions as to 539—541
 - protection of property, for, powers, 540, 541
- profit, liability of guardians on making, 536
- property, acquisition of, power of guardians as to, 536
 - pauper, of, power of guardians as to, 570
 - person guilty of desertion, power of guardians as to, 570, 571
 - protection of, proceedings by guardians for, 540, 541
- prosecution, poor law offences, for, powers, 540
- prostitutes, as idle and disorderly persons, 609

INDEX.

POOR LAW—continued

- prostitutes, living on, offence of, 611
- provisional orders, power of the Local Government Board as to, 527
- "public taxes or levies," meaning of, 586, 587
- punishment, idle and disorderly persons, of, 609, 610
 - incorrigible rogues, of, 614, 615
 - rogues and vagabonds, of, 614
- rates and taxes, extent to which workhouse rateable for, 558
- rating, settlement by, how acquired, 586
- released prisoners, relief to, provisions as to, 569, 570
- relief, *and see* out relief
 - by way of loan, power of guardians as to, 566, 567
 - casual, power to grant, 567
 - chargeability of persons actually in receipt of 590, 591
 - child of widow, to, how treated, 574
 - duty imposed upon guardians as to, 563
 - of the overseers in urgent cases, 529, 530
 - fraudulent applicants for, liability of, 608
 - grant to able-bodied strikers illegal 564
 - of the poor, complexity of the law relating to, 523
 - released prisoners, to, provision for, 569, 570
- religion instruction of inmates in, 561, 562
- removal, children under seven, when may take place, 595
 - sixteen, of, rule as to, 595
- criminal lunatic, of, inquiry in case of, 597
- Local Government Board no power as to law of, 524
- lunatic pauper, of, to an asylum, 594
- order, abandonment of, power of guardians as to, 598
 - appeal against, 602 606
 - authentication and service of notices relating to, 599
 - by whom made, 596
 - obtained, 596
 - delivery of pauper on, 600
 - disregarding, liability of pauper for, 608
 - effect of making, 593
 - examination of prisoners for purpose of, 597
 - Ireland and Scotland, to, how obtained, 601, 602
 - nature and making of, 597
 - notice of chargeability to be given after, 599
 - place out of England, for removal to, how obtained, 601
 - recovery of cost of maintenance under 599
 - reference of differences as to, to arbitration 606
 - refusal to receive pauper under, offence of, 600
 - retention of depositions relating to, 597
 - suspension of power of justices as to, 598 599
 - when may be made, 590
 - person has not acquired a settlement in England 601
- origin of law of, 574 575
- orphans, of, exemption as to, 595
- power of guardians to consent to 591
- residence for one year as basis for grant of warrant for, 592, 593
- return of pauper after, liability for, 601
- temporary sickness not a ground for, 591, 592
- unlawful, liability in respect of, 600
- warrant for, when cannot be granted, 591, 592
- when not as deck passengers, 602
- widows, of rule as to, 594
- wife and children of, rule as to, 594
- renting, settlement by, how acquired, 594, 595
 - nature of tenancy to acquire, 586
- "resided," meaning of, 592
- residence, charitable institution, in, settlement not gained by, 580
 - computation of one year's, 593, 594
 - meaning of, when relating to settlements, 582
 - for one year as basis of grant of warrant for removal, 592, 593
 - settlement by, 579
 - nature of, 579, 580
 - under contract of apprenticeship, 581, 582
 - who may acquire, 581

INDEX.

POOR LAW—continued.

- residence, temporary absence not necessarily a break of, 592
 - "within ten miles," meaning of, 594
- resignation, guardians, of, consent required on, 593
- resisting arrest as an idle and disorderly person, offence of, 610
 - a rogue and vagabond, liability, 614
- returns, duty of guardians to make, 588
- rogue and vagabond, punishment of, 614
 - second conviction as, liability on, 614
 - who may be treated as, 610—614
- rules, workhouse, penalty for offences against, 589
- running away from workhouses, offence of, 582
- rural districts, district councillors as guardians in, 591
- schoolmaster, appointment and duties of, 542—544
- Scully, removal to, when, order made for, 601
- Scotland, order for removal to, when made, 601
- sea-fishing service, apprenticing boys in the, regulations as to, 506
- seaman, recovery of maintenance of wife and family of absent, 572
 - untrue confession of desertion by, offence of, 618
- search warrant, power to issue under the Vagrancy Act, 1824 615
- servants, liability to contribute to superannuation fund, 546
 - offences against, duty of guardians as to, 541
- service occupiers, settlement by renting not obtained by, 586
- settlement, acquisition of, 574, 575
 - alteration of parish as not affecting, 577
 - bastard child, of, 588, 589
 - birth, by, duration of, 577, 578
 - exceptions as to, 578, 579
 - children, of, 578
 - over sixteen, of, 588, 589
 - derivative, how obtained, 576
 - estate, by, nature of qualification, 582—584
 - estoppel, by, justices' order as effecting, 589, 590
 - how may be lost, 575
 - illegitimate child, of, whence derived, 576
 - Local Government Board, no power as to law of, 524
 - marriage, by, how acquired, 587, 588
 - meaning of, 574
 - nature of marriage to confer, 588
 - origin of law of, 574, 575
 - original, how obtained, 576
 - parentage, by, how acquired, 588, 589
 - pauper lunatics, of, 577
 - rating, by, how acquired, 586
 - reference of dispute as to, 606
 - relief as evidence of, 590
 - renting and rating by, inter-relation of, 584
 - by, double tenancies as affecting, 585
 - how acquired, 594, 595
 - nature of tenancy to acquire, 585
 - not by parish lands, 586
 - gained by toll-keepers, 586
 - obtained by service occupiers, 586
 - of Crown lands, 586
- residence, by, 579
 - nature of, 579, 580
 - who may acquire, 581
 - in charitable institution does not gain, 580
 - under contract of apprenticeship as qualification for, 581, 582 *
 - status of irremovability does not confer a, 580
 - transfer of service under contract of settlement as not affecting, 582
 - unions, in, power of guardians to agree as to, 577
- "sickness," meaning of, 592 *
- soldiers, liability under maintenance orders, 571
- solicitor's costs, payment by guardians, provision as to, 541
- special case, appeal against removal order by, 606, 606
- spiritualists, liability to punishment, 612

INDEX.

POOR LAW—*continued*

- stamp duty, exemption of guardians' documents from, 536
- strikers, relief to able-bodied, illegality of, 563
- subscription, Poor Law Union Association, to, powers, 548, 549
- subscriptions, hospitals, to, guardians may make, 537
- superannuation allowance, forfeiture of right to claim, 547
 - payment on alteration of union, 548
- fund, annual return of allowances from, duty of guardians as to, 548
 - contribution of officers to, 546
 - repayment of contributions to, 547, 548
 - right of officers to benefit from, 547
 - scale of allowance from, 547
- suspected persons, liability of, 612, 613
- task, refusal of pauper to perform, offence of, 564
- temporary absence, period of residence not necessarily broken by, 592
- term of office, guardians, of, 533
- time, computation for purpose of residence, 593, 594
- tithe rentcharge, redemption where land purchased for workhouse, 558
- toll-keepers, settlement by renting not gained by, 586
- torts, liability of guardians for officer's, 546
- trade union, not a benefit or friendly society, 572, 573
- treasurer of the union, appointment, duties, liabilities and remuneration of, 543
- union, alteration of, status of irremovability not affected by, 596
 - dissolution of, effect of, 554, 555
 - position of guardians on, 555
 - transfer of property on, 555
 - or alteration of, 553, 554
 - division into medical districts, 543
 - origin of the, 524
- unions, combination of, powers as to, 553
 - constitution of, 553
 - names of, power to change, 553
 - settlement in, power of guardians to agree as to, 577
- unlawful removal, liability in respect of, 601
- vagrant, chargeability of, 591
 - meaning of, 606, 607
- vice-chairman of guardians, appointment of, 533
 - tenure of office of, 538
- visitation of workhouses, provision for, 559
- visiting committee, appointment of, 559
- visitors of children, appointment of, 544, 545
- wandering without visible means, offence of, 611
- widows, relief to children of, how treated, 574
 - powers, 567
 - removal of, rule as to, 594
- wife, removal of, deserted, rule as to, 595
 - rule as to, 594
 - settlement of, how acquired, 587, 588
- witnesses, husband and wife as competent and compellable, 615
- women, removal of, when not as deck passengers, 602
- workhouse, parish in which situate, 558
- workhouses, acquisition of land for purposes of, 557, 558
 - admission to, how regulated, 550, 559, 560
 - borrowing powers of guardians for purposes of, 556, 557
 - corporal punishment forbidden in, 560
 - deserting or running away from, offence of, 562
 - discipline and diet in, 560
 - intoxicating liquor forbidden in, 560
 - labour in, provision for, 561
 - London, special provisions as to, 557
 - management of, duty of guardians as to, 558, 559
 - married couples in, provisions as to, 560
 - power to provide, 555, 556
 - rateability of, 558
 - rules of, penalty for offences against, 559
 - treatment of inmates in, 560, 561
 - visitation of, provision for, 559

INDEX.

POOR LAW—continued

- wounds, offence of exposing, 611
- writ of *certiorari*, removal of order of Local Government Board to High Court, 526
- young persons, reception of, duty of guardians as to, 537

POST OFFICE,

- accounts, duty of Postmaster-General as to, 634
- additional postal facilities, power of Postmaster-General as to, 649, 650
- Assistant Postmaster-General, power to appoint, 628
- audit, post office accounts, of, provision for, 634
- banks, position in respect to collection of postal orders, 649
- Bill, submission by Postmaster-General to Parliament for compulsory powers, procedure, 635, 636
- blind, special rates of postage where packets are for use of the, 638
- "British Islands," meaning of, 631
- British possessions, establishment of posts in, 657
 - meaning of, 631
- Canada, special rates of postage for newspapers to, 646
- canal boats, carriage of letters by, forbidden, 632, 633
- coin, marking of postal packets containing, 613
- colonial packets, rates of postage for, control of, 638
- common carriers, carriage of letters by, forbidden, 632
- communication by post, legal effect of, 657, 658
- compensation for loss of registered postal packet, nature of, 643
- compromise, power of the Postmaster-General to, in respect of fines or forfeitures, 668
- compulsory purchase of land, sanction required to, 635
- conduct of business, regulations as to, power of the Treasury, 636, 637
- constable, duty to remove obstructor from post offices, 667
- contraband goods, detention of, powers, 644
- conveyance of mails, statutory provision for, 651
- Crown, vesting of post office revenue in the, 633
- customs officer, duty as to mails carried by inward bound ship, 655, 656
- dangerous matter, sending by post, offence of, 662
- delivery, postal packets, of, order of, 643
- despatch, postal packets, of, order of, 643
- Duchy of Lancaster, sale to Postmaster-General of lands belonging to the, 636
- early closing, extent of application of Shop Hours Act, 1911, as to, 645
- evidence, admissibility of letters in, where dealt with, 658, 659
- exemption, privileged persons' letters, of, offences relating to, 660
 - shipowners' letters, as to, offences relating to, 660
- exemptions, how determined, 639
 - statutory, from postage, 640—642
- expenses, Postmaster-General, of, how paid, 634
- express packets, provision for sending, 643
- fictitious stamp, meaning of, 665
 - stamps, offences relating to, 665
- fines, recovery of, provision for, 668
- foreign countries, arrangements with power to make, 657
 - packets, rates of postage for, control of, 638
 - parcels, application of Customs Acts to, 654
 - meaning of, 654
- forfeitures, recovery of, provision for, 668
- halfpenny packet, definition of, 643
- increment value duty, post office not exempt from payment of, 629
- indecent matter, powers as to, 644
- indemnity of Postmaster-General by person establishing a post or telegraph office, 650
- indictments, citing of Postmaster-General in, form of, 669
- "inland," meaning of, 638
- inland rates, scale of, 638
- Inland Revenue, stamping of covers and envelopes by, powers, 640
- interference with letters, offence of, 662
- land, acquisition for purposes of post office, powers, 634, 635
 - compulsory purchase of, sanction required, 635
 - disposition of, power of Postmaster-General as to, 635

INDEX.

POST OFFICE—continued

land, sale to Postmaster-General when belonging to the Duchy of Lancaster, 636

vesting in Postmaster-General, 634

"land," meaning of, 634

legal proceedings, otherwise than under Post Office Act, 1908 669

power of Postmaster-General as to, 668, 669

letter boxes, causing injury to, offence of, 666, 667

carriers, offences by, 668, 664

definition of, 630

letters, collection of excepted, forbidden, 632

exceptions relating to monopoly of carriage of, 631, 632

interference with, offence of, 662

offences and penalties relating to the carriage and delivery of, 633

persons forbidden to carry, collect or deliver, 632

libellous matter, powers as to, 644

lists, registration, exhibiting at or near post office, provision as to, 645

local authorities, power of Postmaster-General to arrange with, for additional postal facilities, 649, 650

to establish post or telegraph office, 650

to contribute towards new or enlarged post office premises, 650, 651

London Gazette, publication of post office regulations in the, 636, 637

loss, postal packet, of, non-liability of Postmaster-General for, 642

registered postal packet, of, compensation for, nature of 643

mail bag, definition of, 654

retention by fraud, offence of, 661, 662

carriages, exemption from tolls 656

coaches, duty of railway company as to, 652

meaning of, 651

mails, conveyance of, statutory provisions for, 651

inland, conveyance by rail, powers, 651

master of ship, duty as to carriage of mails when outward or inward bound, 654, 655

liability for interfering with letters, 663

in respect of carriage of mails, 655

remuneration of, for carriage of mails, 656

money orders, fraudulent issue of, offence of, 664

issue of, provision for, 648

not negotiable instruments, 649

regulations as to, 648

monopoly of Postmaster-General as to postal packets, 631—633

exceptions to, 631, 632

offence of infringement of, 660

National Insurance Act, 1911, duties of the post office under, 628

Telephone Co., Ltd., business of, transferred to post office, 627

negotiable instrument, postal or money order not a, 649

Newfoundland, special postal rates for newspapers to, 646

newspaper, definition of, 647

newspapers, maximum rate of postage for, to places out of the British Isles, 636

not within the definition, 647

postal rates for Canada and Newfoundland, 646

rates for, 646

register of, power of Postmaster-General as to, 647

registration of, provision for, 647

notices registration, exhibiting in or near post office, provisions as to, 645

nuisance, telegraph wires, by, as to, 627

oath, acceptance of office by Postmaster-General, on, necessity for, 628

obscene matter, powers as to, 644

obstructing officer, offence of, 667

offences, enumeration of statutory, 659—663

relating to the carriage and delivery of letters, 633

soliciting to commit, offence of, 667, 668

offensive matter, powers as to, 644

INDEX.

POST OFFICE—continued

- " officer of the post office," meaning of, 630
- officers, privilege extended to, 630
 - return of post office property on vacation of office by, 630
 - subordinate, appointment of, 628, 629
- " outward bound," meaning of, 631
- parcels, carriage by railway companies, provision for, 633, 635
 - tramways, provisions relating to, 654
 - conditions upon which carried, 654
 - definition of, 633, 653
 - foreign, application of Customs Acts to, 654
- Parliament, sanction required to compulsory purchase of land, how obtained, 635, 636
- parliamentary proceedings, postage charged on unpaid or insufficiently paid, 641
- penalties, carriage and delivery of letters, relating to the, 633
 - failure to return post office property, on, 630
 - liability of master of ship in respect of carriage of mails, 655
 - offences relating to post office, for, 659—668
- penalty, failure to return post office property, on, 630
 - liability of master of ship in respect of carrying of mails, 655
- petitions, King, to the exemption from postage, 640, 641
 - members of Parliament, to, exemption from postage, 641
- " post," meaning of 631
- postcard, meaning of, 643
- post office, affixing unauthorised notices to, offence of, 666
 - buildings, not subject to rates, 645
 - business, exhibiting unauthorised notices as to carrying on, offence of, 665, 666
 - constitution and business of, 627, 628
 - origin of, 627
 - paper, sending or making an imitation of, offence of, 664, 665
 - regulations, abuse as to postal facilities, provision, 644
 - exceptions determined by, powers, 639
 - making and nature of, 636, 637
 - powers where postal packet sent in contravention of, 644
- " post office," definition of, 630
- postage, meaning of 617
 - payment of, 639
 - power to charge, 637
 - prepayment by money, when may be made, 639
 - rates of, control of Treasury over, 647, 638
 - scale of inland, 637
 - recovery of, means of, 640
 - procedure on, 640
 - statutory exemptions from 640—642
 - unpaid or insufficiently prepaid, liability of sender in respect of 639
- postal facilities, additional power of Postmaster-General as to, 649, 650
- monopoly, infringement of offence of, 660
- orders, issue of, provision for, 648, 649
 - not negotiable instruments, 649
 - position of banks in respect to collection of, 649
- packet, meaning of, 630
- packets, collection and despatch of, powers as to, 671
 - despatch or delivery of, order of 643
 - general conditions of transit, 642
 - loss or injury to, non-liability of Postmaster-General for, 642
 - powers where sent in contravention of regulations, 644
 - registered, provisions relating to, 642, 643
 - retention by fraud, offence of, 661, 662
 - return of, practice as to, 644
- rates for newspapers, 646
- Postmaster-General, acts of, by whom may be exercised, 629
 - appointment of, 628
 - subordinate officials by, 628
 - assistant, power to appoint, 628
 - disposition of land by, powers, 636
 - duty as to accounts, 634

INDEX.

POST OFFICE—*continued*

- Postmaster-General, expenses, how paid, 634
 - indemnification by applicant establishing post or telegraph office, 660
 - no obligation to return postal packets on, 614
 - non-liability for acts of subordinates, 629
 - loss or injury to postal packet, 642
 - oath on acceptance of office by, necessity for, 628
 - powers as to collection and despatch of postal packets, 631
 - registration of newspapers, 647
 - of, extent of, 630, 631
 - purchase of land by, powers, 634, 635
 - vesting of land in, 634
- premises, power of local authorities to contribute towards new or enlarged, 650, 651
- private posting box, power to declare letter box to be, 646
- property, return of, by officers vacating office, 630
- "purpose of the post office," meaning of, 634
- railway companies, carriage of parcels by, provision for, 653
 - duty as to carrying mail coaches, 652
 - liability to officer accompanying mails, 652
 - payment to, in respect of carriage of postal packets, 633
 - power of Postmaster-General as to conveyance of mails by, 651
 - provision of sorting carriages by, 652
 - remuneration for carrying mails, 652
- rates of postage, control of Treasury over, 638
 - foreign and colonial packets, control of, 638
 - inland, scale of, 638
 - special, where packets for use of the blind 638
- post office buildings not subject to, 645
- register of newspapers, power of Postmaster-General as to, 647
- registered postal packets, compensation for loss of, nature of, 643
 - provisions relating to, 642, 643
- registration, newspapers, of, provision for, 647
 - notices or lists, exhibiting at or near post offices, provision as to, 645
- regulations, exemptions determined by, powers, 639
 - power of the Treasury as to, 636, 637
- remuneration, masters of ships, of, for carrying mails, 656
 - railway companies, of, for carrying mails, 652
- return postal packets, practice as to, 614
- revenue of post office, to whom payable, 633
 - vesting of, 638
- river boats, carriage of letters by, forbidden, 632
- salaries, payment of, 628, 629
- seamen, postage privilege extended to, 641, 642
- ship, carriage of mails by, obligation of masters of outward and inward bound vessels as to, 654, 655
 - passengers, carriage of letters by, forbidden, 632
- shipmasters, carriage of letters by, forbidden, 632
- shipowners, carriage of letters by, forbidden, 632
 - letters, definition of, 655
 - provision as to carriage and delivery of, 656
- Shop Hours Act, 1911, extent of application to post offices, 645
- solders, postage privilege extended to, 641, 642
- soliciting to commit offences, offence of, 667, 668
- solicitor, inclusion in staff of post office, 627
- sorting carriages, provision by railway companies, 652
- special rates, postal packets for use of the blind, for, powers as to, 638
- stamp duty, exemption of documents relating to post office from, 629
- stamps, offences relating to fictitious, 665
 - stationery, on, powers of Inland Revenue as to, 640
- steamboats, carriage of mails by, duty of railway companies as to, 652
- summary proceedings, prosecution of offences by, 668, 669
- superannuation, statutory provision for, 629
- supplement, newspaper, provisions as to, 647
- telegraph post, meaning of, 666

1

7

